The Ultimate Husband

Skykissing Wolf

Chapter 1

"Darryl, dump away our foot wash."

Three women sat on the sofa, having just had their feet soaked and washed. From afar, these three beauties exuded an air of seduction and class, each with their unique charm. Among these three women, was Darryl's wife and her two best friends. 3

Upon his wife's behest, Darryl dumped the bowls of dirty water away subserviently. He dared not utter a single complaint; after all, he was the family's live-in son-in-law. Even after three years of marriage, he had no place in the family. His wife and mother-in-law would berate him for the slightest mistakes. Even a mutt would have a higher standing in the family than he did. 7

Darryl and Lily Lyndon were husband and wife for three years, but only in name, for they have not consummated their marriage. He has not even felt the touch of her hand! Every night Darryl slept on the floor because of how heartily Lily despised him. 2

Washing, cooking, cleaning the rooms, every single household chore was Darryl's duty. Once, he accidentally broke a bowl while cooking and was berated by Lily for half an hour.

There was also a night when Darryl had to use the bathroom and unintentionally woke Lily up, and she slapped him hard on the face without any hesitation. 5

That was the first time in his life that Darryl got hit. Since young, his parents could not even bear to lay a single finger on him! He was angry, yet he had to keep his fury to himself. All he could do was apologize profusely to Lily. In the end, he was punished to kneel the entire night.

It has been three years now, and Darryl had gotten used to this lifestyle. Who else did he have but himself to blame for becoming a live-in son-in-law? Worse still, having lived day in day out with Lily for three years, Darryl found himself unwittingly in love with her, even though he knew full well that she despised him and treated him like trash! 1

Darryl was initially the second eldest son of the Darby clan, known as the largest clan in the Jiangnan region. Three years ago, he had used eight million bucks in cash to purchase an eight percent

share in a company called Southeast Petroleum. 1

During that time, hundreds of members of the Darby clan had scolded Darryl. Some called him mad; some even accused him of harboring bad intentions, wanting to siphon the family fortune for himself. Ultimately the clan agreed in unison to disown Darryl, including his parents, and erased them from the clan records!

During these three years, Darryl felt the volatility of relationships. Old and dear friends were constantly looking for ways to avoid him. He had no choice but to resort to becoming a live-in son-in-law for the sake of his livelihood. He has never mentioned this matter to a single soul, not even to Lily. 3

"My dear Lily, you've certainly trained your husband well," said Jade, one of Lily's best friends. 1

Lily let out a cold chuckle. "Are you talking about Darryl? The mere sight of him disgusts me. Other women marry into affluent families. Meanwhile, it' s just my luck to be stuck with a piece of trash like him. Look at how uncouth he is. Just one look is enough to tell you that he's a peasant from the countryside. Bringing him to the Lyndon clan's annual gathering tomorrow would be an embarrassment." 2

Jade could not help but sneak a glance at Darryl.

Indeed, all he had on were bargained goods, looking absolutely shabby. Jade laughed. "Alright, Lily, enough about him. On a more serious note, I heard that there have been some issues with your company lately?" 3

Lily nodded solemnly. "Last month, we lost millions trying to start up a fashion business. Now the company is short on funds and is in dire need of five million dollars. We've got to find an investor within a week to finance our company." 2

"My dear Lily, who's willing to fork out five million in a week to finance you?" sighed Jade.

Lily did not reply, instead, she noticed that Darryl, who had completed his task, was eavesdropping on their conversation. She shot him a sharp stare and said coldly, "Darryl, who said you could be here? Get lost and have my clothes washed."

"Wash my jeans too. They're in my luggage," chimed in Jade as well.

Darryl dared not complain and proceeded to place their clothes into the washing machine along with his. Tomorrow was his high school reunion, and he had to put a little effort into looking presentable at the very least. As he was thinking about the reunion, his thought was interrupted by the buzzing of his cellphone. He checked his cellphone

and saw that he had received a text message from a number ending with six eights. His eyebrows furrowed upon seeing the number, 'Isn't this the Darby clan's number?' he thought.

Darryl opened the message in curiosity and was shocked by reading it.

'Oh, our second young master, please help our clan. The Darby clan is in dire need of funds, and we really need your financial support!'

'Preposterous!' Darryl furrowed his eyebrows and thought to himself. 'Just three years ago, I was banished by the clan, and now with nothing to my name and 20 bucks in my pocket, they want my financial support? What use am I to them?' 2

Darryl's thoughts were once again interrupted by the buzzing of his cellphone. It was another message.

'Young master, please, I'm begging you to help your clan. The shares you bought three years ago have turned a huge profit. Please... we're doomed without your support...'

'What!?'

Darryl was taken aback by that message. He quickly took out his Amethyst Bank black card at a speed he never knew he had. The card had been in a state of

disuse for three long years. It was a status symbol for the rich, for every card has its own dedicated customer service representative. He hastily dialed up the bank's customer service.

"Greetings, Mr. Darby. How may we assist you today?" answered a sweet feminine voice.

"Quick! Give me my account balance."

"My pleasure, sir, please wait a moment," replied the lady. Within seconds, the lady spoke again. "Mr. Darby, your total account balance has a large sum above our checking limit. If you could kindly come to our bank's VIP section with the appropriate identity verification, we would be glad to assist you."

Before the lady could finish her sentence, Darryl had already hung up the call.

'Total account balance has a large sum!?' laughed Darryl while entertaining his thoughts. Who would have thought that this investment three years ago, which caused his banishment, would lead to such a pleasant surprise three years later! The added mystery of not knowing the exact amount of this large sum of money fueled his excitement. 4

"Lily, look at Darryl checking his account balance on the phone," laughed Jade uncontrollably. 1

Lily laughed as well. "I give him an allowance of 20

0 bucks a day. I suppose he's saved up quite a sum over the past 3 years."

"Oh Lily, just treat it as if you're rearing a dog," said Jade, prompting the three women to laugh in unison.

Darryl ran to his wife in excitement and said, "Your company lacks five million bucks, right? How about... how about I find a way to solve this issue?"

Jade burst out laughing with no end in sight. She merely glanced at Darryl and said, "Darryl, can you even comprehend the value of five million? Dear Lily gives you 200 bucks every day. If you can somehow fork out five million, perhaps I should start calling you daddy." 2

"Oh really?" said Darryl with a sly grin. "In that case, you better keep what you said in mind."

Lily could not stand him any longer. Darryl must have lost his mind, standing among them looking like a peasant bothered Lily. She impatiently waved her hand. "Get lost, stop being an eyesore around us."

"Oh," he reacted and left without saying another word.

Darryl was unable to sleep that night due to the excitement. He dared not believe that such good

news would appear out of nowhere. He was determined to head to the bank in-person to check the balance for himself. 1

Darryl tossed and turned until dawn before barely falling asleep. However, halfway through his sweet slumber came the voice of his mother-in-law reverberating from the living room.

"Darryl, wake up and send my daughter to work."

Darryl heard his mother-in-law, Samantha's voice, in his sleep. He assumed that it was just a dream and simply turned his back and continued his slumber. At this moment, the bedroom door opened, and in came Samantha giving him an impatient kick.

"Are you deaf or dumb? Didn't you hear me calling you to send Lily to work?" said Samantha coldly.

Darryl had to admit, Samantha was a beauty in her thirties. She took great care to maintain her looks.

Darryl drowsily got up from the floor and stared at Samantha with a dumbfounded look on his face. ' After three years of marriage, not once have I gone out with Lily, for she found me to be an embarrassment, and now out of sudden, she wants me to send her to work!?' Darryl thought to himself.

It was right at that thought when Lily herself came

into the room, dressed in her business attire. She stomped her feet in a rush. "Are you deaf? Be quick, or is it that you're not willing to send me?"

"I'm willing! I'm willing!" Darryl said he nodded his head non-stop. He hastily put on a change of clothes, got on his electric bike, and drove Lily to her office.

Lily was filled with fiery rage due to her company's lack of funds and the urgent need for a five million bucks investment. However, she was not able to find an investor, and now her company is facing bankruptcy! An emergency meeting of shareholders was called to deal with this issue, and as the general manager of the company, her attendance was mandatory. It was only when she stepped out of the door in the morning that she realized that she had lent her car to Jade. As a last resort, she had no choice but to have Darryl send her to work. 4

Chapter 2

"Can't you go any faster? I'll be screwed if I'm late," said Lily impatiently at the sight of Darryl's slow-moving vehicle.

As the words left her mouth, Lily began to regret them. Darryl through his sheer will pushed his busted up bike through its limits!

The speed of the bike was too much for Lily, and she could not help but hold on tight to Darryl's waist.

The sudden hug caused Darryl's body to quiver all over. After three years of marriage, this was the first time they had physical contact with each other. A surge of excitement welled up from within him from Lily's pressure on his back, prompting him to accelerate his bike even faster.

Eventually, the couple arrived at the office building' s main entrance, and Lily breathed a sigh of relief upon their arrival. As she was about to get off the bike, came the thunderous roar of an engine. An Audi Q5 pulled up and parked itself beside the bike, and a man stepped out of the car.

Ashton Adagio locked his car and adjusted his suit.

He walked toward Lily and pointed at Darryl. "Dear Lily, who is this man?"

"He's Darryl," replied Lily gently as she got off the bike.

The wedding that took place between Darryl and Lily got the entire Donghai City shaken up. There was not a single soul in Donghai City that was not aware that the gentle and beautiful Lily Lyndon had wed a piece of trash.

"Oh, so he's that piece of trash," said Ashton with a cold snort. He took off his jacket and handed it to Lily. "Poor Lily, it must have been cold on the way here, put this on. I've even gotten a gift for you."

Ashton went back to his car and got out a rather fancy-looking box.

The box contained a seemingly magnificent pair of high-heeled shoes made out of crystal. Whoever has it on would surely emanate a sense of elegance and class.

Several years ago, the Darby clan was also into the fashion business and thus Darryl got to know numerous renowned designers. If his memory served him right, this pair of heels was designed by a British designer, Minah, who named them 'The Worship of Crystal'. Only 99 pairs were made that year and all of them were bought upon release.

They were mostly bought by prominent families, even if one were to have the money now, it would be impossible to have access to a pair.

The ones in Ashton's hands seemed like the real deal, but the production quality had some minor rough edges, it was obviously a replica.

"Lily, I know that you've always liked this pair of heels, but woe is me. I've looked high and low but could not find the real thing." Ashton said as he handed over the heels to Lily. "Therefore I spent three hundred thousand to have this replica made. Wear them for now, and give me a month to buy you the real ones."

"There's no need," said Lily lightly while accepting the pair of heels. "There's no way you can find the real ones for sale. Even if you did, the price would be outrageously high. A pair was sold for 30 million in an auction just last year. So, there's no need to waste any more of your time. I think this pair of replicas is already pretty nice."

"Ah..." gulped Ashton. Indeed with his total net worth of roughly 30 million, there was no way he could use it all for a pair of heels. All he could do then was let out an awkward laugh.

It was at this moment that Darryl barged over, snatched the pair of heels, and threw them onto the

ground!

"My dear wife, let's not take other people's stuff. If that's what you like, then as your husband, I shall buy it for you," said Darryl as he held onto Lily's arm, dragging her toward her office building.

"Darryl, what the heck are you talking about?" hushed Lily.

They were standing at the main entrance of the office building, and as general manager, she had to keep her temper in check. She subconsciously tried to free her arm, but Darryl's grip was too tight.

"Stand right there!" shouted Ashton in a hurry. The shoes cost him three hundred thousand bucks, he was not going to let it slide!

"What's the meaning of this?" said Ashton as he strode to the couple, pointing and shouting at Darryl. "If you had broken this pair of heels, not even selling your kidney would make up for it, do you know that!?"

"First off, Lily is my wife, kindly stay away from her."

"Secondly, if my wife is cold, she can have my shirt." Upon finishing his sentence, Darryl grabbed Ashton's jacket and tossed it onto the ground. "And finally, anything my wife likes, I'll provide. A

woman of her standard would not stoop so low as to wear replicas. Tonight I shall present her with the real Worship of Crystal."

"You're a real idiot! Even the replica costs three hundred thousand! Judging by your wreck of a bike, how dare you even pretend to be able to afford it!?" Ashton was instantly filled with rage. As the heir of the Adagio clan, no one dared speak to him in such a manner for years until now.

The most infuriating of all, Darryl went so far as to ignore him and dragged Lily into the building.

Ashton kicked Darryl's bike so hard that it toppled over. However his anger was not quelled, and he proceeded to give it a few more furious kicks.

Meanwhile, in the general manager's office of Neptunus Corporation...

Lily sat on her office chair and gave Darryl a cold, hard stare. She was trembling with rage. Ashton was a real estate mogul, and backing him was none other than Jiangnan's number one clan - the Darbys!

Neptunus Corporation needed a five million bucks investment, and Lily had planned to ask Ashton to be the investor. After Darryl's debacle today, Ashton would surely be seething with rage.

'I shouldn't have brought Darryl out! He has

nothing to show for and yet has failures in excess, that's the perfect way of describing him!' thought Lily.

"Why are you still loitering here? Get lost!" Lily said coldly after glaring at him.

"Oh," mumbled Darryl, and proceeded to leave the office.

Lily could not help but to get angrier at Darryl's indifferent attitude, her hatred for him ground her gears. Over the past few years, her friends had married into affluent families. Their husbands were the cream of the crop, even the worst among them had at least two houses and the best with a net worth of billions.

Lily felt more and more wronged at the thought of Darryl. Her extended family would surely ridicule her again because of him during tonight's clan gathering.

"Who smashed my bike!?" howled Darryl below the building.

The bike had been with him for three years! Darryl rode it to get groceries every single day and now it pained him to see it in such a smashed and broken state. Without a second thought, it was clear that it was that bastard Ashton's doing.

At that moment, a few ladies dressed in business

attire walked by in their high-heeled shoes. They were employees of Lily's company, and they were now pointing and gossiping at Darryl.

"Look ladies, isn't that Ms. Lyndon's husband, Darryl?"

"It is him! I was there at her wedding."

"Look at him, mourning his broken bike..."

Those ladies could not hold back any longer and laugh at him.

Darryl did not even notice their presence, and gently patted his bike. "Sigh... My bike bro, don't you worry. I'll avenge you for this, don't worry..."

While he was comforting his bike, he took out his cellphone and dialed his clan's number.

"Hey, it's Darryl. I'm willing to help the clan but on two conditions. First, get me The Worship of Crystal. Next, there's a man named Ashton Adagio who operates under our clan, right? I want to see him with nothing left to his name."

Right after the call ended, he received a text message from Lily. It contained only a few words. ' Tonight is the Lyndon clan's annual gathering, get a new set of clothes, don't embarrass me.'

***

At a seaside villa by the eastern sea coast, where one can take in the entire sea view. It was here that the patriarch of the Darby clan invited Darryl for a meeting.

Darryl sat on a rocking chair without a care in the world, while Darby clan's patriarch sat across him. This man was Drake Darby, Darryl's paternal uncle.

Upon seeing Darryl's sitting posture, Drake let out a chuckle. "Oh Darryl, even after all these years, you're still the same carefree boy."

"Uncle, let's cut to the chase, I have other matters to attend to tonight. You mentioned that the family fortune is in debt, so tell me, how much?" Darryl picked up a huge cherry, placed it in his mouth, and started chewing on it.

"Well... it's not exactly a huge amount..." drifted Drake while scratching his head. As the patriarch, surely he has been through a lot of important meetings, but given the circumstance that he was the one requiring assistance, he had to exercise a certain amount of caution.

"We're just three billion dollars in debt..."

'What!? Three billion dollars!?' thought Darryl.

"Um... uncle, I have other matters to attend to, I should be heading out," said Darryl gloomily as he

stood up, preparing to leave.

"Oh dear Darryl!" said Drake in a hurry. "Darryl, our clan needs the funding! Without it, everything we've built would be ruined! The two conditions you 've mentioned will be met! Ashton Adagio will be left with nothing by tonight, and The Worship of Crystal is already on its way." 1

"Uncle, I want to help you, but where in the world would I have such an amount of money?" said Darryl, letting out a long sigh.

"Darryl, do you want to see our clan crumble in front of your very eyes? You have 3.2 billion in your bank account!" Drake was truly desperate. "We can' t forget our roots!"

Darryl was all smiles but after hearing those words, it slowly faded away. "Uncle, back when I bought the shares for Southeast Petroleum, your wife said that I was up to no good and that I planned to have the family fortune transferred to myself! Hundreds of my family members berated me, and got me banished from the clan! Was there anyone that tried to defend me!?"

"You guys know damn well that every single penny of the eight million I had used to buy the shares was earned by myself, they were never part of the family fortune!"

"All these years I've been treated like I'm less than a mutt for being a live-in son-in-law, did any of our family come to help!?" 1

"If it wasn't for the lack of funds, you guys would have forgotten about me!" Darryl clenched his fists, expressing himself word by word.

"Darryl, we were wrong to banish you, we sincerely apologize... But right now our clan is in dire need for your funding..." said Drake as he stepped forward, holding onto Darryl's arm. He took a deep breath and continued, "Darryl, as long as you're willing to support our clan, as patriarch I will grant you the position of President of Platinum Corporation. Give me your identity card, and head over to Platinum Corporation's office building tomorrow. A secretary will be there to fill you in on the details."

Platinum Corporation was an entertainment company with the highest potential under the Darby clan's control. Many top celebrities were under their contract.

All these while Platinum Corporation was under the management of Drake's wife. It came as a surprise that he was willing to hand over the entire company to Darryl. 1

"Sure, if that's all, I'll be going off," said Darryl

after giving it some consideration. Even though purchasing Platinum Corporation for three billion dollars seemed inappropriate, he relented seeing that the patriarch was about to burst into tears.

Darryl left after finishing his words. Tonight was the Lyndon clan's annual gathering, but there was another important matter to Darryl before that, which was his high school reunion. The reunion was about to begin and he was determined not to be late. He longed to meet his classmates after such a long time without contact. His entire class would be at today's gathering, even the beautiful class teacher apparently would be attending too.

Chapter 3

Meanwhile, at Neptunus Corporation.

Lily had just left the meeting room after finishing her meeting with the shareholders when she saw her female employees talking and laughing at their cellphones.

How dare they shrug their duties during working hours? Lily walked toward them intending to reprimand, but instead, she saw that they were watching a video, and in that video was none other than Darryl!

"My bike bro, don't you worry. I'll avenge you for this..."

In the video, Darryl was caressing his bike with a face full of sorrow.

"Haha, this guy is hilarious, who is it?"

"You don't know? It's Miss Lyndon's husband."

"What? Do you mean that piece of trash Darryl? So I 've heard that she was married to a piece of trash..."

The ladies were happily gossiping away when one of them stood up and did a mimicry of Darryl. "I don 't suppose you girls know that earlier today when I

just arrived at work, I heard Darryl said he was gonna buy The Worship of Crystal for Miss Lyndon!"

"Hahaha, that is such a huge joke!"

"Yeah, look at how uncouth he is, so distressed over his broken bike. The Worship of Crystal costs 30 million, he'll have to work several lifetimes for that amount!"

Their discussion was in full swing when one of them turned around and noticed Lily looming over them. The expression on their faces changed in an instant.

"Sorry Miss Lyndon, we'll get back to work..."

Lily bit her lip tightly, trying hard to put up with the humiliation! Even though she was the general manager, it was hard not to get red-faced in this situation. She did not go out for lunch, but instead locked herself in her office, unable to help herself but to get teary-eyed.

Meanwhile, Darryl was walking home while humming a tune. He had to attend his high school reunion in a moment so he went back to change.

Initially, Darryl was in a good mood, but as he entered the house, he was greeted by the sight of Samantha sitting cross-legged on the sofa, looking

at him with cold eyes.

"Darryl, good timing to be back, get over here."

Darryl had been living with the family for three years, and the fear he had for Samantha was extreme.

"Darryl, pack your stuff, you're going to get a divorce tomorrow and move out of here," said Samantha coldly.

"But ma'am... My love for Lily is sincere..." said Darryl with his head lowered. After three years of company, it was certain that he would develop feelings for Lily.

Samantha slammed the table upon hearing those words. She stood up and walked up next to Darryl. " You love my daughter? What right do you have to love her? I've put up with you for three years, what else can you do besides household chores? How are you fit for my daughter? Do you know that numerous men are vying to be with my daughter? Ashton Adagio just called and said as long as I grant him my daughter, he'll immediately give a dowry of 20 million bucks."

20-million dowry? Darryl let out a faint smile. Ashton was a distant relative under the Darby clan, he was the son of an aunt. All the funds for Ashton' s company were sponsored by the Darbys. Darryl

had already called his clan beforehand, and within 2 4 hours, Ashton Adagio would be left with nothing. How would he find that 20 million?

"Ma'am, I won't leave. I'll agree to the divorce, but only if Lily says it to me in person." Darryl finished his words, turned around, and left the house.

"How dare you! Come back here right now!" Samantha stomped her feet in anger and went after Darryl in her high heels, but he was too far gone.

In the evening, at Neptunus Corporation.

Lily had locked herself in her office for the entire day. That video of Darryl had gone viral around the company, making him a laughing stock.

Lily took a deep breath before slowly leaving her office. "Alright, you guys can leave now," said Lily to her employees.

"Miss Lyndon, there's a package for you." The front desk receptionist carried a box over and handed it to Lily.

Upon seeing the box, the crowd let out a sound of astonishment! It... it cannot possibly be so luxurious? How can a mere delivery package be gilded?

"Wow, what delivery package is this?"

"Yeah Miss Lily, it's my first time seeing a gilded

delivery package!"

"Surely it must be a gift from someone, open it up and let's see, Miss Lily."

Although Lily was stern at work, she maintained a good relationship with her employees. Everyone was curious about the package, it was as if the entire office had formed a crowd around her.

Lily wondered as well. She had never bought stuff online, where could this package have come from? Seeing that everyone was excited, Lily let out a little smile and gently opened the box.

It was at that instant when everyone was stupefied! There was pin-drop silence for about ten seconds before everybody suddenly spoke in furor!

"This... this is... The Worship of Crystal!?"

"It can't be! The globally limited to only 99 pairs, and sold for up to 30 million dollars, that Worship of Crystal!?"

"It's so beautiful! Miss Lily, you're such a fortunate lady!"

They were discussing among themselves, but Lily herself could not utter a single word! She had been fond of this pair of heels for many years. One look was enough for her to determine that it was the real deal!

How was this possible! Lily stepped back in disbelief, it was as if she was in a dream. Unless... unless Ashton had sold his company, and gifted her this pair of heels? The thought of that touched Lily' s heart. If she wore The Worship of Crystal to tonight's gathering, she would surely be the talk of the place.

***

Donghai City, Flouria KTV.

This KTV is one of Donghai City's famous entertainment centers. Buying power was very high, those who came are all famous people, filling up the entrance with their luxurious cars. It was here that Darryl would be attending his high school reunion.

Darryl rode his newly bought electric bike here, he was whistling a tune as he parked his vehicle at the entrance. He had wanted to buy a car, but he had given his identity card to the patriarch, so he could only settle for a bike for now. He was about to meet his high school classmates soon, and he was excited.

It was just as he got his vehicle parked that he heard a hurried whistling.

"Can you move?! You're only riding a shabby bike, and you want to occupy an entire spot?" A BMW 5

series stopped by the side, the driver stuck his head out of the window and called out to Darryl.

The man and Darryl locked eyes and were surprised to see each other!

"Class monitor!?" said Darryl as he ran toward the car. The man inside the car was none other than Darryl's high school class monitor, Clifford Conway.

"Darryl? What happened to you?" Clifford got out of his car, and looked Darryl up and down before he merely let out a cold laugh, and hastily went into the KTV.

Darryl awkwardly called out to him, wanting to strike up a conversation, but Clifford had no intention of acknowledging him. The two of them walked to the reserved KTV room one after another. The rest of the class had already arrived, and they turned their heads toward the door upon seeing their arrival.

"Class monitor is so handsome now? Truly a successful man!"

The room turned lively upon his arrival. They were all crowding around Clifford.

Clifford was wearing a suit, and it looked expensive. Most importantly, he was holding a BMW car key in his hand.

Meanwhile, Darryl, who was cast aside, was dressed in bargained goods, and in his hands were merely keys for an electric bike. His appearance was no different from a delivery person. No one even cared to acknowledge him, it was truly an awkward moment.

However Darryl did not care for such things, his eyes scanned the vicinity. After not seeing them for so many years, his female classmates were prettier than the other. The prettiest of all, however, was still Giselle Lindt.

Giselle was the class's goddess, she frequently wore jeans that accentuated her firm figure. Her beauty was unrivaled.

A few years without seeing Giselle, it seemed that she had acquired a touch of maturity, exuding an air of gentleness. She wore skin-tight jeans to the reunion, further enchanting any onlookers.

Clifford also took notice of Giselle and was hooked almost immediately. He could not help but ask, " Giselle, you're so charming, what are you up to these days?"

Before Giselle could reply, a lady nearby had already replied first. "Class monitor, you should know by now that Giselle is going to be a celebrity! She is signing a contract with Platinum Corporation

soon!"

"Woah!"

The room was in an uproar, who in Donghai City has not heard of Platinum Corporation? Several A-list celebrities were all under them!

To be fair, Giselle was a beautiful woman, compared to the other A-list celebrities, she was not any inferior to them at all.

Darryl was excited upon hearing Platinum Corporation mentioned, for when tomorrow comes, that company would belong to him. On that thought, Darryl smiled and approached Giselle, wanting to sit beside her and have a chat. As he sat down, he saw Giselle frowning, giving him a contempt look as she said, "Can you not sit here?"

"Oh?" Darryl stood up slowly. "Is someone sitting here?"

"Nope, I just don't want to sit beside you," Giselle replied coldly. "Darryl, you're attending our high school reunion, can't you at least put on some decent clothes? Isn't it dirty wearing those bargained goods?" 3

Chapter 4

'Damn you, I just washed this set of clothes yesterday, and now you're saying it's dirty?' Darryl thought to himself. He was about to voice his opinion but before he could do so, he was dragged away by Alex Armstrong.

The two were close friends back in high school. They had fought together and even ditched classes together. Alex might be the only one tonight that was not disgusted with Darryl.

Dragging Darryl to a corner, Alex shook his head and said, "Bro, I'm telling you, a girl like Giselle isn't the type for us to get hung up on. Aren't you asking to be ridiculed for simply sitting beside her?"

Darryl said nothing and merely chuckled. They wined and dined the whole night through, and the evening passed by quickly.

Giselle was a little tipsy, and under the crowd's pressure, she picked up the microphone and sang while gently swaying her body. Her appearance was sensual and seductive, striking awe at the men around. Giselle was truly a beauty!

It was only at night when they decided to call it a

day. The class teacher could not make it as she had something on at the last moment, so they agreed to have another gathering next Monday.

As they left, all the men were vying to send Giselle back. However, when they arrived at the entrance, she got on her own Porsche and left the scene, leaving them stupefied.

"Such a beauty," mumbled Alex at the side. "Darryl, no wonder you wanted to sit next to her. I wouldn't mind having my life shortened by ten years if it means I could spend only a night with her."

Darryl let out a cold laugh. 'So Giselle intends to go to Platinum Corporation tomorrow to have her contract signed? Excellent,' thought Darryl, as he too had planned to go there to claim his title of President. His thoughts were cut short by the sudden ringing of his cellphone.

The crowd laughed upon hearing his ring tone. What era was it for somebody to still be using an old Nokia phone?

Darryl hastily answered the call upon seeing the number displayed. Before he could speak, the voice of his mother-in-law, Samantha, came from the other side. "Darryl, do you know that tonight is our clan's annual gathering? Do you want our entire family to wait for you? Get your ass back here

immediately."

Darryl let out a wail, he had completely forgotten about the gathering!

He quickly got on his scooter in front of his classmates and sped away. Even though he was quite a considerable distance away, he could still hear the voices of his female classmates laughing at him.

A Land Rover was parked at the gate of a high-end residential community in Beihai City. A beautiful woman was standing in front of the car, looking at her phone impatiently.

"I'm back," said Darryl, struggling to catch his breath. He stopped his scooter and ran toward Lily. He could see that she was wearing the Worship of Crystal on her delicate feet. It seemed that she really liked the gift as she put it on so fast.

However, Lily merely gave Darryl a cold glance. "I'm warning you, today is the Lyndon clan's annual gathering, you best keep your mouth shut and not embarrass me."

"Oh," acknowledged Darryl.

Darryl had barely gotten in the car when he heard another complaint.

"Darryl, don't you have a suit? Do you know how

embarrassing it is to wear such bargained goods?" asked Samantha coldly.

Samantha was wearing a short dress that accentuated her beauty. A touch of maturity combined with seductiveness, she was truly an elegant sight to behold.

Darryl shrugged his shoulders without saying anything.

Samantha flew into a rage upon seeing Darryl's indifferent behavior. "Are you deaf or dumb? Look at how worthless you are, having you marry my daughter has cursed our family for eight generations."

"Mom, don't be mad," said Lily gently while driving.

"How can I not be mad?!" said Samantha as she pointed at Darryl. "I'm ordering you, after tonight's gathering, immediately go to the marriage registry and settle your divorce. Stop hanging around my house, do you understand me?"

Darryl sat there speechless.

At that moment, over a hundred cars were parked outside the Lyndon clan's villa, and without exception, all of them were luxurious cars.

When Lily and her family arrived, the hall was

already filled with people. Several people went up to greet Lily upon her arrival.

During such occasions, Darryl was treated as if he was invisible, no one cared to acknowledge him. However, he did not mind that, for he was only here to join in the fun. Once the food arrived, he was ready to dig in as much as he could.

However, some people enjoy causing trouble when there is none, such as William Lyndon. He appeared to have something against Darryl, every time they meet, he would hurl a couple of insults at Darryl.

"Yoohoo, aren't you Lyndon clan's good little son-in-law, Darryl?" asked William as he walked from afar, purposely speaking in a loud tone. "Darryl, I might have seen the clothes you're wearing at the bargain bin. What are they, ten bucks each?"

William's words made Darryl the focus of the entire hall. They gawked at him as if he was a monkey.

"Mind your words, this cost me 19 bucks," mumbled Darryl.

The crowd let out a burst of roaring laughter. A few ladies who tried to maintain their composure ultimately caved in and laughed.

"Just shut your mouth," said Lily in a hushed tone. She could feel her pride besmirched by Darryl yet

a rage. "You have no right touching this suit!"

Darryl merely smiled and said, "I think the suit you're wearing isn't appropriate for the occasion. This suit was designed by a famous Italian fashion designer named Francesco Martin. There's only one in existence, and it's currently housed in the Italian Fashion Museum. Hence the one you're wearing is a replica and not just that, it's a crude imitation. There's an uncut thread on your right pocket, you may take off that thread now. If my calculations are correct, this suit is only worth 200 bucks. Even my wife's 1,200 bucks dress has better quality than your suit."

"Another thing, this suit's inspiration was derived from his father, Petrarch, who had depression after his bankruptcy. He felt that the world was distorted. Therefore the stripes on this suit are crooked to represent his perspective of distorted reality," he continued.

"The fact that you're wearing this suit today, are you hoping for the Lyndon clan to go bankrupt as well?!" said Darryl as he smiled. His voice was not loud, yet his words echoed throughout the hall! 1

Silence! Total silence!

The crowd was shocked by his words, they found it hard to believe that those words came out of Darryl'

s mouth!

"Oh right, another thing I forgot to mention. My wife isn't too demanding with her clothes, but her standard for shoes is immense," his words came one after another. "The heels on her feet is The Worship of Crystal. If you've never heard of it, you can read it up online."

"Wow!"

"The Worship of Crystal? It truly is the real thing! How magnificent..."

The crowd was chattering with excitement! The women here were all of high-standing, how would they have not heard of The Worship of Crystal? One glance was enough to determine that the heels on Lily's feet were genuine!

That was The Worship of Crystal that cost 30 million! Try asking and see which woman would not love it?! Lily instantly became the focus of attention, and she was showered by praises and admirations.

Lily could not help but look at Darryl. After three years of marriage, this was the first time she felt that this piece of trash resembled a real man. But, how did Darryl know all this information? The Italian designer's name and inspiration, surely only a handful of people would know?

After some thinking, Lily deduced that Darryl must have secretly looked it up online beforehand!

"You're talking nonsense!" said William, pointing at Darryl angrily with embarrassment.

'Smack!'

Out of nowhere, Samantha slapped Darryl!

It was a hard slap, and in an instant, the whole crowd stood there in silence from the shock.

"Darryl, what are you babbling about? Apologize to William right now!" Samatha demanded coldly. 4

Chapter 5

The Lyndon clan's authority rested in the hands of the grandmother, and she favored William the most. Moreover, William's development is pretty decent, he has at least 30 million worth of assets. Any offense toward him would surely not end well.

"Mom, what are you doing?" asked Lily as she walked over and held her mother back.

Even though she detested Darryl, it was him that had gotten her out of her predicament.

Darryl covered his face, the red slap mark on his cheek was strongly visible. However, he had a small smile on his face. After three whole years, this was the first time Lily spoke on his behalf. Darryl simply turned and left, with a smile on his face.

"Get your ass back here, you piece of trash!" Although it was quite a distance, Darryl could still hear Samantha's shouts.

As the crowd watched the spectacle unfold, an aged voice could be heard from not far away.

"What's with all the commotion?" Grandmother Lyndon asked as she walked onto the stage. The originally bustling hall fell silent upon the sight of

her.

"Alright alright, no need for such formalities. Take a seat." Grandmother Lyndon waved her hand, and under the support of some people, slowly sat down on her chair. "According to my reliable sources, Donghai City's Platinum Corporation will have a new President tomorrow."

"Woah!"

The matter sparked a heated discussion among the crowd. The Lyndon clan has over ten advertising companies under them. In recent years, the Lyndons were keen for a partnership between them and Platinum Corporation for they were Donghai City's largest entertainment company. A partnership with them would give the Lyndons steady profits without loss.

However, backing the Platinum Corporation was none other than the Darby clan, who have always looked down on the Lyndons! Every single mention of a partnership had been rejected by them. With the arrival of a new president, the Lyndons had to give it a shot, hoping for a partnership!

"Who's willing to go discuss the partnership?" Grandmother Lyndon asked slowly as she looked around the hall. "Whoever that can successfully negotiate and secure the partnership, would be

considered making a huge contribution to our clan!"

"I'll go!"

"Granny, I'll go!"

"I'm willing as well!"

All of them were vying for that role, except for Lily. She knew that deep down, her standing in the clan was relatively low.

Upon seeing how enthusiastic they were, Grandmother Lyndon nodded her head in praise and smiled. She pointed at William and said, " William, why don't you go over there tomorrow and give it a try."

William let out a wide-eyed smile and nodded excitedly.

Darryl left alone and took a cab back home to sleep. He had to make up for the lack of sleep last night from the excitement of discovering that he had made a fortune.

Darryl slept especially soundly that night. The very next morning, he left for Platinum Corporation on his scooter right after preparing breakfast.

Uncle Drake had already told him that Pearl Hahn, the secretary, would be at the company waiting for him.

Platinum Corporation was situated in the bustling central business district of Donghai City. At the entrance of the company parked a row of luxurious cars, and quite a number of them belonged to the celebrities signed under the company.

It was company policy that every celebrity had to report to the company every day. If there were an emergency, they had to apply for leave. Therefore paparazzi frequently hang around the building, hoping to snap some celebrities' photos and sell them for a profit. If they managed to capture anything gossipy or scandalous, they would be able to make a huge profit.

'Damn, riding this scooter here surely seems uncouth, I should get a car...' thought Darryl as he parked his scooter at the company's entrance.

Suddenly, came the roar of an engine, followed by a 'bang' that nearly sent Darryl flying.

Darryl turned around and saw that a Porsche Cayenne had knocked his scooter. The Porsche was barely scratched, but the back of his scooter was completely dented.

'Son of a b*tch! My newly bought scooter! Broken again?' thought Darryl, as he felt like weeping but had no tears. He noticed a crowd started to form around him, judging and watching the commotion.

"Do you know how to drive?" said a beautiful lady, as she stepped out of the car.

"Wow..."

Sounds of exclamation came from the crowd, the appearance of this woman drew all their attention. She was wearing a sheath dress and a pair of high heels, her figure was alluring and toned. A woman like her would surely be the focal point wherever she went.

"Giselle?" Darryl exclaimed.

Giselle was here to sign her contract! Darryl smiled. Although she crashed into him and broke his scooter, it was a good thing that none of them were injured. He did not want to pursue this matter further and was about to walk over to greet Giselle when she saw that it was him.

"You? Darryl? What are you doing here?"

Giselle furrowed her eyebrows and thought that Darryl must be a security guard at Platinum Corporation.

"Are you blind? Do you even know how to drive?" said Giselle full of spite. Her car was only one week old, although it was only a minor scratch, she still felt hurt for it.

"But you're the one that knocked into me..." said

Darryl helplessly. "Why are you blaming me for it..."

"What's going on here?" Suddenly came the voice of a middle-aged man. It was the head of security, who had brought his guards with him to the scene.

The head of security was shocked to see what had happened. A crash between a scooter and a Porsche? He deduced that this beautiful lady was a celebrity, here to sign a contract. She must not be offended at any cost!

At the thought of that, the head of security pointed at Darryl and shouted, "What do you think you're doing? Don't you know that Platinum Corporation bans the entry of scooters into the premises?"

"There's such a rule? Who made it?" Darryl asked coldly.

"Who made it? I made it!" The head of security stepped forward. "Apologize to this lady immediately!"

Upon hearing what the head of security said, Giselle smirked and pointed at Darryl. "He must be the new security guard?"

The head of security was stunned and took a good look at Darryl. He was dressed in bargained goods and rode in on a scooter, he must be here to apply for the position of a security guard.

"Don't worry Miss, I won't be hiring him!" The head of security assured as he patted his chest. He looked back at Darryl and said, "Today is your first day on the job? Then let me declare that you're fired."

'This was not a healthy general practice for the company.' Darryl shook his head. The head of security was such a mean snob.

"I would like to see you try to fire me," said Darryl slowly with a grin. "Do you even have the authority to fire someone?" 1

"You!" The head of security pointed at Darryl. Surely this punk was mad? Indeed the head of security has no authority to fire anyone, but if Darryl was here to apply for the position of a security guard, as the head of security, he would not be giving him a good time.

"Darryl, you're such a disgusting person," said Giselle as she stomped her heels toward Darryl, eyeing him with contempt. "If the head of security can't fire you, then surely the deputy manager would be able to?"

After finishing her words, Giselle took out her cellphone and sent a text message. Within moments, a lady dressed in business attire came walking out of the company building.

This lady was attractive, and her height was roughly 165cm, and over 30 years of age. She was dressed in business attire and wore black high heel shoes, accentuating her femininity and maturity.

"Miss Peach."

Upon seeing the business lady's arrival, all the employees and security guards bowed and greeted her one after another. This lady was Platinum Corporation's deputy manager, Penelope Peach.

"Aunt Penelope," said Giselle, as she stepped forward to greet Penelope. It was because Penelope was Giselle's aunt, and through her connections as deputy manager, got Giselle a contract with Platinum Corporation.

Penelope nodded her head in acknowledgment, and turned her attention to Darryl, and said, "Apologize to Giselle."

What?

Darryl felt that it was a funny moment. He asked, " Why do I have to apologize? Who are you?"

"This guy must've hit himself on the head, can't even recognize the deputy manager." whispered some of the employees.

"Yeah, is he looking for trouble by not

apologizing?"

Penelope stared at Darryl with cold eyes and frowned. "You're here to apply for the position of a security guard, yes? Who hired you for this job? It does not matter. Since you're not willing to apologize, as deputy manager, I hereby inform you that you're fired. Get on your scooter and get lost."

"Me? Get lost?" Darryl pointed at himself and laughed.

"Are you deaf? Can't you understand?" Giselle said coldly through her teeth. "I'll take it as my unlucky day to meet a fly like you. Even though you scratched my car, I won't ask you for compensation. Get out of my sight immediately." 1

'Beep beep beep!'

At that moment came the honking of a Bentley, which stopped in front of the crowd. A girl who looked slightly more than 20 years of age, wearing a black business suit and glasses came out of the car.

"President, I am so sorry I'm late," said Miss Pearl, the secretary, as she hastily walked to the front of Darryl and did a 90-degree bow. 2

Chapter 6

Darryl glanced at Pearl. If he was not mistaken, she should be the secretary his uncle mentioned about.

“Sorry President, I didn't mean to be late. There was a traffic jam...” Pearl explained softly, afraid to look Darryl in the eye, and merely bowed.

“Pearl, what nonsense are you talking about!” Penelope stepped forward. Her beautiful appearance was slightly tinged with anger. “This is our company’s new security guard, why are you addressing him as president?”

“Security guard?” Pearl searched inside her handbag and took out a photo. She compared the photo with Darryl, and hurriedly replied Penelope. “ Miss Peach, there is no mistake. This is our company’s new president, Mister Darby.”

“What!?” The crowd stood there with their mouths agape, and stared at Darryl in disbelief!

“Uh Miss, you... you have to be mistaken?” Giselle bit her lip tightly and looked at Pearl. “This guy is Darryl, he was my classmate in high school. Look at how uncouth he is, how could he be the president?”

How was this possible! Why would a president be

wearing bargained goods and riding an electric bike? Moreover, during the very recent high school reunion, none of them cared to acknowledge Darryl!

"Mistaken?" Pearl took out her cellphone and showed it to Giselle. "Look closely, the patriarch of the Darby clan personally told me that the name of the new president is Darryl Darby! There is also a photo of the president shared in the conversation records, see for yourself!"

Woosh!

Giselle's mind went blank in an instant! She could feel her legs weaken, she dared not look Darryl in the eye anymore.

Meanwhile, Penelope bit her lip tightly as well. As the deputy manager of Platinum Corporation, she was of a higher rank than many of the common employees. However, Platinum Corporation still belonged to the Darby clan. She could not believe that just moments ago she had threatened to fire the president...

"Mister Darryl..." Penelope's face was pallor, she walked up to Darryl and whispered to him gently.

"I don't think that's the right address," chuckled Darryl. "Giselle was my classmate, and you're her aunt. I don't think it's fitting for you to call me mister."

"Mister Darryl, I was wrong... I was wrong, I truly know that I did wrong..." said Penelope softly with her head lowered.

Darryl waved his hand and interrupted her words, he turned around and looked in the direction of the head of security. At that moment, the head of security was dumbfounded, his body staggered back, almost falling onto the ground.

"You're fired," Darryl merely said those words to him and entered the building.

A group of people followed Darryl with might, which prompted discussion among the employees at the ground floor level. Giselle and Penelope followed suit as well, but with a sense of humility. Although it was hard for them to walk on heels, they still trotted as fast as they could to follow close.

It has to be said, Platinum Corporation was extremely grand. Its interior was decorated to resemble a palace. News regarding the new president's arrival spread across the entire company, employees along the way bowed and greeted Darryl.

The president's office was on the 11th floor. Darryl sat in his chair when he arrived at his office.

'How fancy,' thought Darryl in admiration. Ever

since he was banished from his clan three years ago, he never had the opportunity to visit such fancy places.

"President..."

Giselle and Penelope followed him into his office and stood obediently in front of his desk.

To be fair, although Penelope was Giselle's aunt, she had gone to great lengths to take good care of her appearance. They looked like sisters standing side by side.

"Mister Darryl... I sincerely apologize..." Penelope bit her lip, hesitated for a moment, before she continued. "Mister Darryl, will Giselle still be able to sign her contract with our company? As long as you allow her the contract, I'll do anything you ask."

"Anything I ask?" Darryl laughed out loud. As he was about to speak, Pearl knocked on the door and walked in.

"Mister Darby, it's William of the Lyndon clan, he's here to talk business."

William Lyndon? The mere mention of him made Darryl's blood boil.

Darry chuckled, "Tell him to piss off."

"Yes, sir."

***

At the Lyndon clan's villa. Grandmother Lyndon called upon an emergency meeting, hundreds of family members were gathered around.

"Granny, this Platinum Corporation is too ridiculous!" William was so angry that his face was bright red. "I went there to discuss a partnership and they told me to piss off, piss off! Clearly, Platinum Corporation looks down on us Lyndons."

The Lyndons shook their heads one after another. There was nothing they could do, Platinum Corporation has the power to behave in that manner. They were angry but they could not complain.

"Enough," Grandmother Lyndon said as she waved her hand. "I've heard that Platinum Corporation's new president is just slightly over 20 years old. He is young and promising, which gives him the right to be reckless. Although they have a bad attitude, we Lyndons still have to continue to strike a deal with them, who among you is willing to go?"

What?!

They looked at each other in shock. The Lyndons still intend to discuss and negotiate a partnership? Platinum Corporation had already told William to

piss off, and yet they are still requested to seek their cooperation? Who would be willing to do that!?

Grandmother Lyndon let out a long sigh. She knew that no one was shameless enough to go there again. However, if they could form a partnership with Platinum Corporation, the benefits brought to the Lyndon clan would be immense! They cannot give up!

William clenched his fists and sneered out of a sudden. He stood up and spoke, "Granny, how about we let Lily try?"

"William, you!" Lily bit her lip tightly, she knew that William was the type to cause trouble, but she did not expect him to be such a wicked person.

"What's wrong?" William asked. "You're a member of the Lyndon clan, and the company you're in charge of lacks a funding of five million bucks right? Let's ignore the fact that the company is running badly. You're still not willing to put in this effort to help your clan?"

Finishing his words, William went to Grandmother Lyndon's side. "Granny, I suggest Lily negotiate this partnership!"

Grandmother Lyndon nodded her head. William was her favorite in the clan, and upon hearing his

words, she looked at Lily. "Lilybud, this matter is placed in your hands. Go to Platinum Corporation on time tomorrow and negotiate a partnership."

"Granny, I..."

Lily wanted to speak, but Grandmother Lyndon merely waved her hand. "That's enough, we will dismiss the meeting."

At the sound of Grandmother Lyndon's words, hundreds of them left one after another. Each of them rejoiced at the fact that they were not the one that was chosen.

Returning home, Lily felt uneasy in her heart. This was an impossible task. How was she supposed to negotiate this partnership tomorrow?

Lily felt terribly upset, she simply did not want to think about this matter anymore. She called her best friends Jade and Phoebe over to vent.

When Lily's best friends arrived, sure enough, her mood turned ecstatic.

"Lily, where's that piece of trash?" Jade asked as she sat on the sofa, gently sipping on a glass of wine.

Lily knew who Jade was referring to and laughed. " He left after making breakfast, he hasn't been back yet."

"Lily, you're so patient." Jade placed her wine glass down. "Even I could not bear how hopeless he looked. Your company is lacking in funds, if you had a capable husband, even if he couldn't fork out five million, at least he could provide two to three million bucks. Meanwhile, Darryl can't even provide 30,000 bucks."

As Jade was talking, the sound of the door opening could be heard. Darryl came in holding a black sack, his whole body covered in dirt and grime.

Damn it, it started raining when Darryl was on the way back from his company. His scooter was broken earlier this morning when it was knocked by Giselle so he had to walk back drenched in the rain.

"Yo, speaking of the devil," said Jade as she glanced at Darryl.

Darryl could not bother to acknowledge her, instead, he just placed the black sack on the sofa.

"Darryl, you still dare to show your face around here?" said Samantha as she came out of her bedroom, looking angry.

If it was not for Darryl's conflict with William, why would William suggest Lily be the one to negotiate the deal?

Samantha glared at Darryl. "You're behaving more

and more improper. Putting aside your conflict with William during yesterday's gathering, you still dare to show your face around here? Don't you know that you're leaving your footprints everywhere in the house by wearing your shoes inside? Another thing, that ugly bag of yours is so dirty, and you just place it on the sofa? Do you still want to live here or not? You're welcomed to leave if you don't want to!"

Darryl heaved a deep breath. Indeed he was the one that dirtied the house, but was he also not the one responsible for cleaning up the house all these years?

Darryl was not angry, for if he minded Samantha's words he would have been driven mad way earlier.

Darryl put on an indifferent attitude and approached Lily, and spoke to her with a wide smile on his face. "Honey, your company is in dire need of five million bucks, right? I have here..."

"Woah." Jade who sat at the side let out a laugh, interrupting Darryl's words, and glared at him. " This guy is truly shameless beyond redemption. Nevermind the fact that you're useless, yet you still want to remind people of their problems. Lily needs five million bucks, which is something a piece of trash like you can never help with, and yet you still brought it up."

Chapter 7

"Jade, stop it already," whispered Lily softly after hearing Jade scolding Darryl.

Yesterday at the annual gathering William showed off his suit, yet it was Darryl who stood up and helped Lily relieve the embarrassment.

"Lily, you're too soft-hearted. If it was me, I would have divorced him already," said Jade coldly. "After being married to him for so long, yet you both haven't consummated your marriage. I don't know how you can handle facing this piece of trash every day,"

"Jade," called out Darryl as he stared deeply at her. He could not hold it in anymore and made a step forward.

It had to be said that Jade was gorgeous, she was wearing a short tight skirt, exposing her fair legs.

"My wife's company needs five million, why would you assume that I couldn't help?" said Darryl with a smile. "I remember you said that if I can fork out five million, you'll call me daddy?"

"Yes, I did say that." Jade slowly stood up. "Show me then, if you can't, you'll call me your mommy

then?"

"Excuse me," Darryl sat down casually on a chair. He held up his dirty sack upside down and poured out the contents onto the table.

It was at this moment, the whole house was as silent as the grave!

Wads of red-colored cash notes poured out like a waterfall, the sofa could not even contain them all and many scattered on the floor.

(TN: Original RAW mentioned he poured out the contents onto the table, but then mentioned sofa.)

"This...this is..."

Jade stared in amazement, she was so astonished that she could not say a single word.

"All this cash... Is it really five million?!" Samantha walked over too, her initial anger now somewhat simmered.

Lily's best friends Jade and Phoebe felt their legs weakened. Five million bucks in cash notes in front of their eyes, that kind of visual impact was indescribable.

"Call me daddy then, I'm listening," said Darryl as he stroked his hair.

Jade eventually recovered from the shock.

She looked at Darryl and sneered, "Darryl, don't think I'm not aware that Lily only gives you two hundred bucks a day. This amount here, I'm sure it' s not clean, right?"

Her words made Lily's body tremble, she walked over quickly and grabbed Darryl's arm, and brought him to the bedroom.

After closing the door, Lily whispered to him, " Darryl, where did that money come from, is it from dirty sources?"

"It's clean, don't worry and use it, I borrowed it from a friend," explained Darryl after taking a deep breath.

Darryl was now the President of Platinum Corporation, but he did not want to reveal his identity too early because Lily would only think he was lucky.

"Friend? Where do you even find a friend?" said Lily as she anxiously stomped her foot. "After being married for so long, why do I not know that you still have friends?"

Darryl felt a pain in his chest. Indeed, after being banished from his clan, all his friends avoided him like the plague.

Maybe it was because his pride was hurt, Darryl

turned around and walked to the door wanting to leave. “A classmate from back then got rich after starting a business of his own so he lent me the money. Just use it first,” said Darryl.

A few steps out of the room, he could hear Lily softly say, “I’ll return you this money as soon as I can.”

Both her best friends Jade and Phoebe had left.

“She didn't even call me daddy, can’t afford to play this game it seems?” Darryl mumbled to himself as he sat on the sofa and played with his phone.

These few days, Donghai City did not seem to be at peace.

Everyone knew that the largest entertainment company in Donghai City changed its new boss, and countless advertising agencies were seeking a partnership with them.

However, this new boss was very odd, even partners that had worked together with the company previously were rejected.

All these companies did not wish to give up easily. Given that Platinum Corporation was not partnering with anyone at the moment, they could dominate this big piece of cake themselves if they were to successfully secure a partnership!

Those who came to seek partnership were Donghai City's first-class families. It was not expected that the second class Lyndon clan also wished to seek a partnership.

It was rumored that William from the Lyndon clan was sent previously but got escorted out by Platinum Corporation, yet they did not give up and sent Lily, how shameless. 1

Just when everyone was waiting to laugh at Lily, a piece of surprising news was announced! Platinum Corporation agreed to partner with the Lyndon clan!

This news shocked the whole of Donghai City! Are they out of their minds? Partnering with a second class family?!

Lily was pleasantly surprised, she had yet to meet Platinum Corporation's president, but the president 's secretary told her that she could come in to sign a contract the next day.

Oriental Pearl Hotel, Donghai City.

This was the most renowned hotel in Donghai City, the average spending here per person starts from a thousand bucks! Grandmother Lyndon was exceptionally happy today. She had booked the entire hotel to celebrate Lily's success and had instructed everyone in the Lyndon clan to attend!

Not only that, but she had also invited many guests. Being able to sign a contract with Platinum Corporation was extremely great news which you would want everybody to know!

In the hotel, Lily became the crowd's center of attention as she sat at the first table.

Darryl followed beside Lily, their seats were not yet warmed when they heard a reprimand from behind them.

"Get up, is this somewhere you belong? Give your seat to Miss Yvonne immediately!"

This sentence came from William, but now there was a young and beautiful woman standing beside him.

Upon seeing this woman, Samantha stood up without hesitation and said, "Quickly give your seat, you piece of trash!"

Samantha knew that this woman should not be messed with, for she was Grandmother Lyndon's guest, Yvonne Yung, the young mistress of the Young clan.

The Youngs had been in the antique business for generations, it was rumored that all of their collections in total could be sold for at least two billion bucks!

Yvonne was invited by Grandmother Lyndon. She had noticed Lily from first sight, noting that she had on a pair of extremely beautiful high heels. Was that not The Worship of Crystal?

Everyone knew that Yvonne loved The Worship of Crystal but she did not own one. It was not that she could not afford it, but The Worship of Crystal was globally limited to only 99 pairs! This pair of heels was not something one could get just because they have the money, they need to have the right connections to have access to the heels.

"Move aside, are you blind? Can't you see Miss Yvonne here?" William shouted angrily as Darryl did not react to him. 1

Darryl seemed like he did not hear a word as he continued to munch on some nuts.

"Are you deaf? Can't you hear what William said?" Samantha said in fury.

It would not be worth the loss if Yvonne was offended because of Darryl. Although he had lent five million bucks to them, Darryl was still a piece of trash in Samantha's heart. It was just pure luck that he was acquainted with a rich classmate.

"How about...you give your seat for now..." Lily said as she looked at Darryl.

"Okay," Darryl replied happily at Lily's request. He got up and walked toward the table behind.

William chuckled and pulled the seat backward and said, "Miss Young, please be seated. That guy is just our clan's live-in son-in-law, living for free with us yet acting like he matters. He is just an idiot, don' t be bothered by him."

"Alright," Yvonne softly answered. She sat down and gazed at The Worship of Crystal. 1

It was beautiful. Perhaps any woman who wore it would have their elegance elevated a few levels.

"Miss Lily, I'd like to ask..." Yvonne could not help herself. "I'd like to ask, where did you purchase this pair of heels?"

Lily smiled with her heart overjoyed. Everyone knew that Yvonne was a renowned beauty in Donghai City, but now her eyes were full of envy for her. Of course, Lily would be overjoyed.

"A friend gifted it to me," Lily replied softly.

"Do... Do you mind troubling your friend to help me purchase a pair too? Don't worry, I'm willing to pay double the price for your friend's help!" Yvonne said.

Yvonne's voice was not loud, but people seated

nearby could not help but turn around to have a look.

The Worship of Crystal was priced at 30 million bucks! You could tell that the Young clan was very wealthy from her offering to pay double the price.

Both Yvonne and Lily were amazing beauties, and having them sitting next to each other was real eye candy. Yvonne was wearing a short skirt, showing off her pair of fair and slender long legs which attracted many men. They both have their unique qualities, winning the stares of many.

"My daughter, what else could you be thinking? Quickly call this friend of yours," Samantha urged as she thought how great of a chance this would be in making a connection with the Young clan's young mistress.

Lily bit her lips and nodded her head. She took out her cellphone and called Ashton Adagio. 1

Chapter 8

It only took three seconds for Ashton to answer the call.

Lily pushed the loudspeaker button.

Samantha, who stood beside, started smiling upon seeing Lily's cellphone screen. "My dear daughter, so Ashton was the one that got you The Worship of Crystal. He's a good man, be sure to appreciate him, my dear."

Samantha purposely said it loudly, not forgetting to glance at Darryl. Compared to Ashton, Darryl was worthless. Ashton mentioned before that if Lily were to marry him, he would be willing to pay a dowry of 20 million bucks!

On the other end of the phone, Ashton was sitting by the sidewalk. Not long ago, he had received a phone call, informing him that the Darby clan had revoked all his fundings!

Ashton had a meltdown upon hearing the news. Without the Darby clan's support, he would be next to nothing! He was subsequently informed that he had offended someone he should not have.

Until now, Ashton still could not figure out who he

had offended!

"Ashton, I want to ask you if you can get me another pair of Worship of Crystal?" Lily asked over the phone.

Although Ashton had a meltdown, he forced a smile seeing that it was Lily who called. "Lily, you're referring to the replica, right?"

"Replica?"

Lily and Yvonne exchanged looks with each other. They could not mistake an imitation for the real thing.

"Yeah, didn't I give you a pair of replicas that cost 3 00,000?" Ashton continued, "But wasn't that pair thrown by your worthless husband? That pair is still at my house right now, if you want it, I can get it for you."

Upon hearing those words, Lily's beautiful face was full of confusion!

The Worship of Crystal that she was currently wearing, was it not gifted by Ashton? Other than him, who else would give her a 30-million gift?!

Lily ended the call and recalled the day Darryl sent her to work, he had mentioned that he was going to buy her The Worship of Crystal...

On that thought, Lily could not help to look at

Darryl.

Darryl held a pair of chopsticks in his hand, while the others had not even started eating, he was about to finish his second bowl of rice. Everybody at the table with him looked at him with spite and sat as far away from him as they could.

Lily sighed. What was she thinking, how could Darryl be the one who gifted her the heels? It was absolutely impossible.

After half a minute, Darryl finally placed his chopsticks down. He wiped his mouth while looking at Yvonne.

Yvonne was an interesting woman. Darryl noticed she wore a white bracelet on her wrist. It was obvious to everyone that this bracelet was not cheap, but how many would know that this bracelet was an antique?

The Darby clan had a vast collection of antiques. Darryl was around six to seven years old when he could already differentiate antiques.

When the world's number one appraiser, Master Stellan Smith visited the clan as a guest, he had even learned how to appraise from him for two months.

The bracelet that Yvonne had on seemed delicate

and exquisite, and should be a Tang Dynasty era handicraft. It would fetch up to 20 million worth in value in today's market.

"Everyone quiet down."

At that moment, Grandmother Lyndon walked onto the stage, looking extremely cheerful.

"Quick, Lilybud, tell us how you negotiated with Platinum Corporation," Grandmother Lyndon asked impatiently as she sat down.

Lily stood up awkwardly, and after some deep thought finally spoke. "I... When I reached Platinum Corporation, I didn't say a thing, nor did I even meet the president, and I was notified that I can sign the contract."

"Wow!"

Lily's words triggered a furor among the crowd!

"So Lily didn't even do anything and got the contract?"

"Yeah, and here I thought she would be capable to do so, turns out it was just good luck."

Hearing those discussions, William stood up and stepped forward. "Granny, I got escorted out of Platinum Corporation, but today Lily got in. They must have felt that we are sincere, thus deciding to

partner with us! Even if it wasn't Lily who went there today, anyone else would've been successful too!"

It was obvious that William wanted a part of the credit.

Grandmother Lyndon had always favored William, so it was no surprise when she nodded and agreed, " Lilybud, the credit for this assignment isn't yours alone, William played a part in this as well."

William was happy upon hearing what Grandmother Lyndon said, and gave a 90-degree bow to her. "Granny, as a son of the Lyndon clan, I' m willing to sacrifice! I've heard rumors that there' s a new celebrity under Platinum Corporation who goes by the name of Giselle Lindt. She's a beautiful woman, and I assume that Platinum Corporation would want to style her. If this task was granted to our clan, we would surely earn a lot of money! Tomorrow I'm willing to represent the Lyndons to negotiate this deal!"

"Great!"

Grandmother Lyndon nodded her head in praise. " Granny did not love you for naught."

Lily and Samantha exchanged looks and felt uncomfortable. This gathering was meant to celebrate Lily's success, but the limelight had been

snatched by William instead. Now that the Lyndons have established a partnership with Platinum Corporation, William's negotiation tomorrow would no doubt be a success. By then, the credit would be all his.

Even though Lily felt unhappy with the outcome, she remained silent, after all, Wiliam was Granny's favorite.

"Haha, make sure you guys are eating well, today's feast will be my treat!" William laughed heartily.

"Waiter, come, bring the wine!" William exclaimed.

A moment later, two waiters in qipao dresses brought the menu over.

"Greetings sir, this is our wine list, what would you like us to serve you?"

William waved his hand, he was full of energy and excitement during such a joyous occasion. "There's no need for the list! Bring a bottle of your most expensive wine to every table! Remember, only the most expensive!"

After a brief moment, a line of waiters brought the wine over. William lifted his wine glass with a huge smile. "Today we will drink until we drop, cheers to all of you!"

William's standing in the clan was at its highest at

the moment, almost everybody would want to be on his good side, and they toasted with their respective glasses. 1

They were served rounds and rounds of food and wine. William noticed that it was getting late and drunkenly waved his hand to call out to the waiter.

"Bring me the bill. I'll be paying by card!"

William was seated beside Yvonne. He took out his bank card in a way that he thought to be unrestrained, purposefully making it louder than needed. He eyed Yvonne as he spoke. Was there anyone that did not want to impress a beauty?

The crowd was in awe upon seeing William's bank card.

It was an Amethyst Bank platinum card!

Those that own an Amethyst Bank card, would be required to have a net worth of at least one million. To own a gold card, they would need to have five million in their account; for a platinum cardholder, he would be required to have no less than 10 million bucks!

William's total net worth was roughly 30 million. As a business person, however, net worth did not equate to their bank balance, for most of their wealth would be used as investment, and hardly

held onto as cash.

William had saved up this 10 million in cash for many years. He had only received the platinum card yesterday, naturally, he would like to show it off a bit.

Sure enough, even Yvonne Young herself could not help but to take an extra look upon the card's appearance.

The Young clan's antiques were worth over two billion in total, but that was Yvonne's father's money after all. Although Yvonne was said to be rich and beautiful, her bank balance was not even enough to reach 10 million bucks. If she wanted to buy The Worship of Crystal, she would still have to ask her father to sell two antiques for cash.

William's face was full of amazement as he saw Yvonne taking a couple of looks at him, his heart was full of excitement.

William looked at the waiter and said, "Today I'll be paying for every table, except for this one!"

After finishing his words, William pointed at Darryl' s table. Those sitting at that table had a low standing in the Lyndon clan and he was not afraid to offend them.

"Darryl, do you know why I'm not footing the bill

for you?" William said as he stood up and looked at Darryl. "It's because you didn't offer Miss Yvonne your seat! You're too accustomed to your bullsh*t! How dare you sit at the front looking so worthless? You made Miss Yvonne unhappy, and I have to punish you on her behalf."

Finishing his words, he looked back at Yvonne. " Miss Yvonne, don't you worry, I'll teach him a lesson on your behalf! Every table should cost at least 10,000 bucks, Darryl would surely not be able to afford it."

Yvonne did not say a word and merely smiled lightly. 2

The waiter took William's card away, and William continued speaking to Yvonne. "Miss Yvonne, don't worry, you like The Worship of Crystal, right? I have lots of friends, I'll have them make inquiries and purchase the heels for you!"

Indeed William has many friends, but they were all a pack of rogues. The thought of them being able to get their hands on a pair of The Worship of Crystal was a foolish dream.

"Thank you," said Yvonne as she gave a polite smile and gently nodded her head.

At that moment, two waiters hastily walked up to William and bowed.

"We're sorry sir, it would seem that your card has insufficient funds."

William flew into a rage. "You've gotta be f*cking kidding me? I have 11 million in my card and you're telling me that I have insufficient funds?"

"We're sorry sir, the total bill is 38.26 million." 5

Chapter 9

Haha! Darryl nearly laughed out loud upon hearing the price of the bill. This William was a real fool! None of them knew anything about the wine that was ordered, except for Darryl. It was a Romanée-Conti, which retail price was set at over one million bucks, and more than 30 bottles were distributed around the dining hall!

"Are you f*cking kidding me?" William panicked. He stood up and said to the waiter, "Over 300 of us Lyndons ate an amount of over 30 million bucks? The average cost per person is 100,000 bucks then? Alright, get your manager to see me."

The two waiters looked at each other helplessly, they had no choice but to call their manager over.

The manager was a 30-year-old young man, who wore a neat suit

"Do you intend to continue operating your hotel?" William stepped forward and shouted at the manager while pointing at him. "An average cost of 100,000 per person? Believe it or not, I'm going to report you to the Consumers Association."

The manager was not the slightest bit worried and

merely stood there. "Excuse me, sir. The wine you ordered was a limited edition Romanée-Conti. Only 800 bottles are manufactured per year internationally and its market price is 1.63 million per bottle. Sir, we even gave you a discount for ordering over 30 bottles."

William immediately flew into a rage and grabbed onto the manager's collar. "It's a limited edition wine and you guys have over 30 bottles here?! Who the f*ck wants to order this bottle of wine anyway?"

The manager put on a fake smile. Being a manager for about five to six years, he has seen many famous and important people around Donghai City. However, it was his first time seeing an incapable person acting like he was rich.

The manager steadied his emotions. "Kind sir, let me be clear about three things. Firstly, you said that you wanted the best wine, and we have the security camera footage as proof. Secondly, the wine we provide is certified authentic, I'm not sure why my boss has so many bottles of limited edition wines either. Lastly, please be respectful."

Thud!

At the end of his sentence, ten or so burly men barged in from the door. They wore black short-sleeved shirts, showing off their huge tattoos.

They were the Oriental Pearl Hotel's security guards. As Donghai City's most luxurious hotel, no one dared to cause trouble on the premises. Everyone knew that the Oriental Pearl's boss came from a rough background. Nobody would dare to be ignorant and cause trouble here.

Leading them was a man wearing a Chinese tunic suit, holding a cane in his hand. This man was none other than the boss of Oriental Pearl, Wayne Woodall.

Wayne was dressed in an old-fashioned manner, some might even mistake him for a 70-year-old man. In truth, he was just 30 years old.

Naturally, when Wayne brought in these burly men, the Lyndons panicked and went up to apologize.

William's face sweated bullets. That was Wayne Woodall! The boss of Oriental Pearl Hotel, one of the earliest to dabble in rough business in Donghai City!

Upon seeing his boss, the manager spoke again with confidence. "You Lyndons are truly a second class clan. You said it yourself that you wanted the best wine, and now you're refusing to pay?"

"No, no!" Exclaimed William as he was taken aback. "We'll pay, we'll pay..." He looked at Grandmother

Lyndon as he said that.

Where could he find over 30 million bucks! If the bill was not paid, William would probably be leaving the place on a stretcher!

"Mister Woodall." Grandmother Lyndon could not sit still any longer, and under some people's assistance, went up to Wayne and bowed.

Age-wise, Grandmother Lyndon was way older than Wayne, but in terms of status, she could not afford to offend a man like him.

"The Lyndon clan made a mistake." Grandmother Lyndon apologized with a bow. "My grandson is young and reckless, and I apologize on his behalf. We will pay the bill immediately."

Upon seeing Granny bowing, the children of the Lyndon clan felt a sense of unease. What could they have done? No one asked William to do what he did, wanting to drink the most expensive wine!

Some of the younger members of the Lyndon clan looked up that bottle of wine online, and indeed it was over a million a bottle.

William apologized profusely as well after seeing his Granny doing so. The entire Lyndon clan hurriedly tried to put in some good words

Only Darryl stood up to walk out, not because of the

situation, but rather he was old friends with Wayne!

When Wayne was just starting his business, he had visited the Darby clan to negotiate a deal. During that time, he had no money nor power, and none of the Darbys wanted to receive him. 1

At that time, Darryl was merely 14 years old, but he felt that Wayne carried himself extraordinarily well. He decided to invest 300,000 bucks in him, which made Wayne teared up in gratitude.

In truth, it was more of a sponsor rather than an investment, for Darryl did not ask for any shares. This happened so many years ago that he had almost forgotten about it. He could not believe that he would meet Wayne again on this very day, having started a successful business and becoming the boss of Oriental Pearl Hotel.

He definitely did not make a mistake by investing in him at that time.

Darryl hunched forward and tried to sneak out of the place, not wanting to be recognized by him.

"Hey there friend, hang on," exclaimed Wayne as he walked toward Darryl.

The Lyndons were full of rage. Was Darryl mad? A simple apology and payment were all that was needed to settle this matter, but he decided to

escape instead?

"Lily, what's going on in your husband's mind? Escaping?!" A few ladies of the Lyndon clan said.

"Yeah, everyone advised you to divorce him quickly, and yet you didn't listen!"

"Now he's trying to escape, Mister Wayne would surely be mad, and us Lyndons would have to suffer the consequences!" The ladies shouted while pointing at Lily.

Meanwhile, Lily could only bite her lip. Any sense of pride left in her was lost upon Darryl's attempt at escaping, she would rather stick her head into a hole on the ground at that point.

"Mister Wayne!" William called out and quickly walked toward him, pointing at Darryl. "Mister Wayne, please don't be mad, this guy is our clan's live-in son-in-law, he's always been a useless piece of trash. Him wanting to escape is none of our clan' s business! We'll pay the bill right now..."

"F*ck off!" Wayne roared as he pointed at William.

Wayne's booming voice frightened William and sent shivers down his spine. He dared not utter a sound and stood there in a daze.

Wayne was in disbelief! He could not believe that in his lifetime would he meet this young man again!

Seven years ago, he lacked the funds to start his business. No one was willing to help him, after all, he was a ruffian back then. Only the Darby clan's second young master, a boy only 14 years of age, had sponsored him a sum of money! Darryl gave him 300,000 without asking for anything in return! Darryl had Wayne's eternal gratitude, and he would never forget what he had done for him!

If not for this sum of money, Wayne would have been living on the streets a long time ago!

In recent years after his entrepreneurship success, Wayne had people inquire about this young man. He only learned that this man had been banished by the Darbys, his whereabouts unknown.

Today Wayne merely saw Darryl's back, but it was enough for him to recognize who he was!

"Second young master, is it you..."

There was a slight tremble in Wayne's voice, it was hard to imagine that a man who had seen much of life would exercise caution like a kid.

Damn it! There was no way to hide!

Darryl gritted his teeth and turned around to face Wayne.

Thump!

In an instant, Wayne was completely stupefied and knelt on the ground!

"I've finally found you, I've been looking for you for three whole years! I'm eternally grateful for your benevolence!" Wayne exclaimed with excitement, tears streaming down his face.

Every person in Oriental Pearl Hotel dropped their jaws immediately.

Astonishing!

Utterly astonishing!

A boss whose net worth was in the billions was kneeling on the ground, vehemently excited like a child!

Darryl simply stood there calmly without any signs of emotion! He showed no sign of happiness nor sadness! 2

What is the meaning of this?!

"Mister Wayne, what's going on? Did you fall?" Darryl quickly bent over and picked him up, all the while winking repeatedly at him.

What kind of man was Wayne? Upon seeing Darryl's action, he immediately understood that Darryl did not want to reveal his true identity.

"I wasn't standing properly..." Wayne smoothly

replied and heaved a sigh of relief. "I'm sorry, I must've mistaken you for someone else..."

"Phew..."

Upon hearing those words, members of the Lyndon clan let out a sigh of relief as well.

Turned out Wayne simply was not standing properly ...

That was right, how would a piece of trash be acquainted with Mister Wayne.

"Listen to me," said Grandmother Lyndon eventually, while gazing around the dining hall.

"This meal cost over 38 million bucks, William won't be paying this sum alone," she said.

William's face lit up with joy upon hearing Granny's words, truly she treated him best!

"This meal will cost an average of 100,000 bucks per person, all of you shall use your own money for it," she continued.

The crowd nodded one after another. Even though the Lyndons were considered a second class clan, 100,000 bucks was still not a big deal to them.

However, two people among the crowd that had a sour look on their faces!

Naturally, they were Lily and Samantha. Their

company met with some challenges recently and they had just resolved the five-million issue, as such their savings had been emptied a few days ago.

"Lily, you don't look so good. Don't tell me you don 't even have enough money to split the bill?" laughed William. He knew of course that Lily was broke, and he purposefully said it loudly to embarrass her.

"I..."

All eyes were on her, and Lily could feel her face blushing red. After a while only did she answered, "I ... I didn't bring my bank card." 2

Chapter 10

"Haha, forgotten to bring your bank card, what a splendid reason!" William laughed loudly and looked at Samantha, "Aunt Samantha, did you forget to bring yours too?"

"Yeah..."

"Hahaha!" Everyone could not hold in their laughter. A young girl blurted, "Darryl must have forgotten his card too, this family came here to eat a free meal!"

Lily bit her lips hard as she felt helpless. It was at this moment that Darryl stepped forward.

"I brought my card, it's just that..."

Before Darryl could finish his sentence, William snatched his card over and passed it to the waiter, " Come, let's see whether this card has even 300,000 bucks in it!"

Lily stomped her feet anxiously, thinking how his card would have 300,000 when she only gave him a daily allowance of 200 bucks.

He would be making a fool out of himself.

Lily could see that everyone around was holding in

their laughter, waiting to laugh at him being a joke.

At this moment, nobody noticed Yvonne standing up slowly. Her beautiful face was full of shock!

"I didn't see it wrongly, right? Amethyst Bank's black card?!" exclaimed Yvonne.

Mocking laughter filled the hall initially, but now it turned as silent as the grave.

Yvonne's words seemingly turned everyone into stone!

This bank card was remarkably pretty, it was all-black, laced in gold, and had a diamond engraved on it. Two words were beautifully written on the bottom right corner of the bank card: Darryl Darby.

A black card from Amethyst Bank!

How was that possible?! William's platinum card needed to have at least ten million savings in it.

Moving up the tier was the diamond card, that required a hundred million in savings.

Moving further up was the VIP card, whose cardholder's savings should not be lesser than five hundred million!

The highest-ranking card was the black card that would ask for a total of one billion savings!

Perhaps in the whole of Donghai City, there would

not be more than three of these cards! No one at the venue including Wayne could possess it!

Lily and Samantha were both stunned, they could not say a single word!

"This...this is just a sticker for bank cards, right?" Somebody among the crowd suddenly blurted out.

At this moment, everyone was relieved. It must be some kind of sticker! Such an uncouth looking person could not possibly own a black card.

"Haha, Darryl, you're one disgusting man," laughed William loudly. "Don't mind that you're poor, yet you try to act like a wealthy person."

Darryl did not say anything at all and just smiled.

Lily came forward and saw the waiter had taken the card away to make payment. "Darryl, get rid of that sticker when we get home, aren't you shameful? Also...does...does your card have sufficient money in it?" Lily could not help but ask softly.

"It's enough, I saved the allowance you gave me every day. Including my savings from before, it's enough," Darryl said.

Hahahaha!

Although Darryl's voice was soft, everyone heard him and they laughed again.

After paying the bill, everyone in the Lyndon clan left. Wayne discreetly held Darryl's arm and brought him into his car.

"Second Young Master, I finally meet you again..." Wayne was excited, speaking to Darryl as he drove.

"Where are you taking me?"

"I'm bringing you to meet a few people, they are very eager to see you!" Wayne's hands were trembling. "You must come with me..."

"Fine, fine, fine. I'll go with you, just drive carefully," assured Darryl.

Son of a b*tch, why was this guy so excited? He could not even hold the steering wheel properly.

The car sped away and arrived at a bar's entrance.

Donghai City's most luxurious bar, the Moonlit River Bar!

It could be assumed that the minimum spending for two in this bar for a night would be 10,000 bucks!

Many luxurious cars were parked at the entrance of Moonlit River Bar, those who came here to more or less have some financial capability.

"What are we doing at a place like this?" asked Darryl as he got down the car.

He disliked such places as he found them too noisy.

"To give you a surprise!" Wayne beamed. "Second Young Master, the boss of Moonlit River Bar is an old acquaintance of yours, Samson Facey."

Samson Facey?

Oh, Darryl remembered now. Initially, he was just a general worker employed by the Darby clan. Darryl thought that he had the brains and had promoted him to a managerial position. After working for two years and earning a sum of money, he then left to start his own business.

Darryl did not expect that Samson would open Moonlit River Bar. He did not let Darryl down.

"Second Young Master, please head inside first and wait for me in room number 888," said Wayne as he bowed. "Samson and I shall prepare a surprise for you which you'll definitely love!"

Wayne left before waiting for Darryl to respond.

Darryl sighed and went into the Moonlit River Bar.

No wonder the bar was famous, even the ushers at the entrance were beauties.

Darryl smiled as he entered, and deafening loud music could be heard.

It was extremely lively in the bar, crowds of men

and women were swaying their bodies to the music on the dance floor... 1

Darryl felt old, this type of place did not suit him...

"Oh? Am I seeing correctly, isn't this useless Darryl?" Some said from behind suddenly. Darryl subconsciously turned his head around and was stunned.

Behind him was a gorgeous woman, wearing a pair of skin-tight jeans and looking seductively sexy. It was Jade.

"What should you call me? Shouldn't you call me daddy?" said Darryl smilingly.

"You!" Jade bit her lips, she was extremely happy today as she had come to negotiate a deal with a big client! If she could sign a contract with this client, she would earn at least one million in commission!

Hence she had invited her potential client here today, preparing to have a few drinks and get the contract signed.

She did not expect to meet Darryl here!

"Even you with your uncouth look can manage to come to a place like this?" Jade said as she looked at Darryl from head to toe. "Saving 200 bucks a day over a year, just to spend it all here once. Is it worth it?"

"Nope," Darryl laughed. "I just want to know, when will you finally call me daddy?"

At this moment, a burly man stood up and walked to Jade's side and asked, "Miss Jade, who is this? Why does he talk like an idiot? Do you need me to teach him a lesson?"

Jade laughed and said, "Darryl, do you know who this man is beside me? He is Moonlit River Bar's head of security. If I ask him to throw you out, would you cry?"

There was no mistake, this burly man was her client, Harry Crocker!

Head of security was just a title, those who understood could tell that he was a bouncer. 1

After all, a place like this would attract many troublemakers. Harry was famous in Donghai City, having around twenty to thirty men under him just to look after this place.

"Skinny bastard, did you hear that? F*ck out here yourself," said Harry in contempt as he took a step forward.

What was it with these ushers? Letting an uncouth looking man into here. This guy dressed in bargained goods probably did not even earn more than two thousand on his monthly salary, yet he

dared to enter a place like this?

Darryl just smiled, he did not bother what Harry said and went straight for Room 888.

All the rooms here were glass rooms. Room 888 was positioned right in the center, and it could be seen from the outside that Room 888 was dazzling like a palace.

"Stop right there!"

Harry shouted as he saw Darryl walking into Room 8 88. He concluded that Darryl must be here to cause trouble!

All equipment in Room 888 were gold-plated, and the cost to reserve and use this room was 800,000 per hour!

Darryl had already sat down inside, holding up a cup of tea preparing to drink it.

Hahaha! It was over for Darryl this time!

Jade felt joyous in her heart. Was Darryl stupid? A private room like that was not for a useless son-in-law like him to sit in.

Jade and Harry had a chat previously and he mentioned the room had not been used for half a year already!

Harry had a nominal kinship with the boss here as

his godfather and son, despite that, even he dared not enter Room 888.

"Are you deaf? Can't you hear me?" Harry shouted as he strode forward and grabbed Darryl by his collar.

'Haha, Jade the goddess is here, if I beat this punk's ass it'll show how mighty I am, right?' thought Harry while he called out. Immediately, twenty over burly men rushed into Room 888. They were all bouncers at the Moonlit River Bar. 1

"What's wrong, Harry?" The burly men asked.

Harry turned to look at Jade and laughed, "Miss Jade, how should I deal with this guy?"

Jade looked at Darryl, he still had an indifferent look on his face. Seeing him like this made her mad!

She stomped her feet with her heels and said, " Make him call me mommy, then throw him out."

Chapter 11

With high heels adorning her feet, she stomped and said, "Make him call me mommy, then throw him out."

"Did you hear what Miss Jade said, ya little bastard? Let her hear you call her mommy. Or else..." Harry roared.

As soon as he said that, more than 20 burly men behind him reached to their lower back and pulled out their expandable batons.

"Or else, don't blame me for not sparing you any courtesy. I'm giving you a way out. Be a good boy and call her mommy," Harry said with a smirk and continued. "Then, if you kneel on the ground for her and admit your mistake, you'll be allowed to leave here safe and sound. Otherwise, I'll send you out on a stretcher."

Jade could not resist laughing. She took two steps forward in her high heels and fished out her cellphone from her bag.

If Darryl finally caved in and called her 'mommy', she would record it and send it to Lily!

"What if I don't?" Darryl was amused and began

looking at Jade up and down.

Jade frowned upon seeing Darryl's resistance. " Mister Crocker, hit him and make him kneel!"

"My pleasure!" Harry stretched out both arms. One hand grabbed Darryl by the collar while the other delivered a fierce punch!

"Stop right there, you b*stard!"

A roar echoed, and the door was kicked open by four or five individuals.

Everyone was stunned after seeing the group of people.

Samson Facey, the boss of Moonlit River!

Wayne Woodall, the boss of the Oriental Pearl Hotel!

Felix Blakely, owner of Black Tiger Real Estate!

Emily Dickinson, the owner of Poesia Eleganza!

Siegfried Yates, the general manager of Southeast Petroleum, Donghai City!

Any one of them was worth at least billions, and the person who spoke earlier was none other than Samson!

A smile appeared on Darryl's face when he saw them.

They were his old friends who used to be poor but

had received favors from him in the past. They seemed to have ended up rather successful in the business world.

"You b*stard!" Samson nearly died of fright. How dare that b*stard lay a hand on the Second Young Master? He rushed over and slapped Harry's face!

Slap!

Samson practically used up all of his strength in that slap and Harry covered his cheek as it began to swell.

"Godfather!" Harry yelled and was on the brink of tears. "Godfather, this peasant worker is causing trouble. How dare he sit in Room 888!"

Slap!

Samson slapped again and roared, "What about that peasant worker? Did he provoke you? You're already looking down on people after enjoying a little luxury? What did I teach you?!"

"Godfather!"

Harry yelled disgruntledly and his eyes were red. " But Godfather, this kid, he's an outsider. Why would you hit me for his sake...?"

Samson trembled in rage before pointing at Darryl, saying, "Outsider? Don't you f*cking know that I

won't be where I am today without this person! He's the Darby family's Second Young Master! You'll have to work for ten years to get a day's worth of his pocket money!"

What?!

The entire room immediately fell silent!

Harry was stupefied. He often heard tales of his godfather working for the Darby family before establishing Moonlit River. His godfather was lucky to have been appreciated by the second young master! Never in Harry's wildest dreams would he expect the poor young man to be the Darby family's second young master!

Jade was flabbergasted too!

At that moment, she felt her legs turn limp as her delicate body unconsciously took two steps back.

She could see the immense respect these business tycoons had when standing in front of Darryl!

How was that possible, he was just a live-in son-in-law!

That loser was doing housework whenever she went to Lily's house! Even her laundry, which she was usually disinclined to do, was sent to Lily's house and given to that loser to wash.

But... But... He turned out to be the Darby family's

second young master?!

"Mister Darryl, Mister Darryl, I made a mistake. I was wrong..." Harry was close to crying. He bowed to Darryl and apologized profusely.

"Mister Darryl, blame this woman!" Harry bellowed all of a sudden before pointing at Jade. "It' s all because of you! It's because of you that I offended Mister Darryl! Leave right now!"

Jade trembled. "But we haven't signed the contract yet ... "

Jade worked in a renovation company, and it just so happened that Moonlit River required some renovations. It was a big project that would rake in a commission of at least one million if the contract was successfully signed. As a result, Jade did not bring up the deal with the company and planned to accept it in her personal capacity. A commission of one million was considered the minimum and she might even stand to earn two million! This was not the kind of business she could just turn her back on! One to two million was at stake!

"Sign my foot!" Harry's eyes were red. He pointed at Jade and cursed loudly, "If it weren't for you, I would have never offended Mister Darryl! F*ck the contract. I'll even make sure to head to your company and tell your boss about all your business

dealings behind their back! Your company forbids you to solicit projects privately, so sit back and wait for a lawsuit!"

Jade's beautiful face completely drained of color!

She bit her lip tightly. If the company knew about her private solicitations and brought her to court, she would be lucky if she only had to pay compensation. There was a definite possibility that she might end up going to jail!

"Mister Darryl ... " At that moment, Jade bit her lip and walked to Darryl. She tugged his arm and shook it coyly.

"Mister Darryl, I was wrong... " Her voice was so soft that it was impossible to hear if one did not pay attention.

She never dreamed that she would one day apologize to this good-for-nothing! It hardly occurred to her that she would bow and scrape to this hopeless loser!

Darryl remained expressionless and smiled looking at her. "Didn't you just say that you wanted me to kneel and call you mommy?"

"I was wrong. I know now that I was wrong." Jade bit her lip so tightly that it almost bled.

"I'll kneel." Jade clasped her hands together tightly.

Her dignity and self-esteem meant nothing at that moment. She bent her knees slightly and proceeded to kneel in front of Darryl.

"Mister Darryl, I'm begging you. Please forgive me. " Jade grabbed Darryl's trousers and said softly, " Mister Darryl, if my company knows about my private business dealings, the consequences are really serious. I'm begging you. Please spare me, for Lily's sake..."

"Sure," Darryl responded curtly. "But what are you supposed to address me as?"

As Darryl said that, he placed his hand to his ear and gazed down at Jade.

A chill came up her spine as she knelt there. How could she not know what Darryl meant?

"D...d...daddy," Jade bit her lip tightly and whispered.

Her face had already turned red. Darryl was the person she looked down on the most. The mere sight of him would leave her feeling sick! At that point, however, she had renounced virtually all of her dignity in front of Darryl!

"You'll address me like that in the future. Understood?" Darryl asked with a smirk.

Jade nodded repeatedly.

"Also, I don't want Lily to know my identity." Darryl took out a cigarette, lit it, and inhaled deeply. "You know what to do, don't you?"

"Yes, yes," Jade answered and glanced at Darryl. " Don't worry, Daddy. I won't say a single word about what happened today."

Darryl nodded in satisfaction and waved his hand indicating that she could leave.

"Second Young Master, I failed to discipline my godchild... "

Samson bowed to Darryl after everyone left.

At the same time, Wayne, Felix, Emily, and Siegfried also stepped forward and bowed.

"Second Young Master, we were nothing all those years ago." Emily took a step forward. "If it weren't for you, we wouldn't be where we are today. Knowing that you are here today, we got you a gift."

She took out a box while speaking.

Emily's Poesia Eleganza specialized in cosmetics, and the Poesia Eleganza brand had succeeded in making a name for itself.

Three years ago, she was just a promoter giving out flyers on the street. One time, she scratched Darryl' s car by accident, but instead of leaving, she waited

an entire night for Darryl to return.

On that occasion, Darryl felt that she was a person of good character and gave her 300,000 bucks to start a business. Time passed in the blink of an eye and it was already five years since the incident.

Emily opened the box, the inside of which contained a scroll.

As soon as she unfurled it, Darryl inhaled sharply!

It was a work of calligraphy that looked rather old. The inscription wrote: Wang Xizhi!

Was that... Was that... Wang Xizhi's Ping'an Tie?! [1]

The scroll made the news after being auctioned off by a mysterious Chinese rich man!

"We know that Second Young Master is fond of antiques, paintings, and calligraphy, so we pooled our money and bought this from a collector," Felix chuckled as he explained. It was very eye-catching to see his two rows of pearly teeth contrasting with his very tan skin.

"Second Young Master, your birthday is in three days, right? This is our birthday present to you."

Birthday?

Darryl facepalmed. He had forgotten it completely.

His birthday was on the same day as Grandmother

Lyndon, which was happening in three days. [1]

No one remembered his birthday in previous years. Everyone celebrated Grandmother Lyndon's birthday, and Darryl merely benefited from sharing the same birthday as her.

It came as a surprise that there were still people who remembered his birthday.

...

In one of Donghai City's cafés.

Ashton sat face-to-face with Lily.

He had yet to reveal his bankruptcy to Lily.

"I've decided, Lilybud. I'll bring up the marriage proposal to the Lyndon family on Grandmother Lyndon's birthday!" Ashton looked at Lily affectionately.

Translator's note:

[1] 平安帖 – is translated using a Romanization of the Chinese characters into Ping'an Tie, which literally means 'Peace Scroll'. It is part of a scroll which are three works in one, titled Three Passages: Ping-an, He-ru, and Feng-ju (平安何如奉橘三帖). The author is Wang Xizhi (王羲之).

Chapter 12

"You ... " Lily frowned when Ashton talked about the marriage proposal. "Forget it, I'm not divorced yet."

Although Darryl was a loser, he had worked hard in the past few years and fulfilled his housework duties. He received a telling-off every time he failed to do a good job, yet he never complained.

Even a dog would have feelings, let alone a human.

Darryl had recently loaned them five million and relieved the company of its woes. Aside from that, Darryl had to take out all the money he had saved over the years to avoid embarrassment when William suggested going Dutch in Oriental Pearl Hotel.

Ashton looked at her affectionately. "Lilybud, am I inferior to Darryl in any way? He's a loser! Don't you worry, I'll prepare a big gift for Grandma's birthday and wish her a happy birthday! She'll be delighted with the gift. I'll propose marriage when the time comes and I'm sure that Grandma would not refuse."

Lily casually sipped her coffee. The Lyndon family's

rules were very strict, and Grandmother Lyndon had the final say. If she took a liking to Ashton, Lily might be instructed to divorce Darryl.

Lily genuinely regarded Darryl as a loser, but she was not completely apathetic toward him. After all, they had been married for three years, and she did not dare to say that she had no feelings for him.

"Let me ask you something," Lily suddenly said.

"What is it? Ask away, Lilybud."

"That pair of The Worship of Crystal. You didn't give me the real one, did you?" Lily could not help but ask.

"Lilybud. I get angry when you mention that!" Ashton sighed and a fierce look flashed in his eyes. " The shoes I gave you were imitations, but they are still worth three hundred thousand bucks. Your loser husband threw them! When I went home and saw those shoes, I realized that he had destroyed them."

Lily listened to Ashton's grumbles and bit her lip tightly.

"I'm talking about the genuine pair of The Worship of Crystal. Weren't you the one who gave them to me?" Lily asked softly.

What?!

Ashton was taken aback. His first instinct was to look below. Sure enough, Lily was wearing a pair of noble and elegant high heels. It was none other than The Worship of Crystal!

His mouth opened wide after glancing at those heels! That pair of The Worship of Crystal was on a whole other level compared to the high-grade imitation worth 300,000!

Ashton might be a man, but he knew that those shoes were genuine! They looked particularly elegant and complemented a noble look on any woman who wore them.

Gulp!

Ashton gulped fiercely. 30 million! A pair of genuine The Worship of Crystal cost 30 million!

That very pair was special in that it was limited to 9 9 pairs worldwide. Those without connections were unable to purchase them!

"Was this pair a gift from you?"

Lily pressed on.

She really could not think of anyone else who would give her something so expensive!

Indeed, many people wanted to pursue her, but deep down, Lily knew that most of her suitors were

merely rich kids. They might be wealthy, but they could not spend 30 million just for a gift!

What about Ashton?

Despite being in dire straits after the Darby family cut off their funding, he still had an eye for detail. If his guesses were correct, then someone else had given those shoes to Lily, though she had absolutely no idea who the giver was!

'Haha, did people like that still exist? Anonymous gift-givers? Hahaha! Well, if you don't want to take credit for it, then I'd be happy to!'

Ashton was overjoyed. He smiled cheekily and feigned coyness. "You got me, Lilybud. I'll tell you the truth then. I gave it to you."

"Ah? Really?" Lily looked at him puzzlingly. "Why didn't you admit it when I asked you before?"

Ashton scratched his head. "It's not that I didn't want to admit it, Lilybud. I'm just worried you'll scold me."

"Why would I scold you?" Lily asked.

Ashton gazed lovingly at Lily. "Because I know in my heart that you love these shoes and you wanted them for a very long time. I wanted to buy them for you, Lilybud, but as you may know, our company only has thirty million. That's why I bought you a

pair of high-quality copies. Still, when I gave them to you, I had a feeling that you didn't like them that much." 2

He took out his cellphone, tapped the screen a few times, then said, "So I decided to sell the company and bought you this pair. I was worried you'll scold me for being stupid. Lilybud, you know that you're the most important person in my heart. I'm not stupid. I just love you too much! I'll always find a way to get you the stuff you like because I love you." 1

Ashton handed over his phone as he explained.

A photo was on display and it was that of Ashton's contract to leave the company.

Ashton chuckled in his heart. While the contract was real, the reason he signed it was because the Darby family drove him away and no longer allowed him to remain in the company!

Ashton was still in the dark over who he had offended and why it caused the Darby family to chase him out all of a sudden.

On the other hand, Lily knew nothing about that. She truly believed that Ashton had sold off the company and bought her those shoes!

Although her affections for Ashton were not of the romantic kind, she felt slightly emotional at that

moment and looked right at him.

"You... " Lily lips nearly bled due to her biting it. " Why are you so stupid."

"I'm not stupid!"

Ashton seized the chance and reached out to hold Lily's beautiful hand. "Lilybud, I'm willing to do anything for you."

Lily trembled. Even though she found it heart-warming, she still retracted her hand and looked at Ashton with mixed feelings. In the end, she picked up her bag and left.

Ashton ogled her slender, curvy figure from behind. 1

'I'm going to get this woman.'

Ashton had a little smile as if he could already imagine Lily's captivating body.

Moonlit River Bar.

It was ages since Darryl last got drunk, and he had lost all self-control today.

"You can still tolerate a fair bit of alcohol, Second Young Master," Samson raised his glass and said.

"From now on, don't ever call me Second Young Master again." Darryl looked around and downed his glass. "I'm not keen on being addressed like

that."

Three years ago, his sister-in-law led the charge to kick Darryl out of the family. From that point onward, he was especially averse to the title of Second Young Master.

The thought of what happened back then prompted Darryl to clench his fists. 1

Back then, he had used eight million to buy Southeast Petroleum's shares, but no one ever believed that he could make money out of it. His sister-in-law alleged that it was an attempt to hollow out the clan funds, and under her instigation, the family kicked Darryl out of the clan.

However, the eight million from that time was his own pocket money, which he saved himself and formed his private funds!

Darryl was well aware that his sister-in-law did that for a reason. There were two candidates for the Darby family's future patriarch. The first-in-line was Florian, Darryl's elder brother.

The second was none other than Darryl.

His sister-in-law wanted to get rid of him so there would be no one else vying with Florian for the patriarch's position.

"Then is it okay if we call you Mister Darby from

now on?" Wayne asked, snapping Darryl back to the present.

Darryl nodded. His mood had soured after reflecting on his past.

He then saw Emily approaching him from one side. She said softly, "Mister Darby, there's something I want to tell you."

"What is it?" Darryl finished the drink in his hand and looked at her.

He had to admit that Emily looked much more charming then compared to when he first met her. In the present, her business had taken off and she had built her brand of cosmetics, making her look more alluring than before.

"It's about your sister-in-law," Emily said in his ear. 1

"Let's hear it."

Emily nodded and slowly began. "Just last year, your sister-in-law contacted someone to get in touch with me. She wanted to buy a piece of limited-edition cosmetics. After I bought it for her and chatted with her, I found out by accident that she's very ambitious."

Darryl had a faint smile. He had long noticed how ruthlessly ambitious his sister-in-law was. Why

else would she have chased him away if not for that characteristic of hers?

In a bustling area of Donghai City.

Lily, who had just parted ways with Ashton, was walking side-by-side with Phoebe.

"Why do you look so distracted, Lily?" Phoebe asked as they walked out of a store.

Lily shook her head. "It's nothing."

At that point, her mind was filled only with thoughts of Ashton. It was hard to imagine that the man had sold his company just to buy her a pair of heels. 1

"By the way, Lily, did you hear about the cosmetics brand that's all the rage recently?" Phoebe asked excitedly.

The absent-minded Lily finally showed some interest. "Is it Poesia Eleganza's Crown line?"

"Yes, yes, yes!"

The two of them giggled at the same time. There was a myriad of topics that women could talk about, but the ones that interested them most were stuff like cosmetics and clothes.

One particular brand of cosmetics was in the spotlight recently, and that brand was Poesia

Eleganza!

Valentine's Day was coming soon, and Poesia Eleganza had launched another series called the Crown line!

It was limited to 520 sets worldwide!

Each set cost 520,000 bucks and was considered to be royalty among the cosmetics brands! Every woman desired it! Although 520,000 bucks were not too expensive a sum, plenty of rich people scrambled to get their hands on it, and those without any connections were downright unable to buy them. 1

Chapter 13

"Valentine's Day is coming soon, Lily. It would be such a blessing to receive a set of Poesia Eleganza's Crown line cosmetics," Phoebe said to Lily.

"You? Keep on dreaming," Lily said with a smile.

At present, Poesia Eleganza's Crown line had an exceptionally high price and was limited to only 520 sets, which were probably all sold out. Those who could buy them were big families who had ample connections. Smaller families like the Lyndons had zero chance of obtaining them.

"Alright, enough," Lily giggled. "Let's go and buy a couple of clothes. Granny's birthday is coming soon. We have to dress nicely for the celebration."

Phoebe nodded, then walked into a store arm in arm with Lily.

The next day, at Platinum Corporation.

Darryl sat in the general manager's office and got up from the sofa. It was two in the morning by the time they finished their drinking session the night before. He could not be bothered to go home, so he decided to just sleep at the company.

His cellphone vibrated, and he swiped open to see a

message from his mother-in-law, Samantha.

‘So now you have learned not to come back home, haven’t you? If you don't want to stay at home, then don’t ever come back again.’

Less than five minutes after the text message was received, he received another from Lily.

‘Granny's birthday is the day after tomorrow. Buy a present for her and don't embarrass me too much.’

Darryl placed his phone away after reading the two messages and he soon heard a knock on his door.

A beautiful woman dressed in business attire walked in. It was his secretary, Pearl Hahn.

"President Darby, we’ve just signed the partnership contract with the Lyndon clan and they’ve already sent someone here," Pearl said. "They said that they ’d like to take over Giselle’s image consultancy. William is already waiting outside."

"Tell him to scram." Darryl waved his hand and said, "Make it clear to the Lyndon family that the contract is canceled."

"Yes."

Pearl bowed and walked out of the room.

William was waiting anxiously outside the door. Lily was the one who sealed the deal, but

Grandmother Lyndon had passed Lily's efforts to him and even sent him to discuss with Platinum Corporation! 'Haha!'

Rumor had it that Platinum Corporation's newly signed Giselle was beautiful and had a stunningly sexy body. If Platinum Corporation agreed to let the Lyndons style Giselle's image, they would certainly make a fortune. Success would mean he would get all the credit!

"Mister Lyndon." Pearl walked over in her high heels.

William looked at her from head to toe. It was not surprising that Platinum Corporation was a premier company for A-list celebrities. Even the President's secretary was very pretty.

"Miss Hahn," William greeted as he walked over with a smile. "What did the president say? When can we start handling Giselle's affairs?"

"Apologies, Mister Lyndon." Pearl flashed a smile. " Our president told you to scram. The contract that was signed earlier has also been canceled."

"What?!" William bellowed in shock. He was not in a position to show his displeasure regardless of how angry he was!

He could not afford to provoke Platinum

Corporation! His lips curled up into a modest smile, though it looked uglier than if he were to cry. "Why? " 1

Pearl explained gently, "Our president stated that it was Lily who came and handled the negotiations. Platinum Corporation's decision to cooperate with your company is solely out of respect for Lily. She has to be the one to show up and discuss any projects in the future. No one else will be entertained."

As soon as she finished speaking, several security guards immediately escorted William away. 1

At the Lyndon family villa.

The old lady sat in the chair, sipped a big mouthful of tea, and massaged her chest continuously.

"You... What did you say... " The old lady asked as she stared at William.

"Granny, Platinum Corporation stated that they wouldn't cooperate with us anymore... " William explained with teary eyes and a runny nose. "They told me to scram... "

"Granny, why is Platinum Corporation being so unreasonable!" One of the Lyndon family's damsels voiced her unhappiness.

"That's right, Granny. Platinum Corporation has

agreed to cooperate with us. The contract has been signed, and all of sudden they want to terminate it now? Isn't that a breach of contract? We can sue them!"

"Yes, Grandma! The contract clearly says that whoever breaches the terms will have to compensate twenty million in damages! Let's sue them!"

Several of the family's younger generation spoke in succession as they fumed in anger.

The old lady was expressionless. Their twittering annoyed her and she slammed the table heavily.

"Shut up, all of you!"

Everyone kept quiet at once. They took a step back after seeing the old lady's anger.

"You're all a bunch of short-sighted younglings." The old woman frowned and said. "Would you dare to sue Platinum Corporation even if they did violate the contract? Don't you know that the Darby clan owns Platinum Corporation! They're the preeminent family in Jiangnan! They can smother all of us with a pinch of the finger. It wouldn't be a problem for them to compensate twenty million, but are you brave enough to demand it?"

Everyone was dumbstruck and began looking at

each other.

Her statement was irrefutable. Indeed, 20 million were peanuts to the Platinum Corporation, but if the Lyndons dared to sue them, they would be burning bridges with the Platinum Corporation. Life would only be difficult from then on.

"William, what else did Platinum Corporation say?" The old lady asked. "They can't possibly terminate the contract without any reason? Did you offend them?"

"Granny, I swear to God, I didn't offend them," William blurted out hastily. "Granny, Platinum Corporation said that the earlier contract discussions were done with Lily. They said they only cooperated with us out of courtesy for Lily. All future negotiations must involve her and they won' t accept anyone else."

"This... "

The dozen or so people present were the backbone of the Lyndon clan. At that moment, they all exchanged glances and saw each other's shocked reactions.

The Platinum Corporation cooperated with the Lyndon family for the sake of Lily alone?

How could it have been Lily! She was nothing more

than one of the Lyndon family's juniors, and the company Lily ran was the least profitable of all the companies in the clan! Was Lily so promising that the Platinum Corporation had eyes only for her?!

Donghai Airport.

Lily and Samantha got out of the car and glanced at their watches.

"Dad will be getting off the plane soon, right Mom? " Lily asked.

Six months ago, Lily's father, Wentworth Lyndon, went abroad to start a business. Rumor had it that he did quite well during that period and often sent Samantha short video recordings of his life abroad, driving luxury cars and visiting high-end office buildings. Since it was Grandmother Lyndon's birthday, Wentworth said that he would return home and give her a surprise.

"It won't take more than ten minutes for him to get off the plane," Samantha said as the two of them walked into the airport.

The two women always turned heads wherever they went! It could not be denied that Samantha and Lily's mother-daughter combination was extremely eye-catching.

Ding-ding.

Lily received a text message. She opened it and saw that it was from Darryl, and it contained only short sentences.

'Honey, you must reject Grandma's offer if she calls you later and asks you to negotiate with Platinum Corporation.'

What was he up to!

Lily's slender body shuddered. She had repeatedly warned him not to call her that, but he seemed to lack the ability of simple comprehension.

Moreover, Grandmother Lyndon had already handed over the responsibility of negotiation with Platinum Corporation to William. Why would she ask Lily to handle it again?

Grandmother Lyndon's favoritism toward William was an open secret. Lily might have been the one who secured cooperation with Platinum Corporation, but she had been robbed of her efforts by William!

"Did that loser text you?" Samantha looked over and asked coldly.

"Mm... " 1

Lily nodded. She knew better than anyone who that ' loser' referred to.

"Let me be very clear to you." At that moment, Samantha stopped in her tracks, looked at Lily, and said, "Your dad is home today, and once your grandma's birthday celebration ends, your dad and I will bring you to get the divorce done. You must divorce him!"

"Mom... Darryl, he... " Lily wanted to say something nice about him, but after thinking for a while, she realized how limited her vocabulary was when it came to praising Darryl.

Lily was unsure of her feelings toward Darryl. All she knew was that Darryl had been with her for three years, worked hard, and endured every single complaint.

He was merely unambitious in his quest to improve himself and was quite a good person aside from that.

"Enough, stop talking right now." Samantha waved her hand and said, "If this loser doesn't leave, I will. "

Chapter 14

"Think carefully, Lily. Think about how much scorn and ridicule you had to face since marrying Darryl," Samantha said coldly. "We've provided him food and clothes during the three years of your marriage to him. At least he has the decency to repay the favor by lending us money to help with the company's five million deficit. We're even now and all I want is for you to leave that loser."

"Mom... " Lily bit her lip.

"Also, Ashton called me and said that he'd attend your grandma's birthday," Samantha continued. " He said he prepared an amazing gift that your grandma will love. You can and should be with him if grandma takes a liking to him."

As she was talking, she saw a man coming over from some distance away. Dressed in a suit and leather shoes, he held a suitcase in his hand. The person was Wentworth, Lily's father.

Lily and Samantha went over to welcome him. The family of three then chatted and laughed all the way out of the airport.

Back home, Samantha cooked a sumptuous meal.

Cooking was usually Darryl's duty and she had not cooked in a long time, so it was unsurprising that she could maintain her appearance so well at her age.

At the dinner table, Samantha asked Wentworth how life was abroad.

Wentworth remarked that his life was uninteresting, other than three meals a day in high-class hotels and daily business discussions with the richest men in the region. He hyped up his stories, and as he spoke, he took out a check and scribbled on it before handing it to Samantha.

50 million!

Samantha grinned from ear-to-ear when she saw the check!

'Hahaha, our days of suffering have finally come to an end! He took out a fifty million check like it was nothing!'

"I heard a few days ago that your company was facing some problems, Lilybud. Something about a shortage of five million?" Wentworth looked at Lily and said, "I was worried about you when your mother called me the other day, but at that time, my funds were still strapped in the stock market. There was no way I could have helped you, but it's all good now though. I've cashed the money out."

Wentworth scribbled on another check while talking.

"Here's another check for fifty million." Wentworth chuckled and said, "By the way, the check I've given you can't be cashed in right away. You can only do so in a week as the check will only take effect after I leave the country."

Was there such a requirement?

Samantha bought his statements despite having some doubts and nodded repeatedly with a smile.

Finally, they could rise to their feet again after enduring for so long. They were eager to know whether anyone would dare to look down on them again during Grandmother Lyndon's birthday!

Ding-ding!

The family was chatting away happily when Lily's phone suddenly rang. After glancing at the caller ID, the entire family looked at each other.

A call from Grandmother Lyndon?

"What's the matter?" Samantha asked at once.

The old lady was personally in charge of all the Lyndon clan's affairs and was therefore swamped in work every single day. It was usually the Lyndon family's elders who were in constant contact with

Grandmother Lyndon. She never phoned her juniors in the past, especially when it came to Lily, as the latter had the lowest status among the Lyndon family's juniors.

"Beats me," Lily replied as she answered the call and switched on the loudspeaker mode.

"Lilybud?"

The old lady's voice came from the other side of the phone.

Despite her reluctance to initiate a call with someone younger than her, she was completely bereft of all options. Platinum Corporation made it clear that any future business discussions must only involve Lily and Lily alone. It was futile for others to handle the negotiations!

"Lilybud, Granny wants to ask you a favor..." The old lady continued.

The three of them were stunned after hearing that sentence!

Grandmother Lyndon had been in charge of everything for so many years. When did she ever ask anyone for favors?!

Samantha hurriedly said, "Mom, what's going on? Please just tell us what you need!" 1

"I want to ask Lilybud ..." The old lady was silent

for a moment, but eventually continued, "I want to ask her for her favor to negotiate with Platinum Corporation to take over Giselle's image consultation."

Samantha was puzzled. The old lady had already handed the responsibility to William. Lily was undoubtedly the one who negotiated the deal but William was allowed to take the credit. Why then, would the old lady hand the responsibility back to Lily again?

Although Samantha's heart lamented the unfairness, she still smiled. "Don't worry, Mom! I'll tell Lilybud to go there later in the afternoon."

After all, the grandmother was the head of the family. Samantha was flattered that the old woman would call them and beg them with that pleading tone! There was no reason to refuse!

Despite that, a shiver came over Lily's body! Darryl had just sent a text message to her, telling her to refuse if the old lady came calling!

How could Darryl know that Grandma would call her? Was he a fortune teller...?

Lily bit her lip tightly. Unaware of her conscious mind's inner workings, she picked up the phone and said, "I'm sorry, Granny, but I refuse. Since you 've already given the task to William, he should be

the one to negotiate." 1

"You!" The old lady was thoroughly incensed. "You've become stubborn now, haven't you, Lilybud? Do you believe that the Lyndons will fail in securing the partnership with the Platinum Corporation without you?! How mighty arrogant of you!"

Lily had already ended the call before the old lady could finish talking!

Back at the dinner table, Samantha and Wentworth looked at each other, followed by the former lashing out!

"Lilybud, what are you doing?!" Samantha slammed the table angrily. "How are we going to live out our days in the Lyndon clan after offending the old lady?! Grandma is partial toward William, but you can't deny that William is competent at what he does! Aren't you going to show her any respect, now that she's set aside her arrogance by phoning you and asking you to negotiate?!" 1

Lily bit her lip tightly because Darryl had sent her a text message in advance. Her thought process was a mystery to her and she wondered why, for that brief moment, that she believed Darryl's words and rejected the old lady.

Listening to Samantha's complaints, Lily silently took out her cellphone and absent-mindedly sent a

text to Darryl: 'I've rejected the old lady, what should I do next.'

Everyone called Darryl a loser, and it angered Lily because she felt that he was not doing anything to try and improve himself. Be that as it may, his recent goings-on was something of a curiosity, since it seemed as though Darryl constantly came to her aid at critical moments. Her subconscious mind had gone so far as to begin heeding Darryl's words.

The phone rang not long later and Darryl replied with a couple of short sentences: 'The old lady will continue begging you and you'll continue to refuse. Platinum Corporation won't acknowledge anyone else except you. Trust me.'

Lily felt an inexplicable sense of security after reading his last two words.

All of a sudden, Samantha then snatched her phone away!

"Perfect! You rejected the old lady! It was Darryl who told you to do so, right?!" Samantha's chest trembled as she pointed to Lily and lambasted, "Are you crazy? Do you really believe in Darryl's words! I'm telling you, you'd better divorce him after grandma's birthday!" 1

"Mom, Darryl guessed that Granny would call me..." Lily protested.

Samantha became even angrier and slapped the table heavily. "Mark my words, Darryl is a good-for-nothing! Look at everyone else. Do any other people have a son-in-law like him? Is there any family that doesn't have a son-in-law worth tens of millions!"

She became increasingly agitated while she spoke and her anger flared up at the mere mention of Darryl.

In the afternoon, Grandmother Lyndon sent Stefan Lyndon to handle the negotiations.

Stefan was one of the standout individuals among the Lyndon family's younger generation and his status was second only to William. In the end, though, he was chased out of Platinum Corporation by the security guards before even getting a chance to talk.

The old woman began panicking when Stefan returned. What was going on? Was Lily the only person that Platinum Corporation would accept?

Grandmother Lyndon sat on the chair and smoked her cigarettes one after another.

"I have a plan, Granny." It was then that William walked over and said.

"Granny, my guess is, Lily only managed to secure

the contract because of her good looks," William postulated. "From that, we can see that the Platinum Corporation's President is simply a womanizer. Lily isn't the only beautiful girl in our family! Elsa is also very beautiful, so why not let her give it a shot."

Indeed, two women in the Lyndon family were widely recognized for their beauty.

One was Lily, and the other was none other than Elsa.

Based on their age, Lily even had to address Elsa as her elder sister.

Everyone agreed with that suggestion. William's remarks made sense, and they were certain that Platinum Corporation's President only fancied Lily's good looks.

Early the next morning, Elsa went to Platinum Corporation alone.

Elsa was undeniably stunning, she was the crème de la crème in both body figure and looks!

Chapter 15

Clad in a sheath dress, Elsa stood at the entrance of Platinum Corporation. Not only was she charming and alluring, but many paparazzi also took pictures of her and assumed that she was a new rising star.

Even the security guard thought Elsa was a celebrity and were cautious not to stop her. She went all the way up to the President's office, chancing upon Pearl walking out when she was just about to knock on the door and enter.

Pearl was going to pour tea for Darryl at that time. The moment she opened the door and saw Elsa, she immediately ejected the latter from the building after knowing that she was sent by the Lyndon family.

Was there anyone who did not know who Elsa was? As a renowned beauty in Donghai City, she had many suitors and always rejected them. On that day, however, she was the one who experienced rejection, and she felt lingering displeasure.

The old lady was beyond anxious when she learned of what happened.

The next day, at the Lyndon family villa.

It was Grandmother Lyndon's birthday and the atmosphere was lively in the villa.

Family members rushed back regardless of where they were and news of Grandmother Lyndon's 70th birthday also made its rounds throughout Donghai City.

It was only natural to invite plenty of people to her 70th birthday. Although the Lyndon family was a second-rate family, there were still quite a number of people who were invited to the birthday banquet.

A fleet of cars was seen parked outside the Lyndon family villa.

In front of a Land Rover stood Lily and Samantha, who were both looking impatiently at their watches.

Very soon, they saw an electric bike driving over slowly. Once the vehicle stopped, Darryl hurried over.

"There was a traffic jam. It was a bad traffic jam," Darryl explained breathlessly.

'Damn it!' Pearl was supposed to drive him there, but the traffic was far too congested! After being stuck for more than an hour on the viaduct, he promptly took out the electric bike from the trunk

and rode it over as the banquet was about to start soon.

As it were, the Lyndons were a prominent family, prompting many guests to look over and begin laughing when they saw someone riding an electric bike.

"Look, isn't that Darryl? The Lyndons' live-in son-in-law."

"You bet it's him! Haha!"

"Such a prick. He's lucky to get married to a beauty like Lily!"

"Haha, you don't know anything. I heard that this kid had been sleeping on the floor even though he lived with Lily for three years. Haha!"

Several juniors from the White family gathered together to gossip. The Whites and the Lyndons have maintained good relations for generations and were linked through several marriages. They thus had intimate knowledge of the Lyndon family.

Lily felt a little embarrassed after hearing those loud discussions. She said to Darryl, "Could you park the bike a bit farther next time? Didn't you notice that there are plenty of guests here?"

"Oh."

Darryl nodded indifferently.

Samantha was infuriated to see his attitude. It was such an important day, yet he still wore some street stall clothes? How could he be so shameless? 1

"Have you prepared Grandma's present?" Lily asked in a low voice.

"Yes." Darryl chuckled and took out a very shabby-looking wooden box.

"You!" Lily stomped after seeing the box. "What kind of gift is this? It's Granny's seventieth birthday today. You can't just give her some junk!"

"It's not junk," Darryl responded succinctly.

Not junk? That box was practically broken. Unable to hold it any longer, Samantha pointed at Darryl to curse at him, only to be interrupted by a voice.

"Calling all the Lyndon family children to wish Grandma a happy birthday!"

As soon as the person finished their words, hundreds of people from the Lyndon family swarmed into the villa.

Samantha glared at Darryl. She suppressed her intention of scolding him and hurried in.

At that moment, the guests were already seated inside the villa.

The old lady was dressed in a very festive manner.

She sat on the main seat and looked incredibly jubilant.

"President Sohn of the Skybrook Group, please come forward and offer your birthday wishes!" The host held a microphone and called out.

A middle-aged man walked up. He was Albert Sohn, who was worth hundreds of millions and had a very good relationship with the old lady.

He was followed by his female secretary, who held a big box in her hand.

"Haha, may you have a blessed birthday and a long life, Grandma Lyndon!" Albert laughed and opened the box.

Gasps were heard from all around!

It was a Cloisonné from the Qing Dynasty!

Cloisonné, also known as cloisonné enamel, possessed a noble history. The vase in front of her looked like it was from the Qianlong period. At first glance, it appeared to be a premium item with a value that was probably no less than one million!

Such respect! A million-dollar birthday gift!

"Alright, alright, President Sohn, please have a seat. You don't need to spend so much next time. My heart will always remember you. Thank you,

President Sohn!" The old lady was so happy that she nodded repeatedly and could not even close her mouth. 1

As everyone knew, Grandmother Lyndon liked antiques and she loved the gift!

After that, all the other gifts looked much plainer in comparison.

It was not until William appeared that everyone in the audience paid full attention.

Everyone heard that William would present a momentous gift for Grandmother Lyndon's birthday. After all, he was her favorite!

William held a box, then tucked his hair before walking to the center and bowing to Grandmother Lyndon.

"Grandma, I, William Lyndon, hereby wish you a long and prosperous life!" William grinned.

No one cared about what he said. Their sole focus was the box in his hand.

The box was not that big, but it was entirely green and was crafted from the highest-quality jade!

So luxurious! A gift box made of pure jade!

William gave a lengthy speech before he finally got to the point and snapped his fingers.

The lights within that initially bright room immediately went out. The curtains were also drawn and the room plunged into complete darkness.

The crowd was becoming restless when William assured, "Don't panic, everyone. My gift to Granny requires the light to be switched off."

As he said that, he opened the jade box swiftly, eliciting gasps of awe!

There was a fist-sized night-shining pearl inside the jade box! When the night-shining pearl made its appearance, it did not shine as bright as day, but it was at least as bright as eight or nine candles.

Just how much would this huge piece of night-shining pearl cost?

Probably upward of two million!

"Okay, okay, okay!" The old lady laughed. "William, Grandma didn't pamper you in vain!"

Everyone joined in the applause. His gift was nothing short of spectacular.

Such a huge night-shining pearl was a rarity in Donghai City!

At that juncture, however, Darryl unwittingly chuckled out loud.

'Haha, is William trying to be funny?' Others might not have the eye for it, but Darryl could see that the night-shining pearl was worth no more than 10,000 bucks. It was obviously synthetic.

Was there any treasure that Darryl never came across growing up in the Darby family? The office of the family company's general manager had a fist-sized night-shining pearl too.

That pearl cost more than two million. Although it was not expensive, money alone could not buy it.

Natural night-shining pearls had always been regarded as priceless. In ancient times, it was only emperors and empresses who could own such pearls.

Since the demand for it was high, some devious individuals used chemicals to artificially fuse the smaller pearls together to make it big.

Synthetic night-shining pearls were easy to spot, they were glued in the middle.

The traces of glue in William's night-shining pearl were too obvious!

"What are you laughing at?" At that moment, William jumped out and yelled at Darryl.

For a brief moment, all eyes were on Darryl.

"Sorry, I couldn't control myself." Darryl covered his mouth. "Your pearl is just so fake."

"You, what the hell are you talking about!" William blushed and shouted.

He knew that the night-shining pearl was fake, but no one from the Lyndon family had ever seen one before. Therefore, no one present could tell the genuine product from the counterfeit one. Darryl's comment that it was fake only served to increase William's anxieties.

"Quit your nonsense, Darryl."

Lily nudged Darryl lightly.

Darryl would be made a victim if he provoked William.

Sure enough, William sneered, "You're a live-in son-in-law. You only get two hundred bucks daily for your pocket money. Understandably, you wouldn't know what a night-shining pearl is. I won't argue with you, but I'm curious to see what gift you'll be giving Grandma!"

William had secretly glanced over and seen Darryl holding a broken box in his hand. 'Haha! The box is so shabby that it's worthless!'

Darryl did not speak either, but he really could not

control himself from laughing.

On one side, Samantha gritted her teeth angrily before looking at Darryl and warned, "Get out of here if you don't stop laughing!"

Chapter 16

After more than half an hour later, almost everyone had presented their gifts to the old lady. Although not all gifts were expensive, they were far from cheap either, since most did not cost less than 200,0 00 bucks.

It was worth mentioning that Elsa's gift was also very noteworthy.

They were a pair of jadeite bracelets, of which the quality could be described as flawless. Its beauty was beyond words.

After seeing it, Grandmother Lyndon loved it so much and praised Elsa repeatedly. After receiving the jadeite bracelets, Grandmother Lyndon said to everyone, "By the way, Elsa is the eldest among our Lyndon family's younger generation and is very caring. She doesn't have a boyfriend at the moment, so if any of you want to propose marriage, please be my guest. Of course, those who want to do so can't be stubborn and obstreperous. After all, if you want to be her husband, you must be husband material."

Elsa's complexion turned red from blushing at the old lady's words. Many of the guests who were

present there felt tempted already.

Elsa was beautiful and occupied a high status in the Lyndon family. She was virtually on the goddess level.

At that moment, Elsa was seated beside Darryl because the seats for the birthday banquet were all arranged according to hierarchy. One could consider Darryl a lucky man to be sandwiched between two gorgeous ladies, with Lily sitting on his right and Elsa on his left.

Darryl had nodded to himself when she took out and gifted the bracelet earlier.

"This bracelet is interesting," Darryl seemed to be muttering to himself, "Ice Green Lao Hang Imperial Jade. Good stuff."

Ice Green Lao Hang Imperial Jade was the name of a rare and exquisite jadeite. It was naturally made of the finest quality, highly translucent, highly smoothed in texture, delicate to the touch, and strikingly attractive. The bracelets were estimated to cost no less than 400,000 bucks.

Elsa was seated when she heard Darryl's mutter. Her eyebrows furrowed and she could not help but turn to look at him.

She and Darryl were people of two worlds, as she

was an exalted goddess while he was a poor live-in son-in-law. She realized she had never spoken to him before since he 'married' into the Lyndon family.

At that point, however, Elsa could not resist asking in curiosity, "You know that it's an Ice Green Lao Hang Imperial Jade?"

Elsa was very surprised. No one in the Lyndon family except Darryl had recognized the jadeite bracelets and its origins.

He nodded and asked, "How much did you spend on the bracelets?"

"Six hundred thousand," Elsa replied.

Darryl shook his head. "It's overpriced. It's at most valued at just over 400,000 bucks."

"Why?"

Elsa's curiosity was piqued. The bracelets had been sold to her by a close friend who claimed to have not made any profit from the sale.

Darryl explained in a low voice, "There are several factors to consider when evaluating a piece of imperial jade: purity, color, texture, and uniformity. Your bracelet is satisfactory in the first three criteria, but the problem lies in its uniformity. The color distribution is not even, and the market price

is about four hundred and fifty thousand. If you bought it from an acquaintance, then it should sell for four hundred thousand at most. If it exceeds that price, then the person has made a profit from you."

Elsa stared at Darryl without blinking!

Even an expert would not dare to make such conclusive statements!

Darryl was nothing but a loser in everyone's eyes, yet he still knew such things?

"Granny Lyndon, here's my gift!" A young man in his early twenties stepped forward.

The young man was the eldest grandson of the White family, named Zachary White.

When he opened his gift box, most of the guests were stunned seeing what was inside.

It was a check!

1,314,520!

Although that number played on the Chinese homonym of 'I'll love you for the rest of my life' [1], his gift was a little unconventional, especially when it was a sum of more than one million!

"Granny, I'd like to propose to Elsa today. I've admired her for a very long time," Zachary said

clearly.

Gasp! Everyone's attention converged on Elsa in an instant!

At that moment, she was in the midst of a discussion with Darryl about the jadeite, and the two of them were seated close to each other. 1

Zachary could not hold himself. He had proposed marriage to Elsa but she was chatting away with Darryl in full swing! So be it if she chatted with someone else, but Darryl was a well-known loser!

"Stay away from Elsa!" An infuriated Zachary pointed to Darryl and bellowed.

Darryl responded with a faint smile. Before he could speak, Elsa stood up. "Granny, I'll have to give this marriage proposal some thought."

Far too many people were present there and Elsa could not just reject Zachary outright. He may have a shrewd mind and excelled at doing business, but he was narrow-minded and was not her type.

The old woman understood her at once and said with a smile, "Our two families can discuss your proposal when the banquet is over."

Zachary glared at Darryl with reddened eyes.

It was love at first sight when Zachary first saw Elsa.

She was the aloof kind of woman who was hardly seen conversing with someone of the opposite gender. It was inevitable that Zachary would get angry at the sight of her chatting away happily with Darryl.

"Granny, Ashton is here!" Someone said.

Everyone looked toward the door!

Dressed in a suit with his hair slicked back, Ashton seemed to be brimming with energy. He held a long box in his hand and walked over quickly.

"Ashton," the old lady greeted with a smile.

Rumors had it that Ashton had prepared an amazing gift and wanted to propose to Lily.

Everyone stared at his box without blinking, their curiosity having been aroused some time ago. It was said that his gift would appeal greatly to Grandmother Lyndon, so the question was, what gift could give him such confidence?

Ashton bowed slightly. He looked glamorous and suave, but the truth of the matter, which only he was privy to, was that he had reached the end of his road. The Darby clan had stripped him of his livelihood and chased him out of the company.

He had used up whatever remaining funds to buy a

good suit and attend the birthday banquet. He could only succeed today!

"Granny, I have something to say and I'd like to be straightforward about it," Ashton slowly began. "I fell in love with Lily at first sight, but she married a loser! Even after three years of marriage, Donghai City continues to treat this marriage as a joke! She's already endured enough and I can't bear to see her suffer anymore! No matter what happens today, I'd have to express my thoughts."

Ashton took a deep breath. "I want to marry Lily!"

Whoa!

The crowd burst into a heated discussion as soon as he said that!

Was it not a bit too direct, though? He did not even show the slightest bit of respect toward Darryl!

Then again, why was there even a need to respect a piece of trash like Darryl? It was not like anyone was afraid to offend him.

"In the past few years, the only person I've been thinking about was Lilybud," Ashton continued. "I'm willing to give up everything for her. For so many years, I've only managed to amass thirty million worth in assets with my effort, but because of my love for Lilybud, I sold my company and

bought her The Worship of Crystal!"

What?!

Shocked, everyone turned to look at Lily's feet.

A pair of noble and elegant high heels became the crowd's focus! The perfectly streamlined and regal quality of those heels dazzled everyone! Its beauty was unparalleled and it was a perfect match for a beautiful woman!

"This is The Worship of Crystal that is worth thirty million. How amazing..."

"Yeah, there are only ninety-nine pairs in the world. You can't buy it even if you have the money. You must have connections." 1

"I'm so jealous! If I have these heels, I might even wear them to sleep... "

The women began chattering away about The Worship of Crystal. Any woman who claimed not to be envious of it was a big fat liar!

For a moment, the women around Ashton were all staring at him starry-eyed.

Samantha and Wentworth nodded repeatedly. They had a pleased expression as they looked at Ashton.

Darryl frowned instantly. Was there something wrong with that damn Ashton? How shameless and

thick-faced was he to claim that he was the one who bought those shoes. Has he gone mad?

At that point, Ashton bowed yet again. "Since today is your birthday, Granny, it's only right that I pay tribute to you after proposing marriage. Here's my gift!"

Ashton opened the box as he made that statement!

Wow!

In a flash, everyone went up gasping in exclamations!

"This... This is... "

Everyone was stupefied! Even the old lady stood up unconsciously and walked over to Ashton! 1

There was a scroll inside the box!

Ashton unfurled it and said proudly, "This scroll is from Wang Xizhi's Ping'an Tie. I bought it at a high price after having to beg a friend. I know that Granny likes antiques, so this scroll is a sign of my utmost respect."

What?!

Darryl immediately stood up from his chair too.

Wang Xizhi's Ping'an Tie?

The gift from Samson and the gang was the exact

same Ping'an Tie, right? 1

It stood to reason that Samson, Wayne, and the others, would never dare to give him a fake! Therefore, if the genuine article was in his possession, then that one...

"This... This... I'm not hallucinating, am I?" The White family patriarch, Claude White, walked over with his mouth agape!

As the White family's patriarch, Claude could be described as a knowledgeable person, though his heart was beating wildly at that point! It was a calligraphic piece by Wang Xizhi, the Sage of Calligraphy! An opus of that sort could not possibly be worth less than 20 million! 1

Translator's note:

[1] A Chinese romantic cliché, 1,314,510 (一三一四五二零) – sounds like 一生一世我爱你, which can be interpreted as 'I'll love you for the rest of my life'.

Chapter 17

"Come here, let me have a look at it."

The old lady was getting restless and ordered softly, to which all her juniors made way for her.

She adjusted her reading glasses and looked at it without blinking.

Such powerful strokes, so brilliant and smooth! It was simply a masterpiece!

"I'm quite certain that this isn't an imitation," Claude gave a thumbs up and seemed rather excited. "I would never expect to see Wang Xizhi's original work here!"

"Yes! It's usually seen only in museums!"

"So beautiful! His ability to create this piece makes him worthy of being the Sage of Calligraphy!"

Everyone lavished praise on it and Grandmother Lyndon was beyond thrilled!

"Alright, alright, alright!" The grandmother repeated three times before carefully putting away the scroll. She instructed her servants, "Put this in the box right away. Be sure to hold it gently and put it down carefully!"

"Yes," The servants nodded in quick succession and were very cautious to not hold it using too much force. Everyone said that it was Wang Xizhi's work and was of immense value. If they destroyed it, would they be able to afford its compensation?!

On one side, Lily bit her lip tightly and felt touched for some reason.

Ashton had sold the company just to buy her a pair of high heels and even presented such a momentous gift to granny.

"Hey, look here everyone! Darryl's expression is so funny, haha!"

William burst out laughing right away and pointed at Darryl, saying, "Look. He's also holding a box in his hand! Haha! He's got a gift for granny too!"

William's words spurred the crowd to start jeering.

Indeed, Darryl's expression was unnatural, though it was due to Ashton's shamelessness! To think that Ashton would give the old lady a fake!

"Come on now, Darryl! Take out your gift and let us have a look!"

"Yeah, haha!"

Everyone saw the gift box Darryl was holding. The box looked far too shoddy as if it was picked up

from the garbage.

Darryl was contemptible. Even if he could not bear to spend his money during ordinary times, did he have to skimp so hard with the old lady's birthday celebration?

"Forget it."

Darryl waved his hand, having already seen through the expressions of everyone there. They would almost certainly mock him regardless of what gift he had, so it would be better to avoid all the troubles by not seeing the gift.

"Come on now, haha!" William leaped over all of a sudden. "It's Granny's birthday celebration today and we've already seen everyone else's gifts. Yours is the only one left! Your wife is going to be snatched away soon too, so how will you redeem yourself if you don't reveal your gift!"

"Hahaha!"

His remarks elicited hearty laughter from everyone around him.

Lily's expression soured to the extreme and she was feeling slightly angry. She had told Darryl in advance to prepare a better gift, but he did precisely the opposite! Now, he was making an absolute fool of himself!

"Sit down right now. Stop standing!" Lily pulled Darryl's arm and reprimanded softly.

On the other side, Samantha also had rage written all over her face. She pointed to Darryl and shouted, "Hurry up and put your garbage gift at the door. Don't embarrass us here, you good-for-nothing loser."

"Oh," Darryl murmured. He held the box and walked to the door, where many gifts were placed.

He was just about to put the box in the pile of gifts when William ran over and grabbed the box by surprise! 1

"Haha, don't be so petty! What gift did you get for Granny? Show us!" William said excitedly and opened the box!

In a flash, the whole villa fell silent!

Everyone stared at Darryl's gift and gulped!

It was an antique hand fan with black ribs.

As the hand fan was unfolded, a landscape was painted in thick ink on the surface of the fan, depicting a snowy day. The brush technique was amazing, and it was likely painted by a great man of the time! It would be impossible to paint something like that without decades of knowledge and

experience!

A poem was also written in a corner of the fan:

‘One flake, two flakes, snowflakes three and four; five six, seven eight, nine flakes, ten and more; gliding into plum-flowers, snowflakes were seen no more.’

There are more than a dozen seals on the fan, but the most striking aspect was the poem’s royal sign-off: Hongli!

Hongli?! Aisin Gioro Hongli?! The renowned Qianlong Emperor?!

"Hahaha!"

Someone burst out into uncontrollable laughter, triggering the rest of the people to laugh out loud too!

"Hahaha, you’re killing me! This fan is so fake, isn' t it?! Hahaha!"

"True that. Would the fan used by the Qianlong Emperor appear here?! Haha!"

"Donghai City History Museum might not even dare to claim that they have it!"

William clutched his stomach as he rocked back and forth laughing hard. He laughed saying as he pointed at Darryl, "You’re hilarious, hahaha! Are

you cuckoo? Couldn't you have spent a bit of money for Granny's birthday today? Haha, tell me, where did you get this fan? Hahaha!"

"A friend helped me buy it."

Darryl answered bluntly.

His initial intention was to gift Wang Xizhi's Ping' an Tie, but the scroll was given to him as a gift by Wayne and the others. A gift that one received should never be gifted to another person because that would seem disrespectful.

Therefore, Darryl had entrusted Emily to help him choose a gift.

Little did he know that Emily would help him buy that fan! She said that her friend happened to be one of the country's leading antique collectors, and she had to beg him for a long time before getting the fan. It was said that the Qianlong Emperor had used that fan for an entire year. The fan even had a name, called the Boundless Universe Fan.

"A friend helped you to buy it?!" William clutched his stomach and tried hard not to laugh. "How much did you spend?"

"None. My friend doesn't want money," Darryl said. "She only asked that I treat her to some rice noodle soup in the future if she has some time to

spare."

"Rice noodle soup?! Haha, you mean rice noodle soup from Yunnan?!" William had just come to his senses but was once again left completely unable to control himself. He barely stopped short of fainting after laughing so hard.

Hahaha! The audience burst into raucous laughter!

Darryl was a bloody joke whose shamelessness knew no bounds! Haha!

The old lady stared coldly at Darryl. "Do you still have any dignity? Lilybud was so unlucky when she married you! Can someone please throw this rubbish fan away for me!"

"Yes!"

Two servants nodded, picked up the fan and the box, opened the door, and threw it out! 1

The crowd's laughter did not cease, and Darryl sighed as he returned to his seat and sat down.

Grandmother Lyndon was very happy at first, but she could no longer maintain her joyful expression after what happened. She waved her hand and said, "Alright, let me just say a few words."

"First of all, thank you all for coming to my birthday banquet despite your busy schedule." She

nodded her head slightly and continued, "Please enjoy yourselves to the fullest today. Eat and drink as much as you like! Two gentlemen have proposed to our family, and I've already taken note of it. We shall discuss it after the banquet is over."

At that juncture, the old lady stood up. "Dear guests! You've all brought such amazing gifts today, and it's only right for me to show the same generosity. I've prepared good food and wine today! "

The old lady clapped her hands, signaling dozens of waiters to bring in many sumptuous dishes.

"Premium King Abalone, Buddha's Temptation, Shark Fin Soup with Abalone and Birds' Nest..."

Dish after dish elicited looks of wonder from the guests.

There were more than a dozen dishes on each table, each of which was a famous dish! It was estimated that the total price for the dishes per table would not be less than one hundred thousand!

Everyone was still in awe when an announcement was made!

"Old Madam, Miss Yvonne Young is here."

"Hurry up and welcome her!" The old lady said quickly.

The Young family had been in the antique business for generations. They had a good relationship with the Lyndon family, and Yvonne was invited to the celebration banquet that the old lady had organized for Lily. 1

Lily smiled. Previously, Yvonne had asked who gifted her The Worship of Crystal and even offered to buy it at double the original price. At the time, however, Lily had no idea that Ashton was the one who gifted it to her.

Perfect! She could ask Ashton about it and request his help to get a pair for Yvonne.

All the men began ogling at Yvonne when she appeared.

Her beauty was exceptional! She wore a pair of tight jeans and a white shirt that accentuated her sexy figure.

"Please accept my apologies, there was a traffic jam on the road." Yvonne flashed an apologetic smile as she walked in.

To everyone's surprise, she halted her footsteps before she could finish speaking!

"This... This is..."

Yvonne looked down at the ground. It was the

tattered fan that had been thrown out!

The fan was still in the shoddy box at the time. As someone whose family dealt in antiques for generations, Yvonne noticed that the box...was rather extraordinary... 1

"President Young, there's no need to pick up the trash. Someone will sweep it away," The old lady said with a smile. 1

Chapter 18

"Trash?"

Yvonne found that description amusing. If she was correct, that box was probably used by the palace during the Qing Dynasty's Qianlong period. The box 's material was very valuable and highly likely to be Golden-thread Nanmu.

While it was evident that the box was weather-beaten and looked particularly wrecked, its workmanship was exceedingly exquisite upon closer inspection!

The box alone was worth hundreds of thousands, yet it was treated as rubbish?!

Perhaps driven by occupational habit, Yvonne opened her bag and took out a pastel green magnifying glass.

The Young family has been in the antique business for generations and often picked up valuable items on the roadside. It was imperative that a magnifying glass be carried along at all times.

"President Young, what are you doing?"

The old lady could not resist saying, "This is just

some rubbish. The servants will come right away and toss this into the bin."

Yvonne kept quiet. As she analyzed the wooden box through her magnifying glass, drops of sweat formed on her forehead!

There was a golden dragon engraved on the box!

Despite going through years of battering, it was only under a magnifying glass that one could barely make out the undeniable fact that the box had been used by the emperor!

Back in the feudal era, there were only a few people who dared to create dragon carvings! It was a time when imperial power reigned supreme authority, and only the emperor's engravers could create the box.

Her earlier estimation of several hundred thousand had been a severe underestimation. It was worth at least one million!

"President Young? Come and have a seat." William walked over and bowed respectfully to Yvonne. " President Young, the banquet is about to begin."

Yvonne put away her magnifying glass and whispered, "This box...? Whose gift was it?"

"No one!" William hurriedly waved his hand, "Don' t get me wrong, President Young, all of our guests

today are illustrious people. They wouldn't give presents bought from a roadside stall. Haha!"

After all, the Lyndon family were equally prestigious and would never admit to accepting such a gift.

As William spoke, he brought the box over and was about to toss it into the bin.

The old lady glanced at William appreciatively. He was such a good grandson and she did not pamper him in vain!

"Wait."

Yvonne spoke again and took the box. She finally understood that everyone there was oblivious to the nature of the item! An item from a roadside stall? No one seemed to realize that it was a precious treasure!

Slowly but excitedly, she opened the box. Almost immediately, Yvonne was dumfounded and a chill trembled down her spine!

That... It could not be, could it?! Was she hallucinating?

The Boundless Universe Fan?!

How was that possible!

Yvonne bit her lip tightly and nearly drew blood

from it! 3

It was common knowledge that the Qianlong Emperor had a fondness for two main things. The first was seal engravement. It was said that the Qianlong Emperor had created thousands of seals!

His second hobby was poetry and he had written more than 40,000 poems in his lifetime. Be that as it may, most of those poems were substandard and few people have memorized them well. However, there was one poem that everyone remembered clearly.

That poem was: 'One flake, two flakes, snowflakes three and four; five six, seven eight, nine flakes, ten and more; gliding into plum-flowers, snowflakes were seen no more.'

The first three sentences of the poem were written by the Qianlong Emperor, but the fourth sentence was written by Ji Xiaolan as a finishing touch.

Legend had it that the Qianlong Emperor had written the poem and was so happy with it that he immediately asked the best painter to paint a scene and used it to make a hand fan. 1

The Qianlong Emperor later inscribed that poem on the hand fan and printed more than a dozen seals on it, which he liked a lot.

The hand fan was also known as the best hand fan

in the entire Qing Dynasty! Qianlong Emperor had named it the Boundless Universe Fan!

This fan has always been kept in the Forbidden City, but after the Qing Dynasty's fall, the Forbidden City was completely wiped out by foreigners. Following those events, there was no longer any news about the hand fan.

At this precise moment, she was actually seeing it with her own eyes!

Yvonne was thrilled and her legs went soft. Her first instinct was to take out her cellphone and snap a picture of it for her father. He would be overjoyed to see it! The fan was a supreme treasure for any collector, who would certainly feel content simply by looking at it!

"President Young, I'll throw this fan away. Don't dirty your hands," William said with a smile. "I know you're an antique expert. You probably find it quite comical that a fake like this would show up in our Lyndon home."

"A fake?" Yvonne asked as she raised an eyebrow.

She had been exposed to antiques since the age of seven and had been in the business for more than a decade. Her judgment was always accurate, the item was authentic!

"You guys have gotten it wrong, haven't you?"

Yvonne asked softly. "This hand fan... "

"This hand fan belongs to me." Darryl stood up suddenly at that moment and walked to Yvonne to take back the hand fan.

Everyone knew that it was Granny's birthday that day, but how many people knew that it was also his birthday?

Darryl clenched his fists tightly. So be it then if no one knew about his birthday. Why the hell did he have to tolerate their insults there? If they could not tell chalk to cheese, he might as well not give that fan!

"It's yours?"

Yvonne looked at Darryl.

'Wasn't Darryl the one who gave up his seat for me at the Oriental Pearl Hotel?'

She had heard that he was the live-in son-in-law of the Lyndon family and was a nobody. How could that hand fan belong to him?

"Yes, President Young, this broken fan belongs to him!" William exclaimed. "Apart from a loser like him, who else would have the decency to take such a broken thing!"

"No matter how tattered my gift is, it's still better

than your fake night-shining pearl," Darryl shot back coldly. "Granny loves you so much, yet you don 't even feel the slightest bit of shame for giving her that awful pearl worth only several thousand? You don't appreciate the fan I gave, right? No problem, I 'll take it back."

Darryl pocketed the hand fan as he said that.

"Are you f*cking mental?!" William suddenly flew into a rage. "Who are you accusing of giving a gift worth only several thousand? If you keep making blind comparisons, I'll get someone to kill you."

"Enough," the old lady finally interrupted. "This is supposed to be a happy day. Stop arguing. There's something I'd like to say."

William spitted at Darryl's direction and returned to his seat.

As one of the distinguished guests, Yvonne should be seated at the front, but she followed Darryl to his seat.

"Can I sit here, Auntie?" Yvonne looked at Samantha and asked.

"Yes, of course!" Samantha said with a smile. " Darryl, hurry up and move aside for President Young!"

"No, no, Auntie, don't get me wrong." Yvonne

than your fake night-shining pearl," Darryl shot back coldly. "Granny loves you so much, yet you don 't even feel the slightest bit of shame for giving her that awful pearl worth only several thousand? You don't appreciate the fan I gave, right? No problem, I 'll take it back."

Darryl pocketed the hand fan as he said that.

"Are you f*cking mental?!" William suddenly flew into a rage. "Who are you accusing of giving a gift worth only several thousand? If you keep making blind comparisons, I'll get someone to kill you."

"Enough," the old lady finally interrupted. "This is supposed to be a happy day. Stop arguing. There's something I'd like to say."

William spitted at Darryl's direction and returned to his seat.

As one of the distinguished guests, Yvonne should be seated at the front, but she followed Darryl to his seat.

"Can I sit here, Auntie?" Yvonne looked at Samantha and asked.

"Yes, of course!" Samantha said with a smile. " Darryl, hurry up and move aside for President Young!"

"No, no, Auntie, don't get me wrong." Yvonne

smiled lightly. "What I meant was, can I...sit next to him?"

Yvonne pointed to Darryl as she made that request.

What?!

Yvonne's voice was not that loud, but the surrounding people heard her loud and cleary!

What was going on?! Why did that goddess want to sit next to a loser? 2

Other girls would run at the sight of him, but she wanted to sit next to him?

Samantha was equally stunned. Her first thought was that Darryl had offended Yvonne earlier.

"President Young, Darryl is a fool. Don't be angry with him," Samantha said. "Don't take offense with him."

"You misunderstood, Auntie." Yvonne's red lips curled up slightly. "I want to chat with him."

Hearing what she said, everyone around was even more stunned!

What was there to chat with Darryl? He was so poor that the sight of him was revolting! How could a goddess and a loser have a common topic!

Samantha hesitated for a while, then nodded. She

gave up her seat and went to sit at the back.

At that point, Lily unconsciously looked to her side.

In her heart, she had always felt that Darryl was a loser who would never attract the attention of any girl. With Yvonne suddenly requesting to sit next to him, she could not help but feel a slight discomfort in her heart. 1

Her womanly instinct told Lily that there must be a reason for Yvonne to want to sit next to Darryl.

Now, three exquisite beauties were seated around Darryl -- Yvonne, Lily, and Elsa.

Half of the men there had their eyes fixed on his direction, shifting across all three women. Without a doubt, the three women each had their own merits.

"Hello... Excuse me... " Yvonne looked at Darryl and spoke, but she swallowed her words before she could end it. She discovered that Darryl did not even turn to look at her! 2

Yvonne felt a little angry deep down. She had taken the initiative to strike up a conversation with him but was given the cold shoulder instead. 3

Chapter 19

As Yvonne was about to continue the conversation with Darryl, Grandmother Lyndon smiled and walked toward Lily while holding a wine glass.

Everyone stopped eating when they saw the old lady walking over.

"Lilybud, Granny wants to ask you something," the old lady spoke slowly.

"Ask away, Granny," Lily said.

Grandmother Lyndon nodded. "Lilybud, since it's Granny's birthday today, can you promise me to go and negotiate with Platinum Corporation? We'll stand to earn a lot if they assign us the task of managing Giselle's styling. Can you agree to that?"

"This..."

Lily did not know what to think, but she secretly peeked at Darryl.

Her earlier efforts in securing the cooperation with Platinum Corporation was credited to William, which had upset her tremendously.

Darryl had instructed her not to agree to Grandmother Lyndon's request.

Sure enough, she saw Darryl shaking his head.

Lily gritted her teeth. If she were to listen to the loser, she would have to reject the old lady in front of so many people...

"Yes, Mom." Samantha stood up all of a sudden. " Leave this to Lilybud. She'll live up to your expectations!"

"Good!" The old woman smiled.

At that moment, no one expected Darryl, who had been sitting quietly by the side, to stand up suddenly.

"Not a chance."

His cold words sounded extremely harsh!

"Lily was the one who first negotiated the contract, but her efforts had been robbed by William," Darryl said coldly. "My wife only comes to mind now that Platinum Corporation doesn't recognize William, right?"

"You... What did you say?" The old lady pointed at Darryl and was extremely furious.

Members of the Lyndon family looked at Darryl as if they were looking at a mentally deranged individual.

Had he gone mad? Did he have any idea where he

stood in the Lyndon family? He was nothing more than a live-in son-in-law! Even the Lyndon family's dog had a better life than him!

"I've tolerated you for a long time!" William finally could not take it anymore and jumped out all of a sudden. "What the hell are you doing? Who are you to call the shots for Lily? Are you here to cause trouble during Granny's birthday? You dress like crap, gave Granny a sh*tty fan, and now you're trying to interfere with our family matters? I'll f*cking kill you!"

William struck a fierce punch almost immediately after finishing his words!

He seemed to have put in all his strength in the punch! William was deeply cherished by Grandmother Lyndon and had been pampered since young. Such an upbringing had spoiled him rotten to have a huge temper. When he was in school, he was always fighting and was the school's number one bully. Although he is now an adult and delved into the business world, he was still renowned as someone who could hold out his own and know many of the big bosses in society.

"Darryl is toast. He's going to leave here on a stretcher."

"Serves him right! No one's gonna stop him from

getting beaten up."

Murmurs were heard and everyone tried hard not to laugh as they eagerly watched the excitement unfold.

That punch could kill a bear.

Darryl's pupils contracted sharply. Rather than shirking at the oncoming punch, he remained motionless!

"Quick, run!" Lily did not expect herself to advise that loser.

She felt uncomfortable to see him being beaten up after living together for three years...

"Trying to fight even though that's all you got?" Darryl said coldly.

'William's fighting style was like a street gangster. The punch might be packed full of power, but he could dream on if he thought that he could hurt me with it.'

Darryl smirked slightly. The Darby family's children were required to keep themselves fit since young. Darryl had studied Wing Chun at the age of seven. Li Shan, who was a 23rd generation practitioner of Wing Chun, had taught Darryl for an entire year. 1

Although he dared not claim that he could fight

against ten people, dealing with two or three ordinary brutes was not a problem! 2

Thud!

Darryl raised his arm to block, but William's fist struck directly past it! In that split second, however, William suddenly howled out loud!

"Aghh!"

Feeling as though he had just struck an iron plate, he thought that he had broken his arm and was left without any energy. He dropped to the ground and started rolling about in pain. 1

What?!

Everyone's mind went blank! None of them saw how William fell!

Did Darryl, a person who had done only housework for three long years, have that kind of skill? Who would have known?!

"Just you wait, Darryl. Just you f*cking wait!" William shouted in despair. He took out his cellphone, dialed a number, and shouted into it, " Bro, bring two cars of people here. Now, now! Bring your men!"

After ending the call, William gritted his teeth, stood up, and pointed at Darryl. "Don't you dare

run away, wait right here! I'll kill you today!"

The crowd was quiet. Everyone knew that William was a man of grudges. Things would not end well for Darryl after he had provoked William.

William was not attempting to scare Darryl when he made that call!

Despite that, the crowd was mentally prepared to watch things unfold. The entertainment value would only increase if the situation escalated! No one could care less about that live-in son-in-law!

However, Darryl ignored William completely. He merely looked at the old lady and said, "Granny, don 't you think it's unfair to Lilybud? All the credit that should have gone to her was given to William, and Lilybud only crossed your mind now that Platinum Corporation will only acknowledge her contributions. Lily won't accept this task. Please look for someone else if you want to continue negotiating with Platinum Corporation!"

"You... You... What did you say!" Grandmother Lyndon pointed at Darryl. "What are you? How dare you make decisions for Lilybud? What right do you have?"

"I'm her husband."

Darryl spoke coldly, prompting rumblings from all

around! 1

At that moment, Lily was visibly trembling!

Shell-shocked, everyone looked at Darryl with a complicated expression.

How could a loser who lived by the Lyndon family's grace say such a thing?!

"You're her husband?" Grandmother Lyndon burst out laughing. "Okay, let's ask Lilybud whether she recognizes you as her husband? If she does, I won't be her grandmother in the future! If she doesn't, then you'd best be getting the hell out of here!"

Everyone's gaze turned to Lily the instant Grandmother Lyndon said that!

It was a simple and straightforward this-or-that question: one was Grandmother Lyndon, and the other was her nominal husband.

Lily clenched her fists tightly and could not say a single word as if her throat had been blocked.

Slap!

Under everyone's eager gazes, Samantha stood up and slapped Darryl's face hard without warning!

The slap was so sudden that Darryl staggered and nearly fell to the ground. His cheek glowed red.

"Granny is right. Who do you think you are?"

Samantha pointed at Darryl and yelled. "You're just the Lyndon family's dog. Who gave you the right to make such a ruckus? You say that you're Lilybud's husband, right? Then let me ask you this: what else do you have except for a marriage certificate? You've never even held Lilybud's hand in the past three years, have you? You think too highly of yourself! How dare you point fingers here! Get out!"

Hahaha!

The people around tried their best not to laugh. Things were getting exciting.

In the past, Darryl would have just apologized.

Everyone looked at him, but what they saw was a little grin forming at the corner of Darryl's mouth.

He glared intensely at Samantha with a rather terrifying look!

Lily looked at Darryl incredulously. In their three years of marriage, she never foresaw that the always-weak Darryl would one day come to be like a stranger to her.

Darryl smiled and looked at Samantha. "I've been married to your daughter for three years. During this period, I've worked hard even if I never achieved anything. Did I ever complain in the entire three years? Well then, if you don't even remember

the good things that I did, so be it!"

Darryl clenched his fists tightly and his voice echoed throughout the crowd. "Perhaps it was my doing that Lilybud and yourself have been looked down upon by others! With this slap of yours, we're both even now. You've always wanted me to leave, right? Alright then, I shall leave."

Darryl shot back coldly. He got up and left as soon as he was done talking! 1

The crowd was shocked!

No one thought that the loser would say such a thing!

Nobody stopped him either since everyone in the Lyndon family wanted him to leave.

However, William jumped out just as Darryl approached the door and began pointing at him, yelling, "You're just gonna f*cking leave like that? We haven't settled our scores yet! You can go alright, but you'll have to go on a stretcher!"

The sentence concluded with a couple of black vans halting to a stop at the entrance to the villa.

The car doors opened, and more than twenty strong men got down holding baseball bats and steel pipes in their hands.

"Mister Harry!" William shouted as he walked over

quickly and called out to the leader.

The man nodded, holding a machete in his hand. " Who bullied you?"

"It was this idiot, Mister Harry. Hit him and make him kneel!" William shouted.

Darryl happened to make eye contact with that person and barely stopped short of chuckling out loud.

Harry? Harry Crocker?

The 'Bro' that William called was indeed Samson's godson Harry, who had seen first-hand what happened at Moonlit River Bar.

The crowd stirred in excitement and everyone was standing. No one expected William's connections to be so far-ranging that he could even invite Harry there! 1

Harry was notoriously ruthless and the odds were against Darryl!

"Darryl, get out!"

Lily had lost all reason by then. She stood up and shouted to warn Darryl. 3

Chapter 20

It was Harry Crocker for goodness sake!

Although Lily did not know him personally, his name was often mentioned in her friends' conversations!

It was said that Harry was a well-known figure in Donghai City, he was young, courageous, and especially ruthless. Most importantly, Samson was the man behind him!

Samson was the owner of Moonlit River Bar, the most luxurious bar in Donghai City.

Lily could see Harry's fierce face as he held the machete. If he managed to get to Darryl, the latter would at least be half-crippled, if not dead.

"Hurry up and leave!" Lily was getting extremely anxious. She got up from her seat and was about to go over and pull Darryl, but was stopped by those around her.

Lily could not even comprehend her thought process. While it was true that she looked down on Darryl, she nevertheless felt uncomfortable when she saw that Darryl was about to be beaten up.

Those around her did not share the same views.

They were more excited to see Darryl being beaten up to a pulp!

It was especially so for Ashton, who immediately grabbed Lily. "What are you doing with this loser, Lilybud? He doesn't know where he stands but has the balls to provoke William. He deserves to be beaten up!"

Harry raised his machete and dashed into the villa!

"Rest assured, William." Harry spitted out the cigarette butt in his mouth as he said. "I'm curious to see which fool grew the balls to threaten my bro! That person is as good as dead today!"

William nodded heavily and walked arrogantly toward Darryl. He felt good in his heart because he had such a good reputation and could ask Harry to come over!

In reality, he had only met Harry once by chance.

Once, William was on the road when he got into a fight with another driver. As a result, they both agreed to take the fight somewhere and the driver had called Harry.

That time, Harry almost beat William to death. William was afraid of him, so he tried his best to make friends with Harry.

He found out that Harry liked to gamble and often

lost tons of money. William therefore 'lent' Harry a sum of money each month. Though the term used was 'lend', Harry never paid back.

William had no intention of asking him to pay back either! It did not hurt to give the man some cash every month and his help could be sought too should William ever need it.

No one had dared to mess with William after he got to know Harry. Harry's reputation reached far and wide throughout Donghai City and no one among the younger generation dared vie with him for it!

Harry was only ten meters away from Darryl when the two of them exchanged glances.

Unfortunately, Harry was a short-sighted kid, and had yet to recognize Darryl despite squinting his eyes! Still full of aggression, he raised his knife and quickly rushed to Darryl's side!

"Run! Run!" Lily shouted, but there were people all around her.

Lily closed her eyes, she could already envision Darryl falling into a pool of blood!

However, she had never expected Harry to stop dead in his tracks just as he was just about to sink the knife into Darryl!

Darryl looked at him with a smile. Their distance

was only about half a meter at that time!

William suddenly felt anxious after seeing Harry froze in his tracks.

"Mister Harry, this is the idiot I was talking about!" William roared. "It's him, Brother Harry! Make him kneel!"

William wailed, his eyes red with rage!

"You... Is this the guy you want to beat up?" Harry finally reacted and asked William.

"Yes, it's him!" William nodded his head repeatedly.

Everyone in the Lyndon family was giving their full attention, eager to see how the drama unfolding.

Grandmother Lyndon walked over and said, " William, don't overdo it. Don't injure him severely."

'Don't injure him severely?' William sneered. Darryl had slapped him in front of the entire family. If he did not avenge himself, how could he have the dignity to face the family in the future?! 1

"Okay. Don't worry, Granny, I'll just hit him and make him kneel," William snickered with a smile. 1

It was then that Harry managed to catch a clear glimpse of Darryl, and was shocked so much that he nearly peed his pants!

Harry's cold sweat began trickling down. His

godfather had to address Darryl as Second Young Master whenever they met!

"The person you want me to beat up is...him?!" Harry confirmed again and asked incredulously.

"Yes, it's him!"

William yelled. The sight of Harry's inaction made William's blood boil, prompting the latter to try punching Darryl immediately!

He was just about to deliver that punch when in a surprising turn, he saw Harry roared strangely and grabbed him by his hair!

Slap!

Without warning, Harry slapped William hard in the face!

The slap was so strong that blood began dripping down from William's cheek.

William covered his cheek in bewilderment. "Mister Harry! I... What did I do wrong?!"

Aside from William, everyone else was equally dumbfounded!

What was going on? Harry was supposed to be on good terms with William, right?

"You little bastard, are you trying to get me killed?!

" Harry's anger grew. He slapped William a second time, knocked him onto the ground, and began kicking him.

"Mister Harry, what are you doing!"

William was in grief as he rolled all over the ground in pain.

Nobody from the Lyndon family dared to stop him. Grandmother Lyndon could not bear it anymore and waved to several young men from the family.

The young men walked over timidly and worked up the courage to yell, "S...S...Stop..."

"Get the f*ck away!" Harry was very furious. He held a knife in his hand and pointed toward the men, "I'll get rid of anyone who's stopping me today!"

Those words left everyone dumbfounded. No one would dare to fight Harry!

"Hit him. I'll bear responsibility if something goes wrong!" Harry shouted to his goons behind him. A group of people then surrounded William and began kicking.

"Mister Darryl..." At that moment, Harry eked out a flattering smile and walked humbly to Darryl. "Don' t worry, Mister Darryl. This bastard had the balls to go against you, right? I'll kill him today!"

What?!

Everyone's mind went blank after hearing that!

What in the name of God was going on? Why would Harry be so respectful to Darryl?! The respect he showed was like a son seeing his father!

How could it be possible that a loser like him would be so formidable!

Lily was stupefied as well. Her initial feeling of anxiety had turned into shock! Complete, utter shock!

"Mister Darryl, I really didn't know it was you, otherwise I wouldn't have dared to come even if I was beaten to death." Seeing that Darryl did not say anything, Harry's complexion was pale with fright. Harry continued, "Mister Darryl, I'm begging you. Please don't get angry, I'm begging you. I really didn't know it was you..." 1

"Alright, alright." Darryl waved his hand impatiently. He felt uneasy at first, but after hearing Harry's blabbing, he found it annoying and turned to leave.

It was over...

Harry's heart dropped. Darryl was not angry at him, was he?

"Beat him to his death!" Harry ordered angrily.

The Lyndon family exchanged glances with each other and no one dared to stop them. After beating William to the verge of meeting his maker, they finally stopped.

William's nose and face were swollen. He was crying. "Brother Harry, why on earth did you hit me... " 2

Harry's arms were akimbo and he kicked William irritably once more. "Why did I hit you? Don't you f*cking know how great Mister Darryl is?!"

"How great could he be? He's the live-in son-in-law of our Lyndon family!" William felt distressed considering how the person he had asked for help had beat him to a pulp instead! That aside, the truth was still up in the air!

"Live-in son-in-law?" Harry sneered. He was just about to mention that Darryl was the Darby family's second young master when he remembered his godfather mentioned before that Darryl had already left the Darby family. 2

Therefore, he did not have any exact knowledge of Darryl's current status!

Harry rolled his eyes and said to William, "In any case, you better f*cking remember this: if you ever

dare to act like you're all that in front of Mister Darryl again, I'll kill you."

"Let's go!"

Harry waved his hand and left rowdily with his group of people.

"William, are you okay?!"

It was not until then that everyone dared to go over and surrounded William.

William felt miserable!

The entire incident was such a shame!

"Granny, Wayne's here! The boss of Oriental Pearl!"

A voice informed, causing everyone to look at the door.

Five Rolls-Royce cars were parked there and out came a middle-aged man from the front passenger seat of the first car. He walked with the help of a walking stick and was dressed in a tunic suit.

It was Wayne!

"The Lyndon family's old lady is so famed that she even invited Mister Wayne here." 1

"Yeah... "

A group of guests chatted among themselves. After

all, Wayne was an important figure in Donghai City. He was worth billions, and had never attended anyone's birthday party before! It was downright surprising that he would be invited by the old lady that day! 2

"President Woodall!"

Grandmother Lyndon was similarly confused. She had no idea what was going on and why Wayne was here as she had not invited him.

"Excuse me, Madam Lyndon, is Mister Darby here? " Wayne asked with a smile. Ten or so men dressed in black followed behind him as they walked toward the villa.

"Mister Darby?"

The old lady shook her head. "I don't know such a person. Does anybody know him?" 2

Everyone looked blank. Who was Mister Darby? 1

There was only one person with the Darby surname and that was Darryl, but it was certain that the loser would never pop into their minds first. 9

Chapter 21

"Might I ask if Mister Darby is here?" Wayne repeated his question, seeing that no one spoke. 3

Everyone still shook their heads.

It had to be known that the man standing at the door was Wayne Woodall. The 'Mister Darby' that he mentioned, how could it possibly be Darryl that piece of trash?

Wayne had a bewildered look on his face too. It could not be a mistake, he had people do a proper inquiry, the second young master was supposed to be at the Lyndon residence! Today was the second young master's birthday, and he came here in person specifically to hand him his present. Moreover, when he arrived at the Lyndon residence, he realized that someone was indeed celebrating their birthday.

Wayne gulped and handed over the box in his hands. "Since Mister Darby isn't here, I shall depart. This is a birthday gift, I'll leave it here."

Wayne then left with his men.

Just as he left, the crowd could not wait any longer and surrounded the birthday gift he left behind.

Grandmother Lyndon motioned for the box to be opened. 1

After all, Wayne Woodall was a prominent man in Donghai City. Everyone could see that he had an imposing presence, being followed by over ten men and several Rolls-Royce. He came here specifically to give Grandmother Lyndon a birthday present! The old lady's reputation was surely favorable?! 2

Numerous guests were filled with envy.

Indeed, who in Donghai City did not want to have a good relationship with Wayne? He was the boss of the Oriental Pearl Hotel, the most luxurious hotel in Donghai City. Prominent clans always organize their annual gatherings and whatnot at the Oriental Pearl. After all, that place has an honorable reputation. As such, it was many people's wish to be friends with Wayne. 1

However, Wayne has an eccentric personality. He hardly made friends, and never attended people's birthday celebrations!

Grandmother Lyndon's connections were truly great!

Even though Grandmother Lyndon felt perplexed, she still had a smile on her face. 1

Why would Wayne give her a birthday gift? She had

no connections to him. However, she was the only one celebrating her birthday here, if it was not meant for her, for whom would it be? 2

Stefan opened the box on Granny's instruction. Immediately, there was dead silence as everybody held their breaths!

It was a fist-sized night-shining pearl! However this night-shining pearl... Seemed to be different compared to the one gifted by William?

Stefan the trustworthy lad went to take out the night-shining pearl that William gifted and placed both pearls side by side. It was then that the crowd could see the difference!

The curtains were opened and the sun shone in. Under daylight, William's night-shining pearl looked like an ordinary glass pearl without a hint of radiance. 1

However, the night-shining pearl from Wayne shone as bright as a mini sun even though it was daytime!

"This..."

Everyone was rendered speechless and stared unblinkingly at the pearls.

"Quick, close the curtains, turn off the lights!" Stefan ordered.

When there was not a sliver of light in the hall, the crowd could not hold it in any longer and let out a gasp of surprise!

It was only at this moment that everyone could see the glaring difference between the two pearls! Wayne's pearl illuminated the house brightly as if it was daytime! 1

"Gulp!"

Somebody could not hold back and gulp out loud, and instantly, everybody was in furor! 7

"What's the meaning of this? Two night-shining pearls of the same size, but why is the difference so big?"

"A moment ago Darryl said that William's night-shining pearl was fake, and no one believed him then..." 1

"Looks like it was a fake..." 1

Grandmother Lyndon's expression turned sour at the voices of discussion. She glanced at William disappointingly as she had great expectations of him. It had to be known that he was Granny's favorite grandchild! It was surprising that he would give her something fake!

William felt anxious, and he tried to leave

dejectedly. However, it was at that moment when another voice made an announcement! 1

"Granny, Black Tiger Real Estate's president, Felix Blakely, is here."

"Woah!"

Immediately the whole house turned lively! What was this? Felix came too? He was considered as one of the very best developers in Donghai City!

The price and value of houses in Donghai City were increasingly higher and higher, naturally, Felix's net worth rose like the tide as well. He had developed several real estate properties, and they were known to be Donghai City's high-value real estate as countless wealthy people stayed there! What personal connections did Granny have? She even knew Felix Blakely?!

Grandmother Lyndon stood there stupefied. She had at least met Wayne once before. It was at the Oriental Pearl Hotel when William had ordered expensive wine and incurred a bill of over 30 million bucks. It was barely acceptable seeing that she had met Wayne at that time so he came by to give her a birthday present. 1

However, the old lady truly did not know Felix!

The sound of engines stopped and a few black

Lincoln limousines stopped one by one into place. Felix wore a suit and was surrounded by men dressed in black as he strode toward the villa.

"Is Mister Darby here?"

Felix's voice was strong and booming, reverberating across the hall!

What?!

In an instant, everyone trembled!?

Who was Mister Darby?

"Is there anyone by the family name of Darby around here!" Granny Lyndon could not take it any longer and smacked her hand down on the table. " Dare I ask whoever is Mister Darby, please step forward. My hospitality was poor, please show yourself, and I would personally offer you a few drinks!" 1

Upon hearing Grandmother Lyndon's words, the thousand or so guests looked at each other helplessly. They truly did not know of such a man! 1

It was when everyone was silent that Stefan spoke in jest, "Only Darryl's family name is Darby... Can't be him, right?"

"Hahaha!" 2

The whole place burst into laughter. Initially,

everyone was puzzled, but upon hearing Stefan's words they were thoroughly amused. 1

Chapter 22

A few ladies started to speculate, some said that Mister Darby was a middle-aged man with a slight stubble.

Some said that Mister Darby was tall and handsome. Every possibility was speculated.

Finally, Grandmother Lyndon waved her hand and halted the discussions.

It was then Felix brought a few men in and glanced around, but there was no sight of Darryl.

"I'll leave the birthday present here then, I'll be going," said Felix as he bowed slightly.

Grandmother Lyndon felt uneasy and nodded her head profusely, even returning a bow as a sign of respect.

After Felix left, his present was opened up. This time, it shocked them even more!

It was a deed!

'Here's to many years of birthdays and success. On your esteemed birthday, I present to you a special gift: Southernwood Villa, No. A88'

Dead silence! The whole hall was pin-drop silent!

If a needle were to drop at that moment, it could be heard!

This... This... A villa as a birthday gift!?

It was not just an ordinary villa, it was a Southernwood Villa! It was located within Donghai City's top community of villas! Within the Southernwood Villa community, three villas were the most expensive: A66, A88, and A99. These three villas were sold for at least 10 million bucks each!

A88 was the most expensive amongst the three. It was located at the center of the community, with its private swimming pool, backyard, mini zoo, and mini aquarium! 1

It was Grandmother Lyndon's birthday, and Felix had gifted this villa! This...

Only one person did not have a shocked expression on her face. This person was Lily.

Lily had a clear hatred for that piece of trash Darryl, but ever since he left, she found herself inexplicably thinking about him.

Lily took out her cellphone, and could not help but to send Darryl a text message.

[Lily: Where are you?]

Very soon, Darryl replied. [Darryl: Home, I'm packing up. Leaving tonight.]

Upon reading the reply, Lily felt an unexplainable feeling of unease in her heart.

Darryl was a piece of trash, she should feel better if he left.

Lily bit her lip tightly, and strangely enough, texted a reply to him. [Lily: Wait for me, I'm coming back now.]

Maybe she wanted to see him for one last time? 1

After all, they were married for three years. Even if it were a dog, some feelings would develop, moreover a human?

"Mom, I'm going out for a while," said Lily softly as she left the villa.

Everyone had yet to snap out of their shock. They were still dazed by Wayne and Felix's gifts and did not notice that Lily had left.

Only Ashton followed Lily out quickly.

Lily drove and stopped by the main entrance. Just as she got out of the car, she saw Ashton running toward her.

"Lilybud, why did you leave suddenly?" Ashton

asked. “Granny is going to agree to our wedding after the banquet, let’s head back quickly.”

“You go on ahead,” said Lily as she hastily walked toward the residential community.

“Lilybud!” Ashton shouted as he grabbed Lily’s wrist suddenly. He had seen the contents of the message that Lily had sent Darryl!

“Are you going to meet that piece of trash?” Ashton took a deep breath, his eyes a little red. “What good is that piece of trash, since he wants to leave then let him leave! Why do you want to look for him? Come back with me!”

Ashton’s heart was anxious. He knew very well that Wang Xizhi's Ping’an Tie that he had given was a high-quality replica. Grandmother Lyndon would engage a professional appraiser to evaluate the scroll after the banquet is over, and when that happens, wouldn’t the truth be revealed?

Now that Ashton was left with nothing, all he wanted was to sleep with this goddess once! As long as Grandmother Lyndon agreed to the marriage, he can then justify having Lily over to his house without any security camera monitoring! It was that moment when Ashton planned to do something with Lily’s drink. Wouldn’t then the goddess be at his mercy?

On that thought, Ashton touched his pocket where he kept a packet of sedative powder. The powder would dissolve instantly in water, just one sip was enough to render a person feeling weak.

"Stop pulling me," said Lily softly. "Ashton, I know you treat me well, but I want to see him one last time." 1

"No!" Ashton exclaimed. "Let's quickly head back, see if Granny agrees to our marriage."

The two of them were arguing when a Land Rover stopped near them. Samantha stepped out of the car in her high heels.

"Ashton, Lilybud, what are you guys doing?" asked Samantha hurriedly. "Come back quickly, Granny is about to announce your marriage in a bit."

"I want to meet Darryl one last time, I'm not going back! I'm not going back no matter what you say!" Lily answered as she bit her lip tightly.

Ashton's gaze darted back and forth between Samantha and Lily and he had a wicked glee in his eyes.

"Auntie, let me get you something to drink," Ashton offered.

Ashton went to a milk tea shop and bought two

cups of milk tea, which he secretly placed the sedative powder into both cups. 1

Samantha was dragging Lily back when she saw Ashton approaching them with two cups of milk tea, and smiled upon that sight. 3

The weather was hot, and they both drank the tea offered. Samantha laughed saying, "Lilybud, go back quickly and await Granny's announcement of your marriage. Look at Ashton, how caring of him to get us milk teas during such hot weather." 2

As she was finishing her words, Samantha felt her body weakening, as if she could not keep herself balanced. 1

Lily felt the same way, her hands shivered, and she dropped her cup of milk tea. 7

Chapter 23

30 minutes later at Ashton's house.

"Somebody, help!" Samantha screamed in despair!

Never in Samantha's wildest dreams could she imagine that the expected son-in-law in her mind would do such a thing! Samantha and Lily were both tied up.

"Hush," said Ashton as he placed his finger on his lips as a motion of silence. "Stop shouting, no one can hear you even if you shout till your throat is broken. My house's walls' thickness is three times the average. Save your energy," Ashton said as he beamed.

Samantha clenched her fists tightly, her eyes were red. "Ashton, don't be rash, you're a talented young man with a bright future, don't ruin it!"

"Shut up!" Ashton strode toward Samantha, grabbed her hair, and shouted. "Ruin my future? Let me be honest with you, my future is already gone! I fought and struggled for my business for 10 years, and just as I've gotten some achievements, the Darby clan kicked me out of the company!"

"What... What did you say?" Lily was shocked. "

They chased you out of the company? Didn't you sell your company to buy me The Worship of Crystal?"

"Hahaha!"

Ashton laughed and slowly stood up from the bed. " You believed that crap I said? I have a total of 30 million bucks, do you think I'll use 30 million bucks just to get you a pair of heels? You must be crazy!"

Ashton clenched his fists tightly. "Yes, you're beautiful and sexy, but don't think too highly of yourself! To be honest, that pair of heels you received wasn't from me! I had thought that you were a classy goddess, Lily, but it turns out that you' re just another rotten sl*t! You're with lots of other men, aren't you? If not why wouldn't you know who gave you those heels?" 1

"Ashton Adagio, you bastard!" 1

Lily was furious. She wanted to get up and give Ashton two hard slaps! However, she was tied up tightly and had no means to do so. All she could do was bite her lips so tightly that it almost bled. 3

Ashton lit a cigarette from his pocket and took a huff. "Don't worry, I'll be sure to take good care of you ladies in a bit." 1

"Ashton, you're a good man, why are you so

impulsive?" asked Samantha as she stared blankly at him.

"Why?" retorted Ashton with a face full of self-deprecation. "Because I have nothing left! The Darbys kicked me out and withdrew all support for me! Can you guess why the Darbys did such a thing to me?"

Saying that, Ashton let out a laugh. "I asked the Darbys, and they told me that I had offended someone, that's why they kicked me out. Funny thing is, till now I have no idea who I offended! I've given up at this point, there's no way I can come back from this in this lifetime. Lily, I've liked you for so many years, today I must fulfill my wish!"

Lily and Samantha exchanged looks, both of them were in total despair.

However, it was at this moment when there was a sudden knock on the door!

Ashton's body flinched as he was frightened. He pointed at Samantha and Lily swiftly and warned, " If any of you dare to make any sound, I guarantee that it'll be the death of you." 6

After that, Ashton called out, "Who is it?"

"Greetings sir, the candles you've ordered have arrived," answered a voice from the opposite side

of the door.

Ashton breathed a sigh of relief. It was just the delivery person. He had ordered candles as he initially wanted to invite Lily for a candlelight dinner after Grandmother Lyndon approved of their marriage, but now it was no longer necessary.

"You can leave it at the door," instructed Ashton.

"My apologies sir, I require a signature to confirm receipt of the parcel." 4

"So damn troublesome," said Ashton impatiently as he opened the door.

It was at this moment that Samantha hurriedly glanced at Lily.

"Quick, think of something."

Lily understood Samantha's intentions. The effects of the drug have worn off but her body was still weak. Through some considerable effort, she managed to get her cellphone out, wanting to send Darryl a text message. 3

"Are you mad!" Samantha scolded softly. "Call the police! What good is there to call that piece of trash! Call the police!" 2

Samantha's eyes were red. Even if that piece of trash were to come, he would be no use at all! She

could not believe that at this time, Lily was still thinking about him!

Eventually, that thought occurred to Lily and she called the police instead.

The call connected but Lily dared not make a sound, instead, she tapped incessantly on her cellphone's screen before hanging up quickly.

If Ashton were to find out, the consequences would be too ghastly to contemplate! 1

Donghai City's police force were professional and dutiful. If they were any intelligent, surely they would have guessed that someone was in danger. 5

After Ashton signed for delivery, he placed the candles on the table and walked back toward the bedside. 1

Ashton could not hold it back any longer upon seeing the two beauties... 4

Meanwhile, at the Lyndon clan's villa. 5

Chapter 24

"Granny, Poesia Eleganza's president, Emily Dickinson is here."

Wow!

This time, the entire villa was in complete shock!

If Wayne and Felix were said to have a great reputation in Donghai City, Emily's reputation was a step above both of them!

Right now, Poesia Eleganza's business was at the apex! Among the national cosmetic brands, Poesia Eleganza's products received rave reviews and were leading in sales and market shares. Its newly released Crown line was so difficult to get!

Grandmother Lyndon knew President Dickinson as well!?

The crowd stared at the door, stunned.

Emily was dressed in a business suit and high heels. She strode in with five to six burly men behind her.

Many of the men there were stupefied. Emily's had an overpowering and alluring presence! Even though she was a woman, her presence was strong enough to overwhelm all the men around!

"Excuse me, is Mister Darby here?"

Emily asked softly as she entered the hall, and placed the birthday present next to her feet. The present was not in a box, it was a grandfather clock made of pure gold! How much gold was needed for this! Everyone was dumbfounded!

However, the most perplexing of all was that Emily came in, and asked the same as the others before! Looking for Mister Darby! Who exactly was Mister Darby!? 1

Grandmother Lyndon was flattered. This was Emily Dickinson!

The women around were all excited as well, they could not help themselves and came up to surround Emily. 1

"President Dickinson, does your company still have stock left for the Crown line? I would like to make a purchase!"

"Yes, President Dickinson, I'm willing to pay double the price for it!"

"I'm even willing to pay five times the price! President Dickinson, please can you sell us a few sets?"

The whole country was vying to buy the Crown line

cosmetics. Was there any woman who did not want it? 1

Emily smiled and glanced around. She could not see Darryl and was a little disappointed.

However, Emily had already made a proper inquiry, and Darryl was indeed at the Lyndon residence. She assumed that his relationship with the Lyndons should be pretty good?

On that thought, Emily spoke, "Sure, a friend of Mister Darby is a friend of mine. Our Crown line has indeed sold out, but I'm grateful for Mister Darby for turning my life around. A few sets shouldn't be a problem."

"For real!?"

"I can't be dreaming, I'm gonna have the Crown line!" 1

The few women were thrilled, but little did they know that Mister Darby was actually the piece of trash that they have always looked down on.

"Ladies," said Emily as she waved her hand. "Tell the total amount of Crown line you need to Mister Darby and he'll let me know, I'll be heading out now. I'll leave the birthday present here." 3

Emily finished her words and left.

"President Dickinson, who exactly is Mister Darby!" 2

A few of the women asked, but Emily was already long gone. If they could not locate Mister Darby, then they would not be able to get the Crown line. The women discussed anxiously among themselves.

"It is truly admirable that Granny's connections are so wide!" 2

At this moment, the White family patriarch, Claude, could not hold it any longer and stepped forward. " Granny, our family has an interesting project recently and we're looking for partners, how about our clans cooperate?

Who was Claude? He was none other than the talented patriarch of the White clan! He had been stunned from just now! Grandmother Lyndon's connections were so wide that she knew Wayne and Felix. Moreover, these people treated her with respect, and to go as far as to give her birthday presents worth millions! 3

Grandmother Lyndon had such good connections, nothing could be better than cooperating with her! 1

"Mister White, hang on a moment." A middle-aged man walked up as well. He was La Fortuna's president, Gailen Godfrey. 1

"Us at La Fortuna have a good project as well," said Gailen with a broad smile. 2

Even an idiot could tell that a lot of people in the hall would like to cooperate with the Lyndon clan now. 3

Chapter 25 1

Sure enough, after Gailen had finished talking, several others followed suit, wanting to seek cooperation.

The children of the Lyndon clan were full of smiles, this blessing came so fast!

Suddenly, Wentworth stood up.

"Wentworth, what is it?" Grandmother Lyndon asked curiously.

Grandmother Lyndon used to favor Wentworth. However, as Lily's father, ever since she got married to Darryl, she stopped favoring him as much.

Wentworth waved his hand and said to her, "Mom, as you know I've been overseas for the past while, and this time I'm back to celebrate your birthday. That said, I'm also back to bring you good news. It's a lucrative money-making project."

"Oh?" Granny replied with her eyebrows raised. "Do tell."

Indeed, members of the Lyndon clan had heard that Wentworth made a lot of money overseas. When he

came back, he casually gave Samantha and Lily two large checks. He truly made people envious. 1

Wentworth let out a laugh. "Mom, I made a friend when I was overseas. His name is Tony, he's a financier. We just need to give him the money, and it will be doubled after a month!" 3

What?

Everyone snorted at his words. Could it be any faker, doubled after a month?

Wentworth took out his cellphone to show his transaction record and laughed. "Come, see the records for yourself."

The crowd surrounded Wentworth in an instant. Sure enough, the records showed that he had invested 10 million bucks monthly for the past six months, and he received 20 million bucks in return every month.

"Mom, I came back for three reasons," explained Wentworth. "Firstly, it was to celebrate your birthday. Secondly, I know that you dislike Darryl, and with my return, I will make sure Lily and Darryl are divorced. Thirdly, was to share this good news with you. I swear upon my life that Master Tony is guaranteed reliable!"

"Swear upon your life?" 1

"Sounds interesting, seems like it is indeed reliable."

The Lyndons discussed among one another. Wentworth indeed was reliable, back then he was always the top student of his school. He was an honest man, and would never trick another person. Moreover, it was clearly shown on his cellphone that he made huge profits every month. 1

Grandmother Lyndon furrowed her brows and finally spoke. "Wentworth, if what you said is true, we can try it out. However in recent years, our clan's businesses aren't doing so well, we only have a total of 300 to 400 million in our funds. How about we try it out with 50 million first?"

"Mom, if we're gonna bet, we might as well bet big," Wentworth took a deep breath and stepped forward. "Rumor has it that Master Tony is going to retire soon. How about we invest all our funds into it. We'll invest all 400 million! Within a month, we'll get a return of 800 million and never have to do it again, what do you think?!" 1

Upon hearing those words, the members of the clan exchanged looks with each other.

Some of them believed that they could give it a shot, while some others rejected the suggestion.

"Granny, we can't do this," said Elsa as she stood

up, after giving it some considerable thought.

"There's no such thing as a free lunch!" Elsa angrily stomped her feet. "This is a scam, we should not do it!"

Smack!

Wentworth slammed the table and stared at Elsa intensely. "Elsa, what's the meaning of this? Are you implying that I came back just so I could scam our clan's money? How could you think so badly of me?"

"It's not that I think you're bad. I just want to know, if there are free lunches, who would need to work anymore?"

"You! You..." As Wentworth was about to speak, Grandmother Lyndon interrupted his words.

"Enough, we're all family, why are we arguing?" The old lady said unhappily as she slowly turned her gaze toward William. "William, what do you think?"

Even though the night-shining pearl William gave her was a fake, and he even got beaten up by Harry, he was still her favorite.

Naturally in such important matters, Grandmother Lyndon would still consult William's opinion.

Nobody noticed that William chuckled discreetly.

Initial investment doubled within a month? Is this some kind of children's trick? This was a scam! Granny has aged, so it was only natural that she could not tell that it was a scam!

Even though William was a little stubborn, he still had a sharp mind. Logically, he would advise Granny against such garbage talk, but at that moment, his heart was filled with hatred against Darryl!

No matter what Wentworth said, he was still Darryl's father-in-law. Wentworth did not leave a good impression on William.

"Granny, I think we can try," said William. 1

William had already thought it through. The money that would be invested would have no return. At that moment, the clan funding would break, and Wentworth's reputation would be ruined! Eventually, his entire family would be banished from the clan, only then would William be satisfied!

"William, are you mad?" Elsa said, raging mad. " You are advising Granny to invest?" 3

Before William could reply, Grandmother Lyndon had already waved her hand and stood up. "Enough, no more words from any of you. I've decided to go according to William's words. We will invest all of

our funds.” 8

Chapter 26

Woah!

The whole crowd was in an uproar, but Grandmother Lyndon's decision was final and nobody dared to refute.

After all, she favored William and a sentence from him was sufficient to let her make a decision.

Under the help of the clan's financial director, Wentworth then excitedly transferred Lyndon clan's family fund of 400 million into his account.

***

Donghai City Grandioso Community.

Several police cars were parked at the entrance of the community, dozens of policemen rushed down and surrounded Ashton's house!

This was a single-story house, and now it was fully surrounded by them.

Unexpectedly, a policewoman up in front was leading the team. Her loose police uniform could not cover her amazing figure.

"Madam Castello, what should we do next?" A petty

police officer walked over and asked.

Megan Castello looked around the surroundings. They had received an emergency call not long ago and the caller had tapped through the screen non-stop, it was obvious that it was a kidnapping case. She checked the caller's phone number and found that the number's owner was Lily Lyndon, and she owned a company named Neptunus Corporation.

Megan was the captain of the police criminal investigation team. It was cases like these where she has to lead the team herself.

"Put up the cordon, and get the loudspeaker," ordered Megan. "Go and investigate this Lily Lyndon, check whether she has any family members, and call them to come over quickly."

"Yes, Madam Castello," the police officer nodded and passed over the loudspeaker.

Ashton was in the room with a video recorder in his hand, he had thought it through and planned to record the whole process. If Lily and Samantha were to get agitated, he would use the recording to threaten them.

However, this awful video recorder was given by someone and Ashton did not know how to operate it. Some time had passed and by the time he finally figured out how to operate it, a woman's voice was

heard from outside the windows.

"People inside the house, listen carefully, release the hostage, and let us settle this in peace."

Ashton trembled all over. He crouched down and crawled to the door and peeked out. What he saw made his hair stood on end!

Dozens of policemen could be seen surrounding the house. There was no escape.

"You motherf*ckers, both of you!" Ashton's heart pounded as he pointed angrily at Lily and Samantha. He should have kept their phones!

Nevertheless, it was too late to do anything now!

He might as well be hanged for a sheep as a lamb. Ashton took out a dagger and held it against Lily's neck.

"Just you f*cking wait! I'll take you all with me if I die today!"

Ashton shouted as he moved toward the windows, " All of you leave at once, leave! Otherwise, I'll do it! Leave now!"

Outside the window, a police officer ran toward Megan. 1

"Madam Castello, the guy inside seems to be agitated and he is holding them hostage. What do

we do now?" This officer was sweating profusely as he spoke to Megan. 1

Megan was anxious too! There were too many trees around, the snipers could not aim properly.

More and more onlookers were crowding around the area.

Suddenly, a voice was heard.

"Ashton, release them. I'll go in and be your hostage."

Everybody was shocked for a moment. They turned toward the voice and looked!

An electric bike arrived slowly. Darryl stopped the vehicle and spoke toward the windows. 1

"No, you can't!" Megan went over quickly and forbade, "Are you the hostages' family member? You can't go in, it's too dangerous inside, you..."

"Ashton, do you hear me?"

Darryl seemed like he did not hear what Megan said to him. He looked at Ashton and said, "Look at you being a man, what are you doing kidnapping two women?"

In the room, Lily felt a warm feeling in her heart. Her eyes were a little red as she saw Darryl on his electric bike. Right off it was not clear what she was

thinking, but she shouted, “Darryl, don’t be silly! Leave quickly!”

“Lily, what nonsense are you saying!” Samantha got mad immediately, she exclaimed loudly, “That piece of trash is willing to be hostage, why are you stopping him?! Let him in to replace us, then we can leave!” 1

Chapter 27

"Mom! We can't drag Darryl into this..." persuadedLily.

"Can't drag him?" laughed Samantha. "Darryl stayed with us for three years while we Lyndons fed him, it's him who dragged us down for three years! Quickly, let him in here!"

Ashton smiled as he held the dagger tightly in his hand. He had nothing left, and it was expected for him to have come this far.

Swapping hostages? Impossible!

"Ashton, why are you being such a piece of trash?" Darryl smiled saying as he walked toward the windows. It was the only thing between him and Ashton now. "You gained a liking for my wife, but she doesn't like you. So you're mad now? Are you even a man?"

"Shut the f*ck up!"

Ashton was extremely agitated! Darryl was an infamous piece of trash, but also his desired goddess' husband!

This was a hurdle in his heart that he could not pass

through. He felt like a complete failure!

"Me? Shut up?" Darryl laughed, "Ashton, you're one sad man. You have nothing left now, your company got rid of you too. The goddess you desire is my wife. You are such a failure."

"You f*cking shut up, shut up!" Ashton screamed in agitation. His eyes were bloodshot red!

At this moment, Lily was staring at Darryl unblinkingly, her heart was touched.

Lily could see that Darryl was trying to make Ashton mad and hate him enough to want to swap them with himself. 1

Sure enough, Ashton clenched his fist and smiled at Darryl. "Sure, sure. You're great, aren't you? You're my goddess' husband, right? Come on, you want to swap hostage, come in then!"

Darryl scoffed as he entered the house.

Ten meters away, Megan could not help but look at Darryl a few times.

It was the first time she had seen someone voluntarily swap themselves as a hostage. A situation like this usually only happened in novels or TV series. 2

"Madam Castello, what do we do now?" A

policeman walked over and asked softly.

Megan waved her hand and said, "Get me a negotiator. We can't let any hostage get hurt, we absolutely can't! Also, stop that Darryl guy. Don't let him get in, I can see the suspect is emotionally unstable."

"Yes, Madam!" The police officer quickly replied.

It was at this moment that everyone in the Lyndon clan arrived at the scene. They were supposedly celebrating Grandmother Lyndon's birthday when the police suddenly called and notified them about Samantha and Lily's kidnapping. The celebration could not continue and they came quickly!

Even Grandmother Lyndon came, and the clan gathered around and looked nervously at the house. The old lady was terribly shocked having been informed that the kidnapper was Ashton.

"Captain Castello, is this a misunderstanding? The kidnapper is Ashton Adagio, I know this child and he wouldn't do something like that." Grandmother Lyndon approached Megan and asked nervously.

Megan glanced at her and answered calmly, "What's happened has happened, is he someone who wouldn't do that is not for anyone to decide. The fact is, he is a criminal now."

"Captain Castello, the two hostages must be safe,"

Granny replied. At this moment, Wentworth rushed over with an anxious look. He was sweating profusely.

"We will do our best, don't worry. Also, there's a man named Darryl who wants to be swapped as a hostage," said Megan.

"Really?!" A few members of the Lyndon clan exclaimed as they inched closer.

Megan nodded her head but was caught off guard when she heard a joyful response.

"Let him swap then!" Wentworth said, "Captain Castello, there is no problem with Darryl being a hostage. However, we can't let anything happen to my wife and daughter!"

What kind of person was this!? Megan could not help but glance at him.

The lives of your wife and daughter were precious, but the other was not?

"No," Megan replied and waved her hand. "The suspect is emotionally agitated now, we cannot swap the hostages."

"This..." Wentworth was disappointed.

Grandmother Lyndon, who was standing by the side, sighed as well. She walked forward with her

walking stick and said, "Captain Castello, you might not know. Although we're not some famous clan, neither are we a small one. Lily and Samantha have never suffered before, neither have they ever experienced any major life challenges before. I'm afraid they won't be able to bear it now that they are being held hostage."

Grandmother Lyndon paused for a while and continued, "But Darryl is different, he is a peasant and surely he is not afraid. Let him swap, please." 2

What sort of nonsense thoughts! Although Megan was an outsider, she was mad after hearing the old lady's words!

Chapter 28

Two policemen were blocking Darryl from entering the house. Darryl turned his head back and shouted, "Captain Castello, I am Lily's husband and I am obligated to swap as her hostage. Please let me in!"

This...

After all, Megan could not intervene as Darryl had volunteered.

"Captain, did you hear him?" Granny quickly stood up and spoke. "Darryl volunteered himself. Quickly, let him swap as a hostage!"

Megan felt helpless, but even so, she nodded her head at Darryl.

"Let them go," said Darryl coldly.

In the room, Ashton clenched his fists tightly seeing Darryl walking in. He untied the ropes on Samantha and Lily to let them go, and immediately grabbed and held on to Darryl!

"Both of you, leave now," ordered Darryl as he looked at Lily.

Lily felt tears in her eyes. This man was willing to be a hostage in place of her!

"Let's go quickly!" Samantha came to her senses. She pulled Lily and left the room without turning back.

Outside the house, the police and the Lyndon clan surrounded Lily and Samantha as soon as they saw them exiting. Wentworth burst out in tears.

"Lilybud, Sam, are you alright?" His hands shook as he held his wife and daughter.

He had always been dealing with business affairs and had never experienced any situation like that before. Just a moment ago, he was really frightened. However, he felt at ease seeing his wife and daughter were safe now.

"Dad, I'm alright. But Darryl, he..." Lily said as she turned to look at the house. Presently, Ashton was holding Darryl hostage with a sharp dagger resting on his neck.

However, there was not the slightest expression of fear on his face. On the contrary, he was looking at Lily with a smile!

"Daughter, why do you care about him?!" asked Samantha angrily. "His life and death do not relate to us! He is just a live-in son-in-law, three years of marriage and you both never even held hands. Why are you worried about his safety?"

"Indeed. Why do you have to make us worried!" Grandmother Lyndon said as she walked over. " Quickly, let us return home."

"Yes, let's go now," Wentworth chimed in. He grabbed Lily's hand and started to walk away.

"No, I will not leave. Darryl is still in there!" Lily said to them. However, nobody seemed to hear what she said. She did not know how many of them were pulling her away but very quickly, she was out of the residential community.

"Captain Castello, may I ask if there is anything else concerning us? If there isn't, we'll leave now," asked Grandmother Lyndon, as she and two subordinates walked to Megan's side. 3

Megan glanced at her and said, "Darryl is still in there, are you all not his family member?"

"No," Granny responded decisively. 1

She turned around and left.

Darryl, who was in the house, saw the Lyndons left and remained expressionless. 2

"Tsk tsk tsk! Darryl, this is how much you're worth?" Ashton laughed out loud.

"It doesn't matter how much I'm worth, I just know that I have legally married Lily. How about

you, why are you so miserable?" Darryl chuckled. " Ashton, let me ask you. Did the Darby clan suddenly withdraw the financial support they gave you and kicked you out of the company?"

"How did you know about this?!" Ashton shouted.

Not many people knew about it, even Lily and Samantha were not aware until he told them. However, how did this piece of trash Darryl caught wind of it?

"Did the Darby clan tell you too, that you messed with someone you shouldn't have?" Darryl continued.

"How the f*ck did you know?!" Ashton screamed as he completely lost his mind.

Outside the door, a police officer ran toward Megan' s side.

"Madam Castello, that guy Darryl seemed to be speaking to the criminal and is further agitating him," the police officer reported.

"That man!" Megan stomped her feet anxiously. " He is causing us trouble! Agitating the criminal like that, does he not want to live anymore?" 1

"Madam Castello!" The police officer reported again, with his face in disbelief! He was so surprised that he could not say anything! After a while, he

slowly reported, “Madam Castello, look...the criminal...it seems like the criminal is kneeling in front of Darryl...” 1

Chapter 29

What?

Megan looked into the house through the windows. Indeed, Ashton had placed the dagger on the floor and was kneeling in front of Darryl!

What happened? Megan felt that it was unbelievable! It was a first for her to see a criminal kneeling down for a hostage!

The policemen surrounding the house were stunned as well and did not know what to say!

They initially thought that they were going to be negotiating for a long time. After Darryl went in to swap as a hostage, nobody had expected him to say a few sentences and make the criminal kneel and beg for forgiveness!

In the room, Darryl smilingly looked at Ashton. He had revealed his true identity to Ashton just now.

In the beginning, Ashton did not trust Darryl's words. However, after Darryl revealed his bank card' s balance, Ashton has completely lost it!

It turned out that he did mess with someone he should not have, and that person was Darryl!

No wonder Lily was gifted the Worship of Crystal, it was from Darryl, who was the Darby clan's second young master! This piece of trash that everyone despised was the Darby clan's second young master!

"Second young master, I beg you please, I was blinded in the past," pleaded Ashton with his eyes red. "Second young master, I beg of you, please forgive me. I promise that I will never bother your wife anymore. I promise you, I'll swear to God..."

Darryl smilingly looked down at him. "Ashton, I can forgive you. As long you know you're at fault, I can talk with my clan to forgive you this once. However, the problem now is that you've committed unforgivable things. Look outside the window, they're all waiting to arrest you."

"No worries, Mister Darryl. My crimes now aren't major because I've stopped in time!" Ashton cried out.

"Fine, go and plead guilty then," said Darryl as he waved his hand. "I'll let you go as long as you don't loathe me when you're out of jail."

"Thank you, Mister Darryl, thank you, Mister Darryl," Ashton kneeled and kowtowed incessantly.

As long as Ashton could reclaim his life back to the way it was, it would be fine with him to lose ten

years of his life!

Darryl did not reply and strode quickly out of the room.

The policemen immediately rushed into the house as soon as they saw Darryl walking out.

Only Megan walked toward Darryl. Truth be told, it was the first time she had seen a man like this after working in the police force for so many years.

"Captain Castello, is there any problem?" Darryl asked.

Megan was undeniably beautiful. Although she wore a police uniform, it could not hide her curvy figure. She was hot.

"Would it be convenient for you to follow me back to the police station to file a record?" asked Megan.

"I'm sorry, I have something to do now," Darryl laughed. Right now, all he wanted to do was to return to his company. He had already made up his mind to never return to the Lyndon clan. From today onward, he would buy a house nearby and manage the company properly.

Darryl was about to leave when two Rolls-Royce drove up and stopped in front of him.

A middle-aged man came out of the car, he was

escorted by some people as he walked toward Darryl.

"Second young... Mister Darby," Samson walked quickly toward Darryl and bowed as he greeted. He had wanted to greet him 'second young master' but recalled that Darryl had mentioned he hated that.

"Samson Facey?" Megan seemed like she was talking to herself.

In Donghai City, Samson was famous as the boss of Moonlit River Bar.

As captain of the police force, Megan often encountered criminal cases. A place like Moonlit River has fights happening almost every day, and as such, she was familiar with who Samson was.

But...Samson's net worth was perhaps several billion!

However, he bowed toward this Darryl person? What was happening?

Megan could not help but look twice. Darryl stood in front of her wearing bargained clothes and rode here on an electric bike! What sort of ability did he have to let Samson bow respectfully toward him?

"Mister Darby," said Samson again as he wiped the sweat on his forehead.

He had just remembered that it was Darryl's

birthday today! He initially remembered, then he got busy and forgot about it.

"Samson, what is it?" Darryl looked at him as he got on his electric bike.

"Mister Darby, I forgot it's your birthday today. I'm sorry I arrived here late," Samson said apologetically. He took a wooden box out from the car, bowed towards Darryl while handing it to him, and said, "Mister Darby, a little gift..."

"Fine, I'll accept it. I still have some business to do so I'll be leaving first," Darryl said as he accepted the box. He did not want to waste time, as he knew Samson would not give up if he had not accepted the box.

Darryl placed the box in his pocket and rode away on his electric bike. 1

"Mister..." Samson wanted to say more but Darryl had already ridden far away.

He could only shake his head and left in the car.

Three days later.

Lyndon clan's villa.

It was a great day as Lily had finally agreed to negotiate with Platinum Corporation. As expected, Platinum Corporation agreed to let the Lyndons

style Giselle's image.

Therefore, everyone gathered together to discuss how to style Giselle's image. 1

"Granny, I think we should first let Giselle compete in Superstar. This variety show is very popular now," suggested William.

"Granny, actually we could also grow her fame to be an Internet celebrity," suggested a woman. 1

Chapter 30

Everyone voiced their own opinions.

Only Lily was absent-minded. She was wondering in her heart, why did Platinum Corporation only want her? She had not even met the company's president!

The Worship of Crystal too, who had given that to her?

Lily had a thousand questions in her heart that she could still hold on to and not think about them for the time being. However, her mind was now filled with the sight of Darryl willingly replacing her as a hostage!

It has been three days since Lily has seen Darryl. During these three days, he did not come home, how was he holding on?

Lily felt uneasy. She forced herself not to think about him, but she could not help it and her mind was full of him!

"Lilybud, what do you think?" asked Grandmother Lyndon at that moment.

"Lilybud?"

"I'm here, I'm here," said Lily as she lifted her head, and noticed that everybody was looking at her.

"Lilybud, why are you so absent-minded?" asked Granny. "What's wrong?"

"It's nothing, Granny," Lily let out a smile and shook her head, trying hard to not let herself think about Darryl. 3

At Platinum Corporation.

Darryl held a folder in his hand. He had done a thorough analysis of Platinum Corporation within three days. Before that, the company was managed by his aunt-in-law, but the business was not doing well due to poor management.

Last year's gross profit was only 100 million bucks.

This amount was considered extremely low for a company like Platinum Corporation. Such a company should have a yearly gross profit of at least two billion, and even that it was considered a conservative figure.

Darryl had just become the company's president, and he had to find a way to resolve this issue. The solution was simple, they have to style Giselle and promote her.

Giselle had great looks and an incomparable figure,

and her singing was not half bad. If she was marketed good enough, she would surely be famous.

Even though Darryl no longer lived at the Lyndon's residence, he still had some feelings for Lily. Hence, he had delegated the duty of styling and promoting Giselle to her, as a final gift for her.

According to the Lyndons' research, Giselle should participate in 'Superstar'.

This program was a talent show competition, akin to the 'Super Boy' and 'Super Girl' talent show series in the past years.

The show also had Platinum Corporation's financial support as well. Darryl's investigation revealed that the reason the company's gross profit was low was due to its huge investment in 'Superstar'.

The company had invested over two billion bucks into it! The show was very popular, however, its financial returns were somewhat low.

Noting that this season's 'Superstar' was about to begin, Darryl had the idea to find a sponsor.

Many companies were vying to sponsor popular shows like this, and Darryl decided to give Audi the chance.

Audi had agreed to sponsor a billion bucks, on the condition that they were given a 10-minute

advertisement air time per episode. Logically speaking, other companies were willing to sponsor up to 1.5 billion bucks, but Audi's president was a good friend of Samson. As such, he awarded the opportunity to Audi as a favor to Samson.

Darryl took the folder and walked out of the company. He rode his electric bike to Audi's head branch, wanting to negotiate a deal and it just so happened that he also wanted to buy a car.

Several luxurious cars such as Land Rover and Mercedes-Benz were parked at the entrance to Audi's head branch. After all, those who could afford to buy an Audi were wealthy people.

Darryl parked his electric bike and walked in hastily.

Damn, it took him an hour to ride her from the company!

"Welcome, is there anything I can help you with?"

At the main hall, a woman dressed in professional attire walked up to Darryl and smiled.

The woman was pretty, she had a height of 165cm and delicate fair skin. Even though she was wearing a suit, one could easily observe that she had an amazing figure.

Audi was truly capable, even their general employee was such a beauty.

"That... I would like to buy a car."

Darryl scratched his head and said to the woman, "I saw on TV that there's an Audi convertible, can I see that?"

"I'm sorry, we're on our lunch break." The lady forced a smile and replied Darryl. She could not hide the disgust in her eyes. What luck did she have to meet such a weirdo? It was obvious to her that the person in front of her was a peasant wearing bargained clothes, and he wanted to buy a car?

Is Audi even something a loser like him could afford?

"Lunch break?" Darryl mumbled as he looked around.

That was not right, several people were looking at cars in the main hall! Of course, these customers were wearing suits and leather shoes, one look at them was enough to tell that they were rich.

"If that's the case, why do they have people attending to them?" asked Darryl.

The lady sighed and was visibly annoyed. She was certain that the person in front of her must be a worker from the nearby factory, making use of his lunch break to come here and window-shop. Perhaps he even wanted to take a few pictures in the

car so he could go back and brag. People like that were truly disgusting.

"I'm sorry sir, we're on our lunch break. Moreover, there's not a single car model here that's below 300,000 bucks. If all the various expenses are accounted for, it would cost 350,000 bucks at the very least to own one. Even if you purchased in installments, the upfront cost itself is over 100,000 bucks. Moreover, the cheapest model is already out of stock at our branch. Sir, we're on our lunch break. If there's nothing else, please leave the premises," said the lady, unable to hold back anymore.

Damn, this place chased people out?

Darryl was about to say something when he saw a man and a woman walking in.

Upon seeing the woman, Darryl's fist instantly clenched tightly!

Lily?!

Darryl had only left for a few days, and there was another man by her side already? 1

Chapter 31

The man beside Lily who was wearing a suit and leather shoes had perfect manners.

Lily looked a little miserable as she forced a smile on her face. However, she still stood beside the man, accompanying him.

The man was Charles Luke, and to Samantha, he was the best son-in-law candidate.

Lily had countless admirers, but Charles was the one Samantha preferred most. Not only did he look smart, but Charles was a senior manager in the Audi Corporation. He was the Regional Manager of Donghai City, and a perfect match with Samantha's daughter, unlike Darryl who looked low class.

"Manager Luke."

At that moment, the lady in front of Darryl quickly rushed forward with a huge smile, and greeted him passionately.

Earlier, the lady's face looked disgusted when she saw Darryl, but now, her reaction was the complete opposite.

Charles nodded and asked, "Has the President of

Platinum Corporation arrived yet?"

The lady quickly replied, "Not yet. I have been waiting at the main lobby, but no car drove by."

Charles did not question further but looked down at Lily with a smile and said," Let's wait in the office then."

Lily was distracted, and she just mumbled without speaking. Even though Samantha wished to make Charles her son-in-law, Lily was unwilling to interact with Charles. She was not here for a date today.

Charles Luke mentioned that he knew the president of Platinum Corporation.

She was interested in the President of the Platinum Corporation, as the President said that he recognized Lily from the Lyndon family.

However, Lily was unaware that Charles did not know the President of Platinum Corporation at all!

Recently, both Audi and Platinum Corporation collaborated to co-sponsor the "Superstar" program. The headquarters delegated Charles to be in charge of signing the contract with Platinum Corporation, thus they would have naturally met. Charles bragged to Lily about how widely connected he was. It was a complete show off, intended to

raise his own status.

At that moment, Darryl grinned. He then walked over.

Manager Luke? Audi Corporation informed him that the person in charge of the collaboration was Manager Luke. 1

Seeing Darryl approaching, the female receptionist frowned and said annoyingly, "Hey! Why are you still here?"

Charles glared at Darryl and felt that the loser was here to gain exposure, so he did not really care. He said to the lady, "When the President of Platinum Corporation arrives to discuss our collaboration, do not allow these people of no relevance to come in. What if they dirty his car?"

The lady quickly replied, "Yes, yes, Manager Luke. I will chase him away now." She then bluntly said to Darryl, "Mister, please leave immediately."

Darryl ignored her as he kept his eyes on Lily.

"Darryl?"

Finally, Lilly saw Darryl. Her body shivered, filled with surprise and happiness, and some awkwardness.

Lily did not understand why she felt awkward. The

few days after Darryl left, she should have felt happy that she could finally get rid of the useless guy. However, when she looked at the empty room at night, emptiness filled her heart.

Darryl did not speak but instead looked at Charles inquisitively.

Lily took two steps forward and explained, "Darryl, please don't take this wrongly. My mum introduced him..."

Hearing that, Darryl instantly understood the reasons behind it and nodded without waiting for Lily to speak further. "I understand."

This mother-in-law was really desperate. Even though he had just left for a couple of days and had not even arranged for a divorce with Lily, she already started to look for a new son-in-law.

Impatient, Charles asked, "Lilybud, who is this?" Lily was a goddess. How would she have known such a low-class farmer?

Lily opened her mouth, but did not reply. Darryl smiled briefly, looked at Charles and said, "I am her husband, Darryl Darby. The nickname of Lilybud isn 't appropriate for you to address her. Please have some respect."

Charles was stunned.

He then cheekily checked out Darryl, and laughed, " Oh, so you are the toy boy. I was wondering who you were."

"Haha, Aunt Samantha told me all about you. You married into the Lyndon family for three years, yet did not contribute anything to the family besides eating their food. A complete piece of trash, haha!"

Charles added, "I am very curious. Is that why you are too ashamed to stay on in the Lyndon family, hence you disappeared? How dare you still appear in front of Lilybud? The most ridiculous thing is, you are so thick-faced that you even admitted that you are Lily's dear husband. Do you really deserve that status? Haha, you should use your urine as a mirror and look at yourself. Aunt Samantha has spoken. You and Lily are going to divorce, isn't that right Lilybud?"

Charles stared mockingly at Darryl with a cold smile and a face full of humiliation.

Lily bit her lips and said, "Charles, stop it."

Hearing Lily's words, Charles smiled at Darryl. "I will stop talking as a sign of respect to Lily."

Next, he turned to the female receptionist and asked, "What did he say he was here for when he arrived earlier?" 3

Chapter 32

The lady replied with a face filled with disgust, "He said he was here to purchase a car."

She thought the man was just a worker from a nearby factory, so she did not expect he was a toy boy.

"Haha, buy a car?"

Charles laughed and said, "Buy a car from us? Our cars ain't cheap. Can you afford it?"

While talking, a lady walked into the showroom. Lily was surprised to see the lady as it was her best friend, Phoebe.

"Sister Lily?" Phoebe happily quickened her pace. She did not expect to bump into Lily here.

Lily laughed and said, "Phoebe, what a coincidence. What are you doing here?"

Phoebe swiped her hair and said sweetly, "My husband is doing pretty well lately, so he bought me a new car. I am here to collect it."

Phoebe's husband is in the hotel hospitality business, so it was pretty normal for him to get a new car for her.

While speaking, Phoebe noticed Darryl. She was surprised." Isn't this the useless prick at your house? You brought him here to check out cars..."

Before she could finish, she saw the complicated look in Lily's face, then saw the handsome Charles standing behind Lily. Phoebe figured it out, and immediately stopped talking.

Phoebe asked, "This is..."

Without waiting for Lily to open her mouth, Charles extended his hand and smiled, "Hello, I am Charles Luke, Donghai City Regional Manager of Audi Corporation. Aunt Samantha introduced me to Lilybud." 1

Hearing this, Phoebe completely understood what was going on. She shook Charles' hand and replied, "Wow, regional manager. So the car I just bought, can I get a further discount? I am Lily's best friend after all."

"Most definitely," Charles laughed and at the same time threw a stare at Darryl.

Do you see it?

Both Lily's family and best friend are on my side. What do you have to go against me?

"Thank you, brother in law!" Phoebe smiled widely

and joked, "Oh yes, when is your wedding with Lily? Remember to add me in the guest list for the wedding."

Phoebe was so excited. She never imagined that she would still be able to get a further discount when collecting the car.

Darryl's face turned dark.

F*ck you. Lily and I are still not divorced, yet you are so eager for another wedding?

Brother-in-law sounded so sweet.

Lily felt so embarrassed as she pulled Phoebe aside and scolded, "We have not even started dating. What are you talking about?"

Thinking that Lily was shy, Phoebe replied, "It is just a matter of time, sooner or later."

While speaking, Lily glared at Darryl annoyingly and said, "Someone's face is really thick yeah? Still sticking around the Lyndon family and refusing to leave? Sister Lily is here for a date, and you dare to follow." 2

Darryl grinned, but did not care to respond.

Charles seized the opportunity to further humiliate him, speaking to Phoebe, "You guessed wrongly. We just bumped into each other. Besides, he said

that he was here to buy a car."

"Him buying a car? Haha, this is ridiculous!"

Phoebe started laughing loudly and heavily. She said, "Darryl, you have the money to buy a car? Oh, I forgot. Lily used to give you 200 bucks as daily allowance. After three years you would have saved up a fair sum. However, if you want to buy an Audi, you can only afford to buy four of the wheels. Haha."

The whole place, including the salesperson and receptionists could not stop laughing and started gossiping and pointing at Darryl.

He was not only feeding off the wife's wealth but even getting daily allowance from her? What kind of man was this? He was really shameless.

The laughter on Charles' face got even thicker.

Darryl then said casually, "Who are you to say that I can't afford a car?"

Chapter 33

Phoebe laughed and said, "Sure, you can afford it!"

She then moved toward Lily's side and said, "Sister Lily, tell me. Is it because this useless fella knew that Aunt Samantha introduced a boyfriend to you that he decided to secretly track you and wished to compensate for the breakup at the same time?

Did you give him the money to buy the car?"

Darryl almost laughed. Me asking for compensation from her? You would be the only one who would have thought of that.

Lily could not stand it anymore, so she pulled Phoebe's hand slightly and said, "Stop saying that! He didn't ask money from me."

Phoebe immediately spoke after Lily, "Why can't I speak? Even if he didn't ask any money from you, I still feel that it's unfair to you!"

With a face full of righteousness she carried on, looking down upon Darryl, "Hey! The Darby, you really have your way. Prior to this, you wasted three years of Lily's wonderful life, and now after the break up, you still cling onto her and refuse to let go. Are you still a man or what?"

Darryl ignored her, smiled and looked at Charles. " At the beginning, I planned to buy the most expensive car from this place. However, an Audi car is not top notch, but just right for a low-profile person like me. However, the service here sucks. It is so disappointing, so I have decided not to buy the car anymore."

"Haha, you are one of a kind." Charles laughed widely as if he just heard the biggest joke, and said while pointing at Darryl, "Aunt Samantha told me that you are good at nothing. I think she underestimated you. At least your ability to brag is top notch.

While speaking, Charles started to tease him, " Buddy, to be honest, if I were you, I will not shame Lily here. I would've left long ago." 1

Phoebe laughed with her face full of disgust.

Then, Charles looked at the watch on his wrist. "I do not have time for nonsense. You need to leave immediately. Lilybud and I still have important matters to discuss."

Darryl gave a cold smile to Charles and said, "You don't have to chase me away. I will leave. It's just that I worry you might regret it after I do so."

In his briefcase, was the contract between Platinum

Corporation and Audi Corporation.

This Charles here did not have a clue who he was speaking to.

"I'll regret it?" Charles lost his smile. "You definitely have a problem with your brain. If I were to regret, my whole family, including my parents and sisters, will address you as Father, okay? Leave. Please leave immediately!"

"If you say so." Darryl smiled and turned to walk quickly toward the exit.

Charles spoke to impress Lily, "Lilybud, the President of Platinum Corporation will be here very soon. Let's wait in the office." Charles grinned as he watched Darryl leave.

Phoebe could not wait and asked, "Oh my, the President of Platinum Corporation. Is it the Platinum Corporation who have many big stars under them?"

Judging by Charles' nod, Phoebe added, "Sister Lily, you have really met the right person. Look how wide Charles' network is. He even knows the President of Platinum Corporation.

Lily smiled, but did not say a word.

Her mind was full of Darryl at that moment.

Charles felt proud seeing Phoebe's reaction and felt

great satisfaction. He was also confident that by helping Lily to chase Darryl away, he would impress her.

He was wrong.

Lily said while feeling disturbed, "I am sorry. I just remembered that I needed to do something. I will not be meeting the President of Platinum Corporation with you. Let's do so next time."

She left the main hall without waiting for a response from Charles or Phoebe.

"Lilybud?" Charles was stunned, looking at Lily leaving without hesitation.

Outside of Audi 4S centre.

"Darryl, wait up..."

Darryl heard Lily calling for him right after he stepped out from the showroom.

Darryl stopped, turned and looked at her, looking indifferent, "Don't you and that Manager Luke have something to do? Why did you come out?"

Even though he knew that Lily was meeting Charles due to being pressured by Samantha, his heart still did not feel good.

Lily said while biting her lips, "It's not what you think." After some hesitation she said, "I never

planned to meet this Charles. It's just that he told me that he would introduce the President of the Platinum Corporation to me, hence I came."

Hearing that, Darryl smiled with relief.

Lily curiously asked, sounding concerned, "Where have you been for the past few days?"

Darryl thought, and replied indifferently, " Nowhere. It's just that I found a job with meals and accommodation provided."

Lily had a tingling sensation in her heart and asked immediately, "What kind of job?"

Chapter 34

At the same time, there was a sense of relief. It has been three years and he finally was motivated to progress.

Darryl smiled calmly and said, "Just doing some business, normally for promotional purposes but also occasionally helping the company with procurements. Just now, I was there to help my boss look for a new car."

Knowing that Lily might ask him further about buying a new car, Darryl explained to stop her from doing so.

Lily nodded doubtfully and asked curiously, "What kind of company?"

Darryl replied casually, "It's just a small company."

In fact, Darryl was tempted to tell her the truth that he was the President of Platinum Corporation. However, after careful reconsideration, it was still not the best time, so he decided to continue hiding it from her.

Understanding that Darryl did not want to talk more, Lily decided not to ask further. Her emotion was complicated as she pressed her lips and said, "

Darryl, do you still refuse to come home?"

Lily did not know what to think. Prior to this, when they were together, she felt disgusted but now that they were separated, she missed him.

Darryl exhaled deeply and said, "Another few more days, after I'm done, I'll come looking for you."

"It's fine then." Lily nodded, thinking of something as she stared at Darryl without blinking and asked, "The other day, why did you want to switch with me to be the hostage?"

Darryl smiled and said, "That was because you are my wife."

Hearing Darryl's word, Lily felt a sudden shiver. Deep down in her heart, she was touched, felt a slight tingle and a dash of shyness.

The atmosphere turned awkward.

At that moment, Lily's phone started to ring.

Seeing the call was from the office, Lily immediately answered. She then turned to Darryl and said, "I have to go, you... you take good care of yourself."

After saying that, Lily got into the car with slight sadness in her eyes.

Audi 4S centre at the moment.

Charles held back his heartache. After giving Phoebe some discounts, he asked the reception personnel to bring Phoebe to check out the cars.

Then, Charles gathered a few front desk personnel, stood them neatly into two rows outside the showroom, awaiting for the arrival of the President of Platinum Corporation.

However, ten minutes yet no one appeared.

"Why isn't he here yet?"

Charles complained as he was a little impatient, and went back into the office, to call the secretary of the President of Platinum Corporation, Pearl Hahn.

Charles spoke politely once the line connected, " Hello, Secretary Hahn? How are you? I am the representative from Audi, Charles Luke. This morning you informed me that your President is coming over today."

On the other hand, Pearl's reaction was rather calm and said, "Yes, he left already."

Charles was stunned and said, "Oh, he was here already? I didn't see him."

He immediately asked, "May I know how your President was dressed? What car was he driving?"

Pearl gave it a thought and said, "No suit. I think he

was on his electric bike when he left."

Electric bike?

Hearing that, Charles was taken aback.

At the same moment, Pearl's voice could be heard, " Our new President keeps a very low profile."

Charles felt dizzy after hearing that. He replied thoughtfully, "That's fine. I understand now."

Charles rushed out of the office after putting down the phone.

Riding an electric bike, no suit...

The useless man just now was Darryl Darby. The surname of the new President of Platinum Corporation was Darby.

Oh s*it! It could not be him, right?

Charles yelled at the reception personnel in panic, " Hurry up, please call that man who was here earlier back here, no matter what it takes."

The female receptionist that just chased Darryl away was confused. She thought she heard wrongly and asked, "Manager Luke, are you saying the toy boy?"

Charles glared and scolded her, "What do you mean toy boy? Don't speak rubbish, go get him back

quickly." He added, "Leave, if you are not able to bring him back."

Yuliana dared not ask further. She quickly joined the others rushing out from the showroom. She was confused as the guy looked like a poor man but why ask him to come back?

Chapter 35

Few minutes later, Yuliana found Darryl at a snack stall.

Yuliana was drenched in sweat when she appeared in front of Darryl. She said with confusion, "Mister, our Manager Luke would like to invite you to return to the centre."

She did not understand why Charles wanted to desperately look for this person.

Darryl was enjoying his meatball stick as he casually said, "Just before, all of you enjoyed chasing me out, right? Now you want to invite me back? Who do you think I am?"

Yuliana was very nervous and she almost cried. " Mister, I was wrong. My attitude was bad. If you don 't go back there with me, I will lose my job."

Yuliana bit her lips tightly. Before, she looked down on Darryl, but now she was begging him.

As she almost cried, Darryl replied, "Fine."

Moments later, back at the Audi 4S centre, Yuliana politely brought Darryl into the office.

Charles walked toward Darryl with a big smile the

moment he saw him.

"Mister Darby!"

Darryl sat elegantly on the sofa, glared at Charles and said," Humans change really quickly don't they? I finally experienced it today. Bastards like you flipped so quickly too. So, what is this about? Invited me back to humiliate me again?"

Charles's facial emotion changed slightly as he held back his anger and replied cautiously, "That... Mister Darby, are you here to discuss the collaboration?"

Darryl did not immediately reply. He quietly took out the documents from his briefcase and threw it onto the coffee table.

Charles picked up the document and immediately read it. He was stunned. With a wide smile on his face that was full of sincerity and apologies, he said, "President Darby, look, before this I ..."

Without waiting for him to finish, Darryl waved his hand. "I don't buy this. When you asked me to leave just now, what did you say? You asked me to get out and if you regret, you and your family, will address me as..."

Charles turned purple, as he forced an ugly smile on his face and said, "President Darby, I didn't know

who you were."

Seeing that Darryl did not reply, Charles swallowed his pride, took a bow and greeted, "Father!"

Although the collaboration involved Audi Corporation sponsoring 100 million bucks for the entertainment program of Platinum Corporation, the advertisement from these programs would bring an unimaginably huge benefit to Audi.

One must know that Superstar was really a big hit program.

As such, no matter how unwilling Charles was, he had to accept defeat, otherwise if he blew this collaboration, he would not be able to hold on to his position as the Regional Manager. 1

Darryl was finally satisfied, nodded and said, "Yes, now this is sincere."

At that moment, Phoebe having completed her car purchase, walked in to happily say goodbye to Charles.

However, before she could enter, she saw what had happened through the glass window and was shocked.

Did she have a problem with her eyes?

Was the person sitting on the sofa not the useless

Darryl?

And Charles was apologising to him?

Furthermore... Did Charles just greet Darryl, “ Father?”

Did she hear wrongly?

“...”

Charles felt so ashamed after he noticed Phoebe standing by the door. His face was all red. He wanted to bury himself in a hole.

“Excuse me for a moment.”

“Wait.” Darryl shook his hand and said, “I would love to remain low profile. I do not wish too many people knowing about my position. You should know what to say to her.”

“Yes, I understand.”

Charles was not stupid. He knew what Darryl meant immediately. His head was pounding.

Once he was outside the office, Charles changed to his regular character as the regional manager, smiled toward Phoebe and asked, “All done?”

“Yes, thank you!” Phoebe smiled while looking at Darryl in the office. She asked casually, “What happened? Were you apologising to him just now?

Why is he back? Is he really here to buy a car?"

"Oh... about that..." Charles was in a dilemma, so he casually replied after some thought, "How would he be able to afford a car? He said he lost something while at the centre so he came back looking for it... I was explaining to him..."

"I see."

Phoebe asked further, "A useless man like him will never lose something valuable. I guess he is here to cheat you."

While speaking, Phoebe took out her cellphone. " You are too kind. Shall I help you call the cops?"

Chapter 36

Charles desperately stopped her, "No, that's not necessary. I will handle it."

At the same time, a layer of cold sweat washed over him.

He was the President of Platinum Corporation and Phoebe was Lily's best friend. How could you not know that? You sounded so mean when you spoke to him.

"Fine then, I won't interfere. Once your relationship with Lily is settled, don't forget to buy me dinner!" Phoebe kept her cellphone, bid farewell to Charles with a smile, turned around and left.

At that moment, Phoebe did not notice how awkward the smile was on Charles' face.

"President Darby, about the contract..."

Charles smiled as he went back into the office.

Darryl said bluntly, "Sign it!" He added, "Before you sign this, there is one thing you need to understand. I don't care how Lily and you met, but you should know what to do in the future by heart."

Charles quickly said, "I understand, I understand. I promise, Lilybud and I..., no, no. Miss Lyndon and I will keep a distance."

Darryl agreed and said, "Alright, there's nothing else then. Let me remind you, in the future, don't think too highly of yourself otherwise you will be easily embarrassed."

Charles agreed hastily, "Yes, yes!"

Reflecting on his own behavior earlier, Charles said sincerely, "President Darby wanted to get a car just now. To show my sincerity and to apologize, let me present President Darby with a car outside. How about that?"

"Really? I will take it then."

It was a free car, so of course, he would take it.

Charles was trying to impress as he said, "You are most welcome, President Darby. We're partners now, so what does one car cost? After the contract signing is done, please choose which model you would like."

In a moment, the contract signing was complete. Darryl walked out of the office, followed by Charles. He pointed to a white R8 in the middle of the showroom and said, "This model looks alright. I'll get this one."

Charles' stomach twisted at that moment.

An Audi R8 was 1 million bucks!

“What’s wrong? Are you regretting it?” Darryl joked, looking at Charles’ face, as if he was constipated.

Charles quickly shook his head and said, “No, no... I was thinking that it was a great choice, President Darby. This R8 is a perfect match for you.”

Immediately, Charles instructed his man to prepare the necessary documentation for Darryl. His face was full of smiles, but his heart was bleeding.

Thirty minutes later, Darryl casually drove off in the R8, leaving the Audi headquarters.

At that moment, looking at Charles presenting an R 8 to Darryl in such a respectful manner, all the workers at the centre were puzzled and did not understand the situation.

Phoebe especially was shocked and lost for words.

Was Manager Luke out of his mind?

Looking at the complicated expression on Charles' face, she dared not asked anything.

On Darryl’s end, after settling the collaboration with the Audi Corporation, Darryl had nothing

much left to do. The next day, he gave Lily a call.

Knowing that Darryl was returning, Lily was on cloud nine. She waited at home instead of going to the office.

In the dining hall, Samantha was sitting on the sofa in her pajamas and wet hair, after her shower.

As a matter of fact, she looked even more sexy and elegant after her shower.

Samantha said, "That useless man, why do you let him return? You refused to tell me how it went yesterday when you met Charles. What are you thinking?"

Lily replied subtly, "Mum, I do not wish to divorce at the moment."

"What's good being with this useless one? The only thing was that two days he offered to switch places as a hostage and that made you feel touched? Samantha slammed the table angrily and said, "I tell you, Lilybud, do not let yourself feel touched over just a small matter. Think about it. Are you happy during these three years of marriage? No matter what, I will not be satisfied with Darryl. The son-in-laws of other families, all have net worth of a few million, as compared to this useless one!"

In the middle of the conversation, noises could be

heard from outside. Samantha looked out naturally and she shivered at what she saw. 1

A brand-new white Audi sports car was driving slowly in.

The most shocking sight was the person who stepped out from the car.

This body was one she would never forget. This person dressed cheaply is... is the useless man, Darryl?

Chapter 37

"I'm back," said Darryl, with a big smile on his face while walking toward Lily.

Lily nodded and glanced at the Audi R8 parked outside.

Noticing Lily's curiosity, Darryl smiled and said, " This was the car I helped to get for my boss. I am off today, hence he let me take a drive."

Lily understood but in her heart, she doubted him. What kind of boss would be so generous to allow his staff to drive his new car?

At the same time, Samantha recovered from her shock but could not stop laughing, "So the whole ordeal is that you are driving someone else's car. I thought the useless you had finally turned over a new leaf."

Darryl smiled, but ignored her remarks.

Samantha got angrier, turned to Lily and said, " Lilybud, I really don't understand why you're still hesitating. Isn't that Charles that I introduced you to great? You should divorce this useless one immediately. The more I see him, the more upset I become."

"Mum." Lily bit her lips tightly, shaking her head and said, "You don't need to interfere with my business. At least he found a job now. I... I hope to give him a chance. He has found a job, so he definitely has changed." 1

Samantha almost blew her top and was speechless. She could not figure out what was wrong with her daughter.

She stared sharply at Darryl and went into her room.

Darryl grinned, and said while looking at Lily, "Are you really not going to divorce me now?" 1

Lily replied calmly, "Don't celebrate too early. I am still observing you." 1

Darryl nodded without saying a word.

He respected Lily's wish. No matter what, for the past three years he married into their family, Lily was under a lot of pressure because of him.

"I am tired and I'm going to rest inside." The atmosphere was rather awkward, so Darryl went to his room after saying that.

Lily did not follow but sat down on the sofa, deep in thought.

At that moment, Lily's heart felt complicated.

Was her decision earlier right or wrong?

She gave him another chance so that he could give her a wonderful future?

At the same time, on Samantha's end, she was stressed, angry and speechless at her daughter's stubbornness. 1

She grumbled out loud, "No, I cannot let the useless one continue to be part of our family." Taking out her cellphone, she dialled a number. 1

The number she dialled was to Charles.

Once the call was connected, Charles answered politely with a hint of hesitance, "Aunt Samantha, is everything alright?" 1

Samantha immediately asked, "Charles, how was the meeting between you and Lilybud yesterday?" 1

Her gentle voice was as if her son-in-law was on the other end of the line. 1

On the other side of the line, Charles felt rather awkward as he laughed and said, "Aunt Samantha, I feel... I am not suitable for Lilybud." 1

"What?"

He spoke carefully, "Also, I feel that Lilybud and... and Darryl are good together. They are a good match. I... I do not wish to go between them." The smile on Charles' face looked as if he was crying. 3

Samantha had a shiver down her spine with a face full of surprise. “Charles, are you okay?” 1

Charles spoke politely, “I am fine, Aunt Samantha. Oh yes, if you were to meet Darby, ahem, Darryl, please let him know that I wish Lily and him all the best... all the best.” He was so nervous that he almost called out President Darby. 1

At that moment, Charles had cold sweat all over his body. 1

Luckily, he managed to stop, otherwise if he made President Darby unhappy, there will be no further collaboration with Audi Corporation. 1

“You...”

Hearing this, Samantha felt lost for a moment.

What was going on? Was it not that Charles had always looked to her daughter as a goddess? 1

Charles looked nervous and said, “Aunt Samantha, I have something coming up. I can't talk longer.” He hung up the call right after. 1

“Do, Do...”

Hearing the dial tone, Samantha could not gather herself together for quite some time. 3

What was going on today?

First, her daughter turned weird and now Charles. Earlier, he promised her he would definitely get Lily to his side, but today he completely changed. 2

Unable to figure out anything, Samantha walked out of her room feeling depressed. 1

At that moment, there was a knock on the door. It was Lily's best friend, Jade, at the door. 1

Jade greeted Samantha who was walking out with a smile, "How do you do Madam?" 1

Samantha smiled, nodded and said, "Jade, you are here. Take a seat."

Samantha squeezed her brows and yelled, "Darryl, come down here now. Can't you hear we have a guest here? Shouldn't you come and greet the guest? Where are your manners? 2

Chapter 38

Hearing Samantha's screams from his room, Darryl walked out.

At that moment, Jade, who previously wore a smile, looked shocked. She whispered to Lily," Sister Lily, Darby... Darryl Darby is home?

Ever since she heard from Samson at the Moonlit River bar that Darryl was indeed the second son of the Darby family, she rarely visited the Lyndon family to meet Lily.

She dared not!

She came to catch up with Lily because she heard yesterday that Darryl has not been around for the past few days.

She never expected that she would bump into Darryl the day he returned.

Lily said calmly, "He just returned today."

Jade was just about to stay something, but she stopped immediately as she saw Darryl coming down from upstairs. She buried her head, and dared not look at himl.

Seeing Jade there, Darryl smiled cheekily.

Samantha stared at Darryl and instructed, "Why are you still standing there? Go and quickly serve some tea."

Darryl did not move, as if he heard nothing.

"No, it is not necessary. I am not thirsty... I am not thirsty. Brother-in-law, don't... don't be bothered ..."

After Samantha finished speaking, Jade stood up immediately and shook her arms.

While talking, Jade cautiously took note of Darryl's reaction.

What a joke. How can she let the second son of the Darby serve her tea unless she did not want to have a good life anymore?

Lily asked whilst squeezing her brow as she noticed Jade behaving abnormally today and said, "Jade, what is wrong with you today?"

Jade instantly nodded her head and said, "Nothing. Maybe it's because I didn't sleep well last night."

Samantha was a little shocked too.

What was happening? Why did it feel like everyone was so fearful of this useless man?

Thinking deeper, Samantha came to her senses

while looking at his impoverished look.

She realised that Jade embraced cleanliness, so she must have felt that the useless one was dirty, and hence refused to let him serve her tea.

Thinking of that, Samantha glared at Darryl.

Despite the fact that Darryl did not say a word, Jade still felt really uncomfortable.

After staying for a while, Jade finally could not take the pressure any longer, so she stood up and said, " Sister Lily, I just remembered that there is something I need to look into. I can't stay long to chat. I'm leaving."

"You're in such a hurry?" Lily stood up and asked, " I didn't see you driving here just now. How did you come here?"

Jade smiled and said, "My car was sent for service, so I called a cab. I will call a cab again to go back."

Samantha smiled, pointed to Darryl and said, "Why bother to call a cab? Just get him to send you home."

What? Jade started to shiver and quickly declined, " That is not necessary. I will just call a cab."

Samantha said, "Don't worry about it. Let him send you home, since he has nothing to do around the house as well. You don't have to feel shy when it

comes to this useless one."

Jade hesitated after hearing Samantha's words as she was surprised too.

Aunt Samantha still did not know who he was? She was still calling him the useless one?

Just at that juncture, Darryl stood up and said, "Let's go!"

Jade dared not reject once Darryl had spoken, so she just nodded.

Few minutes later, Darryl was driving Jade out of the community and into the main road. Jade was unsettled and she said carefully, "Brother Darryl, you can let me off here. I will call a cab to get home."

Darryl smiled looking at her and said, "What did you just call me? Did you forget what you agreed with me earlier?"

Jade shivered.

How could she forget what happened at the Moonlit River Bar?

She bit her lips and said softly, "Father." 1

Darryl smiled and nodded, "That is better. You don't have to be nervous. I will send you home since I am already out anyway."

Jade hurriedly replied, “Thank you, Darryl. Thank you, father.” She bit her lips so hard it almost bled.

Very soon, Darryl had driven into the city.

It was undeniable that the R8 model was really cool. Together with the gorgeous and sexy lady like Jade in the passenger seat, it was the epitome of beauty.

Many passersby turned to look at them in awe.

Darryl held onto the steering wheel, not showing any emotion. However, deep down in his heart, he was enjoying the glamour. 1

At that moment, a disharmonious voice was heard from the side, “Hey! Isn’t that the useless Darryl from our house?” 1

Darryl turned to where the voice was from and his face sunk. 2

Chapter 39

William Lyndon!

This fella must be out there shopping. He was dressed casually with his gorgeous looking female secretary following him from behind.

The secretary was holding a couple of shopping bags in her hands.

This guy was too much. Lily was working tirelessly, representing the Lyndon family to work with Platinum Corporation but he was out here spending the company's money, looking all chic with the secretary.

Darryl smiled coldly in his heart. He was too lazy to be bothered and decided to speed up and leave.

However, there were too many pedestrians in front. Hence, it was impossible to speed up.

Seeing that Darryl ignored him, William smiled coldly and teased, "Darryl, you're doing great now. Driving an Audi R8 I see."

He glared into the passenger's seat while he spoke, looking at Jade.

Attracted to Jade's beauty, William was shocked for

a little while, and smiled. "This lady here doesn't look familiar. What's your name?"

Although Jade was Lily's best friend, William had never seen her before. Hence, he did not know who she was.

As such, Jade did not know who William was either. Not knowing what was going on, she dared not speak. She just pretended she did not hear anything.

Darryl looked at William emotionlessly and said, " What does knowing her name have to do with you?"

William was upset and raised his voice. "Darryl, you' re just a live-in son-in-law. There is no need to pretend. Are you feeling proud because you are driving an R8? Is this even your car?"

William glared at Jade again while he spoke.

He was confident that the car belonged to Jade.

As for the relationship between Darryl and Jade, there was no need to think further. 1

Looking at Darryl while smiling coldly but remaining speechless, William continued teasing, " You have your way then, Darryl. You've stayed three years in our Lyndon family with no contribution, willingly became a toy boy, and now even hooked up with a rich lady? Hey, you really humiliate the Lyndon family..."

By now, the place was surrounded with people who were watching.

Listening to what William just said, everyone in the vicinity started to explode.

"Ha, ha. So, this guy is the live-in son-in-law of the Lyndon's family. I thought he was a second generation from a wealthy family."

"He really has thick skin. He is really superbly unique, being able to live like that."

"Interesting! A toy boy at home yet at the same time hooked up with a rich woman outside? What a way!"

"When this useless one married Goddess Lily, it was the joke of the entire Donghai City. Haha. Today, we finally meet the useless one."

The comments came one after another and Darryl started getting angry.

S*it, this William Lyndon. He had to humiliate Darryl each time they met. Otherwise, he would not be comfortable.

At that moment, Jade was really angry to the point that there were chills on the beautiful face of hers.

After being alive for so many years, that was the first time she was being accused in public.

Even if she needed a man, she did not need to chase after Darryl.

Just when William continued talking, Jade pushed open the car door and got down.

Instantly, everyone focussed their attention onto Jade.

Many of them were attracted to Jade's sexy figure. However, they were also puzzled by her actions.

What did she want to do?

In their hearts, many had the same thoughts.

In plain sight, Jade walked toward William in her stilettos. Looking at Jade who was in front of him, William smiled and said casually, "Pretty girl, you didn't know that this guy is a live-in son-in-law? No worries, you don't have to thank me."

Slap!

Just as he finished talking, Jade unexpectedly gave a big tight slap across William's face.

At the crystal-clear sound of the slap, almost half of the street went silent. Everyone around them were stunned.

"You... you cheap woman. How dare you hit me?" William was still in shock as he stared blankly at

Jade. He only came to his senses after a while, and started shouting.

His secretary by his side was shocked too. She quickly held on to William's arm and asked softly, " Brother William, are you alright?"

She then stared at Jade and said, "How could you hit him?"

Jade did not even look at the secretary but stared at William and said coldly, "I slapped you, so what? Don't humans like you with mouths full of dirty and humiliating words deserve to be slapped?"

At that juncture, Jade regained her previously aggressive self with little effort. She managed to take out William and his secretary. 1

Chapter 40

Everyone surrounding them was stunned.

"Hey, this beauty has a hot temper."

"Sizzling hot!"

Many of them started to talk about Jade. Silently of course, as they worried Jade might hear them, and they might annoy the fierce, beautiful lady.

However, the crowd did not notice that when Jade was scolding William harshly, her focus was actually on Darryl's reaction.

As she saw Darryl's mouth curve upward smiling in agreement of her actions, Jade felt more encouraged.

"You, the filthy one that looked down on people. You think that Brother Darby needs a rich woman? You must be blind!"

Brother Darby?

After listening to how Jade addressed Darryl, everyone was yet again stunned. William was shocked too.

After a few lines of scolding, Jade turned around

and went back into the car. Standing there politely, she smiled sweetly and said, "Brother Darby, I didn't do anything wrong just now right?"

Darryl replied casually, "You did great!"

Jade was so happy to get the recognition from Darryl. She added, "My car is in that workshop right in front of you for maintenance. Don't bother, Brother Darby, you don't have to send me any further."

Darryl nodded and said, "Fine, you may go."

Jade quickly replied to him and bid farewell to Darryl. Under the curious gaze of everyone present, she turned and walked toward the exit.

After Jade left, people that gathered around left as well, feeling that there would be nothing else interesting that would happen.

At that juncture, William regathered his thoughts as he felt the burning pain on his face. With flames in his eyes, he stared at Darryl and said, "Darryl, so now you're not with a rich woman but having an affair instead!"

"Confess now. What's with this car? Did Lily use her position at work and the company's money for it?"

Listening to William starting to speak nonsense again, Darryl felt ridiculous and calmly said, "You

don't need to know how I got my car. The car does not have a single thing to do with your family's company."

After saying that, looking at the traffic in front starting to ease, Darryl stepped on the accelerator and left.

As William watched Darryl leave coldly, his anger boiled and he cursed, "S*it! Darryl Darby, we'll see! I'm not done with you yet!" Then, he left the busy street with his secretary.

At Platinum Entertainment.

After leaving the busy streets, Darryl went back to his office, and sent a message to Lily that he would not be going home later that night as he was busy.

Lily did not question further and just replied with three words, "Fine, I know."

The incident with William earlier totally did not affect Darryl's mood.

Despite William's position in the Lyndon family, he was Granny Lyndon's favorite. In Darryl's eyes, he was only a clown, a retard.

After confirming with Pearl that there were no other tasks that the headquarters required him to look into, Darryl proceeded to take a nap in the resting lounge.

When he woke up later, he saw a wooden box behind the door, remembering the birthday present that Samson gave him the other day. Darryl reached out to the box and opened it.

A light scent emerged from the wooden box when it was opened. Darryl was stunned.

Inside the box was a round pill.

A kidney tonic pill? A performance enhancement pill? An energy pill? 1

For a moment, Darryl's mind was full of images of male health products as seen on the T.V.

He felt angry and funny at the same time.

What was Samson trying to do? Playing fool with him? He would not dare to do that.

Confused, Darryl gave Samson a call.

Samson politely answered the call once it connected, "Mr Darby, are there any instructions for me?"

Darryl took a deep breath and said, "What is the pill you gave me for?"

Hearing Darryl asking about the pill, Samson immediately explained in detail, "Haha, Mr. Darby, please do not be angry. I asked someone to get the

pill from a master for me. It was said that it would strengthen one's health. Do you know that the master is really famous? A normal person would never be able to get it. I had to..."

Darryl was confused listening to him and quickly said, "That's fine... that's fine. It's all good now. You can get back to work."

After hanging up the phone, Darryl was staring at the pill in doubt.

To take? Or not to take it?

Thinking that Samson would never harm him, Darryl swallowed the pill.

Right after he swallowed the pill, Darryl regretted. This was because he felt there was a heat wave growing in his stomach, then through his entire body. At the same time, an explainable pain attacked his nerves. 1

Darryl could not stand the feeling, rolling on the floor, and everything then went pitch black. He fainted. 1

Chapter 41

When he woke up again, Darryl realised he was lying on the floor in the office. He was sweating profusely and his clothes were drenched.

The burning and pain throughout his body had now disappeared.

S*it! Samson must have been cheated.

Two years have passed and whatever effects the pill had would have been gone by now.

How was he so silly and ate it? Luckily nothing bad happened. As he was feeling lucky, his cellphone rang.

Seeing an unknown number displayed, Darryl squeezed his brows and answered it.

"How are you? Is this Darryl?"

Once the call was connected, a gentle yet attractive voice came through the phone, sounding good and attractive.

This voice sounded rather familiar.

Darryl squeezed his brows further and asked, "You are?"

She introduced herself with a smile, "Oh, sorry, I forgot to introduce myself. I am Yvonne Young."

Yvonne?

Gulp!

Darryl swallowed his saliva. An extremely gentle and sexy figure appeared in his mind.

The next moment, Darryl smiled and asked, "What is the matter?"

Yvonne sounded awkward and said, "It's about the other day during Granny Samantha's birthday dinner at the Lyndon's family. I know you presented her a Boundless Universe Fan. I... I would like to take a few pictures, please?"

Darryl was a little shocked, and casually asked, "Oh, that. The Lyndon family thought it was a broken fan. Why is Ms. Young interested in it now?"

Yvonne answered without hesitation, "That is because they do not appreciate what it is. I know the history of the fan. It is a genuine item which was possessed by the Qianlong Emperor."

Darryl was moved and said, "Alright then, how do you wish to take pictures?"

"You agree? That's great!"

Yvonne was so happy. She thought that Darryl

would have rejected her request, as the fan was the one and only one. It was a priceless treasure indeed.

Excitedly, Yvonne smiled and answered, "If... if you are free, we can meet at my family's antique store later. There's a room designated for taking pictures of antique items."

She then gave Darryl the address of the store.

The antique store mentioned by Yvonne was named Pearl Pavilion. It was the largest antique shop in Donghai City. Darryl had always heard about it, but had never been there.

Half an hour later, Darryl arrived at Pearl Pavilion with his item.

Entering the main hall, he could see that Yvonne was already there waiting, in a dark colored long dress. It looked more mysterious than the one she wore to Granny Samantha's birthday dinner. 1

"Darryl, you are here!"

As Darryl walked-in, Yvonne walked forward with a smile. Looking at the box in Darryl's hand, her beautiful eyes shone with excitement and passion.

The person in charge of Pearl Pavilion, Peter William, looked curious.

Ms. Yvonne had always carried herself with perfect

rationale and poise. She would never crack a joke. Thus, why was she so happy today? Also, who is this cheap looking guy?

Noticing the Peter's curiosity, Yvonne made a brief introduction, "This is Darryl, Mr. Darby from the Lyndon family. We have some matters to discuss, so watch the store and call me if there is anything."

While speaking, she led Darryl into a private room.

Peter was completely stunned.

Darryl Darby from the Lyndon family? Was he not just a useless live-in son-in-law?

What did Ms. Yvonne have to discuss with such a person?

Although in doubt, William did not think further. He drew his attention back to the store. 1

After Darryl followed Yvonne into the private room, he took out the fan and displayed it on the table.

Yvonne who was holding the camera carefully took pictures while admiring the item.

On the other hand, Darryl's attention was all on Yvonne.

It had to be said. Yvonne was really attractive, beautiful and had perfect facial features. Her body was as sexy as one could be.

While he was deeply mesmerised by her, Yvonne finished the photoshoot. She smiled and thanked him, "Thank you, so much."

Darryl put the fan away and casually answered, "It's just a small matter. If Ms. Young would like to see it again, feel free to contact me anytime."

Hearing what Darryl had just said, Yvonne nodded happily and asked curiously, "How did you get the fan?"

Honestly, she wanted to ask the question during Granny Samantha's family birthday dinner, but he did not get the chance to do so. 1

A live-in son-in-law of the Lyndon family that was always being looked down on, sat at home for three years without a job, no income, but owned the Boundless Universe Fan. This...

Even a person with a clear logical mind like Yvonne could not refrain herself from being curious.

Darryl laughed and casually said, "It's a gift from a friend."

She understood that Darryl was only trying to brush it off, so Yvonne smiled and did not ask further.

At that juncture, Peter knocked on the door.

Yvonne briefly asked, "Yes, is there anything?"

Peter who was slightly ashamed said, “Miss, please come out. Someone would like to purchase some jades. I can’t decide...”

Yvonne was slightly disturbed. Peter was the most experienced antique appraiser. He had spent more than ten years with antiques. If there was something he could not decide, it would be something uncommon.

With that thought in mind, Yvonne rushed to open the door and went out.

Darryl kept the fan, and followed her from behind.

Once they reached the main hall, they saw a young lad with a little box on the counter in front of him.

Chapter 42

The young lad who came from Lin City was Leo White. Due to a family member suffering from cancer, he wished to sell off the family treasure for money.

A few other store owners nearby were also there after hearing about it.

After Peter explained the background story to Yvonne, he introduced her, "This is our lady boss, Ms. Yvonne."

Leo nodded honestly and said, "If you as the lady boss is unable to decide, I will have to go to another store."

After saying that, he opened the box.

In the box was a blood-colored jade pendant.

With an antique carving, the surface was round and moist. The most unique part was that there was some red tear-like pattern inside.

Yvonne could not stop talking after she set her eyes on it. "Blood tear jade?"

The few other antique store owners took deep breaths and were all in awe.

"Hey, it's really a blood tear jade."

"Look at the color, it's top quality."

The few antique store owners were chatting among each other, and were amazed. Leo felt proud and nodded with pride to Yvonne. Then, he said, "You' re really the lady boss. With just one look you can identify that it is a blood tear jade. Did you see the word carvings on the surface? It belongs to the Eastern Jin Dynasty."

The blood tear jade was a type of an ancient jade. The blood jade was formed by mixing the blood of ancestors. This particular kind of jade with a tear-like pattern inside, was known as the blood tear jade.

As such, it was extremely rare.

After hearing Leo's words, all the other antique store owners became emotional.

"It's really from the Eastern Jin Dynasty!"

"That's right, look at the carving on the surface. It is definitely from that era."

Yvonne asked Leo after admiring it for a moment, " How much money do you want for it?"

Although that was the first time Yvonne had seen a blood tear jade, she had seen plenty of materials

about the blood jade. The one Leo had was the same as what she knew. Hence, Yvonne was very certain it was a real blood tear jade.

Hearing the comments from the other few antique store owners, she was more confident with her judgement.

However, the moment Yvonne asked Leo about the price, Darryl silently shook his head.

Others might not know about the blood jade, but Darryl was an expert. Darryl's grandpa had one. He used to play with it when he was little. Hence, at first sight, he knew Leo's was a fake.

The young lad really had the guts to cheat the Young family.

Yvonne was still young and inexperienced. Thus, it was a given that she could not identify the scam. However, even the other few antique store owners joined in? It seems like they were only carried along in the conversation. It was humiliating indeed.

Thinking of that, Darryl had no intention of revealing the scam yet. He was just observing how things progressed.

At that moment, Leo waved his hands and said, "15 0 million bucks!"

Yvonne nodded and bit her lips.

Half a year ago, in an auction, a similar blood tear jade from the East Jin Dynasty was sold for the price of 150 million bucks. It seemed like Leo had done his research before coming to the store.

However, that was an auction, not a trade. They were not the same.

Yvonne smiled and spoke, looking at Leo, "Too expensive!"

Leo insisted, "This is the price. I will never sell it if not because I am desperate for money for my family 's medical treatment. This was passed down from my ancestors."

Hearing those words, Yvonne started to have doubts.

The other antique shop owners all felt a little complicated.

Yvonne was still too young.

A blood tear jade was something one could rarely get. It was definitely a gain if one could purchase it. The Young family would not be short of the 150 million bucks.

At that moment, if it was not because of their financial position, the other antique shop owners would have definitely fought to deal with Leo.

Right at that juncture, a middle-aged man, dressed in traditional Chinese costume, wearing a pair of golden framed glasses, walked into the store.

Peter quickly walked toward him and greeted, "Hi Mister, what can I do for you?"

The middle-aged man smiled and said, "I am Jack. I'm here in Donghai City on a business trip. My favorite hobby is collecting antique items. I heard about the famous Pearl Pavilion. Hence, I'm here to look around."

He also bragged, "I'm here to look for some good stuff. Price is not an issue as long as I like it."

As his eyes landed on Leo's blood tear jade, he was really excited and said, "Oh, isn't this the red blood jade that everyone was talking about?"

Leo replied, "Sure is!"

Seeing Jack could not resist and picked up the Jade, Leo quickly said, "Be careful! Do not break it!"

Jack laughed loudly, "Don't you worry, I will compensate you if I break it."

He then asked, "Little brother, does this jade belong to you? What's the price?"

Leo rolled his eyes, stretched out 2 fingers and said, "500 million bucks."

Before he could finish, Jack patted his thigh and said, "Great! I'll take it."

At that moment, Leo glared at Yvonne with pride, as if he was saying, "See? I was offering 150 million bucks and you hesitated. Do you regret it now since there was a wealthy man who doesn't care about the price tag?"

Yvonne felt nervous and said, "Mr. White, you have agreed to sell it to me just now. We have rules in the antique business. We are still in negotiation. You cannot just sell to someone else."

Yvonne was really nervous, the jade was worth 500 million bucks and Jack just wanted it without further thought.

Yvonne hurriedly said, "150 million bucks, I'll take it. Mr. White, didn't you just say you were selling it to me for 150 million bucks? I'll take it."

Looking at this, Darryl could not but laugh in his heart.

Haha. Leo and Jack were obviously partners and they were just acting.

He did not expect Yvonne to have believed it for real. Was it really true that a beautiful and sexy woman was of low intellect?

Chapter 43

Jack was annoyed and said, "Ms. Young, I already accepted the purchase of the blood tear jade for 500 million bucks. You can keep the 150 million bucks for yourself."

Yvonne appeared as if she did not hear a word and looked sharply at Leo. "Mr. White, I will take the jade. Although my price is lower, you will still need to sell it to me. You do need to stick to your words, right?"

The other antique store owners nodded in agreement.

"Yes, first come, first served."

"Little brother, we must stick to the principle,"

"You are still negotiating with Ms. Young. It is not right to sell to others."

The antique store owners were unanimously on Yvonne's side. Needless to say, the Young family was really famous in the antique industry. Therefore, whoever was in that industry would like to build a relationship with them.

"Never mind!"

Leo seemed pressured and sighed. He apologized to Jack," Sorry sir. Although you offered 500 million bucks, I cannot sell it. I have to sell it to Ms. Young."

He then turned to Yvonne and nodded. "I'm not a greedy person. Since you are willing to take it at 150 million, I will sell it to you. A man has to keep his words."

"Sigh, never knew you are a man with integrity, I'm offering 500 million bucks but you refused to sell to me." Jack pressed his lips, looking sad and said, " This stone is worth at least a billion! Ms. Young, you are making a huge profit!"

As he spoke, he shook his head miserably.

At that moment, Yvonne was beyond excited. She quickly instructed Peter who was beside her, " Hurry up and arrange the payment to Mr. White."

Peter nodded and was about to ask for the bank details from Leo to prepare the payment.

"Hahahaha, this is so funny."

At that juncture, Darryl, who had been watching them all along, broke into laughter.

Haha, Jake and Leo's acting was really hilarious.

Sensing humiliation in Darryl's laughter, Leo squeezed his brows and said, "What are you

laughing about?"

At the same time, Yvonne also raised her brows with eyes full of questions.

Darryl glared at the jade pendant in the box and smiled. "Isn't it ridiculous to watch people fight over a fake product?"

As he spoke, Darryl sent the message he had drafted earlier.

The message was sent to the Criminal Investigation Team leader, Megan Castello.

Previously, when Ashton was arrested for holding people hostage, Megan had instructed Darryl to follow them to record his statement. However as Darryl could not make it, they left their contact details with each other.

Leo and Jack were trying to cheat Yvonne in front of him, so of course Darryl would not let it happen.

It had to be mentioned that their acting skills were really good. Not only had they managed to deceive the other antique store owners, but even Yvonne had fallen for the trap.

However, at that moment, everyone in the antique store was stunned. That man claimed that the blood tear jade was a fake?

Was something wrong with that man? There were

so many antique store owners who all knew that the jade was genuine, but that man claimed it was fake!

Leo was the first to react and replied coldly, " Interesting. However, this is our family's treasure. It has been passed down from generations to generations. How dare you say that it is a fake? Who are you?"

At that moment, everyone started to come to their senses. One of the antique store owners took a look at Darryl and said, "Hey, isn't this the live-in son-in-law of the Lyndon family?"

Hahaha!

The words stirred up their thoughts.

Soon, all the other antique store owners started to realize that it was Darryl.

"Oh, it is true."

"It was rumored that this fella just sits at home every day, usurping his wife's wealth."

All of them started to gossip about Darryl. The store owner next door, Mr. Larly, laughed at Darryl, " Hey, son-in-law of the Lyndon family, how dare you claim that the blood tear jade is a fake? You wouldn't know about antique appraisal now would you?"

Hearing that, the rest broke into laughter.

Hahaha, he was the notorious useless guy in Donghai City and he knew about antique appraisal?

"I guess he was only after some attention."

"Guess no more. It must have been he was not appreciated by the Lyndon family, so he is here looking for dignity. However young fella, you are at the wrong place. This is Pearl Pavilion. Don't make a fool of yourself."

Chapter 44

The few antique store owners broke into laughter, as Yvonne bit her lips tightly. She looked at Darryl silently, feeling troubled.

The blood tear jade in front of her, no matter the material, color, or craftsmanship, matched the information she researched before this. Why would he claim that it was a fake?

Yvonne thought that Darryl was not the same as what people used to describe him as. It was unexpectable that after meeting him, he was indeed a useless person. No wonder everyone despised him. He did not have any knowledge on antiques at all and was just pretending.

At that moment, Leo and Jack looked at each other and smiled.

They were wondering about Darryl's background, and now they knew that he was just a live-in son-in-law that everyone looked down on.

S*it! That scared the both of them.

The next moment, Leo, as if he was defamed, rebutted while looking at Darryl, "The lady boss of Pearl Pavilion and the other store owners here all

identified that this is a genuine item. All of them are famous antique merchants! You are the only one claiming it is a fake. If you can't give a reasonable explanation, I will report you to the police, suing you for obstructing our normal trade."

Oh?

The thief was claiming to be another thief, and their acting was getting better.

Looking at Leo's serious face, Darryl laughed again. He picked up the blood tear jade from the box, gave it a squeeze in his hands and said slowly, "A blood tear jade was formed because of human blood that flowed into the jade, forming the tear markings. That was how it got its name."

"Among this, depending on the jade's material, as well as environmental factors and consequences of other factors, the formation of a blood tear jade was extremely difficult, and hence extremely rare. However, the one that you have here, even though there are some tear marks in it, they were not formed naturally. It should only be intentionally human made."

"Aside from the tear marks, the material of your jade here, even though they are of good quality and the carvings on the surface is unique, it is not from the Eastern Jin Dynasty. Thus, it looks like it was

produced recently."

As he spoke, Darryl lifted the jade, looked at it in detail and nodded, "Yes, there is still a sense of moistness. If I guessed correctly, in order to make it look seasoned, you have intentionally buried it in the ground for a year or more."

After speaking, Darryl threw the jade pendant back into the box and smiled, "As such, it is just a rather new imitation. As to say that it was from the Eastern Jin Dynasty would be rubbish."

Bang!

Darryl's voice was not loud, but at that moment, everyone heard it loud and clear!

Suddenly, the few antique store owners were all stunned.

This young fella's words made perfect sense.

Does that mean the piece of blood tear jade was really a fake?

Was if they were wrong? 2

The truth was, the few antique store owners had only heard about the rare blood tear jade. None of them had seen a real one before, hence they were all in doubt and did not make a sound.

Yvonne's eyes were shining as they looked closely

at Darryl. Her heart felt all emotional.

What Darryl had said, she knew them as well, but... but he presented the facts to them so clearly.

Where did he learn all that?

At that moment, Leo could not hold himself back as his face turned red, and he gave a cold grin, "It was spoken as if it was real, but let me ask you, since you have made so many remarks, do you have any proof?"

Exactly.

After all the talking, it was time to show some solid proof.

At that moment, the few antique store owners, together with Yvonne, were looking at Darryl.

Yvonne was rather emotional, and nervous.

She was emotional because if Darryl was able to produce evidence, she would have gained more experience.

She was nervous due to the fact that if it was ascertained that the blood jade was a fake, it would confirm the fact that she had been cheated, and would have brought shame to the family. One needed to know that the Young family had been in the antique business for generations! Although she

was young, no one would be more knowledgeable than her in the entire Donghai City in terms of antiques.

"So, you want proof?"

Darryl looked at Leo, smiled and said, "It's simple. In a naturally formed blood tear jade, over a long period of time, the blood in the jade will take the form of a mist. In contrast, one that was man-made, due its short formation time, even though it formed a tear shape, if we use a special magnifier, we will be able to see that there are some tiny droplets inside. This is because the fresh blood has not dissolved completely.

While Darryl was speaking, the store manager Peter, already brought out a special magnifier that was designed specifically for antique appraisal purposes.

Peter took a look and said in a surprised tone, " There are really tiny droplets in it."

Immediately, the other antique store owners surrounded him. Even Yvonne could not help herself but walked over in her stilettos.

"You..."

With the proof being presented, Leo's face turned red as he stared angrily at Darryl, pointed at him

but was not able to speak a single word.

Chapter 45

It was at that moment the sound of police sirens could be heard.

Someone called the police? Leo started to break out into cold sweat, and ran.

"Trying to escape?"

"Stop him!"

A few antique store owners reacted and yelled at him.

The other workers near them, heard the yelling, and immediately stopped Leo and held him down on the floor.

Jack, pretending he was also a victim of the fraud quickly said, "S*it it is really a fake. This b*stard almost cost me 500 million bucks." He ran forward and spat on Leo, started scolding and was preparing to leave.

However, when he turned and was about to leave Pearl Pavilion, a body dashed in front of him, and blocked him.

It was Darryl.

"S&it, what's wrong with you? Why are you

blocking me?" Jack looked upset.

Everyone came over and watched them.

Darryl said with a smile while looking at Jack, "You can't just leave your partner behind to get arrested can you?"

Jack's face turned green and said, "What do you mean?"

"Enough. You don't have to pretend anymore. With your acting skills, you will be better off being an actor. Who wants to be a fraud?" Looking at Jack who still refused to admit his fraud, Darryl sighed and shook his head.

Jack wasted no time. He was about to walk past Darryl to make a run for it only to realize that his shoulders were locked in by Darryl.

At that moment, Jack felt that Darryl's hands were like vices. He could not release himself no matter how hard he tried.

Jack's eyes were rolling around in panic as he was nervous and scolded him, "Idiot, are you sick? He was trying to cheat me, so what does it have to do with me? I almost fell for the trap as well."

All these were happening too fast for Yvonne to react as she just stood frozen in her spot.

It was then that Megan walked in with a few police

officers.

Megan was not in her uniform that day, but she still looked dignified. Her pair of tight jeans made her body look hot and sexy.

She walked to Darryl and asked, "Is he a fraud too?"

Not waiting for Darryl to reply, Jack pleaded, " Pretty officer, please give me some justice. I am here to buy antique items and I was also a victim. This young fella refused to let me go with no reasons, so please help me."

A few of the antique store owners came forward to testify.

"Yes, Mr. Trevor is here to buy antiques."

"We are the witnesses."

"Hey, son-in-law of the Lyndon family, what are you doing? Even though you recognized the jade is fake by pure luck, you cannot accuse others."

Darryl just laughed. What a bunch of silly men.

It was obvious that Leo and Jack were acting together. Now that Leo was caught, they still could not see that Jack was a problem too.

However, Darryl became speechless because even Megan believed Jack and the words of the other antique store owners.

At that moment, Megan squeezed her brows and said to Darryl, "Darryl, you can't accuse him. Just let him go."

Jack felt relieved, threw a cold grin at Darryl and said, "Did you hear that? I still have business meetings tomorrow. Will you be responsible if I can' t attend them?"

Sigh!

Hearing the words from Megan, Darryl sighed.

If he were to let Jack leave, he would surely find a way to get Leo out as well. They will then commit fraud elsewhere.

Enough, he should mind his own business instead. Darryl was upset, but was about to release his grip. Suddenly, at that moment, he locked his brows!

What was on Jack's face did not look right...

Rip!

The next second, Darryl acted at high speed, tearing off something from Jack's face.

It was a mask!

Argh!

Looking at Jack's real face, everyone sighed.

It was not about how scary Jack looked, but it was

his despicable face that was a huge contrast to the honest look he had before.

“It’s you?” Megan caught on to Jack instantly.

She recognized that man! To be more accurate, everyone in the police station knew Jack! He was the suspect of an antique fraud case a year ago!

“Hurry up, and quickly take a look at Leo's face. See if there is a mask too!” Megan was beyond excited.

Chapter 46

A few police officers quickly ran over to check, and without a surprise, they ripped a mask off Leo's face as well.

A year ago, a wealthy merchant who came to Donghai City for investment was cheated off an antique painting valued at 1 billion bucks by two partners. The head office of the police department put a lot of focus on this case and instructed Megan to solve the case as soon as possible.

Due to the duo being smart, despite Megan following the case for a year, she failed to locate their trails.

She did not expect that she would be able to catch them today.

Megan was shivering as she had just made a great achievement!

The other antique store owners who initially wanted to testify for Jack, were all standing there speechless.

They knew too well about the fraud case that happened a year ago. They never thought that the two of them were the masterminds, and had the

guts to cheat the Young family.

At the same time, they also curiously looked at Darryl.

Their masks were so real that none of them saw through it. How did he manage to see it?

They did not question further due to Megan's presence.

At that moment, Megan instructed her officers to bring the two into the car, and then walked up to Darryl.

Megan bit her lips and awkwardly said, "Darryl, I am sorry. I was too impulsive just now. I almost missed the chance to break the case. Thank you very much for your help."

Darryl smiled and waved his hands. "It was nothing, I just didn't want to let the bad guys escape."

Megan nodded and asked curiously, "How did you know that Jack was wearing a mask?"

Darryl thought for a moment and casually replied, " It was nothing extraordinary. When he was struggling just now, a tiny piece of the mask rolled up and I caught sight of it."

To be honest, Darryl himself was rather puzzled

about her question too.

Jack's disguise was perfect. The only flaw was the joint between the mask and his neck. This flaw was unnoticeable by normal humans, but he was unsure why he noticed it.

Since when did his vision get so much better?

Darryl was mumbling in his heart.

Megan did not doubt him, smiled and said, "No matter what, I really thank you for your help. I shall buy you dinner when there is a chance in the future."

After saying that, Megan left.

During the journey back to the police station, Leo and Jack who were in the backseat were furious and dissatisfied.

The both of them had planned the fraud trap for a while now. They thought that it was a perfect plan. However, they did not expect Darryl to bust their plan at the most critical moment.

Jack asked Leo in anger, "That fella is Darryl Darby, right?"

Leo nodded, "That was what the other antique store owners said. He is apparently the live-in son-in-law of the Lyndon family."

Jack bit his lips and clenched his fists. "S*it, when we get out of here one day, we shall kill him!"

Back at the Pearl Pavilion, watching everyone leave, Yvonne walked over in her stilettos. She asked, " Darryl, how did you know that the two of them were a fraud?"

Darryl grinned and casually explained, "It was nothing. It's just that I read a lot of detective works. Besides, their acting was really bad to be honest."

Seeing how easy it sounded from him, Yvonne laughed and asked further, "The knowledge of the blood tear jade that you shared just now, where did you learn it from?"

Oh no, this was a hard question.

Darryl gave it a thought and said, "About that, I learnt about antiques from an old master, so..."

Darryl shrugged.

It was obvious.

Appraising the authenticity of a blood tear jade was just a simple task.

Yvonne was suddenly emotional suddenly and sounded nervous, "What is the name of the old master? Where does he live?"

She was unable to identify the authenticity of the

blood tear jade, but Darryl could easily identify it, and shared so much knowledge she never knew.

The old master that taught him must have been even more knowledgeable.

She had to meet this master no matter what.

However, the reply from Darryl next made Yvonne very disappointed.

Darryl replied in an apologetic manner, "I have not seen him for many years now. I'm not sure where he lives."

Hearing that, Yvonne sighed. She did not want to continue on that topic. She looked at Darryl with a complicated heart and asked gently, "Darryl, can you promise me something?"

"What is that?"

Yvonne gently asked, "I hope to invite you to be our Pearl Pavilion's antique appraiser. You don't need to be at the store every day. You just need to be present when we need your help. The monthly salary will be 50 thousand bucks. Is that fine?"

Chapter 47

To be honest, Yvonne was worried that 50 thousand bucks was a little low. However, that was the limit of her authority.

Peter, the staff in charge sighed deeply at that moment!

What?

An honorable antique appraiser, deserved a monthly salary of 50 thousand bucks? His salary was only slightly over 10 thousand bucks a month!

After considering Darryl's explanation when he appraised the blood tear jade, Peter had to admit that he was not as good, hence he stopped himself from feeling dissatisfied but remained envious of Darryl.

After a small thought, Darryl agreed and said, "Oh... since I don't have to be here every day, it should be fine."

It was such a great offer and yet he was showing a difficult expression.

Had he turned crazy after being the live-in son-in-law?

Looking at Darryl's reaction, Peter became speechless.

Yvonne was delighted as she said, "That's great. It's finalized then."

Darryl smiled and bid farewell to Yvonne as the day was getting late. 1

The next afternoon, when Darryl reached his office, Pearl quickly went forward to give him an update.

Pearl respectfully asked, "President, today is the airing of the latest episode of the Superstar program. It is also Giselle's debut in the show. Will you want to be there to show support?"

Darryl shook his head, "I'll miss it! Please set up a re-broadcast at my office later. I will just watch it from here."

Giselle's makeover was done by the Lyndon family. His wife, Lily, was the person in charge.

As such, Lily would definitely be there at the show. If he was to attend, his identity would be revealed.

"Yes, President." Pearl nodded and went ahead with the set-up.

An hour later, the screen in the office was broadcasting the live show.

Undeniably, Giselle really had the potential to be a

star. Together with the makeover by Lily, she looked lively and stunning. All the audience roared when she appeared.

However, halfway through the recording, some matters arose.

At the request of her fans, Giselle sang a song. Suddenly, the earpiece she was wearing became faulty. Initially, she was singing really well, but due to the malfunction, she fell behind the beat.

At the end, after some commotion onstage, Giselle stomped off and went backstage.

Soon, the matter was widely publicised by the media. There were various comments, some said that Giselle lip-synced, some of them said she did it intentionally with the objective to increase the popularity of the news.

In summary, the media had doubts of Giselle's singing ability.

Watching the news, Darryl slammed the door and called for Pearl.

Darryl said coldly, "Investigate this thoroughly. I want to know what is going on."

Pearl nodded and made a few calls. She soon found out what happened.

Pearl carefully reported, "President Darby, there

were three staff in charge of Giselle's earpiece backstage, but all of them denied that they were responsible for the malfunction."

Darryl smiled lightly.

It had to be something to do with the three of them.

"Fine, bring all three of them here."

"Yes, President!" Looking at the confident look on Darryl's face, Pearl was curious, but dared not question further.

Watching Pearl exiting his office, Darryl made a call.

"Felix, come over to Platinum Corporation. Yes, now."

After ten minutes, the three staff members were brought into the office but all of them looked calm.

Sitting on the chair behind the desk, was Felix Blakely in a suit.

Honestly Darryl had many ways to make the three of them tell the truth, but he did not want to take the trouble to do so.

Besides, Darryl did not want more people knowing about his identity.

Hence, he asked for Felix to come over.

Staring at the three of them, Felix asked coldly, "

During the program, Giselle's earpiece malfunctioned. What really happened?"

Darryl, who was sitting at the side, did not react. He was just casually smoking his cigarette.

The three of them agreed with each other not to say a single word. Thus, they shook their heads in unison, indicating that they did not know. They did not pay attention to Darryl, thinking that he was Felix's bodyguard.

Felix laughed and said, "Do you know who I am? I am Felix Blakely."

What?

Chapter 48

Felix Blakely?

Upon hearing this name, the three staff members shivered. One of them was even trembling.

The entire Donghai City knows Felix. He had connections with both the good and the dark side!

Why was he there? What relationship did he have with Platinum Corporation?

"It's fine if the three of you refuse to talk. Let me be frank from the start. If my investigation showed that it had something to do with you, you can imagine what the consequences are."

Right at the moment Felix finished his words, the guy standing at furthest left could not stand it anymore, and said, "I'll tell... I'll tell..."

The other two exchanged looks, and nodded nervously too.

Darryl, who was sitting on the couch at that moment, smiled.

After a few minutes, Felix dismissed the three of them. He stood and said to Darryl, "Mr. Darby, it's all clear now.

Darryl laughed. He stood up and patted Felix's shoulder. "You're doing great, Felix. Your business is doing so well that in the past two years, you are getting even more famous now."

"Mr. Darby, don't mention it. I would not have been who I am today if it wasn't for you, Mr. Darby."

After a brief chat with Felix, Darryl bid farewell to him.

As soon as Felix stepped out of the office, Samantha called Darryl.

"Where have you, the useless one, been for the past two days? Something happened at home, and you are still loitering outside? Get back here now!"

Hearing Samantha's scolding, Darryl did not speak a word. He knew that it must be about the Giselle incident, and Lily was in trouble. No matter what, Giselle's makeover was Lily's responsibility.

However, despite the fact that Lily was in trouble, Samantha would not have called Darryl. This was because she would have felt that even if Darryl was there, the useless person would not have been good for anything. The reason she called was that the old grandma was angry, and wanted the entire Lyndon family to be present.

That incident must be really serious!

Hanging up the call, Darryl rushed back to the Lyndon residence.

...

On the way, Darryl called Giselle.

Giselle was at her apartment, feeling really upset.

Giselle answered the call politely, "Brother Darryl, I am sorry. I didn't know things would turn out this way."

Her own image would be affected if she made mistakes in the show. All her previous efforts would have gone to waste and the company would have made a big loss too. Giselle thought the reason Darryl called was to reprimand her.

Darryl sighed deeply and said, "It wasn't your fault. I investigated the incident. It turns out that there was an internal problem in the Lyndon family."

Giselle gasped and said, "What happened?"

Darryl smiled and said, "Act according to what I am about to tell you."

After listening to Darryl's instruction, Giselle nodded, "I understand, brother Darryl."

Darryl nodded and hung up the call.

When Darryl arrived at the Lyndon residence, the

old grandma had already called for an emergency meeting.

Everyone's face was full of anger and dissatisfaction! The Platinum Corporation would definitely blame the Lyndon family with the mistake Giselle made.

Lily was wearing a knee-length dress with stilettos and her beauty was beyond description. At that moment, her expression did not look good. Everyone was staring at her. No matter what, she was the person in charge of Giselle's makeover.

Seeing Darryl arrive, no one from the Lyndon family reacted.

This useless one came here just to watch the drama unfold?

At that moment, William stood up and pointed at Lily. "Lily, it is not easy for us, Lyndon family, to be able to work together with Platinum Corporation. There were mistakes on your part. What do you have to say?"

Lily bit her lips tightly, and looked at grandma. " Grandma, you can decide what to do."

Before the old grandma opened her mouth, William laughed, "Lily? Are you trying to seek pity from grandma? Things will still not be fine even if you

are punished."

He then looked at old grandma and said, "Grandma, I suggest we remove Lily's position in the company. Do not let her take part in anything else in the company anymore. We can't afford to upset the Platinum Corporation just because of her!"

Everyone nodded hearing his words.

Grandma looked at Lily deeply and said, "Fine then, Lilybud. You do not need to go to the office anymore from tomorrow."

Lily was really upset. She wished to defend herself, but did not know what to say.

Suddenly, Darryl, who had been sitting beside Lily, raised his voice slowly and said with a smile, "I object."

What?

Hahaha!

The deadly silent conference room was now filled with laughter from a few girls who just could not hold themselves back.

What thick skin he had. Did he have the right to speak on such an occasion? Was he crazy?

Chapter 49

He objected? Haha! Every member of the Lyndon family looked at Darryl, feeling that he was shameless.

Old grandma's face turned dark and unhappy as she asked, "What did you say?"

Darryl laughed coldly and clearly said, "You faulted my wife regarding the incident on Giselle's show before investigating it thoroughly. You dismissed her position without understanding what had happened. Isn't that too reckless?"

Old grandma's expression worsened, looking sharply at Darryl. "You mean I wrongly accused Lilybud?"

Darryl was about to speak with confidence.

However, at that moment, William could not hold back as he slammed the table, shouting while pointing at Darryl, "Who do you think you are? We are in a Lyndon family meeting. Since when can you speak freely here? What makes you think you are qualified to challenge grandma's decision?"

Darryl glared at him coldly. "I'm only asking for grandma to make a thorough investigation before

making a conclusion. What are you fussing about?"

"S*it!"

William blew his top, and was about to break into a fight. Thinking of what happened during grandma's birthday dinner recently, he was tortured before he could raise his fist, so he stopped, but looked angrily at Darryl.

Darryl looked around, turned to William and said, " Giselle had a problem with her earpiece during the show. I believed she was being set up and I believe the person behind that knows it himself."

His words were really obvious.

However, no one believed it.

William was furious. "Why are you looking at me when you speak? Explain yourself, and do not simply accuse."

Darryl raised his voice and said, "I did not say it was you, so why are you so emotional?"

At that moment, grandma could not hold it anymore and she scolded, "Darryl, if you speak nonsense again, you need to get out of here." She did not even look at Darryl when she spoke.

Regarding Giselle's incident, the old grandma would rather believe it to be Lily's fault than it was

William who was behind it.

Previously during her birthday dinner, grandma had stated clearly that if Lily were to choose to admit Darryl as her husband, she should not address her as grandma anymore.

Grandma was extremely unhappy seeing Darryl appearing at the meeting, but she did not speak up earlier, thinking of her own grand status. She did not expect the useless one to accuse her favorite grandson in front of everyone.

Seeing that grandma was furious with Darryl, everyone felt happy in their heart.

Wentworth, who had been sitting quietly on the side, squeezed his brow and said, "Darryl, sit down! Stop fooling around!"

Lily was nervous too and said, "Please stop talking nonsense."

Samantha did not speak, but her face was filled with disgust.

This useless one really was nothing good and he would only make things worse.

Darryl was calm despite everyone staring at him.

Grandma spoke deeply, "Fine then, that's it. Lily will never interfere with matters in the company

anymore. You are all dismissed."

As everyone was just about to leave, a sexy voice could be heard coming from the door of the meeting room, "Hold on!"

At that moment, a beautiful figure walked in.

It was none other than Giselle.

Dressed in a simple body-hugging top with a short black skirt Giselle looked even sexier and attractive.

Everyone went silent, seeing Giselle's appearance. They were all in shock, but they would have guessed why she was there.

She was definitely there to look for someone to blame.

At the same time, the eyes of the men in the room all lit up.

No wonder she was the ambassador for the Platinum Corporation. Giselle really looked perfect. She had a super sexy body figure which was flawless.

Grandma was surprised and greeted her politely, " Miss Lindt, please take a seat!"

Giselle who was an artist under the Platinum Corporation had a very bright future in showbiz. Thus, the grandma of the Lyndon family dared not treat her with disrespect.

Seeing Giselle's arrival, Lily felt troubled. She wanted to apologize, as she could not deny her responsibility for what had happened to Giselle during the show, but she just could not open her mouth to say it.

Giselle did not take a seat, but walked right in front of old grandma.

Darryl was sitting there and wondered how she dared to take a seat.

Grandma quickly said, "Miss Lindt, are you here because of the show? I am really sorry. We, the Lyndon family, will definitely bear the responsibility. Please be assured that I will investigate the matter thoroughly," She then pointed at Lily and continued, "Besides, I have relieved Lily from her duties. I can guarantee that there will not be a similar incident again."

Hearing that, poor Lily standing on the side, had a shiver.

She really had no hope anymore.

Giselle looked calm as she said, "I have already investigated it."

After a short pause, Giselle smiled at Lily and said, " Ms. Lyndon, don't be nervous. You are not responsible for what has happened."

What?

Lily was not responsible?

Chapter 50

Is it real that it was someone else's fault?

Everyone was stunned.

Grandma was shocked and asked, "What happened Miss Lindt?"

Giselle did not answer. She only smiled lightly, turned and looked at William.

When Giselle mentioned that she was going to investigate, William was still thinking he would be lucky.

After Giselle turned and looked at him, he knew that he was in trouble.

Giselle then spoke toward the door, "Get in here the three of you!"

Immediately, the three backstage staff members of the show walked in with their heads down.

Once he saw the three people, William's head went spinning. He was stunned, but still pretended to be calm.

Giselle said to the three of them, "Tell the truth!"

As instructed by Giselle, one of them looked up and

looked around the room. His gaze stopped when he saw William. "It's him. This Mr. William Lyndon instructed us to do so."

Another one of them added, swallowing a big gulp of saliva, "Yes, he gave the three of us a sum of money and asked us to cause a malfunction on Ms. Lindt's earpiece. There will be more reward once the job is completed!"

The third person did not speak, but kept nodding his head, and staring at William.

What?

It was William?

Hearing the words of the three staff members, everyone was in shock. William's face looked confused too.

William's face turned red and he cursed, "What the s *it!" Seeing Giselle's face, he swallowed his words.

William had always been rude. However, he tried to hold back as Giselle was there. She was representing the Platinum Corporation.

"You three bastards, don't simply accuse me. Do you know who I am? Have you thought about the consequences?" Trying to hold himself from cursing again, William stared at them fiercely.

The evil look on William's face was rather

frightening.

At that moment, the grandma of the Lyndon family walked over and said, "This is serious. The three of you better think carefully. Was it really him that gave you the instruction to do so?"

Although Giselle was the one who pointed it out, Grandma still refused to believe that William would have done such a job.

Looking at William's evil face, as well as the pressure coming from the old Grandma of the Lyndon family, the three backstage staff looked at each other, worried.

By telling the truth, they would have pissed off William.

However, it would not be worse than pissing off Felix Blakely! Who would dare to piss Felix off?

"I have proof!"

One of them opened their mouth, and the other two took out their cell phones simultaneously.

"I have the money transfer record from Mr. Lyndon to me in my cell phone."

"Me too. I have not spent a single cent of it!"

Wow!

With evidence right in front of everyone, it had to

be believable. Suddenly, the room broke into chaos.

Old Grandma's face turned green. She was furious and her body was shivering. She pointed at William and said, "William, you... you... why did you do that?"

William's mouth was wide open, but could not speak a word.

At that moment, William lost all his fierce evil expression, and looked like a deflated balloon, sitting paralyzed on the floor.

Lily, who had been feeling troubled all along, finally sighed with relief.

"Ms. Lindt, this is the result of my terrible teaching. Regarding this matter, what do you think..." Old Grandma was furious that she almost fainted as she looked regretfully at Giselle.

Even at that moment, the old Grandma was still trying to plead for William.

Although William made a huge mistake, he was still her favorite.

Giselle was calm, but she had no room for mercy. " The incident now is clear. No matter what, this matter was caused by your Lyndon family. You have the rights to decide, but do not make me feel disappointed."

Old Grandma nodded her head in shame.

She turned and stared angrily at William. "You really let me down, I always looked up to you. From this moment, you are not to interfere with any matters of the company. You are grounded for the next half a year. Stay put at home."

William cried as he begged, "Grandma... don't... I am wrong."

Grandma ignored him, and smiled at Giselle. "Miss Lindt, are you satisfied with this outcome?"

Giselle did not speak, but looked toward Darryl.

Chapter 51

When she saw Darryl nodded, Giselle turned to Granny Lyndon and said softly, "Well, that will be it. "

The old lady felt relieved after Giselle consented to her request.

Things would be easy as long as Giselle agreed to let the matter slip.

However, the very next moment, Giselle said, "But I have one condition!"

"What's the condition, Miss Lindt?" The old lady responded quickly.

Giselle walked toward Lily and stood beside her. Then, she looked around the room and said, "From today onward, Lily will be in charge of my public image and other related matters. I trust her. No one else from the Lyndon family is to interfere with her work. Do I make myself clear?"

'What?!'

Everyone was dumbfounded to hear that.

Giselle had given Lily her full authority, and no one else could do anything about it, not even Granny

Lyndon.

"Sure, Miss Lindt. We will give our full support." Even though Granny Lyndon was not satisfied, she had no choice but to endure the bitterness in her heart and nodded with a smile.

After the old lady gave her promise, the Lyndon family's younger generation could not hide their envy when they looked at Lily.

Despite the temporary decline of Giselle's public image, Platinum Corporation had worked hard to stage for her comeback. She had the

endorsement of a rising star, so Lily would definitely make it big.

William Lyndon was so regretful about everything that had happened!

There was a small crack of a smile at the corners of Giselle's lips when she turned to leave.

Giselle had a perfect figure. The men ogled at her as she walked away. Suddenly, she stopped by Darryl's side.

"Brother Darryl, I shall take my leave if there is nothing else you needed," Giselle respectfully said as she bowed to Darryl.

'What?!'

'Brother Darryl?!'

'Did Giselle just call that trash, Brother Darryl?'

Everyone was dumbfounded; their mouths were opened wide!

Even the old lady had almost fallen off her chair!

Daryl decided to ignore the surprised looks from the Lyndon family as he nodded at Giselle. "Yes, go ahead."

Giselle obeyed Darryl and strode away on her high heels as if she had received an imperial decree. 1

After Giselle left, Darryl stood up, stretched his arms, and said slowly, "How ridiculous it was that we needed an outsider's help to get the truth for something that had happened within the family."

His tone was unabashedly sarcastic.

The old lady's face changed; she was embarrassed. Everyone else was also speechless, and they wore an indecipherable expression on their faces.

Eventually, Darryl also walked out of the meeting room.

As soon as he was outside, Lily's soft voice echoed from behind him. "Hang on, Darryl."

Darryl stopped and turned around to look at her

with a smile. "What's up, Honey?"

Lily bit her lip shyly when she heard Darryl addressed her so affectionately. If it were in the past, she would be angry to hear that. However, at that instance, she merely asked him, "Did you know about the truth before you came here? And... what's your relationship with Giselle?"

'Hmm...'

Lily's tone sounded a bit strange, especially in the last sentence. Darryl chuckled and teased her. "Are you jealous?"

Lily's face turned red almost immediately.

'Yeah, what's wrong with me? Why do I care about his relationship with Giselle so much?'

"Giselle and I are classmates. I only learned about what had happened after I called her," Darryl explained with a smile after he noticed that Lily was shy about it.

Lily finally knew what had happened, but she was still doubtful about one thing. "Well, if she is your classmate, why is she so polite to you?"

"Err..."

Darryl struggled to explain it. Coincidently, his phone rang, which was a nice save for him.

"Oh, the boss must have found out that I sneaked out. I can't talk any longer; I have to get back to work."

Darryl hurriedly waved goodbye to Lily and then strode outside.

He took out his phone, and the caller ID showed Yvonne Young.

"Darryl, do you have time? I need your help with something." Yvonne spoke quickly as soon as Darryl picked up her call; she sounded anxious.

"Sure, I'll come right away."

Darryl nodded; from her tone of voice, he knew that it must have been something urgent. He was keen to help even though he was not sure what had happened. He had quite a good impression of Yvonne. 1

Chapter 52

Darryl headed to Pearl Pavilion after he got off the phone.

As soon as he got out of the car, he saw a massive crowd in front of Pearl Pavilion. The onlookers seemed to have been drawn into the excitement.

When Darryl walked in, he saw the owners of the antique stores next door were in a heated discussion.

"This must be a counterfeit!"

"Yes, it does look like a fake one!"

When Darryl walked past the crowd and into the store, he saw a bald man in front of the counter with a colorful porcelain vase in his arms. It looked like he wanted to sell the vase and the people around him doubted the authenticity of the item.

The people in front of the bald man were Yvonne Young, Peter Williams, and another middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man wore traditional Chinese attire and a pair of glasses; he had the image of a master. He was Yvonne's father, Kingston Young.

He was also the head of the Young family, the most famous antique dealer in Donghai City! Kingston stared at the vase.

There was also a familiar figure amongst the crowd.

It was Elsa Lyndon!

'Why is she here too?'

Darryl wondered about that. On second thoughts, the Lyndon family and the Young family had been quite close, so Elsa might be there to hang out with Yvonne.

As Darryl processed the thought, he peeped at Elsa.

Elsa was a gorgeous woman.

As expected of beautiful people, they would look good in anything they wore! Elsa was dressed in a wine-colored spaghetti strap dress and her hair in an intricate updo. She was not only sexy and charming, but she was also graceful and elegant.

Elsa was surprised to see Darryl there too.

'Why is he here?'

'Is he here to join in on the fun?'

Elsa recalled the incident where Darryl commented on the bracelet she gave her grandmother at her birthday banquet. Somehow, she found Darryl

interesting.

However, the two had rarely met and were not even close. Hence, Elsa only entertained her thoughts but did not greet Darryl.

Kingston appraised the vase in the bald man's arms. Everyone around him craned their necks to see it; they were quiet as they were highly focused and perhaps, tensed by the situation.

Even the owners of the antique shops held their breath.

As the head of the Young family, Kingston was a scholar of great attainment in the antique industry. He was at a master's level. Who would dare to boast before him?

"Your porcelain is quite exquisite in appearance and delicate in texture, but from its shape and design, I cannot tell if it is an ancient artifact from any era." Kingston examined the porcelain for quite some time before he shook his head and spoke to the bald man.

The bald man's eyes flashed shrewdly, and he smiled. "The Young family has a prominent presence in the antique industry. Are you saying that even Manager Young could not appraise this porcelain vase? Please don't tease me."

Kingston smiled faintly. "The porcelain production

began in the Han Dynasty and gradually matured through five dynasties, until the Tang Dynasty. It was not until the Qing Dynasty that the skill came to maturity. Before the Qing Dynasty, most of the porcelains were of classic and simple designs, whereas in the Qing Dynasty period, the designs were exquisite and gorgeous."

"The vase that you have here are of simple and naturally derived designs; it resembles the Tang and Song Dynasties styles. However, the colorful glaze is too ostentatious, it is more like the styles of the Ming and Qing Dynasties, and the bottom is an oval shape which resembles the Western-style..."

At that point, Kingston's lips curled into a spurious smile. "Even though your vase is extremely fine and exquisite, it is neither fish nor fowl. From my observation, I can infer that it should be a modern creation. I must say that the craftsman who did the firing is rather skillful."

As soon as Kingston finished talking, everyone looked at him admiringly.

"Indeed, Manager Young is knowledgeable."

"That's right! I was unsure just now, but after listening to Manager Young, it's intelligible."

"We rarely see Manager Young display his skill. I have gained a lot of insights today."

Kingston was happy and proud to be praised and admired by the several owners of antique stores. 1

Yvonne Young was stunned when she saw the bald man went into Pearl Pavilion with the porcelain vase. Many of the antique stores' owners would not be able to tell if the vase was genuine or fake. 1

Hence, Yvonne made a quick decision to call Darryl and her father.

The bald man smiled mischievously after he heard Kingston's verdict. "Since Manager Young said that this vase is not an ancient artifact but rather, one from this century, then may I ask if you know the notable porcelain maker who made this piece of art? "

"Hmm..." Kingston frowned; he stood irresolute.

Then, Darryl came forward. "Perhaps, I can have a look at it?"

Everyone present was stunned to hear that.

"Young man, you were lucky last time. Are you here to play the public again?"

"Manager Young had made it clear just now. Why do you need to appraise it again?"

"Yes, just leave already. Don't make a fool of yourself."

The owners of antique stores burst out in laughter.

'Is there something wrong with this young man? Manager Young had set a conclusion, and yet he wanted to say something about it? Is he questioning Manager Young's judgment?' 1

Chapter 53

Elsa Lyndon furrowed her brows as she stood at the side.

Even though she seldom talked to Darryl, she was still a member of the Lyndon Family. If Darryl were to make a fool of himself, would she not be embarrassed as well?

When Kingston realized the identity of that young man, and after a brief moment of stupor, he said, " Aren't you the Lyndon family's son-in-law?"

Before he could continue, Yvonne interrupted softly, "Dad, he is the honorary antique appraiser I hired!"

'What?!'

Everyone tried to stifle their giggles. 'What? He is a reputable antique appraiser? More like famous trash. The Lyndon family can't wait to get rid of him because he is useless! And Yvonne made him the honorary antique appraiser? That's funny!'

Kingston sighed as he stared at Darryl. Then he nodded and did not say anything else.

The Young family's properties had fallen under the

management of Yvonne Young. She had done an excellent job. 'Since my daughter hired this young man, I guess he must be a talented man?' Even though Darryl's name was dragged through the mud in Donghai City, Kingston believed in his daughter.

With Kingston's consent, Darryl stepped forward and scrutinized the porcelain vase!

Everyone else was silent.

However, the atmosphere was obviously different than before that.

When Kingston appraised the vase, everyone waited respectfully. However, at that moment, they watch Darryl like he was a clown.

An honorary antique appraiser?

Him?

'Yvonne Young is still too green. She must have believed the young man because of what had happened last time.'

'Well, let's wait and see how he embarrasses himself.'

The other antique store owners had the same thoughts.

Yvonne, on the other hand, waited anxiously.

She thought that Darryl was overconfident about the situation. 'Why would he want to look at it again after my father had appraised it?'

'My dad would definitely blame it on me if he were to make a blunder.'

Darryl studied the vase carefully for a few seconds. Then he suddenly reached out and stroked the porcelain vase a few times.

"What are you doing? Can you afford to pay for it if you were to break it?" The bald man scowled, and he told Darryl off quickly.

The other antique store owners also shook their heads disapprovingly.

'That young man obviously doesn't know anything.'

To appraise porcelain, one might have to rely on the 'look, listen, compare, and feel' technique. One could listen to the porcelain by tapping the porcelain lightly to distinguish its body. It was deemed unprofessional to stroke the surface like Daryl had done.

However, Kingston narrowed his eyes slightly.

Darryl's action might seem random or on a whim, but it looked like he had paid great attention to the detail.

'Where have I seen such a unique method of identification?'

Suddenly, Darryl stopped his action and put the porcelain vase to his ear to listen quietly.

After that, Darryl put the item down and looked at Yvonne. "How much does he want for this?"

The bald man immediately said, "Five hundred thousand bucks, and not a penny less."

'Only half a million bucks?'

Darryl smiled stealthily. Then he turned to Yvonne and said confidently, "Buy it!"

When Darryl learned antique appraisal with a master of Chinese studies, he had majored in porcelain.

The porcelain vase was top quality in terms of its glaze and texture, as Kingston described, but its shape was somewhat peculiar.

That was why Darryl was a little confused initially, but soon, he discovered some soil stuck at the bottom of the vase. The soil had a musty odor of mold. That affirmed Darryl's guess that the vase must be an ancient artifact that had just been unearthed.

That was right! The ancient artifact had only just

been unearthed!

Before Yvonne could react to Darryl's claim, someone in the crowd laughed. Then, everyone joined in a fit of laughter.

"Oh, that's too funny! Hey, young man, do you really think that you are an appraiser?"

"And you even said that it is worthed half a million bucks? This thing probably only cost a few thousand bucks, at most."

"That's right. Manager Young said that it was fake. Why are you pulling a funny act here?"

Amidst the laughter and ridicule, Yvonne's complexion turned ugly. Kingston shook his head in disappointment.

They must have thought that he would have a different perspective, but he seemed to have arrived at his conclusion too soon.

Chapter 54

Kingston took a deep breath; his expression also looked hideous. He turned around and whispered to Yvonne, "Is this the honorary antique appraiser you hired? For 50,000 bucks a month?"

'Even if our family has the money, that is no need to spend in such a reckless manner.'

Yvonne said nothing; a trace of shame flashed in her eyes.

The bald man laughed as though he had met his confidante; he patted Darryl's shoulder and said, " This brother is indeed knowledgeable!"

Darryl merely smiled.

Kingston stared at Darryl sternly and said coldly, " Tell me. How is this thing worth 500,000 bucks?"

'No, it is worth more than that! It's worth more than five million bucks! You will make a lot of money if you buy it.' Darryl thought to himself.

Then, he cleared his throat and said slowly, "Uncle Young, don't be anxious. I'll explain it to you. Uncle Young knows about Princess Wencheng, right?"

Kingston was a little impatient. When he heard the

name, he was suddenly reminded of something, and his body quivered in shock. "Did you mean..."

Then, Kingston shook his head. "Impossible; absolutely impossible!"

The historical records about Princess Wencheng were mainly about her marriage to a Tibetan prince. However, in the antique world, there was hearsay about Princess Wencheng.

Princess Wencheng had loved porcelain since she was a child. When the Emperor Taizong of Tang gave her an imperial edict to marry into the Tibetan Kingdom, he also gave her a porcelain vase. The porcelain vase was rumored to be a tributary from the Tibetan Kingdom to the emperor.

The unique geographical location of the Tibetan Kingdom had made its culture greatly influenced by the culture of the Tang Dynasty and the Western Regions. Therefore, the porcelain made by the Tibetan imperial family was exceptional and very rare.

Almost nothing of the art had remained in the modern days.

It was rumored that Princess Wencheng liked that porcelain vase very much, and she took it with her wherever she went.

Gradually, the porcelain vase gained spirituality. It

was said that when one put their ears to the mouth of the vase and listened carefully, one could hear the sound of water gurgling from the inside. That was because every time the princess missed her hometown, the Tang Kingdom, she would sit by the stream with her beloved vase as she reminisced about her past.

It was also rumored that the princess's beloved vase had a supernatural attribute. Before Princess Wencheng was married, her real name was Li Xueyan. Hence, people from the later generations named the vase as Xueyan Promenade Vase.

Very few people had seen the actual Xueyan Promenade Vase, and it disappeared after the demise of Princess Wencheng.

It was not until the end of the Qing Dynasty that the Xueyan Promenade Bottle miraculously appeared in a gentry's home in Jiangnan. The news spread, and the members of that family were killed within a few days.

Then the Xueyan Promenade Vase went missing again.

The location of the vase or whether it was destroyed remained a mystery.

Therefore, when Darryl mentioned Princess Wencheng, Kingston immediately thought of the

rumor.

'Did he mean that this vase is the Xueyan Promenade Vase! That's impossible!'

'Could such a speculative artifact appear in Pearl Pavilion?'

'No way!'

Kingston's thoughts spun quickly; his facial expressions changed continuously, which surprised the crowd.

Darryl pointed at the vase in front of him. He said with a smile, "Uncle Young, even though the shape of this porcelain vase is very peculiar, it is very similar to the style of the Tang Dynasty, and at the same time, it has the taste of the Western Regions. It is the unique location of Tibet that created this neither fish nor fowl piece of art." 1

"The colorful glaze on it was influenced by the Western Regions' culture. It lacks the Tang Dynasty's ancient charm and has more of the Western Region's aesthetics for vibrant colors."

"Look at this colorful glaze again. It is so beautiful and dazzling; it feels like it was made in modern times. The Tibetan had added some colored glazed elements when they applied the paint."

He was not loud, but what he said made sense!

There was a moment of silence!

Everyone was in a daze. Besides Kingston, no one else could understand what Darryl had said!

'What about the Tibetan Kingdom?'

'Why did he mention colored glaze?'

Darryl noticed that Kingston was still in doubt, so he said with a smile, "It was the colored glaze on the outside that strengthened the body of this porcelain vase. It made it last for thousands of years without any bumps and cracks."

Gulp!

One could almost hear it when Kingston swallowed his saliva. Then, he placed his ears at the mouth of the vase and listened carefully.

"This... Is this really the Xueyan Promenade Vase?" After about ten seconds, Kingston's expression changed from doubtful to shocked, and finally, he looked at Darryl in astonishment; his voice became a little hoarse due to excitement. 2

'What?'

'Xueyan Promenade Vase?' 1

The expressions of the antique store owners changed drastically. 1

When Darryl explained the details of the porcelain vase, they were still in disbelief. However, after they heard Kingston repeated the name of the vase, they all stood in shock.

Of course, they had heard of the Xueyan Promenade Vase. Who in the antique industry had not heard about it? 1

Chapter 55

Yvonne and Lily felt weak around their knees. They were shocked!

'Could he really tell if the vase was an antique?'

The look of ecstasy on Kingston's face had utterly removed their doubts.

"Hey, after such a long discussion, do you want to do this or not?"

The bald man got a little impatient.

Darryl smiled stealthily.

'This guy must be a layman. He brought a priceless treasure to Pearl Pavilion, but he is only asking for only half a million bucks!'

When he thought about the mud residue at the bottom of the porcelain vase, Darryl was confident that the vase had just been dug out from somewhere. 'This bald man seems mysterious. Where did he get this vase?' Darryl frowned as he thought to himself.

"Yes! I'll buy it!"

Kingston repeatedly nodded as if he was afraid that

the bald man would regret his decision.

Then, Kingston turned around and urged Peter Williams. "Quick, pay this gentleman."

After that, he carefully picked up the porcelain vase and told Yvonne to bring a box to stow it away.

The other antique store owners were all green with envy.

They all looked at Darryl differently.

'This young man knows his stuff!'

Peter paid the bald man. The seller took his phone and checked his bank account balance before he happily left the store.

Kingston looked at Darryl and said, "Darryl, I did not expect that you have such in-depth knowledge in antiques. Yvonne had found the right person, indeed! Even though you are young, you are well accomplished!"

Darryl smiled politely when the older gentleman praised him.

"You have helped me to gain a rare piece of treasure. I'll treat you to dinner this evening. How about a few drinks for the two of us?" Kingston looked at Darryl eagerly and extended an invitation.

The Xueyan Promenade Vase.

Kingston could not believe that the speculative treasure had fallen into his hands.

Kingston was thrilled; he was beyond excited.

Apart from delight, he had also developed a keen interest in Darryl.

He had only known Darryl as the Lyndon family's live-in son-in-law.

He had never expected Darryl's outstanding display of skills at Pearl Pavilion.

'I have to talk to this young man and get to know him better!'

However, Darryl seemed uninterested in Kingston's invitation.

Darryl thought about the bald man.

"Drinks? Perhaps another day. I still have something to attend to, so I have to go." He noticed that the bald man had walked toward the end of the street. Darryl spoke quickly before he dashed out of Pearl Pavilion.

Kingston and Yvonne exchanged looks of doubt with each other. They had no idea why Darry had left in such a hurry.

When Darryl got outside, he saw that the bald man

had not gone far, so he followed him from a distance.

The bald man had successfully sold the porcelain vase for money; he was overjoyed. He was very vigilant and looked around as he walked as if he was afraid that someone would target him.

It was an act of a guilty conscience.

Darryl did not dare to get too close to him as he noticed that the bald man was on high alert.

After they passed an intersection, the bald man got into a van. The vehicle turned around and drove toward the north of the city. Darryl frowned and quickly returned to his Audi R8.

His sports car had a good performance. It did not take long before he managed to catch up with the van.

Darryl kept a distance between their two cars so that the man would not notice him.

After about half an hour, Darryl arrived in Beishan; he trailed behind the van in his car.

Beishan was an undeveloped barren hill in Donghai City. It was also a mass graveyard. Many poor people were buried there because their families did not have money to buy a burial plot.

The sun had set, and the sky had gradually

darkened.

The van stopped at a gentle slope. Then, the driver and the bald man got down and walked up the mountain road.

Darryl did not want to waste any time, so he got out of his car and followed the two men.

The mountain breeze blew steadily. The tombstones scattered among the tall grass on both sides of the mountain pathway made Darryl's hair stand.

'These two guys aren't digging dead people treasures in this deserted graveyard, are they?'

'Did they dig the Xueyan Promenade Vase from this mountain?'

Many thoughts ran through his mind before he heard movements ahead of him.

Darryl sped up and found a hiding spot behind a tree to observe the situation quietly.

He was stunned by the sight.

He saw a dozen people, with various hand tools like shovels and hammers in their hands, as they dug a grave. They were all sweaty as they had worked under the scorching sun.

There was a bearded man, and he seemed to be the

group's leader as he continued to bark orders at the rest of them.

The bearded man asked the bald man who had just returned, "Hey, Johnny, you're back! How was it?"

'The bald man is called Johnny?'

'Did he get his nickname from Dwayne Johnson—the cool bald bloke?'

Darryl, who hid behind the tree, almost laughed out loud. He thought that the name was too funny.

The bald man waved his phone in the air with excitement. "I made it. Sold it for half a million bucks."

"F*ck! The vase is that valuable?"

The bearded man was first startled, and then he was thrilled.

The other people there were also excited to hear that.

"Yeah, Brother. It looks like we're in the right place. "

"Yes, we are going to make a huge fortune."

The bearded man yelled when he noticed that the others had stopped as they were overwhelmed with joy. "Why did you guys stop? The vase that we got

was worth that much money. There must be a lot of other good stuff in here! Get to work! Let's dig for more items."

Everyone continued to dig painstakingly.

Darryl was perturbed to see what had happened.

Chapter 56

'So, they dug the Xueyan Promenade Vase from here. It looks like this graveyard has some secrets.'

'Then again, those men do not seem to be digging with care. What if they destroy the cultural relics? Those were treasures left by our ancestors! What should I do?'

When Darryl about his next step, he heard the bearded man yelled angrily, "Who is it? Why are you sneaking around there? Come out now!"

Darryl was shocked.

'Damn it! He saw me!'

Darryl was about to walk out from behind the tree when he saw the bearded man pull a gloomy face and walked straight to another tree about ten meters away.

"How dare you raid the graves! This is a criminal offense. You guys should stop!"

Before the bearded man got to the tree, a soft voice emerged from behind the tree.

Phew! Darryl thought he had been exposed.

Darryl sighed in relief when he heard the soft and

charming voice.

Then, he saw a gentle and sexy figure walked out from behind the tree.

Darryl was stunned.

Her delicate face was covered with dust, and she showed fearlessness and unbending dignity. It was none other than Megan Castello.

'Why is she here?'

Megan frowned. When she got off work at the police station, she saw a group of people had snuck up to Beishan. With her years of criminal investigation experience, she had a hunch that those people were up to no good, so she followed them.

It was after work hours, and Megan was dressed in her casual clothes without her self-defense weapon. Therefore, when she saw the group of people had raided tombs, she did not act rashly. Instead, she waited for an opportunity to call her colleagues for support.

Unfortunately, before she could send out a message to get help, the bearded man had seen her.

The bearded man was startled by Megan's beauty. Even the rest of his group had also fixated their eyes on Megan.

"Wow! There is a beautiful woman on this barren mountain. What a surprise!" the bearded man said after he regained his senses. He smiled at Megan.

The bald man and the others teased the woman.

"Oh f*ck, she is so beautiful."

"What an attractive aura of a domineering lady."

"I don't mind cutting ten years from my life if I can get her!"

When he heard his accomplices, the bearded man smiled and ogled at Megan. He said, "Hey, pretty, we have been so bored after a long day at work. Would you like to play with us?"

Megan's chest heaved in anger as she cursed, " Watch your mouth! I am the Criminal Investigation Team Leader of Donghai City."

After she introduced herself, Megan yelled at the bald man group, "Put down everything in your hands and stand in a line."

The group of people were shocked to hear the command from Megan; they began to look a little fearful.

'I have heard about a beautiful policewoman in Donghai City; she must be the one!'

The bearded man clenched his fists; the corners of

his mouth curled into a sneer. "So, you are the beautiful policewoman that everyone else had mentioned."

As he spoke, he stealthily waved his hands. The bald man and his men quietly advanced and flanked Megan when they received the signal.

"What are you doing?" Megan shouted sharply.

There was a trace of ferocity on the bearded man's face. He asked in return, "What do you think we're doing?"

Damn it; there was no way out! They would not surrender so easily and allowed themselves to be caught.

As soon as the bearded man finished talking, the bald man and his group charged forward.

Megan's eyes flashed with a cold fury, and she moved quickly without waiting for her opponent to approach her.

"Ouch!"

As the Criminal Investigation Team Leader, Megan was rather skillful in sparring. In merely a few seconds, she had managed to defeat a dozen of them.

Nonetheless, she was still outnumbered. Soon,

Megan lost her focus, and the bearded man had the chance to sneak an attack on her and tied her with a rope.

"So what if you are the Criminal Investigation Team Leader? I managed to subdue you, haven't I? Hey, don't stare at me like that. Wait until we are done this dig, my baby, and then we'll play with you!" After he kept Megan bound, the bearded man smiled. He looked at Megan lecherously.

Megan glared at the bearded man. "Don't be too arrogant; none of you can get away with this!"

Megan's face flushed red, and her delicate body trembled in a fury. She looked so captivating in that state.

The bearded man met her gaze momentarily. Two seconds later, he laughed. He said in an impish tone, "Are you trying to play rough with me? I can't believe you still think that you can catch us. I'll let you experience the joy of being a woman and then bury you up here. Let's see how you can catch us then. Haha..."

Megan was furious; she bit her lips.

As Donghai City's Criminal Investigation Team Leader, she was strict and harsh with her team; she had always appeared respectable in front of the outsiders, like a queen.

How could she withstand the humiliation by a tomb raider?

"You guys think you're brave, don't you? Not only did you guys raid the tombs, but you are also disgusting salacious perverts."

That voice came slowly from not too far away.

Megan, the bearded man, and the rest of the group immediately looked in that direction. They saw Darryl there with a smile on his face.

"You?" Megan was surprised and delighted to see that it was Darryl. At the same time, she was also a little worried.

The group of unscrupulous people were desperate; it would not end well for him if he were to fall into their hands.

Megan began to shout anxiously, "Quick, run away and call the police!"

However, Darryl did not move. He made no effort to run away at all.

The bearded man frowned and looked at Darryl as he said coldly, "Who are you?"

His bald accomplice pointed at Darryl dumbly. "F* ck! Aren't you the antique appraiser at Pearl Pavilion?"

'Antique appraiser?'

Megan and the others were stunned.

'What antique appraiser?' Megan knew Darryl as the Lyndon family's live-in son-in-law.

"Hurry up!" Megan was flustered as she looked at Darryl and shouted. The bearded man took a pill from his pocket and stuffed it into Megan's mouth!

"Shut up, b*tch!" he said with a wicked smile. "I'll take care of this brat, and then it'll be your turn."

Megan was forced to swallow the pill. Soon, her legs became jelly. "What the hell did you give me?"

Chapter 57

"Don't freak out, Beautiful. Don't worry; it's not poison. It's Weak Bones Elixir. It will only weaken you." The bearded man smiled menacingly.

Megan was struck in a stupor, and she was at a loss for words.

'Weak Bones Elixir?'

'What a mess!'

Darryl scowled. The bearded man must have been a mental patient who had just escaped the mental hospital and talked gibberish.

"Hey, brat! Did you f*cking follow me? What the hell do you want? I sell vases, and you paid for them. Why did you follow me?" The bald man and his group gathered around Darryl and asked him fiercely.

"I was the only one who thought that your vase was valuable. Don't you want to thank me for that?" Darryl pretended to sigh before he walked closer to them step by step.

Darryl was a little nervous. He learned Wing Chun Kung Fu from a Wing Chun master for a year

before, but Darryl was not sure about sparring against so many people.

Therefore, Darryl needed to find a way to get the other party to let down their guard.

"Thank you?" Sure enough, the bald man was dumbfounded when he heard that.

At the same time, the other people who approached Darryl also stopped dead in their tracks.

Darryl rejoiced. He walked toward them slowly and began to make up nonsense. "The vase you had was a counterfeit. If it wasn't for me, could you have possibly sold it?"

'Counterfeit?'

The bald man was shocked to hear that. Instinctively, he reached up to scratch his head.

Without warning, Darryl charged forward.

Wham

The bald man was caught off guard, and Darryl smashed his face.

He was sent sprawling onto the ground. Darryl wasted no time; he turned around and charged toward the others.

"F*ck! Kill him!" The bearded man was startled and

angry as shouted frantically to his group members. He did not expect Darryl to be so fast and precise with his shots. Each of his punches landed square and hard on his opponent. Within half a minute, almost a dozen men were on the ground.

"You... Who are you?" The bearded man was panicked when he was the only one left; he stammered as he looked blankly at Darryl.

Darryl answered with a faint smile, "I'm the antique appraiser from Pearl Pavilion."

Darryl kicked the bearded man, and the man flew a few meters away. He passed out when his body landed on the ground.

Megan stared blankly at Darryl; she was so perplexed that she even forgot to blink.

"You—"

Megan opened her mouth to say something, but her body had weakened under the influence of the Weak Bones Elixir. She had no strength to control her body; it was even hard to speak.

"Can you walk?" Darryl knelt and untied the rope on Megan.

Megan shook her head; she was embarrassed.

'What the hell is that Weak Bones Elixir? Why is it

so strong?'

Darryl furrowed his brows when he noticed that Megan was in bad shape.

"Let me see if there is an antidote on them." Darryl turned around and started to search.

However, there was no sign of an antidote except for some personal belongings.

'Oh? What's that?'

Darryl caught a glimpse of a dark thing by the side of the tomb, which the bearded man had opened.

Darryl went to take a closer look at the black box.

The quaint looking box was dilapidated. There were carved flowers on it, but the designs were frayed and tattered from years of neglect.

The box was in the pit, so it was out of Megan's sight. Darryl opened it curiously.

Darryl was stunned to see the content.

Inside the box, there were two yellowed ancient books. One was 'The Geomancy of Yin and Yang,' and the other was the 'Infinite Elixir'.

'What the hell? From the books' title, one is about the geomancy of Feng Shui, and another one is about alchemy. Didn't all ancient people like

alchemy?' Darryl thought as he flipped through ' The Geomancy of Yin and Yang'.

As the name suggested, the book was all about Feng Shui. Modern days people were superstitious, and they trusted in Feng Shui principles when they wanted to choose a good house. Therefore, some Feng Shui masters could make a lot of money. The book was meant to teach one about Feng Shui.

As he flipped through the pages, a row of small prints greeted his eyes. "Feng Shui has a long history. It was also known as the Art of Qing Nang [1] and the technique of Qing Nang is divided into Yin and Yang. Yin Feng Shui: Burial of the dead must be done according to the elements of Qi and water, good flow of wind will gather auspicious Qi, and the flow of terrain to capture water..."

Darryl read it aloud in a low voice. At first, he thought that it was somewhat unintelligible, but when he dissected the phrases carefully, it was not that hard to understand at all.

It was interesting, so Darryl continued to read.

The first half of 'The Geomancy of Yin and Yang' was all about Yin Feng Shui, the burial plot for the deceased. The influence of Feng Shui principles in the careful selection of the land and the cemetery layout was described in the book.

Chapter 58

The second half of the book was about Yang Feng Shui, which described the Yang House's selection, the house of the living.

Regardless of the Yin House or the Yang House, there were many detailed descriptions and even more specific illustrations.

"F*ck, isn't this house similar to mine?" Darryl was shocked when he saw one of the pictures in the book.

Then, he read the detailed explanation on the next page. [This layout lacks water gathering elements, and it affects the living who stays within, making their lives difficult.]

Darryl finally saw the light.

No wonder Lily Lyndon's family was in a time of tribulation. Lily's company was always short of funds. It turned out that it was not human error, but the terrible Feng Shui layout of the residence.

Darryl was about to read further to find the solution. Suddenly, Megan's weak voice came within his earshot. "Darryl, have you found the antidote?"

Darryl was startled, and without thinking, he took the two books. Then, he walked out of the tomb and said to Megan, "I have looked through everywhere, but there was no sign of an antidote."

Megan furrowed her eyebrows; there was a trace of disappointment on her face.

Darryl asked, "Are you okay? Do you want me to send you to the hospital?"

"No, the hospital can't cure it. The effect of Weak Bones Elixir will probably last for twelve hours. I will be fine after that, but I will be weak and feeble during this period," Megan shook her head and replied awkwardly.

Darryn was shocked.

'How could she be so familiar with the Weak Bones Elixir?'

However, Megan did not want to waste any more time. She waved her hand with difficulty and said, " Take my phone and call the police!"

Darryl nodded as he crouched and picked up Megan' s phone. He gulped to calm his nerves.

Megan was slumped and helpless on the ground; her figure was simply perfect. She had a light sweat on her because she had sparred with the bearded

man earlier. So, when Darryl went close to her, he could smell the faint fragrance on her body.

Gulp

Unconsciously, Darryl swallowed his saliva again. He tried to calm down as he took Megan's phone from her pocket.

After he made a call to the police, Darryl held the phone in front of Megan.

Then, Darryl put the phone back in Megan's pocket as he smiled and said, "Well, your subordinates will be here soon."

Megan did not respond. Instead, she looked closely at Darryl. "I haven't asked you yet. Why are you here?"

Darryl thought for a while and smiled, "I saw a few people sneaking up the mountain, so I followed them out of curiosity. I am also surprised to find out that they are tomb raiders."

Darryl said it so casually that Megan suspected nothing and merely nodded silently.

Suddenly, they heard the police siren at the foot of the mountain.

Darryl patted the dirt on his body and looked at Megan. "Your colleagues have arrived, and I have

nothing more to do here. I shall take my leave first."

Then he turned around and made a move to leave.

"Oh, wait..."

Megan called out to him; her weak voice was a little anxious.

"You knew about the entire situation, so I don't have to go back with you to record my statement, right?" Darryl looked at Megan and said with a wry smile.

"Darryl!" Megan bit her lower lip as if she could not make herself say it. She glanced at Darryl before she lowered her head. "You... Can you take me to the foot of the mountain first?"

Darryl was confused. "Why?"

Megan was anxious. "Don't ask. Just do me this favor."

The Criminal Investigation Team Leader had always been a respectable figure. Yet, she almost fell into the hands of a group of tomb raiders. Besides, her body was in a weakened state. How could she face her subordinates and lead them in the future in that miserable state? She would lose her dignity!

Darryl nodded. "But, do you have the strength to go down the mountain now?"

"Otherwise..." Megan hesitated before she whispered, "Otherwise, can you carry me down?"

Megan blushed.

"Sure." Darryl smiled and nodded. He bent down to carry her.

The moment he carried Megan on his back. He could feel Megan's soft body pressed against his back. Darryl gulped again.

It was such an awkward ambiance when Darryl carried Megan on his back. A few minutes later, they arrived at the parking place, and Darryl drove Megan back home. 2

Megan's home was in a high-end residential area.

Her home was immaculate; it was almost spotless! There was also a faint scent of a fragrance. Megan's jeans and short skirts were scattered in her bedroom, though.

As he put her on the bed, Darryl sweated profusely. Even though Megan was not heavy, he had walked quite far.

Megan asked quizzically, "Darryl, are you a Wing Chun disciple?"

He was shocked to hear Megan's question; he was frozen to the spot.

'Disciple? What disciple?'

Darry met Megan's gaze and asked, "What did you say? What kind of a disciple?"

Chapter 59

"Are you playing dumb?" Megan frowned as she studied Darryl.

'Why did he not answer me but asked me a question in return?'

"What did you use to defeat those imbeciles just now?"

Darryl rubbed his nose. "That was nothing. I've practiced Wing Chun for a while now."

"That's not true!"

Megan shook her head firmly. "Your arms moved so widely when you struck just now. That was not Wing Chun."

Darryl was speechless.

Megan was right. She had taught herself Wing Chun, but she found it useless; it was only a trick for street fights.

Darryl shook his head. "What sect of Wing Chun were you talking about? What is going on?"

"Don't you know?" Megan was still suspicious.

When she noticed that Darryl did not pretend to be

confused, Megan sighed softly and said, "There are six main sects of Kung Fu. Don't you know?"

Megan continued as Darryl did not respond, "There are six sects of Kung Fu, namely Shaolin, Wudang, Emei, Kunlun, Tianshan, and Xiaoyao. Each sect has its own style of cultivation, and the type of cultivation is completely different from the usual kickboxing."

"Those six sects used to be very prosperous, but with the development of social science and technology, most of these sects have resumed secular life and started trading businesses in the city. Some even became celebrities and entrepreneurs."

'Really? Why does it sound like storytelling?'

Darryl was speechless; he thought that Megan must have teased him.

Megan tried to convince Darryl, who was still in disbelief. "I don't have to lie to you. In fact, I am a Senior Sister in the Emei Sect." Then, Megan showed him a jade slip.

Darryl took a closer look and saw that the words written on it spelled 'Emei'. The words were written in archaic characters, so Darryl was utterly stunned.

Then he recalled that when Megan faced the

bearded man and his group earlier, she had managed to knock down so many people single-handedly. It seemed like an impossible feat, even though she had training.

Finally, Darryl believed Megan.

"The disciples from the six sects are also called cultivators. The realms of martial cultivators include Master, Master General, Martial Marquis, Martial Saint, and Martial Emperor. Each realm is divided into five levels." Megan no longer observed Darryl's expression; she just went on and on.

'Wow!'

Darryl exhaled deeply and asked, "Which realm are you?"

Megan's face darkened; she was embarrassed, "I'm just a Fifth Level Master, a step away from reaching the level of a Master General."

"Quite a low cultivation realm, then." Darryl smiled mischievously as he murmured.

Megan blushed and argued, "Cultivation is not easy. Some people joined all the six sects and were stuck in the Master realm for their entire lives. My cultivation level is considered quite high; at least I' m a Fifth Level Master."

Then, Megan changed the subject. "Are you really

not in any of the sects?"

Megan had observed Darryl in the earlier fight. Each of his punches landed hard and accurately on his opponents; none of them missed. How could an ordinary person be so powerful?

Darryl shrugged. "Well, do I need to keep my skills hidden? I don't belong to any sect. Perhaps I am just naturally strong."

Megan frowned as she looked at Darryl. She said, " Stop blowing your own trumpets! Do you think you are born with supernatural power? If I'm not wrong, you must have taken some sort of a physique -enhancing elixir."

Darryl's expression froze.

'Elixir?'

'Could it be the elixir that Samson Facey gave me earlier today?'

'Fuck, it must have been that damn elixir! I have practiced Wing Chun, but I could only spar with two or three people. It was impossible for me to hit a dozen people at one go! Is it really that elixir?'

"Forget it; I won't tell you any more." When she realized that Darryl was consumed in deep thoughts, Megan replied tiredly and then closed her eyes.

Megan was so tired after she ate the Weak Bones Elixir, so she fell asleep.

'Isn't she afraid that I have ill intentions toward her?'

Darryl was surprised that Megan had fallen asleep on the sofa. 1

He admitted that Megan was a stunning woman, and her graceful figure was simply alluring.

However, something else had caught Darryl's attention. He had to find out about the elixir, so he called Samson.

"Mr. Darby, how may I help you?" After the call was connected, Samson spoke politely to Darryl.

Darryl went straight to the point. "What is the name of the elixir you gave me?"

"Why do you want to know about this? Let me think ... I think it's called the Universal Pill?" Samson said after he tried to recall it. 1

'Universe Pill?' 1

Darryl frowned. Then, he said he had to go and hung up the call.

He picked up the two books that he had gotten earlier. One of them was the 'Infinite Elixir', which

seemed to be about alchemy. 'Let's see if there is a record about the Universal Pill!'

After he flipped through a few pages, Darryl was shocked, and at the same time, he was enlightened.

Sure enough, he had found a description for the Universal Pill very quickly.

[The Universal Pill can dredge one's meridians and can significantly increase one's strength and speed.]

Chapter 60

It turned out that his great strength was the effect of the Universal Pill.

The more he read the book, the more fascinated he was with the content!

There were many elixirs recorded in the book. For example, the Divine Power Pill could make one extremely powerful, and there was also the Light Spirit Pill, which could make the body as light as a feather.

However, Darryl had never heard of those pills' names, and their effects were incredibly mysterious.

One example was the Soul Piercing Pill; if the enemy took the pill, coupled with the cultivation method's exercise, one could gain control of the enemy.

'Really? Is it really that powerful?'

When he read about the Soul Piercing Pill, Darryl glanced at the material needed to make the pill; he was dumbfounded to read some of them.

'Heaven Spiritual Water... Rootless Stone?'

'What are these things? Are there such things in the

world?'

Darryl was perplexed.

Darryl looked at the other pills, and he noticed the materials needed to refine those pills were extremely rare; he had never even heard of some of it.

However, Darryl also found an exception. The materials needed to refine that pill were commonly available.

The name of the elixir was Godly Pill.

The Godly Pill effect was extraordinary; it would help practitioners break through the bottlenecks of their cultivation progress.

Megan told him that many people were stuck in a certain cultivation level in their progress. It would be easy for the cultivators to break through if they took the Godly Pill, would it not?

'If that's the case, then I can make this pill and sell it to the cultivators. What profit!'

The materials needed for the Godly Pill were not hard to find at all. The salt and white vinegar required were readily available in Megan's kitchen.

Darryl looked at the potted plants on the windowsill for cacti and peony leaves, and he was delighted.

After he had gathered all the materials, Darryl went to the kitchen.

According to the book, the best way to refine the pill was to use a pill furnace or a pot for brewing Chinese medicine.

He could forget about the pill furnace as it was not available.

After he searched the kitchen, Darryl found a clay pot. When he got everything ready, Darryl began to refine the Godly Pill.

It would take three hours to refine the Godly Pill. Darryl did not want to watch the pot as it boiled, so he went back to the living room and started to read ' The Geomancy of Yin and Yang'.

The book was fascinating; Darryl was quickly drawn into it.

It had been years since Darryl was engrossed in a book; he was completely immersed in it.

As he read the book, Darryl tried to practice its theories. He took note of Megan's room's layout and the surrounding geographical environment and started to comment on them.

Megan's house had a reasonable layout; its Feng Shui was quite good.

Unconsciously, three hours had passed.

Darryl hurriedly put the book away and returned to the kitchen.

He opened the clay pot and saw a brown pill had formed in it. He was thrilled.

He put everything back in its place and then went out to the living room with the Godly Pill.

It was already dawn, and the sky had gotten brighter gradually. Megan, who was asleep on the sofa, had woken up.

"You stayed?"

Megan was surprised to see Darryl in her house.

Darryl replied with a smile, "You were too weak. What happens if a thief breaks into your house in the middle of the night after I left?"

Megan said nothing. She looked a little unhappy. ' He ought to know that there should be a prudent reserve between man and woman.' She sat up on the sofa as she thought about it.

Darryl's eyes widened suddenly. "You are all well now?"

'Didn't she say that the Weak Bones Elixir's effect will last for twelve hours?'

"That is for ordinary people," Megan said. "I am a cultivator, so it is not the same for me. When I knew that I had taken a Weak Bones Elixir, I managed to dispel the effect of the medicine by controlling my internal energy."

Megan's expression looked somewhat depressed.

She was stuck on the Fifth Level Master and had never been able to break through to the realm of a Master General.

If she were a Master General, she would be able to dispel the effects within two hours. Instead, she had spent more than six hours on it.

"Wow! I thought it would take you a few more hours to recover." Darryl was surprised.

Megan smiled bitterly. "That's nothing. If I managed to break through to a Master General, it would be much faster."

Darryl heard that, and he smiled. "What's so difficult about breaking through the cultivation realm?"

Megan was stunned. Then she smiled. "What's so difficult? Do you know how long I have been stuck as a Fifth Level Master? Two years! Cultivation is not as easy as you think. Don't simply say anything if you don't know any better!"

Megan waved her hand, irritably. "I don't want to talk to you anymore. It's dawn now, so you should go."

Darryl looked at Megan with a smile as he showed her the Godly Pill. "I have a pill here. I don't know if it can help you."

'Pill?'

Megan was shocked as she fixed her gaze on the Godly Pill.

Chapter 61

"What kind of pill is this?" Megan asked curiously.

Darryl wanted to say that it was a Godly Pill, but it was the first time he had refined it, and he did not know if it would work, so he said, "I don't know. A friend gave it to me."

Megan was speechless.

'You don't even know what it is, and you want me to eat it?'

Even though there were some doubts, Megan took it and put it in her mouth.

Darryl looked at her closely, with a trace of expectation in his eyes.

A minute passed, and Darryl asked, "How do you feel?"

Megan shook her head. "I don't feel anything at all."

'Damn it.'

Darryl cursed.

A Godly Pill that could help cultivators break through the bottleneck? They were all lies.

When she noticed the embarrassment on Darryl's

face, she tried to encourage him. "Fortunately, my body is strong and healthy. If someone else had taken it, I'm afraid that they might get sick. Please don't give people these useless things next time."

After she said that, Megan received a call from the police station, and she had to go to work.

Darryl could not stay there. Thus, he said goodbye to Megan and left.

As soon as he drove out of the community, Lily suddenly called him.

"Where are you?" Lily sounded panicked and anxious. "Something has happened at home."

Darryl suddenly felt that something was wrong, so he asked, "What's wrong?"

"My dad's friend from overseas, Tony, has suddenly disappeared. My dad took the family's money and everything... You know what, forget it. Bye." Lily hung up the phone, irritably before she managed to finish her words.

Lily did not even know why she called Darryl.

Even though he had found a job and was more self-motivated than before, how could he help with such a big problem?

Lily shook her head; she immediately rushed to the

Lyndon family villa.

Lily had hung up the call, but Darryl did not take it to heart. He shook his head and smiled.

Then he thought about Wentworth, who had taken the Lyndon family's money for investment.

That Tony was obviously unreliable; it must have been a scam.

Everyone in the Lyndon clan was too focused on money, and it was time for them to learn about hardship.

However, Lily was Wentworth's daughter. She would also be implicated then.

He sighed.

Darryl took a deep breath as he thought about it.

'Well, you are my wife, and so, I will help you this one time.'

After he made up his mind, Darryl searched his contact list and made a call.

"Mister Darby."

The person on the phone sounded respectful.

"Lil P, there's something I need you to do for me," Darryl said.

Lil P's full name was Paul James. He was the CEO of

Dragon Tech. He might have appeared to be the president, but the actual boss was Darryl.

Five years ago, Darryl had invested and established Dragon Tech; he let Paul manage the company for him.

In five years, Dragon Tech had expanded from a small company to one of the industry's leading enterprises.

No one had known about that fact, not even the Darby family.

"Mister Darby, I await your order," Paul answered without any hesitation.

Like Samson and Felix, Paul initially had nothing. Had Darryl not spotted his potential, he would still be a general employee in a small company.

Darryl sighed and said, "Arrange to send someone to the Lyndon residence in Donghai City. Do it immediately."

A few minutes later, Paul nodded to himself. "I understand, Mister Darby. I will do it right away."

Lyndon clan's villa.

At that moment, all members of the Lyndon family had gathered in the villa's hall; it was a mess. Granny Lyndon sat there with a gloomy face.

Wentworth was also there, but his face was one of shame and panic.

Chapter 62

The Lyndon family gathered around Wentworth and condemned him as if he was a prisoner.

"Wentworth, this was all your fault!"

"You swore that you could make money; now what happened?"

"I didn't know Tony was unreliable. As it turns out... "

"No matter what, you have to give us an explanation today."

They got angrier along with the conversation. It was like there was a fire in their eyes; they looked like they would kill Wentworth.

"Don't worry, guys, there must be a solution to this matter," Lily, who stood aside, said anxiously.

They were unable to take it easy! The great Lyndon family was about to go bankrupt because of her father!

Samantha also hurriedly said, "We're family. Don't get too emotional."

However, no one cared about the mother and

daughter at all.

Then, Granny Lyndon looked at Wentworth in disappointment and said, "Wentworth, you have failed me. Tell me, what should we do about this?"

Wentworth looked grim. "I didn't expect it would turn out this way. Tony has disappeared, and I'm also trying to look for him."

"Wentworth, why do I feel like this was a trap? That you helped set?" someone said.

A cast stone could make a thousand ripples. The others immediately agreed with that person.

"Yes, it must have been you and Tony who teamed up and cheated us!"

"Tell us! Where is Tony?"

"You're a good actor, Wentworth."

Wentworth was on the verge of tears. "I truly don't know where Tony is. I am a victim too. Besides, how could I cheat my family with an outsider?"

However, none of them believed him. They got even more emotional and were about to punch him.

Just then, a panicked voice shouted, "Oh no! Old Madam, the patriarch of the White family, Claude White, is here, along with our clients." 1

A few people walked into the hall as soon as he said

that.

Claude White, the patriarch of the White family, led the group.

"Granny Lyndon, I think we need to suspend all our projects together." Claude stepped forward, looked at Granny Lyndon, and got straight to the point.

Granny Lyndon's face stiffened. "Mister White, why would you want to stop our partnership so suddenly?"

Then, Gailen Godfrey, the president of La Fortuna, stepped forward with a derisive smile on his face. " Granny Lyndon, our partnership has been terminated. Don't play the fool. We've all received news that Neptunus Corporation has invested all its funds into an overseas business and has lost everything."

After a short pause, Gailen continued, "Your company's funding has been cut off completely."

"Yes, your company is about to become an empty shell; what else can you offer us in this partnership? " the president of another company, thundered.

Granny Lyndon's body trembled, but she forced a smile. "Gentlemen, please listen to me. Neptunus Corporation's situation is not as bad as you think, and regarding the matter of partnership..."

Before Granny Lyndon could finish speaking, Claude shook his head and interrupted her, " Granny Lyndon, you don't need to explain; none of us are fools. For the sake of our previous partnership, we won't want any remuneration for this project. However, please return the deposit to us."

"Yes, and ours too."

"I don't want to wait until Neptunus Corporation goes bankrupt. It would be too late to claim it then."

Gailen and other partners spoke up one after another, and there was no doubt in their tone.

Everyone in the Lyndon family was upset as well.

"Mister White, you are kicking us when we are down."

"Yeah, how could you guys do that?"

"When Neptunus Corporation was doing well, all of you offered to partner with us. Now that we're in trouble, you've come to collect your debts. What a villainous act..."

Claude, Gailen, and the others did not want to be outdone as they faced accusations from the Lyndon family. They continued to quarrel in the villa hall.

Granny Lyndon almost passed out in anger, and

finally, she hit the table. "Enough, stop arguing."

When everyone had calmed down, Granny Lyndon took a deep breath. She looked at Claude and said sincerely, "Mister White, President Godfrey, since it has come to this, then I have nothing to say. I'm just an old lady. So why don't you give me a few days to settle this?"

Claude, Gailen, and the others looked at each other for a few moments. Then, Claude nodded and said, " Alright then, I'll give you a three-day grace period. Granny Lyndon, you're a friend of Felix Blakely, Emily Dickinson, and Wayne Woodall. Surely you don't need our money, do you?"

After he said that, Claude turned and left the hall.

"Yeah, President White is right. Granny Lyndon, those big shots sent you so many gifts during your birthday celebration; they would definitely help you. If we don't get the money three days later, we' ll see you in court." Gailen left as well after he finished his sentence.

All the other partners had also left.

Then, Granny Lyndon slumped on her chair; her face was pale.

She owed those clients hundreds of millions in debts. Where would she get the money in three

days? She did not know Wayne Woodall and the others! She did not even know why they sent her gifts during her birthday celebration!

Chapter 63

Granny Lyndon shook her head. What could she do? Would divine punishment ruin the Lyndon family!?

At that moment, a smartly dressed young man walked into the hall.

The Lyndons' gazes were immediately focused on the young man.

"Who are you?" Granny Lyndon furrowed her eyebrows. The person was a stranger; she had not seen him before that day.

Furthermore, he did not look like an ordinary person.

The young man smiled and nodded courteously to Granny Lyndon. "My name is Paul James, and I am the president of Dragon Tech."

'Wow!'

When Paul introduced himself, everyone was shocked into silence.

Granny Lyndon got emotional. Then, she got up, and her eyes trembled.

Dragon Tech was the leading company in the new

media industry. There were rumors that Paul, the president of Dragon Tech, was a mysterious man, and he rarely showed up in the media.

Such a big shot was at Donghai City? And he took the initiative to visit Lyndon Residence?

What had happened?

Paul smiled as he saw the Lyndons' reaction. The Lyndon family was a second-class clan in Donghai City. If Mister Darby did not tell him to go to them, he would not have dealt with the Lyndons in his lifetime.

"Excuse me, Mister James, what brings you here all of a sudden?" Granny Lyndon could barely manage a smile.

Even someone like Granny Lyndon would lose their confidence when they had to deal with the president of a large company, like Paul.

Everyone in the hall stared at Paul with perplexity as they held their breaths.

Was Paul there to collect his debts, too?

However, Neptunus Corporation had never cooperated with Dragon Tech.

In the meantime, everyone there was anxious.

Then, two men in black appeared from behind Paul

with a chair.

Paul smiled. As he sat down, he looked at Granny Lyndon and said, "Old Lady, I am here to discuss a cooperation with the Lyndons."

'What!'

There was an uproar when they heard what he said.

Most of them were relieved, and there was even a trace of excitement on their faces.

If they were to partner with Dragon Tech, then the Lyndon family could overcome their difficulties.

Granny Lyndon was also incomparably excited, and she asked enthusiastically, "What kind of partnership do you have in mind, Mister James?"

Paul smiled again and said slowly, "It is a straightforward partnership. I know that your family's finances are a mess right now. So, I brought one billion bucks with me."

A billion bucks?

Paul's tone was relaxed, but the people around him were shocked into silence again.

Sure enough, he was a wealthy and generous man. A billion bucks was a piece of cake for him.

How much did the Lyndons have in their assets?

They were shocked, so their gazes on Paul were intense as well.

With that money, they could pay Claude, Gailen, and the others easily. They could even expand Neptunus Corporation.

Their so-called partners had kicked the Lyndons while they were down. They would not be able to expect the Lyndon clan could return to the spotlight so quickly.

Granny Lyndon was also excited.

However, Paul's next words brought them back to reality.

"One billion to get your family through your current problems, but there is a condition," Paul said with a smile.

Granny Lyndon barely thought about it when she asked, "What is it? Mister James, please tell us your condition."

"I want 51 percent of your total shares," Paul said.

'What?'

Granny Lyndon's smile froze on her face.

Everyone in the Lyndon family was stunned too.

Fifty-one percent of their total shares... It meant

that they would sell all their decision-making power to Paul.

In other words, Neptunus Corporation might still appear to be in the hands of the Lyndon family, but Paul would be the one with the key.

It looked like he wanted to take advantage of their misfortune.

However, it was a daring offer, a billion bucks, all at once.

The villa was deadly silent for a while; one could even hear the drop of a pin.

"Mister James... This condition is..." Granny Lyndon struggled to speak.

Paul shook his head; his expression remained unchanged, and he said faintly, "Old Lady, you know the current situation better than I do."

When he said that, Paul looked around and continued, "I don't think anyone but me can help you through this challenge so quickly. Think about it, and let's be honest; there's no friendship between us. If it weren't for Mister Darby, I wouldn' t have come here personally."

'Mister Darby?'

When they heard Paul's words, the Lyndon family

was shocked. At the same time, they furrowed their brows in deep thought.

It was that Mister Darby again.

Who the hell was Mister Darby?

Chapter 64

Granny Lyndon could not sit still as she asked emotionally, "Mister James, may I ask about this Mister Darby..."

Paul shook his head and interrupted her. "Old Lady, you had better consider the matter at hand first. My time is precious. I will give you five minutes."

Granny Lyndon stopped talking.

The Lyndon family was desperate. They would be gone if they did not have the money to pay their debts.

Even though the conditions he proposed were somewhat preposterous, at least it would give the Lyndons a moment to breathe.

However, their family's enterprises' future would be uncertain if they were to partner with Dragon Tech.

After some hesitations, Granny Lyndon sighed and nodded at Paul. "Okay, I shall agree to that."

"Granny, we can't agree to that."

"Yes, if we consented to this, we would have no say in Neptunus Corporation in the future."

"Granny...."

Suddenly, everyone in the Lyndon family spoke one after another, each with an overly anxious expression.

Even though the partnership with Dragon Tech would benefit the development of the Lyndons' enterprises, with less than half of the shares, everyone in the family would be Paul's employees.

"That's enough. Shut up!" Granny Lyndon stood up with a cold expression on her face as she shouted angrily, "That's my final decision. Don't talk about it anymore."

When they realized that Granny Lyndon was angry, everyone immediately quieted down; no one dared to oppose her.

Paul smiled and transferred the money.

Half an hour later, outside the Lyndons' residence, Paul called Darryl as he sat in a luxurious car.

"Mister Darby, it is done!" Paul said respectfully.

"Well done! There's nothing else, for now, Lil P. Go about your business."

"Alright."

Darryl was in his office at Platinum Corporation. He

was flipping through 'The Geomancy of Yin and Yang' book in his hand. He smiled with satisfaction when he heard Paul's update.

After he hung up the phone, Darryl continued to read the book.

The contents of 'The Geomancy of Yin and Yang' were interesting, and it completely drew Darryl into it.

Darryl did not know what to say about the 'Infinite Elixir Technique.' Megan even noted that the Godly Pill he refined was useless. It was clear that the book was a lie.

Suddenly, the phone rang. It was from Megan.

"Darryl, what is the name of the elixir pill that you gave me? I had a successful breakthrough, and I am now a Master General!" Megan said excitedly.

Had she succeeded?

Darryl was surprised to hear that.

It seemed that the 'Infinite Elixir Technique' worked, after all.

Darryl cheered up, but he tried his best to calm down as he said to Megan, "Well, my friend gave it to me. I don't know what it's called."

"Oh!" Megan was a little disappointed after she

heard his answer. However, she said, "You must ask about it when you see him next. If he still has the pills, could you get some for me, please?"

Megan almost begged him at the end of her words.

Did she think that they were chocolates? That she could get as much as she wanted?

Darryl smiled, but he promised her. Since the Godly Pill was effective, he would take advantage of his free time to refine a few more. The materials for the pills were readily available anyway. He could have as many Godly Pills as he wanted. Darryl laughed when he thought about it.

In the afternoon, Darryl bought a clay pot and all the materials needed for the Godly Pill and rushed back to the company.

When he walked into the office, he saw Pearl, who was there to report her work.

Pearl was stunned when she saw Darryl covered in sweat and carrying a few bags in his hand. " President, what are you doing?"

She asked because she was surprised to see the clay pot in Darryl's hand.

Darryl said casually, "It's nothing; I've been feeling unwell for the past two days. So I bought some Chinese medicine and wanted to brew it."

Pearl said, "I see. I can help you to cook it then."

Darryl shook his head. "No, I'll be fine on my own. By the way, if there is nothing important, don't come in to disturb me."

"Got it, president!" Pearl replied. She left the reports on his table, turned around, and walked out of the office.

Pearl could not help but muttered in her mind as she walked out of the office.

'What was wrong with him? Why does he need a cactus for the medicine?'

After Pearl left, Darryl began to refine the Godly Pill.

There were more materials to prepare than before his first try. Half an hour later, Darryl had successfully refined two Godly Pills.

Then, the phone rang. It was from Drake, the patriarch of the Darby family.

Drake had not called Darryl since the last time he took money to help the Darby family through a difficult time.

Darryl sat on the director's chair, slowly lit a cigarette, and picked up the phone. "What's the matter, Uncle?"

His uncle would ignore him if there were nothing

wrong. He would only think of him if he needed something from Darryl.

Everyone in the Darby family treated him that way, but he could care less about it.

"Darryl, I have great news!" Drake said with a laugh.

'Great news?'

'It cannot be anything good if you are looking for me,' Darryl thought to himself.

Chapter 65

Drake smiled and said, "Your brother, Jackson, is getting married tomorrow. I'm informing you so that you can come to the wedding tomorrow."

'What?!'

Darryl was surprised and happy to hear that, and he almost jumped from his chair.

"Sure, I will be there tomorrow morning." Darryl responded immediately and then hung up the phone. He could not express how happy he was to hear that.

Yes, it was great news, indeed. It was not only great news, but it was also a joyous event.

Jackson was his younger brother by two years.

However, Darryl had no blood relation with him. He grew up in the Darby household and was Drake's godson. Jackson was the closest to Darryl in the Darby family. 1

When the family kicked Darryl out, Jackson had rushed home from college to support him.

However, Jackson was an adopted son, and so, he did not have any right to speak in the Darby family.

Thus, no one listened to him.

Darryl had always kept that in his mind.

He had to prepare a grand gift and attend the wedding, no matter what.

The next morning, Darryl drove back to the Darby residence.

Darryl had explicitly ordered a suit for the wedding and had Pearl prepare a gift at the same time, too.

At that moment, Darryl was refreshed, and the joy he felt in his heart was even more significant than his own wedding.

At a Donghai seaside villa.

Numerous luxury cars have been parked outside the mansion. The mansion's interior had been decorated with colorful lights, which looked festive and lively.

Jackson's wedding was held with incomparable glamor, and almost all the influential and prominent people in Donghai City were invited to the event.

Everyone was dressed in suits, and they brought gifts which included a blue porcelain vase carved with a dragon, Ming Dynasty bowls inlaid with gold, famous calligraphies and paintings, and some

even brought a thick pile of cash as gifts.

Meanwhile, Jackson was dressed in a groom's suit as he welcomed guests at the villa entrance with his bride, Rebecca Song.

"Second Brother!"

As soon as he saw Darryl got out of the car, Jackson smiled and ran to hug Darryl.

"Rebecca, this is my second older brother, Darryl, that I have been telling you about. Quickly! Call him Second Brother."

"Nice to meet you, Second Brother!" Rebecca smiled and said politely.

Darryl nodded. He looked at Jackson and Rebecca.

It had been a long time since he last saw Jackson. He noticed that his younger brother had gotten much more handsome. Even though Darryl had only met his sister-in-law, Rebecca, for the first time, he could tell that she was a warm and gentle person.

"Jackson, you've grown up." Darryl patted his shoulder; his eyes were slightly red. He had watched the kid grow up, and it was even time for him to get married. Time had flown by so quickly.

"This is a gift from me." Darryl laughed and handed the gift to his brother.

There were many people in the hall. Drake wore a suit, and he was chatting with the guests; he had a huge smile on his face.

His elder brother, Florian, and his elder sister-in-law, Yumi Griff, stood next to him. Both of them were also well-dressed.

When Drake saw Darryl, he walked toward him and greeted him with a smile. "Darryl, you're here."

Darryl nodded, and just as he was about to speak, someone exclaimed from the side.

"Wow, isn't this the Lyndon family's live-in son-in-law?"

It was his sister-in-law, Yumi.

She wore a pair of black leggings that highlighted her sexy body.

Darryl wanted to laugh.

The people around them smiled as they looked at Darryl discreetly when they heard the words' live-in son-in-law'.

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows.

Even though Yumi was a beautiful woman, she was very mean. When he stayed with the Darbys, she often found all sorts of reasons to criticize him. She

always said that he was incomparable to his elder brother, Florian. Thus, he did not deserve to manage the family's company. He was also kicked out of the family because Yumi had fanned the flames.

However, he smiled, even though everyone else judged him.

He ignored Yumi.

Yumi frowned when she realized Darry's attitude toward her. "You were like a homeless dog when the family kicked you out. You even ran to the Lyndons and became their live-in son-in-law. Now you're back with your doglike attitude thinking you're somebody?"

Her words were contemptuous and scornful.

Drake frowned as he walked toward Yumi and whispered, "Stop it! This is a wedding banquet."

Jackson could not stand it anymore, and so, he stepped forward, "Sister-in-law, how can you say that to Second Brother? Second Brother was kicked out of the family because he bought shares in the petroleum company. It turned out that Second Brother made the right decision. Now the oil shares have multiplied..."

Yumi pouted and sneered, "That's because he had a

stroke of luck."

Everyone around them also snickered.

Chapter 66

He must have been lucky. A live-in son-in-law, who was kicked out from the family, had gotten lucky when the shares he bought shot up. Was he there to show off that he was a winner?

Most of the guests could not help but laugh at him. They had long heard about how the Darby clan's second young master had been kicked out from the family and became a live-in son-in-law. However, they did not expect that he would return to the family so shamelessly.

At that moment, Darryl's eldest brother, Florian, walked toward him and nodded at him. "Second Brother, it's good that you're back. Pay her no mind. "

Florian's words sounded welcoming, but his face showed a trace of indifference.

Even though they were brothers, they had nothing in common since they were young. They hardly communicated after Florian married Yumi. The gap between the two brothers grew even further under Yumi's influence.

Darryl did not say anything, but he nodded.

Then, they heard an anxious voice.

"Quick! Someone, come quickly! President Guy has fainted!"

"How did that happen?"

The guests scattered in a panic and their expressions were complex and solemn.

There was a formally-dressed woman on the floor. She looked to be in her thirties, and she had a sexy body. However, her eyes were closed as she laid there motionless.

"President Guy?"

Drake panicked when he saw the scene.

The woman was Abby Guy, the general manager of Black Wolf Security Group and a famous person in Donghai City! Black Wolf Security Group was contracted for the security of all high-class communities in Donghai City, including bank escorts. It was a powerful group.

The so-called security group was only a name. Those who work in the security group were all gangsters. It was only called a security group as a formality.

Abby's younger brother, Brandon, was a local despot in Donghai City!

She had been invited to attend Jackson's wedding.

It looked like she had fainted at the wedding banquet; if something were to happen, the entire Darby clan would be blamed for it!

Florian and Yumi also hurried toward the scene when they heard the scream.

Yumi shouted anxiously when she saw the situation, "Quick, is there a doctor here?"

"Me... everyone, please move away from her; let me have a look."

Suddenly, a tall woman walked out of the crowd; she looked warm and gentle. The men's eyes were all on her.

Yumi was pleased when she saw the woman. " Director Sullivan, quick. Please."

Drake, Florian, and those who stood beside him were also relieved.

That beautiful woman was Shelly Sullivan, the director of the best hospital in Donghai City. She graduated from a famous medical school and had superb medical skills. The people in Donghai City called her a genius doctor!

Everyone seemed reassured when they knew she was there.

The other guests also seemed relieved.

Shelly crouched and looked at Abby's condition. Then she said, "It might be the crowded hall, which might have caused chest tightness and breathing problems."

Shelly signaled the crowd to disperse when she said that. Then, she pinched Abby's philtrum with her finger.

Shelly told someone to get a wet towel.

They did not dare to delay and followed Shelly's instructions to the dot.

However, no one noticed the frown on Darryl's forehead.

The reason Abby fainted was probably related to the villa.

Mountains and rivers surrounded the place, and the environment was pleasant. However, there was an eight-diagram mirror at the entrance. That made it easy for negative energy to enter one's body.

Abby was still on the ground; it did not look like she would wake up soon.

"What's going on?"

"Maybe President Guy is suffering from an acute

illness?"

"Hush, do you not want to live anymore? What nonsense are you spouting?"

The crowd had begun to whisper.

Drake realized that it was a bad situation. He quickly stepped forward and asked, "Director Sullivan, how is she?"

Shelly was a little embarrassed; her eyebrows frowned as she said, "It's not looking good. I think it's better to send her to the hospital quickly."

Drake nodded quickly and then ordered someone to prepare the car.

It was at that moment that Darryl squeezed through the crowd and said, "There is no need to go to the hospital. It won't help her, and it might make her worse."

'Wow!'

Everyone at the scene was shocked when they heard that; they even threw weird glances at Darryl.

Director Sullivan's hands were also tied. What would a live-in son-in-law know about that?

Chapter 67

Shelly furrowed her eyebrows as she sized up Darryl. "You are..."

Before Darryl could answer, a voice came from the crowd, "This brat is the Lyndon clan's live-in son-in-law. He's just a toyboy; pay no attention to him, Director Sullivan."

"Hahaha!"

Upon hearing those words, the crowd immediately burst out in laughter.

Darryl ignored the crowd's ridicule and said, " Indeed, I'm Darryl, and Jackson, who organized this wedding today, is my younger brother."

Shelly blinked her eyes and spoke with a tone of indifference, "You've studied medicine before?"

Darryl shook his head.

"Darryl, what are you doing? Director Sullivan already said that she's going to send her to the hospital. What are you messing around for? Do you know how to treat her? If you're seeking your demise, don't drag the Darbys down with you," said Yumi as she stood up and pointed at Darryl.

It was apparent her words intended to separate Darryl from the Darby clan.

Abby was a lady boss. She had thousands of people working under her in her security company, and her brother, Brandon, was even more of a boss that should not be offended.

If something were to happen, Drake wouldn't be the only unlucky one; the entire Darby clan would be in trouble as well.

Drake furrowed his eyebrows too. "Darryl, stop messing around."

Darryl shook his head and shot him a look, motioning him not to be anxious.

At that moment, Shelly laughed. "Darryl, you've never studied medicine, yet you want to show-off? Do you doubt my medical skills?"

After examining Abby's condition, Shelly relied upon her years of clinical experience and deduced that it was a sudden illness. The best solution was to rush her to the hospital.

Meanwhile, this pathetic brat in front of Abby, who never studied medicine, dared to speak up without shame. It was truly hilarious.

Darryl let out a faint laugh and pointed at the eight-

diagram mirror hung on the hall wall. "Actually, President Guy has no illness at all. She simply offended an evil spirit."

Darryl continued speaking confidently, "The positioning of this villa, in terms of Feng Shui, is pretty good. It's next to the mountains and lakes. It's a flourishing position. However, hanging this eight-diagram mirror has caused everything to become a mess and attract negative energies. It most easily attracts evil spirits."

As Darryl continued speaking, he relaxed. "As long as we remove this eight-diagram mirror, and President Guy is moved next to the pond outside, the water energy of the pond will wash away the spirit, and President Guy will be fine."

Feng Shui?

Offended an evil spirit?

Upon hearing Darryl's explanation, the crowd was stunned in an instant.

"Hahaha"

At that moment, an unknown person laughed, and soon the whole venue became rowdy!

"This is hilarious! So you're saying that President Guy fainted because of this eight-diagram mirror?"

"Hahaha, you're just talking bullsh*t!"

"Have you become a fool after becoming a live-in son-in-law!? Hahaha!"

Many of them mocked Darryl, and someone exclaimed at Drake, "Mister Darby, did your nephew become someone else's live-in son-in-law until he became crazy?"

The crowd burst into laughter yet again after hearing that statement.

Drake's expression started to change; he felt incredibly embarrassed. He had never been ridiculed like this as the proud patriarch of the Darby clan.

Yumi let out a laugh and pointed at Darryl, scolding him, "Shut your mouth. Do you know how this eight-diagram mirror came to be? It's an artifact from the Song Dynasty. A master appraiser determined that it can prevent calamities. Your older brother paid a high price for an antique dealer to buy it. It's meant to be Jackson's wedding gift, wishing him good health and fortune, and you want to take it down just like that?"

Darryl did not even look at Yumi. "It's not bad, but the positioning of it is wrong."

"You..."

Upon seeing that Darryl was still firm on his

opinion, Yumi's chest rose as if she was about to yell at Darryl.

The Darby clan argued among each other, and the crowd was happy to watch the commotion.

Shelly sighed and looked at Drake. "Mister Darby, as a doctor, I've already given my suggestion. As to what you should do, I'll let the Darby clan decide. If anything were to happen to President Guy in the end, I will not be implicated."

After finishing her words, Shelly retreated to the side.

Drake was suddenly in a bind.

At first, Drake thought that Darryl was just talking nonsense, but after some careful consideration, he determined that Darryl was not the type to be rash. No matter what, he was still a member of the Darby clan, and it seems that Abby was in trouble. He could not deny the relationship.

Drake pondered in his heart; he hesitated to make a decision.

It was at this moment when Jackson walked over awkwardly and spoke to Darryl softly. "Second Brother, I think we should send President Guy to the hospital."

Darryl let out a slight smile and looked at Jackson. "

You don’t believe me either?”

Chapter 68

Jackson was startled upon seeing the confidence in Darryl's eyes and immediately nodded. Under the watchful eyes of the crowd, Jackson got onto a chair and took down the eight-diagram mirror from the wall.

"Jackson, are you f*cking crazy? How could you mess around with this live-in son-in-law?" Yumi complained from the side.

Jackson ignored her. The brotherhood they formed when they were young made Jackson believe Darryl unconditionally.

"Hurry. Quickly carry President Guy out to the pond," Jackson ordered the wedding's waitresses after taking down the eight-diagram mirror.

The waitresses were stunned for a moment and rushed over to carry Abby out.

Upon seeing this scene, several people in the crowd solemnly shook their heads.

It was enough that Darryl was talking crazy, but now, even Jackson had lost his mind?

"What happened to my sister? Move aside!"

Suddenly, a deep and cold voice came from the entrance of the villa. A man who wore a black suit matched with a floral shirt hastily walked over, and behind him were around 10 burly men who wore black short-sleeved shirts.

Underneath the young man's clothes was a tattoo of a black dragon. It was very eye-catching.

It was Brandon, Abby's younger brother. The top man on the streets.

His appearance made the attending guests shut their mouths and show their respect.

"Motherf*cker! What are you, Darbys trying to do? Why haven't you sent my sister to the hospital?" Brandon shouted.

He was by the pond and saw that his sister was still sitting unconscious on the chair.

"Mister Brandon, calm down and let me explain," said Drake as he wiped the sweat off his forehead.

Before he could continue, Yumi suddenly walked out and mustered her courage.

"Mister Brandon, we wanted to send your sister to the hospital, but he insisted on stopping us. It has nothing to do with us, Darbys," she said, pointing at Daryl, her face full of contempt and disgust.

"You?" Brandon turned his head, his gaze locked onto Darryl. "The Lyndon clan's live-in son-in-law? Why are you doing this?"

"There's nothing wrong with your sister. She just offended an evil spirit and will wake up in just a moment," Darryl replied.

The corner of Brandon's eye twitched upon seeing how relaxed Darryl spoke. "You little b*tch. Stop bullsh*tting me. What do you mean 'offended an evil spirit'? I'm telling you, if something happens to my sister, I guarantee that you won't see the sun tomorrow."

Brandon tuned to give Drake a few cold glances. " That includes the Darbys. Don't think you can shrug off your involvement."

Brandon's voice was like a cold wind during winter. Everyone who heard him felt a piercing cold in their hearts.

No one dared to doubt him, for Brandon was so powerful that he could do it.

Drake smiled bitterly. "Mister Brandon, I-"

"Huh..."

At that moment, Abby, who was still sitting by the pond, let out a soft grunt.

'What? She has awakened!? Doctor Sullivan couldn't heal her, but after removing the eight-diagram mirror Abby actually woke up!?' everyone was shocked but let out a sigh of relief.

It was a good thing, she had woken up. If not, the entire Darby clan would be doomed because of Darryl.

Everyone thought that Abby woke up on her own. They thought it had nothing to do with what Darryl had said.

Let alone the guests who thought that Darryl was speaking nonsense from the beginning till the end.

Brandon walked towards his sister, concerned. "Sis, are you alright? What happened?"

Abby rubbed her forehead, and she seemed to be in a daze. "I'm not sure exactly. My vision turned pitch black, and I don't know what happened after that."

Upon hearing those words, Brandon furrowed his eyebrows as he turned around to look at Darryl.

Darryl smiled softly and quickly walked toward Abby. "President Guy, you offended an evil spirit. Try to think back. Did you see something right before you fainted?"

'Motherf*cker, he's still pretending?' Brandon

cursed to himself.

Brandon was infuriated again, and he was about to rush over there to beat Darryl.

However, Abby mumbled, "Before I fainted, I was looking at an eight-diagram mirror on the wall. It looked interesting, after that I..."

'Wow!' the guests thought.

All the surrounding guests, including the Darbys, were suddenly in an uproar as they instantly turned their gaze towards Darryl.

'Eight-diagram mirror? Damn, is this real!?' some of the guests thought. 1

Chapter 69

'Was this a coincidence, or does this live-in son-in-law truly know his stuff?' the guests thought.

Darryl smiled slightly and nodded at Abby. "That's right. Even though that eight-diagram mirror is a nice antique, it's clashing with the villa's Feng Shui. That's why President Guy fainted. No matter how great Miss Sullivan's medical skills were, she wouldn't have been able to cure her."

These words made Shelly lower her head. At first, she looked down on Darryl, but it turned out that he was truly a capable man. Moreover, she did not cure Abby. Darryl's words humbled her.

While Darryl was talking, he was also silently checking out Abby.

Even though this woman was over 30 years old, she still took great care of her appearance. At first glance, she barely looks 20. She has a fantastic figure and incomparable sensuality and attractiveness.

'Abby and Brandon, this pair of siblings, do not seem to be ordinary people. They had a very powerful aura! Unless this pair of siblings are also

cultivators? Or students belonging to a sect?' Darryl thought.

Abby furrowed her brows. "Mister Darryl, if what you said is true, then why was I the only one who fainted? I'm sure I'm not the only guest today who saw the eight-diagram mirror, right? Why are they fine?"

Upon hearing her words, the crowd reacted and started to voice their doubts one after another.

"That's right. I saw it too, but why didn't anything happen to me?"

"I saw it too."

"As I said before, this brat is trying to trick us."

Darryl ignored the questioning around him. Instead, he looked at Abby intensely and said, "This is President Guy's personal problem."

"My personal problem?" asked Abby.

Brandon grew impatient. "Why would my sister have problems? Explain it clearly."

Darryl smiled slightly and asked Abby, "Allow me to be presumptuous, but are you on your period today, President Guy?"

Abby bit her lip tightly as her face turned red, expressing a hint of discomfort.

"Motherf*cker, are you purposely looking for trouble, you punk? Do you wanna f*cking die?" Brandon could not hold it any longer. He suddenly stood up and stared at Darryl with rage.

It wasn't enough that this punk pretended to know what happened, but now he dared ask Brandon's sister such a private question in front of so many people. He must be tired of living.

At the same time, several burly bodyguards were about to surround Darryl.

"Back down!" Abby ordered the bodyguards.

She bit her lip and said softly, "It...It did come today."

Darryl nodded his head. "Just as I thought. The blood offended an evil spirit. From the perspective of Feng Shui, you broke a taboo, but it's not a big issue. It's fine now."

In that moment, Brandon finally understood and did not say another word.

A person like Brandon couldn't apologize to Darryl. He merely glanced at Darryl intensely and helped Abby back to the hall of the villa.

The crisis had passed with some surprises but without any harm. There was nothing left for the

guests to see, so they returned to the hall as well.

The Darbys looked at Darryl with confusion in their eyes. None of them congratulated him.

In their hearts, they did not expect Darryl to succeed. They believed he must have blindly guessed his way to the solution.

'What Feng Shui? All of that was just a lie,' they thought.

Only Jackson's face was full of respect and joy.

As everyone was returning to the hall, Jackson grabbed Darryl's arm and said to him with adoration, "Second Brother, you're so amazing. You even knew such strange knowledge. You didn't know, but I was almost scared to death just now too."

Darryl laughed and patted Jackson's shoulder. "You fool. Did you think that I would be messing around on your wedding day?"

The feast that followed went on without an issue, and the guests had great fun.

The entire Darby clan was happy about Jackson's wedding. Even his big brother, Florian, repeatedly encouraged him to drink and said numerous blessings.

Jackson himself was also extremely worked up. It

seemed like the moment the alcohol went into his cup, it dried up immediately. Before the feast was even finished, he was already unconscious and had to be carried to his room to rest.

Once the feast was over, Darryl and Drake said their goodbyes and left.

Just as they walked out of the villa, two men in black walked up to them.

"Mister Darryl, Mister Guy wants you to pay him a visit," one of the men said, expressionless while the other made a welcoming gesture.

It was evident that the Mister Guy they mentioned was none other than Brandon Guy.

Even the bodyguards under him had such an imposing aura. This just showed the amount of influence Brandon had on Donghai City.

Chapter 70

However, Darryl did not care for that. He faintly smiled and followed the men into the car.

After a few minutes, they arrived at a private manor.

Even though it was far from the sea, the decoration was not the slightest bit inferior to those sea view villas. On the contrary, its layout was meticulous and orderly, highlighting the powerful atmosphere.

The entire manor was vintage-styled, and the whole place emanated an antique feeling.

The two men in black left once they escorted Darryl to the front hall.

Brandon sat atop an elegant wooden armchair. Upon seeing Darryl's arrival, he stood up and pointed at a gift box to his side. "This is a gift from my sister to express her gratitude. Take it."

Brandon spoke of gratitude, yet his expression did not contain a hint of politeness, but instead, it was arrogance.

With Brandon's position in Donghai City, the entire Darby clan was unimportant to him, even more so Darryl. In truth, Brandon was not wealthier than

the Darbys, but the Darbys were definitely afraid of him. It is because the Darbys are involved in business, but Brandon? He's not just involved in business; he's also involved in the shady parts of society.

Moreover, Darryl was also the Lyndon clan's live-in son-in-law, which made Brandon look down on him even more.

Darryl did not mind his attitude. He nodded his head and went over to take the box.

Darryl then noticed that on the offering table was an enshrined striped thumb ring that looked like it was made of jade but was not. It had a sense of mystery.

Behind the thumb ring was a wooden sign, and several words were written extravagantly on it.

Darryl recognized the words 'Tianshan' on the front, but the words behind it were so scribbled that it was illegible. This thumb ring was really something, and it must be a high-quality antique.

"Darryl, right? During Jackson's wedding reception, my sister and I could already tell that you're a partial cultivator. You must have taken some special pill. That's why your body is much stronger than the ordinary man," Brandon said.

Darryl was startled.

'How could they tell that he had taken the Universal Pill? It seemed that they were cultivators as well, and from the Tianshan School,' Darryl thought.

Darryl smiled and nodded. "Such meticulous minds."

As Darryl spoke, he opened the gift box, and inside it was a floral herb.

Miraculously, this floral herb had red flowers and green leaves; it was full of life as if it was still growing on the ground.

Darryl was dumbfounded when he heard Brandon speak softly, "This is called a Spiritual herb. After you consume it, you'll open up your body's meridian and become a true cultivator."

'Damn!' Darryl thought.

Upon hearing that, Darryl's heart pounded in shock and, at the same time, full of unspeakable excitement.

The Guy siblings were truly generous. They gave Darryl a Spiritual herb just like that.

However, Darryl still felt uneasy looking at Brandon 's arrogant appearance.

"Thank you so much! After consuming the Spiritual herb, what stage can I achieve? Master? Or is it

Master General? Darryl said.

Brandon laughed, his eyes gazing at Darryl with disdain. "You're so naive. Master General? You should know that cultivating a path isn't as easy as you think. I, Brandon Guy, have been cultivating for seven years, and until now, I've merely peaked as a Fifth Level Master. No matter what I did, I couldn't ascend to Master General. Do you think that by consuming this Spiritual herb, you'll be able to ascend to Master General?"

'Fifth Level Master?' Darryl chuckled silently.

At first, he thought that Brandon was really powerful, but it turned out that he was just the same as Megan.

Darryl had a thought, so he retrieved a Godly pill that he carried on him.

"I have a Godly pill here. It will help you break through your slump and ascend to the rank of Master General. I wonder if President Guy is interested," said Darryl as he flaunted the pill in front of Brandon.

"Godly pill?"

Brandon almost laughed.

'What a lousy name. Could such a lousy pill allow him to breakthrough? He has been stuck as a Fifth

Level Master for almost three or four years,' he thought.

Every stage of a cultivator represents a significant leap in power. Many who have been stuck in a slump were unable to break through their whole lives. Brandon reckoned that he had no hope of becoming a Master General in this lifetime.

His sister Abby was also stuck as a Fifth Level Master. It was thought that it would be hard for her to ascend to Master General as well.

"You can keep it for yourself," Brandon snorted.

'This live-in son-in-law really knew how to act. He was even confidently claiming a lousy pill like this could help a person breakthrough,' he thought.

Chapter 71

"Well, if you don't believe in this Godly pill, then, goodbye," Darryl did not seem to care and was ready to leave.

"Wait!" Brandon called out after Darryl took a few steps.

"Are you sure that this thing will help me break through to the Master General level?" Brandon asked.

Darryl did not bother to say any more than he already did. He answered with just two simple words, "Of course."

Brandon took a long breath and said, "Fine. I'll buy it. How much?"

A smile appeared on Darryl's face, thinking that Brandon thought he could fix any problem with his money. 'Alright, if he's so rich, I'll make him break his bank today,' with that thought, he showed two fingers to Brandon.

In his mind, he planned to ask for two billion. However, Brandon misunderstood him.

"Twenty billion? I'll pay it," Brandon asked

excitedly with his bright eyes, nodding with a big grin.

'Huh? Twenty billion. He spent 20 billion dollars without even blinking just to buy a Godly pill! This kid was crazy rich!' he thought.

Darryl was startled.

Darryl was not a cultivator yet, so he did not understand the pain of slump. He could not understand what Brandon was going through.

While startled, an unusual excitement overfilled his body. He would never have thought that the Godly pill he made could be worth so much.

'Why bother working so hard for the future? All I have to do is to make more pills!' Darryl thought.

Brandon calmed down from his excitement.

"But I'll be honest with you, if this Godly pill doesn't work, I'll show you the fate of those who lie to me," he threatened. His tone was flat and exuded a murderous vibe.

Darryl smiled calmly, "This, you don't have to worry about."

Brandon clapped his hands to call upon his finance guy to make the transaction.

Darryl's lips curled up, "Oh Brandon, why the

hurry? I didn't agree to sell it to you for 20 billion."

"What do you mean?" Brandon's face darkened.

'Was he trying to pull a trick?' he thought.

Darryl's face did not flinch, and he pointed at the jade ring on the table. "Besides the 20 billion that you're paying me, I want this too."

Brandon looked in the direction Darryl was pointing and took a deep breath.

Brandon stole the thumb ring from Tianshan School. According to rumors, there was a big secret hidden within the ring, but he spent a year trying to uncover it with no luck. Since there was no point keeping it, and it might even bring him trouble in the future, Brandon thought he might as well give it to Darryl.

With that in mind, Brandon nodded, "Okay, go ahead. It's just an antique anyway."

'Eh? He actually agreed?' Darryl thought, startled once again by Brandon's decision.

He did not expect Brandon to agree to this easily. Without further hesitation, Darryl walked over and put the jade ring on his finger. It fit him just right, not too big nor too small.

Darryl was satisfied, but little did he realize that a

faint smirk had appeared on Brandon's face the moment he put on the ring. Brandon stole the ring but not anymore; now it was Daryl who stole.

Swiftly, Brandon transferred 20 billion dollars over to Darryl. A Godly pill sold at 20 billion with an antique, what a big profit! With that, Darryl happily left.

...

Meanwhile, at the Darby Mansion.

Chapter 72

After a long day, almost all the guests had left the mansion. Some of the Darby family seniors had left as well, leaving the younger family members still drinking in the living hall and insisting the groom to bring the bride back to their room.

The groom, Jackson, drank a little too much in the afternoon, and he was still in a deep sleep. Whereas the bride, Rebecca Song, was busy entertaining the guests on his behalf.

Of course, the eldest brother, Florian, and his wife, Yumi, were there, too.

"Alright, it's getting late. Time to go home!" Yumi looked at the time and urged.

Florian did not seem like he was ready to leave just yet. He waved it off. "Ah, today is such a special occasion for all of us. Why don't you go home first? I'll stay on longer to chill for a while."

"You're so drunk already. What's there to talk about?" Yumi was not pleased, but she did not want to embarrass Florian in front of his family, so she had no choice but to leave.

Once Yumi left, Florian's gaze fell onto the bride,

Rebecca. The youngsters sat drinking while Rebecca poured them drinks, just like a good wife.

'This woman that my brother is marrying, she was pretty enough and had a decent body,' Florian thought.

The alcohol was messing with his mind. The longer he stared at Rebecca, the prettier she became.

Gulp!

Florian could not help but drool.

By the time everyone was wasted, Florian had stood up and smiled. "Alright, everyone seems to be having a great time tonight! Jackson isn't awake yet, and Rebecca still has to clean up. Let's all just call it a night, shall we?"

Everyone nodded in agreement since he was to inherit the family business.

"Rebecca, you must be tired today." Florian approached Rebecca when the last guest had left.

Rebecca smiled, "Don't say that. It's my pleasure. Jackson had too much to drink today and couldn't entertain you all. I just do it on his behalf."

"He's lucky to be able to marry someone like you. What a lucky guy!" he smiled as he walked over to pour a cup of tea.

As he was pouring, he took out a small bottle of powder from his pocket and sprinkled it into the tea. Then, he turned to Rebecca, handing her the tea. "Rebecca, you drank quite a lot today as well. Here, have some tea to feel better. You still have to take care of Jackson later, too."

"Thanks, brother." Rebecca did not overthink it and took a sip of the tea.

"Alright then, I'll leave you to it. I'll go home now," Florian smiled.

After Rebecca sent him out of the living hall, she returned to cleaning up. A few minutes later, she felt a whirl of dizziness in her head, and as she reclined onto the sofa, she lost consciousness.

At this moment, a shadow flashed outside the living hall. Florian walked in with a smirk on his face and said, "She smells good."

He walked to the front of the sofa, carried Rebecca in his arms, and kissed her! Rebecca was unconscious by then, which allowed Florian to do anything to her.

Ten minutes later, a red Coupe stopped by the main entrance, and Yumi stormed out from the car with an emotionless face.

Once she entered the living hall, Yumi heard

embarrassingly loud sounds that she wished she hadn't heard. Without hesitation, she stormed over and opened the door.

When the door opened, Florian, who was in the middle of business, was caught off guard. He almost had a heart attack. Lying beside him was Rebecca, unconscious but already assaulted.

After Yumi registered what she had seen, she fumed with rage. She walked over and slapped Florian hard.

"Florian Darby, how dare you do this to me! I knew you were up to something when you wanted to stay on," she scolded him, pointing her finger at him. " She's your sister-in-law! How could you do such a thing? You bastard! How could you do this to me!"

With his wife's outrage, a realization hit him. He knelt on the floor and slapped himself continuously. "Darling, darling. I've wronged you. I' m a bastard. I'm a perverted bastard! I'm sorry! I'm so sorry ..."

Florian had always been intimidated by his wife, especially now that she had caught him in action. Of course, he was scared to death.

Yumi trembled in anger. She could never accept that her husband did such a humiliating thing.

'If this came to light, how could he ever inherit the

family business? As the old saying went: one should never deceive the wife of one's brother!' she thought.

Biting her lips, Yumi said through her gritted teeth, "Get up and put on your clothes."

Florian would have done anything she said. He had always been scared of her. As he put on his clothes, he spoke carefully, "Darling, what shall we do next?"

"Do next?" she glared at him.

She could see that Rebecca was a virgin. Now that Florian assaulted her, there was no way that she would not find out when she woke up.

Yumi stomped her feet. "Florian, I'll settle this when we get home. Now, go and get me the eight-diagram mirror, and place it beside her."

'Eight-diagram mirror? What for?' Florian was confused.

"Why are you still standing here? Go and get it! This is the only thing that can get you out of trouble. We have no other option but to frame your stupid brother, Darryl, for it," she shouted.

Chapter 73

Florian suddenly understood what his wife was trying to do. He brought over the eight-diagram mirror swiftly.

"Darling, you're so smart!" he praised Yumi while handing over the mirror.

Yumi did not bother replying to him. She placed the mirror beside the bed, then walked over to open the window to make it seem like someone had come in from the window.

She was framing Darryl.

During the day, Darryl had gone on and on about his Feng Shui theories and even claimed that Abby fainted because of this mirror. Although Yumi was not convinced, she knew that many people were, including Rebecca.

Since Darryl knew so much about Feng Shui Metaphysics, he could also have ways to make Rebecca faint using this mirror. When Rebecca woke the next morning and realized she had been assaulted with the mirror by the bed, she would naturally assume that it was Darryl who did it.

After setting things up, she saw that Florian was

still looking at Rebecca.

"Didn't see enough just now? Go!" Yumi scoffed. Then, she left.

Florian ran after her, panting breathlessly, "This won't work. What if Rebecca goes to the hospital and finds out-"

"Do you think everyone is as shameless as you? That they don't have a reputation to maintain?" she interrupted.

This made sense to Florian. With that, he seemed relieved and left without further questioning.

...

Darryl, on the other hand, had gotten a weird feeling during the wedding. He could not help but think of his wife, Lily, the whole night.

Instead of going back to the office, he went home. In the past three years of being with the Lyndon family, he knew that everyone looked down on him, including Lily. But he knew, deep down, his wife still had feelings for him.

When he got home, he realized his father and mother-in-law were not home. Lily was sitting on the sofa with her left leg crossed over the right, showing off her sexy curves. However, her face looked like she was in a panic.

Once she saw that Darryl had come home, a glint of joy appeared on her face, but it disappeared quickly. "You're back?"

"Uhum."

"That's good. My friend took my car. Go somewhere with me." Lily stood up, looking anxious.

Darryl did not question her further and left the house with her.

It was not till they were on the road that Darryl found out Lily's mother, Samatha, was having a reunion dinner with her old friends. Since her friends brought along their children, Samantha called Lily to join the dinner.

"What am I doing there, then?" Darryl asked after learning where they were going.

Lily rolled her eyes. "If you don't want to go, just drop me there and leave. I won't make you stay."

Looking at how spoiled she was, he smiled and kept quiet.

Soon, they arrived at the hotel. When they entered the private dining place, they saw Samantha chatting happily with her classmates. Although these friends maintained their youthful looks quite

well, they looked much older compared to Samantha. Their children had joined them too.

When Samantha saw Lily, a smile appeared on her face, but it disappeared instantly once she saw Daryl. She asked Lily to come to make a good impression, but why did this useless person tag along? Samantha was not pleased, yet she could not say tell Darryl to leave in front of everyone.

"Wow! This must be your daughter, Lily. She's gorgeous!"

"I heard that your daughter made a deal with the Platinum Corporation recently, and she even signed the popular model Giselle Lindt! What a capable and beautiful woman!"

After Lily was introduced to everyone, praises filled the room as everyone looked at Lily with adoration.

Samantha was extremely pleased. Having such a wonderful daughter made an excellent impression, indeed.

Darryl was sitting by the side with a straight face.

Samantha's other friends started introducing their children and children-in-law. Some were company executives; some were owners of companies, even the least achieving one's were doctors. Among the chattering, a rich-looking woman pointed at Darryl

and asked with a friendly smile, "This is...?"

This woman was Melanie Watson. Back in the day, she was always competing with Samantha. Looking at her high-achieving daughter, she was not pleased. She had pointed Darryl out just to make Samantha look bad.

As expected, when she asked about Darryl, all eyes turned to him simultaneously.

Chapter 74

Samantha's smile stiffened as she became awkward and almost sullen.

However, Lily remained calm and confident. She stood up and introduced Darryl, "This is Darryl. We're married."

"Oh... Samantha's son-in-law, I see. He seems like a decent man. Where does he work?" Melanie said.

"At a company," Darryl answered calmly. He knew what Melanie was getting at but was not bothered.

"What company? What position?" Melanie asked with a smile as if she genuinely cared.

Without flinching, Darryl answered, "Just a normal office boy."

'Ah! Just an office boy!' Melanie thought.

With that said, a faint disdain appeared on the faces around him. Watching their reactions, Melanie was pleased.

"An office boy is good enough. It's okay if you don't work as well. Lily is so outstanding; there wouldn't be any problem if you just stay at home," she added.

The sarcasm implied was obvious. Samantha's face darkened.

'It was all Darryl's fault. Was he not aware of his position? Did he think it was okay for him to tag along and embarrass the family?' Samantha thought.

Lily, too, had an unnatural smile on her face, regretting bringing Daryl along.

At this instant, Melanie stood up with her glass and smiled. "Since we're gathered here today, I've good news to announce. My daughter is getting married, and this is my son-in-law."

A young man stood up beside Darryl and said with a respectful tone, "Hello everyone, I'm Jimmy, and I'm currently the chairman of Mile-End Corporation."

Wow!

Suddenly, the room was filled with astonishment.

"Mile-End Corporation? The one that specializes in foreign trading? That's a huge corporation!"

"Exactly! I heard it's going public soon. This is a large-scale corporation and has branches in many different cities. It's very impressive to have become the chairman of such a corporation at your age!"

"As Melanie mentioned earlier, you just came back from studying abroad, right?"

"Oh Melanie, you're so lucky to have such a wonderful son-in-law."

Praises and astonishments filled the room, with looks of adoration lingering on Jimmy. This pleased Melanie greatly, and she was delighted. At the same time, she looked over to Samantha and thought, 'So what if your daughter's impressive? Although my daughter's not as impressive as yours, she found a good husband."

With the compliments filling the room, Jimmy waved off his hands, humbly, "Actually, it's not easy being a chairman. As the saying goes, with great power comes greater responsibilities. With over a thousand staff working under me, I don't have any free time at all. Though, the one good thing about it is the salary that's around a few hundred thousand per month."

He stopped short and turned to Melanie with a smile, "Mom, the wedding's happening in a week. I've reserved a Mercedes-Benz S-Class for the wedding car.

'Mercedes-Benz S-Class?' the room thought.

The room went into an uproar again. 'Where else

could one find such a perfect son-in-law?' everyone thought.

Melanie, with the biggest smile on her face, nodded. "Good, good. It's your wedding, you decide."

"Honestly, to me, cars are nothing but means of transportation. They don't have to be too fancy. But not going to lie, the more expensive the car, the more comfortable it gets," Jimmy nodded, adding on with enthusiasm.

With that said, Jimmy turned to Darryl and asked, " Right, Darryl. What car do you drive?"

Before the gathering, Melanie instructed Jimmy to make a good impression on her behalf and attack Samantha's image. To please Melanie, Jimmy did not let any chance to belittle Darryl slip. Since Darryl was nothing but a son-in-law to a wealthy family, all Jimmy had to do was expose how incapable he was.

However, Darryl just kept quiet and merely nodded with a smile.

Of course, Jimmy did not let it go so easily. With a gentle and warm smile, he asked again, "I wonder what car you drive, Darryl?"

At this moment, all eyes focused on Darryl. They

hid looks of disdain behind their smiles.

Samantha's face darkened instantly.

'This useless person was embarrassing her completely. He rode a stupid motorbike. How was he supposed to answer that question?' she thought.

Chapter 75

"My car? Hmm...I always believed that it's just a means of transportation, so I bought a normal car, an Audi R8," Darryl answered, under the pressure of everyone's gaze.

He was not wrong. An Audi R8 was entry-level among all the top sports cars in the world. But it was not just a normal car.

Wow!

An uproar filled the room again. Everyone looked at him in disbelief that they thought they must have misheard.

At the same time, both Samantha and Lily almost choked on their tea.

'How did he dare to say this? His boss lent him this car, and now he claimed it belonged to him? This guy has thick skin,' both of them thought.

Jimmy was startled. 'An Audi R8? The asking price was almost two million dollars! Was he faking it?'

"Oh Samantha, you're so nice to your son-in-law to have bought him such a nice car," Melanie smiled, recovering from the shock, as she mocked

Darryl and Samantha.

Of course, she did not believe Darryl could afford an Audi R8. It must have been a gift from Samantha to make herself look better. After all, Daryl was just a useless nobody.

Samantha pulled on a straight face and did not respond.

However, Darryl spoke up and said calmly, "My mother-in-law didn't give me this car. My boss did."

'Hahaha! What a joke!' Everyone was trying their hardest not to laugh. A few ladies, however, could not contain it and burst out laughing.

'Darryl was such a joke! The car did not even belong to him. Haha! Was he a comedian? Funny guy!' everyone thought.

By then, Samantha's face had darkened to the point that she needed a hole to hide into. Yet, Darryl was not finished speaking. "Actually, the car belongs to me now. My boss was so impressed by me that he gifted me with the car."

'What? Why would a boss give his employee an Audi R8?'

Everyone was in shock and confused.

"May I know which company you work for that has

such good benefits?" Jimmy asked.

Darryl glanced at him with an unbothered look. " Just a small company."

Jimmy was not convinced, but he did not want to continue the conversation either. Darryl was too much of a liar.

With a faint smile, Jimmy took out a delicate present box and handed it to Melanie. "Mom, sorry I 've been busy in the past and wasn't able to visit you as frequently. Thank you for trusting me with your daughter. Here's a little something that I hope you'll like."

"Oh, look at you! We're a family. Why are you being so polite?" she said with a big grin on her face, like a flourishing flower, as she took the gift.

"What's inside, Melanie?"

"Yeah, show us!"

A few people asked curiously, with looks of adoration.

Melanie opened the box happily with lights shining from her eyes. Once she opened it, a long Chinese dress, studded with jewels, came into view.

Wow!

In an instant, the room was in an uproar.

"This is so beautiful! Are those jewels real?"

"God! This is a very famous international luxury brand. I saw this in an international fashion show on TV two days ago. A supermodel wore it."

"This isn't cheap," Melanie asked Jimmy among the gasping.

He shook his head, smiling. "It's nothing, just a few hundred thousand dollars."

'Few hundred thousand dollars? That was nothing?'

The ladies in the room blanked out. An international luxury brand, worn by a supermodel. If only they had one themselves. Even Lily could not help but feel astonished, while Samantha's face darkened even more.

With everyone's gaze on her and the gift, Melanie said in an almost embarrassed tone, "Oh Jimmy my boy, I can't take this. It's too expensive, and the dress is too revealing!"

"Mom, it's just a few hundred thousand dollars. How's that expensive? It really suits you," Jimmy reassured her.

"Alright then. I'll keep it. Melanie said, touching the dress and trying her best to contain her excitement from showing on her face. "Not going

to lie, my son-in-law is just like a son to me. He's so mature and reliable, unlike some people, who are full of conspicuous lies."

Samantha had been holding her anger since the beginning. After what Melanie just said, she was pushed to the edge. When she saw Darryl taking a sip of tea as if nothing was happening, Samantha could not help but tremble in anger.

'This useless piece of rubbish, was drinking his tea at a time like this?' she thought.

Samantha wanted to stand up and leave right away.

Chapter 76

Leaving would only make her look like a joke to Melanie, so Samantha stayed with all her strong will. She also decided that she would make her daughter divorce the piece of trash once she got home tonight. She would make sure the papers were settled by tomorrow.

Lily thought Melanie was a little too much, but looking at Darryl beside her, she felt helpless.

'Other people's husbands could impress their mother-in-law's friends, but her husband? Forget it!' Lily thought.

At this moment, Melanie turned to Darryl and asked with a smile, "Darryl, what do you think of the gift Jimmy bought me?"

Without looking up, Darryl replied with a flat tone, " Not bad."

'Not bad? What a joke. Could he afford it at all?' Melanie thought.

At this instant, everyone in the room laughed to themselves with looks of disdain on their faces.

'What were these people on about? What was so fun

about comparing everything?' Darryl wondered.

Darryl could no longer stand their mocking. Helplessly, he stood up and left the room.

'Hahaha! This trash was too embarrassed to stay any longer? Without him, there wouldn't be anyone to mock. That's no fun,' everyone thought.

Both Melanie and Jimmy seemed disappointed that he left, though Samantha was relieved that he finally left, or else she would have to sit through their mocking for however long. Lily wanted to follow him out to see what he was up to, but she dismissed the thought when she considered the situation in the room.

However, three minutes later, Darryl returned.

Samantha stomped her feet in anger when the door opened. "What are you doing back here? Have you not embarrassed me enough?"

Lily stood up and whispered, "Just wait for us in the car. What are you even doing up here?"

Darryl smiled without speaking. He had a present box in his hand.

He got this present from Drake Darby after the wedding. This was a gift to compensate for the past. When Darryl was kicked out of the family and had married into the Lyndon family, none of the Darby

family members attended his wedding. Drake had felt guilty about this and bought Darryl the present to make up for it.

Darryl accepted the present. However, he had no idea what was in the box, but it could not be that bad since Drake gave it to him.

He placed the box in front of Samantha and went back to his seat. "Mom, I haven't given you a gift in the past three years since getting married to Lily. Here, I hope this can make up for it."

'What? This dude went out and came back with a gift so soon?' everyone thought.

Everyone in the room looked at the box curiously. It was exquisitely carved with flowers. The packing itself seemed so expensive. Whatever was inside must have cost a fortune.

It was normal to think this way for an instant. However, lots of people thought otherwise.

'How expensive could the gift be since it's coming from someone useless like him? He must have done it just for show and to appear less embarrassed from what happened just now.'

With that in mind, everyone thought that Samantha would not have the courage to open it in front of everyone. Even Samantha thought her useless son-

in-law was just trying to make her less embarrassed, and there was absolutely no way she would open the box to embarrass herself further.

"Darryl, it only took you a few minutes to get this present. I hope it's not from a random stall in the night market outside?" Jimmy mocked. 1

Darryl smiled politely. He was not bothered in the slightest.

"Samantha, show us what your son-in-law got you," Melanie said with fake enthusiasm. She was ready to mock them once Samantha opened the box.

Everyone joined in, too.

"Yeah, show it to us!"

"I wonder if it'll be better than Jimmy's."

Samantha hesitated as she bit her lips. Even she was doubtful of Darryl's gift. What if it turned out to be from a night market stall? She would become the joke among them forever.

However, under the pressure of everyone, she had no choice but to open the box.

Suddenly, everyone's jaws dropped in astonishment upon seeing what was inside the box. Samantha was startled, Lily was surprised, and the smile on Melanie and Jimmy's faces froze instantly.

Chapter 77

Inside the box laid a glamorous necklace.

The rubies on the necklace were as big as pigeon eggs. The necklace was dazzling and beautiful under the light. In comparison to this, the diamonds on the dress given by Jimmy were just like sands. Anyone with a pair of eyes would have figured out which gift was more valuable.

However...

"One ruby of this size would have cost a few million? Doesn't that make this necklace at least twenty million?

"From him? Such a valuable gift from him? Impossible!"

"Exactly, I think it's a fake."

The surrounding people were criticizing while Jimmy's mind went blank. Others might not be able to tell, but Jimmy worked in the jewellery industry, he could tell from just one look. The rubies laying in front of him, with their surface gloss and clarity of texture, were as real as rubies could get, or worse, the quality seemed to be better than all the rubies he had seen in his life.

Was he not a useless son-in-law? How..did he afford such an expensive gift?

Finally, Samantha snapped back to reality, she looked at Darryl confusingly, "How much did you spend on this?"

Samantha had countless pieces of jewellery but never had she seen such big rubies. Thus she was not sure if these were real or fake.

"A friend of mine gave it to me," Darryl answered looking at her.

Hearing this, Samantha had mixed feelings. 'Given to him by a friend of his? Can't be real then! What a useless piece of trash, how well off can his friends be?' Samantha thought, as she was about to toss the gift into the bin next to her.

"Let me have a look."

One of her friends' daughters walked over, who had two years of professional knowledge on gems verification. Therefore, when she spoke up, everyone held their breath.

"This...this is real, and every ruby is of the highest quality." The woman said after holding the necklace under the light, she exclaimed, "the design is in the style of European Royalty, I'd conservatively estimate this to be around thirty million, and if it

was actually owned by the Royalty, it would be priceless."

With that said, the woman looked at Darryl with a look of wonder.

Huh? Thirty million? Conservatively estimate?

Shocking!

Jimmy knew this necklace was real from the beginning but stayed silent anyway. When he heard of what the woman said, his face seemed confused with mixed feelings; Melanie had her mouth opened, unable to formulate any sentence.

"Darryl, are you... are you sure you're giving this to me?" Samantha mumbled as she looked at Darryl, surprised and astonished.

At this moment, Samantha did not care where or how Darryl got this from, she only wanted to know if this was given to her. After all, it was a necklace of thirty million!

Darryl smiled, "This was meant for you anyway, Mom. I hope you like it," as he said, he thought of how generous his uncle was. However, in comparison to the thirty billion he spent to save the Darby family, this thirty million necklace was nothing. 1

"Of course, I love it!" Samantha nodded as she

trembled in excitement. Happily, she put on the necklace.

Lily remained silent throughout, but she looked at Daryl dubiously.

Which of his friends would give him something so valuable? First, the five million, and now a necklace worthy of thirty million? She ought to find out from him once the dinner was over.

With that, Samantha became the center of focus for the rest of the evening. Everyone wanted to talk to her, everyone was so materialistic nowadays.

On the way home, Lily finally could not hold it anymore, she questioned Darryl, "Who is that friend of yours? What's his name?"

"What friend?" Darryl pretended to be confused.

"The one who gave you the necklace," Lily said anxiously.

As if a realization hit him, "Oh! Him! The friend who lent me five million."

"Don't you try to avoid my question. I'm asking you, who is he?"

By then, they had reached their house. Darryl rubbed his forehead as if remembered something, " Right, my boss wanted me to do something. Why

don't you go home first? I really have to go."

Lily had no choice but to get down the car. With that, Darryl stepped on the accelerator and the car disappeared out of sight.

Chapter 78

As she watched the car disappear in sight, Lily frowned and went into the house.

...

At Darby Seaview Mansion.

Jackson woke up in the bedroom. Confused, he opened his eyes with a hangover. He could not remember how much he actually drank at his wedding. But he seemed content. After running a two-year love marathon with Rebecca, they finally got married, and what further pleased him was that even Darryl, whom he had not met for years, showed up at his wedding. With that, a warm smile appeared on his face, as he stood up and walked out of the bedroom.

"Rebecca?"

He called out in the living hall, with no response, he felt something bad was about to happen.

He saw the door of the guest room was opened and rushed over swiftly. When he was by the door, he felt as if he was struck by lightning; a shiver trembled over his body vigorously, as he saw something he would never forget for the rest of his

life.

His newlywed bride, lying on the bed.

"Ah!"

Jackson roared with anger, his eyes turned bloodshot red instantly. Despicable! This was the most despicable moment any man could ever imagine.

"No matter who you're, I swear to god, I'll kill you." Jackson tightened his fists, his nails dug deep in his flesh. Like a madman, he looked around for evidence. Unfortunately, he bought the mansion recently and had not yet installed cameras.

He looked around, with no luck, he returned to the room. As he was helping Rebecca to put back her clothes, she woke.

"Darling," she hugged Jackson, seeing him.

"You're finally up," Jackson forced a smile, answered her warmly.

"Uhum," she answered, as she felt a strange feeling in her body, she scowled gently, "You naughty —" she did not finish her sentence due to her embarrassment.

At the moment, Rebecca thought it was Jackson who did it. Before they got married, there were

instances when Jackson was not able to hold it anymore, but they were always stopped by Rebecca. She insisted on giving him the best of her on the wedding night, Jackson could not convince her so he waited. So when Rebecca thought it was Jackson who did it, she was not angry but somewhat pleased. Yet, Jackson was filled with guilt and bitterness.

"Jackson, are you alright?" Rebecca frowned.

Jackson smiled and shook his head, "I'm fine, just the hangover," he answered with his eyes avoiding contact with Rebecca.

The more Jackson dodged her questioning, the more suspicious she grew. Suddenly, her gaze fell on the eight-diagram mirror, and she startled in shock.

Jackson, too, startled. He followed her gaze, and stopped short. An eight-diagram mirror was placed by the bed, and the window beside the bed was opened...

"So...it wasn't you?" After a few seconds of dead silence, Rebecca asked dubiously. If it was her husband, why would the window be opened? She was completely naked, someone might have seen it from the outside. Also, if it was really her husband, what was the mirror doing there? As Darryl said,

the eight-diagram mirror could not be hung in this mansion.

Jackson took a deep breath, feeling the pain of the stab. Rebecca trembled, as she bit her lips and smashed her head into the wall in front of her.

"Rebecca, don't..." Jackson was caught off guard, he quickly pulled her and hugged her tight. With a heartbroken but unwavering tone, he promised, "I assure you, I'll find out who did it and make him pay."

Rebecca remained speechless but broke into loud sobbing.

As Jackson comforted her, a scary assumption came into his mind.

Could it be Darryl?

'No, no way! Darryl would never do this! But... if it wasn't him, why is the eight-diagram mirror beside the bed? I remembered putting the mirror back into the storage. During the day, Darryl was the one sharing his Feng Shui theories, he was the only one who was interested in this eigh-diagram mirror. If not him, who else could it be? Abby already fainted because of the mirror, and now Rebecca as well. It must've been caused by this mirror! But why... why would Darryl do such a thing to me?"

Snapping out from his thoughts, he asked, “ Rebecca, could you recall anything when... when this happened?” Jackson asked, holding his fists tight. He was outrageously uncomfortable asking his wife to recall the strange man,

Rebecca bit her lips, and said softly, “All I remember was, the man...kissed me. I felt a sharp pain at first, then ...”

Chapter 79

"I felt a sharp pain at first, then I thought it was you, so I..."

After recalling, Rebecca felt horrible. At the same time, she looked at the eight-diagram mirror and started suspecting Darryl.

Jackson did not speak but hugged her tight with his fists, almost bleeding from his nails stabbing his flesh. In order to protect her reputation, they would not tell the public about this. The best thing to do was to investigate on their own.

However, their conversation was overheard by the two maids outside the bedroom. They looked at each other in shock.

During the wedding reception in the afternoon, Rebecca saw the maids were tired, so she asked them to take a rest. Therefore, when Rebecca was assaulted, the maids were resting and did not know what happened, up till when Jackson roared in anger that they were woken up.

By then, both of them went back to their room, after overhearing what they were not meant to hear.

On the next day, the rumor spread around the Darby

family. Florian, who was guilty, rushed to their mansion with Yumi once they heard the news. On the surface, it seemed as if they were genuinely concerned, but in fact, they were just trying to find out how much they knew.

"Jackson, I heard something happened here last night. What really happened?" Once Florian entered the living room, he went straight to the point; Yumi, on the other hand, went to the bedroom to comfort Rebecca unctuously.

Jackson did not want to talk about it, but since the truth was already out, he told Florian the details in anguish.

"Darryl Darby! How could he do such a thing!" After listening to Jackson, Florian pretended to be mad at Darryl, further framing him.

Though, Jackson tried to help Darryl, "Brother, Darryl is just suspicious, it's not necessarily him."

"Jackson, why're you depending on him up till now?" Florian said somberly.

At the same time, Yumi came out from the bedroom, "Now that we have evidence, who else could it be? Only Darryl knows so much about the eight-diagram mirror. According to my guess, first he must've returned to steal this mirror, then he saw Rebecca drunk and had the thought..." By then,

Yumi's face was filled with anger and disgust, she continued, "And I heard that this trash married into the Lydon family for three years but had never laid a finger on his wife. After holding back for so long, surely when he saw a vulnerable woman..."

"Don't worry, Jackson, I'll help you investigate this," Florian added on

Yumi nodded in agreement, "Exactly, we won't let this bastard get away with it."

Jackson looked terrible. Before that, he still had a glint of hope that it was not Darryl, since he had the closest relationship with him. But... there was evidence, and with what Florian and Yumi said, he was finally convinced. He did not speak, but nodded.

Watching that Jackson was convinced, both Florian and Yumi had to fight back their smile of satisfaction.

...

On the next day. The chairman's office at Platinum Corporation.

Darryl held the spiritual herb in his hand. Abby said that one would become a cultivator upon eating this herb. Darryl never would have thought that after saving Abby she would repay him with such gratitude. This spiritual herb must at least cost a

fortune in the market.

Darryl thought as he ate the herb. Quickly, he felt a rush of heat condensing in his body, and slowly spread through his body. The feeling was beyond description.

Half an hour later, Darryl let out a long sigh, his face filled with joy. He was now officially a cultivator. He never would have thought that because he ate the spiritual pill given by Samson earlier, his body was in a stronger state than others. So he was able to take in all the spiritual Qi of the herb, making him a Level Two Master right away. Normally, when an ordinary man becomes a cultivator, they start off with Level One, but he actually managed to skip a level!

Darryl left the corporation in an uplifting mood, heading toward the Lyndon mansion. After attending his brother's wedding, he felt the happiness of the newlywed, which strangely made him miss Lily.

However, as of this moment, an emergency family meeting was taking place at the mansion. Due to the funding problem earlier, 51% of Lyndon family's shares were sold to Paul James from Dragon Tech. Although now that the funding problems were resolved, Lyndon family only owned 49% of their own company shares, in which the dividends were

low.

Therefore, Granny Lyndon gathered the people to hold a meeting at Lyndon Residence.

"During this time, more than half of our company's profits were going directly into Dragon Tech's pocket. This can't go on, do any of you have any suggestions?"

Chapter 80

At the moment, Granny Lyndon sat down, her gaze searched through the crowd as she spoke in a serious tone.

The crowd was made of family members of the Lyndon family. Everyone had a sullen look on, keeping silent. The final power of Lyndon Enterprise had fallen onto Paul James' hands, as a matter of fact. Paul was not an ordinary man, Granny Lyndon trying to get back the authority from him seemed more of a dream than reality. At this instant, William Lyndon's eyes twinkled, he stood up saying, "Granny, I have an idea."

"Great, William, tell us your idea!" Granny Lyndon said with a joyous look.

Due to the incident with Giselle Lindt in the show earlier, William was punished by not being allowed to get involved with the family business. Yet this was a serious matter concerning the life and death of the enterprise, so Granny did not care about the punishment. Most importantly, this was mainly due to Granny's favoritism of William.

Granny's welcoming attitude encouraged William, he said slowly, "Granny, now that Paul holds 51%

of the shares of our Lyndon Enterprise, we don't have any say, If we want to get back, it won't be easy. Why might as well give up."

"Give up?" Granny frowned along with the rest of the people.

William continued, "Don't we still have 49% of the shares with us? If we sell out another 20%, we could start another company with the money, or invest into other companies. Once the new company gets bigger, we will return to the glory days!"

Wow!

With that said, the crowd gasped with astonishment, their eyes brightening with excitement, including Granny Lyndon, "Oh William, my smart boy, this is a very good idea indeed."

Yet, someone in the crowd spoke out, "Idea is good, but who are we selling them to?" With that said, lots of people sighed.

A confident smile appeared on William's lips, " Actually, this is no big deal. I have a friend who's willing to buy the 20% shares from us."

Granny Lyndon was excited by the news, "Who?"

At the same time, the crowd focused on William in awe. William had always enjoyed the attention on

him, he announced proudly, "I have a friend who owns a martial club, his name is Trent Young."

What? Trent Young?

It was as if an explosion happened in the hall when the name was pronounced. Trent Young was the most well-known Martial Master, who recently won the championship three years in a row. He had his martial clubs opened all over the country, including a few in Donghai City. Only someone of his wealth could afford 20% of the shares.

In this instant, everyone was in awe, and the hall was filled with praises.

"Can't believe William would know someone like Trent Young!"

"You have good connections!"

"Yeah, he really does know how to socialize, haha."

When everyone was admiring William, Lily was sitting by the corner with a straight face on. She felt that the Lyndon Enterprise was doing fine, that there was no point selling the shares away. But now that everyone seemed to agree, she did not really have a say.

"Oh William, why don't you make a phone call to Mr Trent Young?" Granny Lyndon said with a warm smile.

William nodded and took out his phone, he dialed the number. Quickly, the call went through, and in order to show off his great network with people, he put it on speaker.

"Hey brother Trent! It's William here. I have a business idea to talk to you about, would you be interested?" William talked to the phone smiling.

Trent's voice was heard coming out of the speaker, "C'mon, I know you so well, of course, there's no problem for us to collaborate!"

Hearing that, William's smile became broader, " Wonderful! Do come by the mansion so that we can talk it through!"

"Alright, I'm now in Donghai City, I'll come by right away!" Trent sounded jolly on the phone.

After ending the call, William reported to Granny Lyndon, "Granny, it's done. He'll drop by later."

Granny Lyndon was pleased, especially it was his favorite grandson that came up with the idea. She nodded, "Good, good. If it goes well later, you'll be the great hero of our family. I'll reward you greatly!"

William was extremely pleased, he chirped, "Thank you, Granny."

Chapter 81

Granny Lyndon repeated again, "William, if we successfully sold out our shares, I'll not only reward you greatly, I'll also handover the Lyndon Enterprise to you."

"Thank you Granny. Thank you Granny!" William almost burst with excitement, he intentionally glanced at Lily.

'Aren't you the highest achieving one here? My deal with Platinum Corporation was stolen by you. Yet, now that our enterprise faced danger, wasn't it me, William Lyndon who saved it?' William thought to himself.

Sometime later, a black limousine pulled over by the entrance of Lyndon Residence. A man walked down the limousine in casual wear with sunglasses on. It was Trent Young, with a few bodyguards following behind him. He was in his twenties, but with his outstanding skills, he made a name of himself in the martial world. A very capable man.

"Granny, Master Young is here."

People who practiced martial arts were called ' Master' as a form of respect.

"Please, please come in," Granny said excitedly as she stood up.

The murmurings stopped instantly, as everyone turned their attention to the entrance; William stood by the entrance waiting.

Trent Young marched inside with the bodyguards following behind him. He exuded a strong and powerful aura in every gesture he made.

"Haha! Brother Trent came so soon!" William walked forward and shook his hand, "Bro, this is my Granny."

"How do you do, Granny Lyndon." Trent nodded at Granny, he greeted in a somewhat arrogant manner.

"Please take a seat." Granny did not mind at all, since the man was very capable.

Trent reclined onto the sofa as if he was at home, while his bodyguards stood behind him in style.

The crowd did not make a sound. Granny then instructed William to tell Trent about the corporation.

"Ah, so you want to sell your shares." After Trent finished listening, he nodded and said with a smile, "20% of shares, that'd be five billion. Well, that's too little, I'll pay you eight billion."

What?

Everyone was awestruck. 20% of shares and five billion was considered 'too little'? What was wrong with this guy! Well, it was no secret that this man was crazy rich, owning so many martial clubs and championships. Everyone knew he was rich, but nobody thought that he was so insanely rich?

In shock, joy appeared on many faces, including Granny. With eight billion, the Lyndon family could do anything!

William too, was stunned, but he quickly recovered, "Bro, thank you so much!"

At this moment, Trent added on, "Under one condition."

"What is it, Master Young. Please tell us," Granny answered without hesitating.

Trent stood up, and sent his gaze around the hall. He spoke slowly, "When I was talking to William the other day, he mentioned he has a cousin who is both smart and gorgeous. I've always wanted to meet her myself. Therefore, other than the deal we spoke about, the other reason why I came here today is to propose to her. I hope Granny doesn't mind."

Nobody saw that coming, everyone was stunned.

Though business marriage was something common these days, so when everyone recovered from the shock, they turned their gaze to Elsa Lyndon.

The most beautiful ladies in the family Lyndon were Lily and Elsa. Since Lily already married, everyone assumed it was Elsa that Trent was looking for.

Chapter 82

Under the pressure of everyone's gaze, Elsa was uncomfortable. She wanted to speak up but held back.

William recovered from the shock, and said to Trent, "Bro, you scared me back there! I was thinking about what could you possibly ask for, so it turned out to be this!"

Trent did not speak, he just looked at Granny in anticipation. This proposed marriage determined the Lyndon family's future, which only Granny had the authority to speak for.

At this moment, Granny did not hesitate, she smiled, "It's our pleasure to be able to unite with Master Young in marriage," Granny then turned to Elsa and asked, "Elsa, what do you think?"

Elsa stood up, as she was about to speak, Trent shook his head, "Granny, I think you're mistaken. I' m not talking about her."

What? Not Elsa Lyndon? What was he proposing to?

Everyone was in shock. Elsa was caught off guard with mixed feelings on her face. She was relieved but curious.

When the Lyndon family was confused, Trent smiled and walked over with all eyes glued on him. When he stopped walking, the hall was dead-pin silent. He stopped in front of Lily Lyndon.

Lily was in a sheath dress that compliments her elegant body shape, very attractive. She trembled at the sight of Trent in front of her, with her heartbeat racing.

"Ms. Lyndon, I've always admired you deeply," Trent said with a smile, looking right into Lily's eyes, as he reached out his hand.

Of course, Lily did not want to shake his hand. After taking a deep breath, she said slowly pronouncing each word, "Master Young, I think you have mistaken. I've already married."

At this moment, everyone slowly recovered from the shock, nodded in agreement.

"Bro, you must've confused between the two of them! Lily had been married for three years!" William added on.

Trent smiled faintly, as he turned to William, "No, I'm not mistaken at all. I've always fancied Lily, and I'm telling you, I'm making the offer to buy your shares because of Lily. Do you understand?"

William did not see this coming at all, with that

said, William's face stiffen with his mouth open. He was caught off guard.

"Oh, Master Young, you must be kidding..." Granny finally spoke.

Without letting her finish, Trent cut short, " Granny, do I look like I'm kidding?" he continued, " If you don't agree, I won't insist. But I hope you do consider your current situation slowly, as you don't have authority in your own enterprise. Without me, who else would pay up eight billion to buy your shares?"

Granny had mixed feelings, but still attempted to talk him out, "Master Young, if you would like to be with Elsa, I won't disagree. But Lily...she is someone 's wife, what you're doing is... not right."

Trent smiled in disdain, "Don't you worry about this, Granny. I've checked the person that Lily married to, he is just a nobody, isn't that what everyone in the family thinks of him anyway? Also, although they're married for three years, they haven't had any child, right?" With that, Trent turned to Lily, "Am I right, gorgeous?"

Granny was speechless after hearing that, so was the rest of the family. Trent was right about Daryl, he did not do any good to the family in the past three years, that everyone wanted to kick him out

of the family. If Lily went with Trent instead, it would release them from the pain of having Darryl around.

With that thought, the members of the family agreed in silence. Yet, what Trent was about to do made them all frown with doubt.

"Oh my gorgeous Lily, look, your family has agreed, what about you? Don't be shy." As he said, he said down beside Lily, with a grin, he reached out to grab Lily's hand.

Lily pushed away his hand, and said in disdain, " Master Young, please behave."

Although she appeared calm when she said that, her heart was beating miles! She had never encountered such a thing before. Trent was such a dishonest man, and he even tried to touch her in front of her family, yet nobody stopped him ...

Lily was not only nervous but extremely uncomfortable. Why did none of her family members help her out? They just watched...

Chapter 83

"Tsk tsk, so sexy! Your angry face makes my heart itch. I want you for sure." Lily's complaint did not make Trent back off but made him more excited.

With that said, he grabbed on Lily again. This time, Trent used his martial skill to grab her hands, of course, she did not manage to push him away. Following that, Trent got closer to her, and sniffed loudly in front her, with a dreamy look in his face, " You smell so good."

By then, Granny's face turned green. Actually, she had already accepted Trent's proposal to Lily, since it was not something bad anyway. She was about to appoint a date for Trent to bring Lily home. However, Trent misbehaved in front of her and everyone else, in their mansion.

"Get your hands off her!" Samantha finally stepped in, and yelled at Trent. However much Samantha did not like Darryl and wanted Lily to leave him, after receiving the necklace from him last night, her impression of Darryl had changed ever so slightly.

To be fair, as the saying went: one could change his doing but not his habits, although Darryl had a job

now, made some rich friends who lent him five million and gave him the valuable necklace. But as the saying rightly said, 'if you're not capable, it doesn't matter who you know.' Therefore in Samantha's mind, she still wanted Lily to leave Darryl at this moment.

However, at this very moment, Lily had not left Darryl. And watching Trend being so disrespectful, no mother could sit back and do nothing, "Hey you, get off your hands!" 1

"Do you know where you're at? Lyndon Residence, not your backyard."

"Get off Lily now, enough!"

At this moment, Lily was struggling in anger and embarrassment, she yelled, "What're you doing, let go of me!"

Granny's face turned green, trembling in anger. The crowd criticized Trent in disdain, but Trent did not care at all. He smirked and looked into Granny's eyes, "Granny, your family isn't showing me any sincerity. I made it clear just now, if you can't agree on my condition, I'll leave now, and the deal is gone." 1

As Trent said this, the rest of the family turned their eyes on Granny, vexed. All they needed was a word from Granny, and this douche would be kicked

out of the mansion instantly.

However...

Granny did not speak a word, she looked at Trent with mixed feelings and let out a sigh.

It was not because Granny did not care about Lily, it was just that in comparison to the profits they were losing, Lily's reputation was nothing. Without the eight billion, the family enterprise would collapse.

Granny remained silent, and the rest of the family had no choice but to sit down holding on to the grudge; Samantha was unwilling to, but she had no say but to glare at Trent angrily; Lily was utterly disappointed.

With that, Trent smiled proudly and became bolder. He pulled Lily in violently.

She gasped as she went right into his arms. Before she could struggle, he secured her tightly in his arms. "My gorgeous LIly, don't be scared, I'll take good care of you." Trent grinned, pouting his lips as he was about to kiss her.

Lily knew she had no way to get out of him. She gave up struggling and closed up her eyes in despair.

What was despair? This was despair; being assaulted by Trent Young in front of her mother, relatives and siblings. And nobody was willing to

stand up to help her.

This was despair, utter despair! Why did they have to sacrifice her for the sake of the family? She was just a woman, why did they do this to her?

Her eyes turned red as tears rolled down her cheeks. She felt his breathing getting closer, exhaling onto her face.

'Darryl, where are you? I'm being bullied, do you know that?' She did not know why but at this very moment, the one person that she wished to see was her useless husband!

Her tears continued rolling, she could feel his lips about to touch hers. At this moment, she shut her eyes tight. The rest of the family sighed hopelessly.

The moment when Trent was just about to touch her lips, a strong and powerful grip was placed on Trent's shoulder.

"Damn it! Who the f*ck are you!" Trent swore as he turned around, irritated that his business was interrupted.

A man dressed in low-quality clothes, in his twenties, looked at him coldly.

"Darryl?"

At this moment, all the eyes turned to him.

"It...it really is you..." Lily said softly, her lips always bleeding from her biting.

Chapter 84

"Kid, who're you?" Trent scoffed coldly, ignoring the chill coming from Darryl.

Darryl deadpanned, "Darryl Darby."

"Oh... hahaha! So you're the trash everyone was talking about. What now? Can't stand me making out with your wife? I'm telling you, your wife is now mine!" Trent said with a disturbing and provocative face.

"You're looking for trouble."

Darryl pronounced word by word. His gaze sent chills to everyone in the hall.

Was this the same trash? Why did he have such a powerful aura out of a sudden?

"Ah? Me? Looking for trouble? Kid, do you know who you're talking to? I was still looking for you earlier, now that you delivered yourself to me!" Trent pounced on him, like a violent tiger.

Watching this, the family surrounding them looked troubled with mixed feelings. However much they despised Darryl, at this moment, most of them were hoping that Darryl could win the fight.

Of course, everyone also knew that this was just an extravagant hope. Trent won the martial championship three years in a row, having established countless martial clubs!

"Darryl, you can't win him! Go, run away!" Lilly yelled at Darryl, scared for his life. She was already pleased that Darryl appeared today.

However, Darryl stood there, unmoved, as if he did not hear her. Even when he saw Trent pouncing at him, he did not flinch but stood still like a stone.

Lily panicked, she ran out of the living hall and called the police. Quickly, the call connected, a police voice came through, "May I help you?"

In an anxious and panicked voice, she trembled, " Send someone to the Lyndon Residence now. Now! Someone's fighting!"

Bamm!

As Lily spoke, a loud vibration was heard coming from the living hall. Darryl was fighting Trent!

On the phone, the police doubted, "Fighting? Who is fighting who?"

The Lyndon family was a prestigious family in town, who would fight on their property? 1

"It's Trent Young hitting my...my husband!" Lily

said instantaneously, but when she said 'husband', her heart fluttered and she flushed.

This was the first time she admitted that Darryl was her husband.

When she finished the call, she froze when she saw what happened in the hall. Not only her, but everyone stared in disbelief.

Nobody doubted the skills of Trent, he was the strongest in town. But little did they expect Darryl to be able to match him. At this moment, the fight was intense, they were throwing and returning punches at a speed beyond the grasp of human eyes.

Lily started at this blankly, bewildered.

How could he be so skilled? With those skills, it was unlikely to be an accident when Darryl beat William back at Granny's party.

Arghh!

At this instant, Trent moaned loudly and fell hard onto the floor.

Huh?

Daryl, Darryl won?

The hall was drop-pin silent.

"I lost...stop, stop hitting me..." Trent pleaded with

his eyes wide, begging for life.

"What were you thinking when you touched my wife earlier? Why shall I stop just because you said so?" Darryl scoffed coldly, walking closer to him step by step.

At this moment, Darryl's face was emotionlessly chilly. Both him and Trent were Level Two Master. But after taking the pill given by Samson, his strength was bigger than people of the same level.

Darryl squinted his eyes, and stepped his foot on Trent's body.

Slap! Slap! Slap!

Loud and crisp, he threw slaps onto Trent's face.

Everyone in the room looked at Darryl in shock, as if looking at a devil. Nobody said a word.

This...him... Was he still the useless son-in-law?

Lily bit her lips as she experienced an inexplicable throbbing in her heart. Three years, and it was the first time she saw Darryl being so manly.

Chapter 85

SLAP! SLAP! SLAP!

Darryl's slaps made everyone's heart skip a beat. The entire Lyndon mansion was dead silent.

At last, two police cars arrived. Megan Castello—in her uniform—led a few policemen towards the mansion. Upon entering the main hall, she grimaced at the scene in front of her.

"Freeze!" A police officer walked towards the incident.

Darryl stopped, slowly stood up, and flexed his wrist. Recognizing Darryl, Megan walked towards him.

"Who called the cops?" asked one of the officers. He flipped through his report book while scanning the surroundings.

Lily started to come to her senses and quickly offered, "Me...it was me."

"You said someone was beating up your husband? Is that man lying on the floor your husband?" the police officer pointed to the barely recognizable Trent Young on the floor, taking notes and

interrogating at the same time.

"No, no, he...he's not my husband." Lily shook her head, shifted her gaze towards Darryl, and whispered, "He is." At that, she hung her head in embarrassment, face flushed. She was unspeakably charming.

Upon hearing Lily admit that he is her husband in front of everyone, Darryl felt a sense of indescribable joy.

One of the officers swallowed hard, secretly sizing Darryl up, 'This man actually beat Trent to the point of not being able to defend himself?!"

At that same moment, Trent—on the floor—howled in pain, "Officer, you have to help me! This man is a lunatic!" To be beaten up in public by a live-in son-in-law, Trent could no longer hold back his grievances once the police arrived.

"Enough! Everyone, back to the station to take notes!" interjected Megan, while glaring at Trent. He immediately shut up and stared at Darryl with utter resent.

"You, stay back, take everyone's statement", pointed Megan to an officer. She turned to Darryl and added, "Please follow us to the station."

Darryl nodded. Lily looked worried. She said softly,

"I'll follow you."

Darryl chuckled and shook his head, "Don't worry, I 'll be fine. I believe that Officer Castello will be just and impartial."

Upon hearing this, Lily relaxed a little.

Darryl entered one of the two police vehicles. Only two of them in the car, Megan started driving but not towards the police station.

"Aren't we going to record my statement?" wondered Darryl.

Megan glanced at him and said slowly, "We know how arrogant and domineering Trent Young is. I can say without a doubt it's definitely his fault. I'll inform my subordinates to check the surveillance footage, things will be cleared up then."

"Officer Castello, such an astute observation." Darryl smiled.

Megan rolled her eyes, "Let's cut the crap. I saw with my own eyes just now. You've now become a Cultivator right?"

Darryl nodded, "Level Two Master!"

That piqued Megan's interest. He managed to not only become a Cultivator but a Level Two Master in a few short days, it must be one exceptional

adventure.

"To be honest, Darryl, do you still have any of the Godly pills that you gave me previously?" asked Megan.

"Officer Castello, I've already given you one," said Darryl with a sly smile, "and if I recalled correctly, weren't you the one that warned me to simply not let anyone have it?" he added.

Megan blushed. "I...I did not realize how effective the pill would be. I have a friend who has been stuck on Level Five Master for a long time. If you still have any, could you spare me one?"

Darryl stretched and replied lazily, "What does your friend's problem got to do with me?" Though the extraction process of the Godly pill is simple, it shouldn't be given out that easily. The pill was sold to Brandon at a whopping two billion, plus an antique thumb ring. 2

Megan bit her lip in displease. As the Criminal Investigation Team Leader, plus a rose among the thorns—she was not used to men rejecting her.

Chapter 86

However, Darryl is an outlier.

Indeed, Darryl is an exception. He actually possesses such a thing as theGodly pill and managed to become Level Two Master in such a short time.

At that thought, Megan softened her tone, "So what would it take to get that Godly pill?"

Even in her uniform, Megan looks stunning. Darryl chuckled, "Alright, how about you say something nice about me. Compliment me, but it has to be sincere. If it pleases me, I'll give you the Godly pill."

Megan shuddered. This is extremely inappropriate! It is not in her character to bow down to please others.

She slowed down her car, biting her lip in deep thought. After a while, she gave in, "Darryl, you... you're the most charming man I've ever met, please, could you give me another Godly pill?"

Darryl laughed. He had to admit: to have a strong, beautiful woman like Megan kowtow to him—any man would not be able to resist her requests, even him.

"Alright, alright, I'll give you one," Darryl agreed pleasingly. He handed a pill to Megan.

"Thank you!" Megan accepted the pill.

Unable to hide her joy, she quickly picked up her phone and dialed a number, "Hey, I've got the pill that you wanted. Do you want to come to get it now?" The callee muttered something inaudible, Megan nodded, then hung up the call.

"Darryl, I have a friend who's currently at Oriental Pearl. Shall we meet him? Let him thank you in person." Megan suggested.

"Sure," Darryl nodded.

At the Oriental Pearl, Megan led Darryl to the private luxury dining room. Inside, there were a few couples, whom the men Darryl recognizes. They were all Donghai City's trust fund babies, who have participated in Lyndon Enterprise's annual gala. Though coming from a wealthy family, they idle their time away being a total dud.

Upon seeing Megan, one of the guys stood up and grinned, "Guys, guys! Let me introduce my girlfriend, Megan. She's brought me a Godly pill, now I can rise to the level of Master General!"

'What?!' Darryl was stunned. 'Bloody hell! Megan wanted the pill for this son of a gun? He's her

boyfriend?!'

'D*mn! Kent Hough, heir apparent to Everlasting Group. Their family is rich, but he is one stubborn b *stard. Megan is an absolute goddess, why is she with him?'

Kent tried to hold Megan's hand, but she brushed him off gently, "Kent, there are so many people around! Let's not do this here."

Kent snickered and turned to the crowd, "Brothers, look at my girlfriend! She usually only lets me hold her hand, I can't even kiss her. She said only to give herself to me when we get married! Don't tease me y'all, haha!"

"Yo bro, sis-in-law is a gem!" said one. The others started to chime in, "Sis-in-law is gorgeous and demure. Kent, you really hit the jackpot!"

The atmosphere in the box was rowdy as it can be. Suddenly somebody shouted, "F*ck me! Isn't that Lyndon Residence's live-in son-in-law?"

Like a ripple effect, everyone glanced towards Darryl.

"Why is this trash here?"

"Yeah? How dare he enter a place like this!"

Those bunch of rich brats spoke up after one

another. Kent frowned, "It really is him! Dude, you've come to the wrong place. Please f*ck off, the Oriental Pearl is not a place for degenerates like you."

It's true, this guy is living with his in-laws—the Lyndons. Close to bankruptcy, they sold a big half of their estate away. Indeed Darryl could not afford the Oriental Pearl.

Megan could not take it any longer, she interrupted, "Kent, don't do this. Darryl is with me, he's my friend."

What? This dude is Megan's friend? The people in the box were stunned. They must have misheard.

They have heard previously that Megan is Donghai City's Criminal Investigation Team Leader. How could this worthless trash be her friend? One's a goddess; the other a total loser.

Chapter 87

"Come, Darryl, Sit here." Megan smiled. She pulled a chair next to her while ignoring the judgemental glares from the others.

Darryl was about to leave, but he was touched by Megan's sincerity. He sat down calmly.

"Meg love, why are you friends with him?" Kent came to his senses—he asked confusedly.

Megan sighed gently, "Kent, can you not judge a book by it's cover? In my eyes, everyone is the same. So what if Darryl Darby is living with his in-laws? Does that mean I can't be friends with him?" explained Megan patiently.

Kent was struck dumb. Megan shook her head and took the Godly pill from her bag. "Kent, weren't you stuck at Level Five Master for some time now? This pill can help you. Darryl gave it to me."

"Whoa!" They were astounded by Megan's remarks.

A few of these bunch of rich brats are Cultivators as well, though only beginners as they just started practicing cultivation. After all, their family is willing to spend the money to let them become Cultivators. They all know as Cultivators how

arduous and challenging it is to break through to the next realm.

Hearing how the Godly pill can help, this piqued everyone's interest. However, according to Megan, the pill was from Darryl. Suddenly, everyone was more interested in Darryl than the pill. A live-in son-in-law could actually manage to get his hands on such a rare Godly pill? If the pill were real, there definitely would be loads of people willing to spend a huge fortune on it.

No one dared to mock Megan, so they scorned Darryl.

Kent was also shocked. He has heard the wonders of the Godly pill. However, upon hearing that it's from Darryl, he laughed mockingly. He took the pill from Megan, scrutinized it, and scoffed, "This lousy thing can help me? You've got to be kidding me!"

Kent's tone turned serious. He looked at Megan and said, "Meg love, your character has always been straightforward and unambiguous, but also gullible. My guess is that you've managed to rise to Master General, not because of this pill, but because you have a solid, deep, basic cultivation technique, hence you could breakthrough! There's no such thing as a Godly pill, if not everyone would've easily become a Master General" Kent then casually threw the pill on the table.

"I'm serious! It was due to this pill that I managed to become Master General!" Megan replied anxiously.

Kent sneered, "This dude is definitely lying to you. You've been stuck on Level Five Master for many years and to finally have a breakthrough—it's all due to your hard work! It has nothing to do with this pill, that was only a happy accident."

Kent gave Darryl an ice-cold glare, and said, "Yo toyboy, I don't know what your intentions are with Megan, but you stay the hell away from her, you clear? If not I'll make your living in Donghai City hell."

"You heard that? Some people are not something you can afford to be with!"

"Know your place! Don't try to con people with this stuff, and stay away from our sis-in-law!"

'Bloody f*ck. Stupid Kent Hough, he doesn't even know how Megan begged me for it just now. If it weren't for Megan, I wouldn't even be here. People like Brandon would be willing to spend two billion, plus a jade thumb ring for this Godly pill. I'm giving it to you for free, not only are you not appreciative, you mock me still?' Darryl thought. 1

He stood up, laughed coldly and said, "Ok, if you

think it's fake, then return it to me."

"Take it yourself, you expect me to hand it to you personally? You'll dirty my hands!" Kent jeered, without even glancing at the Godly pill on the table. As if on cue, there was a roar of laughter.

Darryl was about to retrieve the pill when Megan snatched it, handed it to Kent, and said, "Kent Hough, if you believe me, you will swallow this pill right this instant. If not, I'm leaving with Darryl." Megan tilted her head towards Darryl, with an awkward, apologetic expression.

Everyone was baffled by Megan's reaction. What does this live-in son-in-law have on Megan that she trusts him so much?

Kent was rather awkward, not knowing how to respond. However, seeing how exasperated Megan was, he surrendered. He had no choice but to swallow the Godly pill. "For Megan's sake, I won't embarrass you further," Kent said with a weak smile.

Finding topics to talk about, Kent asked, "I heard that recently you're looking for a job. What do you do? Perhaps us bros could help you out." 1

"I'm working for someone," Darryl replied calmly.

Chapter 88

"Oh wow, working for someone. Haha!" Kent nodded exaggeratedly.

The waiter started serving. Due to Megan's outrage, Kent was less sharp-tongue. However, he still tried to find various topics to deliberately embarrass Darryl, with back-up from the other rich brats as they chime in cooperatively.

Megan could take it no longer, she excused herself to the washroom.

The minute she left, Kent sprung onto Darryl. " Dude, if I were you, I would get out of here as soon as possible. What good will come of you staying here? Do you even know what type of place this is? Oriental Pearl is the finest hotel in Donghai City. Who are you to eat here?"

The rest slammed the table in agreement. Their girlfriends smiled mockingly at Darryl.

The others interjected, "Yeah if it weren't for our sis -in-law, do you think we'd really be your friends?"

"F*ck off, us letting you overstay your welcome in the dining room is already a huge courtesy to you."

"You unworthy live-in son-in-law, who do you

think you are? You think you can afford this place?"

Darryl remained calm, and laughed. "Kent Hough, isn't it? Your reputation precedes you—you're exceptionally cheap."

Kent slammed the table. "Motherf*cker, I dare you to say it one more time!"

Darryl shrugged. "Just because your family has extra few pennies, thinking that eating at the Oriental Pearl will make you all high-and-mighty. If this isn't cheap, what are you?" 1

Kent was speechless. The rest were equally startled as they started to look at Darryl with interest.

This guy must be mentally unsound. How dare he talk to Kent that way! He must have been very repressed being the Lyndons' live-in son-in-law that he needed to find someone to vent at. Although, he had unleashed on the wrong person. Taking it out on Kent? Was he trying to get himself killed?

Kent gritted his teeth. "Wow, this is something. A toyboy is looking down on us."

Having said that, Kent gazed at Darryl provocatively. "Dude, don't tell me, you're the owner of the Oriental Pearl? Oh no, I'm scared." A roar of laughter rang through.

Darryl smiled lightly, picked up his phone, and dialed Wayne Woodall.

"Mr. Darby!" Wayne was surprised by the phone call.

Darryl cut to the chase, "I'm at the Oriental Pearl, please come to Dining Room 666." At that, Darryl hung up. He sat down, poured himself a cup of tea, and drank it slowly.

Kent continued with his taunts, "Dude, who did you call? Your wife? Or someone from the Lyndon family? Haha!"

"A loser like him, if any problem arises, of course he 'd call his wife, if not who? Hahaha!" One after another, they jabbed at Darryl.

Darryl silently enjoyed his tea, ignoring their taunts.

Kent was extremely dissatisfied with Darryl's reaction to their jeers. He was about to continue when the door opened. A man in a black, Chinese tunic Zhongshan suit walked in.

When Wayne Woodall appeared, the room instantly fell silent. A few rich brats straightened their backs. Wayne was a famous person in Donghai City.

Why was he here? Everyone looked toward Kent, as they deemed him the most worthy to discuss

business matters with Wayne.

Kent snickered in amusement. Two days ago, his dad mentioned that they wanted to talk to Wayne about a business case. The business must have to come through!

The ladies—although they all have boyfriends—glanced at Wayne with admiration.

Chapter 89

Kent Hough stood up straight, thinking he looked handsome, he said, "President Woodall, I'm glad to meet y-"

Kent froze. Wayne did not even look at him but walked straight toward Darryl.

"Mr. Darby, you called, what can I help you with?"

What? Mr. Darby? Wayne Woodall actually acknowledged this live-in son-in-law with an honorific?

Everyone's jaw dropped, they were all bewildered. How is it possible that a loser like Darryl would be of acquaintance with a person like Wayne Woodall?

Just when everyone is still recoiling from shock, Darryl smiled gently, nodded towards Wayne. " Nothing special, just wanted to see you," said Darryl.

"Mr. Darby, you're too kind!" Wayne laughed politely. He scanned the room and suddenly seemed to understand the situation. He added, "Mr. Darby, you should've told me beforehand that you'll be coming. I would've prepared for you."

At that, Wayne waved towards the waiter, "Tell

your manager to waive all expenses in this box."

What? All free? Kent and the rest were shocked to their core. Looking at Darryl complicated their feelings even more. How does this dude have such huge respect from Wayne Woodall?

Just when the waiter was about to head out, Darryl stood up and waved his hand, "Don't bother! Today's expenses should be calculated down to every cent. I'm not the one treating plus I barely ate anything. Furthermore, the people paying are not short of cash."

Wayne responded by signaling the waiter to leave.

"Ok, that's all. I should leave too. You go get busy," Darryl dismissed Wayne with a wave. Wayne's appearance had a great effect on the rest.

Wayne seemed to have grasped the situation and quickly added, "In the future, if Mr. Darby has any request, feel free to let me know. I will help in any way I can."

At that, Wayne glanced at his surroundings. Seeing that no one dared to look him in the eye, he turned around and left.

Wayne's presence was too strong. The moment he left the room, the atmosphere was much more relaxed. Darryl laughed mildly and left.

Kent and the rest looked at each other, they could not calm down for a very long time. About half an hour later, they each came to their senses. Though still slightly in awe, one of them said, "F*ck, this dude is actually well acquainted with Wayne Woodall!"

"Well acquainted? It's definitely more than that! Did you see how Wayne Woodall treated Darryl? They have a special relationship."

"It's strange, isn't this guy a live-in son-in-law?" They started to discuss among themselves. The ladies were remorseful. Who would have thought that this live-in son-in-law has such strong connections! If they knew earlier they would not have taunted him.

The white-faced Kent started to calm down. Upon hearing their discussion he sneered with disdain, " What special relationship? You guys know nothing. I 'll have you know that Wayne Woodall has business with the Lyndons. The last I heard, when it was Grandma Lyndon's birthday, Wayne personally sent a gift himself. So, Wayne being polite to that dude is all because of his connections with Grandma Lyndon! If he weren't Lyndons' son-in-law, Wayne would never bat an eye at him!" snorted Kent.

At that, the rest thought it all made sense. Kent's

expression, however, darkened. 'You're good Darryl Darby. I was almost unnerved by you. Using your connections with the Lyndons to boost your status, how shameless!' thought Kent.

...

Darryl was in the lobby when he bumped into Megan who just exited the washroom. She changed her set of clothes. Wearing dark blue skinny jeans, that curvaceous, sexy figure is enough to conquer any men.

"Darryl, what happened? Are you leaving?" asked Megan as she walked towards him.

Chapter 90

Darryl laughed lightly. "It's fine, I had nothing to do there anyway, plus I wasn't hungry."

Megan was apologetic. "I'm so sorry. Kent and the others, they are just like that. Please don't mind them."

Darryl shrugged, "It's fine, I've met many of his types." He glanced at Megan, and hesitated. "But, do you think you and Kent Hough are a match?"

It was none of his business, Darryl should not have brought it up, but he does not know what overcame him. Megan did not reply, but she seemed stiff and awkward.

The truth is, Megan does not dislike Kent, but she has no feelings for him either. It is mainly due to the fact that they both have similar family social standings, they have known each other for a long time, and on top of that, both of their families heavily approve of them being together, hence why she reluctantly agreed to be with Kent. However, she has a clear stance—no sex before marriage, hold hands at most.

Megan pivoted to another topic, and said, "Hey let'

s go. I'll send you back. After all, I'm the one who brought you here, I can't expect you to grab a cab back all by yourself." Darryl nodded.

As they exited the hotel, Kent chased up to them and called out, "Meg! Why are you still with him?" Kent was annoyed. He glanced at Darryl disrespectfully.

Megan replied, "Kent, I've told you many times. Darryl is my friend. How could you treat him that way in the dining room just now?"

Seeing how Megan kept defending Darryl, Kent was furious. "Did I say anything wrong? Isn't he the Lyndons' live-in son-in-law? He has been living with the Lyndons for three years now—a worthless good-for-nothing. The entire Donghai City knows about this! I'm just telling it like it is!"

Megan ignored him and continued walking. Conscious of how Megan disregarded him, Kent was anxious. He asked exasperatedly, "Where are you going?"

Megan replied angrily, "To send Darryl back! I'm the one who brought him here, I'm not going to leave him here all by himself!"

At first, Kent was fuming, but then he noticed Megan's figure—all of a sudden his anger dissipated. How could he get angry at such a

gorgeous woman, who also happens to be his girlfriend?

"How about, you wait for me in the dining room? I' ll fetch Darryl back. There's a party tonight, let's go together then," offered Kent, trying to soothe the situation.

"Not interested." Megan was resolute.

Darryl sighed. He was contemplating whether to just hail a taxi when out of a sudden a black luxury minivan emerged from the hotel's parking lot. The minivan stopped right in front of the trio, a few burly men got down from the vehicle. Darryl tensed.

The leader—with deep eyes—doesn't appear too old, yet seemed mature for his age. "Hello, are you Ms. Megan Castello?" he asked politely and took a step forward.

Darryl let his guard down—after all, they recognize Megan. He does not think that they are looking for trouble. Furthermore, Megan is the Criminal Investigation Team Leader of Donghai City, who dares to touch her?

Boy was he wrong.

Megan nodded. At that precise moment, those men cast a handful of light-colored powder. It enveloped the three of them like fog. They were completely

caught off-guard. Inhaling the powder made them dizzy, and their body went limp.

'What the f*ck is happening? Is this a kidnap?' Darryl was stunned. He could barely react when all three of them were shoved into the minivan.

The minivan sped off, it was total darkness in the vehicle. They have no idea where they are being brought to. Kent was flustered. "Who the hell are you guys? What do you want with us! Don't you know who am-"

SLAP!

One of the men slapped Kent so hard, two teeth flew out from his mouth.

"Shut up or I'll kill you," threatened one of the men. Kent shuddered, he dare not make any more noise.

Chapter 91

Megan tried not to panic. She glared at the young man in the front seat and asked, "Who are you? Where are you bringing us to?"

This young man—clearly the leader—looked evil. He turned around, and replied with a devilish smile, "Officer Castello, you arrested so many of my men, of course, I had to do something."

"You...you're from the Grandmaster Heaven Cult?" Megan exclaimed. It was as if she suddenly understood something.

"Gr...Grandmaster Heaven?" Kent was flabbergasted. He started to panic.

Darryl on the other hand frowned, 'Grandmaster Heaven Cult? What powers do they have and why have I not heard of them before?' he thought.

"As expected of Donghai City's Criminal Investigation Team Leader, you got it right away. Not bad, not bad at all," the leader smiled. "I won't beat around the bush. My name is Skyler Burr, I am the Head of the Donghai City Branch. Officer Castello, in just a month you've arrested tens of my men. It's payback time."

Megan bit her lip. Everyone knows that there are the Six Orthodox Sects and Clans: Shaolin, Wudang, Emei, Tianshan, Xiaoyao, and Kunlun.

However, there are two huge opposing cults as well, and Grandmaster Heaven is one of them! They have well over a few hundred thousand followers, and only do evil deeds.

The Grandmaster Heaven Cult is relatively new compared to the Six, with only a history of a few hundred years. In spite of that, they managed to achieve the level of the Six in a short amount of time.

A hundred years ago, the Six joined forces to suppress the evil deeds of Grandmaster Heaven. However, in recent years due to the changes of times, they revived.

This time, they grew bigger and faster than ever. In a mere two years, they have become one of the most powerful cults in the Cultivator realm.

The cult has a strict sense of hierarchy—at the highest order is naturally the Cult Master and Cult Mistress. Below them are the two Yin and Yang Messengers, and the Four Guardian Kings.

The Four Guardian Kings are the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Peafowl, and the Black

Tortoise Guardian King respectively. This is followed by the Head of Branch, then the cult members.

The Grandmaster Heaven Cult has established many branches in many cities, with members all over. They are terrifying and powerful. Furthermore, it is rumored that one of the Six Orthodox Sects and Clans—the Tianshan Sect—have teamed up together with them.

The cult recently set up a Branch in Donghai City, hence why Megan started arresting them. She did not predict that they would take their revenge so openly.

The vehicle came to a halt. Before they got down, Skyler blindfolded the three of them. What came next was never-ending walking. Even though he could not see, Darryl has been paying close attention to the movement of his surroundings. He could hear the sound of waves lapping. He concluded that they must have been brought to Donghai City's seaside. As for the exact position, he has not a single clue.

About half an hour later, their blindfold was lifted. At the sight of their surroundings, they could not help but panic.

It was a ginormous underground secret room. In

the main hall, everything is made of stone, there is no electricity—the room is only lit with fire torches. Like a labyrinth, there are tunnels in every direction. In each tunnel, there are guards spread out every few meters.

This is a highly guarded underground manor.

Darryl could not help but take a deep breath. Skyler signaled a few of his men to tie them up to a stone bench.

He took a seat, then asked slowly, "So, Officer Castello, let's discuss how we are going to settle this." He was sizing Megan up as he said this. Though she was tied up, Megan was still equally attractive in her skinny jeans.

Megan bit her lip indecisively, she replied, "Master Burr, your men were caught by me. This has nothing to do with them. I urge you to let them go."

"Yes! Yes! This has nothing whatsoever to do with me!" Kent nodded furiously.

Chapter 92

At Kent's response, Megan has no words. She shook her head silently.

Skyler laughed mischievously, "Officer Castello, you 've got to be kidding me! I took such a huge effort to kidnap you three, why should I let them go at your command?"

He looked at Kent and said, "I know you, you're one of Donghai City's rich brat, Kent Hough isn't it?"

Kent nodded his head frantically, trying to appease Skyler, he offered, "Yes, I am! If you let me go, I'll give you money! Just name your price! I'll give it all to you!"

Skyler laughed, "Afraid of death, are you? I heard you and Officer Castello got engaged. Am I right? As a man, don't you want to save your fiancée?"

Kent opened his mouth, but no words came out. He swallowed hard. Must be still in shock.

Skyler ignored him and turned to Darryl, "To be able to have a meal with Young Master Kent, you must be rich too." Darryl could not understand what Skyler meant by that, he frowned.

Skyler continued with a twisted smile, "Alright, you

two have done nothing to the Grandmaster Heaven Cult. I'm not an unreasonable person. I will let one of you go."

Kent's heart skipped a beat. Darryl calmly asked, " What do you mean by that?"

Skyler chuckled, "It's easy. Let's follow according to your business methods. You two will bid for your own life. I will let the highest bidder go. As for the lower bidder...I'll first chop off one finger, then I'll throw you into a lockup room."

Darryl squinted his eyes in suspicion, and thought, ' D*mn, he knows how to play the game'.

At the same time, Kent interjected, "I'll call! I offer thirty million!" Kent was excited, he glanced snobbishly at Darryl. 'This dude is only a live-in son -in-law. I doubt he even has three million, let alone thirty. I'm going to win! Once I'm out I will get my men to save Megan. She'll be so touched she might agree to spend a night with me! Haha!' thought Kent gleefully.

Seeing how gung ho Kent is, Darryl laughed silently. 'This dude is willing to do anything to live. Starting his bid at thirty million? How much should I bid, fifty?' Just when Darryl is in deep thought, he glanced at Skyler. He noticed how Skyler had a shifty expression on his face, suddenly Darryl

sobered up.

'Hold up! This dude brought us here to the cult's secret lair. How could they possibly let anyone know about this place? No matter how much I offer, they are not going to let us go. So what's the point of bidding? To satisfy Skyler?' thought Darryl. He looked at Skyler firmly and said, "I don't have thirty million."

At that, Kent was extremely delighted he could almost pee himself. He cheered, "I won! I won! Haha!"

Skyler signaled his men. They grabbed Darryl and pressed him on the table. They were about to chop his finger off when Megan shrieked, "You can't do this! This has nothing to do with him. You want your revenge, come at me!"

Skyler ignored her. Kent was annoyed, he frowned at Megan and whispered, "Why do you care so much about this loser? He has no money to bid because he's useless. Don't worry, once I'm out I will find a way to rescue you."

Megan did not reply. She was looking at Darryl with a frantic expression.

At this moment, Darryl started to panic.

Chapter 93

Amid the panic, Darryl wanted to cultivate his Inner Force. However, the effect of the powder he inhaled before was too strong, his strength had not recovered.

Darryl was in despair. His palm was being forced open, one of the men lifted a knife. The man was about to swing the knife down when Skyler howled, "F*ck, Stop!"

The man stopped in mid-air. He looked confused but took a step back nevertheless.

Skyler immediately walked toward Darryl and took a good look at the ring on Darryl's left thumb. " Where did you get this thumb ring from?" he exclaimed.

Skyler could not suppress the agitation in his heart. He was familiar with this black and white jade ring, it is the symbol of one of the Six Orthodox Sects and Clans—The Tianshan.

Though Tianshan might belong to one of the Six and was considered a respectable clan, they—like the Grandmaster Heaven Cult—are more morally ambiguous. Furthermore, those in the higher order

of the cult know that Tianshan and Grandmaster Heaven have an alliance with each other.

A few years earlier, the masters of both sects met up privately. They hit it off right away. It was due to Tianshan's help, that the Six can't fend off Grandmaster Heaven like they used to. Such is their relationship that one can't live without the other.

The Tianshan also had a strict sense of hierarchy. Below the Sect Master, there were Four Kings: The East, West, South, and North King.

The ring on Darryl was the East King's symbol, also the embodiment of his identity!

The East King, only one rank below the Sect Master!

Skyler—as the Head of Branch—was not considered high up in the order of hierarchy, since there are close to a thousand branches! Although Skylar had never met East King before, he is confident that that is the symbol of East King.

Darryl noticed the change in Skyler's tone. Although he still could not grasp the situation, he could roughly take a guess.

"The ring belongs to me," said Darryl calmly, while observing Skyler's reaction.

Skyler quivered. He was about to bow when Darryl stopped him with a look.

'No matter who Skyler thinks I am, it clearly has to do with the ring. After all, I'm a fake—if I make it too widely known, I might blow my cover.' thought Darryl.

"Don't bow, I want to keep a low profile," said Darryl silently.

Skyler nodded fervently. 'This man is obviously Tianshan's East King. He does not want to blow his cover, must be going through a secret investigation or something. I must not stand in his way,' thought Skyler.

Skyler immediately instructed two of his men to escort Darryl to the main hall.

At the sight of Darryl leaving, Kent interrupted, " Hey! What's happening? I've bid thirty million, let me go!"

Skyler gave Kent a death stare. The force was so strong Kent zipped up instantly.

...

Skyler followed through as Darryl entered the main hall.

"Lord East King, your servant Skyler Burr at your service," bowed Skyler. He continued awkwardly, "I' m extremely sorry for the misunderstanding. I

almost made a huge mistake. I hope my lord won't take offense. Please forgive me."

'Lord East King? Is this a rank in Grandmaster Heaven, and it's a higher level than Skyler Burr? Wait a second. This ring belongs to Brandon. Isn't he from the Tianshan sect? Why is Skyler being polite to me?' Darryl ruminated. He still has no clue as to the relationship between Grandmaster Heaven Cult and the Tianshan sect.

He simply waved his hand and replied, "Forget about it. You did not know what was going on."

Chapter 94

Darryl secretly scanned his surroundings. He realized that the decor here is much more intricate than the rest. This must be their resting area.

As if right on cue, Darryl's stomach growled. He did not eat much at the Oriental Pearl, only had a few cups of tea. He felt a little embarrassed.

Skyler was an observant man. He chuckled, "My lord, please wait a while. I'll get my men to prepare some food and wine. We'll drink till we drop! Haha! By the way, Lord East King, after drinking we can each take turns on that Megan Castello. She's really attractive! Haha!"

"Right, right," dismissed Darryl.

As Skyler left, Darryl realized that it is a good time to walk around, to attempt to locate the exit. The guards did not stop Darryl as left the room but bowed to him. Darryl got bolder, but to not create any suspicion, he did not return to the main hall—he followed the tunnels, exploring while contemplating his next step. How is he going to rescue Megan once he finds the exit?

Darryl realized he stumbled into a restricted area.

The restricted area is a huge chamber, with no men guarding the entrance. However, there is a sign saying, "Not to enter without permission". Without any thought, Darryl stepped inside.

In the middle of the chamber lies a wooden shelf. On it are daily amenities and a few containers. Some have medicine in it. Though most of the medicine is for the treatment of external wounds, Darryl found one that says "Sedative Powder" on the label.

'Sedatives? Haha! I'll put this in their wine, and when they are unconscious I could save Megan!' thought Darryl optimistically.

Just when he was about to leave, he noticed that one of the tiles on the floor is different from the rest. He knocked on it—clearly hollowed out. He lifted the tile, and to his surprise, he saw a brown paper wrapping around something. He uncovered the item and was shocked to find a secret manual. On the cover of the manual wrote: Ascension of the Nine Dragons. 'F*ck, what book is this? The title sounds impressive' thought Darryl.

Time was running out, he stashed the manual under his shirt and quickly returned to the main hall. At the same time, Skyler appeared with a box of food and a jar of wine. The red seal on the wine jar has faded—clearly of good quality as it has been kept for many years.

"My lord, I don't have much to offer you but these dishes. I hope you don't mind." Skyler apologized while setting the table.

Darryl nodded then proceeded to eat.

Skyler—knowing his place—left Darryl to feast. When Darryl was almost done, he opened the jar of wine. He poured himself a cup, then mixed the sedatives into the jar.

He gestured to Skyler and instructed, "Let's share this jar of wine with our brothers. Tell them it's from me."

Skyler hesitated, "My lord, you know that drinking wine is not allowed in the hall."

Darryl frowned, "Let's make it an exception today! I 've made a rare appearance in your branch, would you dishonor me?"

"No, no my lord! You are mistaken, I wouldn't dare!" Skyler shook his head then took the jar of wine along with him.

The men that were in charge of guarding Megan and Kent left reluctantly. They spent the last half an hour taking hundreds of photos of Megan from various angles. To them, a woman like Megan is a blessing from heaven.

Megan was sickened by their actions. This is the

first time she was tied up, and had her photo taken without her consent.

Now that everyone has gone to have a drink, Megan asked Darryl quietly, “Darryl, what’s going on? Why do they treat you with such respect?”

Chapter 95

Darryl laughed at Megan, and whispered, "They've mistaken me for some sort of King, so I just went along with it."

Megan was impressed. This live-in son-in-law has proven his worth time and again.

"I'll say, no wonder they treat you so well—turns out they mistook you for someone else!" sneered Kent. "Well, what are you waiting for? They've gone for a drink, uncuff us now!" he demanded.

...This retard deserves a slap. Kent's condescending tone annoyed Darryl so he ignored him.

Megan was restless as well. She arrested so many of Skyler's men. He definitely will not let her go that easily. Who knows what he might do to her after drinking.

Midst the panic, Megan got curious, 'Why is Darryl so calm?'

THUD! THUD! THUD!

Guards started passing out everywhere. Skyler was unconscious as well, quietly leaning on the wall. The only conscious people left in the underground

manor were Darryl, Megan, and Kent.

"Ho-ho! Great job, live-in son-in-law!" praised Kent, albeit still sounding a little snooty.

Darryl found the key on Skyler, walked over to Megan, and uncuffed her. "Let's go, it's pretty confusing here. We need to find the exit before they wake up," said Darryl calmly.

"F*cker are you blind? I'm still tied up!" yelled Kent.

'Previously when my finger was about to be chopped off, you were gloating, but now you think of me?' thought Darryl.

Darryl turned to Kent and laughed casually, "Why should I untie you? Don't you have a lot of money? When they wake up, just offer them some—I'm sure they'll let you go."

Kent whimpered. He almost cried out in panic.

Megan pleaded, "Darryl, would you please uncuff him."

"I am under no obligation to save him." Darryl refused.

Megan bit her lip. "Darryl, I know Kent offended you. I apologize on his behalf. Please save him, if not he will not come out of this alive."

Darryl chuckled. 'Bloody f*ck, what's his death got to do with me? This f*cker ate my Godly pill, yet he is still pompous as ever. I don't care if he dies,' thought Darryl.

Kent glared, and said, "Meg love, why are you apologizing to him? This loser doesn't deserve it. Look at his despicable character. He only got lucky!"

"Dude, don't think about blackmailing me. I don't need you to save me!" Kent said to Darryl with disdain.

Darryl grinned, he said to Megan, "See, he doesn't need me to save him. Don't you worry." Then he left.

Megan chased after him and said, "Darryl, please don't stoop to his level. Don't do this."

Kent interrupted, "Meg, don't bother convincing him! After you've escaped, come rescue me, I trust you! When they wake up I'll offer them more money. I'm sure they won't kill me."

"Shut up! You think if they realized that we've escaped, you would still be able to live?" Megan trembled.

At that, Kent realized his mistake. This is the Donghai City's Branch of the Grandmaster Heaven Cult. If Skyler woke up and found out that Darryl

and Megan escaped, they would take it out on him. It would be completely useless then no matter how much money he offered.

Kent was horrified.

Chapter 96

Only Darryl can save him now.

"Darryl, please I beg of you, save him," Megan said in distress.

Darryl smiled gently, "How? How would you beg? It has to be sincere."

"What do you mean?" Megan asked lightly.

"How about, if you call me "my good brother"—then I'll let him go," offered Darryl playfully.

Megan's face flushed. She bit her lip in deep thought. This is the first time that anyone has ever requested this from her. She's usually high in seniority and rank that everyone refers to her as an elder sister.

Kent could take this humiliation no longer. He was about to interrupt, but then he realized that his life is currently in Darryl's hand—so he swallowed his pride.

"If you're not going to do that, I'm going to go," chipped in Darryl jovially. At the same time, he thought, 'D*mn this Megan is perfect in every way. It's such a waste that she's getting married to Kent.'

"Don't go! My...my good brother," Megan said softly. As her voice fell, she looked down with embarrassment.

"Ok, seeing how sincere you are, I'll agree to your request," said Darryl gleefully.

Kent—though irked by that—sighed with relief.

However, Darryl is not finished. He turned to Kent and said, "I'm doing this on behalf of your fiancée. If it weren't for Megan calling me good brother, I'd have you kowtow to me in repentance."

"F*ck you, Darryl, watch it!" Kent warned.

Darryl shook his head in disappointment, he said, " Still as pompous as ever. Alright, I'll leave you to it then. I reckon they are going to wake up anytime soon. I don't want to waste any time here with you."

Kent panicked. He immediately cried out, "Darryl, I' m so sorry! It was all my fault. You are all-forgiving! Please forgive me."

He seemed dejected, but thought, 'F*ck you, Darryl, I'll get my revenge!'

Darryl chuckled and uncuffed Kent. They then headed towards the exit. It was extremely confusing that they got lost a few times. Half an hour later, they came to the exit.

As they exit, they are faced with nothing but the sea. The Grandmaster Heaven Cult branch is located below a cliff next to the sea. Megan took note of the location, then drove off in the minivan towards the city.

...

When Darryl reached home, it was past midnight. Samantha and Lily are fast asleep, he went straight to the second-floor guest room as to not wake them up.

He closed the door and immediately retrieved the manual he took from the Grandmaster Heaven cult. On the first page, it wrote:

"The Ascension of the Nine Dragons is the supreme mastery of the Grandmaster Heaven Sect. Those who have mastered this have the powers to reach the sky.

"This secret book can only be practiced by the Cult Masters. Anyone who secretly practices this manual without authorization will be sentenced to death! This included the Yin and Yang Messengers, as well as the Four Guardian Kings!"

Skyler clearly must have stolen this manual, yet now it is in Darryl's hand!

Darryl followed the chants on the manual and

started practicing his cultivation.

By the time he realized, it's already morning. Though he has not slept at all, he still felt energized and excited! He mastered the skills of the Nine Dragons Ascension, the power of that is terrifying.

Darryl stretched, kept the manual, and went out. He bumped into Lily.

"You're back!" exclaimed Lily. She was wearing a short skirt today—extremely dazzling.

Chapter 97

Lily looked gloomy.

"What happened?" asked Darryl. He was happy to see Lily.

Lily sighed, "Grandma ordered for a family meeting."

Darryl frowned. 'Another family meeting? Granny Lyndon seems to like family meetings a whole lot. What on earth does she want?'

"I'll go with you," offered Darryl. It was only on the way when he found out the purpose of the meeting —Trent Young was arrested. He initially agreed to twenty percent of the Lyndon estate shares, but the deal did not go through. Many in the Lyndon family blamed Lily for this, as she was not willing to cooperate.

People are selfish. If they had to pick between monetary gains or family, many would pick the former without any hesitation.

Trent's actions were despicable. Everyone was mad at him yesterday, but at second thought, they—including Granny Lyndon—felt that Lily made a huge fuss over a minor issue.

Today's meeting is clearly intended for Lily.

"What should I do? They will definitely reprimand me," asked Lily worriedly.

"Don't worry, you have me." Darryl comforted.

Lily felt better. She thought back about how Darryl defended her yesterday by beating Trent up, that was truly touching.

Then she thought, that's all he can do for her. He had no standing in the family, no whatsoever authority to speak, how can he help? Forget it, she will play by ear.

Just when Lily is lost in her thoughts, she noticed Darryl took his phone and sent a message.

When they arrived at the Lyndons' residence, everyone was already there.

"Darryl, you dare show your face?" William pointed at Darryl and yelled.

Darryl replied coldly, "Why not?"

"If you didn't beat Trent up yesterday, things wouldn't have spiraled out of control," scoffed William. The rest nodded in agreement.

"Yeah, it was just a small issue—Trent likes Lily, it's only normal if he flirts with her."

"Exactly, furthermore you are not worthy of our Lily."

"Lily being with Trent is the best outcome for everyone. It also does not hurt that we can sell off part of our estate shares, killing two birds with one stone!"

The rest chimed in.

"If you know what's good for you, you'd leave Lily," sneered William.

People nowadays are so vile, how could they say such things.

Darryl was irked. He replied, "So according to you if someone were to openly seduce your wife, you'd cheer them on?"

"What did you say?" William threatened.

"You can't even do it yourself, yet you expect of others, all for your gain. How shameless!" sniggered Darryl.

William was aghast. He wanted to punch Darryl but held back because he knows he would not be able to defeat him. So he turned to Lily instead.

"Lily, President Young came in good faith, but because of you, the deal couldn't come through. What should we do now!" reprimanded William.

The rest chipped in angrily.

"Yes, you have to bear the responsibility!"

"This has to do with the Lyndons' future!"

"It was a huge honor that President Young liked you, who are you to rebuff?"

Lily bit her lip hard. She was to the point of tears as she felt aggrieved but could not defend herself.

Just then, Granny Lyndon finally spoke up, " Enough!"

She continued, "Lily dear, I know you are very unwilling, but I thought long and hard last night. I feel that Trent is very compatible with you. So I've decided that once he has been released fifteen days later, we'll discuss your hand in marriage."

Granny Lyndon looked at Darryl with detest, and said, "You two should sign your divorce papers as soon as possible."

"NO!" screamed Lily in tears, "I'd rather die than marry Trent!"

Granny Lyndon stood up in anger and reprehended Lily, "This is not for you to decide! This has to do with our future, so I do not care how you feel about this! It is decided, you will marry Trent!"

Chapter 98

Upon hearing Granny Lyndon's words, Lily shuddered in despair.

William and the rest were gloating with excitement. They do not care about Lily's happiness. What truly matters is that they get to set up a new company with Trent's money.

Darryl chuckled at the on-going conversation.

"What are you laughing at?" Granny Lyndon asked angrily.

Darryl mocked, "I'm laughing at this family! The great Lyndon family can't even manage their estate, yet they pushed the blame on a woman. What 's even more pathetic is that, for the alleged future of the Lyndons, you're willing to sacrifice even your granddaughter."

"Our family matters have nothing to do with you! Lily will only be happy with Trent, not with a loser like you!" rebuked Granny Lyndon.

Darryl took a deep breath, and continued, " Ultimately, you bunch are just upset that most of the Lyndon family shares are owned by other people. Just because you don't have the

competence, you sell the women in your family out in exchange for your dignity."

"You..."

Being called out by a loser in public, Granny Lyndon could take it no longer, she screamed, "Get him out! I want him out!"

No one dared to move forward. They still remember how Darryl beat Trent up the previous day. This live-in son-in-law, he even dare hit Trent, who would dare to offend him?

Lily tried to alleviate the situation, she tugged at Darryl's arm and plead, "Darryl, stop talking..."

The only solution Lily could come up with now is to beg for forgiveness from Granny Lyndon personally, after the meeting. If she's sincere enough, maybe Granny Lyndon might change her mind. It would only make matters worse if one were to collide head-on in public, like Darryl.

Darryl could understand Lily's thoughts. He brushed her hair, and said gently, "Don't worry. You don't have to beg them for forgiveness. On the contrary, they will have to come to beg you instead."

What? Us begging Lily for forgiveness? Is this a joke? Haha!

Granny said nothing but frowned.

Lily thought Darryl would take matters into his own hands by forcing them to apologize, she said, "I know you're looking out for me, but you shouldn't only rely on brute force. Many are stronger than you, you have to remember that."

At that moment, someone spoke up, "Granny, President James of Dragon Tech is here!"

Everyone stood up quickly to greet him. Paul James of Dragon Tech is the biggest shareholder of Lyndon's estate. Of course, everyone would get up to greet him.

Paul—in casual wear—was accompanied by two of his assistants.

"Grandma, we meet again," greeted Paul cheerfully.

"President James, what a surprise! What can we do for you?" Granny Lyndon asked politely. The fate of the estate is in this man's hand, she has no choice but to show him respect.

Paul chuckled, "You're too kind, grandma. Nothing special, just a small matter."

Small matter? Everyone's curiosity was piqued.

Paul turned to Lily, handed her a folder from his assistant, and said, "Ms. Lily, I mean, Sis-in-law, I

am officially transferring fifty-one percent of the family shares to you. The process is complete, you just have to have a look and confirm."

What? Sis-in-law? President James called her sis-in-law?

Why did he transfer fifty-one percent of the shares to her? That amount of shares costs one billion!

Suddenly the entire Lyndon family was dead silent.

Chapter 99

Paul James called her sis-in-law. Is Lily having an affair? Everyone was dumbfounded.

Paul then walked up to Darryl, and gave him a bow!

"Bro, if I had known sis-in-law was Lily, I wouldn't need to run an extra trip."

Darryl said nothing but nodded.

"If there's nothing else, I'll make a move," Paul said, then left.

Everything happened too fast, only when Paul left, the Lyndons came to their senses.

What on earth is going on? Fifty-one percent of the shares now belong to Lily?

Granny Lyndon stared at Lily in dismay. She wanted to remark, but was at a loss for words.

Lily on the other hand was trembling. It was like a dream. She could no longer hide her curiosity, she asked Darryl, "Darryl, you and Paul..."

"Just a friend," Darryl replied casually. He wanted to stop Lily from probing further, he added, "I've got to go, if not I'll be late for work." Then he

turned and left.

In the car, he was slightly worried. He sent a text to Lily, "Hold on tight to the shares. Even if Granny Lyndon opens her mouth, don't give it to her. From now on, you make the call in the Lyndon estate."

Lily, who was still stunned when she received the message, replied instantly, "Got it."

After what happened just now, she finally sees her family for who they are. Now the shares in her hands are like an amulet protecting her. Of course, she won't hand it out that easily.

Darryl let out a sigh of relief when he received Lily's message, then drove off.

He had barely reached Platinum Corporation when his phone rang. It's from an unknown caller, but the number ends with six eights. After a short contemplation, he picked up.

"Hello, is this Mr. Darby?" the caller sounded like a middle-aged man, with a low, baritone voice.

Darryl frowned and asked, "Who are you? How did you get my number?"

The man chuckled and replied politely, "Brandon Guy gave me your number."

Brandon?

"According to him, he said Mr. Darby you have a magical Godly pill that will help Cultivators that are currently struggling to level up. I really need one desperately. Please name me your price," said the man.

'Bloody hell, though it's not difficult to make the pill, it's not like fruits that you can get it whenever! It still needs to be extracted! I only bought one clay jar, I could only make two or three pills per time.

'I previously made two—I sold one to Brandon, one I gave to Kent Hough that b*stard. I don't have any left. Even if I start the extraction process now, I still need a few hours,' thought Darryl.

He replied curtly, "If you really want it, come find me again tomorrow."

"Though I don't think you can afford it," Darryl added.

The man laughed, he said, "Don't worry, money is not an issue. How much are you planning to sell? I will make some preparations."

"Three billion," Darryl said without hesitation.

Previously he sold to Brandon for two billion, Brandon barely even bat an eye, Darryl felt that he had undersold.

Of course, giving that pill to Kent was even much

more of a loss!

"Three billion, it's a deal! I'll contact Mr. Darby tomorrow," The man agreed without any indecisiveness, then hung up.

'Whoa! Agreeing to three billion without any uncertainty, is he crazy?' thought Darryl.

Nearing his office, he saw Pearl, his secretary approaching him.

"President, there are two guests in your office. They have been waiting for quite a while now," Pearl said.

Guests?

Darryl frowned and walked in.

The moment he entered, he tensed, what followed was immense joy and excitement.

His father, Daniel Darby, and his mother, Luna Shaw —a middle-aged couple in plain, simple clothes— sat on the office couch.

"Dad, Mom, why are you here?"

Chapter 100

Three years ago, Darryl and his parents were kicked out. His parents have been living in the countryside ever since. Darryl would visit them every few days.

"Darryl, I've heard from your uncle a few days ago that he handed the Platinum Corporation over to you. I couldn't believe it, so I had to come here and see it for myself," Daniel laughed brightly.

"So you're really the President of Platinum Corporation?" asked his mother, Luna.

Darryl nodded, and explained, "Dad, Mom. The thing that happened three years ago has been settled. We reconciled—Uncle Drake was the one that passed over Platinum Corporation to me."

He laughed comfortably. "For the past three years, I 've made you two worried. Now that things have passed, for the last two days, I was just thinking about how I should bring this up to you when you both came."

Daniel let out a sigh of relief, he said emotionally, " It's great that the misunderstanding has been cleared. We won't have to worry, and be at ease."

Darryl nodded, he offered. "Dad, Mom, since you're

here, don't go back to the countryside."

Though the countryside is quiet, and the air is fresh, it's not easy getting around.

Daniel thought for a while, looked at Luna, and nodded. "Alright, Your mom and I will return to the mansion. We've missed the clan very much since we 've not seen them for a very long time."

"I'll send you there," Darryl offered.

Daniel waved his hands and said, "Don't worry about it. You're busy managing a corporation. Furthermore, your mom and I have not been to the city in such a long time. We'd like to explore around. Don't worry about us, go get busy."

At his father's insistence, Darryl gave in.

After they left, Darryl took out his clay jar and started the production of the Godly pill.

...

Donghai's seaside. The Darby Mansion.

Two servants were standing at the door when a rental car appeared. A middle-aged couple came down.

Looking at the mansion, Daniel and Luna felt sentimental.

"Master Daniel, Lady Luna?" The two servants were

shocked. They quickly greeted them, then ran up to welcome them.

Ten minutes later, the Darby clan patriarch Drake, followed by Florian, Yumi, and the rest arrived at the living room.

Drake—with an expression of gratification—chuckled at Daniel. "Second brother, you finally thought it through? It's great to have you back! I'll get my men to tidy up your rooms."

Three years ago, when Darryl and his parents were kicked out of the Darby clan, Drake felt guilty.

Daniel replied happily, "Brother, don't have to be polite with me. This is my home. Why would I not come back? I came back because I heard that the misunderstanding with Darryl has been cleared up, so I came to see for myself."

At the mention of Darryl, the Darby clan's expression darkened. Jackson's face was especially bitter.

A few days have passed since Jackson's wedding, news of Rebecca being defiled by Darryl has spread like wildfire. Darryl Darby brings a bad name to them.

"You three were kicked out three years ago! How dare you come back now!" Yumi stomped her high

heels at them.

Daniel's expression soured. "What are you talking about?"

Yumi snickered and said, "To tell you the truth, your good son Darryl emptied our family funds and bought shares in a petroleum company. Now he still has the face to do shameless deeds!"

Yumi continued, "Him marrying into the Lyndons has brought us a lot of shame. Who knew he had such an ugly heart, that he would do such a thing as committing incest!"

At that, Luna could sit no longer, she frowned, "My son? What happened? Please explain!"

Yumi hinted at Florian. Florian approached them and said, "Aunt and Uncle, I'm sure you have not heard. Darryl...raped Rebecca on their wedding night."

What?

As if struck by lightning, Daniel and Luna stood up at the same time. Luna defended her son and said, " Impossible! Darryl is not that type of person!" She shook her head in disbelief.

"Hey, Jackson, why don't you tell them what happened," Florian sniggered.

Jackson approached them and said slowly, "Aunt,

Uncle, the evidence on the scene all points to Darryl, he was the one that raped my wife."

This was a huge blow to Daniel. He slumped back onto the chair.

"You've heard it from Jackson himself, how could it be fake? Who knows what else such an immoral person like Darryl would do! If he were my son, I would've disowned him a long time ago, and I'd never return to the Darby clan. I wouldn't be as shameless as you two!" Yumi exclaimed slyly.

She got meaner, and said, "I heard that Lily Lyndon would not let Darryl touch her for three years now. I guess he can't control himself at the sight of women! He would even touch his own sibling's wife. Is he even still a person? Kicking you three out of the family three years ago was the best decision we've made, yet you have the face to come back?"

"My son would never do such a thing!" Daniel coughed, thumping on his chest.

The others sneered, "The entire family knows about your son defiling his siblings!"

"Yeah, your "good" son!"

"Like father, like son! You did not educate your son properly, yet you still dare come back to the Darby family!"

"You all three are rotten apples!"

Daniel's eyes turned red, he pointed to everyone and shouted, "Everyone shut up! My...my son would never-"

At that he shuddered and fell to the floor in spasms, frothing around the mouth.

Chapter 101

Platinum Corporation, president's office.

After three hours of tempering, the Godly pill was refined perfectly. In addition to the previous two experiences, Darryl got even more used to refining the Godly pill.

This time, Darryl managed to refine five pills at once.

As Darryl removed the pills and suddenly, his phone rang.

What was going on today, why were people constantly calling him?

Could it be potential customers looking to purchase the Godly pill from him?

Brandon, that brat, how many people did he tell about this?

Seeing that it was an unrecognizable number from a landline, Darryl furrowed his eyebrows and answered the call.

"Hello? Is this Darryl? We're calling from City Hospital's emergency department, your parents are at our hospital now and they have to undergo

surgery immediately, please come as fast as possible," said the person hastily from the other side of the phone.

Huh?

Darryl's body trembled, he thought he might have heard wrongly.

"What did you say? How are my parents?" Darryl asked loudly.

The person on the other end grew impatient. "What are you shouting for? Also, I've never seen such children like you. Your father got so mad that he had a heart attack and now his life is in danger, yet you brought him here and left just like that. What do you think we are? A charity hospital? Get over here now!"

After finishing their words, they slammed the phone and hung up.

Darryl had no time to think, he quickly left the office and drove his car hastily to the hospital.

...

City Hospital emergency hall.

Darryl's mother, Luna, had already woken up.

However, Daniel's situation was dire and in need of surgery. Simply because they did not pay, Daniel

was pushed out to the corridor.

"I'm begging you, please save him." Tears streamed down Luna's face continuously. "The money for the surgery won't be owed, can you please save him first..."

The couple, Daniel and Luna, had been living in their old home in the village for three years and they had no income. Their savings were not enough for the medical fees as well. The doctor told her that if the bill was not paid then he could not perform the surgery. The hospital staff all looked unconcerned.

"I'm begging you, please save him first, the money will arrive soon," said Luna with tears streaming down her face.

One of the nurses could not take it any longer and said with a frown, "Why are you acting like this old lady? We told you already, if you don't pay the bill first then we can't perform the surgery."

Judging by the couple's appearance, the nurse deduced that they would not be able to afford the medical fees.

In addition, the nurse had heard this excuse numerous times where people like Luna would say that they would pay after the illness is cured.

"Since you have the time, you should quickly go

raise some money. There's no point in shouting at us," said the nurse rudely at Luna's incessant begging.

"My son will be here shortly, can you please save him first..." Luna's heart was full of misery.

"Your son?" The nurse laughed out loud.

She guessed that Luna's son was probably a broke bastard as well. Upon seeing the couple's clothes, she deduced that they were probably self-made back in the village. They could not even afford clothes, their son would not be able to afford the fees too!

"Darry!" At that moment, Luna's face lit up with joy as she saw Darryl running toward her. "Quick, quickly save your father," she continued.

"Mom, I'm here," said Darryl with a head full of sweat. He turned around and rushed toward the nurse in front of him. "Why didn't you start the surgery?"

Damn it, life is important, just because the bill was not paid then the surgery could not begin!?

The nurse shot a look at Darryl and said plainly, " No payment, no surgery, that's the rule in this hospital."

"I'll pay the money, but now, get my father to

surgery immediately!" replied Darryl coldly.

"You'll pay?" The nurse sized up Darryl and scoffed. "Do you know how serious your father's condition is? Do you even know how much this surgery costs? Over 700,000 bucks! Can you afford it? That was your mother right? I told her to go raise the money but instead she insists on pestering me, and now you're here doing the same?"

It was only over 700,000 bucks?

"Just because of this measly 700,000 bucks which you thought we couldn't afford, you're willing to leave a sick person here without any care!"

Darryl's voice was frightening!

The nurse was frightened by his appearance but still pouted her mouth and laughed. "What are you staring at me for? Are you going to lay your hands on me? You're not letting me speak because of your own incapability?"

"I'm letting you save him," said Darryl word by word with bloodshot eyes!

"Why are you acting like this?" The nurse glanced at him. "We can save him, but first, pay up. Do you understand? Look out the window, everyone is lining up to pay. If you don't line up now, your father truly can't be saved. Even if you could pay up

now, it might be too late."

"I'm asking you to f*cking save him!" Darryl roared in an instant!

'Crash!'

A powerful internal energy majestically erupted from Darryl's energy field! It instantly swept through the entire second floor! The surrounding glass was abruptly shattered!

It was total silence!

If a needle were to drop in this big hospital, it could even be heard clearly!

Chapter 102

Everyone looked at Darryl, their gaze was as if they were looking at a demon!

"What are you doing!? Security! Call security, toss all three of them out!" The nurse was obviously frightened. However, upon closer inspection, Darryl was only wearing bargained clothes, how could he scare anyone?

"Yeah, what are you doing shouting in a hospital?"

"It's enough that you're poor, you're even ordering the hospital to help you for free?"

A few doctors could not stand it any longer and went over to speak up.

After their words were finished, over a dozen fierce security guards approached. Although they were wearing their security uniforms, each of them was obviously muscular. They looked ferocious with murderous intent, one look was enough to tell that they used to be gangsters.

Upon seeing the security guards, the nurse huffed and pointed toward Darryl. "It's him, he's the one causing trouble!"

Donghai City Hospital hired all their security guards

from Black Wolf Security!

Who were the heads of Black Wolf Security? Abby and Brandon.

These two siblings were infamous across Donghai City! Was there anyone who was not afraid of them?

Black Wolf Security handled the security of a lot of places in Donghai City! Who dared to cause trouble here?

The head of security, Alex Garfield, walked toward them with a baton in hand. However, as he got closer to Darryl, he was frozen in shock.

"Mister Garfield, it's him!"

The nurse shouted loudly, "He wanted treatment even though they don't have the money, we denied him and now he's causing trouble!"

What?

Alex thought that his eyes were wrong.

Damn it, a few days ago he followed lady boss to a wedding and met this guy!

Was he not Darryl? Darby clan's Second Young Master! He even saved the lady boss!

Also according to the lady boss, in Darryl's possession was a mystical pill—the Godly pill. It

enabled one to break through the bottleneck! He sold a single pill to Brandon for two billion bucks!

Moreover, Brandon indeed had a breakthrough!

"Mister Garfield, quickly toss him out of here," said the nurse coldly.

"Shut the f*ck up!" shouted Alex. His voice instantly scared the crap out of the nurse.

"Brother Darryl," said Alex with great respect as he took a step forward. "Brother Darryl, I'm so sorry that this nurse doesn't know you..."

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows tightly. He was not acquainted with the man in front of him, why would he call him Brother Darryl?

Though it was hard to fault Darryl for not knowing Alex, as there were a lot of people during the wedding banquet. An insignificant man like Alex did not even have the right to speak.

"Darryl?"

At that moment, came a gentle voice.

Darryl turned his head around and saw a beautiful female doctor. She stood there with a white coat on, looking at Darryl in surprise.

Although the doctor was wearing a white coat, her firm figure was exposed.

This doctor seemed familiar, it was none other than the goddess doctor at Jackson's wedding banquet—Shelly!

Indeed, Shelly was also known as the goddess doctor. During the wedding banquet, she could not save Abby even with her medical skills, but Darryl could—to one's surprise!

The matter had already passed a couple of days but Shelly was still full of curiosity toward this man.

It was at that moment that Shelly noticed Darryl's father lying there, it was obvious to her that he had a sudden heart attack.

It was then a few people came over, among them was two who recognized Darryl.

"Isn't this the Lyndons' live-in son-in-law?"

"And those at the side are his parents?"

"Tsk, his father is already in such a state and yet they still could not pay for the treatment. Sigh..."

"Let's not talk about it, they're pitiful as it is."

"This pitiful situation he's in can only be attributed to his own pitiful behavior."

The sounds of their discussion could be heard but Darryl kept a stern look on his face and ignored

their gossip. He looked at Shelly and said, "Doctor Sullivan, how's my father?"

"The patient's condition is unstable, he needs surgery immediately," said Shelly with a grave look on her face after she had examined the condition.

"Then I'll be needing your help, Director Sullivan," said Darryl anxiously.

Shelly made a gesture of acknowledgment and ordered the nearby nurses to push Daniel to the operating room.

"Director Sullivan, he hasn't paid the fees yet." The nurse from before could not help but voice out as she judged Darryl with despise.

How could this pathetic creature be acquainted with Director Sullivan? Darryl must have given her some sort of hypnotic potion to go so far as to treat the patient without paying first.

Chapter 103

Upon hearing the nurse's words, the people around started speaking in hushed voices again.

"Can't even pay to seek treatment, so hopeless."

Shelly heard the crowd's discussions and looked Darryl deep in the eyes. "It's fine, let's help him first, I believe him."

When Shelly was at the wedding banquet, she heard that Darryl was the Second Young Master, and he gave three billion bucks to help fund the family!

The medical fee was only a measly 700,000 bucks, how could Darryl not afford it?

The nurse started to feel anxious. The man in front does not seem like a wealthy person, how did Director Sullivan know him? Director Sullivan was too generous. If the patient was treated first but afterward this peasant is not able to afford it, Director Sullivan had to pay the 700,000 bucks medical fee herself!

Since Director Sullivan insisted on performing the surgery first, the doctors and nurses could not say a word and simply wheeled Daniel to the operating room.

"Don't worry, I'll do my best," said Shelly to Darryl as she proceeded to follow the rest of them into the room.

Phew!

Darryl let out a deep sigh and sat beside his mother.

"Mom, how could this happen? Didn't you guys went to visit the family?" Darryl could not hold back and asked.

Darryl's father's body had always been healthy, why would he fall sick out of a sudden.

Luna sighed but did not directly answer Darryl's question, instead, she looked at Darryl and asked, " Darry, tell me honestly, what did you do during Jackson's wedding?"

Darryl was shocked. "I didn't do anything?"

As he spoke, his mind could not help but wander to the eight-diagrams mirror.

Could it be that his father was also affected by the mirror? Impossible, that evil spirit mainly targets women. Although his father was old, he still had the energy of a man. Under normal circumstances, he would not have fainted because of the evil spirit.

As Darryl was deep in thought, Luna was struggling to speak. "According to them, you violated Jackson'

s newlywed wife. Your father and I argued with them and he fainted."

What?

Darryl violated Jackson's wife?

Where did this come from?

In an instant, Darryl's mind went blank as his whole body was stunned.

"Mom, they must have made a mistake. During that wedding banquet, I left even before dark."

Luna felt relieved. "Your father and I definitely believe you, but they insisted that it was your doing, even Jackson said so."

As Darryl clenched his fists and was about to speak, a middle-aged man walked toward them.

"Why are there so many people crowded around here? What's going on?"

It was the Chief of Staff of the hospital, Richard Stone.

The medical staff and the side hastily greeted him and spoke a few words softly.

"What? Shelly is performing surgery without payment? Isn't this a mess?" Richard furrowed his eyebrows and commanded, "Go, go get Shelly for

me. She knows the rules of the hospital and yet she dared make such a mistake, who gave her such courage?"

The medical staff looked at the time and hesitated. " Chief, Director Shelly must have begun the surgery by now, if we rush in, I'm afraid..."

Before he could finish, the chief stared at him. "So what if she's in the middle of surgery? I order her to stop immediately! After the surgery, are you going to pay the 700,000 bucks medical fee?"

"I'll f*cking see who dares to go in."

At that moment, Darryl stood up with a cold expression on his face.

"Who are you?" said Richard unhappily.

"The person inside that's being saved is my father!"

Richard sized up Darryl and took a few glances at the simple-looking Luna. He let out a cold laugh. " You lot must be Shelly's relatives, trying to come in through the back door? Trying to receive treatment without payment? In your dreams."

"Are you even worthy of the white coat you're wearing?" Darryl stepped forward with fire in his eyes!

"The medical fee is 700,000 bucks, right?"

'Clap!'

Darryl threw a bank card from his hand onto Richard's body.

Huh?

This is... Amethyst Bank's black card!?

Richard felt the hair on his body stand on end! The doctors and nurses around were at a loss. They do not know about the black card, but how would Richard not know!?

But... a man like Darryl can have a black card?

"Who are you trying to fool with this fake black card from Amethyst Bank?" Richard let out a cold laugh after his initial stun had worn off.

After that, he said to the medical staff beside, "Take his card, let's have a look and see if there's any money."

As the medical staff took the card away, Richard called for two hospital security guards. "Keep your eyes on him, don't let him get away later."

At that moment, Richard had determined that Darryl was merely bluffing him.

He had made up his mind.

Once he had confirmation that the Amethyst Bank

black card was fake, he was going to call the police.

Soon enough, the medical staff returned with the bank card.

"Greetings sir, here's your bank card and your receipt." The medical staff walked to the front of Darryl, his attitude was the opposite from before, he was extremely polite!

Chapter 104

What?

This brat's Amethyst Bank black card was not a fake? It was able to retrieve 700,000 bucks?

In an instant, Richard's face became stiff as he looked at Darryl with shock! Real... black card!?

Motherf*cker! Richard had worked hard for his whole life and only barely gotten a gold card from Amethyst Bank!

It can be said with certainty that there were no more than three black cards in the entire Donghai City!

"Well sir, that was a real misunderstanding, my apologies for just now." Richard trembled as he spoke, all he knew was that the young man in front of him must not be offended!

Wow!

At the same time, the crowd around who were there for a laugh had their mouths agape.

700,000 bucks!

This brat truly could afford it.

Was he not a live-in son-in-law, a piece of trash? Why would he have so much money?

Several nurses were dumbfounded, they stood there without daring to take a deep breath.

"There's no need to apologize, I only request that my father is safe and healthy," said Darryl coldly.

"Yes yes, don't worry sir, I'll arrange the best ward for your father." Richard was trying his best to redeem himself.

After an hour, Daniel was wheeled out of the operating room.

"Director Sulivan, how is my father's condition?" Darryl hastily rushed toward her.

"Consider yourself lucky this time, your father's condition was unexpected but he's not in any danger," said Shelly. "It was triggered by being angry. What made your old man so angry until like this?" Shelly asked.

Darryl breathed a sigh of relief but he did not answer her. They exchanged a few simple words and eventually, Darryl accompanied his father to his ward.

In the ward, Luna poured a glass of water and asked, "Son, Director Sullivan is rather pretty, and

she's such a kind person, what's your relationship with her?"

"Mom, we're just friends, there's nothing special between us, don't be overthinking." Upon hearing his mother's gossip, Darryl could not help but reply with a laugh and some annoyance.

It was already midnight, and sleepiness struck Darryl.

When Darryl opened his eyes, it was already bright outside.

His father was still fast asleep, but his complexion was rosy, he seemed much healthier than the day before.

"Darry, you should go thank Director Sullivan. If not for her timely treatment, I'm afraid your father ..." Luna said solemnly after she had finished her breakfast.

Darryl nodded his head.

His mother was right, he should properly thank Shelly. As he was thinking that, he walked toward the direction of her office.

Office of the Chief of Staff.

"Chief, you're looking for me?" said Shelly with a calm expression.

In front of her, Richard was sitting smilingly on the sofa, his eyes were checking her out.

It had to be said, Shelly was approaching her thirties, and yet she has maintained her looks well. Even though she has a doctor's coat on, it could not conceal her alluring figure.

Such a beauty would make any man swoon.

Richard was no different.

"Oh Shelly, what happened last night? Why did you begin the surgery before the patient had made the payment? Do you know him?" Richard asked as he assumed the posture of a leader.

Shelly made no attempts to hide and nodded. "I know him, the patient's son is the Darby clan's Second Young Master."

What?

Richard pondered about Darryl's identity the whole night, and now having heard Shelly's words, he was suddenly stunned.

The Darby clan was a prestigious clan in Donghai City, good thing he managed to apologize in time yesterday!

"As far as I know, he's still the Lyndon clan's live-in son-in-law," said Shelly after some thought.

The Lyndon clan's live-in son-in-law?

Richard almost let out a laugh. So it turns out that the brat was the rumored Lyndon clan's live-in son-in-law.

Now everything made sense.

Rumor has it that this brat was a good for nothing toyboy... Perhaps the Amethyst Bank black card in his possession belonged to the Lyndons? This brat would probably be punished by his wife when he returns after swiping away 700,000 bucks.

Additionally, none of the members of the Darby clan turned up. It seemed like they did not want to be involved with people like Darryl.

Initially, Richard had some fear, but now it seemed that his worry was for naught.

Richard was thinking as he was checking out Shelly. The corner of his lip revealed a crooked grin.

Shelly was utterly gorgeous in blue jeans and a white button-down shirt. Richard had been eyeing her for a long time, but he never had the opportunity.

"Oh, Shelly." Richard cleared his throat as he put on a stern expression. "Even if you and that Darryl know each other, you can't go breaking the rules of

the hospital. You're known as Donghai City's godlike doctor, and I've always been optimistic about you. However, you doing something like that, is making it hard..."

Shelly's expression started to change, as if there was some worry. "Chief, I was just in a hurry to save a man's life. Also, didn't Darryl pay up afterward?"

Richard stood up and slowly walked toward Shelly. He smiled and shook his head. "It doesn't matter how you put it, performing surgery before the payment has been made is against the rules, this is a fact."

Shelly's body trembled. "Chief, punish me as you see fit."

Chapter 105

Richard smiled wider and said, "Look at you, how could I ever punish you! Shelly, I've liked you for a very long time. If you're willing to be with me, I'll treat you well. The position of Deputy Head is still vacant, there are loads of contenders, you know..."

Richard grabbed Shelly's hand and hugged her.

"Chief! Please don't do that!" exclaimed Shelly. She struggled, Richard has a strong grip on her. He showed his true colors. He gave an evil smile, ignored Shelly's plea, and pressed her on to the sofa.

SLAM!

The door of the office was kicked open. Darryl entered with a cheerful smile. He was looking for Shelly in her office but heard that she was called by the Chief of Staff to his office, so he came to have a look. When he arrived at the door, he heard Shelly's screams.

"You!" Richard was shocked. He then shouted, " Who the f*ck let you in? F*ck off!"

Richard used to think that Darryl was a big shot, that he should show some respect. Upon hearing that Darryl is just a live-in son-in-law, why should

he?

"Chief Stone, I see you're having fun," Darryl said cheerfully.

Shelly got up from the sofa and arranged her clothes, at the same time she felt creeped out. Why is he here?

Nevertheless, he came at the right time. She gave Darryl a grateful look, which was very charming.

"Who the f*ck let you in? Darryl, you better f*ck off. You're just a live-in son-in-law, a toyboy. I warn you, if you make me mad, I'll have your father kicked out," threatened Richard.

Darryl approached Richard with a smile. He grabbed Richard by the collar and lifted him up.

"What are you doing? Let me go!" exclaimed Richard. He did not expect Darryl to be this strong, he suddenly panicked.

Shelly was equally stunned. She quickly said, "Don't be hasty."

Darryl turned to look at her and said calmly, "What? You're defending him? He's a worthless scumbag."

Shelly blushed and bit her lip.

"F*cker, I'm warning you. If anything happens to me, I'll make sure you'll end up in prison," shouted

Richard. He tried to suppress the panic in him.

How dare a lowly live-in son-in-law like him laid a finger on me! I have many ways to make him pay for this!

SLAP!

Darryl slapped Richard hard, there was an imprint on his face.

"How...how dare you slap me!" said Richard.

Shelly heard from others that Darryl is one weakling. No matter what, he seems very manly to him. The commotion in Richard's office attracted a crowd.

"What's happening? Why is everyone here?" asked Alex Garfield, Head of Security.

Seeing Alex, Richard smiled, he said to Darryl haughtily, "You're dead meat."

Richard ordered Alex, "Quick, escort him to the police station."

What surprised Richard was that Alex did not move.

"Brother...Darryl, what's happening?" asked Alex confusedly. He was treading on eggshells.

"Nothing you should be bothered about," replied Darryl calmly. Alex nodded and stepped out of the

office.

Richard Stone yelled, "Alex Garfield are you blind? Can't you see I'm being beaten up? Are you trying to get fired?"

Alex laughed. Black Wolf Security and the hospital have a partnership. Richard's threats mean nothing to him.

At the same moment, Darryl's phone rang. He threw Richard on the floor and picked up the phone. The caller is the same middle-aged man that requested for the Godly pill yesterday.

"Hello, Mr. Darby, are you free now?" the caller asked politely.

Chapter 106

Darryl was not in the mood, he replied curtly, "I'm at the City Hospital. Come and find me."

"Alright, I'll be there shortly," the caller laughed before hanging up.

Richard—on the floor—spit blood out and glared at Darryl loathsomely. "I dare you to stay here!"

He then pointed to Shelly and said, "You! You brought him here on purpose, didn't you! Don't even think about being a Director!"

At that, he took his phone out, trying to dial a number.

"Calling for backup? Sure, I'll be here waiting," Darryl laughed coldly.

Shelly on the other hand was anxious. She approached Darryl and said softly, "Darryl, you better leave. Richard's the Chief of Staff, he has important people as his backup. He knows many rich and powerful people."

Shelly was worried about how Darryl might not be able to leave the hospital in peace, as well as her own career here.

"Don't worry, I will handle it," replied Darryl.

Handle? Shelly was slightly dumbfounded. During Jackson's wedding, Shelly could see that Darryl does not have a good relationship with his family. Also, he has no standing at the Lyndons.

Richard was about to dial when footsteps were heard outside of the office.

"Is Mr. Darby here?" A well-dressed middle-aged man walked in slowly, followed by two bodyguards.

The man, though with a friendly face, has a frightening aura. The man is called Zachariah Wright. Three years ago, he was the Commander of the Donghai Military Region. After he retired, he founded Hydrohill Group, the most successful forestry company in Donghai City. Most of the company's earnings were donated to charity, planting loads of trees. They have an exceptional reputation. Zachariah spent half of his life, dedicating to protecting Donghai City, he has a very prestigious standing.

Although Richard is Chief of Staff, he has no authority to kick any patients out of the hospital; yet with just one word from Zachariah Wright, Darryl's father could be thrown out!

Richard put his phone down—as if holding on to

his only hope—and pleaded, "Pre...President Wright, you came at the right time! I was just about to call you. You have to help me!"

Shelly looked down in remorse. Now she's done for. The powerful people are here. She's sure she won't be able to continue working here anymore.

No one would have guessed that Zachariah ignored Richard. He approached Darryl and asked, "Mr. Darby?"

"That's me," replied Darryl. He did not bother to stand up.

Seeing that Darryl remains seated, Richard reprimanded. "B*stard, show him some respect!"

"Darryl, please...please stand up," pleaded Shelly. She was extremely nervous.

Zachariah walked up to Darryl politely and asked, " Mr. Darby, I have prepared everything. Did you bring the item?"

"Yes, it's here with me," replied Darryl. He then pointed to Richard and said, "Let's settle this first, then we'll discuss the rest."

"Sure!" replied Zachariah immediately.

Zachariah stared at Richard coldly, and asked, " Richard, what's the matter?"

Richard—realizing that something was off—was struck dumb.

What's happening? How does this guy know President Wright? Also, why is President Wright so polite with him? Impossible! Even Drake Darby, who came by the other day, had to bow down to President Wright!

What Richard did not know is that this is the first time Darryl and Zachariah have met. However, for the Godly pill, Zachariah is willing to do anything! Even kneel! After all, to be able to level up to a higher cultivator realm, it's a dream that most cultivators can only dream of.

Shelly was completely stunned by their interaction as well!

Darryl laughed, "It seems Chief Stone is too embarrassed to say. Director Sullivan, why don't you tell us what happened."

Shelly trembled, lowered her head, and related what happened. When she finished she blushed in embarrassment.

"Richard Stone! I promoted you to Chief of Staff, is this how you should act?" Zachariah reprimanded. Then he kicked Richard in the stomach.

Chapter 107

THUD!

Richard slammed against the office desk, then fell to the floor. He dare not shout in pain but looked at Zachariah with fear in his eyes, he said, "President Wright, I-"

"Richard, you shut the hell up! I had expected more from you, yet you let me down greatly. You're fired as the Chief of Staff," Zachariah rebuked.

"Pres...President..." Richard quivered, yet he could not move.

Zachariah looked at Shelly and said, "As a doctor, the patient always comes first. You did the right thing. From now onwards, you're the Chief of Staff."

What? Shelly trembled, her legs felt like jelly.

She was expecting the worst possible outcome, yet she did not foresee that the circumstances would turn around so quickly. Suddenly, not only did she not lose her job, she got promoted? She could barely react to the news.

Zachariah turned towards Darryl, smiled politely,

and asked, "I've settled the issue. Mr. Darby, are you satisfied?"

Darryl nodded and laughed, "President Wright, you are astute and just! You handled it perfectly."

Though they only just met, Darryl admired Zachariah's way of handling matters. He likes him even more now.

Zachariah laughed. He scanned the surroundings and said, "Here is not a good place to discuss matters, why not Mr. Darby come over to my place?"

Darryl agreed. They stood up and walked out.

Though his father is still in the patient ward, his mother is there to take care of him. Furthermore, Shelly is now the Chief of Staff, he would not have to worry.

Shelly was stunned by what just happened. She is in total awe of Darryl's abilities that she would even kneel to him.

...

The western suburbs of Donghai city, a 5A-rated scenic area. A three-story high ancient-styled Chinese tower was erected by the lake.

This may not be by the sea, but the view is

astounding.

The tower belongs to Zachariah, his place of residence. Upon Zachariah's invitation, Darryl entered. In the huge hall on the third floor, Darryl sat on the sofa and retrieved a Godly pill from his pocket. He placed it on the table.

Zachariah's eyes gleamed. He took the pill in his hands and examined it closely. "This is the Godly pill?" he asked.

"Correct. Brandon consumed it, that's why he managed to break through," replied Darryl with a smile.

"When I heard the news from Brandon, I couldn't believe it—how could such a young person like you produce such a magical Godly pill. It seems that you, Brother Darryl, are no ordinary person," exclaimed Zachariah.

At that, Zachariah signaled his assistant to wire the money to Darryl, and said sentimentally, "Sigh, It's been five years that I can't level up on my cultivation practice. I finally got what I wish for today."

Darryl smiled. He marveled at the interior decor while analyzing the entire layout of the tower. When he saw the fish tank near the stairs, he grimaced.

"President Wright, do you usually practice your cultivation here?" asked Darryl.

Zachariah nodded, "Yes, this is a good place, very quiet.

"Perhaps, I finally know why you can't breakthrough," Darryl suggested.

Zachariah was stunned, he asked, "How so?"

Darryl pointed at the fish tank and said slowly, " The feng shui and the layout of the tower are great, except for one issue."

The fish tank?

Zachariah asked astonishingly, "Brother Darryl, you even know feng shui?"

Though astonished, Zachariah is still doubtful of Darryl. Zachariah does not know feng shui himself, but when the tower was being built, he hired a famous feng shui master. The entire layout was done according to the feng shui master's request. Due to this, Zachariah's business and social status kept growing, he even became an important politician.

Chapter 108

Darryl—realizing Zachariah's doubt—smiled gently and replied, "I know some, but if I'm not mistaken, the entire layout has been done by a feng shui master?"

"Correct!" nodded Zachariah.

Darryl continued, "And this fish tank, it only came after, right?"

Zachariah replied, "Yes, this was given to me three years ago by a business partner."

"Exactly, this fish tank ruined the layout of the entire tower. Once the feng shui is messed up, the spiritual aura will be thinned. You practicing here will naturally be ineffective," Darryl said with a smile.

Zachariah was astounded. He could even deduce that the fish tank was a later addition. This young man was incredible!

Darryl was not spewing nonsense. All the time, studying the book "The Geomancy of Yin and Yang" had paid off. It was embedded deeply in Darryl's brain.

"So, you mean, if I get rid of this fish tank, things

will be restored?" asked Zachariah.

Darryl nodded, "Yes, once you've rid of the fish tank, try cultivating again, and see if it's much better than before."

Zachariah immediately ordered his men to take the fish tank away. Then he crossed his legs and started meditating. He tried using his Real Energy. Just like what Darryl said, it worked!

"That's great! I used to think that the problem was me, but, thanks to you, you could point out the key issue!" Zachariah praised Darryl.

He walked to the room next door and came back with a manual.

He handed the manual to Darryl, and said, "Brother Darryl, it is my absolute honor to have known you. Please accept this manual "Blazing Slash" as a thank -you gift, I stumbled upon it a few years ago."

At the same time, Darryl's phone beeped. He saw that the money had been wired through. He accepted the manual from Zachariah, and replied, " It's my pleasure as well. Unfortunately, I have other matters to attend to, so I'll have to make a move."

...

Noon. The weather was hot, young people in the city were discussing where to cool down.

Many women were taking photos of Darryl's car as he passed by.

...

Darby Mansion.

Darryl stopped the car, walked briskly towards the mansion.

The Darbys are having a gathering today. The atmosphere was festive and rowdy but immediately died down when Darryl entered.

"B*stard! How dare you come back! Your dad clearly did not bring you up well!" someone in the mansion shouted.

Yumi slammed her chopsticks down, walked towards Darryl, and yelled, "Darryl, you filthy animal, how could you do such a degrading thing! The Darbys do not welcome you! Leave!"

"Yes, Leave!"

"The fact that the Darbys produced a failure like you is a huge dishonor to us all!"

Darryl clenched his fist, he looked at them and asked, "I just want to ask you all, why did my father faint, and how did he end up in the hospital."

Yumi snickered, "You dare to ask this? It's all

because of you! We were generous enough to send him there!"

Darryl was outraged. His eyes flashed red, he yelled, "You just dumped him there at the hospital? Those were my parents! If you have any beef with me, you take it up with me. It has nothing to do with them!"

Yumi replied coldly, "What are you screaming for? How dare you speak to us about this? So what you did to Jackson, your own brother, is good? You raped your siblings! You're not worthy to even be a filthy animal!"

"Ok, you said I raped Rebecca, what proof do you have?"

"Proof?" laughed Yumi coldly.

"Darryl, don't deny. When Rebecca was in her room, there was an eight-diagram mirror," Florian added.

Everyone started to chime in.

"During Jackson's wedding, you mentioned that it was because of the eight-diagram mirror that Abby passed out."

"Yes! Only you in the entire Darby clan knows how to use the eight-diagram mirror! If it wasn't you that made Rebecca passed out with the eight-diagram mirror, who else?"

"The Gods have eyes, Darryl, don't deny anymore. You're disgusting."

Chapter 109

Eight-diagram mirror?

Darryl laughed coldly, he faced Jackson and asked, " Brother, you suspect that I did it too?"

Darryl is the closest to Jackson in the entire family, they are like biological brothers. Darryl believes that Jackson will not be like the others, blaming him without knowing the truth.

However, Jackson's reply made Darryl's heart drop.

"Second brother, I trust you. But I am more curious about the eight-diagram mirror. What's the matter with that?" asked Jackson, without any feelings.

The next second, Jackson was filled with resentment and rage, he screamed, "Do you know how long Rebecca and I were together? After so many years, we finally got married. Why would you do this? Why?!"

"B*stard, leave at once! F*ck off!"

Someone started throwing food at Darryl.

"Darryl, please leave, you are not welcomed here!"

"You and your parents, just die! Don't ever come

back here!"

Darryl's clothes were stained with food. His heart bled. He clenched his fist tightly and said, "Fine, fine! Consider me unlucky! I previously helped out with the three-billion investment, yet I only got the Platinum Corporation in return. I'll consider the rest down the drain. From now on, I have nothing to do with you!"

At that, Darryl turned and left.

"Retard!"

"Filth!"

"He still has the face to draw the line?"

"Don't use the Darbys' name to cheat others!"

'Darby's name? You think I care?' thought Darryl. He laughed, yet his eyes glistened with tears. He was not upset because he was kicked out of the clan again. What he could not accept was that Jackson, his closest brother, does not trust him.

As if on cue, it started to rain.

As Darryl left, a black luxury minivan appeared in front of the Darbys' mansion.

A young man in a black suit got down, followed by a few men. The man was somber, eyes filled with hatred.

If Darryl were here, he would be extremely surprised as to why Skyler Burr, Head of Donghai City's Grandmaster Heaven Sect Branch, will be here.

Skyler and his men head straight in. The servants could feel their dangerous aura, so they did not question.

The rest were still complaining about Darryl when they noticed Skyler.

“Who are you?” Yumi asked.

Skyler scanned around, and asked, “Is Darryl Darby here?” Though he seemed calm, he was fuming with rage.

He was tricked by Darryl, pretending to be the East King previously at his cult branch. He was suspicious when Darryl made them go against the cult rule drink, which he drugged with sedatives. When he woke up, he knew he had been conned.

Since then, Skyler sent men to investigate, and they found out that the person pretending to be the East King is Darryl Darby.

He paid a visit to the Lyndons just now, but there was no one there. So he came straight to the Darbys.

At the mention of Darryl’s name, everyone

snickered. He is looking for Darryl? Birds of the same feather flock together, he must be a good-for-nothing too.

"We don't have a Darryl Darby here," replied Yumi rudely.

Skyler frowned, he asked in confusion, "Darryl is not a member of the Darbys?"

Yumi glared at him, she said curtly, "Who told you that? That filth of an animal just left. If you are looking for him, head out. Don't interrupt our meal! Also, don't you have any manners? Do you know what place this is? How could you just enter like that!"

Skyler was fuming. How dare someone talk to him like that! He is the Head of Branch for the Grandmaster Heaven Cult in Donghai City. He asked angrily, "I'll ask once more, where is Darryl Darby!"

Yumi flared up as well, "Do you not understand human words? We said Darryl is not here. We have no idea where has run off to die to! Leave or I'll call the police!"

Was she looking for trouble? Skyler glared with a murderous expression. How could a Head of Branch get a scolding from a woman! A gorgeous woman nevertheless!

Chapter 110

"Hall Master, please don't be angry, what is most important for us now, is to look for Darryl," Right at that moment, the follower at the side quickly persuaded, "After we have found Darryl, it won't be too late for us to return to punish this Darby family."

Sigh!

After listening to these words, Skyler took a deep breath and managed to lower his anger. It was true that he had stolen the secret manual, [Ascensions of the Nine Dragons], that belonged to the Cult Master. His plan was to make a copy of the manual then returned the original manual. However, before he managed to make a copy, Darryl had stolen the secret manual! The most important thing now was to locate the secret manual.

If the Cult Master was to find out the secret manual was missing, he would be dead.

Skyler glared at Yumi coldly and left with the rest.

"What is all that about? They dressed like big evil, but in fact they were only petty thieves on the street. Darryl is useless, associating with this type

of person."

Looking at Skyler leaving with his followers, Yumi joked about him.

Skyler was almost approaching the door of the mansion when he heard that, his face turned dark!

He gripped his fist tight, bit his teeth and said, " When Grandmaster Heaven Cult controls the entire ground of Donghai City, the first person I will get rid of is you, Darby family."

At the traffic light junction.

Darryl wound down the car window, and lit a cigarette. He had not smoked for a while now.

His cellphone rang when he took a deep breath.

"Darryl, where are you?" It was Lily on the line.

Lily had become the major shareholder of the Lyndon family business now. She stood high in front of the Lyndon family now, she did not even need to worry about the feeling of Grandma. She was so happy for the past two days.

Darryl took a look at the time, "I just got off from work."

"Go on a date with me please," Lily said despite her hesitation earlier.

Darryl's cigarette dropped from his hand to the

ground. After three years of marriage, that was the first time that Lily was asking him out. She used to say she felt shameful going out with him.

"Sure!" Darryl nodded.

Ten minutes later, Darryl saw Lily on the pedestrian walkway.

That was the busiest street of Donghai City. There were plenty of shops and stalls around. He spotted her among the huge crowd. He had not seen her in two days, she looked even more beautiful and attractive in the crowd.

Lilly waved at Darryl from the crowd, standing on her toes.

Her white T-shirt and tight jeans enhanced her perfect body figure. Quite a number of men turned to look at her.

Having such an attractive wife, all men would be laughing in their dreams.

Most importantly, there was another beautiful lady beside Lily, Jade. She was in a short dress, displaying her long legs.

Both of them were beautiful and attractive in their own ways.

Upon seeing Darryl, Jade started to worry.

"Honey, I am here." Walking past the crowd, Darryl said in a smile.

If it was before, Lily would have been worried if he called her that. Now, she was just laughing and handed him her handbag. "Dear, you are responsible for carrying my handbag today."

"Great!" Darryl replied with a happy smile. He turned to Jade, "I can help to hold yours too."

Sometime ago, Jade used to instruct Darryl on chores; washed the pants, did the laundry, those were part of them. To have Darryl to help to carry her bag now? She would not dare to do so.

She bit her lips, and still handed over her handbag, and said silently, "Thank you..thank you father."

Darryl did not say a word. The three of them were chatting while walking. They stopped in front of a fashion boutique.

The mannequins in the boutique were displaying a long dress. Darryl peeped at the price tag, is thirty-eight thousand please.

"Go ahead and try it if you like it." Said Darryl in a smile.

Lily smiled looking at him, "Are you going to buy it for me? Is your salary sufficient to buy?"

Until then, Lily still believed that Darryl was just working for someone.

Darryl nodded, and turned to the sales assistant, " Hi, please take this down and let my wife try on it."

The sales assistant was a young lady in her twenties. She walked over and took a glance at Darryl. Seeing that he was only wearing normal clothes, her face turned black, "Sorry mister. If you can't try it if you aren't buying it."

She looked at Lily while she spoke, then she figured that Darryl was trying to impress Lily, hence pretended he was rich. She felt they would never buy the dress even if she had tried it on.

A poor disgusting man, she thought. Not only was he wearing very cheap clothes, it even had stains of egg yolk and vegetables? It was so disgusting.

"Can't try if not buying?" Darryl smiled. What logic was that? How to buy it if Lily did not give it a try?

Lily felt embarrassed. It was obvious, the sales assistant looked down on them. To be honest, that dress did look great.

Thirty-eight thousand bucks, even though she was just made the shareholder in the Lyndon family business, all the money of the Lyndon family was trapped in the business. She really could not afford

that dress.

"Darryl, let's go." Lily said silently.

Seeing that his wife wanted to leave, Darryl nodded. There were beautiful dresses everywhere, they did not need to buy just that one.

They were just about to leave when they heard a female voice from behind, "Sales assistant, take down the dress, I want to try it on."

A well dressed, rich looking lady was pointing at the dress Lily set her eyes on earlier. Beside the rich looking lady, was a man. The man was wearing a gold chain and gold rings, such a dazzling look.

Really? Such thick gold necklace, would he not worry it may break his spine?

"Yes sure, please wait for a moment!" The sales assistant snatched the dress from Lily's hands.

Wow, that sales assistant changed rather quickly. Darryl sighed.

He was just too lazy to dwell further with the sales assistant. After three years of marriage, that was the first time he was on a date with his wife. He did not want to spoil the mood. Since his wife wanted to shop for dresses, they could go elsewhere. That was a high-class boutique, even though the price was rather steep, the dresses looked good. They

could go shop somewhere else.

Darryl gave it thought and turned to leave. He did not expect the sales assistant to speak further.

"Nowadays, everyone is trying to pretend to be rich. Can't afford the dress, but still wanted to try it on. Perhaps she will then take some pictures to post on social media. At the end, he will not be buying the dress. What kind of people are these?"

The sales assistant spoke rather loudly, customers and shop owners from nearby all looked over to them, started pointing at them.

"You are just a sales assistant, but feeling so proud already?" Darryl could not hold it anymore and said.

Chapter 111

"Say it again?" The sales assistant was furious. " Don't you feel ashamed of yourself? If you can't afford then don't come to a high-end mall like this. Wearing cheap clothes like yours, you still have the guts to come here. What if you dirty the dress when you try on the dress? Even if you didn't dirty it, you would just leave without buying, waste of my time."

"That's right, the girl is right." The rich-looking lady added, "Being a sales assistant is not an easy job. If you don't plan to buy then don't try it on. There is a departmental store, the clothes there will suit you better."

"Darryl, let's just go." Lily pulled Darryl slightly, speaking silently.

As a matter of fact, Lily was only teasing Darryl, she had no intention to get Darryl to buy the dress for her.

Darryl signaled to Lily not to speak, then he replied with a smile, "Not only I want this dress, for all the designs you have in your boutique, I want all that of them as long as they are my wife's size."

Right after he finished speaking, he tossed his bank

card over.

The shop assistant could not stop laughing while grabbing the bank card, "Yes sure. We had just performed our stock count this afternoon. A total of eighty designs, one piece for each design, the total would be one million nine hundred eighty thousand bucks. If your bank card does not have sufficient credit today, I shall call the cops."

The shop assistant walked towards the cashier counter as she spoke. She had not seen a Platinum Corporation bank card before!

Following that, was the beep of the successful transaction. What? The transaction went through?

One million nine hundred eighty thousand bucks, and the transaction went through successfully?

Everyone was stunned.

For a normal bank card, once it was swiped, there would be a small receipt generated. As for Platinum Corporation bank cards, after it was swiped, the computer on the counter would display the available balance.

However, due to the angle of the computer, only the few shop assistants could see it.

There...there is...five point eight billion.

The long string of zeros displayed, stunned all the

shop assistants that they dropped onto the floor!

"I am sorry, I am sorry sir, sorry." The shop assistant was busy apologizing with tears. Even the boutique manager came to help with the packing of the more than one hundred pieces of clothing.

"You don't have to apologize." Darryl said while smiling, and pointed at another of the shop assistants, "All the commissions are to be awarded to her, and also please send all the clothes to the Lyndon family's mansion."

After that, Darryl left, holding Lily's hand.

They left behind the group of people looking at each other.

Lyndon...Lyndon family? No wonder they were so rich, they were the Lyndon family.

"Why did you buy so many of the clothes?" Lily asked as they went outside.

Darryl smiled looking at her, "This is my first-time buying clothes for my wife, my wife needs a new set every day."

"Childish." Lily rolled her eyes, but she felt so sweet in her heart. "Oh yes, how did you have all the money? Don't tell me it is a loan from your friend again."

Two million bucks, which friend would be so

generous to Darryl.

Just at the same time, there was some noise coming from not far away.

Around the corner in front, there was a big crowd.

Among them, stood a beautiful figure, looking attractive. Was that not Yvonne Young?

"President Young, what is she doing here?" Lily saw Yvonne too, she could not hold her curiosity, " Come, let's go and take a look."

When they managed to squeeze into the crowd, they saw an antique seller, holding a rusted sword, and talking away. "Let me tell you, this is my family treasure. It has been passed down many generations. According to my grandpa, this is a treasure from the Han Dynasty. Look at the rust..."

The people surrounding laughed.

"Even from the Han Dynasty? Stop bragging."

"Exactly, it is a fake."

The antique seller's face turned red. He started to argue with the few people.

Darryl looked around. Not only was Yvonne there, but the few owners of the few antique stores near Pearl Pavilion were also there too. Even some businessmen that Darryl had never met were there,

they looked like antique buyers too.

At that moment, Yvonne saw Darryl, she smiled and nodded.

What a coincidence to meet at such a place, but Lily, who had never come out with him, was right there.

Darryl smiled at Yvonne, and turned his attention to the sword held by the antique seller.

Oh, the carvings on the antique sword were really special. The remaining parts of the sword that were not wrapped in the metal cover, were shining deeply.

That sword looked interesting.

"Boss, how much for the sword?" after observing for a while, Darryl asked.

The antique seller raised his hands, "Eight hundred thousand bucks, non-negotiable."

The antique seller's eyes blinked while he spoke, looking suspicious.

Chapter 112

Wow!

People surrounding them took a cold breath.

"That's crazy!"

"Eight million bucks? It's daylight robbery."

"Hungry for money, are you? All the things in your stall combined, wouldn't have worth more than eight thousand."

Everyone was commenting, Yvonne and the few antique store owners were shaking their heads, smiling.

Out of their expectation, someone came from behind.

"Eight million? Fine, I'll take it." Darryl nodded after he gave a slight thought.

Wow!

Everyone went into a chaos at that moment.

He was really buying it?

Eight million for a broken rusted sword, was he out of his mind?

At that moment, the few antique store owners were shaking their heads too.

They had been observing the antique seller's sword for a while. It was not even an antique item, it's just some broken metal.

Yvonne was the only one squeezing her brows light, thinking.

Lily had no knowledge at antique items at all. However, seeing everyone's reaction, she wanted to persuade Darryl.

However, knowing Darryl's antique appraisal ability, she decided not to say anything. Humans would always make mistakes once in a while, no matter how capable Darryl was, it was very risky. It was obvious that the sword was a fake, it was covered with rust, it wouldn't have worth anything.

"Look, this brother here appreciates this sword." He was the most excited person now. After Darryl made the payment, the antique seller passed him the sword, and did not forget to give a thumbs up to Darryl.

Under the eyes of everyone, Darryl wrapped the sword with a cloth.

At that moment, Yvonne pointed at a green-based, flower porcelain plate, and asked lightly, "Boss,

how much is this?"

Darryl noticed that all the antique store owners paid full attention once Yvonne asked the question.

Yvonne and the few antique store owners were there not for sight-seeing. They heard that there was an antique seller at the Red Flag pedestrian walkway, and he had a porcelain plate from the Song Dynasty. Hence, they were there to check it out.

There were many strategies in the trade of antique items, including observing one's reaction, as well as negotiation skills.

Yvonne seized the opportunity when the seller had just sold an item, hence she asked for the price.

"Beautiful lady, you have good taste. When I bought this porcelain plate from my friend, he told me it is something good. If you like it, I can sell it to you for two million bucks." The antique seller replied with a big smile.

Yvonne did not respond, she fell silent.

The few antique store owners started discussing.

"Boss, do you know who this lady in front of you is? How dare you say a price of two million bucks?"

"Exactly, I have been observing your porcelain

plate for a while now. The color looks nice, the carving is unique, but it lacks the touch of ancient flavor."

"Not bad, your plate you have here. The workmanship and the color all looked like it's from the Song Dynasty, however, it is a fake. The most it will be is a high-quality imitation item."

"It doesn't value at two million bucks."

Listening to all the remarks from the few antique store owners, the antique seller replied coldly, " That's the price for my item here, take it or leave it."

The few antique store owners were shaking their head hearing what the antique seller said.

Yvonne lost interest in that item instantly as well. The item was a fake one, it would still be fine if it was for five thousand bucks. Two million...only an idiot would buy it.

"Boss, let me take a look." Darryl opened his mouth and said.

Having to just earn eight million from Darryl, the antique seller was really grateful. He handed the porcelain plate to Darryl without further thoughts.

The rest of the antique store owners all looked at Darryl.

Darryl held the porcelain plate on his hands and looked at it thoroughly. He then knocked on the plate slightly and said, “For porcelain plate like this, if it is an imitation, the knocking sound of it will be muffled. This one has a crystal clear sound when being knocked. Besides that, it looked new not because it was produced recently, it was because the owner took good care of it, and would have some knowledge in antique too. That is why it looked as if it was newly made.”

After saying that, Darryl walked over and handed the porcelain plate to Yvonne, and said silently, “ From my experience, this is not a fake, it's definitely worth two million.”

Listening to Darryl’s words, Lily panicked and said, “Darryl, please don’t say things you are unsure of. President Young will be able to appraise if it is genuine or fake. Don’t show off.”

Chapter 113

Listening to Lily's words, Yvonne smiled and said silently, "It's fine. I trust Darryl."

Trust him?

Three years into their marriage, she had never heard about Darryl having the knowledge of antique appraisal.

What she knew was that Darryl did all the washing and cooking at home, apart from that he was good for nothing. On the other hand, the Yvonne Young family had been in the antique business for generations. Why was she listening to Darryl?

Meanwhile, Darryl looked at the porcelain plate again and said, "Look at the flower carving, it is thick and round. A normal kiln owned by commoners would not be able to produce this type of item, it must have been made in a royal kiln."

Hearing about a royal kiln, everyone was amazed with a sigh.

If that was true, the porcelain plate would be a treasure! The few antique store owners sighed in regret.

"Boss, I will take this porcelain plate for two

million bucks." Yvonne stepped forward in her stilettos, took out her cellphone, and wired the payment.

Ding!

Two million bucks wire transaction was successful.

Wow!

At the moment, everyone started to whisper, the Young family being the master in antique, were really a rich family, two million bucks spent within a blink of an eye.

The antique seller was stunned, his eyes kept looking at the porcelain plate, rolling his eyes, his heart feeling complicated.

The item was really an antique from the Song Dynasty? If it was really as Darryl said, then two million bucks for the porcelain plate was a great loss to the seller!

Thinking of that, the antique seller took back the porcelain plate and said, "You have heard wrongly, it is not two million bucks! How would I sell it for two million bucks?"

Yvonne was not happy, "You have just said it is for two million bucks, and I have already made the payment."

The antique seller smiled, "Beautiful lady, I meant

two million bucks as the deposit. This porcelain plate's price is for fifteen million bucks. You made a deposit payment to me for two million bucks, you will just need to pay me another thirteen million bucks."

What?

How could one trade like that?

Yvonne was very upset hearing that, "Boss, how can you behave like that?"

Lily at the side could not help but said, "Exactly, how can you trade like that? You have no reputation at all."

At that time, all surrounding people felt the antique seller was wrong.

"Yes, how can he go back on his words?"

"You just offered to sell that for two million bucks, it changed to fifteen million bucks at a blink of an eye?"

Facing the comments of the crowd, the antique seller gave a cold grin, looking at Yvonne, "It is fifteen million bucks, take it or leave it."

That was raising the price at the last minute.

Yvonne bit her lips; she had never met such a person in her many years of antique business.

What mattered most in the antique business was rules. The price should be final. Honestly, according to Darryl's appraisal, fifteen million bucks were not too expensive for the porcelain plate! However, the antique seller was too filthy, she rather gave up and gave in to that person.

Yvonne then said, "Fine then, I don't want it anymore. Return the two million bucks to me."

"Yes, refund!"

"Refund! Refund!"

Everyone started to shout.

"Refund?" The antique seller laughed and shook his head, "Too bad, I have a rule in my trade. All transactions are not refundable. Either you pay for the whole sum of fifteen million, otherwise, leave! Deposit is not refundable!"

Everyone was furious hearing that!

This was obviously a cheat, ignoring the law.

Yvonne was so furious, "How can you be like that? Why can't I don't buy it?"

Yvonne had never faced such a type of person. She was shivering.

Darryl could not stand it anymore, he walked

forward and grabbed on the collar of the seller, " Are you going to refund or not?"

"Oh, you want a fight? Try touching me?" The antique seller was not worried, he replied coldly, "If you dare touch me, I will make sure you leave here lying down."

It was obvious he was implying he had some background support.

At that moment, sensing something not right, the crowd who were supporting Yvonne dropped into silence.

One of the crowds stood forward, "Young man, do you know who is standing in front of you? She is Miss Young. You try to pull a trick on her, you better beware of the consequences."

"Young family?" The antique seller grinned. "What about the Young family? My trade, my rules."

"You!" Yvonne stomped her feet, that seller was evil.

One of the people who went there with Yvonne, could not stand it anymore and gave the antique seller a push.

The antique seller fell a few steps back and was furious instantly, "You think you have a crowd and decided not to pay after buying an item? Stay still,

and don't go!" Speaking of that, the antique seller took out his cellphone and dialed a number.

Chapter 114

Once the call was connected, the antique seller put it on speaker mode.

He was obviously trying to let others hear his conversation.

"Hi, Brother Felix. It's me." The antique seller spoke into the phone, glancing at Darryl.

Brother Felix?

After hearing that, everyone around shivered. How many people named Felix were there in Donghai City?

Could it be...

Everyone was wondering.

At that moment, a deep voice came from the other end of the call, “What happened, Cousin Brother?”

“Felix Blakely?”

“Sh*t, this guy is the cousin brother of Felix Blakely?”

Why would Felix Blakely-with a net worth of a few billion bucks-have a cheater cousin brother?

It was true. The guy on the other side of the line

was the president of Black Tiger Real Estate, Felix Blakely. He was infamous in Donghai City. No one would want to mess with him!

Everyone looked worried, especially a few of the antique store owners. They did not dare to speak. They backed out gradually, worried they might get themselves into trouble.

Yvonne pursed her lips tightly. It seemed like she was about to lose two million bucks that day.

"President Young, let's just go," Lily whispered. She was worried too.

Yvonne nodded, stepping on her stilettos to leave. She could not be waiting around for Felix to arrive.

"No one is leaving this place today!" The antique seller yelled.

"Cousin Brother," he continued, "I am selling some stuff here, and someone is trying to cause trouble." The antique seller pretended to be bullied.

“What? Who has the guts to mess with you?” Felix shouted from the other end of the line after hearing the seller’s words.

Speaking of his Cousin Brother, Felix has had lots of headaches about him. He had always been up to no good, constantly finding trouble and picking fights. Felix would have to settle his problems for him

every time. He had only recently heard that reselling antique items could make him some money, so he took some cash from Felix and opened a small stall.

Felix was quite relieved with that. At least he was doing something legal. Felix had planned to let him work at his company once he got rid of his bad habit.

Felix was distraught upon hearing that someone was giving trouble to his cousin brother.

Yvonne wanted to leave at that moment, but the seller stopped her. She was anxious.

"Where are you?" Felix shouted furiously.

"Cousin Brother, I am at-"

The antique seller was about to share his location when Darryl stomped up to him suddenly and snatched the cellphone!

"Felix Blakely," Darryl said coldly.

"Who is this?" Felix interrogated.

"Who do you think I am?"

"Darryl? Brother Darryl?"

Felix was stunned; he could not find the words to say.

What? Felix Blakely called him Brother Darryl?

Everyone around was in shock!

Lily looked at Darryl, completely speechless.

That man was so familiar to her, yet so strange! What else did she not know about him?

"Felix, are you ignoring what is right and wrong simply because of your position?" Darryl snickered. "You allowed your cousin brother to be a gangster, cheating people on the street?"

On the other side of the line, Felix was disturbed and on the verge of tears.

"Daryl... Brother Darryl. What... What happened?"

Darryl was too lazy to respond. “Ask your cousin brother yourself, ” he scoffed.

He tossed the cellphone back to the seller after he spoke. He caught it and glared at Darryl.

“Brother Felix...” he trailed off.

“Do not call me Brother! Bastard, what have you done? Are you looking for death, daring to insult everyone? I have been pampering you too much!” Felix yelled angrily.

The antique seller shivered. His cousin brother had indeed been pampering him, getting him out of any

trouble he got himself into. Felix had never been angry at him. However, Felix was furious about this incident.

The antique seller's voice was trembling as he recounted the entire ordeal to Felix.

“Bastard, what have I taught you all this while?” Felix was seething with rage. “Don’t you know? Even I have to respect Brother Darryl. You bastard, do you want me to break your legs? Apologize to Brother Darryl this instant and refund him the money!”

Lily felt her legs shake, staring at Darryl without blinking.

Chapter 115

The antique seller was in shock and kept nodding his head. He did not dare to go against Felix's words.

"Pass the phone to Brother Darryl!" he demanded.

When the cellphone was handed to Darryl, Felix's voice trembled on the other end of the line.

"Brother Darryl, it's my fault. I didn't control my people properly. I will go over there now to apologize to Miss Young now..."

"No, no need..." Yvonne spoke up, still stunned. How could she let Felix apologize to her?

Darryl shook his head. "It's alright, you don't have to come here. Just make sure to control your people in the future. He was lucky it was just me today, or he would have been in big trouble."

"Yes, sure, Brother Darryl. You are right," Felix replied.

Darryl did not want to say more and went on to disconnect the call.

The antique seller was about to cry. He kept bowing to Darryl.

"I am sorry. Extremely sorry, Brother Darryl. If I

knew that you were friends with Brother Felix, I would not have dared to do this."

He then apologized to Yvonne and handed her the porcelain plate as he spoke.

"Let's go, then," Daryl said, turning around to leave. A small stall in the corner caught his eye, displaying a pot of flowers.

The flowers were exceptional. The petals were dainty, but they blossomed nicely. What was more remarkable was its leaves. Half were light green, and the other half was dark green. At a glance, it looked like it was painted on.

“What type of flower is this?” Darryl was intrigued as he asked the seller.

The seller handed Darryl the pot of flowers.

"Brother Darryl, I picked these up from up the hills by accident. I thought they were a rare breed, so I brought them back home. After doing some research, I discovered it was called a Bicolor Flower. It is indeed a rare plant."

Bicolor Flower?

The name sounded so familiar. Where had he seen it before?

Darryl gave it a deep thought. Yes, it was mentioned

in the "Infinite Elixir" manual. The Bicolor Flower was an ingredient for the production of many types of medications.

In fact, Bicolor Flower was the key ingredient for many medicinal concoctions.

"How much will you sell this for?" Darryl asked.

"Brother Darryl, you can decide. I do not dare to ask you for anything." The seller smiled. "Let me give this Bicolor Flower to you as a gift."

Darryl accepted the offer. He nodded while holding the pot of Bicolor Flower and walked out of the mall with Lily.

"Darryl, what is your relationship with Felix?" Lily could not help but ask.

Darryl smiled and replied casually, "Just a friend."

Seeing that he was not willing to divulge more, Lily did not ask further. That man was tough for her to understand.

During the past three years of marriage, everyone felt he was a useless person. She thought the same too. Darryl had no friends. He used to go grocery shopping alone. Why did it seem that he had so many friends now? All of them were great people too.

"It's almost dinner time. Why don't the three of

you have dinner at my place?" Yvonne walked over in her stilettos. "Darryl has helped me out a lot recently, so please come have dinner at my place."

Before Darryl could reply, Lily smiled and said, " That'll be great. Darryl, let's go."

The Young family was powerful and influential in Donghai City. Lily wanted to build a relationship with Yvonne, so it would be a great time to get to know her more.

Lily had already agreed, so Darryl could not reject it.

In his car, Darryl looked around. All three beautiful ladies-Lily, Yvonne, and Jade-were beautiful in their own way. On the road, many people could not help but look into their car.

The month of August in Donghai City was hot in the day but cold at night. The temperature change was drastic. Darryl rolled up the window and sneezed.

Sh*t, was he getting a cold? He was already a cultivator, and he was catching a cold? Darryl sighed deeply.

The Young family's home was a traditional mansion located in the south part of Donghai City. It was said that the building was from the Ming-Qing dynasty. The decor inside was traditional and elegant, matching the family's antique business.

Once inside, Darryl was fascinated by the setting of the mansion.

The hall was located in the north, facing south. The view was not obstructed by any other building. The setting was reasonable, the Feng shui And was great. Even though it was not a treasured land, it was a great piece of land.

Although the Young family was in the antique business, there was no antique item in the house. Antique items may be possessed, hence it should not be put on display. For example, a past emperor' s antique items would not be displayed in a typical family's home.

For antique items used by women in the past, they held onto intense famine energy. Hence, they would not be suitable for display as well. 1

At home, Yvonne acted as the hostess. She went into the kitchen and started cooking.

Lily and Jade were helping her too. Soon, the three beautiful ladies were busy while chatting and laughing away. Women would always have plenty to talk about. The three of them were giggling and chuckling as they cooked.

Undeniably, all three of them were beautiful in their own way, along with sexy bodies, of course.

Based on their looks and qualities, Yvonne was cold and elegant. Lily was a knowledgeable beauty. Jade was sexy and attractive.

Chapter 116

The three beautiful ladies gathering together was such a pleasing sight.

Darryl admired them for a while sitting on the sofa. After a while, he got bored and switched on the TV.

Ah-choo!

Ah-choo! Ah-choo!

Darryl sneezed a few more times, and his nose started to run.

'Damn it, I must've caught a cold,' he muttered to himself as he grabbed two pieces of tissue paper and wiped his nose. He tossed them aside on the coffee table and picked up the TV remote to browse through the channels. He searched for channels on Donghai TV, but an explicit adult channel showed up instead after pressing some buttons.

Damn it! What kind of TV was this? Why did it have such channels?

"Darryl, can I get you some drinks?"

Yvonne walked in from the kitchen, just as Darryl got into the mood from watching the channel he accidentally came across.

Quickly, Darryl snapped out of the show and tried to change the channel in a hurry. However, no matter what button he pressed, the channel did not change.

Damn it!

"Darryl, is everything alright?" Yvonne asked in confusion. She flinched as she accidentally glanced over at the TV screen.

A red flush appeared on her face instantly.

'What... what show was this? Darryl... he...'

"Ah!" Yvonne screamed.

"No! Don't scream. I didn't... I didn't watch..."

Damn it! He was helplessly caught in the act. How was he going to get out of this?

Both Lily and Jade walked in after they heard Yvonne 's shouting. Once they entered, they saw the show playing on TV. Not only that, there were two wads of tissue paper, with green snot still in them.

Suddenly, Lily and Jade looked at each other when the realization hit them.

"No, ladies... This isn't what you think it is! I caught a cold..." Darryl was furiously helpless.

"Darryl, what is this?!" Lily scowled as she stomped her foot, glaring at him.

Yvonne and Jade were embarrassed as they turned around and left the room.

Lily and Darryl were left alone. Lily's delicate face flushed red like a ripened cherry.

She glared at him, scowling through gritted teeth.

"Darryl, what... What were you doing? You... This is not your house! How could you... do this—"

Lily could not muster her words. She was too embarrassed. Her face was full of shame while still trying to restrain her anger. She was charming.

Darryl stared blankly at her, admiring his wife.

"You have misunderstood the situation. I haven't done anything wrong. Who would've thought that the TV would show such a thing? Also, I think I may have caught a cold. The tissue..." he trailed off.

Lily was not convinced. Her face was burning red as she scolded, "Here you are, making things up! I shouldn't have come here with you. How am I supposed to look President Young in the eye?"

This was far too embarrassing. The more Lily thought about it, the more ashamed she felt.

Darryl—helplessly accused—yelled in defense, "Oh, darling. Forget it if you don't believe me, but I've caught a cold!"

Darryl rushed into the toilet hastily after saying that, avoiding the impending disaster.

"Huh? Are you going to the toilet to..."

As she watched Darryl rush into the toilet, a disturbing image flashed in her mind, turning her face an even deeper shade of red. She stomped her feet as she went back into the kitchen.

Darryl pretended not to hear it. He tossed the tissue into the bin and washed his face with water.

Suddenly, the doorbell rang. Yvonne had just recovered from the embarrassment as she walked over to open the door. Since they had company over every day, she thought it was just another guest. However, when she opened the door, a bunch of well-built men dressed in black rushed into the house.

The man leading them was Skyler Burr!

"Tie up these three women!" Skyler growled in anger.

In an instant, the men surrounded the three of them, tying them up with rope.

"Darryl, show yourself!" Skyler roared as he kicked the toilet door open.

Chapter 117

Oh, no! Skyler Burr was here!

Daryl was relieving himself when he heard a loud smack from the toilet door being kicked open.

"Skyler Burr, are you mad? I'm the East King!" Darryl tried to pretend, not having any idea what an East King even was.

"Yeah, go on," Skylar sniggered. "Keep pretending to be the East King. Today, I'll make you cry."

By then, the three women were tied up by the men as they were pushed into the living room. They were no ordinary men, but the disciples of the Heaven Cult!

Darryl was furious, but he knew there was no way he could fight them alone. He took a deep breath to cool off.

A faint smile appeared on Skyler's lips. "Follow me," he hissed.

With that, he walked into the bedroom. Darryl had no choice but to follow him in. Skyler wanted to speak with Darryl in private since he was the one who stole the 'Ascension of the Nine Dragons' from

the Grandmaster. He kept the secret well, and his followers had no clue. After all, it was a death sentence for stealing the Grandmaster's secret manual. Skyler had always stayed alert. He closed the door and coldly looked at Darryl.

"Where's the secret manual?" Skyler questioned, holding up his fist.

"What secret manual?" Darryl played dumb.

Skyler's glare darkened.

"Darryl Darby, don't you dare challenge my patience. I'll let you off the hook for pretending to be the East King, but I need the 'Ascension of the Nine Dragons' back. Or else, I'll make you regret it.

After a slight pause, he continued, "You seem to care about the three women outside, don't you? I don't mind entertaining them before I kill you. I'll tell you what; the men who came with me, they haven't touched any women in quite a while."

'Damn!' Darryl swore when he heard that.

"Fine, I'll return it to you," he sighed. "The manual isn't with me at the moment. It's somewhere else."

"Do I look dumb enough to believe that?" Skyler warned, looking deadly.

Darryl answered helplessly, "It's really not with me

now."

"Alright, you have half an hour to hand me the manual. Or else, stay tuned for a livestream of my men having fun with the three women outside," Skyler threatened, his eyes flickering.

Darryl shook his head helplessly. There was no other way out, but to return the manual to him. Luckily, he had already learned and mastered all the teachings and techniques taught in the manual.

When Skyler was about to open the door, a thumping sound was heard.

Bam!

Suddenly, the strongly built Skyler collapsed to the ground, his body convulsing uncontrollably. His face was distorted as he moaned in pain.

"Ah!" Skyler rolled around on the floor, suffering from the pain.

Damn, what just happened? He was fine just a moment ago.

Skyler kept rolling on the floor, his whole body covered in sweat. He never would have expected the toxin from the Heaven Cult Elixir would activate this very moment!

All disciples of Heaven Cult must take this Elixir

now."

"Alright, you have half an hour to hand me the manual. Or else, stay tuned for a livestream of my men having fun with the three women outside," Skyler threatened, his eyes flickering.

Darryl shook his head helplessly. There was no other way out, but to return the manual to him. Luckily, he had already learned and mastered all the teachings and techniques taught in the manual.

When Skyler was about to open the door, a thumping sound was heard.

Bam!

Suddenly, the strongly built Skyler collapsed to the ground, his body convulsing uncontrollably. His face was distorted as he moaned in pain.

"Ah!" Skyler rolled around on the floor, suffering from the pain.

Damn, what just happened? He was fine just a moment ago.

Skyler kept rolling on the floor, his whole body covered in sweat. He never would have expected the toxin from the Heaven Cult Elixir would activate this very moment!

All disciples of Heaven Cult must take this Elixir

refined by their Grandmaster. Once ingested, an antidote must be taken annually, or else the disciple would die of broken veins.

However, only the one and only Grandmaster possessed the antidote to the Elixir. Therefore, all the disciples treated their Grandmaster with their utmost respect and loyalty because their lives depended on the Grandmaster. If they had offended the Grandmaster, they would not be given the antidote. They would end up dead.

Skyler was meant to take his antidote today. He planned to visit the Grandmaster at the Altar today to receive his antidote, then secretly return the stolen manual to its original place. This way, nobody would have known the manual was ever stolen. Unfortunately, now that it was stolen by Darryl, his plan was ruined. Without an antidote, he had no choice but to wait for his impending death!

As Skyler suffered, he stared at Darryl with murderous intent, a look filled with hatred. At the same time, Darryl was observing him.

"Skyler, looking at you, I'm guessing you must've taken the Heaven Cult Elixir, right?" Darryl speculated, with a knowing smile.

'What? How did he know about the Elixir?' Skyler trembled while looking at Darryl with wonder. He

endured the pain and nodded.

'So it is the Heaven Cult Elixir,' Darryl mumbled to himself.

When he read the "Infinite Elixir" manual, he remembered learning about the Heaven Cult Elixir. When the toxin broke out, it was precisely like what Skyler was going through. However, the manual also recorded the recipe of its antidote, which was relatively simple. In fact, the Bicolor Flower he got earlier was the main ingredient.

Darryl smiled proudly, "I can give you the antidote, but you'll have to promise me to let go of the three women outside."

What? This dude had the antidote? Impossible! The Heaven Cult Elixir, and its antidote? These were the secrets of the Grandmaster Heaven Cult! Even the Grandmistress did not know it. Where did he learn them from?

"Okay, I promise! Save me, save me..." he wailed.

Skyler was struggling in immense pain. When the toxin broke out, he felt as if a million ants were crawling in his veins, extremely uncomfortable. He would agree with whatever Darryl said to save himself. Although the three women outside were very tempting, they were nothing compared to his dear life!

"I'll ask you again. If I give you the antidote, will you let them go? You will keep your words, yes?" Darryl asked slowly and calmly.

"I promise, please save me..." Skyler was covered in sweat as he articulated each word through his gritted teeth.

"Alright, I'll trust you this time." With that said, he walked to the stove and turned on the gas. He took out the Bicolor Flower and started refining the antidote.

Chapter 118

"You're lucky that you met me today, or else you'd be dead in no time," Darryl scoffed as he put the Bicolor Flower into the clay pot. He began to prepare the other ingredients.

Other than the Bicolor Flower, the antidote required rice vinegar and peony petals. Darryl stupefied Skyler as he watched him work.

Was he refining the antidote right there? Did he know the recipe, or was he just pretending? The Heaven Cult Elixir's antidote... How could someone else other than the Grandmaster know about it?

Questions flooded Skyler's mind. Finally, an elixir appeared in Darryl's hand. He was done!

"Eat it," Darryl demanded as he put the pill in Skyler 's mouth. Although Darryl seemed calm, he was nervous deep down. If the pill did not work and Skyler died, the disciples outside would assume he killed Skyler. It would turn out mortifying.

However, Darryl was overthinking. In less than five minutes, Skyler's pale face returned to normal, and his body stopped twitching.

Darryl sighed in relief. It seemed that the 'Infinite

Elixir' was true! He had successfully refined two Elixirs, first the Godly pill, and now this antidote.

"Thank you...thank you!" Skyler finally stood up, staggering.

What happened next caught Darryl entirely off guard.

Skyler dropped to his knees with tears rolling down his cheeks.

"Darryl... Oh, no. Brother Darryl, please save my brothers. They all ingested the Elixir a day later than I did. Without the antidote, they will die tomorrow. Please, I beg you..." he sobbed.

With that, he bowed his head onto the ground three times.

Darryl lowered his head to look at him and sighed.

To be honest, the Heaven Cult did not make a good impression on him. As they said, this cult was full of evil and violent disciples. Yet, as he looked at Skyler—who begged on behalf of his brothers—he knew he was a man of his words. Even as a high-ranking Master, he went on his knees to plead for the lives of his brothers!

Skyler's act moved Daryl as he nodded.

"Skyler, I'm very impressed by how you treat your

brothers. However, to make this antidote, I'll need an essential ingredient. It is the Bicolor Flower that I used."

Excitement filled Skyler's face.

"Brother Darryl, this ingredient is not difficult to find. I know a place with plenty of Bicolor Flowers! However, the place is dangerous, with many beasts lurking around. Don't worry; I'll ask my brothers to get them for you. I could bring you there with us if you'd prefer!"

Darryl was enthralled! He knew that the Bicolor Flower was the critical ingredient in many recipes. If he could get ahold of a large number of flowers, he could refine other elixirs. To him, this was something meaningful.

"I'll ask my brothers to pick the flowers right now!" Skyler beamed as turned around, preparing to leave. After a few stepped, he turned back again and bowed down to Darryl.

"Brother Darryl, I came here today to look for trouble, yet you saved my life. I salute your kindness! From today onwards, I will follow you around to do anything you instruct me to."

With that, urgent sincerity glimmered in his eyes. " Brother Darryl," Skyler exclaimed. "Please be our Hall Master! I will hand over my position to you!"

Huh?

To join the Heaven Cult? Darryl was caught off guard, wanting to reject the offer instinctively. This cult was full of violence. He did not want to get involved with it, but he needed an excuse to reject the offer.

"You're kidding me!" Darryl smiled bitterly. "How could you simply hand over your position? Didn't the Grandmaster appoint you?"

"Brother Darryl, you're mistaken," Skyler shook his head. "In the Heaven Cult, only the Yin and Yang Messengers and the Four Guardian Kings were elected by the Grandmaster. As for the Hall Master, it is usually appointed by the brothers. We merely have to inform the Guardian King above us. The White Tiger governs the Hall in Donghai City. Once Brother Darryl agrees, I'll report to the White Tiger right away. What do you say?"

"This..."

A glint of disappointment flashed on Skyler's face. " To Brother Darryl, we might come across as a cult; I won't be surprised if you don't want to be a part of us."

Darryl waved his hand, hastily, "No, you're mistaken! I did not look down on you," he

interjected. Following that, Darryl gritted his teeth and announced, "Fine, I promise you."

He had no way to reject him. They were a bunch of sincere and honest men. He just could not!

"That's great news!" Skyler was pleased. He knelt on his knees, "Greetings to our Hall Master from your disciple, Skyler Burr."

"Please get up," Darryl helped him up.

Damn it, what just happened? Have I become a Hall Master?

Skyler was bursting with excitement beside him. " Brother Darryl, I'll inform the brothers to pick the Bicolor Flowers right away!" he exclaimed and left with the other men hurriedly.

In the living room, the three women who were tied up sighed in relief after seeing the men leave. They had no idea what had happened since Darryl and Skyler talked in the bedroom.

Darryl waltzed into the living room with a joyful smile, ready to untie them. His determination was strong; having three beautiful ladies in front of him, not tempting whatsoever. They were even tied up!

As he walked closer to them, their light fragrance grew stronger. Yvonne was in a long dress, gentle

and elegant; Lily was in tight shorts, hot and sexy; and Jade was in a mini-skirt, her fair legs charming. Even the Heaven Cult disciples had a hard time containing themselves while looking at them.

Chapter 119

"Darryl, please untie us. Also, who were those people? What were they doing here?" Lily asked quietly.

"Nothing much," Darryl shook his head. " I don't even know them. It was a misunderstanding; they came for the wrong person."

He would not tell anyone about him becoming the Hall Master, of course. After all, the Heaven Cult did not have a good reputation.

While he was untying them, they heard the door open, followed by an outrage.

"Daryl? What do you think you're doing?!"

Looking in the direction of the door, it was Yvonne' s father, Kingston Young. He stood by the door, his face darkened by the horror and rage in his eyes. The corners of his eyes twitched slightly.

"Oh, my lord! Oh my!" Kingston held on to his chest, panting heavily. He slammed his bag on the floor. "I know you youngsters are open-minded nowadays, but this is... just wrong! Oh my!"

Kingston screamed as he held on to his chest, still

breathing heavily. Since they were young, he had brought up his children to be conservative. Right now, he was mortified by the sight of his usually obedient daughter taking part in such an activity!

"It's all the father's fault. It's all my fault!" Kingston retreated a few steps, his eyes rolling back into his head as he almost fainted.

"Uncle Young!" Darryl stopped untying the ladies immediately and rushed over to support Kingston from falling.

'What is he on about! This man is too stubborn!' Darryl thought. He was amused but helpless.

At this moment, Yvonne, Lily, and Jade were flushed with their cheeks burning, utterly embarrassed.

However, that was not the worst of it. Kingston accidentally glanced at the used tissues on the coffee table. He burst out uncontrollably.

Tissue! With white liquid in it!

"Darryl, you—!" Kingston's face turned pale, his lips trembling.

It was his own precious daughter! How could he defile her purity? His daughter Yvonne was a well-educated, attractive, and elegant woman with countless suitors dreaming to even get to know her.

What was so good about Darryl? As others had said, he was just a useless son-in-law!

"Ah... Uncle Young, don't dwell on it too much! I've got to go!" Darryl rambled in a rush to leave the house as soon as possible.

'Damn it! If I don't run away now, when will I ever? If I don't leave by now, who knows when this man will start making up stories?' he thought as he picked up the scissors hurriedly and untied the women. However, he was in such a rush that he accidentally touched Yvonne. Sadly, he did not have time to feel the touch. Darryl brought Lily and Jade along with him as if escaping a disaster.

After they left, Kingston grabbed onto his chest as he reclined onto the sofa languidly.

"Dad, don't be angry! You've misunderstood the situation completely," Yvonne went forward to explain.

"Fine, why don't you tell me what happened?"

"Well, a group of men suddenly barged in..."

Yvonne described the situation from start to finish in a low voice. However, she did not know what Darryl and Skyler were doing in the bedroom.

"A group of men barged into our house and tied the three of you up? They didn't do anything and left?"

After listening to Yvonne's depiction, Kingston sounded more disappointed. "Yvonne, do you really think I'm an idiot? How could you make up such lies?"

"Dad..."

"Yvonne, listen to me. I know you youngsters are more open-minded these days; more creative with things and stuff. But, please keep in mind that you're the heiress of the Young family. Also, Darryl has a wife." With that said, he closed his eyes and shook his head, "Lily, too. How could she allow her husband to do such a thing?"

"I..." Yvonne trailed off, ashamed, and unjustly accused. There was no way to explain the situation to Kingston.

"I really don't understand." The more he thought about it, the more furious he became. "What's so good about Darryl? Other than being able to appraise antiques, what else can he do?"

Yvonne gave up on defending herself. She stood by his side and listened quietly.

"However, if you really like him, I can only respect your decision as your father under one condition. He must divorce Lily, and the other woman—Jade, was it?—He has to cut it off with her too. He must

be loyal to you."

Chapter 120

"Dad, what are you talking about? When did I ever want to..." Yvonne stomped her feet, her face flushed.

Although she outwardly said so, she could not help Darryl's images floating inside her mind. It was challenging to know what Darryl was thinking. He always surprised everyone. According to people, he was pure trash; a cowardly, useless person. Yet, the Darryl that she knew was as mysterious as the ocean. With him, she felt safe.

Strange... Why would she have such weird thoughts? She blushed.

After leaving the house, Lily parked the car at the supermarket entrance.

"Darryl, why don't you send Jade home?" Lily asked. "I'll get some groceries to make you dinner tonight.

'Make me dinner?!' Daryl thought, shockingly. For the past three years, it had always been him making dinner for them. He had never imagined Lily to be the one cooking for him.

"Sure, sure!" Darryl nodded, driving away after

seeing Lily enter the supermarket.

The two of them remained in the car. Seeing that Jade had become awkward, Darryl laughed it off. " Don't be nervous. I don't bite."

"No, I'm not nervous," she whispered, placing her hands between her thighs awkwardly. He did not bite, but she was still afraid of him.

The other night at the Moonlit River, she saw—with her own eyes—Samson Facey, Harry's godfather, bowing down to Darryl. Today, he even scolded Felix Blakely through the phone.

Jade regretted having disdained Darryl in the past by making him do her laundry. Who would have known that he had such patience?

"I know you're Lily's best friend," Darryl spoke, " since the start of our marriage, I know you treat her well with your whole heart. You always thought of her whenever there was something good. Look, I'd like to share some good news with you."

Darryl glanced at her. "I'm about to start up a real estate company," he continued. "I'd like to hire you as the chairman."

"R-really?" A happy and excited grin formed on Jade's face.

Darryl smiled and nodded in return.

He had done his research. Currently, the two best industries to invest in were the entertainment industry and the real estate industry. In the next ten years, these industries foresee stable growth. Since consumers nowadays would spend all their money on their idols, the entertainment industry had its potential. But, he already owned Platinum Corporation, along with its successful shows featuring famous superstars. Therefore, it was time to invest in the real estate industry.

Darryl knew that Felix Blakely was doing quite well with his real estate business. Since Felix wanted to develop his business outside the province, Darryl did not want to create any further conflict. He knew that some land beside Donghai City was to be used for underground stations. Once Darryl established the real estate company, he would buy the land before construction. He would make some good money while they built the underground stations.

To establish a real estate company, Darryl needed a trusted chairman. Although Jade was a woman, she had experience working in real estate, and she currently worked for an interior design company. Therefore, she was more than qualified to be the chairman.

"Your salary will be five times higher than the usual market rate," Darryl waved his hand as he spoke.

Jade was shocked. Five times higher?

"Thank you! Thank you, Daddy Darryl!" Jade excitedly chirped with joy. All she wanted to do was give a kiss to this man she claimed as her 'Daddy' after offering her such a fantastic job.

"No problem. I do have one condition," Darryl interrupted, "I'm paying extra because you're always with Lily. From now onwards, if Lily faces any problems, you'll update me immediately."

"Your daughter promises to complete her mission!" Jade gushed cheekily.

Chapter 121

August noon, brilliant weather. However, the atmosphere at the Darby Mansion was extremely gloomy.

The clan gathered in the main hall, glancing at Jackson and Rebecca with grim expressions.

"Jackson, have you thought this through?" Drake asked.

"Yes, dad," Jackson nodded. "I have. I fully support Rebecca's decision to have the baby." He looked at Rebecca's belly.

Indeed, she was pregnant. However, she and Jackson had not consummated their marriage.

Ever since the wedding where Rebecca was raped, Jackson gave her space to heal from the trauma. After all, it was distressing for her. However, Jackson did not foresee that Rebecca would get pregnant. One does not need to guess who the father was.

The news of Rebecca's pregnancy spread throughout the entire Darby clan barely within a day.

"Jackson, you're crazy!"

"Yeah, this kid isn't yours. Why are you keeping it?"

"Darryl raped your wife, yet you still want to keep his child?"

Everyone in the family was yelling in indignation. Jackson clenched his fist tightly.

SLAM!

Yumi hit the table. She stood up and said, "Jackson, have you gone mad? Darryl, that filthy animal has humiliated us all by doing such a degrading thing. Now, if you and Rebecca had the baby—and the world knew of this—it would reflect badly on us! We will live in shame!"

"Yes, Jackson. You have to think this through," Florian chimed in. He looked exasperated. If they had carried out a DNA test, he would be busted. He had to stop this no matter what!

Yumi felt the same. If everyone knew the truth, Florian would be done for. He would not be able to live in peace for the rest of his life.

"Big brother, Sister-in-law. We've decided to keep the baby. Don't try to persuade me otherwise," Jackson shook his head.

"Rebecca! Jackson's mad, but why are you following in his lead? You should persuade him! You

're pregnant with that b*stard Darryl's child!" Yumi cried in distress.

Rebecca bit her lip, then she said, "Sister-in-law, please do not worry. I have discussed it with Jackson. No matter what, the child did nothing wrong. It is a precious life. Furthermore, he is a Darby..." Rebecca lowered her head.

The rest of the Darby clan started berating Darryl.

"How unfortunate!"

"Darryl, that filthy animal! Why does Jackson have to bear the burden!"

"Darryl and his family deserve to burn in hell!"

Platinum Corporation: The President's Office.

Darryl instructed Pearl to register a new real estate company. He even thought of the name: Windon Real Estate. Though it is not very elegant, it is easy to remember.

As Pearl left, Darryl could not wait any longer. He fished out the ancient sword. Though it was something he got from a random stall, he felt good about it. The blade was exceptionally rusted, and it needed to be cleaned.

Darryl headed towards the washroom. He found a steel-ball scrub and turned on the tap, starting to

scrub the sword.

It was all in vain. The rust could not be scrubbed off.

What's happening? He used his entire strength to clean it, but the sword remained rusty.

He was about to give up—thinking the sword was worthless—when he accidentally cut himself.

"F*ck!" Darryl swore.

How is the sword still so sharp, even though it's rusted?

His blood dripped onto the sword.

SHIIIING!

Instantly, the blood was absorbed by the sword. It started to glow with a blood-red hue.

KA-CHA!

The rust was all gone. The sword finally revealed its true form.

Chapter 122

The sword was blood-red with a realistic dragon carved on it. It was about three feet and two inches long. 'Blood Drinking Sword' was engraved into the other side of the blade.

What was happening?

Darryl could barely react when a buzzing, mysterious voice entered his head.

"The Blood Drinking Sword has acknowledged its master. Current level: Category Red, Level One."

'Wow! Even weapons have their own levels as well. ' Category Red, Level One' must be strong!" thought Darryl excitedly.

He took out his phone and dialed Megan. Megan was a Senior Sister in the Emei sect. She had to know more than him.

The moment the phone call got through, Darryl asked, "Officer Castello, do weapons have different levels?"

They had not contacted each other in many days, yet this was the first question he asked?

Megan nodded. "Yes, they do," she replied. "Did

you acquire one recently?"

"A sword," Darryl laughed. "It was recent. It felt odd, so I called you up for your advice. How are the levels categorized?"

"Why should I tell you?" she chuckled.

Uh...

Megan continued, "Call me 'my good sister.' I'll tell you then."

This woman is so vengeful! Previously, when they were kidnapped at the Grandmaster Heaven Cult, he made her call him 'my good brother.' Clearly, she had not forgotten about this.

Darryl was flabbergasted, unable to open his mouth.

"How about I treat you to a meal?" he offered.

"Not interested. You either call me 'my good sister', or I'll hang up the phone," she replied firmly.

This woman! Even though Darryl was embarrassed to call her that, his curiosity overtook his pride as he observed the sword in his hands.

"My good sister," he sighed quietly.

"I can't hear you!" Megan giggled, "Louder!"

"My good sister!" Darryl exclaimed in defeat.

"That's more like it. Seeing how sincere you were, I'

ll divulge you. The Cultivator's weapon can be categorized into seven categories according to the colors of the rainbow. In ascending order, the categories are red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo, and violet. Each category has five levels."

'F*ck! So, this sword is at the lowest level? Bloody hell!' Darryl thought to himself sullenly.

"Even though it might be Category Red, Level One, it is still stronger than any ordinary weapon," Megan continued. "Some weapons have unique hidden skills. Why don't you bring it over and let me have a look?" 1

"Sure," he agreed. "Where are you?"

"I'm at the bank. I'll meet you here," she confirmed.

At the bank entrance, Darryl decided to leave his sword in the car to be less conspicuous.

There was a queue inside. Megan mentioned that she was handling special businesses, so Darryl headed over to the VIP section.

A woman in uniform named Sharon Todd stopped him dead in his tracks, questioning him with a professional smile. "Sir, may I help you?

"I'm looking for a friend," he grinned in return. " She's handling some business inside."

Business? With such ordinary clothes, Darryl looked

like a typical white-collar salaryman. How could he enter the VIP section?

The woman denied Darryl with the same smile, but her eyes dimmed. "I'm sorry, this is the VIP section —not everyone is allowed in. If you're looking for someone, please wait in the main lobby."

Darryl was stunned. He shook his head and replied, "Then... Then, I'll make a deposit."

The woman maintained her smile, but her tone was impatient. "You can do that in the main lobby. There are automated machines there too. We do not serve regular customers in the VIP section."

'If you want to make any transactions in the VIP section, you need to at least have a million bucks. I doubt this man even has a hundred thousand bucks, ' Sharon thought to herself.

"Alright, then. I'll make a withdrawal," Darryl said calmly.

"Sir, I've told you," she sighed haughtily. "It doesn' t matter if you make a deposit or a withdrawal. You can do it in the main lobby. You can even do it using the automated machines."

'What's with this man? Is he mentally ill?' Sharon complained to herself. 'He's clearly here to cause trouble! Can't he see himself in the mirror?

Standing in front of the VIP section will tarnish our bank's image!'

She was extremely impatient. Facing tons of people like him daily—who have nothing better to do—was such a waste of time.

Chapter 123

Darryl shook his head. 'Bloody hell, am I not wearing a good set of clothes? I just bought them! Why do people keep looking down on me?'

Even though he bought it from a street vendor, it was cheap and comfortable!

"Fine, I won't go in," Darryl exclaimed, accepting his defeat. He could not be bothered to start an argument with her.

He was about to phone Megan to let her know that he would be at the entrance when Sharon stomped over to him in her high heels.

"If you want to make a phone call, do it outside! Do not disturb our VIPs," she ordered.

"I can't even make a call?" Darryl was dumbfounded.

"No!" she shrieked, pointing towards the main entrance. "The VIP entrance is not for you to loiter around. Make your call outside."

A security guard walked over. "Sir, this is the VIP section," he frowned. "Please don't linger around here. You'll disturb the others."

The other customers started to notice the commotion.

"Who is this poor, broke dude trying to enter the VIP section?"

"He must be trying to skip the queue!"

"Look, isn't that the Lyndon family's live-in son-in-law?" someone piped up suddenly.

"Haha! It's true!"

Sharon became bossier towards Darryl after listening to their comments.

'So, he's just a good-for-nothing, toyboy, live-in son-in-law. He's not even an honest white-collar salaryman,' she thought.

"Guard, please escort him out," she ordered the guard while pointing at Darryl.

"I just want to make a withdrawal at the VIP section," he sighed.

'Is this man mentally ill?'

"How much do you want to withdraw?" she sneered. "Ten thousand? Or twenty? At the main lobby, you can withdraw up to fifty thousand bucks per day. I'm sure it's more than enough for you. In the VIP section, we only allow transactions of a

million bucks or more."

"Fine, I'll withdraw five million bucks. In cash," Darryl demanded. He took out his card, shoving it into Sharon's hand.

Everyone heard him loud and clear.

"Haha! No way! Does he want to withdraw five million?

"I guess he was so mistreated by the Lyndon family that he must've gone insane!"

The crowd started jeering.

On the other hand, Sharon was trembling—her legs feeling like jelly. The card... was it an Amethyst Bank Black Card?

At the exact moment, the bank manager, Lee, walked out. He glanced at the card in Sharon's hands and was scared half to death. It was a Black Card! There were only three cards issued in the entire Donghai City!

"Sir, I'm the manager of this bank. Allow me to serve you," he smiled politely.

Everyone else was confused. Why was this bank manager treating Darryl so politely? They had no concept of the Black Card.

'No wonder he was the bank manager—he had a

high EQ. He handled situations like this well,' they thought.

Lee took the card from Sharon's trembling hands. The most exclusive card that he had ever seen was a platinum card. He had never encountered the Black Card!

This person cannot be offended—not even the leader of the main branch can afford to!

Lee stared at Sharon, hinting at her to take a step back.

Sharon was stunned, quivering with fear. She was done for, having offended a customer with a Black Card.

"There's no need for you to be involved. I only want to withdraw some cash. Get her to do it," Darryl replied, glaring at Sharon.

Lee nodded. He frowned at her and ordered, "What are you standing there for? Go!" Sharon obeyed, immediately running to the counter.

Darryl took a seat on the sofa as Lee immediately served him a cup of tea. The change in demeanor was jarring.

The onlookers were stunned. Darryl ignored them, enjoying his cup of tea.

Not long after, Sharon appeared with two suitcases

stuffed to the brim with cash.

Chapter 124

Everyone was stunned seeing the two suitcases of cash.

"Sir, this is five million," Sharon approached Darryl with caution. She was extremely polite and did not dare to look Darryl in the eye.

"Now deposit them and take one thousand out," Darryl replied flatly.

He did not need that much cash. One thousand was enough for him. Sharon did not dare disobey. She quickly went and returned shortly with one thousand.

Megan appeared at the same time. "Darryl, you're only withdrawing one thousand, why are you at the VIP section?" she asked with confusion.

Were VIP sections open to the public now? It used to be restricted for transactions worth more than a million. Were banks getting more lenient in their guidelines?

Megan was not in her uniform today. She wore a white shirt, with a body-hugging skirt. She was extremely attractive and onlookers were gawking at her.

"This bank has excellent customer service, they treat me like a VIP even though I only withdrew a thousand bucks," replied Darryl.

He added, "Unlike some people who look down on me for having no money—your fiancé, for instance. He thinks he can look down on others just because he has money."

Megan frowned, she defended, "Darryl, Kent is actually—"

"RUN!" someone screamed out of a sudden.

A few masked men entered the bank.

"What are you doing!" yelled the security guard. One of the men hit the guard with a club, he passed out.

There was an uproar amongst the crowd in the bank.

"Everyone squat on the floor and put your phone down!" the leader screamed. Wearing a camouflage tank top, with tattoos on his arm, holding a gun—he was terrifying.

The crowd fearfully obeyed.

Megan clenched her fist. As a police officer, she could not stand to watch this situation unfold. However, she was outnumbered. There were a dozen men. She could not be reckless. So she bit her

lip and put her phone on the ground.

"These people are the maggots of the society!" Megan was furious.

"Should we stop them?" Darryl offered with a smile.

"Are you crazy? Do you want to die? I recognize a few of them, they're all wanted criminals. A bunch of filthy animals!" Megan replied with a stare.

Darryl shrugged. It seems that Megan was not stupid after all. He was half afraid that she might suddenly stand up and try to arrest them.

The men were experienced—two men were guarding the entrance, while the rest ordered the tellers to fill up bags of cash with no serial numbers. They clearly have done this before. Knowing that getting cash without serial numbers, the police would not be able to track them down.

"B*tch! Are you trying to get yourself killed?" the leader screamed at a lady before she had a chance to ring the alarm. He pointed the gun at her threateningly.

"I'm so...sorry, please don't kill me," the lady trembled with fear, begging for her life.

"F*ck you, you think I'm joking? How dare you try to ring the alarm!" the leader sneered.

The bank was dead silent, no one dared to move a

muscle.

The leader pointed the gun at the lady's head, ignoring her plea. Everyone thought that the lady was going to die. These men were bold enough rob a bank, who was to say that they would not commit murder as well?

He was about to pull the trigger when Megan stopped them.

"How dare you rob a bank in daylight!" she stomped her heels and approached them.

"F*CK, WHAT ARE YOU DOING!" Darryl whispered rather loudly.

He was flabbergasted. There was a saying that goes, 'women with big breasts have no brains'—she clearly had none! Why was she so reckless?

Chapter 125

The men were shocked at Megan's reaction.

They sized her up—high heels, white shirt, and a body-hugging skirt. She was as gorgeous as a movie star!

"I'm a cop! Put down your weapons!" Megan said coldly.

Cop?

The men's expression darkened. They looked at each other, then surrounded Megan.

Darryl's head hurts. This woman had no weapon on her, yet she dared to stand up to them?

He slapped his forehead, then silently crept toward them.

"Brothers, tie her up!" the leader howled. This was an unexpected gift! She was too beautiful.

The men smiled devilish and approached Megan with a rope.

'This woman is such a troublemaker,' thought Darryl. He sighed, then rushed forward.

"Megan, look after the rest, I'll deal with the

robbers!" yelled Darryl. He punched the first robber in the face. The robber could barely react and his body flew across and passed out.

What?! Knocking someone unconscious with only one punch? Was he not a useless live-in son-in-law? How was he so strong? What was his background?

Everyone was stunned.

The robbers hesitated. They did not dare to tackle Darryl. One of the robbers said, "Boss, we've met a tough one."

The leader swore, "F*ck that! He is only one person. What are you all afraid of! Kill him! We don' t have much time left!"

According to their plan, the entire process should take less than five minutes. It had taken way longer than expected! If the police arrived, they would be caught.

The men obeyed their leader and they attacked. Darryl smiled calmly. All these while, cultivating his Internal Energy plus his mastery in Wing Chun, he was not afraid. He took a step back, then kicked one of the robbers. The robber fell in pain.

Darryl did not wait for the rest to react. He served two more punches. One man fell with each punch.

He barely broke a sweat.

Within a minute, all of the men were lying on the floor in pain.

'What? How can one person defeat all my men?' thought the leader. The leader knew how strong his men were. They could easily defeat a street gang. However, Darryl tackled them to the ground effortlessly.

The leader was desperate. He did not want to resort to using the gun, but it seemed he had no choice now. He aimed the gun at Darryl and yelled, "You b* stard! Are you looking for death!"

"Watch out!" Megan screamed. However, Megan knew that from that distance, Darryl could easily dodge the bullet.

Darryl knew this as well. At that moment, he noticed a young girl cowering behind him. If he dodged the bullet, it will definitely hit her.

Chapter 126

'To dodge or not to dodge, that was the question!'

In the fraction of a second, Darryl decisively chose the latter.

As Megan exclaimed, she noticed the female student. Suddenly, her heart quivered.

He... was willing to take the bullets for someone irrelevant.

Megan gave Darryl a strange gaze.

Thoughts were spinning in Megan's mind when the camouflaged man pulled the trigger.

Bang!

Accompanied by a shocking sound, Darryl's body fell backward and blood shot out from his left shoulder.

Darryl took in a sharp inhale when the pain attacked him! However, he gritted his teeth to stop him from making any sound. He retreated a few steps back and had his eyes fixed on the camouflaged man, he cracked a smile. "Your gun skill is not that good."

While talking, Darryl tore a piece of cloth from his

body and quickly wrapped it over his wound.

The entire lobby of the bank was dead silent.

Those people who were lying on the ground had their mouths agape and eyes staring wide in astonishment.

The several robbers who were defeated by Darryl were also speechless.

'What the f*ck...'

'Did he just take a shot and still manage to talk and laugh?'

"You!" Megan stomped anxiously. She anxiously wanted Darryl to watch his mouth as it was not a good time to provoke the robbers!

In fact, Darryl was in so much pain that he painstakingly held it back.

After he took the Universal Pill and became a cultivator, Darryl's physical endurance was much better than ordinary people. When he was abusing the camouflage man with vulgarity, he held a gold bar stealthily in his hand.

There were gold bars and silver bars on the bank's counter. The customers would buy those bars as a choice of investment of their wealth.

Darryl waved his hand and the gold bar landed on

the camouflage man's hand, knocking his gun off to the ground!

"You..."

The camouflaged man was shocked, he was panicking. He quickly grabbed a little girl and placed her in front of him, then he pulled out a dagger and rested it on the girl's neck.

"Motherf*cker! You stand back!" The camouflaged man roared loudly. His eyes were red, and he was agitated!

The little girl cried out loud in horror, tears were streaming down her cheeks.

She was only around four or five years old. So young! Of course, she had never experienced such a terrorizing event in her life! She was scared witless.

'F*ck!'

Darryl cursed furiously and was about to rush over to the girl's rescue.

'Crazy motherf*cker! How could he take such a little girl as a hostage! Even if the little girl was saved eventually, the incident would haunt her for the rest of her life!'

"Don't come over, or I'll kill her! Step back. I said step back, you f*cker!" The camouflaged man

howled loudly, and the dagger in his hand was pressed tightly against the little girl's neck.

The time seemed to have stopped as everyone held their breath with their hearts almost leaping out from their throats. Everyone, except for the robbers.

They never thought that the ringleader would be so vicious and flagrantly held a little girl hostage.

Darryl stopped dead in his tracks, clenching his fists tightly!

"Haha, young man, aren't you powerful? Aren't you good at sparring? Why are you afraid now?" The camouflaged man teased coldly and peeked at Megan, "And you! You try coming one step closer and you'll see what's next!"

The camouflaged man laughed sinisterly.

"Quick! Put the money in the car and let's go."

The brawny men took the money and walked out quickly. On the other hand, the camouflage man held the little girl in his arms, his eyes glued on Darryl.

When they got outside, the group got into a van and drove quickly toward the outer suburbs.

As soon as the robbers left, everyone in the hall was relieved.

Megan wasted no time, she ran on her high heels after the robbers.

Before she reached the door, she turned around and went to Darryl. She asked anxiously, "Darryl, can you... can you drive me to catch up with them?"

'What?'

Daryl was puzzled. His shoulder was still bleeding profusely!

"You better call up the police. It's not safe for the two of us to go after them," Darryl suggested.

He was dying to save the little girl, but things were not as simple as what they thought!

They had to act wisely and not put their lives at risk.

"No, we have to keep up with them." Megan was anxious. "Otherwise we won't be able to find them. Their hideouts are obscure. The little girl might not survive until we get help! Those people don't take her life seriously! Darryl, come with me, will you?

Chapter 127

The robbers' van sped toward the outskirts. The robbers in the car removed the black cloth on their heads one by one.

Their eyes flashed with excitement when they saw the big bags of money in the back of the van.

"We have got a problem, Brother Walter. The brat and the policewoman are behind us."

A robber glanced back inadvertently and noticed the car behind them, he shouted at the camouflaged man in panic.

The other robbers quickly looked around to check, their expressions changed drastically. There were so many of them in the bank, yet they were unable to subdue the brat. Instead, Darryl managed to counter-attack them. Besides, Darryl seemed to be just fine even after he took a shot from Brother Walter!

"What up? Don't tell me that you guys are afraid of a brat like him! Drive up the mountain. The mountain has a poor signal. Even if they call up the police, it will not be easy for them to locate us." The camouflaged man called Brother Walter wore a grim

expression and rebuked in anger when he noticed that Darryl and Megan were indeed behind their van.

Even though he sounded confident, there was anxiety and anger in his eyes.

The camouflaged man was named Lance Walter. He was a desperado who had done almost all evil. He fled to Donghai City and was thinking of making a big fortune, but he was unlucky to have encountered Darryl, the tough snag.

Fortunately, despite the twists and turns, he got the money.

Moreover, he had a little girl as a hostage, so he knew the other party dared not act rashly. He could possibly get rid of them if he was vigilant. Perhaps, he could get a taste of beauty.

Haha! A grin spread across Lance Walter's face when he thought of the sweet possibilities.

In the Audi R8 behind the van...

"Darryl, go faster and find a chance to stop them." Seeing Darryl who was unruffled behind the wheels, Megan had to urge him anxiously.

Darryl smiled faintly. "Don't worry, they will stop when they reach the side of the mountain."

The group of robbers was heading toward the

barren mountain north of Donghai City, where Darryl encountered the tomb raiders last time.

Darryl remembered very clearly that the barren mountain had not been developed, so the paved way was only built halfway up the mountain. The van had to pull up to a stop when it reached the end of the road.

Moreover, he had confidence that his sports car could easily outperform the van. If he were to forcibly stop the van and caused a collision, his sports car would suffer damage. Although both he and Megan were cultivators that could survive in the event of a crash. The little girl in the van might be injured due to the impact.

Even if they did not intercept the robber, the robber would not harm the little girl for she was their safety amulet before they managed to escape.

How could Megan stay calm? All she wanted was to rescue the hostage quickly and then subdue the robbers.

After all, it was her responsibility as a policewoman.

Just as she was about to urge Darryl again, she turned her head and noticed Darryl's shoulder that was bathed with blood. She took the edge off, bit her lips and said, "Is your wound okay?"

She felt embarrassed that she had just realized

Darryl, too, was injured.

'Why have I forgotten that he was injured and only had my eyes on the robbers?'

Besides...

He was injured because he saved a female college student who was a stranger to him.

"It's okay." Darryl forced a smile and responded casually.

Two cars went up the mountain one after the other, and soon the road up the mountain had come to an end.

A group of robbers got out of the car, holding the little girl.

Megan quickly opened the car door and stepped out on her high heels.

Darryl glanced at the back seat and hid the Blood Drinking Sword in his clothes. Although the sword was of lower power, it was a weapon in anyways.

"You two are such a nuisance. You just won't give up, will you? If you dare to take a step forward, I will kill her." Lance's eyes flashed with anger, and he threatened coldly. Putting the little girl in front of himself again, he raised his dagger.

The little girl seemed to be extremely terrified. She

did not cry but her face was chalk white.

Lance screamed as he looked around and noticed that they were surrounded by a vast stretch of forest.

It was because of the man and woman duo that they were forced up that desolated mountain. Otherwise, he and his companions would have successfully left Donghai City, happily splitting the money.

"Hurry up and put down your weapons. Let the child go. You still have a chance to turn over a new leaf. Don't dig your own graves." Megan said solemnly.

Lance laughed coldly. "Stop talking nonsense. I am not afraid of you, police if I dared to do this in the first place!"

Megan's body trembled when she heard that.

There were always such *ssholes in society! Causing disarray in society.

Darryl also had a long face. He took a step forward and stared at Lance. "You use a child as a shield and keep saying that you are not afraid of the police. As a man, do you still have the cheek to say that?"

"What the hell are you suggesting?"

Lance was angry. He had homicidal tendencies.

For more than a year, he had done more than a dozen heinous crimes, big or small, with his group of members. Things went smoothly under his planning and command.

In the eyes of his members, he was a perfect planner and big brother to them. He had their respect and admiration.

Chapter 128

He was piqued to be humiliated by the young brat in front of him.

"What? Am I wrong? Let the child go if you still have a teeny bit of guilty conscience and humanity. " Darryl kept his straight face and said as he continued to approach the robbers.

"Motherf*cker! Stop it, you f*cking stop right there!" Lance shouted, hatred ablaze in his eyes.

'What is Darryl doing?'

Megan wondered anxiously. She was all tensed up. She thought that Darryl must be out of his mind. What if the robber were flurried and they ended up hurting the innocent child?

Darryl cracked a smile. "To be honest, I admire your courage. You dare to rob the bank with just a few members. However, it's shameful to take a little girl as a hostage. Your goal is just to escape, isn't it? What if you take me as a hostage instead and release the little girl."

Lance did not respond, his eyes fired up in intense rage.

Darryl smiled indifferently and continued, "You

hate me, don't you? This little girl is innocent, and you have no grievances and grudges against her."

"Good, good, good!"

Lance's eyes were red, he hated Darryl a lot!

'Since he wanted to be the hostage so badly, I'll grant him his wish!'

Lance clenched his fist tight and hissed between his gritted teeth, "You want to be a hero, don't you? You think you're f*cking awesome? I'll make you cry today! You come over slowly. Don't you pull any tricks."

Darryl smiled and spread his arms to show that he had no weapons. Then, he walked over slowly.

"Darryl!"

Megan's face was complicated and shouted out loud.

Darryl had just taken the bullet for a stranger female student.

And he was about to put himself at risk to rescue the little girl.

'Is he not afraid at all?'

Megan bit her lip as she watched Darryl's back.

He was known as the useless live-in son-in-law. That was not true, he was really a good man...

Darryl walked forward step by step.

Ten meters.

Five meters.

Three meters.

As he got closer and closer, Megan's heart was beating faster and faster.

When he was within the last one meter range, Lance let go of the little girl.

The little girl was frightened and she ran to Megan quickly.

At the same time, Lance grabbed Darryl and the dagger in his hand was about to be placed on Darryl' s neck!

Darryl smiled coldly, and drew out his Blood Drinking Sword in the nick of the time!

Hum!

The sword light released by the Blood Drinking Sword almost dyed half of the mountain in red!

"Argh!"

Lance could not open his eyes because of the sharp flash of light. Before he could react, he felt a dreadful pain on his wrist. He screamed aloud when

he lost grip of his dagger and it fell to the ground!

Blood oozed out from his wrist and stained the sword!

"Argh! Argh!"

Lance was screaming like a pig, He ran into the thick forests quickly!

"I'll remember you! You wait for me right there! I'll go after you!" Lance shouted while running for his life. In a blink of an eye, the dozen robbers had disappeared in the forest.

Darryl did not want to chase after them. When he drew out his Blood Drinking Sword just now, his fast action tore his bullet wound up and his arm was bleeding profusely.

'F*ck!'

Darryl pressed the bullet hole hard to stop the bleeding. A mysterious voice suddenly appeared in his mind!

"The Blood Drinking Sword has been successfully upgraded, the current level is Level Two Red Stage!"

'What? Upgraded?'

'F*ck! Even the weapon can be upgraded?'

Chapter 129

"You... your wound..."

Megan walked up to Darryl quickly. She asked about his wound anxiously.

"It's okay." Darryl shook his head, looking relaxed.

In fact, he was just holding the pain in.

His wound was affected when he wielded the Bloody Drinking Sword earlier, he was in a lot of pain.

Megan nodded and said nothing more. She still looked very worried through her eyes when she took the little girl into the car.

The moment Darryl got into his car, he felt a burst of unbearable pain spread from his shoulder. He cursed silently. The bullet was stuck in his wound for a long time. If he did not get it out in time, he might lose too much blood.

Instead of starting the car engine, he untied the cloth wrapped around his shoulder and used his internal energy to force the bullet out.

When the bullet popped out of his wound, Darryl quivered in pain. His forehead was covered with sweat! 'F*ck! Fortunately, I became a cultivator.

Otherwise, I might be incapacitated if the bullet is left in my wound for too long.'

Megan was extremely worried. She wanted to offer help, but she dared not because of the dark surrounding. She feared that she would hurt Darryl by accident if she was unable to see the wound clearly. Therefore, she had to let Darryl handle it himself.

After the bullet was out, Darryl started driving away from the mountain.

He looked through the rearview mirror and saw the little girl was holding his car key. She was trying to tie her delicate little rag doll to the key.

Darryl was curious, so he asked her with a smile, " Little sister, what are you doing?"

The little girl answered in a serious tone, "Thank you big brother for saving me. This is my favorite toy. I take it with me wherever I go. Now I give it to you, big brother. It can protect you and keep you safe."

Hearing those innocent words, Megan showed a gentle smile and reached out to caress the little girl' s head.

The atmosphere in the car was sweet and warm, nothing like they had just experienced a dangerous

situation.

Somehow, Darryl was puzzled.

He thought that a young child must be frightened after experiencing a terrifying event.

However, the little girl looked like she was recovering from the fright quite well apart from being a little panicked at the start.

'Are children these days so emotionally strong?'

After the little girl tied her doll to his car key, Darryl took the key and started the engine.

He turned the car around and drove down the mountain. Megan asked softly, "Little sister, where is your home? Do you know the way home? We will send you home later, OK?"

The little girl tilted her head and thought for a moment before saying, "Just send me to the entrance of the bank. I will go home by myself."

'Why?'

Darryl was alarmed.

Megan was puzzled.

The little girl stretched out her little hand and pointed to the injury on Darryl's shoulder. "Big brother is seriously injured, he has to go to the

hospital. I... I don't want to take up his time."

Darryl and Megan exchanged looks and they could not help but smile sweetly.

The little girl was so young yet she was so sensible. Whoever her parents were, they must be blessed to have her.

Feeling touched, Darryl smiled warmly. He held the steering wheel with one hand and stroked the little girl's hair with the other. "Big brother is fine, I will send you home first."

The little girl insisted. "No, big brother should go see a doctor."

After that, the little girl explained, "My home is near the bank. My family can pick me up from the bank if you send me there."

"Just listen to her. I will explain to the bank's staff when we get there." Megan decided after thinking it through.

Darryl nodded. At that very moment, his phone vibrated. It was a text message from Yvonne so Darryl did not care too much about it. If it was not a call, it was probably nothing urgent.

At the Young family residence...

Yvonne sat on the sofa, holding the phone in both

of her hands.

'Why isn't he replying to my message?'

Yvonne bit her lips tightly. She was not sure why but she just wanted to talk to him.

There was no reply after a long time. Yvonne felt like giving Darryl a call but she was shy.

Meanwhile, at the entrance of the bank...

After sending the little girl away, Megan got into the car anxiously. "Go to the hospital and fix your wound."

Darryl smiled slightly. "It's okay. Why go to the hospital? I've taken out the bullets."

Megan frowned. "No way! What if you catch an infection?"

As a police officer, she knew full well that if the kind of gunshot wound was not treated in time, it might risk getting infected.

Daryl, on the other hand, was relaxed. "Don't worry about this small injury."

"No, don't take it lightly." Megan was anxious, " Why aren't you worried about yourself at all?"

Chapter 130

Megan bit her lips and stopped talking when she noticed that Darryl was looking at her with a smile.

'Have I cared too much about him?'

"It's really not necessary. It's already late at night and the doctors are off work."

"Then... your wound, how are you going to deal with it?" Megan frowned. She was quiet for a while before saying softly, "Why don't you go to my house? I'll help you clean up the wound and apply some medication."

Darryl laughed and teased her, "Why do you care so much about me? Are you afraid that I will die?"

"I..." Megan panicked for no reason. "After all, you were injured because of me..."

It was already late at night. Megan knew that it was inappropriate to invite a man to her house at such late hours.

However, he was injured. How could his wound be left untreated? And it was exactly because of her that he was injured...

Darryl nodded. "Well, it's okay if you want me to go

to your house and treat my wound, but you have to promise me one condition."

"What is it?" Megan asked quickly.

Darryl smiled slightly. "You have to call me ‘Good Brother’."

Megan was stunned, her face flushed. She stomped her feet in anger, "You..."

How could Darryl pull a joke on her after all that had happened?

Then again, Megan had no choice but to compromise. She called, "Good Brother."

Darryl happily responded and then started the car.

Megan was both angry and amused.

‘How old is he? How could he joke like that after suffering the gunshot?"

When they arrived back at Megan’s home, Darryl sat on the sofa and Megan quickly took the medical kit out before she removed her high heels.

She prepared the gauze, disinfectant and other necessary things, then leaned over to examine Darryl’s wound.

Megan was a gorgeous lady.

At such a close distance, Darryl was attracted by the

nice scent of Megan's body.

He could not tell under her police uniform that her body was rather curvy.

Megan was blushing when she noticed Darryl's gaze on her. Her hand pressed on the wound suddenly.

Ouch!

Darryl took a sharp breath and said wryly, "What are you doing? Do you want to kill me?"

'This woman is too ruthless!'

"You look at me again and I'll dig out your eyeballs. " Megan blushed and glared fiercely.

Darryl was helpless. "If you are putting a bandage on my wound, of course, I have to look at you. Otherwise, where do I look?"

"You knew where you were looking at!" Megan said grimly.

Yue Feng was a cultivator after all. After his wound was treated, he should be fine. Megan squatted on the ground and wrapped the gauze around Darryl's arm. She looked at Darryl solemnly. "What were you thinking? Why didn't you dodge when they fired the shot?"

Darryl answered with a smile. "If I dodge, the innocent will be hurt."

In fact, Megan also saw the female college student at that time. She asked because she wondered what Darryl was thinking.

Megan felt touched when she heard Darryl's answer.

'He was fearless and gave himself up to take the bullet on behalf of a stranger girl! How much courage is needed to do that?'

She had seen Darryl being mocked and ridiculed all the time. Even his name, Darryl was a joke in Donghai City.

"Why are you looking at me?" Darryl smiled nonchalantly when he noticed the changes in Megan 's gaze. "Actually, I am just an ordinary person. If I must pick something special about myself, then perhaps, I feel special to be a cultivator."

Megan shook her head and said, "No, you are really...really...really courageous today."

"Really? Don't you adore me too much. I'm married, " Darryl joked.

Again, Megan was blushing. She glared defiantly at Darryl.

'This Darryl is just too full of himself, isn't he?'

"It's late. I'll take a bath and go to bed. You can rest here tonight if you want to," Megan stood up and

said softly.

She did not mean to offer up her place for him to stay overnight. She thought she was telling him to go implicitly by saying that.

Unexpectedly, Darryl nodded in agreement. "OK, I will sleep on the sofa."

'What?'

Megan stomped angrily!

'Is he really sleeping here? If I let this man sleep here tonight, how would I explain to Kent Hough when he finds out?'

Chapter 131

She saw Darryl start to undress and lay on the couch.

"You!" Megan glared at him but ended up just leaving him to his own devices since he was going to sleep on the couch.

Meanwhile, Darryl took out his phone while lying down. There was a reason behind him sleeping there.

It was already quite late. If he were to return home now, Lily would not be able to sleep well again. Besides, he would have also disturbed Samantha who would later grumble at him.

Not long after, Megan walked out and pointed toward the couch. "You shall sleep here tonight. Behave yourself and don't go walking around."

After braving herself to say that, Megan quickly walked into her bedroom.

Soon, she was holding her clothes and walking towards the bathroom.

She hesitated when she was about to close the door and gave Darryl a glare.

Without waiting for her to speak, Darryl smiled and

said, "Don't worry, I won't peep."

Megan's face turned red with her heart racing as she quickly closed the door.

The sound of water splashing emerged shortly from the bathroom.

Her house had been renovated following the European design such that her bathroom doors were made from frosted glass. Despite not being able to see what was going on inside, Darryl could still make out a faded body shadow of Megan from where he was.

Water continued flowing in the bathroom and Darryl could clearly see each of Megan's movements.

Gulp!

Under his wild imagination, Darryl swallowed a gulp of his own saliva.

He had never imagined he would be able to enjoy such 'privileges' and sighed before his cellphone suddenly vibrated.

It was Yvonne's message again.

Darryl was stunned when he checked his cellphone.

There were about 70 to 80 messages from Yvonne!

There was almost a message every 30 minutes from

the evening till now. The messages were rather similar such as 'Are you there?', 'Darryl, what are you doing?' and etc.

"She's desperately looking for me. Could it be an emergency?" Darryl mumbled and gave her a call.

At that time.

The Young's Residence.

Yvonne was in her pajamas when the phone rang. Her heart started racing while flashes of excitement could be seen on her face.

She finally heard from him after seeking him out for so long.

There was actually no such emergency.

She had always been thinking about Darryl ever since her father's misunderstanding. Yvonne felt so shy as she recalled that incident.

She just wanted to speak with him today but had not expected him to only reply late at night.

However, Yvonne was not upset at all but felt rather excited instead.

She heard Darryl's voice upon answering the call. " Why? Is there an emergency?"

'Was he worried about me?' Yvonne bit her lips in

happiness. "Everything's fine, I just wanted to know what you are doing."

Everything was fine?

Darryl was stunned upon hearing that.

From the evening till now, 70 to 80 messages, it did not look like everything was fine.

Darryl cracked a joke. "Sigh, please don't tell me you miss me."

Yvonne's face turned red on the other end of the phone as she sounded rather awkward. "Why... Why would I miss you?"

Darryl felt proud when he felt the awkwardness in Yvonne's voice. Suddenly, he remembered something important and said, "Oh yes, the Young family are antique experts. Do you have some ancient books about army weapons?

The Blood Drinking Sword upgraded for no reason today. Darryl could not figure out if this Blood Drinking Sword was a good weapon or just some scrap metal.

Yvonne replied after thinking for a while, "There should be some in my father's study. Let me check it out for you."

The sound of Yvonne walking down the stairs could

be heard while they talked.

Yvonne said shyly after about two minutes, "Found one, do you want to come and get it now?"

She sounded nervous and uncertain with her face flushed after saying that.

Chapter 132

Why did it feel like she was asking Darryl out on a date in the middle of the night?

Darryl shook his hands and said, "No need, I'll get it from you tomorrow."

Yvonne was slightly disappointed upon hearing that and gently said, "Fine then, I'll wait for your call tomorrow."

Megan also walked out of the bathroom at that moment when he hung up his phone.

Although she was dressed in a conservative set of pajamas, it could not hide that sexy body of hers.

Her damped long hair resting on her shoulders and rosy cheeks after the hot bath made her look really attractive.

Darryl could not stop staring at her as he finally understood the meaning of the word 'alluring'.

Megan felt the heat from Darryl's stare as she looked at him and asked, "You're still not asleep?"

Darryl smiled. "I'm waiting for you to appraise my sword."

He took out the Blood Drinking Sword as he spoke.

Under the hall's dim lights, the Blood Drinking Sword was shining with an unusual bloodied-colored glow. There was a dragon image carved on the sword's body which made it look really grand.

Megan could not stop herself from approaching it when she saw such a sword.

As a team leader of the police force, as well as a member of the Emei Clan, Megan was certain the sword was definitely not a Red Stage weapon as the sword's length was three feet two inches and the red dragon carving on its body looked so real.

It was definitely a good sword!

Megan walked nearer and noticed Darryl's stare.

He was staring all over her body.

She felt shy and said, "I'm really tired now. Some other day then."

'Damn, this Darryl tried to lure me toward him while knowing I'm in my pajamas. How cheeky,' thought Megan. She felt so shy hence she went straight back into her room and locked the door.

Darryl felt disappointed yet funny when he heard the sounds of Megan locking her door.

Megan as the team leader of Criminal Investigation definitely maintained her alertness at crucial

moments.

Darryl yawned after grumbling to himself and closed his eyes as he laid down on the couch.

...

Donghai City had not been peaceful as of late with many incidents occurring.

One of the most shocking news was the new opening of Great West Real Estate. 1

No one knew who was the owner of Great West Real Estate. Everyone only knew that the company's president had close connections with Platinum Corporation. In addition, the real estate company also had close relations with Black Tiger Real Estate and Poesia Eleganza Cosmetics.

Everyone knew that Great West Real Estate would have great potentials just based on its business connections.

It was the opening ceremony of Great West Real Estate. The mall entrance was decorated with lots of balloons and there were many expensive cars parked nearby. Almost every rich and famous person in Donghai City was invited to the opening ceremony.

All of them wanted to find out more about such a big scale new company. A new friend might bring

new opportunities. This was the common belief in upper-class societies. All guests were dressed in suits and leather shoes with some from rich and famous families while others were businessmen.

There were even many media companies there too.

The most attractive person in the opening ceremony would definitely be none other than the General Manager, Jade.

Jade was in a wine-red long dress, looking attractive, sexy, and elegant at the same time.

There was no doubt many people were checking out Jade's sexy body as she was not only beautiful but smart as well. She well-managed the crowd and naturally answered all questions posed during the entire ceremony.

Within an hour into the opening ceremony, Great West Real Estate had announced its acquisition of several prime lands in the Donghai City area for business development purposes. The total investment amounted to several billion bucks.

All the media rushed to publish the news and the company became famous in the entire Donghai City.

It was only a new set-up, yet it could acquire so many pieces of prime land. That had never happened in the real estate industry of Donghai City

before.

As such, Great West Real Estate became a leader in the real estate industry of Donghai City just within half a day.

At the same time, General Manager Jade instantly became famous.

Reporters from the Donghai Satellite Television even had exclusive interview sessions with Jade.

A lady that managed to acquire so many prime lands was definitely not a simple person.

Everyone who had met Jade would have thought the same.

However, no one knew that Darryl was actually the person behind the few prime lands' acquisitions.

Neither did anyone know that Darryl was also the owner of Great West Real Estate. Instead, everyone was trying to please Jade whose name soon became so famous in Donghai City.

Not only was Jade referred to as a Goddess due to her beauty, but she was also known as the Iron Lady of Donghai City. Many men had decided to pursue her due to this.

Chapter 133

Due to its seaside location, the weather at Donghai City was rather unusual. Hot in the day and cold at night.

There was a place where a crowd would always gather regardless of the weather.

Pearl Pavilion.

That was right. There were stalls at the walkway with all of them selling antiques. There were many antique enthusiasts gathered there too, hoping to pick up some left-over pieces that might be worth a fortune.

A few antique sellers were in heated negotiations with their customers.

The sound of the car engine appeared as Darryl's car stopped. He took a glance at the surrounding sellers and made sure there was nothing worth buying before heading upstairs. Yvonne had long been waiting for his arrival at the Pearl Pavilion's upper level.

Yvonne walked towards him in stilettos with a smile upon seeing Darryl's arrival. "Why are you suddenly interested in books about army weapons?

Yvonne was curious. In the antique industry, army weapons were not popular among them. What was Darryl researching about?

Darryl smiled. "Nothing really, I just have a sudden interest in ancient army weaponry."

Yvonne bit her lips and gently replied, "My father's words were a little harsh the other day. Please don't be offended."

She blushed before finishing her sentence.

The incident she was referring to earlier had three ladies being tied up with Darryl standing in front of them. It was hard not to be misunderstood.

Darryl did not really mind. "That's fine, I don't really mind."

He then added, "Mister Young has ceased his misunderstanding by now right?"

Yvonne opened her mouth slightly and felt embarrassed when she recalled her father's words.

Her father told her, "You can be with Darryl, but he needs to divorce Lily first and not be associated with any other woman..."

These words kept ringing in her ears as Yvonne's face was burning while her heart was racing.

Did she really have feelings for Darryl now?

Yvonne said softly while trying hard to control her emotion, "Not anymore. I've thoroughly explained to him."

Darryl smiled and asked, "How did you explain to him?"

"I... I just tell him the truth."

At that moment, Yvonne looked extremely attractive from being really nervous like a shy little girl.

He had not expected a shy Yvonne could look so attractive.

Darryl laughed. He wanted to tease more but stopped after seeing the others around.

What was going on?

'What happened between Miss Young and Darryl? Why did Miss Young look so different today?' The staff in charge of Pearl Pavilion, Peter felt weird and wondered.

Yvonne was usually very cold towards her staff and would not display any emotions.

However, she looked so gentle and shy in front of Darryl.

Would Yvonne be interested in that live-in son-in-

law?

"If there's nothing else, I'll make a move," Darryl said to Yvonne as he noticed the awkward atmosphere.

Yvonne nodded. "Alright."

Darryl nodded and left the Pearl Pavilion.

Darryl's cellphone rang when he reached his car.

Noticing an unknown number, Darryl frowned and answered.

"Brother Darryl, I'm Skyler." Skyler sounded really excited on the other side of the call. "Brother Darryl, my gang and I have gathered many Bicolor Flowers. How should I pass them to you?" Skyler asked politely and nervously at the same time.

'Oh, oh, they were talking about the antidote refinement.'

Darryl nodded and asked Skyler to meet him at Platinum Corporation. Bicolor Flowers were treasures that could be used to produce many types of medications and elixirs. All medications for general sickness and insomnia problems required Bicolor Flowers as a key ingredient.

In the President's office, Darryl was smiling widely at his desk.

Great work, there were tens of Bicolor Flowers.

'Skyler was telling the truth earlier. There's really a place that a lot of Bicolor Flowers grow,' thought Darryl.

Darryl commenced with his work.

Chapter 134

After a few hours, Darryl wiped off his sweat and kept the tens of antidotes he had produced.

"Brother Darryl, you're our lifesaver." Skyler felt really grateful as he held on to those antidotes with tears in his eyes.

He brought out a jade pendant, "Brother Darryl, this belongs to the Master of the Grandmaster Heaven Cult. It represents the Master's identity. I left in a hurry the other day and didn't manage to pass it to you. Please keep this properly. In the event there are misunderstandings with anyone from the Grandmaster Heaven Cult, please show them the pendant and they'll know you're a cult member."

Darryl nodded, kept the jade pendant with him before giving Skyler a pat on his shoulder, and said, "Quickly, go and save your gang."

Skyler nodded and immediately left.

Once he left, Darryl went on to research the Infinite Elixir Manual. Now that he had the Bicolor Flowers, he wanted to know what other elixirs he could produce.

In the evening, at Lyndon's residence.

Lily and Jade were sitting on the couch.

Both of them were in short skirts and enjoying their ice-cream under the scorching hot weather.

Lily softly said, "Jade, I really didn't expect you would suddenly become a real estate tycoon out. Who did you meet? Who invested in your business?"

Lily knew very well about Jade's situation.

Although her family was quite well to do and had some connections with some important people in Donghai City, to incorporate such a large real estate company was rather unbelievable.

Jade felt complicated as she smiled and replied, "I just met a friend."

She dared not mention that Darryl was the one behind it.

"Please introduce your friend to me if there's a chance in the future." Lily had not noticed Jade's reaction.

Jade was embarrassed but still put on a smile. "Yes, sure."

At that moment, Samantha walked over in her jeans. She looked as mature and sexy as Lily and

Jade. "Jade, come and eat some fruits. You have a bright future now that you're the President of Great West Real Estate."

"Aunt Samantha, don't mention it. I'm just a worker. The owner is someone else," replied Jade humbly.

Samantha proudly replied, "It's the same isn't it, just like Lily here? She's holding a managerial level in the Lyndon family's business, which also means she's making money for the family."

Jade smiled and was about to reply when Darryl walked into the hall.

After reading for a whole evening, his eyes felt dizzy. He was really happy to find out that the Bicolor Flower was indeed a treasure. It was the key ingredient for many elixir types.

Lily was happy to see Darryl. "Darryl, you're home."

Darryl nodded and said before walking upstairs, " Jade, you're here. You girls continue."

Jade sighed in relief.

Samantha was unhappy. "What's wrong with him? He speaks in such a rude manner to Jade. He didn't even serve drinks, where are his manners?"

She had been treating Darryl slightly better ever

since she received the necklace worth tens of millions, but she still had not changed her perception completely toward Darryl.

Jade had such a bright future now and Darryl did not even treat her as an important guest by serving her drinks.

"Aunt Samantha, no worries, no worries. I don't need a drink," said Jade quickly.

Darryl serving her? That must be a joke!

Back in the bedroom, Darryl took out the book about ancient army weapons that he borrowed from Yvonne.

The book looked seasoned with its cover turned yellow and the large words 'Ancient Army Weapon' printed on its cover.

He opened the book and started searching for Blood Drinking Sword. The bedroom door opened before he could find the page.

Samantha walked into the room, glared at Darryl, and said, "Darryl, go get yourself some new clothes tomorrow. Stop wearing all those torn and old clothes. Lily's the President now. Don't embarrass her!"

"Fine." Darryl nodded.

Samantha was unhappy with his reaction and

added, "The Hough family had organized an outing. Many other families will join the trip. Make sure you are appropriately dressed and don't embarrass Lily. This is my final warning."

Hough family?

He could not stop but to recall Megan's fiancé, Kent Hough.

His family organized the outing?

Samantha was impatient. "Did you hear what I've just said? Look at what you're wearing? You're embarrassing Lily!"

Chapter 135

It was just an outing. Why did he need to get new clothes?

"Can't I be excused from the outing?" Darryl asked.

Kent would definitely be there since the outing was organized by the Hough family. Darryl did not want to meet him.

Samantha stared at him. "Honestly, I wouldn't have asked you along for such an upper-class social event, but Lily's the President now and as her husband, you ought to be there."

Darryl nodded. "Fine, I'll go get some new clothes."

Samantha coldly said, "That's more like it. Get some money from Lily if you don't have enough to get something good. Don't always dress cheaply and embarrass Lily."

Darryl nodded again.

Samantha finally left the room after nagging him a few more times.

Once she left, Darryl quickly took out the 'Ancient Army Weapon' book again.

The book cover was full of scratches and its words

were barely visible.

Not only that, there were some brown stains that looked like blood on the cover. From the looks of it, the book would have been through a long period of time.

The Young family were really antique collectors for them to even keep such a book.

Darryl started reading the book.

The first page of the book listed a type of weapon called, Thunder Hammer. The hammer had the ability to summon thunder. It was a Blue Category Level Four weapon.

Darryl could not stop reading. It had been awhile he was so interested in reading.

Universe Ring, created in the mountains. Unbreakable. Weapon Grade: Blue Category Level Five! Ability: Universe Traversal. Owner: Prince Nezha.

Darryl continued reading further.

Green Dragon Crescent Blade, nine feet long. Its sharpness could split rocks, mountains, and lands. Weapon Grade: Blue Category Level Three! Ability: Breaker of mountains and lands. Owner: War Saint Guan Yu.

Darryl was so excited from reading about the

weapons. He finally found the chapter on Blood Drinking Sword after searching further.

Darryl's heart was racing while he read about it.

Blood Drinking Sword, a surface like jade but not made of jade, like steel but not made of steel. Extremely sharp! Could be activated by absorbing Earth's energy. Weapon Grade: Red Category Level One. Ability: Blood Absorption. (Self-upgrade upon absorption of only fresh human blood! Animal blood would not work!)

Darryl was so emotional after reading that.

He had found a treasure.

A sword that would upgrade? Once it absorbed a human's blood, it would self-upgrade! No wonder it was called Blood Drinking Sword.

The book went on further to explain that once the sword recognized its owner, the sword could be kept in the owner's own blood when not in use. If the owner wished to use it, the owner would be able to call forth the sword with just his thoughts.

Darryl took a deep breath with the Blood Drinking Sword in his hands. The Blood Drinking Swords vanished with just a thought! Darryl knew the sword had now vanished into his blood.

"Sword, come here!" Darryl shouted. There was a

flash of red lights before the Blood Drinking Sword reappeared.

Wow! The sword was truly a treasure!

Just when Darryl was excited, he could hear Samantha's grumbling voice from downstairs.

"Darryl come here now!"

Darryl took another deep breath, put the book away, hid the sword, and went out of his bedroom.

"What is it?"

"Come and sit down," Samantha ordered. "This outing is very important. Dozens of families will be taking part, the Hough family, the Young family, the White family, the Quinn family, us, the Lyndon family, and others. Few hundred people will be there! All of these are important and famous people. Don't embarrass yourself and don't embarrass Lilybud. Lilybud is now head of Lyndon family."

The main objective of this outing was for families to gather and interact with each other and maintain good relationships.

The upper-class society believes that an additional friend would bring an additional benefit. They might even agree on some business dealings during the trip in addition to making new friends.

"Sure, I'll be careful when I speak." Darryl nodded.

The Young family would be there? Yvonne as head of the family would definitely be there too.

The image of Yvonne's shy but attractive face appeared in Darryl's mind.

When he thought of the White family, Darryl could not stop himself from asking, "During the time when the Lyndon family lost all our money being cheated, didn't the White family's leader, Claude White, end business relations with our family? Why will they be joining the outing?"

Lily smiled. "In the business world, there is no eternal enmity, only eternal profit. During my father's time when we lost all of our money, the White family had indeed ended our business relations, but they came knocking on our door again after we were back on our feet."

Darryl grinned upon listening to Lily's words.

Lily said, "We have to make many new friends during the outing. Please be careful when you speak. You just need to follow right behind me."

Darry laughed. "Sure, I'll follow you closely."

Chapter 136

"Shame on you, don't you know people are calling you a live-in husband?" Lily blushed, but she quickly apologized, "I'm sorry, I didn't mean it."

Darryl was not bothered by her words. "No worries, I don't care what others say about me. You're my wife, I only care about what you think of me."

Lily smiled and dragged Darryl on a shopping trip.

She wanted to buy him a suit. However, for their past three years of marriage, Darryl had gotten used to wearing cheap non-branded clothes. He felt very uncomfortable. In the end, after many negotiations, Darryl bought two sets of branded leisure clothing.

Darryl was about to make payment at the cashier after fitting when Lily stopped him.

"I've never gotten you anything for the past three years of our marriage. Let me pay for you. Didn't you just buy me plenty of clothes earlier?" Lily smiled.

Darryl felt very warm by Lily's words. He did not reject further and allowed Lily to pay for the bill.

The next morning, the Hough family sent

transports to pick up the family.

The Hough family was rather famous in Donghai City. They sent tens of Business-class Mercedes. All of the cars were parked neatly by the road and gave a look of grandeur.

Lily looked exceptionally beautiful with her blue tight jeans, white blouse, and stilettos. Her long legs looked very attractive such that the driver could not stop looking at her as she got in the car.

After a few hours, they arrived at their destination, Dragon Rising Lake.

Dragon Rising Lake was also known as Gallery Twenty was a private tourist spot that had very beautiful sceneries. As it was private property, it was not opened to the public.

In actual fact, it was not a lake, but the bay of a sea. Only the rich and famous could spend their vacation there while sitting at the beach and sunbathing under huge umbrellas. It was really relaxing.

Once they arrived at the reception area, the other families were there too. Most of the families sent their younger generations for the outing. The younger generations would be the ones taking over their family business in the future, hence it would be best to send them for the outing.

Right when they arrived, they saw a group of people

sitting at the hut, chatting and laughing.

There were some familiar faces among them.

William, Elsa from the Lyndon family, and Zayler from the White family.

They stopped to greet both Darryl and Lily when they saw them approaching.

Few men could not stop but stare at Lily.

She looked really beautiful, just like a Goddess.

It was true that Lily looked exceptionally attractive and elegant that day.

Even though the Lyndon family was not a top-tier family, there were many beautiful ladies in the family. Both Elsa and Lily were beautiful in their own way.

William gave a cold grin. Although Lily had a much higher status in the family now, he still felt that Darryl was a nobody other than a live-in son-in-law.

The first sentence he spoke was full of sarcasm.“ Darryl, you look good today. Which stall did you buy your clothes from?”

He was the only one laughing after he said that.

Although William knew Darryl had great fighting

skills, he knew that Darryl would not fight at such a family gathering event, hence he went on to tease Darryl.

"William, this is the live-in son-in-law you talked about earlier?"

"That shouldn't be right. How would a live-in son-in-law be allowed to join this outing?"

Everyone looked curiously at William.

William gave a big laugh. "He's here because of his wife, Lily. He's a nobody."

Every laughed hearing what William said.

Darryl gave a cold laugh and ignored them.

He had promised his wife that he would not cause a scene.

Lily could not stand it anymore and said coldly, " William, all of us are here to have fun, what's the point of saying something so silly?"

Elsa could not stand it either. She frowned and said, "William, stop talking. We're from the same family."

William was not satisfied, but he walked away.

At that moment, a young man in a checkered suit approached with a smile. He reached out his hand to

Lily. "Ms. Lily Lyndon, how are you? I'm Justin Quinn, the second son of the Quinn family. I've always admired Ms. Lily. It's my honor to meet you today."

This young man was trying to impress Lily.

Darryl who was drinking almost lost his cool upon hearing what he said. What a funny name. Just-In-Queen. Who gave this guy his name?

Chapter 137

"Why are you laughing?"

Justin was upset. He pointed at Darryl and shouted.

He knew that Darryl was a live-in son-in-law. How could a goddess such as Lily be married to such a useless man! Even though it might be a fake marriage, it was still unfair.

Justin was jealous of Darryl and hence let it out on him. "If you dare to laugh again, I shall tear your mouth off. What's so funny?"

"It's nothing, your name sounds great," said Darryl.

People surrounding him started to pronounce his name after listening to Darryl's words. Justin Quinn, Just-In-Queen?

That really sounded funny.

Justin could not hold his anger anymore upon seeing people surrounding him start laughing. He was about to charge towards Darryl, but Lily stopped him. She said softly, "Mr. White, we're here for fun and games. You don't have to be angry." 1

"Fine then, the dear goddess is right." Justin

immediately held his temper, reached out his hand to Lily, and hoped to shake her hands. "My dear goddess, it's my honor to finally meet you. I've been an admirer for quite some time now."

Darryl grinned. He almost made a scene when people were laughing about his name before immediately changed his expressions and tried to start a conversation with his wife.

Lily gently shook his hand and immediately retreated behind Darryl while maintaining her elegance.

She had done her part by gently shaking his hand. Although Justin sounded polite, his constant stare on her body made her feel really uncomfortable.

Justin felt awkward when Lily pulled her hand back. Suddenly, his sight shifted towards the other side of the hall, and was attracted.

Not only, Justin, almost everyone looked over and was in awe.

Not far away, there were the shadows of two beautiful body figures coming out of the car.

It was Megan and Yvonne!

Both of them must have arrived at the same time, hence they were walking in together. They immediately became the outing's highlight.

One the goddess of the police force while the other was the beautiful daughter of the Young family.

Megan was wearing a body-hugging dress which showed off her perfect S body shape. Every man was staring at her body.

On the other hand, Yvonne was dressed in a purple long dress, looking attractive and elegant.

Both their appearances brought liveliness to the atmosphere. Yvonne was still single and had many admirers among the families.

Before they were here, they had made plans on how to impress Yvonne during the trip.

At that moment, Yvonne walked towards Darryl.

"Both of you two are early," Yvonne said with a smile.

She felt a little disappointed though, seeing Darryl standing closely right next to Lily.

Megan arrived with her stilettos, smiled at Darryl, and said, "Dear Little Brother, you're here too?"

In upper-class society, such outings were an annual event. However, Darryl had never attended any of it. She had not expected him to be there this year.

'Little Brother? When I became a Little Brother?'

thought a smiling Darryl.

Everyone looked awkward too.

What was going on? When he became so close to Yvonne and Megan?

Yvonne's admirers' eyes were full of jealousy.

Even Kent's face looked horrible. He felt embarrassed having his fiancé being so closed to Darryl.

Kent said as he recalled the much earlier incident he had with Darryl, "Megan dear, there's nothing surprising about Darryl being here for the outing. He's here simply because he's relying on his wife's status. Do you think it's because of who he is?"

His words were full of sarcasm.

Haha...

Everyone broke into laughter as Darryl once again became everyone's focus.

"Kent, we're here to have fun. Don't behave like this ..." Megan could not help but comment.

Just for Darryl rescuing the little girl from those robbers, he should have been honored! Just for his acts of shielding an unknown girl from a gunshot, he should have been respected! How could they laugh at him?

“Megan, why are you siding him?” Kent was upset.

Chapter 138

Megan glared at him, "I just don't want my mood spoilt. If you continue to behave like this, please leave me alone and go on the outing on your own."

"Alright, fine. I'll listen to you," replied Kent immediately with a smile.

Despite him saying that his face was full of anger when he looked towards Darryl.

'How dare a live-in son-in-law join our outing? I'll make you embarrass yourself!' Kent thought.

"Hello everyone, thank you for your patience." Edward Hough stepped forward and spoke into the microphone.

Edward was Kent's father, the leader of the Hough family, and also the outing's organizer.

He walked toward the crowd, looked around, cleared his throat, and said, "Everyone here is the younger generation of your family. I believe all of you know about our outing's rules, so I'll not repeat them again. Just one thing I'd like to remind everyone, please take care of your own safety. Again, please take care of your own safety!"

Edward added, "We are now at Dragon Raising Lake.

It's a bay, near the sea with plenty of fishes. We've prepared many fishing rods for all of you. Our dinner will depend on what you'll fish!"

Everyone broke into laughter after hearing Edward's words.

Everyone there was from the upper-class society, hence fishing would not be a problem for them. The freshly caught fishes would certainly make for a delicious barbeque meal later.

Every one happily picked up their fishing rods and headed towards the seashore.

Beautiful ladies laid down and were getting ready for a sunbath.

Not forgetting one of the outing's aims was to make new friends, hence some of them were already exchanging name cards with red wine glasses at hand.

Of course, there were some unique ones who would just not stop teasing about Darryl. People like William, Kent, and a few others.

No matter where they went, they would find an excuse to ridicule Darryl.

Darryl acted calmly as though not bothered by them, but was burning furiously deep in his heart.

What was wrong with these people?

Especially Kent, he was just as terrible as his name!

If he knew more about Kent, he would not have promised Megan to save Kent at the Grandmaster Heaven Cult.

The crowd who had been fishing by the beach was getting tired. How many fishes do they need to serve a few hundred people? All those sons from rich families gave up not too long after fishing and headed to rest at the huts nearby. They would rather be hungry later.

Looking around, the scenery was really beautiful as there was a small island not far away.

The weather was scorching hot while the water was crystal clear. Many of the men had an urge to take a dip in the water.

Someone soon suggested. "It's so hot here, why don 't we go for a swim?"

Everyone was interested in hearing that. At the same time, a few men started looking at Megan and the remaining ladies in excitement.

They were going for a dip in the water with the goddess soon, how exciting?

Lily, Megan, and the few other ladies were also drenched in sweats. They were also interested in

hearing the suggestion but hesitated.

They were ladies and with so many people watching them, it would be rather awkward. Most importantly, they did not bring along their swimsuits for the trip.

Just at that moment, Kent laughed. "It's not fun just swimming! Let's have a race!"

William was curious. "What kind of race?"

"Of course, it'll be a competition between families. Each family is to be represented by a pair of male and female," said Kent while pointing at the island in the middle of the lake. "The first family who reaches the island will be the winner."

Great! All of them were excited to listen to his idea.

Zayler stepped forward and added, "We should have a bet since this is a race!"

Kent nodded. "Of course there shall be bets. Let's lay down the rules clearly. Only the first-place winner will get the reward. All the other losing families shall each pay the winner a billion bucks.

What? One billion bucks?

Did they have any concept on the value of one billion bucks? Although that was the gathering activities for the rich, some of them could not

afford one billion bucks. It would not make sense to wager their entire fortune just for a bet.

A few smaller families gave a sigh! They were interested to participate, but their financial positions would not allow them to.

Kent laughed. He was planning in his heart to pressure the Lyndon family's participation. If the Lyndon family refused, he would use that opportunity to humiliate them in front of the masses.

He learned swimming when he was little and was confident that he would win the race! If the Lyndon family were to participate, they would definitely lose both the race and one billion bucks. Losing one billion bucks would bring great losses to the Lyndon family.

He would then let the Lyndon family appeal for an IOU, but Lily and Darryl would need to kneel and beg in front of him.

Chapter 139

One billion bucks, how could William decide?

Lily was the leader of the Lyndon family. Although the swimming competition was for entertainment, a billion bucks bet was no joke. If the Lyndon family was to lose one billion bucks, their family would be destroyed.

William smiled but did not speak a word.

Kent laughed. "So, the Lyndon family isn't up to the bet?" "It's just a game, but the Lyndon family is scared? I thought only Darryl—the live-in son-in-law—is a coward. I didn't know the whole Lyndon family's the same. Even William is a coward. Haha!"

William was annoyed upon hearing that. "Why wouldn't the Lyndon family take part?"

How could Kent look down on him? He was the Lyndon family's eldest grandson! William felt angry, but Lily was the family leader. He turned to Lily and pleaded, "Lily, we should join and show our support since Kent extended his invitation. What do you think?"

Truth be told, everyone in the Lyndon family was jealous of Lily. How could a lady become their family

's leader?

If they lost the swimming competition, the Lyndon family would lose one billion bucks with Lily being solely responsible for that! Lily and Darryl should be the ones representing the family in the competition and if they lost, he would complain to his grandmother and get Lily to return all of her family business shares!

William thought he had a great plan!

Lily bit her lips after seeing everyone around her and said, "Fine, the Lyndon family shall participate."

At this moment, she could not reject the invitation and needed to withhold the family's dignity.

Kent gave a cold grin upon hearing Lily's agreement to join.

In the end, the participating families were—Hough family, Lyndon family, White family, Quinn family, and Young family.

Each family would send a male and female as the representative with a total of ten participants.

Honestly, Yvonne was completely uninterested in the competition, but her younger brother was really eager to join, hence she had no choice but to agree. The participants from the Young family would

obviously be her younger brother and herself.

The Hough family's representative would be Kent and Megan. Megan was Kent's fiancée, therefore she could be considered as part of the family and there was no objection to her participation.

The Lyndon family was represented by Lily and Darryl.

As for the White family, it was represented by Zayler and another lady from their family.

Representatives from the Quinn family would be Justin and his cousin Charmaine.

Everyone was excited when the list of participants was announced as there would be many beautiful ladies taking part in the competition!

Lily, Megan, and Yvonne were sexy and attractive in their own way!

The chance to witness so many beautiful ladies swimming would be the best entertainment.

Kent sent a message secretly from his cellphone without anyone noticing.

Once the message was sent, a young man from the Hough family quietly dived into the water not far away from the shores.

"Let me be the judge! All participants, please get

ready," said Edward with a smile.

At the same time, he gave Kent a thumbs up as moral support. If his son were to win the competition, he would win four billion bucks. He was confident in his son's speed knowing that Kent had started swimming training since little.

His future daughter-in-law, Megan was a police team leader and had excellent swimming skills. Both of them would definitely win the competition!

On the other hand, Lily stood nervously beside Darryl, "I... I can't swim very well."

Darryl smiled and said, "Don't worry, I'm here."

Lily had a sense of relief from seeing his confident face and smiled.

Edward raised the microphone and said, "Let the race begin!"

Splash! The ten of them dived into the water and swam towards the little island.

"Come on!"

"Faster! Come on!"

Everyone was so excited and started cheering for them. The competition was so exciting as it involved bets worth billions!

"Lily, you can do it! So beautiful..."

"They look so beautiful. The goddesses are so attractive."

All the men's eyes on the shore were locked on to Yvonne, Lily, and Megan.

As they had not brought along their swimsuit, they went in with their current clothes. Their clothes were entirely wet from entering the water which fully displayed their sexy body.

They had the perfect body figure. It was perfect!

"Wow, look!"

Their attention turned to the male participants.

Kent and Zayler were showing off their swimming techniques from breaststrokes to butterfly strokes. Everyone was amazed by their swimming skills.

Darryl was the only one swimming the most traditional doggy style stroke. It looked awkward but at a good speed.

Darryl was the Darby family's second son. He would have also had professional swimming lessons just like the rest. However, he was never interested in swimming and spent his free time learning martial arts and researching antiques.

Chapter 140

Ever since he left his family, Darryl had been staying in the village for a while and learned swimming on his own, hence his strokes looked rather awkward.

"Haha, look at Lyndon's son-in-law. Is he swimming using doggy style?"

"Oh, doggy style. That's ridiculous!"

Some of the girls started giggling.

Lily angrily bit her lips from hearing laughter from the shores. When she turned to look at Darryl's swimming style, she felt it was hilarious too.

It was obvious Darryl had never received any professional swimming training before, but he was so confident just now. Although he was not slow, his speed would definitely not be able to win the race. Other than the first-place winner, everyone would lose the bet.

Could she still believe in him? It was one billion bucks!

If they were to lose, the Lyndon family would need to fork out one billion bucks. What would happen

then? Perhaps she would lose her position as the family leader too.

Thinking along those lines, Lily became worried. She tried her best to pick up her speed. However, it was impossible for her to win.

Suddenly, she heard some screaming.

"What's that?"

"Oh my, shark. Is that a shark? Why is there a grey fin in the water?"

"Shark! Shark! Come back! Swim back here!"

The ten of them who were busy swimming stopped when they heard the commotion at the shores and looked around.

They saw a black-colored fin at the water surface about tens of miles away from them, swimming towards them at a very fast speed.

Shark! That was really a shark!

Lily, Yvonne, and the rest of the ladies started screaming.

Even the men were stunned looking at the scary fin in the water.

"Swim back to the shores!"

Megan was very nervous. Although she had taken

the Godly pill and became a Level One Master General, she still would not be able to defeat a shark in the water!

Everyone started to panic and swam towards the shore while ignoring the race.

No one would want to lose their life over a one billion bet!

The shark was approaching and it would soon reach the ladies!

Some of them at the shores were worried and shut their eyes, not wanting to see what would happen next.

There were only two people that remained calm, Darryl and Kent.

From where Darryl was, he could clearly see the ' shark', which had shoulders and feet. It was obvious it was a fake!

Darryl did not understand why Kent was acting so calm.

He almost peed in his pants when Kent was being captured by the Grandmaster Heaven Cult. Something did not seem right since he was such a coward. Darryl gave it a thought, 'Could it be the ' shark' was arranged by Kent?'

Soon, the 'shark' reached the ladies. Yvonne, Lily,

and Megan, the three Goddesses were petrified.

"Darryl, help us..." Lily shouted without further thoughts.

Darryl smiled knowing Kent had staged the 'shark' just to have a chance to be the hero. He should allow Kent to be.

Darryl did not swim forward knowing that.

At that moment, Kent swam forward and said, "Don 't all of you worry, let me handle it. Big shark, come to me!" He then charged towards the 'shark'.

"Wow!"

"He's so brave! What a man!"

"He's really fearless!"

The ladies at the shores started admiring Kent's bravery and clapping for him. All of them admire the man who fearlessly faced the shark.

Lily was very disappointed.

Why would Darryl ignore her at the life and death crucial moments, while the fiancé of others would jump into the danger...

Chapter 141

At that moment, the 'shark' swam towards Megan!

Megan was terrified and shouted, "Kent, help!"

Even though she had plenty of life experiences, that was a shark coming to her.

Kent grinned. It was time for him to be the 'Hero to the Rescue'! Haha!

He wanted to show Megan how manly he was. That was the reason he had arranged for this 'shark' attack incident.

The 'shark' was fierce and was swimming aggressively among the ladies!

However, the 'shark' did not seem to bite...

Zayler and Justin had realized this fact too, so they braced themselves and went over to protect their partners.

On the other hand, Darryl was floating at the side and watching. Lily was disappointed. Why would Darryl not go and protect her in such situations?

It seemed like she had overestimated him.

"Kent, hurry! Hurry..." Megan was terrified. Why

was the 'shark' only chasing after her?

"Megan dear, don't worry. Your husband is here!" Kent laughed loudly while swimming towards her. He took out a knife he had prepared much earlier at the same time.

Kent then looked as brave as he could, swam near Megan, and hugged her by the waist. He used his other knife-holding hand and shouting at the 'shark ', "You bastard! How dare you come to my wife? Look what I've got here! Die now!"

At the same time, Kent hugged Megan even tighter and was enjoying her embrace.

Megan did not know what was happening as she hugged around Kent's neck while feeling so touched.

Although he was her fiancé, she had never let him touch her before nor had they never kissed too! Even the number of times they held hands was limited.

At that critical moment, Kent was so brave.

Perhaps she was wrong to judge him and should treat him better in the future.

Haha, haha!

Darryl felt hilarious watching Kent acting like a

madman. He would make a really good actor. Haha.

Everyone at the shores did not know what had happened. They were stunned seeing Kent approaching the 'shark' fearlessly. All of them admired his courage. Among almost a hundred of them, no other person had that courage.

People shouted, "Kent, be careful! That's a shark!"

Kent confidently aimed at the 'shark' and pierce through its body.

He had only mildly touched the skin of the 'shark' as his underwater helper immediately poured some pig blood and submerged deep into the water.

Wow!

The plan was perfect. Kent took a deep breath and acted as if he was still in shock. He hugged Megan tightly and brushed her shoulders. "It's fine now. Megan dear, your husband is here..."

"Thank you, Kent," Megan bit her lips and said softly.

At that moment, she realized how brave her fiancé was.

Wow!

Everyone was cheering and clapping upon seeing that Kent had defeated the 'shark'!

"Sh*t! Kent had killed the shark!"

"Kent is so brave!"

Everyone had always felt Kent was a weak person with bodyguards handling all his situations, but he had proven to them that he was a different person.

That was so cool!

That was how a man should be!

Only a man like him deserved to be with a goddess!

Kent was enjoying his moment as he hugged Megan even tighter.

"Kiss! Kiss!" Not sure who started shouting.

"Kiss! Kiss!"

Kent had been waiting for that moment. Haha, finally the long-awaited moment.

Megan was shy as she pushed him away and said, " What are you doing? There are so many people here."

Although she had started to accept Kent, she still remained rational. How could they kiss in front of the crowd!

Kent smiled and nodded. "Megan dear, please don't be angry. I just can't help myself."

He felt that Megan had opened her heart to him, hence he need not rush as there would be plenty of opportunities!

Chapter 142

"Wow, such good acting!" Darryl laughed. It was as if they were in the movies. Darryl then turned to swim towards Lily.

"Lilybud, what happened?" Darryl asked as he approached Lily with her face upset.

'Could She have been frightened by the fake shark?' Darryl thought.

Lily was disappointed and replied coldly, "I'm fine. I 'm not in a mood. Don't speak to me."

She turned to swim towards the shore without looking back at Darryl.

The fiancé of others was bravely fighting off the shark, making her all proud, but her own husband was doing nothing.

She felt foolish thinking Darryl had turned a new leaf when he got a job. It seemed he did not change after all. She should not have asked him along for the outing.

Darryl was stunned by Lily's reaction. What happened to her all of a sudden?

Just when he was about to catch up with her to find

out further, there were shouting coming from the crowds on the shores again.

"There is another shark!"

"Sh*t! There is another one!"

Under the screaming and shouting voices from the crowd, a black-colored fin emerged from the water not far away!

The crowd was obviously not as frightened as before after witnessing Kent killing one rather easily.

Although there was another shark, there was nothing to worry about as Kent was there.

Though there was still a distance to the shores, everyone could just hide behind Kent and it would be safe.

"Brother Kent, do it again. Kill it!"

Darryl was stunned by the crowd's shouting.

'Wow, how many more actors did he hire?' Darryl thought.

Kent was in shock when he saw the second shark. He thought, 'What is wrong? I asked that boy to just act as a shark once, why is he back again?'

Sh*t! That was not right.

The shark was swimming at a much faster speed and was more agile! Besides, the size of the shark...

Sh*t! It was a real shark, a real shark! Oh sh*t!

"Run! Hurry, swim to the shore!" Kent shouted crazily.

Megan, who just felt safe beside him was puzzled while looking at Kent and asked, "Kent, why are you in a panic? Don't you have a knife in your hand?"

Kent was completely panicking now. He ignored Megan and started swimming to the shores as fast as he could.

"Kent, where are you going? Wait for me." Megan bit her lip as she saw Kent leaving her behind.

"Run! Run! This is a real shake! This is not a fake one! Run for your life!" Kent was yelling as hard as he could as he swallowed a few big gulps of water.

All that he wanted was to swim back to the shores. It would only be safe if he was back on the shores as he did not want to die there!

Due to the knife on Kent's hand being covered with blood from the fake 'shark' incident, the shark attracted by the blood smell was swimming towards him.

No matter how fast he could swim, he could never

beat the shark.

"Please don't eat me, please don't eat me." Kent was tearing.

"Dear father shark, please don't eat me, I'm begging you..." Kent shouted loudly. He then realized the blood on the knife was attracting the shark and tossed the knife away!

The knife landed right among the ladies!

The shark then charged towards Lily, Yvonne, and Megan!

"Kent, how dare you!"

Megan was biting her lips. She never thought that Kent would lead the shark towards her!

At this moment, everyone realized Kent was acting earlier. That was a fake shark, but the one in front now was the real one!

"Help!"

Lily's face was pale as she watched the shark charging towards her with nowhere to hide. She was hopeless!

Gone... Her life was about to end...

Chapter 143

Everyone was covering their mouths at that time. Some were screaming too!

The shark with its jaws wide open was charging towards Lily!

"No..." Lily hopelessly closed her eyes and stood there waiting for her death.

She was surprised those big jaws did not reach her at the end.

She opened her eyes slowly and was in shock to see what was happening right in front of her eyes.

Not only Lily, everyone else was holding their breath and the atmosphere went into complete silence!

It was the sight of Darryl riding on the back of the shark, holding on to its fin, and continuously punching the shark.

What?

Everyone was stunned and could not say a word. Not a single sound was made.

The shark was shaking profusely and its sharp teeth slit through Darryl's arm, causing a large wound

with blood oozing out.

"Go, go!" Darryl was shouting while covered with blood.

"B-but, what about you?" Lily shivered and started crying.

"Darryl I'm wrong. I'm wrong for thinking you are a coward. You're the only one that will save me!"

"Go, go!" Darryl was shouting with all of his might.

Lily knew she needed to leave and stay out of his way upon hearing him yelling. She was praying for his safety while she swam towards the shore. The rest of them started to swim towards the shore too.

"Argh!" Darryl shouted. The shark was too strong and had escaped from his grip as it charged towards the crowd.

Almost everyone had arrived at the shore with Yvonne the only one left behind due to her poor stamina. She was just halfway to the shores.

Yvonne froze upon seeing that shark was charging towards her.

"Quick! Swim over here!" Darryl shouted.

Yvonne got back to her senses when she heard Darryl's voice. She then swam towards Darryl, but her speed was really slow.

Everyone on the shore was worried while watching them. Yvonne's admirers were hoping to jump into the water and save her. However, everyone did not take any action upon thinking about the fierce shark. They were just shouting and directing her while standing there on the shores.

"Yvonne, swim faster. The shark is right behind you."

"It's less than five feet away, hurry up!"

Finally, Darryl managed to swim towards her and held her by her waist!

He tried to channel some of his internal energy from the energy field of his body to hers!

Yvonne, who felt dizzy earlier now felt energized once Darryl held on to her. She felt a sense of security emerged in her.

"Let me distract it while you swim towards the shore," Darryl spoke close to her ear softly.

Yvonne's entire body shivered! She had never been so close to a man since she was little. She blushed and nodded her head.

He... He made her feel safe...

Yvonne was swimming when those silly thoughts came through her mind. She did not care about him

being a live-in son-in-law of the Lyndon family. She just wanted to be with him and she would feel safe.

With her silly thoughts in mind, she suddenly saw Lily standing by the shores and blushed. How could she have those silly thoughts? She felt so ashamed.

Splash!

Just at that moment, there was a big splash. It could be seen clearly the shark was over ten feet long. It took a leap with its jaws wide open and aiming towards Darryl.

"Sh*t! What a big one! Luckily, I left fast enough!" Kent was happily thinking. Although Megan would be upset about him leaving her behind, nothing was more important than staying alive!

'Darryl is doomed. He's sure going to die!' Kent thought.

At that moment, the shark took another leap and bit on Darryl!

Darryl was a cultivator. Although he could move at very fast speeds, he could not avoid the shark. Its sharp teeth slit through his entire arm.

"Wow!" shouted the people on the shores while the lake was now being covered with blood.

Before they could react, Darry's head was seen

submerging into the water along with the shark, and the water returned to its calmness for a moment.

"Oh no, he's gone!"

"Well, no one asked him to act smart and fight!"

Everyone was shaking their heads while looking at the pool of bloodied water, coupled with the continuous shark movements. There was a coldness in their eyes without a sense of mercy in any of them.

All of them looked down at the live-in son-in-law like his life did not worth anything.

Chapter 144

Lily sat lifelessly on the ground under the voices of the masses.

'Is he... Is he really dead? No, no, I won't let him to. He cannot die!' She thought.

"What are all of you standing here for? Go help him, help him!" Lily shouted at the crowd.

Everyone's face looked troubled and no one dared to look back at Lily.

Was she crazy? It was a ten feet long shark down there! No one would dare jump into the water and help.

He was just a live-in son-in-law whose life was worth nothing. It was lucky that no one else got hurt. No one had asked him to act as the hero and save Lily.

Lily did not give up. She put on her stilettos and walked towards William. "William, you are part of the Lyndon family too. You have to save him!"

She could not ask others for help, hence she turned her hope to William.

William gave a cold smile and said, "I'm sorry

about what happened to Darryl, but I can't really swim well. Besides, I would get killed if I were to get in there based on that shark's size."

Although he sounded as if he felt terrible, he was in fact excited at heart.

Lily turned and felt hopeless upon hearing his cold words.

William added, "Lily, it's your fault! You are the one who wanted to join the race! If we were to lose the race, it would've cost our family one billion bucks! It 's lucky the shark is here. At least we'll not lose a billion bucks. Darryl had done a good deed for the family. His life in exchange for a billion bucks! Don' t forget, he died all because of you!"

Lily broke into tears upon hearing his words. She wanted to fight back, but she could not find the words.

The water was once again peaceful with only blood flowing on the water surface. Darryl and the shark had not emerged for over two minutes.

No one knew Darryl was exhausted deep under the water. He was still fighting the shark deep in the water with the remaining energy he still had. Darryl was injured badly, but so was the shark.

There were countless wounds on its body. However,

the shark only got more and more excited from the smell of fresh blood.

With its bloody-red eyes, it once again opened its jaws wide and charged towards Darryl.

Again? Darryl held on tightly to his fist and turned his body to void that attack. At the same time, he reserved his remaining energy into his energy field.

Bang! The water was quickly flowing and surrounded Darry with a loud noise.

"Ascension of the Nine Dragons!"

With a loud roar, nine golden dragons emerged from under the water and surrounded Darryl!

"Die!" Darryl shouted. The nice golden dragons began to bang the shark.

Bang! The shark's huge body was being banged everywhere and became badly injured.

Blood Drinking Sword appeared in Darryl's hand as he pierced through the shark's body and caused plenty of blood to ooze out.

"What's happening? Why is there so much blood?"

Everyone on the shores could not see what had happened under the water. They could only see there was more and more blood floating to the surface.

"This live-in son-in-law must have been bitten to death," said one of them.

Lily was heard crying loudly. "No, he's not dead. He' s not dead!"

Darryl's image appeared in her mind. It had been three years since their marriage. Just like in the movies, images of him kept appearing in her mind.

'You cannot die! You cannot die! I'm still in love with you. Please, please...' she thought.

"Darryl" Lily shouted towards the sea as her tears uncontrollably fell.

"You are not allowed to die Darryl. Did you hear me? Come back up now! You are not allowed to die! Come back, come back now!

Lily could not control her tears. She stood by the sea and cried inconsolably.

"You are not allowed to die. Did you hear me? Did you hear me..." Her voice was getting softer as she soon completely lost her strength.

"Who said that I'm dead?" Just at that moment, a voice came from a distance.

Lily looked up and saw Darryl's head slowly emerging from the water. His body was covered with blood while holding a dead shark in his right

hand. A ten feet long shark was dragged by him to the shores effortlessly.

"This fish is for tonight's barbeque. It can feed all of us, right?" He smiled.

Although his voice was not too loud, everyone heard him loud and clear under the sun.

Chapter 145

It was complete silence.

With Darryl reaching the shores, the ten feet shark had also been dragged along to the shores.

"Gulp!" One of them among the crowd swallowed a big gulp of saliva.

How did he do that? How was it possible for him to kill the shark?

The few hundred of them were looking at Darryl. Everyone was stunned and amazed. That was incredible!

Darryl smiled. "Why is my dear wifey crying so badly? Were you worried about your dear hubby?"

"You..." Lily was really heartbroken earlier, thinking she would never see him again. She only wanted to hug him tightly when she saw him walking towards the shore.

Her beautiful face was still covered with tears. She had not expected Darryl would still be joking around while calling out each other hubby and wifey in front of everyone. How embarrassing!

"Stop it, I-I wasn't worried about you!" Lily said

softly while drying her tears. She did not look back at Darryl.

"Darryl!" Megan and Yvonne walked over. "Are you fine?"

It was all thanks to Darryl that everyone managed to escape from being the shark's meal.

The three beautiful ladies surrounding him made all those men envious.

"I'm alright," Darryl replied to the three ladies and smiled.

Darryl was busy looking around at Lily, then Megan and Yvonne. All three of them did not have a chance to change yet as they were still drenched wet in their clothes which showed their sexy body.

Megan's body was the sexiest among them, it was so attractive.

Lily's body had the perfect balance with an attractive killer waist.

Not forgetting to mention Yvonne who looked extremely elegant.

He felt awesome being surrounded by the three ladies, haha.

At that moment, a young man walked towards them while laughing and looking at Darryl with respect. "

Haha, you have really good strength. You are really brave to fight such a huge shark. It sounded ridiculous when some of them called you useless. I would say that was complete rubbish!"

He spoke fearlessly without caring about the feelings of the rest.

He was of course referring to Kent, William, and a few other rich family's sons. Usually, Kent would have fought back by now, but both of them looked terrible and none dared to utter a word.

Who was this guy anyway?

The young man was Dax Sanders, from the Sanders family. The Sanders family was a huge family. His family business was not from trade but from society 's underground businesses. Many years ago, Dax's grandfather came to the Donghai City port and built his fortune based on his pair of fists. After dozens of years, the Sanders family now owned countless bars and KTV. Everyone was fearful of their family.

For the past few years, although the elderly Mr. Sanders still appeared as the person managing their family matters, the fact was that authority had already been passed on to Dax.

Therefore, although Dax was still young he had a very high status in the Donghai City underground society. Even both Brandon and Abby would greet

Dax as their brother if they ever met.

Due to the history of the Sanders family's businesses heavily related to the Underground society, Dax loved to make new friends. He did not care if the person was rich. He only cared about one's loyalty. His family worshipped the War Saint Guan Yu who emphasized loyalty the most.

Darryl was being looked down on by everyone but stood up and single-handedly fought against the shark. This made Dax really impressed by his bravery.

The Sanders family was the highest status family among those who attended the outing. Everyone would want to build relations with them and none want to upset the Sanders family.

Darryl did not recognize Dax as he replied with a smile, "It was just pure luck for me being able to kill the shark."

Dax stepped forward. "I'm really impressed, brother Darryl. I'm Dax Sanders. Let's be friends."

Truth be told, over their past three years of marriage that was the first time someone did not look down on Darryl. Darryl smiled and shook Darryl's hand. It was when he saw countless scars on Dax's arm!

It looked really scary. What had Dax been through

at such a young age? Why did he have so many scars?

Kent grinned coldly while watching both of them shaking hands.

Chapter 146

'Darryl is lucky to befriend Dax, but both of them aren't at the same level. They won't be friends for long,' thought Kent. He set up the shark incident, but Darryl was the one getting the attention. Even Megan was ignoring him now.

"Alright, silence please." Edward stepped forward and spoke.

"All of you are from rich and famous families. Everyone had been pampered. The aim of this outing is to challenge everyone's survival instincts. We shall barbeque the shark later. Let's get a place to sleep for now." Edward spoke loudly.

"Great!" Everyone unanimously agreed.

Everyone soon embarked on searching for a resting place after eating the barbequed fish.

"Come quickly, there's a cave over here. It's big enough for all of us to rest," shouted someone excitedly not long after that.

Everyone moved towards the cave.

...

Platinum Corporation.

The company was surrounded by countless fans with all of them holding paper signs and light sticks. Everyone was really excited!

All the media in Donghai City was here too.

All of them were waiting for someone. Yes, Giselle Lindt.

Despite the technical problem incident of her earpiece much earlier, Giselle was still a hit.

Not only did she look attractive, but her vocals were also great. She had always been famous for her sexy body and sweet smile.

The Superstar judges show all their love for Giselle, hence it was no surprise that she ended up winning the show as the champion.

Giselle was the most talented female artist in the entertainment industry.

Once the final episode of Superstar was aired, every major film investor and entertainment company extended their interest to Giselle. Some would like to organize her concert while others would like to get her involved with their movie shoots...

Among them was Dalton Entertainment who offered an appearance fee of five million to be the lead actress in their movie.

The price was really high for a beginner like Giselle.

Dalton Entertainment was a company with great foundations, resources, and connections. The famous girls' group 'Ladies 102' was one of the groups signed under them.

Giselle went for an interview at Dalton Entertainment the day before. The President, Dalton Zander was the one meeting Giselle. He could not help himself after seeing Giselle's beauty. What an attractive lady!

Giselle felt extremely uncomfortable as Dalton kept staring at her body. How rude he was as the President, how could he be so disgusting?

After the interview, Dalton walked over to Giselle with a smile and sat beside her. He then started holding her hands pretending he was a fortune-teller.

Giselle was furious as he was clearly taking advantage of her. She stood and was about to leave.

Dalton grabbed her waist and looked over her body. "Oh wow, you really look amazing. Look at your body, no wonder you're the champion."

Dalton met many female artists before, but Giselle was the most attractive one.

Giselle struggled to escape. "Excuse me President

Zander, please respect me. I'm not the kind of woman you are thinking of."

Although she was in the entertainment industry, Giselle had always kept herself pure. She had always reminded herself to take care of her life.

Besides, Dalton looked hideous like a pig.

Dalton was upset when he saw Giselle struggling. " Miss Giselle Lindt, why are you so angry? You're an intelligent lady. All you have to do is spend the night with me and I'll guarantee all the resources you need to make you famous. What do you say?"

'Every woman is the same, all of them will bow to me if I offer what they desire,' thought Dalton. That was his accumulated experience after all these times.

After he finished speaking, he went on and put his hands onto Giselle's legs.

Giselle could not stand it anymore. She stood up and gave a big tight slap on Dalton's face before marching out of the room.

Dalton was furious and shouted at Giselle, "Sh*t! Who do you think you are? How noble are you? In two months' time, you'll come back crawling and begging at me. If not, I shall be your son!"

'How dare she treat me like that? She will never be able to survive in the entertainment industry

anymore. I shall make her come crawling back to me and calling me dear father while begging for my forgiveness!' Dalton was thinking in his mind.

Giselle pretended she did not hear a word as she left on her stilettos.

Chapter 147

Moonlit River.

Giselle walked in once she got out of the car. Her high school class monitor Clifford had just called to inform her of a gathering.

She was really upset over Dalton's incident the day before. It would be great to attend a friends' gathering to relax.

Giselle's appearance immediately became the focus. All of her classmates came over to greet her since Giselle was the class goddess and currently a star!

Apart from Giselle, the next person who attracted the most attention would be their class teacher, Lana Thomas. Giselle was absent from the last gathering and finally managed to make it this round.

The 30 years old Lana was the most beautiful teacher in the school. During her lessons, all the boys were unable to concentrate from being distracted by her body.

After a few years, Lana still looked the same. In fact, she looked even more attractive and extremely sexy with her pencil skirt which displayed her perfect

body.

Lana and Giselle were both equally attractive in both their looks and figures.

All the men were lost in their beauty.

Clifford, their class monitor was amazed. "Miss Thomas, you still look the same despite so many years have passed. You still looked so beautiful."

Clifford was made the monitor during her school days not only due to her academic performance but also her sweet words.

Lana had always been a very strict teacher at school such that none of the students would compliment her. Now that they had graduated, Clifford no longer hesitated to throw her compliments.

Lana smiled. "All of you looked the same too. Clifford, your sweet words and Giselle's beauty are the same as before. The one I remembered most was Darryl and Alex. Both of them used to sit side by side and cause troubles."

Of course, Darryl was the second son of the Darby family who used to cause trouble and refused to study thinking he was from a rich family. He had caused headaches to his teachers.

Alex laughed listening to those words. "Miss Thomas, you still remember! I've changed now."

Sh*t, it was always Darryl's idea that got them both into trouble. He did not expect his class teacher would still remember about it.

Alex sighed thinking, 'Darryl, why aren't you here today? You missed the chance to meet our beautiful classmates!'

Alex felt sorry for him since Darryl was his best friend.

Lana smiled and looked around. "Is Darryl here?"

Clifford replied quickly, "Miss Thomas, Darryl is doing great now. He is a live-in son-in-law and eats on his wife's wealth, hence he doesn't need to work. Unlike most of us, we are still working hard to make a living."

Haha!

Everyone was trying to hold their laughter while a few ladies started giggling.

"Oh, that's right Miss Thomas. He must be busy with house chores now. He won't have time to come here."

"Teacher, don't you know that Darryl is now a famous person in Donghai City. Famous for being useless. Haha!"

Alex was really upset listening to their words. He

squeezed his brow and scolded, "We are ex-classmates, why do all of you have to behave as such? Is it that good to talk bad behind Darryl?"

The group of people was too much. Darryl was just a live-in son-in-law. He was not relying on the others.

Talk too much! Alex was really upset from hearing all those bad words about his best friend.

Clifford replied, "Alex, why are you so emotional? We are talking to Miss Thomas, not talking to you."

Alex ignored them and went back to his seat. Lana was not happy either.

It was nothing surprising that Darryl being a live-in son-in-law was not doing well. During his school days, Miss Thomas had punished him countless times. After he was banished from the Darby family, he became a useless person as expected.

Lana was not sympathetic toward Darryl and said coldly, "Let's not talk about him. He had always caused me problems during our school days. He deserved it now that he had become a live-in son-in-law like what all of you just mentioned."

Lana had drunk quite a lot of alcohol after a few rounds of drinks.

Looking at most of her students doing well, Lana

was really proud. She bumped into Giselle while she was heading to the washroom.

"Giselle, I would like to ask for a favor," Lana spoke softly while closing the door behind her.

Giselle smiled. "What is it, Miss Thomas? I'll try my best to help." Giselle was always grateful Lana treated her well during her school days.

Lana said softly, "I guess you have a good relationship with the President of Platinum Corporation. I... I wish to venture into the entertainment industry. Can you introduce me to the President?"

Chapter 148

Although she was a school teacher, Lana had good vocals, a beautiful look, and a sexy body. She looked elegant even though she was already in her thirties.

Giselle was a big star. It would be great if Giselle could help to recommend her.

Giselle was stunned and immediately replied, " Actually, the President of Platinum Corporation is ..."

She stopped in the middle of her words. She almost forgot Darryl was keeping a really low profile and did not want many people knowing about his status.

How? What should she do with her teacher's request?

Thinking of that, Giselle smiled. "Sure, let me find out tomorrow."

Lana was very excited as she added, "Great! I shall send you some of my photos. Please send them to the President of Platinum Corporation."

Lana started texting her photos to Giselle. She had always been confident in her own looks and her body as she felt she was just as beautiful as those movie stars. She was confident that the President of

Platinum Corporation would be interested in her after seeing her photos.

Lana had picked many photos of herself taken from different angles and styles. Giselle had no choice but to forward all of them to Darryl.

...

Dragon Rising Lake.

All of them had gathered in the cave.

Everyone was satisfied as they managed to find a cave before sundown. The cave's width was the size of three to four basketball courts. It had more than enough space for everyone to take a rest.

As the night was still young, everyone started gathering in groups to chit-chat.

Darryl and Dax immediately clicked when they met. Both of them were busy chatting in the cave. After a while, Dax's wife felt rather bored and hence Dax went out for a walk with her.

Dax's wife, Nancy was also a beauty who looked elegant and beautiful.

She was wearing a pair of jean shorts and a short top. There was a fierce-looking red phoenix tattoo on her back and she looked really presentable.

However, none of the men around would dare to

even peep at Nancy due to her husband's background.

"I'll take a walk with my wife. Let's continue our chat later," said Dax to Darryl while holding on to Nancy's waist.

It was obvious their relationship was very good.

Lily and Yvonne approached once Dax left.

"Darryl, how did you kill the shark?" Lily asked curiously. She finally had the chance to ask him. No matter how strong a man could be, it was unlikely he could defeat a shark.

Darryl smiled. "It's nothing special, I just gave it a few punches and it was out."

Everyone was eavesdropping as they were also interested to know but started laughing when they heard what Darryl had said. What a liar! Perhaps he had lost his dignity being a live-in son-in-law and wanted to be a hero now!

Just with a few punches and the shark became unconscious?

Kent puked on the ground loudly as an attempt to show his disagreement with Darryl's words.

Darryl ignored him and continued, "I found a knife when I was deep in the water. I'm not sure who had

thrown it in there, but I used the knife to poke through the shark's body and killed it."

Darryl intentionally said that for Kent to hear him. When the shark appeared earlier, Kent threw the knife towards those ladies to distract it from chasing him so that he could escape.

What an idiot!

Kent's face turned black. He was mad at Darryl for bringing up that incident again. Just when he was about to walk over and argue a loud voice was suddenly heard.

"No! Something is wrong! Help!"

Chapter 149

Dax panicky rushing in while carrying Nancy. "Is there a doctor here? Anyone?"

Nancy fainted in his arms with her eyes shut tightly.

Everyone who was chatting earlier went towards them and was stunned.

What had happened? Why had she fainted?

Everyone wished to use this chance to establish a connection with the Sanders family, but none of them were doctors!

At that moment, a lady stepped forward. She was Helen Darwin, the granddaughter of the Darwin family. She was a very studious girl and currently doing her second-year medical degree.

Dax felt relieved upon seeing her. Helen took Nancy's pulse and in just three seconds, she shook her head and said, "This is something abnormal. Her breathing is very weak, she'll not be able to last for the next two hours."

"Miss Darwin, you are frightening me. Can you please help her?" Dax's body was shaking. He had never been so worried, even when he was fighting with a few hundred people.

"I can't with my current abilities." Helen sighed.

"What?" Dax was stunned.

Helen was the top student in her class. Her medical skills and knowledge were as great as those of experienced doctors from large hospitals. Dax was anxious and furious from hearing Helen's words. He stared at Kent. "Kent, your Hough family organized this outing trip. Didn't you arrange for an ambulance at standby?"

Dax was furious and looked really scary. "If anything were to happen to my wife, your whole Hough family will be in huge trouble!"

His yelling was as loud as thunder, Kent was stunned and his whole body was shaking as he stuttered, "B-b-brother Dax, I... I'll call for an ambulance now."

Sanders was one of those families he could not afford to piss off!

Megan was getting worried. Despite still feeling upset at Kent over the fake shark incident during the day, she started to worry as she saw Kent was shivering badly.

Looking at the darkness outside the cave, Kent looked troubled.

The outing's aim was to live independently.

Everyone was supposed to feed on barbeque fish and spent a night in the cave. No cars were left behind them not to mention a doctor. Besides, the place they were located was rather secluded. Even if they managed to call for an ambulance and get to the hospital, they would only be able to reach the next morning.

"Don't bother to call for an ambulance. I'm afraid by the time the ambulance gets here, the poison would have spread to her entire body," said Darryl calmly. "Darryl, are you able to save my wife?" Dax asked anxiously when he heard Darryl's voice.

"No, no. He's not able to save her..." Lily was worried as she pulled Darryl's shoulders and said, " Darryl, shut up."

For their three years of marriage, she had never seen him reading any medical-related books. How would he be able to save someone?

That was a life or death situation.

Darryl tapped Lily's hands gently and assured her not to worry. He then smiled at Dax. "Don't be too worried, Dax. Did your wife consume any wild fruits?"

Nancy was lying motionless on the floor with everyone looking at her body. Only Darryl noticed there were some white colored-liquid on her red

lips.

Dax nodded. "Yes, she ate some plums which I picked for her from a fruit tree nearby!"

Plums? Darryl laughed. She must have wrongly eaten the poisonous Monk's Blood fruit. It was an ingredient for producing elixirs. Darryl had not expected to be able to find that ingredient on this trip.

The most important matter was to save Nancy first. He could go collect the Monk's Blood fruit later.

With that thought in mind, Darryl instructed Dax, " Please put your wife down and let her sit on my lap."

According to the Infinite Elixir Manual, it was not too difficult to cure the Monk's Blood fruit's poison. One only needed to consume the Tri-solar Elixir and the poison would be cleared.

It was not too difficult to produce the Tri-solar Elixir as it was an entry-level elixir. The ingredients needed were water, tree roots, and worms.

However, it would take half an hour to produce the elixir and Darryl would need to seal Nancy's energy field to prevent the poison from spreading further, hence he needed Nancy to sit on his lap.

Everyone surrounding them was furious upon hearing Darryl's words. 'What the heck he was

trying to do? Did he think he can act as he wishes because he killed a shark? How dare he interfere with the Sanders family's matters and ask for Nancy to sit on his lap? He must be crazy!'

Justin yelled, "Darryl, are you too lonely from being a live-in son-in-law that you are very desperate for a woman? Your wife won't let you touch her, so you want to take advantage of Dax's wife?"

Chapter 150

"Yes, do you want to die?" Kent also shouted in frustration.

Darryl did not immediately reply. He just waved his hands and said, "Fine then, if that's the case both of you please treat her."

Both of them were speechless. How would they know how to treat her sickness!

"Fine, shut up the both of you." Dax shook his hands. He gently put Nancy down and helped her to sit on Darryl's lap.

"Dax, please find some tree roots and worms from outside," said Darryl while pressing his fingers against Nancy's abdomen!

Rising Sun Acupoint. During his days of learning martial arts, his master had warned that acupoint was not to be touched unnecessarily. It was because that was the energy and blood turning zone. It may easily lead to blood blockage.

After Dax left, Lily approached Darryl quickly. " Darryl, stop fooling around. Nancy's situation seems really bad. Are you sure you can do it? Don't force yourself."

Lily was not happy about the fact Nancy was leaning close to Darryl. She felt really uncomfortable.

"Don't worry, I can handle it."

He could handle it? Was he a doctor?

Lily was furious. "Darryl, you are going to get the Lyndon family in trouble! We really can't afford to upset the Sanders family."

Darryl did not reply and kept his focus on pressing Wendy's acupoint while transferring some energy to Nancy.

Not long after, Dax returned holding a plastic bag filled with tree roots and worms.

William was cold sweating. "President Sanders, this is a matter of life and death. Can you be so careless? What can Darryl do? Please don't trust him."

If Darryl failed to rescue Nancy, he could pay with his life to the Sanders family, but it might still bring trouble to the Lyndon family.

"Yes, he doesn't know a thing. Please don't trust him, President Sanders."

"I know him well. He just wants to be a hero."

Everyone's comments were causing even more frustration for Dax.

"CAN ALL OF YOU SHUT UP?" Dax blew his top while shouting and looking at everyone. "I know what all of you are thinking. You are worried it'll implicate you if anything were to go wrong. Don't worry, even Darryl failed to rescue my wife, I'll not hold you responsible."

Everyone went speechless after hearing Dax's words. Dax then added, "We have no other choices now. The ambulance will only arrive tomorrow morning. I trust Darryl."

Everyone sighed in relief.

Dax had said they would not be held responsible, hence there was nothing else for them to say.

Lily stood speechless feeling worried.

Dax and Darryl had just known each other today. How could he trust Darryl with all his heart? As compared to herself, Darryl and she were married and lived together for three years now, but she had always doubted him at every critical moment. Could it be that she still did not know him well?

"You are confident you can treat Dax's wife?" Lily walked up to Darryl again.

Darryl smiled. "Had I ever broken my promises?"

Lily had a shiver. It was true. All these times,

regardless of matters relating to the Lyndon family or any other matters, everything would turn out fine as long as she did what he asked her to do. It felt like her husband was almighty.

At that moment, Dax asked nervously, "Darryl, are these worms to be consumed directly?"

The worms were little treasures also known as ' Ground Dragons'. They were used in traditional medicine to cure many illnesses.

Darryl shook his head. "No, it'll not help by consuming it directly. It needs to be made into elixir."

What? Elixir? A few girls giggled upon hearing that. It was now proven the live-in son-in-law was just fooling around.

William laughed. "Darryl, since when can you produce an elixir? Did you learn that during the past few years of staying in our Lyndon family? Did you manage to produce the Eternal Youth Elixir? Show it to us."

Haha, haha! Everyone could not stop laughing after listening to William's words.

Chapter 151

Darryl ignored their laughter.

He shrugged while picking up an empty ceramic jar from the floor. There were many bottles and jars left behind in the cave. It was uncertain who left them there.

He rinsed the can, looked around, and said, "Justin, William, and Kent. Take off your shirts."

"Why should I do that? Are you crazy?" Kent shouted.

"I need fire to produce the elixir and all the twigs are wet from rain, so I'll need your shirts for fire," replied Darryl calmly.

Justin yelled, "Why did it have to be our shirts? What don't you use yours? Don't you know that we might catch a cold in this weather?"

Darryl replied, "Fine, your shirts are more important than Nancy's life."

How dare you!

Kent was furious. "Fine! I'll give it to you. I shall see what you'll do if Nancy doesn't wake up later."

The three of them looked at each other and started

removing their shirts while everyone laughed at them.

A fire was soon set up with the ceramic can boiling as Darryl started producing the elixir.

Darryl was very cautious and serious with every step.

William and Kent were laughing at him. "He looked ridiculous! That's how you produce an elixir? It looks fake!"

Kent was pressing on his stomach while laughing tearfully. "Stop pretending. Traditionally, special cauldrons are used to produce elixir. How will you be able to do it with a broken ceramic jar? It looks cheap too!"

Yes, it did look ridiculous to use a broken ceramic jar to produce an elixir. Was he trying to trick them into believing as if they were a three-year-old child?

"Who told you that this ceramic jar cannot be used to produce elixir?" Darryl replied coldly.

The most important part of elixir production was the accurate measurements of ingredients and heat management. Not the tools used to boil those ingredients.

It would be easy for everyone to measure

ingredients properly, but heat management over the brewing process would be very challenging.

The elixir would be burnt if the heat was too high, but it would also not form if the heat was too low. That was always the challenge for any master when attempting to produce an elixir.

However, heat management was not a real problem for Darryl as ever since he became a cultivator, he could manage his internal energy to perfectly control the heat as required. That was the reason why Darryl would be able to produce elixir regardless of container types.

Of course, none of the others had the knowledge. They were under the impression that Darryl was just acting.

"Oh, so confident!" Kent teased while looking at Yvonne. "The Young family deals with antiques. Miss Young, I believe you'll have some knowledge of this? Let's hear from the professionals. Miss Young, in your opinion, and in accordance with those ancient manual recordings, will he be able to produce elixir using just that?"

Kent glared at Darryl as he spoke. Let's see how he could defend himself!

Everyone turned to look at Yvonne. Oh right, why did no one think about her earlier? She would be the

most knowledgeable person on that topic.

Yvonne bit her lips. She had been observing each step Darryl took while producing the elixir. She had earlier read about them in some ancient manuals.

A long time ago, people were superstitious. They had always tried to produce the Eternal Youth Elixir. That was how the occupation of Elixir Masters came about. However, there were many fake Elixir Masters around. Besides, no one would produce an elixir in such a simple and casual manner as what Darryl was doing.

Yvonne spoke softly, "Based on my knowledge, ancient Elixir Masters would require special tools such as an elixir cauldron, pot, seawater, pomegranate jar, and many others. This is the first time I've heard of making an elixir in a ceramic jar.

Wow! Everyone was startled from hearing what Yvonne just said and concluded that Darryl was just faking it. All of them turned to Dax to see what his reaction would be.

Chapter 152

Dax acted as if he did not hear a single word as he sat quietly and emotionless beside his wife.

Yvonne felt terrible from seeing everyone laughing at Darryl, "I'm not experienced. I cannot be sure. There may be certain people using ceramic jars to produce elixir..."

How foolish of her. She was busy sharing general knowledge of producing elixir that she had unintentionally humiliated Darryl.

"Haha, Miss Young, you don't need to cover for him anymore."

"Yes, even though this live-in son-in-law had saved you from the shark this morning, you do not need to be grateful. He's just a fake!"

William laughed. "Perhaps even if the jar explodes, he will not be able to produce anything. Darryl, stop acting. Don't you get tired?"

Pop! There was a loud vibration in the ceramic jar which startled everyone present and caused them to step backward. The ceramic jar did not break as the sound was from the reaction of gathering energy in the ceramic jar.

Darryl slowly opened the jar's cover with everyone anxiously peeping before becoming speechless. Some of the ladies shouted and felt weak.

There was a black elixir lying quietly at the bottom of the ceramic jar which also released a very nice scent at the same time.

What? Did he just produce that?

Everyone's mind went blank as they blankly stared at the elixir. That was impossible!

Lily who was biting her lips got excited and curious at the same time! Her husband would never fail to surprise her. She felt she did not know him well.

"Dax, the elixir is ready. I'll feed it to her." Darryl took the elixir from the jar and fed Nancy.

Dax did not say a word despite everyone's comment earlier as he was worried it may distract Darryl from producing the elixir. Now that it had been completed, he was relieved.

"Darryl, thank you." Dax nodded while waiting quietly for Nancy to regain her consciousness.

Everyone started to surround them and carefully observe the elixir's results.

After ten minutes, Nancy looked much rosier than before but was still unconscious. Fifteen minutes

had passed and there were still no signs of her waking up. Half an hour! An hour!

"Darryl, what's wrong?" Dax became impatient.

Darryl calmly replied, "Don't worry, it'll take some time to clear the poison in her body. She's no longer in danger. She will wake up before morning comes."

The Infinite Elixir Manual had not recorded the duration for elixirs to take full effect. Just like the Godly pill which Darryl produced for Megan earlier did not show any effect at the beginning when she took it, but ultimately it still took effect.

Dax nodded. However, the rest of the people started laughing again.

Despite the fact they were surprised with Darry's success in producing an elixir, they still believed Darryl did it based on pure luck. The elixir would never have any effect. They felt Darryl was only fooling with Dax.

"President Sanders, I think this Darryl is just fooling you. She can only wake up tomorrow? If his elixir is effective, why would there be no reaction from Nancy at all?" A topless Justin was trying to impress Dax.

Cold! It was really cold out there. The weather

would normally be cold by the sea and storms outside only made it worse. Justin was furious when he recalled losing his shirt to build the fire for Darryl.

Just at that moment, Darryl's cell phone went beeping non-stop with dozens of messages coming through.

Who would be sending messages so late at night? Darryl took out his cellphone and was stunned.

What was wrong with Giselle? Why did she send so many pictures to him?

Feeling curious, Darryl downloaded the photos and swallowed a big gulp of saliva upon seeing what had popped up on his screen. Those were pictures of his previous class teacher, Lana Thomas.

Thinking of Lana Thomas made Darryl recall his schooling days. During his high school days, the teacher he feared most was Lana Thomas.

Chapter 153

Miss Lana Thomas was really beautiful, but she was very strict too. The dozens of photos taken from different angles did indeed perfectly show off her body figure.

What did Giselle want? What was with all those pictures of Lana?

Sh*t! While Darryl was looking at those pictures, a few people around him saw those pictures too which resulted in Kent shouting, "Come quickly! Darryl is looking at pictures of hot chicks, haha. That's so disgusting, please at least do it privately!"

Most of the ladies were staring at Darryl in anger upon hearing that. All women despised disgusting men.

Darryl felt embarrassed. He shut his cellphone immediately and pretended to look around while trying to get rid of the atmosphere's awkwardness.

He then stood with his brows furrowed tightly.

"What are you doing? Are you crazy?" Ken shouted.

Darryl did not reply as he looked towards the cave walls and then towards the cave exit. He then sighed and said, "There's something not right

about this cave."

Lily and Dax were lost. What was he talking about? What was wrong with the cave?

Darryl pointed towards the bay located opposite the cave a few hundred miles away and slowly said, "If we take a look from here toward the bay where we had our swim competition, does it not look like a dragon resting?"

Dax and Lily looked towards the direction he was pointing. It was true. Far away by the bay, it looked like a dragon was resting under the moonlight.

Darryl continued, "In the world of Feng Shui, this is known as 'Dragon Swimming in Shallow Waters'. It' s a bad omen. Our shark attack incident earlier was not solely caused by pig's blood."

Dax asked, "You have knowledge about Feng Shui too?"

William rolled his eyes. "What does he know! If this guy had Feng Shui knowledge, he wouldn't be a live -in son-in-law." Haha! Everyone laughed along.

Dax was puzzled. He noticed Darryl was serious about what he had just said and asked further, " Darryl, if it's true that this bay is the 'Dragon Swimming in Shallow Waters', is there any correlation with the cave here?"

Darryl ignored the look of everyone and faced Dax before said, "Definitely, this cave is located at the bottom of a hill. The hill's shape looked like a starving tiger with this cave we are standing in now being the tiger's mouth."

He pointed to the bay again as he spoke. "Dragon on shallow waters meeting with a starving tiger will cause a battle of power. Do you think standing in the mouth of the tiger would be something good? Something bad will definitely happen."

Oh no!

Everyone went into commotion after hearing his words.

William was frustrated. "Darryl, what are you trying to do? What do you mean by the dragon swimming in shallow waters? What is this dragon and tiger battle? Everyone is about to rest now. Stop talking nonsense."

What was wrong with this fella. How superstitious he could get. Producing elixir and knowing Feng Shui. What else would he bring up next?

Kent laughed. "William, why must this live-in son-in-law of your Lyndon family be so weird?"

"Who knows? Maybe he had gone crazy from the stress of being a live-in son-in-law," replied

William.

Darryl ignored their remarks and looked around before shaking his head. "I cannot predict if there will be a danger, but it's not a good idea for everyone to sleep here. Just in case, I'll not be sleeping here tonight. Dax, do you want to go with me and look for another shelter?"

Dax hesitated while looking at his wife who was still unconscious before saying, "I... I can't leave. It's still raining outside. I'm afraid my wife may not endure it."

He wanted to leave with Darryl and look for shelter but could not bring along his wife who was still unconscious.

Darryl nodded and looked around while asking, " Anyone of you want to go with me?" Although he did not fancy them, he still asked if they would want to go. However, all of them looked at him in shock. Who would want to go out under this thunderstorm? He must be crazy! Haha!

"Darryl, please stop," said Lily softly while pulling Darryl's arm. She almost believed Darryl when he was sharing his Feng Sui knowledge but then came to her senses again.

So much had happened the whole day and Lily felt perhaps Darryl was just trying to impress her to

heat up their relationship. All that dragon-tiger battle was probably just a story he made up so that he could be alone with her and then...

Lily blushed while thinking along those lines. She felt ashamed and angry. Would she not catch a cold if they went out under such a thunderstorm?

"I'm not kidding. I'm serious," replied Darryl.

Chapter 154

Why happened to Lily? Why was she blushing?

"I... I'll go with you." Yvonne stepped forward from the crowd at that moment. She had to support him now since her previous words had caused Darryl to be humiliated by the crowd. At least she would feel better by doing so.

What? Yvonne would be leaving with Darryl? Why? How could the goddess leave with him?

The Young family could not endure any longer. Darryl was just a live-in son-in-law while Yvonne was still single. Why would she want to leave with him?

"Miss Young, don't listen to him."

"Exactly, who knows what he's up to. He bragged of producing an elixir, but Missus Sanders is still unconscious! Don't be fooled by him!"

Hearing that, Kent said, "President Sanders, this guy is just trying to escape because he knows his elixir doesn't work. Don't be fooled."

Kent was so confident as he spoke while thinking, ' Darryl would never be able to trick me.'

"Yes, Kent is right."

"He's just trying to escape as he knows none of us will go with him. He's just making an excuse."

Dax ignored them while Darryl was furious hearing their words. When would they stop talking!

Darryl did not wish to explain further. "It's up to you whether to believe it or not. However, don't come to me crying for help if something bad were to happen."

Haha. Everyone laughed as they felt Darryl was still acting and none of them were pleased.

Kent coldly said, "We will beg for your help? Are you dreaming? If there's really such a moment, I shall kneel and greet you as my father."

'He seriously thinks he can save the world? That's ridiculous.' thought Kent.

Darryl smiled and said, "Fine, I shall wait for you to call me your father. Don't forget what you just said."

"Shut up!" Kent was furious and was about to charge forward, but Megan stopped him.

"Megan dear, don't tell me you believe his rubbish too?"

Megan was annoyed. "I didn't believe him, but I stopped you so that you can calm yourself down.

This outing is organized by your family, you shouldn't behave so emotionally."

The truth was Megan wanted to join Darryl too but decided to believe the others after some thoughts. She could not deny that Darryl's words sounded rather ridiculous. What would possibly happen to the cave?

"Brother, I shall move then." Darryl bid farewell to Dax while ignoring the rest. He knew Dax wanted to join him, but could not as his wife was still unconscious. Dax nodded. "Sure."

Darryl started building a grass hut from tree branches and coconut leaves about a dozen miles from the cave. Lily and Yvonne felt embarrassed standing beside him. Lily appeared calmer though as she thought Darryl wanted to leave the others so he could spend some private time with her. Now with Yvonne around, Darryl would not be able to do anything funny.

"Although it's simple, it'll suffice. What do you two think?" Darryl smiled while asking the two goddesses after he finished building the hut.

"You've only built one?" Lily asked. The space in the grass hut was not huge, she hoped he was thinking of any funny ideas.

Yvonne felt rather awkward and thought of

returning to the cave. However, she gave up when she saw the darkness behind her.

Chapter 155

Oh yes, Darryl had only built one grass hut. How would they fit?

Yvonne and Lily were puzzled.

Darryl laughed and said, "It's not easy to build one. Besides, the night is so cold. We would be able to keep each other warm if we stay close together. Don' t you agree?"

Haha. There would be two beautiful ladies spending the night with him. Why would he build another hut?

Lily blushed. "You wish to sleep between both of us? Don't think about it!" She then pulled Yvonne along and said, "Let's go in and rest now."

Lily shouted once they went into the hut, "Darryl, please guard the hut outside. You're the best!"

Lily had a shiver when said that. She had never been so gentle with Darryl.

"You... You're leaving me outside?" Darryl begged while Lily just laughed. "You can't be in here since Yvonne is still single."

Sigh! Darryl lit a cigarette and closed his eyes.

Darryl woke up due to the coldness of the weather after an unknown period of time. He could hear the ladies' breathing from inside and swallowed his saliva.

Darryl was thinking, 'Are they sleeping? Should I take a peep? No harm just taking a peep, right?'

Just when Darryl was about to crawl into the grass hut, a loud bang came from nowhere.

"Bang!"

The noise was as loud as a bomb and seemed to be coming from the cave's direction!

Lily and Yvonne were awakened by the loud noise too as they crawled out of the grass hut looking lost and unsure what just happened.

"Something happened at the cave. Both of you stay here and don't go anywhere," Darryl told them as he rushed quickly towards the cave.

Both of the ladies were stunned while watching him leaving.

It was just like what Darryl predicted earlier! The cave was not safe! Could he predict the future?

They wanted to follow and find out what happened but did not do so after remembering Darryl's words.

Oh no!

Darryl arrived in front of the cave and what he saw gave him the chills. The cave had collapsed with its entrance completely blocked by a huge rock, leaving only a small gap.

Everyone inside the cave was in shock and started screaming for help. How could there be anyone in such a secluded place?

"Help!"

"Let me out! Let me out!"

Hearing all the voices, Darryl climbed up the huge rock and tried looking through a small gap. Almost the entire cave was blocked by the huge pieces of rock, leaving an area of less than a hundred square feet.

The dozens of families were squeezed to a corner with their bodies covered in dust and looked horrible. Some of the ladies started crying.

Fortunately, no one was killed but some of them were injured from being hit by the rock. Their wounds needed to be attended to before it turned life-threatening.

The main problem was the many small rocks still falling down toward the cave. The smaller ones were the size of a fist while larger ones were as big as basketballs. One would definitely be seriously

injured if not killed were they to be hit by one of those rocks.

Perhaps he should call for help? It would take at least three hours before help arrived and with those rocks continuously falling, the cave would not be able to withstand for another ten minutes before collapsing again. Some of them inside had been hit by the rocks with their heads bleeding badly.

"Shut up! Where is Dax?" Darryl shouted loudly.

The cave was in complete silence all of the sudden. Everyone looked towards where Darryl's voice came from.

Everyone was very worried but remembered Darryl's words earlier.

It had happened. He was not lying nor was he over-reacting. The cave was indeed not safe.

"Darryl, I'm here." Dax's voice came from the inside of the cave.

"I'll pull you up!" Darryl made a rope out of tree branches. This was a skill he learned while living in the village. An old fisherman who rescued him had made a long and solid rope to save him.

With Darryl's help, Dax and his wife climbed out of the cave by holding onto the rope.

Chapter 156

The rest of the people in the cave reacted then. " Mister Darryl, pull me out first..."

"Darryl, save me first..."

"Mister Darryl, help my wife first. She's two months pregnant..."

There were still a few broken rocks falling in the cave and looked like it was going to collapse again soon.

Under such circumstances, everyone wants to be saved first as it becomes less safe the later it is!

Kent wailed as he pushed himself to the front. He lifted his head up at Darryl with a face full of anticipation. "Mister Darryl, Mister Darryl, help me first. I can pay you..."

Kent did not care anymore about his grudges against Darryl. He only wanted to stay alive!

Darryl looked at him with a smile. "Kent, have you forgotten what you've said before? Didn't you say that you're gonna call me daddy?"

"You!"

This live-in son-in-law was crossing the line!

Kent would not have cared about doing it, if not for the fact there were hundreds of people around! Moreover, Megan was with him too!

Darryl let out a cold chuckle and ignored him before saying loudly, "Everyone quiet down. I'll save everyone, but ladies first."

After Darryl finished his words, he looked at Megan. "Come on, what are you waiting for?"

Darryl actually saved Megan first!

Megan was pleasantly surprised as she stepped toward Darryl in heels.

This woman's figure was out of this world in Darryl' s opinion.

Gulp! Darryl quietly swallowed his saliva and dropped down the rope.

Even though Megan held onto the rope, her feet slipped and almost fell onto the ground as she was wearing heels.

Thanks to Darryl's nimble reflexes, he managed to grab onto Megan's waist and pulled her up.

Kent was filled with unbridled rage upon seeing this scene!

Motherf*cker! His own classy and cool fiancee was

being touched by this brat!

Megan was extremely shy.

So many people watched Darryl carry her in his arms.

However, they were waiting to be rescued and did not notice Megan's expression.

Darryl continued saving people with the rope. After 10 minutes, everyone trapped was pulled up with the exception of Kent.

After the last person was pulled, Darryl sat atop a giant rock and panted for air.

Damn, thank god he was a cultivator who had far greater energy and stamina than the average joe.

Even so, rescuing several hundred people was still exhausting.

The rain gradually stopped with the Heavens' blessings. Darryl pointed at the forest nearby. " Everyone go rest over there. There won't be any danger as long as you're not near the cave."

Although some were bruised, they had their wounds treated in time after being rescued with their lives no longer at risk.

The crowd nodded their heads as they obediently listened to Darryl's words and walked toward the

forest.

Previously they did not believe Darryl's words and even ridiculed him. After having suffered through this current ordeal, no one dared to question him any more.

However, there was one person who did not move.

It was Megan.

Darryl stood up and stretched his wrist. "Hey? Why haven't you left?"

Darryl had pulled several hundred people just a while ago and felt like his arms were about to break.

Megan bit her lips and looked at Kent who was the only one left below before softly saying, "Darryl, Kent... He's still down there. Please save him."

Kent had not cared about Megan's safety during the shark attack incident in the day but ran away by himself instead.

Regardless, Kent was still Megan's fiance and she could not ignore it.

At that moment, the trapped Kent was filled with unspeakable anger!

Darryl obviously wanted vengeance!

Thud, thud, thud!

Several rocks started to fall again in the cave with a few basketball-sized rocks falling right in front of Kent's eyes.

Kent's face turned pale from fright as he instantly panicked and exclaimed, "Mister Darryl, Mister Darryl, I was wrong before. Please, I'm begging you to pull me up. I'll remember the great kindness you have shown..."

This was not the time for Kent to be stubborn as it might end with him losing his life!

Only Darryl had a rope in his hand, even if someone wanted to help, they were powerless!

Darryl did not even acknowledge him and turned his head toward Megan before smiling. "Why should I save him? Your fiance is so talented that he could even kill a shark. A little cave such as this won' t be able to trap him."

After Darryl had finished his words, he turned his body and was about to leave.

At that moment, Kent was so anxious and seemed like he was about to cry. He immediately shouted, " The shark that I killed was fake. I was just pretending. Mister Darryl, I'm begging you. Don't leave me here. This cave is going to collapse any moment, I don't want to die here. Mister Darryl, you

're better than me okay!"

Darryl was internally struggling to hold back his laughter. Was it not obvious the shark he killed was fake? Of the several hundred who came on this outing, who could not tell it was fake?

This motherf*cker was always causing trouble and Darryl wanted to simply leave him in the cave.

Megan could not hold back any longer and quickly went after Darryl in heels upon seeing his intentions to leave. She grabbed onto his arm and said, "Please Brother, please pull him up. I'm begging you..."

Chapter 157

The usually high and mighty Megan did not know why she would say something like this. Her face instantly blushed upon finishing her words and it was extraordinarily enchanting under the moonlight.

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows. Even after hearing Megan's words, he had no intentions of saving Kent!

This brat was rotten to the core. He attracted a real shark to attack during the day and almost cost someone their life. There was no way Darryl would forgive him.

"Please, Brother... Please save him..." Megan repeated herself softly as she rocked Darryl's arm.

Kent felt a thorn in his heart upon hearing his own goddess calling another person 'Brother'. However, he dared not speak up at this point.

Darryl sighed and relented after hearing Megan's enchanting pleads. He used the rope and pulled Kent out of the cave.

Darryl did not even bother talking to Kent after rescuing him and simply returned to the grass hut.

"Darryl, you're so amazing."

Lily, who was waiting by the hut with a joyful expression could not help but shouted at Darryl as he approached.

Lily had enquired the people who were resting at the sides about what had happened and found out that Darryl rescued them individually.

Was Darryl still her so-called useless husband?

Why it seemed like he was omnipotent...

Darryl smiled and calmly said, "It's nothing. It's really late. Go get some rest."

Needless to say, Darryl was exhausted after rescuing so many people throughout the night.

Everyone was fast asleep not long later. As Darryl was soundly asleep, he heard the incessant beeping of his cellphone.

Damn it! Who could it be in the middle of the night?

Darryl begrudgingly opened up his phone. Another message from Giselle!?

However, there were no photos this time but was a text paragraph instead.

"Mister Darryl, Miss Thomas asked me to send those photos to you. She wants to join Platinum

Corporation as well and asked me to be her referral. Check her out and see if she's good enough."

"Lana wants to be a celebrity too?" Darryl whispered to himself as thoughts of his schooling days instantly flooded his mind.

Lana always lectured Darryl back when he was still in school. There were two sentences that she often said to him and those sentences were still fresh in his memory. The first sentence was—Darryl if you're not willing to read then get lost.

The second was—I gave you your chance, you'll be standing for today's lesson.

Darryl was terrified of Lana when he was in school as she was really strict.

However, Lana had surely gotten more alluring over the years. The photos sent earlier showed her perfections regardless of which perspective Darryl saw her from.

There was no one who was similar to Lana's style in the entertainment industry. It was possible she could be famous after signing her on.

Darryl sent a voice message to Giselle after some considerations. "She's alright. Head over to the company tomorrow and let Pearl know, she'll arrange an interview for Lana."

Darryl was about to return to the grass hut after he sent that message. However, a sudden thought made him walk toward the hillside nearby.

According to Dax, Nancy ate the Monk's Blood fruit there and got poisoned. The Monk's Blood fruit was an important ingredient in the refinement of pills and elixirs!

It was true that Darryl found the Monk's Blood fruit shortly after arriving at this place. He counted there were dozens of the fruit.

"Haha, it seems the outing this time was worthwhile," Darryl whispered to himself as he excitedly plucked the fruits.

...

Darby Mansion.

Today was an important day as Old Master Darby has ended his seclusion.

Old Master Darby was none other than Darryl's grandfather. He had undergone closed-door cultivation since five years ago and today was the end of his seclusion.

The Darby residence was very lively! Not only every member of the family had gathered for this occasion, but even many prominent people were

also here.

Old Master Darby was a legendary figure in Donghai City. He single-handedly managed the entire Darby clan.

However, Old Master Darby retired from the business world more than 10 years ago.

After Old Master Darby handed over the family business to Drake, he became obsessed with Buddhism.

Old Master Darby originally joined Buddhism because of the remorse in his heart.

The average joe could not imagine the trickeries and deceptions one had to go through in the cut-throat business world. Old Master Darby had been doing business for many years and naturally had also done some dishonorable matters. Perhaps Old Master Darby was looking for some comfort and that was why he started believing in Buddhism.

Old Master Darby had joined Shaolin Sect by chance five years ago.

Old Master Darby had a good friend by the name of Brian Cunningham who was from the Wudang Sect. He was also known as Priest Brian.

Chapter 158

Brian gifted Old Master Darby a cultivation method called the Body Transformation Scripture five years ago.

The Shaolin Sect and Wudang Sect had close brotherhood ties. The forebearers of both sects had worked together and created the Body Transformation Scripture which disciples from both sects could cultivate. Of course, it was only available to those elite disciples with the average disciple having no chance of seeing it.

Old Master Darby began his closed-door cultivation after obtaining the Body Transformation Scripture and five years passed in a blink of an eye. Now that Old Master Darby had finally achieved enlightenment, he ended his seclusion today!

Several prominent figures from Donghai City and even the surrounding areas rushed to the mansion and congratulated Old Master Darby upon hearing the news.

A grand banquet was held in the mansion with a variety of delicious delicacies.

Even the waitresses were absolute beauties.

Everyone was eagerly waiting for Old Master Darby'

s appearance and the man himself eventually appeared.

Old Master Darby wore a white tang suit which radiated an otherworldly appearance. His expression was welcoming and yet there were hints of superiority and majesty.

"Grandpa." The offsprings of the Darby family lined themselves up into two neat rows and respectfully greeted Old Master Darby. They could not contain the joy and excitement in their hearts.

Now that the Old Master has finished his cultivation, he would be at the helm of the Darby family. The Darby family would surely be even more glorious in Donghai City under his leadership!

People from all walks of life who came to celebrate, went up to him one after another and politely greeted him.

Old Master Darby smiled as he nodded his head. He took in his surroundings and slowly said, "I've been cultivating in seclusion for five years. Did anything happen to the family when I was away?"

Darryl was Old Master Darby's favorite grandchild among the offspring of the Darby family. Old Master Darby was confused by Darryl's absence.

Old Master Darby's precious grandson must surely

be present at the end of the Old Master's seclusion. Why was he not there?

Members of the Darby family looked at each other with worrying looks upon hearing the Old Master's question.

Did something happen?

Even if they were given time, they still might not be able to finish telling what had happened.

"Grandpa, we've banished Darryl and his parents from our family." It was at that moment, Darryl's sister-in-law, Yumi stood up and spoke.

Banished from the family?

Old Master Darby's expression changed in an instant. He looked at Yumi in an imposing manner and asked, "What happened?"

Old Master Darby's son, Daniel had a humble nature, and his wife Luna also virtuously took care of the family. The Old Master's favorite grandson, Darryl was even more beloved by all. Why would they be banished from the family?

Yumi silently snickered upon seeing the Old Master's reaction. "Grandpa, you didn't know but Darryl is actually a wolf in sheep's clothing! Three years ago, Darryl used family funds to purchase petroleum stocks without permission. We kicked him out and

he became a live-in son-in-law... Who would've thought he would get lucky that the stocks he bought went up. After that, he pretended to give the family three billion bucks to help us through some tough times, but only used this as an opportunity to violate Jackson's newly-wed wife!"

Wow.

The people who came to congratulate were all in an uproar upon hearing those words.

Did the Darby family actually raise such a scum?

Who went as far as to violate his own sibling.

However, none of them dared to voice their opinion. After all, it was the Darby family's own matter. As outsiders, they had no right to interfere. The atmosphere was too tense especially with Old Master Darby around. Even though the people around were not cultivators, they could still feel the immense aura emanating from the Old Master. He has ascended to Level Three Master General rank! His power was terrifying!

A tremendous wave of internal energy rippled out from the Old Master's body!

Silence.

It was as silent as the grave.

That even the sound of a needle being dropped

could be heard in the Darby's Residence Hall.

Old Master Darby's expression was extremely unpleasant. "Is everything that you said true?"

Darryl was deeply favored by the Old Master. He was naughty ever since young, but never a bad person! Old Master Darby could not believe his own grandson could commit such an atrocity.

Yumi instantly felt nervous upon seeing the Old Master's terrifying expression. "Grandpa, I would never dare lie to you. Everything I said is true."

"Yeah, Grandpa. Everyone in Donghai City knows Darryl became the Lyndon family's live-in son-in-law. As for the shameful act he committed against Jackson's wife, every family member can vouch for it." Florian who stood at the side quickly chimed in with an earnest look on his face.

At the same time, the remaining offsprings of the Darby family nodded their heads.

Old Master Darby took a deep breath as if trying to restrain his rage. He turned his head toward his eldest son, Drake. "Are they telling the truth?"

Drake lowered his head in shame. "Dad, I've betrayed your trust. As the patriarch, I should've properly controlled my younger brother's family. As Darryl's uncle, I'm also partially responsible for

his hurtful acts. I did not educate him well enough as the patriarch."

Huff!

Old Master Darby did not say a word. He simply closed his eyes and sighed deeply instead.

The proud and proper Second Young Master of the Darby family went as far as to purchase petroleum stocks without any authorization! He even became another family's live-in son-in-law! He had dragged the family name into the mud! Such issues could even be tolerated!

However, Old Master Darby never imagined Darryl was capable of violating his own sibling!

Yumi spoke up again upon seeing the Old Master seething with anger. "Grandpa, Darryl's parents are detestable too! They're not much better for raising such a shameless son."

Chapter 159

Thump!

Yumi's words further fueled the Old Master's anger which prompted him to slam the table. "Men, bring Daniel and his wife here. I would like to ask them how they educate their son!"

Old Master Darby's emotions were thoroughly worked up at that moment!

Brandon and Abby who sat at the side exchanged worried looks with each other. They felt Darryl was not a bad person from their previous interaction.

Who would have thought he could do such a thing!

Was he a wolf in sheep's clothing?

Three days later, at Dragon Raising Lake.

Today's weather was great and the sun was shining brightly. The Hough family had called some buses to pick them up early in the morning as the outing had come to an end.

Several people were bruised during the cave-in which happened a few days ago. These rich kids were pampered since young, hence even though their wounds have started healing with no risks to

their lives, they still insisted on getting a medical check-up in the hospital.

Consequently, the injured people scrambled to board the bus once it arrived.

Dax, Wendy, Darryl, Megan, and the remaining who were not injured boarded the last bus.

It was noon when the bus slowly traveled toward the city.

The sun was shining on the seaside with superbly beautiful scenery.

The bus slowly traveled and would take roughly five hours to reach Donghai City.

Some of those rich kids got bored, took out a deck of playing cards, and started playing Golden Flower.

Golden Flower was a variation of poker which required a decent amount of skills to win, but it mostly was luck dependent.

Their bets were considerably huge as none of them lacked funds. This attracted the attention of a few girls.

Kent seemed quite unlucky with his hand and had lost many games in a row. Out of a sudden, the driver slammed onto the brakes of the bus.

"Damn it, do you know how to drive!?"

Kent shouted loudly as he simultaneously tossed away the terrible cards in his hand. "Motherf*cker, I was going to win! Do you think you can afford to pay me back as a mere driver!?"

"Exactly, this is too f*cking much!"

Some of the other rich kids shouted in anger as well.

The driver had an innocent look as he hurriedly got up and explained, "Ladies and gentlemen, don't blame me for this. Some people are blocking our vehicle ahead!"

Everyone went in front to see for themselves after hearing what the driver said.

Standing in front of the bus were indeed three siblings.

Two brothers anxiously stood in front of the bus, while their younger sister sat on the road with a bandaged leg. She was obviously injured.

"H-h-help... Help my sister..."

The two brothers were twins who looked to be around 30 years of age. They had a rather unique appearance—slightly crossed-eyes and stuttering speech.

The three of them were dressed like peasants with worried looks on their faces. They shouted at the

driver, "I-I-I'm begging you, please help our sister. S-s-she's injured and her l-l-leg is broken. There aren't any v-v-vehicles in the wilderness."

The driver opened up the driver seat window and rudely shouted at them, "Get out of the way!"

The driver did not want to delay the journey any longer as he had already gotten a scolding because of these three siblings. Those rich kids aboard were not to be messed with!

The twins hurriedly walked to the front window after the driver finished his words.

"M-m-mister, p-p-please do us a favor!"

"Do you what favor? The bus is already full, there aren't any seats left for you!" exclaimed the driver.

At that moment, some of the girls could not stand it any longer and reprimanded the driver. "Why are you being like this? Don't you have a sliver of compassion?"

The driver was left speechless. He seemed like he was about to cry.

These rich kids were truly hard to satisfy. The driver helplessly asked the three siblings what they wanted.

The twins spoke with a stutter and it took quite

some time for everyone to understand them.

It turned out these three siblings lived in a nearby village. The younger sister was tidying up the house when she accidentally fell and broke her leg. The twin brothers wanted to bring their sister to a hospital but not many vehicles passed by this road, that was why they had stopped the bus.

These three siblings had rather funny names and were from the Johnson family. The older twin's name was Hugh, while the younger one was Timmy and their sister was Minnie.

These three siblings were filthy and everyone was reluctant to let them on the bus.

However, they could tell the siblings were honest people.

Several passengers instantly felt compassionate.

Chapter 160

"Quick, open the door." Megan could not hold back any longer and told the driver.

It was always a good thing to help someone in need when one is out and about.

The driver agreed and was about to open the door. The twin brothers were happy to see that and carried their sister to the front door.

However, it was at that moment Darryl stood up. " Hang on, I think we should just call an ambulance for them."

"Why?"

Megan furrowed her eyebrows in confusion.

Darryl laughed. "No particular reason, it's just that our bus is full. Where would there be space for them?"

Everyone aboard was a little angry upon hearing Darryl's words.

How could Darryl say something so inhumane? They cannot come up simply because there were no seats? Their sister's injury was serious, what would happen if she did not arrive on time at the hospital?

In truth, it was not Darryl being unsympathetic, but rather he saw something was wrong once the siblings appeared.

Minnie seemed like she was injured and in pain, but there was not a drop of sweat on her face. She was obviously faking it. Moreover, Darryl faintly saw a tattoo under her left hand when she raised her arm.

At first glance, there seemed to be nothing wrong with the twin brothers, but Darryl noticed those calluses on their right hands!

Darryl had learned Wing Chun when he was little and thus could determine those calluses were not formed due to farm work as the calluses' positions were incorrect. It was clear to Darryl those were from frequent usage of martial weapons!

Darryl could not determine what those three siblings were planning, but he was certain they must not board the bus. Better to be safe than sorry.

Darryl knew even if he explained himself, the people on board would never believe him. He could only make up an excuse.

Anything to keep them from boarding the bus.

However, Megan was not aware of Darryl's intentions, and reflexively said, "It's no big deal, I' ll give my seat to the young lady later."

Megan was somewhat unhappy as she spoke.

Does this Darryl not have any hint of compassion in him?

Initially, Megan had assumed Darryl was an exceptionally great person, but after this small incident, perhaps she thought too highly of him.

Darryl sighed.

Was Megan truly the Criminal Investigation Team Leader!? Those three people were so suspicious and yet she could not see it.

Darryl merely gave her a glance and said, "Mister Driver, let's get going. Don't let them in."

Everyone on board was distressed in an instant!

This idiotic Darryl! Did the Lyndons oppress him so much his heart became twisted!?

Did Darryl want everyone to ignore that girl who was so heavily injured?

What kind of person was Darryl? A person like him deserved being poor for the rest of his life. He deserved being looked down upon!

"Darryl, no wonder you're a live-in son-in-law. It's because of your attitude, you don't even have a hint of compassion in your heart. It's no wonder your

life is so miserable." Kent was the first to stand up and berated Darryl.

Megan was deeply disappointed in Kent after the shark attack, hence Kent took the opportunity now to redeem himself!

Women adored sympathetic men!

After Kent finished his words, Megan glanced at him with adoration as expected with her gentler than before gaze.

Justin who was beside also sneered and ridiculed Darryl. "Darryl, you're crossing the line here. You're cruel enough to ignore Minnie's broken leg? Even if you've never met them, you don't have to be so heartless right?"

"What does he know? He's just a toyboy."

"Exactly, he's selfish and only cares about himself."

Everyone started to incessantly berate Darryl.

Darryl clenched his fists tightly. He was filled with rage from becoming everyone's object of ridicule. " I lack compassion? Why did I save you then when you were trapped in the cave? All of you are talking without using your brains."

The crowd was rendered speechless as they looked at each other.

At that moment, William thought of something and said, "Darryl, stop pretending. I recall something when you mention the cave. I have been wondering why the cave suddenly collapsed? It must have been your doing. You wanted to be alone with Lily and had to find an excuse by saying the cave was ominous. In order to justify your excuse, you find a way to cause a cave-in! It's your doing!"

Damn, that made sense!

Everyone was stunned upon hearing William's words.

It sounded plausible. Was the cave-in actually caused by Darryl?

Darryl laughed in frustration. "I made the cave collapse? You guys are giving me too much credit. Tell me, what abilities do I have that can cause the cave to collapse?"

Chapter 161

"Stop babbling nonsense!" William rolled his eyes at Darryl.

"Darryl, we're helping these three siblings, whether you like it or not. You can get off the bus if you're not happy with it."

What a joke! Darryl was rendered speechless.

"Darryl, those three siblings look rather pitiful. Let' s help them out." Lily spoke softly as she tugged his arm, sitting beside him.

Perhaps Lily could have stayed silent if it was any other issue, but this was a matter of life and death. How could she not speak up?

Darryl subtly shook his head and gave Lily a look.

The people on board were criticizing Darryl one after another.

"Why are we even talking to him?" Kent laughed. " My family organized this trip and even called for this bus. I'll let them in."

After Kent had finished talking, he hastily went to the door and pushed the button to open it.

The moment the doors opened, Hugh rushed up the

bus with a sly grin on his face. He instantly pulled out a dagger and held it against the driver's neck. "D-d-don't... f*cking move," he snarled.

Timmy stepped onto the bus with a cold smile with a shiny black gun in his hand. He surveyed the bus with his crossed eyes.

""F-f-freeze! This is a r-r-robbery," he stuttered.

The way Timmy stuttered was honestly somewhat hilarious, but no one could laugh at that moment!

All the passengers on board were stunned. Those who were timid cried upon seeing the gun. Some of the women were glued to their seats as their bodies trembled.

Sigh.

Darryl sighed quietly, feeling helpless.

The twins were well-coordinated. They had obviously done this many times before. It was too late to say anything now.

"Haha! B-b-big brother, these people are s-s-so f*cking dumb. We g-g-got to them so easily." Timmy grinned.

The three siblings planned this operation after they had gotten wind that some of Donghai City's wealthiest families' children had planned a trip to

this area.

Hugh nodded toward Timmy in satisfaction.

"Let's cut t-t-to the chase," he exclaimed. "Every one of you, hand over your money!"

"Otherwise, d-d-don't blame us for g-g-getting rough," Timmy chimed in, waving his gun around.

Kent was distraught as he said nervously, "S-s-sirs, we don't carry much cash with us when we're out."

Kent was anxious and started to stutter under the twin's influence.

He was right. Rich kids did not carry cash with them nowadays.

Timmy stared at Kent, thinking he was purposely imitating him. He beelined toward Kent and shouted, "F*cker, a-a-are you mocking me?"

Timmy whipped out a card terminal, shoving it in Kent's face while pointing a gun towards his head.

"Who wants cash these days? Swipe your b-b-bank cards, starting f-f-from you! Everyone s-s-swipe 2 00 million bucks!"

What? 200 million bucks?

Was this f*cker mad from greed? These three siblings probably planned to change their identities

and disappear after this robbery.

Everyone was dumbfounded. Even though they were rich, 200 million was still a hefty sum.

However, no one dared to speak up at that moment.

Kent had a gun pointed to his head, almost pissing himself in fear. He did not dare to utter any more nonsense and quickly swiped his bank card. Simultaneously, the rest of them obediently got out their bank cards as well.

They seemed like experts.

Do robbers nowadays carry a card terminal around?

Darryl thought for a moment.

"Sir, you guys are pretty advanced for using a card terminal. However, there will be a transaction record if we swipe our cards. Aren't you worried that we'll report it to the authorities?"

Timmy laughed smugly, revealing his stained teeth. "Y-y-you don't get it. W-w-we had a professional modify this card terminal. There's no way to t-t-trace it."

Timmy came to a realization halfway through and scratched his head. "Hey?! W-w-why am I even t-t-telling you this!? You talk too damn much! Hand over your money!"

Hahaha! This was too f*cking hilarious.

Chapter 162

Darryl nodded, holding in his laughter.

"I'm warning you. Don't mess around. Hand over your m-m-money, and you'll be fine!" Hugh snarled. After he finished speaking, he hastily walked toward William with a grim look on his face.

"It's a misunderstanding. I'm not calling the police. I don't have my bank card with me, but I can transfer you the money through my phone."

William was extremely nervous, sweating profusely as he explained himself.

Hugh did not even bother to listen to William's explanation. He snatched the phone away and violently smacked William on the head.

"F*ck you. Who are you trying to fool?" Hugh brutally scolded William as he continued hitting him.

Even if William was not planning on calling the police, the transfer would expose Hugh. He got mad, thinking that William was trying to trick him.

"Ouch! Stop hitting me!" he cried. "I really don't have my card."

William wailed as he was beaten; blood was streaming down his cheek.

"I truly don't have my bank card!" William groaned.

The people on the bus were frightened. Some of the girls were tearing up seeing William's bloody face. Hugh was ruthless.

While the crowd was terrified, Megan felt regret and immense guilt in her heart.

Darryl had previously rescued a student and a lady that he had never met at the bank. Why did Megan still doubt his compassion?

It did not matter. It was too late now.

Lily bit her lip and gave Darryl an apologetic look.

Why did she not trust him just now?

Everyone obediently swiped their cards, terrified after seeing what happened to William.

Over 50 of them aboard the bus had swiped their cards. Timmy nodded contently, but he noticed Lily and Megan upon leaving. There was a gleam in his eyes.

"B-b-bro, I saw two p-p-pretty girls." Timmy walked over toward Megan and grabbed her hand, caressing it.

These rich girls were different from ordinary people. Their skin was soft and supple.

Megan struggled to free herself, feeling embarrassed.

Timmy waved his gun, grinning upon feeling Megan 's resistance. "S-s-stop struggling b-b-baby, or else I might accidentally fire my gun."

"You—!"

Megan bit her lip tightly. She was a formidable warrior from the Emei Sect. Her power had reached the rank of Master General, yet she did not dare to put herself at risk. Her opponent has a gun in his hand.

Megan panicked, looking at Kent on reflex.

Megan was disappointed as she saw Kent as still as a rock. He was even more afraid than her.

"I've found a beauty too. She's pretty hot," Hugh grinned as his gaze locked onto Nancy, who sat beside Dax.

Nancy was wearing a crop top and a short denim skirt. She was unbelievably sexy with a phoenix tattoo on her back.

Hugh was fixed on having this tattooed beauty today.

Hugh silently swallowed his saliva and pointed at Lily, Megan, Nancy, and Yvonne. "Tie up these beauties. Today, we're gonna have some fun. F*ck, I 've never had a rich girl before. Sis, stay on the bus and keep an eye on these people! Your brothers will be back soon."

Timmy grinned, aiming his gun at Lily and the rest. "Q-q-quickly get off the bus, nice and easy. D-d-don't make me hurt you."

The twins were ecstatic. Not only did they rob them, they were also going to get a taste of these wealthy beauties. What a great haul!

Lily and the girls went pale in fear. Their legs were weak and trembling, but still, they were forced to get down the bus.

"Megan, Megan... Don't be scared. I'll save you."

Kent built up the courage to shout. However, his voice was trembling as he was still struck with fear. There was no substance to his words.

Megan turned back and glanced at him. She bit her lip tightly.

It did not matter if Kent was simply putting up a show. His words gave Megan some comfort in her heart.

When the ladies got off the bus, they were tied in a

circle around a tree.

Chapter 163

The atmosphere in the bus was tense, remorse heavy in the air. They should have listened to Darryl and prevented the siblings from coming up the bus!

Alas, it was too late for regrets!

Lily, Megan, Yvonne, and Nancy could clearly be seen through the windows. They were tied up tightly against a tree.

It was an ancient tree over a hundred years old; its thick trunk could not even be wrapped around by a dozen men. The lush canopy was like a giant umbrella. Thousands of branches hung beneath, shrouding the surrounding area.

The twin brothers were salivating with excitement at the sight of these four beauties tied up in front of them.

Meanwhile, Minnie grew anxious as she waited on the bus.

The three siblings had planned the steps of this operation in detail earlier. They even accounted for the duration, which would take no longer than half an hour.

Minnie did not expect her brothers to be suddenly

overcome by lust.

Minnie was helpless as she was just the younger sister. "Bro, hurry up!" she snapped.

Darryl clenched his fist upon hearing Minnie speak. He knew this was his chance. In an instant, Darryl stood up and threw a punch at Minnie!

Darryl clenched his fist as she spoke. He took his chance, standing up in an instant to take a swing at Minnie.

Dax stood up at the same time.

Bam!

Darryl's destructive punch firmly struck Minnie's body. Minnie could not react in time, flying out the bus door accompanied by a faint shockwave.

Dax dashed forward to pick up the pistol Minnie dropped.

Thud!

Minnie spat out blood as she harshly fell onto the ground.

She never imagined that someone would fight back!

Minnie felt immense pain in her chest, immediately falling unconscious.

"Bro, looks like something happened to sis!"

Timmy exclaimed. It seemed that he lost his stutter under distress.

"Let's go check it out!" Hugh ran toward his sister. Upon seeing her unconscious, he flew into a maddening rage!

The siblings had lost their parents at a very young age and relied on each other as they grew up. They had a strong affection for each other.

"Motherf*ckers! You lot are dead—so f*cking dead!" Hugh roared. He whipped out a gun and opened fire at Darryl.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The glass windows of the bus shattered. The passengers on board were startled and quickly laid prone on the floor.

Darryl bit the bullet and rushed toward Hugh with his fists.

Everyone would be dead if he did not act now/ The twin brothers had lost their minds; there was no point in hiding anymore!

Bang!

A bullet had penetrated Darryl's shoulder as he let out a muffled groan. Blood continuously poured out from the wound.

"Darryl!"

Dax's eyes were burning red with anger. He rushed toward the twins, punching both of them.

Bam! Bam!

The two punches struck the twins firmly on the head. The immense force rendered them unconscious immediately.

Dax was famous for his willingness to kill. He was also a cultivator with the rank of Level Five Master!

"Darryl, are you alright? You gotta hang on!" Dax held onto Darryl red-eyed.

It was not easy for Dax to meet a comrade like Darryl. He could not bear losing him.

The people on board were dumbfounded at what just happened, unable to recover their senses.

At that moment, Kent quickly ran down the bus toward the huge tree. "Meg, Meg! Don't be scared, I' m coming to save you!"

Kent was relieved when he arrived at the tree, seeing that Megan's clothes were still intact.

Good thing they were not violated.

"Meg, you must be terrified. It's alright, I'm here now," Kent chuckled as he loosened the ropes on

the women.

Megan was surprised and looked at Kent. "What happened to the three robbers?"

The robbers were armed. How did Kent manage to get over here? She even heard gunshots!

Kent pounded his chest and said, "You were captured, so I had to fight them, of course! Thankfully, Darryl and Dax had some morals left in them and helped me take down the three siblings. Meg, it would be another great deed from you once you bring those three robbers back to the police station!"

Chapter 164

"Kent, thank you..." Megan mumbled. She felt inexplicably moved as she hugged Kent. She bit her lips and said softly, "Kent, you're so brave."

Kent had previously taken the Godly pill and was now a Level One Master General. However, it was still tough to beat three armed robbers. Alas, he managed to do it.

Lily, on the other hand, felt dejected. She had hoped that Darryl would be the one to rescue her.

Never did she imagine that it would be Kent.

Meanwhile, on the bus, Darryl's lips had been drained of color.

"Darryl, you'll be alright; you gotta hang on," Dax muttered anxiously with bloodshot eyes.

"Darryl? What happened to you?" Lily got on the bus in shock upon seeing the situation in front of her.

Did Kent not say that he had already subdued the three robbers?

Why was Darryl injured?

Darryl felt a sharp pain in his chest and had

difficulty breathing. He could not speak, merely smiling to express that he was fine.

However, Darryl's blood had already drenched his clothes and was flowing on the floor!

Kent said nonchalantly, "Darryl wasn't strong enough, yet he wanted to provoke the robbers. Of course, he would be injured. I could've subdued the robbers myself even without his interference."

Kent spoke ambiguously to cover up his actions. Lily did not question it further but instead sighed internally.

Dax became furious and instantly pointed at Kent, shouting, "F*ck you! Shut the f*ck up!"

This brat Kent did nothing when the robbers were tying up the women; he was as scared as a mouse. Now that the danger was over, he came up with all these ridiculous remarks.

What a joke!

Darryl was worried, knowing that this brat was trying to act cool again.

Darryl wanted to speak up, but his vision turned dark as he fell unconscious.

***

Donghai City First Hospital.

Previously, Darryl's father had a sudden heart attack. After a few days of treatment, Daniel's condition has improved. However, he was not allowed to be discharged until after at least a week of observation.

Shelly felt appreciative of Darryl after she became the Chief of Staff. She frequently visited the old couple, even arranging the best ward for them. She would chat with them whenever she had the time.

That afternoon, the old couple had just woken up from their nap when they heard a knock on the door.

Luna happily opened the door, thinking that it was Shelly. Once she opened the door, a group of men barged into the room wielding steel pipes. Florian was leading them!

"Are you two old farts fit to stay in such a nice ward?" shouted Florian.

This ward was probably the best in the entire hospital. There was even a television in the room.

Daniel looked unwelcoming. "What are you doing here? If you're looking for my son, then go ahead. He hasn't visited for a few days."

After all, Daniel was Florian's elder. It was rude of Florian to not greet his uncle.

Florian laughed haughtily. "What use do I have for

your useless son? Today I'm here looking for you lot!"

Florian spoke to the burly men as he finished his words, "Go, tie up these two old farts!"

"Florian, this is too much!"

Daniel's face went red as he coughed a few times. He stared at Florian and said, "There's not a slither of manners in you toward your elders... bringing so many people here to cause trouble. Get out."

The burly men did not care and had already rushed toward the old couple and seized them.

At that moment, the door to the ward opened up. In a white coat, Shelly hastily stepped into the room on her heels and shouted with her pretty face.

"What are you guys doing? This is a hospital ward, not the streets!"

Although Shelly was wearing a white coat, it could not hide her graceful figure.

Florian's eyes were wide open as he checked her out. "Director Sullivan... Oh, sorry. It's Chief Sullivan now! It's only been a couple of days, but you've become even more attractive. I haven't congratulated you on your recent promotion. Perhaps we can have a meal someday?"

"No, thanks," Shelly spat. "Let go of the old couple

now! Daniel's condition can't be agitated!"

'You're just the chief of staff in this hospital, yet you dare pretend to be proper with me?' Florian thought.

Florian was not in a rush. He would get his chance with her eventually.

"We can't let them go. The Old Master wants to see them." he spat.

The Old Master?

Daniel's body trembled as he mumbled, "Dad... Has he ended his seclusion?"

"What does that have to do with you?" Florian snickered. "You're no longer part of the Darby family. Grandpa wants me to bring you guys back for questioning. He wants to know how you raise a brute like Darryl. Do you understand?"

After Florian had finished his words, the burly men forcefully dragged the old couple out!

Chapter 165

Elsewhere.

Darryl fell into a long dream while he was unconscious. He was being chased in his dream, and he could not stop running. Eventually, he slowly opened his eyes.

Darryl was greeted by the sight of a luxurious bedroom.

"Darryl, you're awake?"

Darryl heard a cheerful voice. Lily's eyes were red as if she was crying.

"Honey, why are your eyes so red?" asked Darryl with a smile. "Were you worried that something had happened to me? Come, give me a hug."

Darryl's forced a pained smile. Even though his wounds have been tended to, they still stung.

'Damn it. I can't believe I got shot twice a few days apart,' Darryl thought to himself.

Lily blushed and backed away shyly. "I... I wasn't worried about you. I didn't even cry!"

Lily refused to reveal her true feelings even at that

moment.

The doctor mentioned that Darryl's injuries were severe. The bullet was close to hitting his heart.

Thankfully, he had finally awakened.

"Darryl, I know what happened then. You and Dax saved us all," Lily whispered. "You... You were really manly, but how could you be so dumb? Those robbers had guns. What if something were to happen to you?" Although Lily was moved by his actions, there was still some guilt in her tone.

Lily's voice grew softer, feeling even more bashful.

Darryl looked at Lily with a smile and consoled her. "Dummy, nothing's gonna happen to me. Besides, you're my wife. Even if I had to sacrifice my life to save you in that situation, I would still do it."

Lily felt warmth and affection in her heart.

"Where is this place?" Darryl clenched his teeth as he sat up on the bed.

This place was so luxuriously decorated. It could not have been the Lyndon residence.

"This is Dax's house. His private doctor treated you," Lily explained.

Darryl nodded his head. Dax was indeed a reliable comrade.

"Where's Dax?" Darryl inquired.

"He's in the main hall," Lily replied. "Tomorrow is Dax's grandfather's birthday, and some guests arrived earlier to congratulate him. Dax is entertaining them in the hall now."

Dax's grandfather was Saul Sanders. Two years ago, Saul handed the company over to Dax and stopped involving himself in business. However, he still had a lot of power and authority in Donghai City.

He was held in high regard; many people would surely attend his birthday celebration.

"Is that right? I'll have a look," Darryl endured the pain and slowly got out of bed.

Darryl and Dax were like brothers. Since it was Dax' s grandfather's birthday, Darryl could not afford to be disrespectful.

Lily quickly supported Darryl, seeing that he was still rather frail. "Are you sure you can go down like this?"

Darryl had no regard for himself. It was really concerning.

Darryl motioned that he needed no help and smiled. "I'm fine now. Don't presume that I'm weak after the surgery. I'm well enough to even make love to

you tonight."

"Can you be a little more proper!" Lily started to blush. "So uncouth..."

Darryl laughed.

Seeing Lily's bashful behavior brightened Darryl's mood. He felt like he had recovered his vigor and quickly stepped downstairs.

While Darryl was walking down, he took out his phone and sent a message to have someone bring a few gifts. Since it was Dax's grandfather's birthday tomorrow, Darryl could not attend empty-handed as Dax's brother.

A dozen or so people sat in the hall. They were all prominent people from Donghai City. These people had important matters to attend to tomorrow, and could not attend the celebration. That was why they brought the gifts earlier.

Saul Sanders sat in the middle as he laughed. This old man was over 70 years old, and yet his body was still tough and full of energy.

What a coincidence! Darryl laughed as he saw a familiar face. It was his high school class monitor, Clifford Conway.

The people who came with gifts for Old Master Sanders were famous people within the society.

Clifford was not even worthy enough to think about giving gifts!

However, Clifford's godmother maintained a good relationship with the Sanders. She was too busy, so she had Clifford present the gifts.

Clifford was so thrilled at that moment!

After all, the Sanders family was renowned in Donghai City! If Clifford could use this opportunity to get to know people like Dax, he would brag about it to his friends and family.

As Darryl and Lily entered the hall, all of them looked toward him curiously.

"Darryl, you're fine! This is amazing, come sit with us," Dax quickly stood up and greeted Darryl ecstatically.

Chapter 166

"Darryl?" Clifford shouted, unable to hold back his surprise.

'What was going on? Why was Darryl here?' he wondered.

Clifford remembered clearly that Darryl rode an electric bike to the reunion. Was Darryl here to attend the celebration as well?

'Right, Darryl's here to accompany his wife to present her gift!' Clifford thought.

A live-in son-in-law that's life revolves around his wife all day was the only thing Darryl was good for.

Clifford could not resist taking a few looks at Lily.

'She's such a beauty! Her figure was perfect and extremely sexy! That beautiful face was comparable to that of a celebrity. Darryl, that brat really got lucky. However, rumor has it that this brat has not even touched his wife after three years of marriage. Everyone in Donghai City knows about this. Haha!' Clifford thought.

"Old class monitor!" Darryl smiled as he walked over to greet Clifford.

"You guys know each other?" Dax asked.

Before Darryl could answer, Clifford laughed internally.

"Everyone in Donghai City knows the Lyndon family's infamous live-in son-in-law," he said with disdain.

It was an embarrassment to be classmates with this brat! In such a classy setting, being associated with this brat was utterly embarrassing to Clifford.

Darryl was startled at Clifford's words. Did he offend him? They were classmates for so many years. What was going on?

At that moment, the people around them burst into laughter.

After going on for so long, it turns out that Darryl was just the Lyndons' live-in son-in-law.

Lily was somewhat unhappy and said to Darryl softly, "Who is this guy?"

Darryl let out a straight laugh and said casually, "He 's just a joker."

Darryl did not hold back, seeing that Clifford had no respect for him.

Clifford laughed coldly. 'This idiotic Darryl! He's

just a toyboy, and yet he dares challenge me!?' he thought to himself.

Meanwhile, Old Master Sanders watched them with interest.

His grandson had told him that he made a friend named Darryl. It should be the young man in front of him.

Saul could not help but be reminded of his younger self when he looked at Darryl.

He was a poor man who was looked down on by many people. However, if someone were to push him to his limits, he would fight till the end. Today he would like to see if Darryl was the type to back down or fight back. He wanted to know whether Darryl was fit to be his grandson's friend.

"Darryl, who's the true joker between us? If I'm not mistaken, you're just here to accompany your wife to present her gift? You should know that the only reason you're here is because of the Lyndons. If not for them, you would be worth less than dog sh*t. You wouldn't even have the right to speak," Clifford said.

"Since you put it that way, I'm guessing you're here to present your gift too?" Darryl laughed.

"I..." Clifford blushed slightly and proceeded to

puff up his chest. "Of course! I'm here on behalf of my godmother. Do you know who she is? I'm afraid that you'd be surprised if I told you."

'Godmother? Haha! Clifford was a grown man, and yet he was still talking about his godmother. Moreover, he was only here on behalf of someone else, yet he acted so high and mighty. This brat was hilarious,' Darryl thought.

"So, who's your godmother? Introduce her to me, would you?" Darryl asked cheerfully.

"Do you think you deserve to know her name? Even if I did tell you, you wouldn't be able to get close to her; you're only fit to do house chores," Clifford scoffed.

In an instant, everyone sitting there nodded their heads in agreement.

When Clifford presented his gift, everyone had seen the name on it. Indeed, this brat's godmother was no ordinary person. Meanwhile, Darryl, who was a live-in son-in-law, still insisted on challenging Clifford.

'Such a stupid act,' the crowd thought.

Those who are of a lower standing must learn to endure. When you get scolded, you should just bear with it.

With his face full of pride, Clifford pointed towards the table. "You see that? That's from my godmother."

On the table was a set of exquisite porcelain wares. They were lustrous with intricate designs, and one look was enough to tell you that they were not cheap.

Darryl glanced at the porcelain wares.

The porcelain wares were genuine, and this set would cost at least a few million bucks. It seemed that Clifford's godmother was indeed a person of power.

Chapter 167

Clifford called himself a man of success at the last class reunion, but it turned out he just has a good godmother.

"How was it? How was my godmother's gift?" Clifford looked at Darryl triumphantly as if he had the upper hand.

"It is indeed a good gift, but no matter how good it is, it's not a gift from you. What do you have to be proud of, flaunting your godmother's gift here? You are pretty shameless," Darryl smiled.

At this moment, everyone in the hall focused their eyes on Clifford.

No matter how this young man showed off, it was still a gift from his godmother.

'Damn it!' Clifford cursed to himself.

Noticing everyone's gaze on him, Clifford was angry, but he did not show it. "Who said there wasn' t a gift from me?"

Clifford stood up, strode over to Dax, and took out an exquisite gift box.

"President Sanders, it's my honor to be here today

to celebrate your grandfather's birthday. This is a token of my appreciation. Please accept it," Clifford opened the gift box and said respectfully.

After Clifford said all this, he did not forget to turn toward Darryl and give him a provoking look.

Some of the people in the hall stood up immediately when they saw what was in the gift box. A pair of white jade pendants was delicately placed in the gift box. The jade pendants were snow white and shiny without a trace of impurities, and the birds on it were very delicately carved and lifelike.

"From the looks of the carving technique of the jade pendants, is it from the Ming Dynasty?" someone asked.

Everyone in the hall was society's elites, and they all knew something about antique artifacts.

The others nodded one after another upon hearing that.

The price of the pair of jade pendants was probably no less than two million dollars. This young man was good, and a person who was willing to present such a gift truly knows how to socialize. 1

"You have good eyes. Yes, this is from the Ming Dynasty. I knew that Old Master Sanders was interested in antiques. So, I purposely bought this

pair of jade pendants from a private collector, hoping that he would like it," Clifford smiled.

The pair of jade pendants were so exquisite. Even someone who did not know anything about antiques would love it when they saw it.

"You spent a lot of money on the jade pendants, right?" someone asked.

Clifford smiled slightly and said casually, "It's not much. It's only five million bucks."

This young man was clever. He knew that he would get to network with the Sanders family closely with these five million dollars, which was indeed worth it.

A few of the guests nodded silently and continued admiring the pendants. Even Lily, who was standing on the side, could not help but glance at it.

Only Darryl remained silent. When he saw everyone admiring it incessantly, he shook his head and laughed.

"What are you laughing at?" Clifford became angry all of a sudden.

"I wanted to ask how much did you spend on the pair of jade pendants?" Darryl grinned.

Clifford was stunned. "Are you deaf? Five million

bucks. Didn't you hear it? Why? Is five million bucks such an astronomical number for a live-in son-in-law?"

Darryl subtly shook his head and looked at Clifford arrogantly. "That's too much."

As soon as the words were out of his mouth, Lily quickly pulled him and whispered, "Darryl, stop talking nonsense."

Although he had a good relationship with Dax, the people who came here today were here to celebrate Old Master Sanders' birthday. It was a special occasion.

"Besides, all the people here said the jade pendants were good. So please don't mess things up," Lily continued.

Instantly, everyone looked towards Darryl. A few of the ladies were confused.

'The price was too much? What was the meaning of this? Did Clifford lose money? It was a pair of beautiful jade pendants. Five million bucks were not too much even if it was a bit expensive, right?' people thought.

"Darryl, what do you mean? Tell me then, how much are these jade pendants worth?" Clifford replied dismissively.

Darryl stretched out two fingers.

'What?' Clifford thought.

"Two million bucks? What do you know about it? This pair of jade pendants are only worth two million bucks? Are you crazy? Clifford sneered.

"Darryl? Do you study antiques?" Darryl asked, surprised.

It seemed that Dax's comrade was quite knowledgeable.

Darryl nodded and smiled, "I know a little bit."

Chapter 168

Clifford was immediately angered. He pointed at Darryl. "Darryl, shut up! You don't know anything!" What nonsense are you talking about!? What makes you think it's worth only two million bucks?"

'Damn it, this man was crazy,' Clifford thought.

Clifford's uncle bought the jade pendants, and his uncle has been collecting antiques for decades! The actual price of these jade pendants were three million bucks. He only pretended that it cost five million bucks just to show off.

However, Darryl said that it was only worth two million bucks, which Clifford thought was total bullsh*t!

Darryl shook his head. "There's another name for this kind of paired jade pendants. Do you know what it's called?"

Everyone was curious and shook their heads.

Darryl sighed and explained, "They were called Gemini Pendants in ancient times. It was a unique dowry a woman could give for marriage during the Ming Dynasty. The Ming Dynasty was very much

concerned with etiquette, so the Gemini Pendants were highly adored. After the woman brings the jade pendants to her husband's house, one piece will be given to the husband, and the other piece the woman will wear. Also, their names would be engraved on each other's pendant to symbolize a harmonious union lasting a hundred years."

Darryl picked up the two jade pendants and took a closer look at them. "So, the real Gemini Pendants of the Ming Dynasty would have engravings on them, and this... unfortunately, does not. They're fake."

Darryl's voice was soft, but everyone in the hall could hear it!

Everyone was stunned.

Darryl's explanation behind the Gemini Pendants made sense, and it was even more detailed than what those antique appraisers had said.

As everyone sighed internally, they came back to their senses, and doubts arose in their minds.

'Could it be that the pair of Gemini Pendants were fake?' they thought.

"As expected, there's no engraving," Dax said, frowning, as he inspected the jade pendants that he took from Darryl's hand.

The surrounding people immediately gathered around to take a look. Lily also went closer.

As expected, there were no traces of any engraving at all on the pair of jade pendants except for those delicate carvings.

Clifford's face flushed as his eyes flickered. He could not accept what just happened.

"What does the absence of the engraving prove? You said it yourself, this kind of Gemini Pendant is a dowry from a married woman. What if the owner of this pair of jade pendants died before she got married? How would she get it engraved without a husband?" he sneered, pointing at Darryl.

Darryl was very impressed with Clifford's wit.

'Yes, indeed. What if the woman had not married?' the guests questioned themselves.

A few of the guests had also come back to their senses and cast a questioning glance at Darryl.

Darryl laughed and stared at Clifford as if he was a fool. "What you said sounds very logical, but I can tell you that this kind of Gemini Pendants was made half a month before a woman's marriage. Her own family would specifically hire highly-skilled craftsmen to make it for her." Darryl shrugged his shoulders. "If you insist on telling me that the

woman died of a sudden illness in the month and a half before she married, then I have nothing more to say."

Clifford was quiet; a layer of cold sweat seeped out from his forehead.

"Also, I want to correct your mistake." Darryl took a step forward and said with a smile.

"What is it?"

Darryl grinned. "I simply stretched out two fingers, but I didn't say it was worth two million. What I meant was that the jade pendants are worth only two hundred bucks. If you don't believe me, take a look for yourself."

Crack!

Darryl immediately threw the jade pendants to the ground as he finished talking, and they shattered into a million pieces!

The jade pendants were shattered, and you could clearly see the glue on the inside of the jade pieces. It was obvious that they were fake.

The whole hall was silent!

Clifford's body shook, and his face was full of embarrassment.

Clap, clap, clap!

At that moment, Nancy could not hold back and applaud, and thunderous applause followed her.

“Bravo, bravo!” the crowd cheered.

Clifford clenched his fists tightly and yelled, “ Darryl, even though it’s an imitation, it's still a gift. How about you? You’re only here because of your relationship with the Lyndons. Did you even bring a gift?”

‘This stupid Darryl made me look like a fool. I won't let you off so easily!’ thought Clifford.

Darryl took a deep breath and looked at Clifford impatiently. “You’re wrong. I did bring a gift today.”

Darryl had sent out a text message when he was on the way down. It was probably time for it to arrive.

‘What? Did he bring a gift, too?’ people thought.

“Darryl, you just found out about Old Master Sanders’ birthday. Where did you get the present?” Lily tapped her foot anxiously.

Chapter 169

Lily was truly anxious. Darryl would be ridiculed again if he could not get a gift.

Even if he had a good relationship with Dax, it would be inappropriate to make up nonsense.

"Haha! Darryl, where's your gift? Are you still bragging about it? Your wife doesn't even believe you! Come on, bring out your gift, and let me have a look," Clifford laughed loudly.

"It should be here soon." Darryl looked at his watch. "I had someone send it over."

'Had someone sent it over? Hahaha, that's hilarious!' Clifford thought.

Clifford clutched his stomach and laughed, "Haha. Everyone! You guys don't know this, but Darryl rode a lousy electric bike to our class reunion a few days ago. No one even acknowledged him! He doesn' t have any friends. Who's going to help him with his gifts? Don't tell me you ordered delivery? Haha!"

Some of the girls could not hold back when they heard this and chuckled.

"President Dickinson is here!" a voice shouted from

outside the hall.

Everyone looked towards the door immediately. Then, Emily walked in briskly, dressed formally, wearing a pencil skirt and high heels. Emily was gorgeous. The skirt accentuated her figure perfectly. She didn't just exude sex appeal; she also had an air of superiority around her. After all, she was a well-known powerful woman, and Poesia Eleganza was highly successful in the cosmetic industry.

However, Emily looked very anxious at the moment.

"Godmother! What are you doing here?" Clifford stood up all of a sudden, his face looking dismayed.

'What's going on?' Clifford wondered.

Clifford's godmother said that she had something important to deal with today, and that was why she sent him to give the gift on her behalf. Clifford was surprised when he saw his godmother approaching.

However, Emily was in a hurry and did not even look at Clifford. She walked right past him and placed the gift in her hand on the table.

The gift was a set of the finest celebratory tea leaves.

"This celebratory tea leaves seem to be from the Heavenly series? A set is worth a few million

bucks. ”

“Didn't President Dickinson send her godson to give the gift on her behalf? Why did she give another one?” the crowd gossiped.

Everyone in the hall looked at each other in confusion! While everyone was discussing among themselves, Emily turned around and walked up to Darryl.

“Mister Darryl, I'm sorry, there was a traffic jam on the way here. I placed the gift you asked me to prepare on the table,” Emily explained, leaning forward slightly.

The hall was in an uproar! Everyone at the venue was dumbfounded. Their mouths were agape in disbelief.

‘Mister.... Mister Darryl!? Emily called this live-in son-in-law Mister Darryl!? She was a few years older than Darryl!’ the crowd thought.

Lily’s body trembled as she became weak in the knees and was unable to stand still.

‘What was going on!?’ Clifford thought, shocked as he stood to the side with his face pale white!

‘Godmother called him Mister Darryl!?’ he thought.

Clifford acknowledged Emily as his godmother

three years ago. Although this woman was only five years older than he was, he was nobody without her! She had brought him up.

In the past few years that he's been with her, he's never seen her so polite to anyone before.

'This... this...' Clifford thought in disbelief.

"It's not too late. You arrived just in time. Is Clifford your godson?" Darryl said, faking a smile.

Emily nodded immediately. "Yes."

Emily and Darryl had known each other for many years, and she knew his temper. If nothing were wrong, he would not have asked.

She glared at Clifford as she answered.

"Your godson is such a great man. He's been so arrogant and disrespectful to others with you supporting him," Darryl said slowly.

The huge hall was completely silent!

What?

As expected, it was this bastard who had gotten Clifford in trouble.

Emily's delicate face turned pale in an instant, and she became weak in the knees.

"Mister Darryl, I'm sorry, I'm sorry. It's my fault

for his misbehavior," Emily apologized hurriedly.

At that moment, Clifford returned to his senses. Doubt and displeasure clouded his face.

"Godmother, why are you apologizing to him? He's just a live-in son-in-law, he-" he shouted.

"Shut up!" Emily yelled, interrupting him.

She rushed towards Clifford in her heels with a cold expression.

Slap!

Chapter 170

Emily brutally slapped Clifford across his face without any warning.

The slap instantly left a palm print on Clifford's face.

"God...Godmother. Why did you slap me...?" Clifford choked as he covered his face. He was stunned.

His godmother had pampered him so much all these years and treated him as her biological son. He felt aggrieved for being slapped out of nowhere.

"Why do you think I slapped you? You almost got us into big trouble," Emily fumed as she slapped him twice more.

Nobody should mess with Darryl. Emily would not be who she is today if not for Darryl.

"Go, kneel and apologize to Mister Darryl," Emily huffed after slapping Clifford a few more times.

Clifford's body trembled, and he dared not ask any more questions at this moment. He walked over and knelt in front of Darryl, forcing out a smile. "I...I was wrong. I'm sorry..."

The other guests in the hall could not help but draw a sharp breath.

Emily's aura was indeed strong; it was enough to make men feel inferior.

Who would dare speak up against such a powerful woman?

Darryl sat there, emotionless, as he stared at Clifford.

The entire hall was silent at the moment as everyone's gaze was focused on Darryl.

Emily stood to the side as she bit her lips and dared not say a word upon seeing Darryl's silence.

Ring! Ring!

Suddenly, Darryl's phone rang.

He took out his phone and saw that it was his mother, Luna. The past few days, he's been out and has not gone to visit his parents. Why did his mother suddenly call?

After picking up the phone, he heard Luna cry out suddenly before he could speak.

"Darryl, quick! Come quickly. Save your dad, save your dad!" Luna cried.

Darryl's hair stood on its ends upon hearing her

words!

"Mom, don't panic. What's going on? Where are you?" he replied.

'Was his father not being treated at the hospital? Did his condition worsen?' he thought.

"We're at the Darby residence. Come quickly. Your dad is in big trouble. Come quickly!" Luna burst into tears, hanging up as soon as the words were out of her mouth.

Darryl's mind went blank in an instant!

"Darryl, what's wrong?" Dax walked up quickly and asked Darryl.

"Something's happened to my parents."

The sun was bright, and the men and women on the street were wearing light clothes. However, there was an eerie air of coldness at the Darby residence.

Old Master Darby was sitting on the chair with no expression on his face. Nearly a thousand people were standing next to him, and everyone in the Darby family was there.

Darryl's father was firmly held down on the stage, and his lips were pale.

A burly man stood behind him, wielding a cane in his hand. The cane was soaked in oil. It was very

tough and even had barbs on it. Any swipe on the body would cause a bloody gash.

Snap!

The cane whipped daniel's body, and blood soaked his clothes.

Luna was also being held tightly by someone. Her eyes were blurred with tears.

"Daniel, I've been cultivating in seclusion for all these years and haven't been aware of the Darby family matters. Is this how you teach your son; to violate his younger sister-in-law? Such a disgraceful thing to do! Where's Darryl?" Old Master Darby asked coldly.

Even though Daniel was his son, Old Master Darby was not merciful. He had always been very strict in disciplining his family.

Daniel shook his head; his lips were pale white. " Darryl would never do such a thing. Never!"

"You're still so stubborn!" Yumi took a step forward. "Do you think we're all lying? Is Darryl the only good guy in the Darby family, and we're all villains who make things up? Darryl is a beast! He violated his younger sister-in-law. This is the truth, yet you still deny it!?"

"Bullsh*t!" Daniel gritted his teeth tightly and spat

on the ground.

"You still refuse to admit your mistakes, huh? Keep whipping him until he admits his mistakes!" Old Master Darby shouted in anger.

The burly man behind Daniel raised the cane in his hand again.

Snap!

Loud snapping echoed through the room, and Daniel's body recoiled in an instant. He gritted his teeth tightly. He did not shout, but cold sweats covered his face.

"Stop whipping him. You guys stop it..." Luna wailed as she tried to rush over to protect Daniel. However, she was held down by a few people and was unable to move as tears streamed down her face.

Chapter 171

"Although Darryl has committed a heinous act, as his father, you cannot be exempted from punishment! If you don't admit your wrongdoing today, I'd rather hit you to death!" Old Master Darby said coldly.

Smack! Smack!

The rattan smacked Darryl's father's body as his fresh blood flowed on the floor.

Luna was crying so much that she had lost her voice. "Please stop hitting him! Please stop! If this goes on, you'll kill him!"

"Stop hitting him?" Yumi walked towards Old Master Darby. "Grandpa, I think Daniel Darby won't be sorry until he's dead. He must think that you're old and compassionate and won't cause him any harm!"

"Yes, Grandpa! If we don't punish Darryl and his parents, it won't be fair to the others!" the crowd around them shouted.

Hearing what others said, Old Master Darby's face turned green. "Someone, use the domestic discipline!"

Tzzz

Upon hearing the two words, 'domestic discipline,' most of the family members took a cold breath. Daniel's face also darkened in fear, and his body started trembling uncontrollably.

The Darby clan's domestic discipline was widely known for its horror! It was well-known as cruel torture!

The ancient king invented the cruel torture method! It consisted of burning a copper pillar until it was bright red, then a person would be laid on top.

Instantly, there was pin-drop silence in the entire hall. A few members soon brought forth a huge copper pillar, and they started splashing oil onto it to burn it.

The spacious hall remained quiet. Everyone was shocked and unable to speak a word.

"I'll ask you one last time. Do you admit that you're wrong!" Old Master Darby stared at Daniel.

Daniel was dripping with sweat. He would be lying if he said he was not scared, but his family had done nothing wrong. Why would he admit that he was wrong?

"Darryl wouldn't do such a thing! No way!" Daniel

looked him dead in the eyes, his gaze filled with determination.

"How dare you!" Yumi walked forward and slapped Daniel hard on the face. "How dare you talk back? Your son is worse than pigs and dogs! Even now, you're still lying!"

"Someone, put him onto the copper pillar!" Old Master Darby yelled.

Hearing that, the younger members surrounded Daniel and tied him up with a rope. They carried him to the side of the pillar.

"No!!" Luna yelled with all her might before her body completely collapsed.

The copper pillar was burning bright red. Once he was on it, he would die.

"Not admitting your wrongdoing? Put him up!" Old Master Darby said with a cold look.

With that said, the men pushed Daniel onto the copper pillar.

"Ahh!" a loud and painful moan resonated throughout the hall for a long time.

"My son is innocent! My son is innocent!" Daniel screamed with all his remaining breath, his skin completely burnt.

"My son is innocent...My son would never do such a thing! Never!" Daniel's tears fell uncontrollably. At this moment, he was completely disheartened.

"What the f*ck! Arghh!" a loud growling was heard coming from the entrance.

Rushing in from the entrance was Darryl with the Blood Drinking Sword in his hand. His eyes were bloodshot, and he rushed in like an irrational madman. Behind him was Dax Sanders with an ax, followed by hundreds of physically built men in black.

"You're unforgivable! You're all unforgivable!" Darryl was entirely out of his mind. He swung his Blood Drinking Sword randomly at any passerby that came in his way.

His father was being burnt alive! Rage overwhelmed his rational mind!

'Kill! Kill! Kill!' he kept thinking.

At this instant, only the word 'KIll!' was ringing in his head.

"You bastard! Bastard!" Old Master Darby stood up, pointing at Darryl with his body trembling. "You're such a white-eyed wolf. How dare you come back! Take him down! Take him down!"

With his command, all the younger members

rushed toward the men in black. Dax signaled, and about 200 physically built men from behind him swarmed in like a tsunami. It was utter chaos.

Chapter 172

"Dad! Dad!" Darryl yelled with his eyes red as he cut the rope loose with his sword and held his father in his arms.

Meanwhile, Daniel's body was completely ruined. His body emanated a burnt smell as his skin and clothes swirled into a mixture of blood and flesh.

"Son...son. Tell me, did you do it? Did you do such a thing?" Daniel mumbled with his pale white lips as intense pain overwhelmed his body, and he trembled.

"I didn't. I didn't!" Darryl cried, his face covered in uncontrollable tears.

"That's..good..." Daniel said with all his remaining strength.

With a faint smile, his eyes shut. They didn't know if he was dead or alive.

"Dad! Dad, don't scare me. Please, don't scare me!" Darryl screamed till his voice was hoarse. He shook Daniel vigorously, but there was no response.

"Stop yelling. It doesn't matter if your dad is dead; he deserves it!" Yumi walked in her heels, pointing

her finger at Daryl. "You grew up in the Darby mansion since you were young. Now you're back here with a bunch of men to cause trouble. Aren't you scared of being struck by lightning?

Bam

Instantly, Darryl stood up slowly with his eyes as red as blood. He walked toward Yumi one step at a time.

"Wha-what're you doing!" Yumi trembled at the sight of his gaze.

She would never forget his gaze for the rest of her life. It was terrifying.

Smack!

Darryl swung his hand and slapped Yumi hard and violently across the face. He used all his strength in his slap. In the next instant, Yumi flew across the air for at least ten meters before landing on the floor again.

"Ahh!" she spat out blood.

Without letting her stand up, Darryl slapped her again, and again, and again!

Slap! Slap! Slap!

The clapping sound was crisp and ringing. It terrified everyone in the hall. Old Master Darby

dropped his walking stick, his chest rising and falling vigorously, as he staggered and struggled to stand up. It was as if his throat was blocked, and he could not speak a word.

"Darryl, how dare you hit your sister-in-law?" Florian yelled as he picked up a stick and hit Darryl.

Smack!

The stick broke into two pieces when it hit Darryl's body as if it was as strong as stone. Darryl turned his head slowly.

Smack!

He slapped Florian, sending him flying in the air before he knocked against the wall at the far end of the room and slid down like a puddle of mud. However, before his feet even touched the ground, he felt a strong grip on his neck. Darryl's lips curled into a faint smile as he strangled Florian's neck tighter and harder. Florian was struggling to breathe, his face turning purplish-blue.

"Three years ago, you claimed that I stole our money and kicked me out of the Darby clan. But who 'd have known that every penny of the eight million bucks I used to buy oil stocks was mine. They had nothing to do with you!" Darryl started, with no emotion on his face.

"You..." Florian was almost out of breath. He

wanted to resist, but he had no strength left in him.

"One month ago, I invested 30 billion dollars in the Darby clan. All of you claimed that I had evil plans, but little did you know that all I wanted to do was pay back the kindness you all showed me when I was young. Even if you mistreated me in the past, it didn't mean that I should do the same to you. Now a week ago, Jackson's wife was assaulted, and you all accused me! I said it wasn't me, but nobody f*cking believed me!" Darryl screamed irrationally. His words rang in the hall.

All eyes were glued on Darryl, and nobody said a word.

Dong!

Darryl released his grip, and Florian's body fell to the floor. He took in breath after breath, his hand holding onto his throat uneasily.

Meanwhile, Dax Sanders' men had beat up all the Darby clan members, and they laid helplessly on the floor.

Silence. Complete silence. You would probably be able to hear a pin dropping to the floor.

"I, Darryl Darby, was raised and nurtured by Grandpa. Right now, my father could be alive or dead," Darryl said with the sword in his hand and

his voice projecting with power as it resonated in the hall.

He clenched his fists, the nails stabbing his flesh till it bled, but he did not feel any pain. “If my father is alive, both of our debts and favors are wiped clean. If my father is dead, I want everyone in the Darby clan dead.”

Vroom!

Lightning struck, followed by heavy rain. Darryl marched out of the mansion with his father in arms.

Chapter 173

Once Darryl was finally out of sight, Yumi crawled up slowly, running over to Old Master Darby. “ Grandpa, th-this is unacceptable!”

Yumi was fuming in rage; her beautiful face was stained with the mark of Darryl’s palm and wounded with blood.

Old Master Darby was trembling. He ignored Yumi and looked toward the other side of the room. In front of the entrance stood Dax Sanders and his hundreds of men.

Meanwhile, the Darby members were beaten, blood splashed all over the floor.

“Who are you!” Old Master Darby asked, looking at Dax.

Dax marched forward and replied with a smile, “ Dax is my first name and Sanders is my last.

What?

Everyone held their breath. ‘Dax. Dax Sanders? Everyone in Donghai City knew this name.’

Dax Sanders.

Old Master Darby stood up and said, “Oh, the

Sanders. What are you doing in Darby mansion? Why are you getting involved in our family business!"

Meanwhile, Yumi recovered from the shock. "Right, Darby had nothing to do with Sanders. Why did you bring your men to the Darby mansion?

The Sanders were involved in the mafia, and the Darbys could not afford to offend them. However, the Darby clan was the wealthiest in Jiangnan. If they were to fight, the Darbys had more than enough resources to battle with the Sanders.

Dax placed his arms behind his back and calmly said, "Of course. I've no interest in involving myself in your family business. But," he paused, a faint smile appearing on his face, "if you're to offend Darryl, it means you've also offended me."

With those words, the hall was in an uproar.

'How did the live-in son-in-law get to know Dax Sanders? How was he so lucky!' Yumi was uneasy at the thought but did not dare to make a sound.

Old Master Darby went silent for a few moments, and then he locked eyes with Dax. "Young man, you're Dax Sanders, right? I see that you're an honest and loyal man. I'm happy Darryl has a friend like you, but I'll tell you this, Darryl made a mistake and not just any mistake but something that brought

shame to our entire Darby clan. So I must punish him."

"I want to know what mistake Darryl made. What shame did he bring that you had to punish his father! Parents are like the skin of their children. What mistake did he make that you had to burn his father?" Dax growled, clenching his fists.

Old Master Darby's face turned green. He was too ashamed to say out loud in front of everyone. Though, some people did not care about whether or not it was embarrassing, such as Yumi.

"If you want to know, let me tell you. Darryl went behind our backs to become the Lyndon's live-in son-in-law, bringing shame to the Darby clan. Not only that, but he's also a bastard who assaulted his sister-in-law," Yumi sneered with a cold smile.

Dax Sanders frowned as she spoke. Of course, he did not believe a single word that she said. He was just confused at how this woman could be so attractive yet have such evil and inhuman personality.

"That's enough. I don't want to listen to your nonsense," Dax coldly stated, smacking his ax onto the door pillar.

The entire pillar fell apart, making a loud noise and almost bringing a few girls to tears.

"I'll say this again. I don't believe a single word you

say," Dax said, pronouncing every syllable. "From now on, whoever offends Darryl, will be killed."

With that said, he waved to his men, and they followed him out of the mansion.

"Huh..." Old Master Darby stood frozen, looking in the direction of Dax dubiously. The rest of the family members held their lips tight, not making a sound. Dax's words before he left were loud like thunder with his words still ringing in the hall. They would never have thought that punishing Darryl would offend someone like Dax Sanders.

"Grandpa! Grandpa!" Yumi was the first to recover from the shock, holding on to her wounded face. " Dax Sanders just interrupted our family affairs by bringing over his men and hurting our family. This is utterly unacceptable! We can't let them get away with this!"

Chapter 174

Old Master Darby glanced at the hall.

The Darby members were lying on the floor, moaning in pain. Blood splashed across the floor, and a few men even seemed to have died.

"Call the medics! Take note of the injured numbers," Old Master Darby ordered, panting breathlessly.

Drake, who was by his side, called out for the injured to be taken care of. Feelings of resentment and hatred filled the entire mansion.

Yumi's lips were still bleeding, and the slap mark on her face was burning red.

"Grandpa, why didn't you fight back just now?" she lashed out, still feeling the burning pain on her face as her eyes were filled with hatred.

Old Master Darby had been cultivating for five years, and he was currently a Level 3 Master General. If he had fought back just now, this would not have happened.

He stayed silent as his face darkened.

Yumi wanted to continue, but Florian came from

the corner he was hiding and cut her short, "Shut up! You saw what happened just now with your own eyes! Dax Sanders came with hundreds of men. How was Grandpa supposed to fight them all?"

"How dare you scream at me? Where were you when Dax Sanders came? You were hiding in the corner peeing your pants, and now that he's gone, you decided to jump out of nowhere to yell at your wife? What kind of man are you? How did I end up marrying useless trash like you?" she lashed out at him.

The more Yumi talked, the more furious she got. After all, she accused Darryl to save Florian's arse. Yet Florian was yelling at her for that. How unacceptable!

Florian's face flushed red instantly, not daring to make a sound at all. He was known to be afraid of his wife, and seeing that Yumi was furious, he immediately shut his mouth.

Meanwhile, Old Master Dabry let out a long sigh. He turned to Drake and said coldly,

"Drake, follow me," he said to Drake coldly as he walked out of the living hall.

Drake followed swiftly; although he looked calm, his heart was pumping anxiously. As the Darby clan patriarch, he was also to blame since the incident

had unfolded to this point.

Darby Private Room.

This was where Old Master Darby spent five years cultivating. The private room was not too big with simple furnishings. It was a calming and quiet place, but to Drake, it felt solemn and suppressed.

Bamm!

Once they entered the room, Drake knelt on his knees with guilt on his face. "Dad, I'm to blame for what happened, too. As a clan leader, I didn't resolve the problem at once and ended up troubling you. Even what just happened outside is my fault. Please punish me."

Although Drake felt uneasy, he was smart. He knew that if he volunteered to be punished, he might get away with it.

Old Master Darby sighed, seeing Drake volunteer to be punished.

"Drake, stand back up. It's not your fault," he said.

'It's not my fault?' Drake thought as he stood up, relieved.

"Dad, now that Sanders got involved, what shall we do next?" Drake said carefully.

"Since we've reached this stage, I've decided that

from today onwards, we will teach our family members to cultivate. We've earned a decent amount of money from doing business throughout the years, but so what if we have lots of money? Money is nothing but something physical outside our bodies," Old Master Darby sighed deeply.

From the incident, Old Master Darby suddenly understood the truth. If a clan wanted to live on forever, money was not enough. One needed incredible power and capability, or else, no matter much money the clan had, it would not matter. If all the Darby members had been cultivators, Dax Sanders and his men would have been beaten to death! Luckily, it was not too late to realize this.

'Huh? He wanted the entire clan to start cultivating?!' Jackson thought.

They were unaware of Jackson, who overheard their conversation outside the private room.

'If the entire clan starts to cultivate, nobody would even dare to offend the Darby clan, including Dax Sanders, Brandon Guy, and Abby Guy. The Darby clan would be unreachable and indestructible!' Jackson thought with a deadly look in his eyes as he clenched his fists.

'Daryl, I treated you as my brother, yet you assaulted my wife. Fine, alright. Since you've

assaulted my wife, I'm going to assault your wife,' Jackson thought.

Chapter 175

Meanwhile, in the private room, Drake was shocked.

'Turning the entire family into cultivators? How was that possible?' Drake thought.

"But you'd need at least a Spiritual Herb or Spiritual Elixir to turn one's body into a cultivator. Spiritual Herb and Elixir are rare. No matter how wealthy we are, it's impossible to get hold of it without connections," Drake said.

Spiritual Herb was what Darryl had ingested. Brandon and Abby Guy had given it to him. After eating the Spiritual Herb, Darryl turned into a cultivator. Spiritual Elixir was derived from Spiritual Herb, making the Elixir Pill pure and highly effective.

"You don't have to worry about this; just do as you're told. Make me a list of the smartest members in our clan." he motioned at Drake to calm down. "I know Priest Brian from the Wudang Sect. If I ask, he 'll supply all of us with the Spiritual Elixir."

Years ago, Priest Brian had given him the "Easy Breath Practice" that he cultivated. Priest Brian was a high ranking master in the Wudang Sect. For him,

getting a hold of the Spiritual Elixir was not an issue at all.

Hearing that, Drake nodded with joy, "Yes, Dad. I'll prepare right away."

Meanwhile, the clinking of heels could be heard coming from outside the room. Yumi entered the room hastily.

"Grandpa, we have the list of injured members. Seven members are in the hospital emergency room, not knowing if they're going to live, and another ten or so are severely injured. Grandpa, when have we ever been insulted to such lengths? We can't sit back and do nothing!" Yumi raged through gritted teeth, her face still swollen.

Smack!

Old Master Darby smacked the table hard, his eyes flaming with rage. "This isn't over! Darryl and Sanders, this isn't over! This will never be over!"

...

At Donghai City First Hospital.

Lily marched hastily in her heels, entering the hospital with a fruit basket in her hands. Behind her was Samantha with an unenthusiastic expression on her face. The mother and daughter caught the eyes of many men in the hallway. Although

Samantha was in her thirties, her looks were well maintained, especially her hot body. On the other hand, Lily was charming and dressed in a short skirt that complimented her body shape.

The men gulped at the sight of her. Whoever married a woman like her must be a lucky man. Though Lily did not care for the attention, she had mixed feelings about what happened at the Sanders Mansion when Darryl had left hastily with Dax right after answering the phone call. She did not know what happened last night. All she knew was that Darryl's father was admitted to the hospital today, severely injured.

Lily had never met Darryl's parents before. Recently, Lily has been feeling an increasing sense of security around Darryl. Therefore, she wanted to do her duty of being a daughter-in-law today by visiting him.

"Lily is Darryl's father worth visiting? He's not even dead! Just come here yourself. Why did you have to bring me along? I have a facial appointment with my friends. Darryl's parents are nobody. It's so embarrassing to visit them," Samantha complained.

"Mom, keep your voice down. Recently, Darryl seems to be working quite hard, don't discriminate against him," Lily said, biting her lips. "Besides, after three years of marriage, we've never even met

each others' parents. Now that his father's been admitted to the hospital, we should be visiting them."

This made Samantha speechless for a while.

"Fine, fine, I'll leave after greeting him. You know I hate coming to the hospital with the germs everywhere," she said.

Outside the ward, they heard laughter coming from inside. Lily and Samantha exchanged a look as they halted their steps.

"Why's there a young woman's voice coming from inside the ward? Didn't you say only Darryl and his mother are inside?" Samantha questioned.

Lily frowned as she remained silent.

Chapter 176

Lily also heard a young woman's voice coming from the ward. Her voice was sweet.

'Why is there another woman in there? Who is she to Darryl?' with the thought ringing in her head, Lily seemed upset.

Through the window, one could see Daniel Darby with bandages all over his body and visible bloodstains on it. Pipes connected his body to a machine, and beside the bed were a few bags of blood. It seemed horrible. He was lucky to have survived.

Yesterday, Daniel thought he was dying. No matter how strong the body was, it was impossible to come out alive after experiencing such cruel torture! Luna sat, smiling beside the bed. When he was admitted to the hospital, Daniel was covered in blood, and his chances of living were slim. Luckily, Darryl had a good relationship with Director Shelly Sullivan. If it were not for Shelly, his father might have died.

Today, Shelly had finished her shift, and she did not have her white coat on. She wore a dress as she told Daniel jokes beside his bed. She was usually a serious person, especially after becoming the

director of the hospital. However, when she saw Darryl's parents, she just wanted to make them happy and tell them jokes.

"Uncle Daniel, when I was back in high school during my first Math class, the teacher introduced himself as Stan Dupp," she recalled smiling, "I don' t know what I was thinking, but I just said out loud, I wonder why we're all sitting when he's standing up? The teacher's face turned green and ordered me to stand for the rest of the day!"

"Hahahaha!" Daniel laughed.

Laughter filled the ward. Daniel was feeling much better and liked having Shelly around. This young lady was appointed as the director at such a young age. She was also talented, has a good personality, and makes the old couple very happy.

At this moment, the door opened as Lily and Samantha stomped in their heels. They had been listening from outside the ward for a while now, and Lily could not hold it any longer. It was the cheerful and joyous atmosphere inside the ward, which made her feel sick and uneasy.

"Who's this woman?" Lily asked, looking at Shelly.

Instantly, the four people inside the ward fell silent.

"Lily, you're here!" Darryl was the first to react. He

stood up and accepted the fruit basket from her hand. He then hastily introduced her, "Dad, Mom. This is your daughter-in-law, Lily Lyndon. Beside her is my mother-in-law, Samantha."

Although Darryl saw that they did not appear happy, he was glad that they came to visit.

Lily, with a straight face, said softly, "Dad, Mom." As she spoke, her gaze fell on Shelly with suspicion.

"Lily, this is the hospital director, Shelly Sullivan," Darryl smiled as he introduced her.

"Director Sullivan?" Samantha interrogated as she walked over. "Darryl, I didn't know you know a director from the hospital? Who is she to you? You two seem rather close?"

"Auntie, please don't take it wrong. I'm just a friend of Brother Darryl," Shelly explained.

It was obvious that Samantha had taken it wrongly. They were just friends.

"Tsk tsk, you even call him a 'brother' eh. You call this 'just friends'? I'm disgusted by how you address him," Samantha mocked before turning to Darryl. "Darryl, you're not doing bad, eh, flirting with other women behind Lily's back. Aren't you ashamed? Don't you feel sorry for Lily?"

Shelly was blushing with embarrassment and

almost furious.

'Why did Samantha speak with such an insulting tone?' Shelly thought

Daniel tried to make the situation less awkward and tried to laugh it off, "Oh Samantha, don't get angry. This isn't what you think it is. This lady here is just a friend of my son's. I'm severely injured, and she was the one who helped me. She's a nice lady."

"Tsk tsk, you're talking on behalf of her, eh? It seems like this cheap lady gets along with your family, eh? Since you like her so much, why don't you ask your son to be with her so that I can get Lily a better husband," Samantha mocked.

Since Samantha had never liked Darryl, she thought this was the best time to lay it all out.

"You..." Daniel was unable to refute, his lips turning purple from anger.

Chapter 177

The atmosphere in the room was strange and uneasy. Darryl stood by the side, his face darkening. He thought they came over to visit his parents, but instead, they came here for trouble! In the past three years, they have never visited his parents, and Samantha decided to say something so disturbing and harsh on their first meeting. After hearing what Samantha said, Lily did not stop her. Instead, she remained silent with her face devoid of emotion.

"Darryl, what are you staring at? What now? Do you think both of us came here to make a scene?" Samantha scowled.

"I didn't say that. You said it yourself," Darryl chuckled coldly.

They were obviously making a scene and being unreasonable.

This enraged Samantha further.

"Darryl, what's this attitude of yours? You're cheating behind Lily's back, and you're still trying to talk your way out?" she yelled.

Darryl was not bothered to answer her.

"Oh, Samantha, please calm down. You really have

mistaken the situation," Daniel spoke out.

"You shut your mouth! I'm telling you, your useless son was our live-in son-in-law for three years, eating our food, living under our roof, and did nothing to repay us. If I had a son like him, I'd be too ashamed to live," Samantha sneered.

After hearing what she said, Daniel's face flushed red with anger, and he started panting breathlessly. A few days ago, he had a heart attack, and yesterday he was tortured horribly. Now his body was in its weakest state, and Samantha decided to agitate him further.

Watching his father suffering, Darryl was furious. " Enough is enough! I didn't make any contribution? Your daughter has the most say in affairs in the Lyndon family, with 51% of the shares. Wasn't that my contribution?"

"Haha!" Samantha could not help but let out a mocking laugh as if she just heard the most absurd joke. "Darryl, tell me. Where did you get the confidence to make up such nonsense?"

"Ask your daughter if you don't believe me," Darryl said, not bothered to explain further.

As both of them fought, Daniel was panting on the bed, almost fainting from the bickering. Finally, Shelly could not take it any longer. As a doctor, she

knew for sure that Daniel could not be triggered at this moment.

Panicking, she stomped her feet. "Please, can you all stop fighting? The patient cannot be agitated. Can't you all talk things out nicely?"

"Shut your mouth, you cheap woman!" Samantha stomped toward her. "Since when do you have the right to speak? I'm sure you know that Darryl is married? Yet, you have tried to flirt with him here. Aren't you ashamed of yourself?"

Samantha glanced over at Daniel. "Isn't he doing just fine? I'm just saying a few words. Surely he can't die from that?"

"Shut up! Get out!" Darryl growled, his eyes red like blood glaring right into Samantha's eyes and exuding an air of evil.

It was terrifying.

There was instantly pin-drop silence in the entire ward. Lily was shocked, biting on her lips. She felt her body shivering, not out of fear, but out of an eerie sense of coldness.

"Darryl, what now? Do you want to hit my mom? Or do you want to hit me?" Lily challenged once she recovered from the shock

"I don't want to speak to you right now. Get out,"

Darryl clenched his fists as his face darkened.

Lily shivered again and took a deep breath. "Mom, let's go."

With that said, both of them left the ward stomping on their heels.

The atmosphere in the ward remained tense. After a while, Shelly walked over, biting her lips, "Brother Darryl, I'm truly sorry. You had a misunderstanding because of me."

She became the hospital's director because of Darryl, and she had not returned the favor. The last thing she wanted to do was to ruin Darryl's relationship with his wife. She could never forgive herself for that.

Darryl let out a long sigh, his face calming down as he shook his head. "Don't blame yourself. This wasn 't your fault."

Shelly nodded but still felt wary.

"Don't worry. It's no big deal. What do you say if I treat you to dinner later?" Darryl said with a smile.

Chapter 178

Since it was a misunderstanding, Darryl was not concerned about the Lyndon's seeing him have dinner with Shelly. Shelly had helped his father a lot since he was admitted to the hospital. Today, she had even been scolded by Samantha for no reason, so Darryl felt he had to treat her to a meal.

"Brother Darryl, are you sure this is a good idea?" Shelly said, biting her lips, slightly embarrassed. Earlier, Samantha had come looking for trouble. If Shelly went out for dinner with Darryl, the Lyndons might take it the wrong way.

Darryl did not seem concerned. "What's there to be afraid of? I just want to thank you for taking care of my parents for the past few days."

As he said, he looked at Shelly with an appreciative look. One would be lying to deny that Shelly had a kind of mature beauty in her, especially when she blushed, which made her very attractive.

Without further hesitation, Shelly accepted the invitation to dinner.

Lily and Samantha stomped out of the hospital, feeling insulted.

"I think you should divorce this piece of trash right away. Did you see his face just now? He has such a big ego but is as useless as a dog!" Samantha said as they walked out of the hospital

She kept on complaining non-stop about what had happened in the hospital. Samantha's words were starting to get to Lily.

"Mom, stop mentioning it, will you? I'll think about it by myself," she said, biting her lips.

Lily was confused. She felt bitter looking at Darryl being so happy and carefree when he was with Shelly. Meanwhile, her phone lit up with an incoming call from William.

"Lily, Granny is sick. Come back now!" William shouted.

'What? Granny was sick?' Lily thought.

Before she could respond, William had already hung up on her. Immediately, Lily got in the car and rushed to the Lyndon residence.

Ten minutes later, she arrived at the mansion. She pulled over and rushed into the home in her heels.

She was shocked the moment she got in. Granny Lyndon was sitting on the couch, her cheeks pink and eyes bright. She did not seem ill at all. The rest

of the family members surrounded her in the middle of a discussion.

"Granny, you...William Lyndon! Granny seems just fine. Why did you say she was sick on the phone? What did you mean?" Lily scolded, agitated.

William shrugged with a nonchalant expression. "If I didn't say that, you wouldn't be here right now."

"Alright, alright. Lilybud, don't get angry. I asked William to say that." Granny smiled. "Oh Lilybud, I'm so pleased that you got here so soon. This shows that you really respect me."

Granny gestured at Lily. "Come here."

'Huh?' Lily was confused.

She walked over and sat beside Granny. "Granny, why did you ask me to come?"

Granny sighed, "Lilybud, I've been keeping a close eye on you since you've been taking charge of our family business. You're hardworking and competitive, but you're not very capable. Other than Giselle Lindt, which you marketed well, the rest of the business has not been very exceptional."

Lily was shocked. "Granny, what you're saying is-"

"Lilybud, you're still a young lady. The family business is too much responsibility for you. It must'

ve been quite hard for you to take care of it all, am I right?" Granny smiled, interrupting Lily before she could continue.

Lily remained silent. Granny was right. Ever since she took over the business, she spent most of her time working. Even when her staff had gone home for the night, she still had to stay in her office reading and making plans. It was tiring, but it felt productive as well. It was better than others looking down on her in the past. Now that she was in charge of the family business, everyone had to look up to her, and she enjoyed that.

"Lilybud, I think you should get some rest. Why don't you give away some of your shares? A woman like you wouldn't need so many shares," Granny smiled.

Chapter 179

Lily's heart tightened at Granny's words, but she remained calm.

"Granny, it's okay. I don't mind being tired. Since I' m young, it's okay to work harder than others," she said.

'Haha!' the crowd laughed to themselves.

"Lily, stop pretending. It doesn't matter how hardworking you are. With your ability, there's no way you can lead the business," William mocked from the side.

The crowd around them nodded in agreement. Nobody was convinced of Lily being the one in charge of the business.

Lily bit her lips. "Granny, what can I do for you to be happy? Must I give away my share?"

"Oh Lilybud, it's not that I don't believe in you. Honestly speaking, you don't have the best ability among us. You're just a woman, after all, not a man. A big family like ours can't have a girl like you in charge," Granny replied.

Lily sighed to herself. Ever since she became in

charge, she knew that nobody was on her side. She knew this day was coming, but she did not expect it to be so soon.

"Lilybud, I'm not trying to take away your authority, but I can't bear to see our business decline. There's a lot of potential members in your generation, like William. We can't take away his opportunity," Granny comforted. "That's why I'd like you to give away some of your shares so that we can form a family board of directors. Of course, you'll still be the first board of director. What do you say?"

William, who was sitting on the side, could not help the excitement in his heart. Once Lily gave out her shares, she would no longer be in charge.

Meanwhile, everyone in the hall had their eyes stuck on Lily with mixed feelings.

Lily let out a sigh as she nodded, "If Granny insists."

She did not have much choice. She had to agree, or else nobody would be loyal to her even if she remained in charge.

"My Lilybud is so mature and knows how to see the big picture," Granny nodded with a smile.

In the next instant, she asked the treasurer to bring

forward a document prepared in advance to let Lily sign

...

Three days later.

It was a Sunday with good weather. There were many people out on the streets of Donghai City as Darryl rode on his motorbike outside the Platinum Corporation. His cheap motorbike offered a stark contrast to the grand and luxurious entrance of the building. It was eye-catching. Not because of his motorbike, but because of Shelly, who sat behind him. Shelly was dressed in a short skirt, showing off her fair, long legs, and attracting the public's gaze. An attractive woman on a motorbike was a rare and picturesque scene that caused many people to take out their phones to capture. Even the new security guards could not help but look and talk amongst themselves.

Darryl was depressed. He did not want to show up on his motorbike either, but he had no choice. The other night when they were having dinner, Shelly mentioned that she wanted to buy a car, but she just got her license and was scared to buy one. Without hesitation, Darryl had let her drive his Audi R8 to practice. Unfortunately, Shelly crashed into a signpost by the roadside within a hundred meters, and the car was sent for repair right away.

Darryl was speechless. There was no one in front of the car, so he had no idea why she turned the steering wheel in a panic out of the blue. However, he was secretly amused by Shelly's pitiful and cute gaze.

Today was a Sunday, so Shelly did not have work. When Darryl told her that he was coming to the Platinum Corporation, she said she wanted to come along to meet some superstars. Darryl did not reject her and brought her along on his motorbike. He had not been back there in the last couple of days, but knowing that his secretary Pearl was in charge, he was not too worried.

However, a problem occurred recently. After the " Superstar" TV program came out, Giselle Lindt's popularity instantly boomed as many companies asked for collaborations with her within half a month. Yet, in the past few days, all those collaborations had been canceled for no reason, including the advertisement companies.

Chapter 180

Giselle has had no appointments even today, making it a significant loss for the company. This was strange since Giselle was popular with many fans, and it was impossible to have no one willing to sign her. Darryl felt something was up and wanted to figure it out.

"Darryl, I'm sorry. If it weren't for me, you wouldn't have to come here with your motorbike," Shelly apologized.

Until now, Shelly still had no idea how she ended up crashing into the signpost.

"Don't worry. I used to come here with my motorbike anyway," Darryl laughed, not minding at all, as he parked his motorbike in a parking lot not far away.

Ring!

After he parked the motorbike, his phone rang. It was a message from Yvonne Young.

[Yvonne: Darryl, what have you been up to lately? Is your wound better now? You haven't come to the Pearl Pavilion since the trip.]

Darryl laughed at the thought of her, thinking he

respond.

"Wow..."

Once Shelly spoke, she caught everyone's attention. Dressed in a short shirt with her alluring body, she was a sexy and attractive woman.

It was not long till everyone turned their attention to Darryl with looks of adoration and curiosity.

'A poor guy with a motorbike had such a gorgeous girlfriend? He was so lucky!" everyone thought.

The man was also captivated by Shelly's beauty. Then, he snapped out of it and pointed at the parking spot. "You guys parked your motorbike in a car parking spot. That's unreasonable!"

Meanwhile, the other car door opened, and a beautiful lady emerged from the car. She was dressed in tight denim jeans, high heels, and her alluring body was comparable to Shelly's, if not, more with her added graceful charm.

"Markus, what's going on back there? Is the car alright?" the woman said.

The scene was in an uproar at the sight of this woman. Many men gulped as they tried to suppress their excitement. Who would have thought that an accident came with such beautiful views.

Each of the beautiful ladies had their own merits,

and being able to spend a night with any of them would be worth sacrificing a few years of their lives.

"Miss Lana?" Darryl was shocked as the beautiful woman came out of the car.

'Is this my high school class teacher, Lana Thomas? ' he thought.

Darryl recalled Giselle telling him earlier that Lana wanted to enter the entertainment industry, and he agreed. He passed this on to Pearl to take care of. It seemed that Lana came here today for the interview.

"Darryl?" Lana frowned.

In the last class gathering, she had heard from other students that Darryl had become a live-in son -in-law and was poor and useless. She did not believe what they said until she saw him today.

Lana sighed and glared at Darryl. "Kid, didn't I tell you to study hard and not screw around back in school? Look at you now. Do you regret it? It seems like I wasn't strict enough with you back then."

Chapter 181

Darryl laughed after hearing what Lana said. Back in high school, he was the most afraid of Lana out of all his teachers. She was very strict with him, and there was even a time Lana had slapped him when he got the worst score on a test.

"Miss Lana, you were strict enough with me back in school," Darryl could not help saying.

"During the class reunion a few days ago, didn't you see that all of your classmates are doing well in life? Giselle Lindt became a superstar, Dianne Jackson became the manager of Eleganza Corporation. Now, look at you. Don't you feel sorry for yourself?" Lana said, shaking her head.

Meanwhile, the man beside Lana broke into laughter, "You're Darryl? Haha! I haven't seen you in a few years. You've changed!"

Darryl thought this man looked familiar when he got out of the car. Now he finally realized who he was. His name was Markus Orian, and back in the day, he was Darryl's PE teacher. He had been chasing Lana since then.

Darryl used to prank Markus in school, but he did

not dare to fight back because Darryl was the Second Master of the Darby family. He was not someone a PE teacher like Markus could get back at.

However, in the past two years, Markus had quit teaching and started doing business. He started up a small company and was considered a successful man. The tables have turned. Who would have thought Darryl would end up in such bad shape? The sight of Darryl riding a motorbike pleased Markus greatly.

"Darryl, what do you say? Since I was once your teacher, I'm not going to make it hard for you. Just pay back the damage you've done," Markus said impatiently.

This was a brand new car, and only the second time he drove it around! He was planning to drive Lana to Platinum Corporation but bumped into Darryl. He must make him pay today.

Meanwhile, Lana looked over at Shelly and asked, " Darryl, is this your wife?"

The woman seemed attractive and very elegant. Lana heard from the class that as a live-in son-in-law, he never even touched his wife before.

"Ah, no...I'm not his wife," Shelly said, blushing.

Even his wife was too embarrassed to admit he was

her husband in public. Darryl seemed to be doing pretty bad.

"Darry, I told you to study hard in school and not just play around. Look at you now! You're doing so bad," Lana scowled at Darryl.

Even though Lana did not particularly like him, he was still her student.

"Miss Lana, you're still the same, always telling me off," Darryl smiled.

"Don't pretend it's okay to laugh it off. Although you've graduated, I'm still your teacher, and you're senior. I'm telling you, one needs to be ashamed of his wrongdoing. Look at you. Are you happy looking at other classmates becoming successful? Do you feel good about yourself?" Lana scolded.

Darryl stretched his hands. "Miss Lana, to be honest, I do regret not studying hard back then, but right now, I kind of like life."

If he studied harder back then, he would have at least been able to find work at other corporations after getting kicked out of the Darby clan. Then, he would not have to become a live-in son-in-law. The past three years of being a live-in son-in-law were not easy, but it is all in the past now. Those days are over, especially with what happened with Samantha and Lily in the hospital a few days ago.

Darryl was utterly disappointed with the Lyndons, and he was never going back there again. Darryl was pleased with his life now.

"You...How can you be content with what you have right now?" Lana frowned.

Lana did not want to dwell on it further. She pointed at the car. "Never mind, I'll stop lecturing you. You damaged Markus' car. Don't bother calling the police, just help him fix it."

"Because of Lana, I won't call the police. Just pay me ten thousand dollars later. I'll bring it to get fixed," Markus sneered.

'Ten thousand? That was unreasonable!' Darryl thought.

Darryl's motorbike was severely damaged, while Markus' car was just slightly dented. His car was just a Buick GL8 that cost no more than three hundred thousand dollars. The damage done was nowhere close to ten thousand.

'Damn him! He's so unreasonable! It was my parking spot, anyways!' Darryl thought to himself.

"This parking spot is meant for cars, not for motorbikes, understood? I know you don't have a car and want to make yourself feel better by parking in a car parking spot, but this is wrong. Do you

understand?" Markus continued. 1

"Mister Markus, I'm just curious to know who said there was a rule that says motorbikes can't park in a parking spot? You crashed into my motorbike, and I haven't even asked for you to pay for the damages. Now you're accusing me instead? Besides, this isn't just any parking spot by the road. This belongs to the Platinum Corporation, and I'm not going against the traffic rules," Darryl laughed.

"Darryl! I'm letting you off easy because you were my student. Don't try to get away with it! Aren't you ashamed of yourself?" Markus sneered as he became angrier.

'What was wrong with this kid?'

Chapter 182

Darryl seemed unfazed. "I wonder who should be ashamed of himself?"

"What are you trying to say!?" Markus yelled as he clenched his fist and threatened to punch Darryl. He was a PE teacher, tall and well-built. Beating this kid was nothing.

Right at that moment, Lana stopped him. "Markus, don't be impulsive!"

Although Lana was helping Darryl, she was frustrated with him too. He was just as rebellious as he was back in high school.

A thought suddenly occurred to her that Darryl had parked his motorbike here.

"Darryl, what are you doing here? Do you work at Platinum Corporation?" Lana asked.

Situated in a high-end area, the Platinum Corporation was only visited by the rich and wealthy. Judging by how Darryl dressed, he seemed to be a staff of the lowest ranking.

"Darryl, if you don't pay me ten thousand dollars today, don't you try to get away." Markus scowled,

thinking that Darryl was asking for trouble. He was going to punch him hard.

Darryl gave him a faint smile, unperturbed.

Meanwhile, Lana's phone rang. Her phone was bulging out of her skinny jeans. Once she took the phone out from her pocket, her body instantly became more attractive than it already was. She looked at the phone to see Pearl calling, but she took too long to answer, so Pearl had already hung up on her. Lana had added Pearl on Wechat, and she came here today for her interview. Lana almost missed her appointment because of the accident. It was Lana's first time coming to such a big corporation, and she wanted to leave a good impression.

"Miss Lana, please go up. Leave this to me." Markus said confidently. He was too afraid to speak up to Darryl in the past because he was the second master of the Darby family. Now that this kid was doing so badly himself, how could he miss out on such a great opportunity?

"C'mon kid, just pay up!" Markus glared at him.

Shelly, who remained silent up till now, could not stand it any longer.

"How can you be so unreasonable? You were the one that bumped into us. How dare you ask us to

pay?" she said.

Shelly figured that the man and woman standing in front of her were Darryl's old high school teachers, but how could teachers be so unreasonable?

"I've repeated myself many times, Gorgeous. I'm not trying to criticize you, but why would you be friends with trash like Darryl? What benefit do you get from someone like him?" Markus replied with a faint smile.

'Trash? Trash who helped her become the director of the hospital?' Shelly thought.

As Shelly was about to speak up, a woman dressed in professional attire with high heels and black-rimmed glasses marched towards them from the lobby.

"Secretary Hahn?" Lana called out as she hastily rushed forward. She had only seen her once, so she remembered.

Pearl nodded but did not answer back as she marched towards Darryl.

Upon hearing the words 'Secretary Hahn', Markus rushed forwards too.

"Hello, Secretary Hahn. In a big corporation like this, a motorbike cannot enter the car park, am I correct? Look at this. He parked his motorbike in a

car parking spot and bumped my car. Don't you think it's reasonable to ask him to pay for the damage?" Markus asked loudly.

Lana was about to sign with the Platinum Corporation and become their biggest asset, and Markus went with her. If this secretary were smart, she would know which side to stand on.

Meanwhile, Lana shook her head, agreeing with Markus. Darry's actions rendered her speechless. It was a small matter, and paying a little would have solved the problem, but he wanted to cause trouble instead. Now that Secretary Hahn was here, it was likely that he might end up losing his job.

Chapter 183

However, Pearl Hahn stopped abruptly in front of Darryl and greeted him with a ninety-degree bow.

"President Darryl, I'm very sorry. I can reassure you that this won't happen again!" Pearl said nervously as cold sweats dripped off her forehead.

She was nervous and anxious. As a secretary, she was in charge of all the small matters in the corporation, including the car park. Before, when Giselle came for an interview, a similar incident happened. Today Lana came for an interview and the same thing happened again! No matter how nice Darryl might seem, it would not be surprising if he gets mad.

'Huh? President? President Hahn called Darryl, President?' the crowd thought.

Everyone was shocked. Even the few staff watching the whole event were overtaken by fear and shock. Whenever Darryl dropped by the corporation, he usually went straight to his office, so not many people recognized him.

Suddenly, there was pin-drop silence at the scene. Everyone had their mouth and eyes wide opened in

disbelief.

'The guy with the motorbike was the President of the Platinum Corporation? Was that a joke?' they thought.

Markus walked over, refusing to believe what he heard. "Are you mistaken? He's the President of the corporation? Secretary Hahn, don't try to prank me."

"As a secretary myself, are you saying I don't know who my President is?" Pearl replied.

Lana felt a shiver in her body, and she bit her lips as she thought, 'Didn't my class say he's a live-in son-in-law? How...Why is he the President? And the company I'm interviewing for...is his?'

Markus, who was stunned, reacted swiftly and snapped.

"Fine, Darryl, so what if you're the President of the Platinum Corporation? Does that give you the right to park your motorbike in a car parking spot? Is this good leadership? With a leader like you, what good does it make to have a big corporation like this?" He roared, attracting the attention of the crowd.

Pearl walked over with a straight face and articulated her words clear and crisp. "Excuse me, Sir. This is a special parking spot for the President

of the corporation. If you read the sign beside you, it 's stated clearly. Our President could place a cow here if he wanted to, which has nothing to do with you! You're parking in a private space without authorization. You should be the one paying!"

'Huh!?' Markus thought.

Markus was speechless. As he looked over, it turned out that there was a signboard in front of the spot that stated clearly "Dedicated Private Space. Do Not Park."

In that instance, his face looked like an uncooked potato, confused and ugly.

"President Darryl, how would you like to handle this?" Pearl asked Darryl with a lowered voice.

"Do you really have to ask me?" Darryl replied.

Pearl knew what she had to do.

"Sir, you're not welcomed at the Platinum Corporation. Please leave right away. Also, you have damaged our President's vehicle-" she ordered Markus.

"Let it go; it's just a motorbike. It doesn't cost anything," Darryl interrupted.

With that said, he grabbed Shelly's hand and left. " Let's go. I'll show you around."

"Hmph!" Shelly nodded and followed excitedly.

It was not till now that Lana finally snapped out of her state of shock. She regretted what she said and how she behaved earlier when telling Darryl off for being useless. This whole time he was actually the President of the Platinum Corporation.

"Darryl..." Lana muttered.

She had wanted to sign with the Platinum Corporation for a few years already. Now that she was almost thirty, if she missed this chance, she would regret it for the rest of her life!

After a walking few steps, Darryl stopped and turned to look at Lana.

With a smile, he said, "Are you still doing the interview? Come on up!"

She was still his teacher. Since she was not too irrational earlier, she deserves another chance.

Lana was overjoyed! She followed swiftly in her heels, but she no longer had that proud look of hers. Now, she appeared rather humble and ashamed.

On Monday morning, the streets of Donghai City were filled with office workers rushing to work at full swing. Lily pulled her car over and marched into

the lobby of Neptunus Corporation.

Chapter 184

Lily appeared to be under the weather, her brows furrowed in the shape of the moon. It had been over a week since she had last seen Darryl. He had not come home nor called back. A few times, Lily had been tempted to call him, but she recalled what happened in the ward.

'Why is he such an egotistical man? Do I really have to call him first? Ah, whatever, leave it be!' she thought as she entered the lobby. 1

Upon entering the lobby, she felt something was off. The staff at the front desk would usually stand up to greet her, but today they remained seated and continued chatting even when they saw her.

Lily frowned in confusion. Perhaps they had a rough weekend? It was just a minor mistake, so she let it be and continued making her way to the office. However, on her way there, she saw a few staff chit-chatting, and some were even playing games on their phones. The workday had started! What bothered her even more, was these people completely ignored her, treating her as if she was just air! They did not greet nor behave appropriately in front of the director of the board.

"Hey, you! Put your phones away! Who allowed you to play with your phone during work hours?" Lily stomped over and scowled.

The staff did not seem to care as they exchanged looks with one another, totally unbothered, and resumed playing with their phones. They did not care about Lily. Meanwhile, the other staff around them started giggling.

'What happened? Were they not afraid of their boss? ' Lily thought.

"Hey, the lot of you! Pack your stuff and leave now! We don't need staff like you around," Lily ordered, trembling with anger.

Meanwhile, her assistant walked to her hastily with an anxious and uneasy expression on her face.

"President Lyndon, something's up..." she said.

'Something was up?' Lily wondered.

"What's up? What gives them the right not to obey the order of the President? Hey! Did you hear what I said? Pack your stuff now because you're all fired!" Lily replied calmly.

At this moment, a hoarse voice was heard coming from the door. "I asked them to.'

Granny Lyndon entered the office slowly,

accompanied by William and others.

'What was Granny doing here? As far as she could recall, Granny never left the mansion? What was she doing here today?' Lily wondered.

"Lily, stop causing a scene. I asked them to have a day off. After our director's board meeting earlier, we've decided that you're no longer the President of the board," Granny said nonchalantly, sounding nothing like when she tried to persuade Lily to let go of her shares.

This sounded like a bolt out of the blue.

An intense shiver passed down her spine. Lily asked, biting her lips, "Granny, why?"

"Why? Are you actually asking why?" William walked forward with a cold smile. "Aren't you satisfied being the President for so many days already? You've had authority for long enough. It's time to give it back!"

In the past few days, William had been bad-mouthing Lily to Granny. Since he was her favorite grandson, Granny was easily convinced and started despising Lily under William's influence.

"Granny!" Lily restrained her anger and took a deep breath. "A few days ago, you said you wanted my shares, and I gave you 20%. They were all clearly

stated in the contract. I still have 30% of the company shares. How can you fire me? You have no right!"

Although she only had 30% of the shares left, she still had the largest individual shares in the Lyndon family. How could they fire her?

"Look at the contract yourself!" William slammed a folder heavily onto the desk. "It's clearly stated here that we have the right to fire you."

The contract clearly stated that Lily was voluntarily giving up all her shares!

A few days ago, Granny asked for some of Lily's shares, and Lily signed the paper without reading it carefully. Little did she know that Granny actually pulled a dirty trick on her.

"Pack up your stuff and leave!" William said impatiently.

Meanwhile, Lily was heartbroken and utterly disappointed. She had worked hard for the family for so many years, and in return, she was shown no appreciation and was fired.

"Granny..." Lily could not help saying.

"Lilybud," Granny stood up, supported by her walking stick, "William's right. Nobody was confident having you as the president of the

company. Even though you didn't do too badly and kept the company in good shape, you're still a woman at the end of the day. You're not suited to have such authority. Now that you no longer have the family shares leave and never come back to the Lyndon residence again."

Chapter 185

'That's it? They're just going to kick me out?' Lily thought, disappointed.

At this moment, Lily finally learned how it felt to be in despair. Granny's words poked through her heart like needles. Holding back her tears, she felt her body becoming weightless. After she packed her stuff, she stomped out of the office with tears rolling down her cheeks.

The next day, Lily sat on the sofa with her eyes bloodshot from all the crying.

"What can we do now? How're we going to survive?" Samantha sighed beside her.

"Mom, don't panic. I'll think of ways to earn money," Lily reassured.

"Think of ways to earn money?" Samantha panicked. "It's not easy to make money nowadays, you know? What can you do with a monthly salary of three to four thousand bucks?"

'Right, how could they live off three to four thousand bucks...' Lily contemplated.

Darryl did warn her not to give up her shares to

Granny. Now she regretted not listening to him.

Ding.

Her phone lit up with a notification that read: [Gorgeous ladies in their twenties earning five million per month from live-streaming.]

In the President's office of Platinum Corporation, Darryl let out a long sigh of relief as he put down the "Infinite Elixir Manual" he was reading. He was bubbling with excitement! A few days ago, Darryl got hold of ten or so Monk's Blood Fruit during the trip. As he read the manual, Darryl realized that he could refine two types of elixir pills using the fruits he had. He was unsure which pill to refine.

One was called the Black Spirit Pill, and another was called the Obeying Pill. The "Black Spirit Pill" could improve the cultivator's strength, while people who ingested the "Obeying Pill" would follow any commands given by the person who gave them the pill for two hours.

The Obeying Pill seemed pretty cool.

Darryl was excited, but on second thought, the Obeying Pill's effect lasted only two hours.

'Whatever, might as well make the Black Spirit Pill and increase my strength,' he thought.

With that thought, he started preparing the

ingredients to refine the pill.

Two days ago, he signed his teacher, Lana Thomas, after the interview. She came at the perfect time as the corporation recently started a new show called " 101 Superstar," a follow-up to our previous show, " Superstar." The participants were from all over the country, and they were all attractive young women who could dance and sing. The rule was simple: they would select 101 participants and let them compete against one another on the show. Then, nine finalists would be invited to form an all-girl group. As expected, once the show was released, it became the hottest show around the country. In the past two days, everyone of all ages and genders across Donghai City talked about the show. After all, it was a show with gorgeous women and fun games. Who could resist such a fun show?

After the first season came out, Lana instantly became the subject of discussion. She was the prettiest in the show with her charm and attractive body; it did not take long before becoming idolized by many men. Of course, this was all part of Darryl's plan.

Two hours later, Darryl opened up the porcelain jar excitedly after the scent filled up the room. As expected, ten or so pills were laid inside the jar. According to the manual, you could not take too

many of the Black Spirit Pill at one time, and you should only take two pills every half a month. Darryl did not care, so he ingested five pills all in one go and kept the remaining pills.

Once ingested, Darryl felt a wave of heat burning inside his body. The heat began spreading out throughout his entire body. Suddenly, he felt a sharp sensation of pain attacking his nerves. His forehead was covered in sweat, but he grit his teeth to put up with the pain. It seemed like ages had passed before the pain went away. When Darryl gained his awareness again, he was surprised to notice that he had become a Level Four Master! There was only one more level to go before he could ingest the Godly pill and breakthrough to a Master General!

Meanwhile, Dax Sanders phoned him to hang out. Darryl got changed and left his office. Once he got out, he saw a male employee laughing happily while watching a show on his phone.

'Damn it. When others are working diligently, this dude is playing on his phone!' Darryl thought.

He tried to reason with himself that all the staff was packed with tasks due to the new show's release, so it was okay to play with their phones sometimes. However, this dude was laughing way too loud, and he even snorted when laughing.

Chapter 186

Darryl stepped forward. Instantly, the crowd held their breath, praying for the man. The President could fire him after getting caught playing on his phone.

"What are you watching?" Darryl smiled, stopping in front of the staff member.

President?

The staff heard Darryl's voice and almost dropped his phone as he staggered. He quickly composed himself and blurted, "President."

Huh?

His phone screen caught Darryl's eyes. A woman was live-streaming herself, exuding an unspeakable charm that would drive men crazy.

On the live-streaming page, only a few people were watching. The atmosphere was good—with praises refreshing the page non-stop.

[My goddess is too beautiful.]

[Your voice is so intriguing!]

[Does my goddess need any assistance?]

Darryl was amused yet confused as he looked at the screen. This 'goddess' was his wife, Lily. Why was she live-streaming at this hour? Was she not supposed to be busy with her company work? In the past three years of their marriage, she never really got involved with social media. Why did she live-stream out of the blue?

With that in mind, Darryl eyed the staff in front of him. "Who is the female anchor live-streaming?" Darryl asked, already knowing the answer.

"P-President..." The staff stuttered. He thought Darryl would yell at him, but he had only asked who the female anchor was.

Meanwhile, another staff beside them answered carefully, "President, her name is Lily Lyndon. She's a new anchor. I heard she's from Donghai City and that she just started live-streaming a few days ago."

Darryl nodded, glancing at Pearl, who was standing by his side.

"Pearl, help me find out what happened to her. Why did she start live-streaming?"

"Yes, I'll look into it right away," Pearl picked up her phone to make some calls.

In the afternoon, Pearl knocked on his door.

"President, I've done a background check. The

female anchor was Lily Lyndon. She was kicked out of her family business two days ago."

Huh? Kicked out of her family? Granny Lyndon's age had caught up to her.

Pearl was shocked. "President, is everything okay?" she asked carefully.

Darryl calmed down, shaking his head. "I'm fine," he reassured. "This live-streaming platform... Do you know anything about it?"

"Yes," Pearl nodded, "This is the Longya Live Streaming Platform. The owner is a partner of ours."

Darryl nodded. "Alright, find ways to make her popular."

"Understood," Pearl answered, leaving his office.

After she left, Darryl took out his phone and created an account on the Longya Live Streaming Platform. He nicknamed himself 'Hill', since Darryl rhymes with Hill.

There were a few people on her platform. She was naturally beautiful. With the filter, Lily looked like a fairy in disguise. As Darryl entered her platform, a fan named 'Donghai Boss' sent a group of planes worth twenty thousand bucks!

Lily was excited and stood up to thank him, "Thank

you, Donghai Boss!"

In the past few days of live-streaming, this was the first time someone had sent her twenty thousand bucks worth of gifts.

The 'Donghai Boss' left a comment.

[Goddess, dance to a song.]

Dance?

"Sorry, I...I can't dance," Lily apologized.

The 'dance' they were referring to was not an ordinary dance, but the sexy and seductive kind.

The 'Donghai Boss' was not pleased.

[Goddess, are you not aware of the rules in this platform? Right now, I'm the highest paying viewer. You have to do whatever I tell you to do as long as it's not against the law, understood? I gave you twenty thousand bucks. Do you want to get kicked out of the platform?]

Other viewers on her profile sided with him.

[He's right. He did pay you twenty thousand bucks!]

[Do you think you're that chaste?]

[Dance, dance!]

Lily pursed her lips, standing up unwillingly in her

mini-skirt. They did have a point; he did pay her a large sum of money. If she rejected him, nobody would send her gifts again in the future.

Everyone was anticipating excitedly, thinking that they would finally be able to watch Lily dance. Her fair and long legs were so alluring!

Chapter 187

What now?

Lily stood there, panic-stricken with her lips pursed.

Suddenly, a shocking scene appeared on the screen. A crazy person sent groups after groups of gifts on her platform, which summed up to two million bucks!

Wow!

The entire platform went into an uproar! Giving out two million bucks worth of gifts in one go? Could it have been a billionaire?

Lily shivered with gratitude as she looked at the name of the person: Hill.

After donating the money, the user 'Hill' commented on the platform.

[You don't have to do anything. Sing if you feel like singing.]

The 'Donghai Boss' shut up instantly.

Reading what 'Hill' wrote, Lily was overwhelmed with gratitude. Just as she was about to stand up to thank him, she saw that the 'Hill' user already left

the platform.

Knock! Knock! Knock!

"President, may I enter?" A voice asked.

"Come in."

Pearl entered with a pile of documents in her hands. "President, I've made arrangements regarding Lily Lyndon's live-streaming platform. Here is our monthly revenue report. Please have a look."

Darryl skimmed through the documents and smiled, "Hmm, not bad at all!"

He had to admit. Pearl was very capable. She increased the profits of the corporation.

After receiving the compliments, Pearl smiled and took on the opportunity to ask, "President, Roger's Auction is happening tonight. Are you interested in dropping by? They've sent us an invitation earlier today."

'Roger's Auction? What kind of name was that?' Darryl thought to himself.

"Nah, not interested."

"President, this is not just any auction," Pearl hastily added on. "It's hosted by the Roger family."

Darryl frowned. He had heard of the Roger family.

They were considered a big family, but most of their investments were not in Donghai City.

Meanwhile, Pearl continued, "According to them, they will not only be auctioning rare jewels, but also many treasures unknown to the world. In addition to these, real estate, license plate numbers, and so on are also being auctioned. I think it might be worth your time."

With that said, Pearl looked at Darryl with anticipation.

Pearl wanted to attend the auction since half a month ago. She knew that they would be auctioning a pair of 'The Worship of Crystal' limited to ninety-nine pairs in the world. Like any other girl, owning this was her dream, but she still could not afford a pair of these with her current financial ability. All she wanted to do was steal a glimpse of the pair in the auction.

Seeing the look of anticipation on Pearl, Darryl considered for a while and nodded, "Fine, you can go with me."

"Thank you, President." Pearl chirped. She felt immensely lucky to be working for such a kind-hearted boss.

Yvonne Young felt somewhat depressed the past few days. She did not know why, but the thought of

Darryl kept entering her mind. The image of him appraising the antiques, the looks of him fighting the sharks, his bravery of saving everyone, and being hurt by the robbers. Even while he was covered in blood.

The deeply-embroidered scenes kept flashing in her mind like a curse. She could not help her heart from beating so quickly whenever she saw him. It had been almost half a month since she last heard back from Darryl. She wondered if he had recovered; she wondered what he was doing. Yvonne felt as if she was ill, uninterested in anything happening beside her.

"Yvonne."

Meanwhile, her father, Kingston, rushed into the living room.

"Why are you daydreaming at home again? Let's go! I'll bring you to an interesting event."

Kingston noticed that Yvonne had been feeling under the weather and wanted to cheer her up.

"Dad, I don't feel like going out," Yvonne mumbled.

Kingston smiled, "You'll definitely want to go to this auction. Have you heard of Roger's Auction? There will be lots of antiques being sold in this auction. Who knows, we might come home with a

few treasures. Also, aren't you in love with 'The Worship of Crystal'? According to them, they will be auctioning a pair of those too."

Chapter 188

"Are you serious?! Okay, I'll get changed right away!" Yvonne was ecstatic. She had always wanted a pair of 'The Worship of Crystal' shoes for herself. When she saw Lily wearing it, she asked Lily to help her get another pair.

She was willing to pay double the price for it! Unfortunately, Lily had no idea who sent them to her as a gift.

After a while, Yvonne came out from her bedroom after getting changed into a t-shirt and denim shorts. Her appearance was clean and tidy while still keeping her charm. Kingston nodded as they left the house together.

A BMW was parked by the entrance. A handsome man in an expensive suit got out of the car after seeing both of them.

"Uncle Young. Yvonne." The man greeted as he walked toward them.

"Tristan! Why are you here?" Yvonne raised her brows slightly, emphasizing her beautiful features and her irresistible eyes. 1

The man was Tristan Zink. His family was in the

jewelry business. He had been chasing after Yvonne for quite a while.

"Dad asked me to drop by!" Tristan chuckled as he pointed at Kingston.

"What nonsense are you talking about?" Yvonne scowled. "He's my Dad, not yours! Please use your words wisely."

She turned to Kingston and asked, "Dad, what's this about? Why did you ask him to come?"

Kingston ruffled his hair. He knew that Yvvone had been upset in the past few days because of Darryl. To him, Darryl was just a live-in son-in-law. He was far out of Yvonne's league.

He asked Tristan to join them today in hopes of getting them together. The main point of going to this auction was for both of them to better understand each other.

"Dad mentioned that you haven't been too happy lately, so he asked me to accompany you to the auction," Tristan smirked.

"He's my dad, not yours!" Yvonne sneered—offended by how shameless he was to keep on calling Kingston his 'Dad'.

Tristan laughed it off as he walked forward to open the car door for them.

"Yvonne, dad, let's go. The auction is starting very soon. Uncle Young, don't bother driving over today. I'll send you both home after the auction."

Yvonne got in the car with a straight face. Seeing that she had already got in, Kingston said to Tristan in a low voice, "Kid, I'm already giving you a great opportunity. It's all up to you now."

"Dad, don't worry. I really like Yvonne, I won't let you down," Tristan reassured.

Kingston nodded and got in the car. "One more thing," he added, "Calling me 'Dad' seems to be inappropriate still."

"Understood, Dad."

...

At the Central Building where the auction took place, Pearl and Darryl got down from the car. A familiar figure caught his eye immediately.

"Dax?"

Not too far, Dax Sanders was dressed in a suit while chit-chatting with some executives along with his wife, Nancy.

Once he saw Darryl, he walked toward him, smiling.

"Darryl! You're here too! Are you alone? Where's

my sister-in-law?" Dax asked as he greeted Darryl.

The last time Darryl was injured, Lily stayed by his side, taking care of him. He assumed they had a good relationship.

Darryl laughed as he turned to Pearl, "Go ahead, don 't wait for me. I'll find you before the auction starts."

"Okay," Pearl replied before walking into the hall.

"Bro, who was that?" Dax questioned with a smirk. He was amused that his brother always went around with a gorgeous lady by his side.

Darryl smiled, "My secretary."

"Secretary?" Dax laughed, "There's a saying that goes, 'When you're busy, let your secretary take care of it. When you're free, take care of your secretary'."

As they were exchanging laughter, a burst of exclamation came from the crowd. A BMW pulled over, and Yvonne instantly became the center of attention as she got down from the car.

'Damn it!' Darryl muttered to himself, suddenly remembering that he had not replied to any of her messages.

"Darryl?" Yvonne spotted him from the crowd right

away. She rushed over.

Yvonne was charming as usual. Her simple T-shirt and denim pants made her body appear as alluring as ever. The men surrounding her could not help locking their gaze on her.

However, Kingston's face turned green at the sight of Darryl. What was he doing at an auction like this? He could not but think back to the day when he came home to the sight of three women tied up with rope by Darryl. Among the three of them was his very own daughter, Yvonne!

Chapter 189

Kingston scowled as he gave Tristan a stern look. Tristan understood him instantly and marched over, "Oh, look. Isn't this Lyndon's live-in son-in-law?" As Tristan spoke, he put his arm around Yvonne's waist, "Yvonne, why do you bother greeting him? He's nothing but a live-in son-in-law!"

Yvonne stomped her foot as Tristan approached her suddenly. "What are you doing? Darryl, please don't take this the wrong way."

Tristen smiled and asked her, "Yvonne, so what if he takes this the wrong way or not?"

"Dude, do you know me?" he glared at Darryl. "I'm Tristan Zink. My family and I are in the jewelry business. We own the five 'Zink Jewelry' stores in Donghai City. One more thing; I like Yvonne, so stay away from her!"

No wonder he sounded so boastful; he was in the jewelry business.

Darryl laughed it off, not caring the slightest.

Meanwhile, the crowd made their way into the hall as the auction began.

"It's funny that a live-in son-in-law can come to a place like this," Tristan mocked. "Is this somewhere you can even afford to be at?"

"Is there a rule saying that I can't be here if I don't have money?" Darryl laughed. He understood the man was Yvonne's suitor. Tristan was trying to flaunt his wealth in front of her. Naturally, he treated Darryl as an enemy.

"Haha! You're right. A poor man can come too," Tristan laughed, staring Darryl in the eye. "As you can tell, I'm a generous man. I don't mind lending you some cash if you want to buy something later on since you're a friend of Yvonne."

"Oh, really? That's so kind of you," Darryl grinned.

"Don't be embarrassed," Tristan responded. "A poor man like you lacks money. A rich man like me doesn't lack any. Why don't you call me 'Daddy' and Yvonne 'Mommy'? I'll pay you two million bucks right now. What do you say?"

Darryl smiled in response. Dax, who was standing beside him, could not hold it in any longer. "What's wrong with you?" he snapped.

Dax has always had a bad temper, especially now that someone was looking down on Darryl. He could not stand it any longer, wanting to teach Tristan a

lesson.

"Tsk tsk tsk. Even a live-in son-in-law has helpers, eh?" Tristan sneered. He was not afraid since he did not know who Dax Sanders was. He assumed that a friend of Darryl would be just as useless.

With that in mind, he inched his head towards him.

"C'mon, try hitting me. Hit here; this part of my head!" he pointed to himself. "If you dare to lay a finger on me, you'd better be prepared to spend the rest of your life in prison, you—"

Smack!

Dax threw a punch right on his head.

"F*ck!"

Tristan growled as his head swelled up.

"You better watch out!" Tristan yelled, "Once the auction is over, I want to see the two of you laying on the floor!

Dax punched him so hard that he almost fainted.

"Tristan, that's enough! Stop fooling around!" Yvonne interjected as she marched in her heels into the hall.

"Yvonne, wait up!" Tristan yelled.

The hall was as spacious as four basketball courts

combined. It was almost full as the attendees were of the highest class in the country.

Pearl sat in the front row as a representative of the Platinum Corporation. Darryl decided not to sit with her, instead choosing a random seat with Dax and his wife.

Yvonne walked over. "May I sit here?" she whispered.

There were two reasons why she wanted to sit there. Firstly, she wanted to seek his advice on auctioning the antiques. Secondly, she really missed him.

"Yvonne, the seats in front have a better view. Shall we go over there?" Tristan followed her swiftly. He glanced at Darryl out of the corner of his eye.

What was so attractive about this live-in son-in-law? What was it about Darryl that made Yvonne put down her pride, following him around like a student?

"No need. I'll sit here," Yvonne replied, unfazed.

Tristan had no choice but to sit by her side.

The seats were filled by almost a thousand attendees. It was indeed a grand auction.

Not long after, the event finally commenced. They

began with some ordinary jewels and antiques, with the starting price being only a few thousand bucks. As the heiress of an antique business, Yvonne was uninterested, having already seen them all.

Chapter 190

It was til the fifth item in the auction that took away the breath of the women in the hall. Their shining eyes were glued to the shoes on display, an exquisitely crafted pair of shoes made of crystal.

It was 'The Worship of Crystal'!

Yvonne clenched her fists tight immediately, her eyes glowing with excitement. She had always wanted a pair but was not able to get one. After finally coming face to face with them, she was determined to purchase it.

She could not bear to sit still as she focused on the shoes. After seeing the starting price of fifty million, her lit-up face turned dull from disappointment.

Fifty million as the asking price? Everyone knew the original price of this pair of heels was only thirty million, yet the starting price was fifty million here! Not only that, plenty of women seemed determined to grab the pair for themselves. The auction was going to be very competitive. However, Yvonne only brought sixty million in cash with her.

"Yvonne, I know you've had your eye on this for a

while. Don't worry, I'll help you get them today." Tristan knew that this was his chance.

With that said, he raised his hand.

"Fifty million! Mister Zink bids fifty million!"

The auctioneer was a gorgeous woman with slightly parted red lips as she smiled.

"Sixty million."

"Seventy million."

"Seventy-five million!"

"Eighty million!"

Within a few minutes, the price had soared to eighty million!

Huh?

Tristan was overwhelmed. What just happened? What was wrong with these women, paying eight million just for a stupid pair of heels? He promised to get Yvonne the shoes, so he had no choice but to bid again.

"Eight... Eighty-one million!" Tristan yelled through gritted teeth.

Hahaha!

The hall fell into an uproar of laughter after his

offer. It was only one million more than the previous bid!

Tristan had no choice. Although his family was considered wealthy, he could not burn the money just like that!

"Ninety million!" A short-haired woman shot up, raising the card in her hand.

"Ninety million! Miss Goyard here is biding ninety million!" The auctioneer yelled in excitement.

The auctioneer earned a commission per item sold. Although the commission was low, a small percentage of ninety million was a lot!

Meanwhile, the entire hall was in an uproar. In all honesty, 'The Worship of Crystal' looked immaculate, but how many women in the world could afford to wear them? There were only 99 pairs in the world. Not everyone could put them on.

Most of the guests dealt with businesses of their own. They were smart enough not to bid anymore after Miss Goyard's ninety million bid.

Tristan's face flushed a deep red. It was way beyond his budget! Seriously, 90 million?!

Yvonne understood Tristan and was touched.

"Tristan, I know you've tried," she comforted. "

Never mind, don't bother. I don't like it anymore."

Yvonne was obviously lying. She really liked the shoes, but she also knew Tristan could not afford it.

"Yvonne, if you don't like it anymore, I won't bid for it," Tristan sighed.

"Hahahahaha!"

Darryl could not restrain himself any further and burst out laughing. This kid was hilarious! Did he not claim to be super-rich? How did he back out so easily?

"What are you laughing at?!" Tristan roared. "At least I can afford ninety million. What about you? Can you pay up to ninety million? Darryl, as a live-in son-in-law, I can only imagine how humbling it is. Did you come here to feel alive since your existence is barely acknowledged at home?"

Tristan did not want to offend Darryl any further. After all, the punch from Dax still stung.

Yvonne was offended by Tristan. She was pleased when he was willing to bid the shoes for her, but now that he started mocking Darryl again, she was not impressed at all. Although Darryl was poor, he was a brave and sincere man.

"Tristan, if you keep behaving like this, I'll leave," she frowned.

Chapter 191

"Alright, I'll stop. This is just for his own good. This live-in son-in-law needs a little teaching, that' s all," replied Tristan.

Darryl ignored his remarks. He snickered and sent Pearl a text.

At the same moment, the auctioneer hammered his gavel, he yelled, "Ninety million for the lady over there! Going once, going twice, going-"

"One hundred million," Pearl interjected calmly as she raised her hand.

The crowd gasped. A hundred million for a pair of high heels? Is she mad? Are women all mad?

Everyone gawked at Pearl. She was graceful and elegant in a professional business outfit that made a few men swoon. There was a saying that goes 'A good horse deserves a good saddle'—it is only natural that such a gorgeous woman like Pearl deserves The Worship of Crystal!

Though Pearl seemed calm, she was trembling with excitement.

She received instructions from Darryl to bid for The

Worship of Crystal at the very last minute. Although she knew that the pair of heels are not meant for her, but to be able to bid for the President is equally exhilarating.

Pearl was unsure as to who The Worship of Crystal is for, but once the auction ended, she decided that she was going to try it on and take a couple of photos, which was more than enough for her.

"One hundred million, going once, going twice, going thrice, SOLD to Ms. Hahn!" The auctioneer could barely hide his excitement.

The crowd exploded into applause.

Yvonne bit her lip in disappointment. It looks like she will never be able to own a pair of The Worship of Crystal.

The next item up on the auction table was a small, intricate wooden box. When the auctioneer opened the box, everyone was stunned.

A dark Elixir pill sat in the box.

At such a high-end auction, the Elixir pill must be extraordinary.

"Everyone, I know that there are many cultivators among us today. So, may I present you the highlight of this auction!" said the auctioneer.

He continued, "This Elixir pill is called the Godly

pill. It can help cultivators break through their limits. If you are stuck at a Level Five Master, or a Level Five Master General, this Godly pill can help you break through! This pill is extremely rare and magical."

The crowd murmured in excitement. Everyone knew that the journey of a Cultivator is arduous and challenging. Many were stuck at a specific level for their entire life and could not ascend further. Hence, this Godly pill is not only extremely rare and magical but also priceless.

Dax was equally excited as well. Two years ago, he reached Level Five Master but has been stuck there ever since. According to his grandfather, some people peaked at Level Five Master and did not break through for the rest of their lives. However, if you're lucky, you could break through within three years. Sadly, the majority will remain stagnant.

The main reason Dax came to this auction was for this Godly pill.

'Godly pill?' Darryl squinted. He frowned.

Darryl was familiar with the process of the pill production, he even had a few left with him. Nevertheless, the one currently being sold looks different from the one he extracted, also the pill was lacking in some spiritual aura.

In such an exclusive auction, the pill could not be a fake. However, Darryl suspected that the Godly pill had been kept for too long, that it would not have any much of an effect anymore.

When Darryl thought about it, he obtained the manual of Infinite Elixir near an ancient graveyard. He believed that not many would know how to extract the pill these days. Therefore, the current pill being auctioned must have been made a long time ago and kept in storage for a few decades, or perhaps even centuries, thus the effect of the medicine must be long gone.

Chapter 192

The auctioneer hammered his gavel to get everyone' s attention.

He yelled, "The Godly pill, starting from one billion, let the bidding begin!"

The crowd clamored, trying to outbid one another. In mere minutes, the price of the pill went up to four billion!

'What the f*ck?' Darryl was shocked. He previously sold his Godly pill to Brandon at two billion, and to Zachariah—whom Brandon introduced—at three billion. There he thought he made a fortune.

Who knew that this pill could go much higher in an auction! The bidding has climbed to four billion, and there was no sign of it stopping anytime soon.

Dax was about to bid when Darryl pulled him back. He asked in confusion, "Darryl, what are you doing?"

Dax was determined on getting his hands on the pill no matter what. He does not want to be stuck at Level Five Master for his entire life! The Godly pill is such a rare item, that no matter how much money he spent, he must have it.

Seeing how Dax was all hot-headed, Darryl shook his head, "Dax, don't join in the crowd. The Godly pill is real, but its spiritual aura is all gone. It has lost its effect. Furthermore, the pill is one-third poison. The spiritual aura that balanced it out is gone, yet the poison remains. Consuming it will only bring more harm to you."

Spiritual aura gone?

Dax was bewildered. He sat down, looking astonished. He asked, "Darryl, how do you know?"

This friend of his constantly surprised him.

'I've made the pill myself countless times, of course I know,' thought Darryl.

He laughed, "I can't tell you much for now, you'll just have to trust me."

Dax nodded—he trusted Darryl with his life.

Tristan who sat next to them overheard their conversation. He burst into tears laughing. He pointed at Darryl and said, "Darryl, I find that you are one special person! You shamed me for not being able to get The Worship of Crystal, now you claim that the pill is fake! Were you tortured so badly at Lyndons that you've gone mad? Are you trying to cause trouble at this auction or are you just pretentious?"

Tristan's laughter caused quite a few people to look at him.

Darryl calmly replied, "What's that got to do with you, you can't even afford it." Tristan to Darryl was just a laughing stock.

Tristan was struck dumb. He saw that a few were looking at him, so he rebutted coldly, "Yeah I can't afford a few billion, but you? I bet after bidding for the The Worship of Crystal you're broke, I estimate you have about two hundred left? Haha!"

Tristan was not satisfied with his rebuttal. He shouted at the crowd, "Everyone! This live-in son-in-law claims that the Godly pill on stage is a fake!"

Everyone burst into laughter.

"This dude is a live-in son-in-law? What is happening these days that anyone can enter this auction?"

"Yeah, and he spews nonsense."

Looking at the commotion, a young man accompanied by a few guards approached them. The young man is Julian Roger, the auction coordinator.

He said, "Sir, please be quiet." Julian was polite but firm.

As the coordinator of this auction, he wanted to

ensure that the auction went as smoothly as possible.

Tristan shrugged, he said, "You're mistaken. I'm not the one making noises. Someone else is trying to cause trouble at your auction.

He pointed at Darryl, and said, "This guy, he said that your Godly pill is a fake. If you don't believe me, ask him."

At that point, Yvonne was a little panicked. She said to Julian apologetically, "Mr. Roger, I'm so sorry, we will be quiet. They are just joking. I'm sure the items at your auction are not counterfeit, how could they be?"

Chapter 193

Tristan was agitated as well, he said, "Yvonne, why are you defending him? He just said that the Godly pill was a fake. Don't bother covering up for him."

Julian frowned. He was in charge of maintaining order during the auction. If it were someone else, he would have escorted them out. However, this was Yvonne of the Young family. So he chose to believe her. He nodded with a smile and said, "Ok, if you are joking, please be quiet."

As Julian was about to leave, Darryl said mildly, " Mr. Roger, your Godly pill has lost its medicinal effect, you should not sell this."

The entire crowd turned toward Darryl.

This guy must be crazy. How is it possible that a huge, exclusive auction like this be selling an ineffective pill?

Julian stopped in his tracks, and asked, "What did you say?"

Yvonne was anxious. She tugged at Darryl's sleeve, and pleaded, "Darryl, please stop talking."

Yvonne trusted Darryl in identifying the

authenticity of antiques, but what does he know about cultivating? She managed to convince Julian just now, but then Darryl spoke up. This is one mess that was hard to clean up.

"I dare you to say it one more time!" Julian threatened.

Darryl stood up slowly, looked at Julian with a serious expression, and said, "I said that the Godly pill has lost its effect. If anyone consumed it, they might die."

Lost its effect?

Julian sneered, without offering any counterargument, he said coldly, "I don't care who you are, please leave at once!"

He will not allow anyone to cause any trouble during the auction.

Yvonne bit her lip restlessly, she pleaded with Julian, "Mr. Roger, I beg of you to calm down. He doesn't know much about cultivation, hence why he spoke out of turn. I apologize on his behalf, please don't kick him out."

"Ms. Young, I..." Julian faltered.

The Youngs are a family of antique collectors. The members of upper-class society give each other antiques as gifts, thus he constantly crossed paths

with the Youngs. If he does not heed Yvonne's plea, it might look bad on him in the future.

Also, he glanced at Dax Sanders sitting nearby. How is Darryl friends with him? The Sanders are also a highly respectable family that one cannot afford to offend.

Hence, Julian chuckled and left with the guards.

Seeing how the situation unfurled, Tristan yelled begrudgingly, "Yvonne, why are you pleading on his behalf? This guy is full of nonsense, he should be kicked out!"

Yvonne bit her lip. Although she liked Darryl, some words had to be said. In these sorts of high-end events, one has to choose their words wisely. If she were not here today, Darryl would not only be kicked out, he would also receive a beating.

At that thought, she whispered, "Darryl, please stop talking. This auction would not sell counterfeits. Roger's Auction has been held for the last few years and they have an outstanding reputation. If you were kicked out, who's going to help me identify antiques?"

It cannot be denied that Yvonne has a high EQ. Even though Julian was not happy with Darryl, he softened upon hearing her words. Truth be told, if Darryl were kicked out, he would not know when

would be the next time he would see her again.

Darryl did not speak further. The bidding for the Godly pill was as intense as ever. No one believed Darryl when he said the pill was ineffective.

"Five billion from this man over here!" the auctioneer yelled.

The entire crowd was astonished.

Five billion. How can a mere pill be sold for five billion?

All eyes were on the old man in the first row. He was wearing a Chinese jacket, with a dragon-headed walking stick by his side.

The man has a head full of white hair and seemed like he was in his sixties, yet he was full of spirit. Furthermore, he had a deep, powerful aura, clearly not someone ordinary.

'F*ck, a Godly pill is worth so much? I should produce more if I have the time,' thought Darryl.

"Five billion, going once, going twice, going thrice... SOLD! To the man in front," the auctioneer cheered.

There was first silence, then a round of rapturous applause.

The crowd were all secretly wondering how could this man spend five billion on a Godly pill—he must

be someone powerful. However, he does not seem familiar, nor like a famous person in the business world.

The auctioneer immediately handed the Godly pill to the old man.

The old man was full of excitement, he exclaimed, “ Ten years! It’s been ten years! I finally can break through from a Level Five Master General to a Master Marquis!”

Chapter 194

What? Level Five Master General?

The crowd gasped. This old man was a Level Five Master General? How powerful is he?

Megan was a Senior Sister in the Emei sect. She was stuck as a Level Five Master, it was with the help of Darryl's Godly pill that she broke through to Level One Master General.

There were a lot of cultivators, but most of them were at the Master level. The practice of cultivation is too challenging, even the best of them get stuck on a Level Five Master for the rest of their lives.

However, the old man was a Level Five Master General! It is amazing!

"Congratulations, Grandpa!" a young girl cheered.

Such a gorgeous young girl! Barely eighteen or nineteen, she was exceptionally beautiful in a long dress. This old man is extremely lucky to have a granddaughter like her.

The old man nodded in response, then popped the Godly pill into his mouth.

What? He could barely wait!

Everyone's eyes were on the old man now with eyes filled with envy. With the pill, the old man can break through to become a Master Marquis! This level is otherworldly! It was extremely rare to witness.

Darryl frowned. He was worried something might happen.

Tristan jeered loudly, "Darryl, didn't you say the pill was ineffective and dangerous? It seems that the old man is fine! A jealous person like you would say anything just because you can't own it."

A few people chuckled.

THUD!

Out of a sudden, the old man's face flushed as he fell to the ground.

"Grandpa!" the young girl screamed in shock.

The crowd descended into chaos. How could this happen? He should have broken through, why did he pass out instead?

Everyone was flabbergasted.

Someone pointed at Darryl and said, "He mentioned that the pill was ineffective..."

All eyes were now on Darryl. Indeed, he did say that!

Tristan was bewildered. He could not believe his own eyes. Could Darryl tell the future? Impossible! He was only a good-for-nothing live-in son-in-law. What does he know? This must be a coincidence.

Yvonne was trembling as well. She was in awe of Darryl. How many secrets does this man have?

"Someone, quick, please help!" the young girl kneeling by her grandpa screamed.

Everyone surrounded them but no one dared to help.

Julian approached nervously, he asked, "Miss, does your grandfather have any illnesses?"

"What did you say?" the young girl glared at him coldly. Her aura was frightening.

"My grandfather has never fallen sick. It must be the pill, don't you dare try to run away from this," she threatened.

Everyone was in awe, how could such a young girl have such a powerful aura!

Chapter 195

A young man in a suit approached the commotion.

"What's going on?" he asked. The man who inquired was Zack Roger, the eldest son of the Roger family. He managed the entire auction.

Upon seeing Zack, Julian let out a sigh of relief, and said, "Zack, this old man passed out. The young girl insists that it was due to the Godly pill that we auctioned off."

Zack frowned and laughed coldly at the girl. He said, "Miss, I understand how you feel right now, but the items that we auction are genuine."

Roger's Auction has been held for the past few years, and there were no issues then. If this man passed out, it must have been due to his health. Zack was the eldest son of the Roger family, he had no fear.

"Stop talking and help me save my Grandpa! If anything happens to him, I will finish off the Rogers!" the young girl said threateningly.

Though not loud, the entire crowd heard her clearly. They shuddered. How powerful is this seemingly cute young girl?

Zack laughed and said, "Miss, there is no use in threatening me. As the manager of the auction, I feel for your granddad, but there is nothing we can do but call for an ambulance. You want to threaten me, you're too young for-"

What?! Zack was suddenly speechless. He saw a gold token on the young girl's hand.

He was floored. He trembled with fear and apologized, "I'm so sorry! I'm obviously blind." It was a one-eighty change in attitude.

The young girl spoke coldly, "My grandfather is a Level Five Master General, he has a strong body. If anything were to happen to him today, I will make sure that your family disappears from the face of the earth!"

"Understood, fully understood." Zack nodded. He then yelled, "Doctor! Quick, save this man!"

What? Why did he change his attitude so quickly?

All eyes were on the young girl's token. It was made of pure gold with life-like humans and beasts carved on it.

Who was this young girl that made one of the Rogers kowtow?

Darryl frowned. He did not expect that in such an

auction, there would be many powerful people among them.

"Let me have a look." A petite silhouette with high heels approached Zack. It was Shelly Sullivan, the Chief of Staff of the hospital! She was known as Donghai City's miracle healer.

Zack had called a few medical staff to station at the auction in case of any medical emergencies. Since she was free today, she decided to come.

She was stationed backstage. She did not pay any attention to the auction, playing on her phone. It was when she heard someone yelling for a doctor, that she approached with a few other nurses.

Upon seeing Shelly, Darryl smiled.

"Thank god for you Chief Shelly! Please take a look at this old man!" Zack was extremely agitated.

With Shelly here, Zack felt slightly relieved. Otherwise, if anything happened to the old man, the Roger family would be unable to bear the responsibility!

Shelly used her stethoscope on the old man. After a minute or so, she frowned and said, "Looking at his situation, it should be due to the consumption of a bad drug. That resulted in a blockage in the brain which caused his body to stop functioning.

The young girl said nothing as she glared at Zack. This was obviously due to the Godly pill!

The crowd murmured in discussion, so it was the Godly pill after all!

Zack was almost in tears, he pleaded, "Chief Shelly, I beg of you to save this old man, please!"

If anything were to happen to the old man, his family was done for.

Shelly shook her head, she said, "This situation is fairly complicated. There are not enough medical supplies here and my hands are tied. The best way is to send him to the hospital, where I can operate on him, but...I'm afraid it is too late. In his current condition, the success rate of the surgery would be about 10 percent or so at best."

Chapter 196

We're finished!

Zack's head was spinning. He dared not look at the young girl.

Ten percent? That is almost as good as nothing! The Rogers are dead meat.

Suddenly, someone blurted, "This is too complicated, it would be useless sending him to the hospital, I'm afraid the chances are even less than 1 0 percent."

Shelly grimaced. Who would be so arrogant to speak that way? She was the only doctor here, her words should mean something. If the old man was not sent to the hospital, did you expect him to die here? At least there was hope at the hospital!

She turned around furiously to see who said that.

Darryl?!

She suddenly felt embarrassed. She was not wearing make-up today. After the last encounter with Darryl, she trusted him deeply as he made her feel safe. He must have his reasons for insisting not to send the old man to the hospital.

The crowd gasped and turned to Darryl. Who was this person? Could he be a famous person in the medical world? He also said that the pill was ineffective and dangerous, and it turned out to be true!

"Who are you?" asked the young girl. She glared at Darryl and asked flatly, "Since you advised me not to send my grandfather to the hospital, do you have a better solution?"

Darryl laughed, then approached the old man. After some observations, he said, "Doctor Shelly was right, your grandfather has a blockage in his brain, but his condition is a little special."

He added, "Hospital surgery is useless because the ineffective Godly pill still has its poison in it. The poison affects the flow of the blood, furthermore, the equipment at the hospital won't be able to detect it.

"Your grandfather consumed the pill not long ago. The poison has not spread to the rest of his organs yet. So my advice is to put pressure on his Way of the Spirit Acupoint and the Transporter Acupoint, to prevent the spread of the poison. At the same time, use your cultivator's Internal Energy to force the poison out," Darryl advised with great detail.

The crowd started murmuring in discussion. This

Lyndons' live-in son-in-law, does he really know what he was talking about? Though he correctly predicted the ineffectiveness of the pill. If he was truly that great, why was he a live-in son-in-law?

Tristan walked up to Darryl and sneered, "Darryl, according to you, our current high-tech medical equipment is of no use, only you can save them? My, my, you must be a miracle healer. In that case, hospitals should close their doors and anyone with health issues should just find you instead."

The young girl did not react to Darryl's advice. She understood every word he said, but she dared not risk it. She looked at Darryl worriedly, and said, " The Way of the Spirit Acupoint and the Transporter Acupoint are crucial pressure points. If I put pressure on both points at the same time, the blood and energy flow will be messed up."

Darryl chuckled gently, "I know, that's why you'll just have to trust me." Darryl knew what he was talking about. The Infinite Elixir manual not only described the steps necessary to produce assorted Elixirs, but the manual also provided the antidotes for ingesting the wrong elixirs as well.

In the case of an ineffective Godly pill, things like what would happen when ingesting it, and the solutions to cure such a scenario was clearly written in the manual. Darryl knew about this before

approaching the young girl. If not he would not have taken the risk as well, after all, it has to do with life and death.

The young girl took a long deep breath, then said, "I 'll put things out on the table first—if anything were to happen to my grandfather, I'll make you and your entire family regret ever being born on this earth."

'...Why does such a beautiful girl like her like to throw out threats unprovoked? Can't she be more mellow?'

"It's completely up to you. If you do not want to, feel free to send him to the hospital." Darryl shrugged and laughed.

'Bloody hell, I'm doing you a favor by helping you save your grandfather, yet you threatened me,' he thought.

"You...!" The young girl's face flushed. She was fuming.

Chapter 197

The young girl's face darkened. Her grandfather has only a ten percent chance of survival in the hospital, how could she risk it? She glared at Darryl, then approached her grandfather and prepared to follow Darryl's advice.

At this moment, Yvonne pulled on her hand to stop her. She turned to Darryl and asked, "Darryl, are you sure? This has to do with life and death." Yvonne was immensely worried.

Darryl laughed, he said, "It will be fine. My solution will yield a much greater result than at a hospital."

The young girl then crouched next to her grandfather. She applied pressure on the Way of the Spirit Acupoint with her left hand, and on her right, she did the same for the Transporter Acupoint. At the same time, she cultivated her Internal Energy, trying to flush the poison out.

The crowd was silent, but many cultivators were shaking their heads in disapproval. They thought that Darryl was full of nonsense! They agreed with the young lady, that putting pressure on the two Acupoints was a huge taboo. If it was not done well, it could kill. These two crucial points should not be

simply touched unless one has a death wish!

The most anxious person in the room was Zack. He felt like his heart was about to explode. If the old man was not cured, not only will he not be able to settle this, his entire family would be in danger too. He found it strange that an Elixir pill like that could be so harmful.

He clenched his fist tightly, silently praying that the old man would wake up. There was no other way —he would have less than a ten percent chance of survival if they sent him to the hospital now. Darryl' s method was the only chance of reviving the old man.

After some time, the old man's facial color came back. He started breathing normally.

There was a collective gasp among the cultivators— it worked?

Though the old man was not awake yet, it seemed like the danger had passed. The young girl let out a sigh of relief, she walked toward Darryl and nodded, "Thank you. May I know your name?" Although Darryl saved her grandfather and she was grateful for it, her tone was still ice cold. That was the extent of the pride that was embedded deep in her bones.

"Well, he got bloody lucky! Saved someone through

trial and error!" Tristan jabbed.

Dax—who was quiet all these while—could take it no longer, he yelled with rage, "Bloody f*ck are you done or are you crazy? The old man was saved, yet here you are with your useless commentary. F*ck off, you annoy me!"

Dax felt that Tristan was like an annoying fly buzzing. Tristan fumed with rage, he replied, "Who are you calling crazy!" He had not paid back for Dax punching him previously.

Dax said no more, he flipped his switchblade and approached Tristan.

Nancy, his wife, held him back. She said, "Dear, don' t get angry, calm down." Nancy knew about Dax's temper. If he does not agree with someone, he uses his knife to intimidate them. Although, if Dax were not so brutal, he would not be firmly seated at his current status.

"Ok, alright, you watch out, you, watch out..." Tristan was scared half to death, he lost all his sharpness in his tone.

Witnessing this scene, Darryl laughed but said nothing.

Zack approached Darryl and said, "Brother, I am grateful to you. My name is Zack Roger, it was

thanks to you that we averted the crisis just now."

Zack extended his arm out to Darryl, and said, "If you don't mind, let's be friends? Call me Zack."

"Sure," Darryl replied and shook his hand firmly. Darryl and Zack hit it off at once, he felt that Zack was a man who wore his heart on his sleeve.

Darryl could no longer hide his curiosity, he asked, " Zack, who was that grandfather and granddaughter duo just now? Why did you, upon seeing her token ..."

Chapter 198

Darryl barely finished his question when Zack hushed him with a finger to his mouth. He then pulled Darryl to a quiet, secluded spot and said, " Those two were not just any ordinary guests. Darryl, do you know of the Eternal Life Palace Sect?"

Eternal Life Palace?

There are two huge cults, one is the Grandmaster Heaven, the other was the Eternal Life Palace.

The Eternal Life Palace sect was equally as powerful as the Grandmaster Heaven. They have a few hundred thousand followers. It was said that the main members of the Eternal Life Palace were all high levels of cultivators, and they were extremely mysterious and ruthless. Even among the Six Orthodox Sects and cultivators, they are a force to be reckoned with.

So the grandfather and granddaughter were members of the Eternal Life Palace.

Zack took a deep breath then continued, "Those two were not ordinary members. If I am not mistaken, they were very high up in the ranks as their token was pure gold. The tokens of ordinary

members are all in silver."

Darryl nodded as he listened. As they spoke, the auction came to an end. Zack casually picked up a vase, handed it to Darryl, and said, "Darryl, please accept this vase as a thank you gift. I still have matters to attend to so please excuse me."

Darryl accepted the gift. The vase was used in the palace during the Ming Dynasty, estimated to be worth around two million or so.

Darryl walked to his car, nonchalantly put the vase in the back, then closed the car door.

He only got it back from the Automobile Sales Service shop after Shelly wrecked his car previously. Though recently fixed, the steering wheel felt a little heavy. It seems that the car needed servicing.

As he left the parking area, he stumbled upon Yvonne and Tristan. Of course, Kingston Young was next to them.

Tristan was stunned at Darryl's car. He then knocked on the window and jeered, "I see you've taken your wife's car out for a ride."

Darryl replied with no pretense, "I'm sorry to disappoint you, but this car is mine. I did not want to show off, so I got something more low profile like the Audi R8."

'F*ck me, an Audi R8? Low profile?' thought Tristan.

Darryl's voice was loud and clear, it garnered a few onlookers.

Kingston sighed, he felt that Darryl could not be saved. The entire city knew that Darryl was a live-in son-in-law, yet he was still so boastful. Such a pompous prick, how is he good enough for his daughter?

"Tsk tsk, you sure are one cocky prick. If you have so much money, why did you not buy a single thing during the auction just now?" jeered Tristan.

Just at the same moment, Pearl approached Darryl. She said with respect, "President, this is the Worship of Crystal that we bought." She handed the pair of shoes to Darryl. She snuck a few photos wearing the pair of heels just now, that was enough for her.

Darryl nodded and replied, "Ok, you head back to the office, I still have matters to attend to."

"Yes, President," Pearl acknowledged politely then left.

What? Is that not Ms. Hahn that bid for The Worship of Crystal just now? Did she call Darryl President?

Tristan's head was buzzing at this revelation. He looked like he just saw a ghost. How is it possible that a live-in son-in-law like him was the President of Platinum Corporation?

Tristan's face blushed with a mixture of embarrassment and rage.

"You...you are the president of the Platinum Corporation?" Yvonne asked lightly, her eyes sparkled.

How is this possible? Darryl has never mentioned this before! Everyone assumed he was just a useless good-for-nothing, but he's a president of a corporation?!

Darryl laughed nonchalantly and replied, "It's nothing to be surprised of. This company used to be owned by the Darbys' but the only difference now is I've been kicked out of the clan."

At that, he handed her the pair of Worship of Crystal, and said, "For you."

"For me?" Yvonne's heart was beating furiously. She blushed.

Kingston's face was drained of color as well. He was giving this pair of heels that cost one hundred million to his daughter?

Chapter 199

Hugging the shoebox containing The Worship of Crystal, Yvonne trembled. She felt that everything was better with Darryl around. The Worship of Crystal represented her current feelings toward Darryl—as clear as crystal.

As her father was next to her, she resisted the urge to hug and give Darryl a kiss. She replied softly, " Darryl, since you've given me this, let me buy you dinner! The two are of a huge difference, you won't say no to me right?" She was right, the shoes cost a hundred million, how much does dinner cost?

However, her main purpose in buying Darryl dinner has more to do with spending more time with him than thanking him. As long as she could spend another hour with him, she would be happy.

Darryl thought for a while, then laughed and nodded, "Ok!"

Since he currently had nothing to do, he did not mind accompanying her for a while.

Just when they were about to leave, Darryl's phone rang.

Who would be such a killjoy?

He grumbled and fished his phone out—it was Megan.

"Officer Castello, what's up?" He picked his phone up and asked.

"My good brother, are you free? I need your help, urgently." Megan said softly.

Calling him a good brother? Darryl has goosebumps. What was happening? The last time he made her call him brother, it took such great effort, why was she calling him a good brother so casually now?

Darryl teased back, "My good sister, what sort of help do you so urgently need ?"

Hearing Darryl tease her, she blushed and bit her lip. What was with her today? Why did she call him a good brother? She was a high ranking officer, why was she like a child in front of Darryl?

Megan tried to calm herself down, then replied quickly, "It's important, I'm waiting for you at a cafe, we'll talk more when I see you." Then she hung up.

A few seconds later, Megan sent her current location to Darryl.

Darryl sighed. He looked conflicted. He told Yvonne,

"I can't even get a moment of peace. Someone is buying coffee, let's go together."

Yvonne bit her lip, she seemed hesitant, then asked, "Who was that?"

Darryl and the caller sound close, calling each other good brothers and sisters, but she does not know who that was, only that she was a lady, and it was definitely not Lily. She felt slightly disappointed, yet curious about who the caller was.

Darryl initially wanted to tell Yvonne that it was Megan, but sensing a shift in her mood, he held back. He smiled gently and said, "Just a friend."

He thought, 'Why do I suddenly care what she thinks?"

Yvonne replied, "Then I won't bother you. Your friend seemed rather urgent on the phone."

Darryl said, "Ok, let me send you home then."

Yvonne is so thoughtful, anyone would be lucky to marry her in the future.

However, Yvonne was anxious. She bit her lip and thought, 'Why is he sending me home! I did not mean what I said! I do want to see who is so close to you! Don't you know that women are ambiguous creatures?'

While driving, Megan sent a message that said, "My

good brother, please hurry, it's rather urgent."

...

The Darbys' mansion.

In the secret chamber, Master Darby was seated there with a smile.

Chapter 200

There were two cups of tea, fragrance wafting in the air.

A man sat opposite Drake. The man looked like he could be in either his thirties or his fifties. Wearing a Taoist robe, with a topknot on his head, this man seemed just, yet there was an ambiguous devilish aura to him as well.

This man was Brian Cunningham, also known as Priest Brian to others.

"My fellow priest, it is a huge honor to have you grace us with your presence," Drake said, lifting a cup to him in salute.

Two days ago, Drake sent a message to Brian. He expected Brian to arrive a few days later only for him to turn up unexpectedly the next day.

Brian smiled and waved his hands, he said, "With our friendship, there is no need to be polite. What urgent matters have you summoned me here for?"

Drake took a deep breath, then said, "I want the entire Darby clan to start cultivating." As he said that, he fumed with rage at Darryl for the commotion he caused previously.

Brian's eye sparkled, he laughed and said, "Do continue."

Drake smiled bitterly, he said, "My fellow priest, the thing is, I have a favor to ask of you. As you know, to be a cultivator, you need the Spiritual Elixir. I have a few hundred family members in the Darby clan, hence I'd need a few hundred pills of the Spiritual Elixir..."

He faltered, then continued, "My fellow priest, if you were to help me obtain the Spiritual Elixirs, I will do anything that you ask of me."

Brian pondered for a while with gleaming eyes. He replied slowly, "Alright, I will help you on one condition."

Drake said joyfully, "Anything!" As long as the entire family could practice cultivation, he would agree to anything.

Brian laughed, he said, "Don't agree so hastily, this thing that I ask of you is not that simple."

Drake frowned.

Brian took a sip of tea, then he said, "I want the entire Darby clan to join the Eternal Life Palace sect."

What? Eternal Life Palace sect?

Drake was stunned. The Eternal Life Palace sect was one of the two huge cults, they have a reputation for committing evil. The complete opposite of the Six Orthodox sects. Furthermore, Drake is a follower of the Shaolin sect, one of the Six!

Drake exclaimed, "Aren't you the Elder of the Wudang sect? Wh...why do you want me to join the Eternal Life Palace?

Brian chuckled, he said nonchalantly, "I have long retired from the Wudang sect! All these years, working hard for the sect, but what do I get in return? Truth be told, I've joined the Eternal Life Palace for quite some time now, I just didn't get the chance to tell you."

Drake suddenly came to a realization, yet his mood was still gloomy.

"Do take a few days to consider, I still have matters to attend to, so I'll make a move. I'll be back in a few days and you can let me know then." Brian stood up and smiled at Drake. He continued, "Only if the entire Darby clan joins the Eternal Life Palace sect will I provide you with the Spiritual Elixir."

Drake nodded, then sent Brian off. As Brian left, Drake was in deep thoughts. If he and his family joined the Eternal Life Palace, it would mean that he turned his back on the Shaolin sect, and this was

a huge taboo in the cultivating realm. However, only Brian could help Drake, if Drake did not agree to Brian's condition, the entire family would not be able to start practicing cultivation.

...

Island Cafe, one of Donghai City's famous cafes.

The coffee here was delicious, the atmosphere was great as well. That combination led to any couples choosing to come here for dates.

The cafe was currently full, but everyone spoke in hushed tones. When Darryl arrived, Megan had been waiting for him for quite some time.

"Over here!" Megan signaled to Darryl.

Megan looked extremely gorgeous today, she was wearing bell-bottom jeans that hugged her tight figure.

"Excuse me, what are you ogling at," Megan said with displeasure. She has never met anyone who gawked at her so directly before.

"Nothing, nothing." Darryl dismissed. He asked, " What's up?"

"My good brother, I need a favor from you," Megan replied impatiently.

She did not intend to call him my good brother—it

was a Freudian slip.

Chapter 201

"My good younger sister, why are you so sweet today?" Darryl said as he laughed. He asked, "What can I help you with?"

Megan bit her lip and whispered, "Have...have you heard of the Eternal Life Palace sect?"

Eternal Life Palace? The grandfather and granddaughter at the auction just now were from this sect. They were one of the two main cults.

"Yes, I've just heard of it. What happened?" Darryl asked.

"I need you to help me investigate it," Megan replied softly.

Donghai City was in chaos recently. A few days ago, the Grandmaster Heaven cult set up a branch here, followed by the Eternal Life Palace. With the two huge cults setting up their presence here in Donghai City, this city would soon be going to the dogs.

Thank goodness the Grandmaster Heaven had simmered down recently. Hall Master Skyler Burr has not been seen for many days now.

Unfortunately, the Eternal Life Palace sect has been

stepping out of bounds. After setting up a branch, they have been doing all sorts of evil and outrageous acts like using humans to refine elixirs!

The leaders of the police ordered, if they could not get rid of the Eternal Life Palace in a month, everyone would be laid off.

The police have been busy investigating them ever since, but they could not even locate a branch of the sect.

Darryl smiled warily, he said, "If the police can't make any progress, what good could I do?"

Megan was a little anxious, she replied, "We caught a member of the Eternal Life Palace sect yesterday, his name is Chester Wilson. We believe that he is of a high rank in the cult. Unfortunately, no matter how we interrogated him, he kept his mouth shut. So in the end we could do nothing but lock him up in prison."

Megan took a sip of her coffee, then continued, "I've thought about sending someone into prison to get close to Chester and see what we can extract out from him, so I thought of you!"

What? Undercover in prison? What Megan meant was that he had to gain Chester's trust as a prisoner? Was that a joke?

Darryl almost stood up, he shook his head furiously

and said, "No, no, you think too highly of me. Asking me to go undercover? I'd rather fight him. Furthermore, you have so many officers below you, why don't you pick one of them instead of me?"

Life was good outside, why should he suffer in prison? The idea spoke of madness!

Megan, as anxious as Darryl, gritted her teeth and pleaded, "Please, my good brother, I beg of you as a good younger sister, just help me this once, please?"

Megan did not understand why she had set her eyes on Darryl. Since the start of this plan, the first person that came to mind was Darryl. Previously, Darryl took on tens of grave robbers alone. At the bank, he fought off the robbers alone as well, shielding a student from a gunshot, and rescued a girl from a hostage situation. He caught a shark in the sea, and handled a robbery on the bus—who could compare with him in terms of bravery, intelligence, or reflexes?

"Alright, alright! I will help you this one time! Don' t ask me for favors like this the next time," Darryl agreed reluctantly.

He thought he would have a date with a pretty officer, who knew it would turn out this way!

"Yes!" Megan nodded cheerfully.

Darryl asked cheekily, "What do I get in return then?"

The mission was not easy at all—he had to get close to a member of the Eternal Life Palace sect! At the auction, the young girl's token was enough to scare Zack Roger half to death, which showed how powerful and terrifying the Eternal Life Palace sect was.

Megan laughed and replied, "I've prepared ten million as a reward, as long as you accomplish the mission, the ten million is yours, how about that?"

In Megan's eyes—though Darryl is a nice person—he was only a live-in son-in-law, he should be in need of money.

Darryl shook his head, the amount did not motivate him one bit. He said, "You want me to risk my life for a mere ten million?"

Megan looked down and bit her lip. She thought for a while, then said, "My good brother, the ten million did not come easily, I had to fight for it. How about this, if you agree to help me and if you succeed, I'll do anything..."

Looking at her blushing, Darryl laughed, he asked cheekily, "Anything?"

Megan nodded immediately, but then she saw

Darryl's sly expression, she quickly added, "Of course, nothing too inappropriate!"

"Ok! What do I have to do to get myself in prison?" asked Darryl.

Megan laughed, "Oh my good brother, I've arranged everything. Only both of us know about you being undercover, no one else. So we have to act like it as well! I need you to steal a couple of phones next door, my colleagues will be here soon to arrest you."

...What?

Chapter 202

'F*ck, I've never stolen anything before,' thought Darryl solemnly.

"Why theft? Thievery is so degrading!" Darryl said sharply. Truth be told, ever since he was young, Darryl despised petty thieves. You have a set of hands and legs, why take something that was not yours?

Megan looked at Darryl defenselessly, she replied, " Do you have any better ideas?"

Darryl smiled slyly, he sized Megan up and said, " How about me attacking a policewoman, or even touching her inappropriately..."

Megan blushed, she glared at Darryl and said, "I'm being serious!"

"Fine, I'll stop with the jokes. Let me think of another way. I want to enter prison with dignity. I heard that the inmates all look down on thieves," said Darryl seriously.

Megan nodded. "What other ways then?" she asked.

Darryl offered a few suggestions such as beating someone up or a hit and run. Megan rebuffed all of

those. In the end, he could only reluctantly agree to steal.

Darryl then texted Pearl a message, instructing her to manage the company on his behalf, as he would not be around for some time. He also gave Pearl his account and password to Longya Live Streaming Platform, instructing Pearl to look after Lily through it as well.

When he finished, he begrudgingly got up and headed to the Apple Store next door.

"Someone is stealing phones!"

"Quick...quick catch him! Thief!"

A few seconds later, Darryl rushed out of the store with two new phones in his hands. A few store employees chased after him.

That caused quite a commotion, everyone was looking at Darryl, yet no one wanted to get involved. Soon, a few policemen caught Darryl, arrested him to the floor, and escorted him away in a police car. This entire scene lasted no longer than five minutes.

Megan could not help but laugh out loud in the cafe. Who knew that Darryl had a knack for acting? He gave the performance of a lifetime stealing those phones. She hoped that once he entered prison, he

would be able to get some info out of Chester Wilson. With that, she left the cafe.

Darryl was immediately sent to prison. He was ordered to change into the prison uniform. He could see that the inmates were having their free time now. A few huge blokes were playing basketball. Nine out of ten of them had tattoos and scars all over their bodies.

...

Donghai City First Hospital.

First-class ward. Daniel Darby has been recuperating. He could finally sit up and was feeling energetic.

Shelly came to visit the couple, bringing along freshly cut apples for them.

A few policemen pushed open the door. The leader among them asked, "Are you the parents of Darryl Darby?" He handed them a file with a professional smile.

Daniel and Luna were slightly confused as to why the policemen were here.

Shelly approached them and answered on their behalf, "Yes, there are. May I know what's the matter?"

The officer nodded, then replied, "Your son was

caught stealing phones from the Apple Store. He was apprehended by us. We've come to inform you, that's all."

What? Shelly thought this was a joke. How could Brother Darryl steal? This must be a huge prank.

"You must have gotten the wrong person, Brother Darryl would never steal!" Shelly exclaimed.

The police asked, "Are you his younger sister?"

"No...no I'm not." Shelly blushed.

Chapter 203

"I'm not his sister but I know him well. He would never do such a thing!" Shelly said gently.

"But the facts are facts. He did commit theft," said the police. He turned to Darryl's parents and said, " Your son really did steal some phones."

The undercover action was highly secretive, no other person should know about this. Hence, according to their standard operating procedures, they needed to inform family members.

Luna tensed as she said in disbelief, "Darryl stealing phones? Impossible. He is the president of a corporation and is highly successful. Why would he do such a thing? This has to be a mistake."

Daniel—on the bed—was flustered. He chimed in, " Yes! This must be a mistake. Darryl despised thieves ever since he was young. Why would he become one?"

The police handed them the file and said professionally, "That I wouldn't know, but if you think we got the wrong person, please have a look at the file."

Luna and Daniel were floored when they saw the

photo of Darryl wearing an inmate uniform.

...

The Lyndons.

Lily was in the living room, she wore a demure long dress, seated in front of her computer, singing on her live stream. She looked exceptionally charming.

Samantha smiled widely as she accompanied Lily. Lily has garnered many views on her live stream platform recently. She started off with a few hundred fans and in just a mere few days, the number increased to a few hundred thousand! The speed of growth in viewers was a first for the live streaming platform.

Just now, Lily's mysterious fan Hill appeared. He sent her 'gifts' worth a few hundred thousand that caused Lily's live stream to become so popular, it appeared on the main page of the app.

Lily was extremely excited, she wanted to thank that person. Sadly, every time he finished sending ' gifts', he would go offline immediately.

"Lily, it looks like you've got a fan that loves you very much. He must be the boss of a huge company. You must maintain a good relationship with him," Samantha said joyfully.

Lily nodded, if it weren't for Hill, she would not

have earned so much money.

"One more thing, I realized that even though you have not appeared on your live stream for a few days, you are still equally popular. Longya Live Stream Platform keeps on recommending you as well, why?" asked Samantha.

Lily replied cheerily, "I guess it's because I'm pretty?"

Both of them chuckled. Samantha added, "It must be! My daughter is the prettiest."

RING!

At that moment, Lily's phone rang. Looking at the caller number, Samantha and Lily looked at each other in bewilderment.

110? Emergency number? It must be a scam call.

"It must be a scammer! Let's see what I'll do to this caller," Samantha said, then answered the call on loudspeaker.

"Hello, is this Ms. Lily Lyndon? I'm calling from the City Police." A man's voice came through.

They knew her name! Looks like was not a scam after all.

"I am, what is the matter?" Lily answered.

"Your husband Darryl Darby has been arrested for

his crimes," the police officer explained clearly.

What?

Lily trembled, she asked anxiously, "What did he do?"

"He stole two iPhones. When he was apprehended, Darryl confessed immediately and was forgiven by the store owner. However, he has been sentenced to two months of jail time for his crime. As his wife, we have an obligation to inform you," explained the police officer, then he hung up.

Samantha could not help but laugh. She said, "Lily, look at this loser! See what he's done now! Stealing iPhones? Such a disgrace! A man like him has fully functioning limbs yet he steals? I tell you, leaving him was the greatest decision you've ever made."

"But..." Lily bit her lip. She could not believe that Darryl would do such a thing. However, it was the police that called, how could it be fake then?

Chapter 204

Prison.

The inmates have three periods of free time daily, all of them after meals. There were a few huge blokes playing basketball on the court. Though mediocre at it, they were equally excited just to be playing.

Those who were not playing basketball would cheer them on at the side. Except for one person. He would sit by the court, and be engrossed in reading.

He looked like he was in his thirties or forties. With his hair parted down the middle, he was as geeky could be.

When Darryl came in, he was immediately interested in this person due to the fact that he chose to read instead of taking part in other activities during his free time. Darryl secretly took a peek at the photo that Megan gave him of Chester, turns out that the guy reading was his target!

That cannot be true, the person that Megan described is a high ranking member of the Eternal Life Palace sect, he should look extremely powerful. Whereas the guy in front of him had a weak aura,

perhaps only a Level One Master?

Furthermore, this Chester Wilson guy looked geeky and weak! The book he was reading was...what?! Sun Tzu's Art of War?! Who reads Sun Tzu's Art of War in prison?

Darryl thought that was funny, as he contemplated on how best to approach him, a ball hit Chester's head.

BAM!

This hit almost made Chester pass out. The book and his specs flew off.

"Oh no, I'm so sorry, the ball slipped from my hand," said a huge guy sarcastically.

The huge guy looked familiar to Darryl. Could it be... Trent Young?! Darryl almost laughed out loud. The person was Trent Young! He took advantage of Lily the last time, so he got a beating from Darryl. Trent then got convicted for causing trouble and was sent to prison.

'Haha! He's still not out yet?!' thought Darryl amusingly.

Even though Trent Young was the owner of a Martial Club, he was pretentious and liked to hurt others. He was not a stranger to prison.

The prison was a dog eat dog world where the

strong preyed on the weak—you might be rich or powerful yet you still had to follow its rules when you were jailed. However, Trent Young was an exception because he could fight. He garnered quite a number of followers, so he was extremely arrogant in prison.

At that moment, Trent had not noticed Darryl. He only had Chester in his eyes—that nerd has been in prison for a few days yet he still did not know the rules! How dare he not kowtow to Trent, the prison gang leader. Acting all high and mighty, pretending as if he was a master?

Seeing Chester read by the basketball court made Trent fume with rage. How dare he treat the basketball court like a library? Hence Trent threw the ball at Chester out of spite.

Chester saw gold stars. He crouched on the floor looking for his glasses. Just as he found them, Trent picked up the ball and threw it at him again.

BAM!

The ball hit Chester squarely in the face.

Chester stood up and said coldly, "What's your problem?" He fumed with rage. Though a high-rank member in the Eternal Life Palace sect, he was, unfortunately, caught and thrown into prison. How was it possible that he was being bullied by an

ordinary person? He just wanted to spend his time in prison reading.

"What's my problem? Are you blind? Can't you see that I am playing basketball? Seeing you reading here really affected my vibes," Trent said unreasonably.

He then looked at the book on the floor and sneered, "My, my, Sun Tzu's Art of War. Looks like someone is educated. What are you going to do with it? Lead an army into war? We are now living in a high tech era. This book is way out of date, idiot."

Trent pointed to the ball and said coldly, "Pick the ball up, then take your book and f*ck off!"

Chester was furious, but he dared not say a word.

Chapter 205

"Are you deaf? Didn't you hear what our leader said? Pick up the bloody ball! You hear me?"

"How dare you glare at Trent! Are you looking for trouble?"

A few of Trent's followers glared threateningly at Chester, ready to attack him at a moment's notice.

Upon witnessing the scene, Darryl let out a cold laugh. He could no longer take it that those people are so openly bullying Chester. Chester did nothing wrong.

Trent turned around and met Darryl's eyes. He was shocked, then he fumed with rage, "Motherf*cker, it's you?! Why do I keep seeing you!" He rushed forward to fight Darryl. Bloody hell, it was because of Darryl that he ended up in prison. Now that he met him here, he was going to kill him!

He was about to hit Darryl when he stopped abruptly.

'F*ck, what is happening? Wasn't he only a Level Two Master previously? How has he leveled up to Level Four Master in such a short time? I can't beat him alone,' thought Trent.

He waved his hands to his followers and commanded, "Brothers, let's beat him up together!"

A few men surrounded Darryl. In prison, they were Trent's followers. Whatever Trent said, they followed without question.

Darryl calmly said, "I just came in, I do not want to cause trouble, please don't force my hand."

At that moment, Chester picked up his specs and book. He stood there and looked at Darryl. How was this man still so calm despite being outnumbered. He must be a strong man!

Darryl noticed Chester's gaze but did not react. Megan had warned him that Chester was sly and very perceptive. To not cause suspicion, Darryl could not show off his mastery.

At the same time, a prison guard approached them and screamed, "What are you all doing? Do you want to extend your punishment here?"

Darryl's eyes sparkled when he saw that the prison guard was a female. She was pretty good looking.

"Officer, we were not fighting, haha! We were only fooling around!" Trent laughed.

In prison, no one dares to be too presumptuous.

The officer glared at them, turned around, and left. She muttered, "Don't bully the newcomer." She knew that this new inmate, Darryl, was a thief. Thieves were looked down upon in prison. That Darryl would definitely be bullied, especially by Trent and his followers. 'He is going to have a bad time here.' she sighed.

"Brother Trent, what are we going to do with that Darryl?" a follower asked during lunch.

Trent replied coldly, "Don't worry. We will defeat Darryl through Chester. If Darryl sees Chester being bullied, he won't be so arrogant anymore!"

"This is a good idea!"

"Trent you are amazing!" The followers looked up to Trent a lot. Whatever he did was perfect in their eyes.

After lunch, during a toilet break. Darryl and Chester were peeing, when Trent came with his men. They surrounded Chester and peed on his pants, it was extremely disgusting.

Chester was exceedingly enraged, but he held back. Sadly, this was not the end of it.

During dinner, when Trent passed by Chester, he stopped and spit in Chester's food. All the inmates witnessed this.

Food in prison was extremely precious. If you did not eat, you would starve.

Chapter 206

Chester's face twitched intensely. He could take it no longer. He stood up, glared at Trent with bloodshot eyes, and said, "We all live under the same roof, what's the matter with you?!"

He had never suffered like this at the Eternal Life Palace sect, who would dare bully a high-rank member like him?

"Wow, the nerd is angry, and I dare say a little snobbish!" Trent jeered.

Then he slapped Chester across the face.

Slap!

It was not too big a hit, but everyone heard it.

Chester clenched his fist. He stayed silent for almost a minute, then with murderous intent said, " When I leave this place, I will kill your entire family." He swept Trent and his men with his deadly glare.

Everyone gasped. This nerdy weakling's threats were actually terrifying.

Trent came to his senses, spat on the floor, and said, "Bloody f*ck, are you threatening me? You b*

stard!"

He rushed forward and was about to hit Chester when the female prison guard stopped him. Then, he decided to leave things be. Until midnight.

It was bedtime, and the lights were off. Darryl was about to sleep when he heard footsteps. He opened his eyes slowly—he saw Trent and his men headed toward Chester's bed, and in their hands were thick hemp ropes. They were going to kill him.

Indeed, what the nerd said this afternoon was a little frightening, as it seemed like he was not joking. A nerdy guy like him, being able to throw threats like those made Trent worried. Thus he decided to get rid of him once and for all. Fighting in prison was a norm since there was no one to keep the order.

Trent pounced at Chester. Choking him with the rope, he said, "F*cker, weren't you great at threatening? I'd like to see how you do that now! I'm going to kill you first!"

Chester was gasping for air, face flushed. He struggled to move as Trent was stronger than him. If it went on any longer, he would have died within a minute!

Darryl smiled to himself on the bed, he waited for a while before rescuing Chester. He counted to 45,

then stood up lazily.

"Please keep your voices down, people are sleeping," Darryl said with a smile.

Chester's eyes were already rolled over, showing only the whites.

"Darryl, f*ck off, this has nothing to do with you," Trent threatened.

Darryl shook his head, he said, "Guys, you have been bullying him the entire day, yet you still don't want to give it a rest? I can't take it any longer."

Darryl then served two punches.

BAM! BAM!

The two simple punches hit two huge men, both passed out.

F*ck? How is he so powerful?

Trent—not paying attention to Chester anymore—ordered, "Get him! He's only one guy, what are you all waiting for! Go!"

The group of men rushed forward.

Darryl smiled calmly, then rushed to meet them as well. His punches were like cannonballs. Within half a minute, the group of them were on the floor, howling in pain.

"Darryl, you...you..." Trent said as his sweat flowed profusely. His face was bruised. How did this live-in son-in-law get so powerful in a few days? He was only a Level Two Master previously, now he was a Level Four Master?!

Upon hearing the commotion, the female guard came to the scene at once. She was stunned. Trent was defeated? She rubbed her eyes to make sure she was not hallucinating. Trent was a martial arts champion, no one dared to offend him here. How could he have been beaten up so badly?

The prison guard looked at Darryl with disbelief! This person was no ordinary thief!

"I dare you to be a prick one more time, I'll beat you up every single time I see you," Darryl walked toward Trent and kicked him.

Chapter 207

Trent howled in pain as he nodded in defeat and said, "Understood, I fully understood!"

'Bloody hell, I'm not stupid. That Darryl just got lucky that he leveled up so quickly. When I get out of here, I'm going to myself some Elixirs, you watch out then!' thought Trent.

The prison guard came to her senses, she took one more look at Darryl, and said softly, "Alright, it's late. Everyone go back to bed! Do go looking for trouble!" Then she left.

Chester could finally breathe. He got up and walked to Darryl. He cupped his fist in salutation and said gratefully, "Thank you for saving my life! I am forever in your debt!"

'Haha! He talks in such a polite, studious way! This person is quite interesting!' thought Darryl.

He waved his hands and replied, "It's nothing, I just can't stand bullies." Then he went back to bed casually. Darryl did not want to make the first move as this was the only way he could wipe out any potential suspicion from Chester.

He was right.

Seeing Darryl's nonchalance, Chester wanted to know more about him, "Brother, are you from Donghai City as well?" Chester asked as he sat on the side of the bed.

He took the bait!

Darryl was extremely excited but hid it well. He sat up and continued chatting with Chester. Upon chatting with him, Darryl realized that Chester was indeed a very educated person, that there was nothing he did not know. He could talk about any subject which was admirable.

Of course, when Chester asked Darryl about himself, Darryl only said that he was a live-in son-in-law. Chester did not question that, nor did he look down on Darryl.

...

One week later, the Darbys.

The entire clan was gathered in the main hall. Old master Drake ordered this meeting, citing that he has urgent matters to discuss. They were all discussing, wondering what the matter could be.

Drake entered the hall slowly. He broke the silence and said, "There are two things that need to be discussed." Drake took a seat and scanned his surroundings.

He continued solemnly, "First, I have decided that the entire Darby clan start cultivating."

Everyone gasped in excitement! If they started cultivating, they could become strong and powerful! That was everyone's dream!

Drake waved to command their attention, he said sternly, "Please be quiet! The second thing is, the Darbys will become members of the Eternal Life Palace sect starting from now on. But this must be kept a secret within our family. Is that clear?"

What? Joining the Eternal Life Palace sect? Everyone was speechless. The Eternal Life Palace was one of the two huge cults! They only committed evil! If the Darbys were members, did that mean that they were a force of evil from now on? Why would Old Master Darby do such a thing?

"Grandpa, the Eternal Life Palace sect is a cult," someone finally blurted. The rest nodded in agreement.

Drake took a long deep breath. He did not know whether the decision that he made was right or wrong. What he knew was that if they did not get stronger, they would have no standing whatsoever. The Dax Sanders incident was a lesson learned.

"Are you all questioning Grandpa's decision?" Yumi

stood up and stomped her heels. She said loudly, “ So you all have become powerful and dare to question him now?”

Cultivating will not only make one stronger, but it would make you stay younger for a long time. Yumi did not care if she had to join the Eternal Life Palace sect, as long as she knew she could stay beautiful for a long time thanks to cultivating.

Florian supported his wife, he nodded, and said, “ Yes. Grandpa has worked hard for us his entire life. I support his decision.”

“I support him too!” chimed in Jackson. He was really eager to practice cultivating. The first thing that he would do once he became stronger was revenge—he wanted to tie Lily up and make her have his babies.

Chapter 208

As long as someone took the lead, everyone would follow—so it was not surprising that soon the entire Darby clan agreed to join the Eternal Life Palace sect.

Old Master Drake nodded in relief then dismissed them, he said, "Ok, there are no other matters, you may leave. Please keep in mind what I just said—no one can know that the Darbys joined the Eternal Life Palace.

When everyone left, a silhouette of a person with a powerful aura stood at the main hall entrance—Brian Cunningham.

"So, what's your decision?" Brian approached Drake.

Drake nodded, and said, "I agree to your conditions, that the Darbys join the Eternal Life Palace sect."

"Wonderful! This is great news!" Brian cheered.

"From now on we are on the same boat! I'll get my men to send the Spiritual Elixir over soon," he added.

Brian handed a manual to Drake, he said, "We're old

friends, please accept this small gift as a welcome gift to the Eternal Life Palace sect!"

Drake's hand trembled when he saw the manual, it was The Big Dipper Formation, the ultimate secret manual of the Wudang sect!

"The Big Dipper Formation?" Drake asked.

Brian laughed, he said, "Yes! When I left the Wudang sect, I stole it. This formation is a powerful one, but it needs seven people!"

"Long time ago, there were seven Masters of the Wudang sect, they used this formation to trap a Grandmaster Heaven Master Marquis to death!" Brian explained.

How was the formation so powerful? Seven Masters could kill a Master Marquis? The Master Marquis ranking was two levels above Master!

Drake was immensely excited when he heard this! With this manual, no one would dare cause any trouble with the Darbys from now on!

"I hope you would be happy with this! This is just the start, when you join the Eternal Life Palace sect, as long as we work in tandem, there will be many good things to follow!" Brian chuckled, as he patted Drake on the arm.

Drake nodded excitedly, while he poured the tea.

...

For the past few days, the variety show "101 Superstar" had garnered views from all over the country.

With Platinum Corporation's help, Lana Thomas successfully entered the finals after a few rounds of intense competition. She and eight other finalists formed a girl group called "S9", "S" being short for "Super".

Of course, since Darryl was not around, the entire operation of Platinum Corporation fell on Pearl to manage.

While promoting Lana Thomas, Pearl has not forgotten about the live stream as well. During that period, Pearl would sign in as Hill to support Lily's live stream. She would send 'gifts' worth a few hundred thousands or more, sometimes even up to millions to Lily. Once she had done that, Pearl would sign out immediately. Hence, Hill was not only Lily's number one fan, but he was also the entire Longya Live Stream Platform's most mysterious patron.

All who used Longya Live Stream would know about Hill, and they would tune in daily to see him interact with Lily. That also indirectly caused Lily's live stream to grow in popularity. From a mere ten

thousand, it grew to a million or more fans. Those who flocked to her live stream not only want to hear her sing, but they were curious to see how much the legendary Hill would spend on Lily.

Present time. Lyndons.

Lily just ended her live stream and was in a cheery mood. Hill gave her a five million 'gift' today so she wanted to thank him in person.

"Lily, you've just ended your stream?" asked Samantha, as she came downstairs. All the while her daughter made a lot of money, which made her exceptionally happy. Her daughter was beautiful, talented, and has the earning power—anyone would be happy for her as well.

"Mother, I would like to buy a house. Our current house is too small. I want to buy a bigger one. I would be more comfortable doing my live stream too," Lily said. As she gained in popularity, it is not too appropriate to constantly live stream in the living room. Furthermore, what if guests visited them? It would be extremely awkward, seeing that she was a famous person now.

"Sure sure, let's get something you like. It's good to move as well. When that loser Darryl is released from prison, he will not be able to find us. This saves us the trouble of him begging you to come

back to him." Samanta nodded with a smile.

My daughter earns a few million per day, buying a house means nothing, she could afford any house that she likes!

Chapter 209

"Lily, now that you're earning so much, let's get a house that you like! I heard that Jade's Windon Real Estate has recently developed some high-end luxury villas. I saw the advertisement on the tv last night, it was breathtaking!" Samantha said.

Lily's eye sparkled.

Yes, indeed, she had heard that Windon Real Estate recently developed one of Donghai City's most luxurious villas at the highest-rated scene area. She also heard that the price was pretty steep as well, buying a villa there would cost twice as much as anywhere else.

However, she was not short on money recently, she could definitely afford it.

She picked up her phone and dialed Jade. The moment Jade picked up, she asked, "Jade, the villa up on the hill, do you still have it? I want to buy one."

"Yeah there are still some units available, why don' t you come by and take a look! Unfortunately, I'm currently busy so I don't think I could accompany you. If you want to have a look, I'll get someone to

serve you!" Jade laughed.

The two best friends chatted for a while, then hung up.

The next day, Lily and Samantha headed over to the villas. Windon Villas, named as Donghai City's best villas. The surroundings were great—there was a private pool and even a public golf course. Any member of the upper-class society of Donghai City would want to live there.

There was a stream of people coming in and out to view the villas.

When Samantha and Lily arrived, it was already noon.

One of the staff led them to one of the villas. Suddenly, a taxi came from afar. This got everyone's attention. Usually, those who came to view the villas came in luxurious, expensive cars, not some cheap taxi.

The car came to a halt, and a middle-aged couple came down. It was Darryl's parents!

A week ago, Darryl left instructions to reserve the best villa for his parents. When his dad had been discharged, they would live there.

"My, my, isn't that the petty thief's parents?" Samantha smiled sneeringly and approached them.

She was surprised to see them here. How could people like them afford the villas here?

"Mother, stop..." Lily tried to stop Samantha, but Samantha did not hear her.

Seeing the mother-daughter duo approaching them, Daniel Darby grimaced. He was in a pretty good mood—planning on seeing their future house—but it went up in smoke the moment he heard Samantha's voice.

"It's such a coincidence to see you two here," Samantha said, trying to hold back her laughter. She added, "Are you here to buy a house too?"

Daniel Darby replied coldly, "Yes."

"Wow, do you know how much a villa here cost? I'm afraid even if you starve for a lifetime, your family still won't be able to afford one here." Samantha said sarcastically.

She smacked her forehead in feigned surprise and said, "I almost forgot! You son steals phones for a living, I guess if he stole two per day for ten years, you'd probably have a chance of buying the villa!"

"You!" Daniel was fuming with rage. His face flushed, he said, "How dare you say that about my son, he is not that type of person!"

Darryl was innocent, being caught stealing phones,

there must be a reason behind it! The two Darbys strongly believed that they brought up their son well. Darryl would never do something like that!

Samantha laughed coldly, "He's already in prison, yet you still can't face the truth?"

"Mother, stop talking. They're still my parents-in-law..." Lily pleaded softly.

"No! I want to! Darryl was convicted of the crime and locked up in prison! Do you know how embarrassing that is? Why do you still have hopes for him? When he is released, I want you two to get a marriage certificate! I'm done letting this loser live in our house for free." Samantha said angrily.

Daniel was extremely enraged upon hearing Samantha's words. How can someone so beautiful like her be so unreasonable?

However, Daniel held back. He ignored her and said to Luna, "Let's go see our house."

Luna nodded and they walked together to the first villa. Darryl arranged for them to stay in the first villa in the front row. This was the villa with the best view of the bay, and it was convenient to get around as well. The feng shui was of the highest grade.

Samantha snickered, "Darryl's parents are funny

people. They're from the countryside, they can't even afford the cheapest villa here, yet they picked the best one to view?"

As she finished speaking, she was struck dumb. She saw Daniel fish out a key, open the door, and enter.

Why would he have a key? Unless the villa has been bought by them?

When she came to her senses, Samantha nudged the staff and asked, "What's happening now, how can you give the key of the villa to anyone to view?"

Chapter 210

The Darbys were from the countryside, how could they have so much money that they could afford to even consider viewing the best villa of all?

The staff replied with a smile, "Ma'am, this villa was already bought a week ago. It was processed internally, I don't know the details."

Internally?

Samantha was unhappy, she said, "I'll pay more, can you do something about it? I want this villa."

The location of this villa was extremely well, the price of it will definitely increase in the future. Now that her daughter could afford it from her live stream earnings, what harm could adding a little more money do to get the best villa?

"I'm sorry, I don't make the decisions." the staff apologized.

Samantha was gloomy, she turned to Lily and said, " Call Jade, she's the president, we want this villa, I' ve asked her to do something about it."

...

Prison.

Everywhere Darryl went, there would be a stream of followers. After beating Trent up yesterday, those followers turned to him instead.

Darryl got closer to Chester, to the point of talking about everything under the sun.

Of course, none of them have revealed their true identities yet. Today was the last day Chester would be in prison. Due to insufficient evidence, the police had no choice but to let him go.

Before leaving, Chester wrote his number on a piece of paper and gave it to Darryl. He hugged Darryl and said, "Brother, I'll leave first. When you leave prison, please contact me! Keep in touch!"

"Definitely!" Darryl smiled. He had been waiting for Chester to say this after he made such an effort to get closer to him.

Chester said no more, he patted Darryl's shoulder and left.

The next day, Darryl was released as well. At the prison gates, Megan called, "My good brother, how ..."

She stopped abruptly. What is the matter with her? Why does she keep calling him my good brother? She was extremely embarrassed.

"Darryl, what info did you get out of Chester?" she

asked after calming herself down.

For almost two weeks, Megan was sure that there would be results. If she had any info, she would be in for a reward!

Darryl smiled bitterly, he said, "It's not as easy as you think. Chester is very alert. During this time, our relationship has gotten closer. However, every time I try to ask about his identity, he changes the topic."

Darryl stated the truth. Chester was good at the skill of conversing, always staying cautious in what he says.

"What? How could that be? So it was all for nothing?" Megan said disappointedly.

Darryl was actually teasing her—it was not all for nothing, he managed to get Chester's contact.

Megan thought Darryl was being serious. Darryl continued teasing, he said, "Yeah, it was all because of you that I was in prison for half a month, doing nothing. Say, what do I get in return?"

"You get nothing! You didn't even accomplish the mission!" Megan grunted.

"Well, then it's fine. If I ever have any news about the Eternal Life Palace, I won't let you know," Darryl chuckled.

Megan replied curtly, "Even the police can't investigate them, how could you? You did not manage to get any info on the Eternal Life Palace this time being undercover, you think you'd be able to do it the next time?"

Megan continued, "I even called you my good brother to coax you to go undercover, it was all for nothing! I should not have called you my good brother. You are my useless good younger brother, useless good younger brother!" then she hung up the phone.

'Bloody hell, she's so practical! Just because I did not accomplish the mission, I am her useless younger brother.' Darryl was struck dumb.

He hailed a taxi to head back to the office.

After half a month in prison, he wondered how the corporation was doing. Being released from prison, seeing traffic, Darryl sighed. 'It's good to be out, the air is fresher,' he thought.

He was about to enter the taxi when his phone rang —it was Chester!

Chapter 211

Darryl took a deep breath to calm himself down. That Chester Wilson really had the nerve to obtain the news of him getting released.

He picked up the phone and heard Chester's laugh.

"Haha! Bro, I heard that you left prison today. I've prepared a feast for you to wash away your bad luck! You're not going to refuse, are you?"

He spoke in his usual unpolished tone, sounding chipper.

"Brother Chester, you're indeed well-informed," Darryl laughed in response. "Yeah, sure. Where are you?"

"I'm alright. I can get any information I'm after. I'm at Blue Phoenix KTV right now."

Chester hung up the call as soon as he finished.

Blue Phoenix KTV was an entertainment center that opened two months ago. It was located on the busiest road in Donghai City. It was exceptionally upscale, with many luxury cars parked near its entrance.

The people there were either rich men or pretty

ladies.

Two young usherettes greeted Darryl as he rushed to the entrance.

"Excuse me, are you Mister Darby?" One of the usherettes asked courteously

"Yes."

"Hello, Mr. Darby. Brother Chester is waiting for you upstairs. Please follow me." The usherette took Darryl to the first floor as she spoke.

The KTV looked polished with its grand interior. Darryl figured that it was one of the best KTVs in Donghai City.

They reached a luxurious private room on the first floor. The pretty usherette politely gestured for him to enter before retreating to the side.

Gasp!

Darryl took in a sharp intake of breath when he looked into the private room!

Hundreds of men were standing in the spacious room. All of them were cultivators as they were wearing all black!

Although they seemed to be Level One Masters with a fair amount of strength, it was still a shocking scene to see hundreds of them together!

A gentle-looking scholar sat amid the hundreds of men. It was Chester!

'What the f*ck?" Darryl walked into the room slowly in shock.

The hundreds of brawny men took a 90-degree bow all at once and greeted, "Hall Master!"

What? Hall Master?

Darryl was dumbfounded. He stared at Chester in a daze.

"What is happening?"

"Hahaha!" Chester burst into laughter. "Darryl, starting from today, you are the new Hall Master of Eternal Life Palace Sect, Donghai City division!"

Chester wore a long robe with a folding fan in his hand. It was no ordinary fan; it was an item worth millions of bucks from a palace during the Qing Dynasty.

"I'll be frank, I am a member of the Eternal Life Palace Sect," he chuckled. "Darryl, you must have heard about it, right?"

"Eternal Life Palace Sect?"

Darryl feigned surprise.

Chester nodded and continued, "I am the White-

Fanned Military Adviser under the Sect Master. My position is right under the Sect Master but above thousands of others. Everyone in the sect greets me as Master Wilson out of respect, other than the Sect Master."

Chester's face was filled with pride as he talked.

'What the f*ck! A military adviser?'

His position was indeed shocking for Darryl.

Eternal Life Palace Sect had almost a million disciples; his position was remarkably high!

He remembered Megan warning him that Chester was someone important in the Eternal Life Palace Sect, but he did not expect him to be this high in position!

'Damn, that's huge news!'

Chester slipped an arm around Darryl's shoulder and said in a serious tone, "Bro, here's something personal. There are only three types of people in my view. First, there are strangers. Second, my subordinates, and the third, my parents, along with the Sect Master."

"However, there is now a new type. It's you, bro! You are my only brother."

"Darryl, it is a lifetime honor for me to meet a

brother like you," he smiled. "The Eternal Life Palace had set up a hall in Donghai City, so I have decided to choose you as the Hall Master."

There was no room for doubt in his tone!

"Is this alright?" Darryl mumbled.

Chester appointed him as the Hall Master for the Eternal Life Palace Sect, although he was the Grandmaster Heaven Cult's Hall Master.

F*ck.

Chapter 212

The world was unpredictable. Life was indeed a box of chocolates. However, Darryl could not really fathom the surprises.

Being the Hall Master for both the infamous cults would be a little...

"Why not?" exclaimed Chester. "I am the brain behind the plan to set up a hall in Donghai City, so I have the final say in who is the Hall Master, and I'm saying that you are!"

Chester laughed again, "According to our customs, someone with the position of a Hall Master has to greet me—the military adviser. I'll let you off the hook since you're my bro! Hahaha!"

F*ck, he made his decision. He would not budge!

Darryl was speechless, but he maintained a smile.

"By the way, this is the authenticating object for you as the Hall Master. Keep it well." Chester took out a silver token and placed it in Darryl's hand.

A token?

Darryl accepted the silver token and flipped it. The token made from pure silver had a wolf engraved on

it. The craftsmanship looked delicate and vivid.

He could not help but think about the auction when he looked at the token.

Both the old man and his granddaughter had a golden token.

Zack Roger told him that those with a golden token had a superior position in the Eternal Life Palace Sect.

Darryl asked out of curiosity, "Brother Chester, can I have a look at your token?"

Chester took out his token smilingly.

A platinum token?

A glint of surprise flashed past Darryl's eyes as he observed the token engraved with a qilin, a mythological beast.

Chester explained, "As the master of the Eternal Life Palace Sect, the Sect Master possesses a jade token. Whereas me, a military adviser, has a platinum one."

"The next in rank is the Four Guardian Kings. They have golden tokens. Hall Masters have silver tokens. Finally, ordinary disciples have bronze ones."

Oh sh*t.

The old man from the auction was one of the Four

Guardian Kings of the Eternal Life Palace Sect. It was no wonder that he was so powerful!

Chester took the platinum token back from him and smiled. "Darryl, I prepared another huge gift for you aside from this one!"

He raised his hands and clapped.

The private room's door flung open, and around 20 women were brought in instantly.

Damn!

All the women had a decent appearance with great figures. They were all tied up.

All of them had a voluptuous and curvy figure!

The women were forcefully pushed to get down on their knees.

"Bro, I've put a lot of effort into this arrangement. I spent the whole night capturing these women from the Grandmaster Heaven Cult!" Chester laughed as he smoked on his pipe. "Do you like it?"

'These women are from the Grandmaster Heaven Cult?'

Grandmaster Heaven Cult and Eternal Life Palace Sect were the two most infamous cults. Since Chester had caught these women from the Grandmaster Heaven Cult, the two cults'

relationship was not great.

Chester continued smoking, "Hahaha! Bro, I made a reservation at the Oriental Pearl for you. Enjoy it! We're leaving, so look for us when you're done!"

Chester waved an arm to gesture everyone to leave the private room.

"Hall Master, we're taking our leave!" greeted the bulky men before walking to the door and bowed again; their movements neat and uniform. It was quite a scene! It was clear that they practiced well. They left a significant impact on people's impressions.

Darryl and the row of women were the only ones left in the room.

...

Lily Lyndon purchased Mansion No. 002 located right beside Darby Mansion after viewing it.

Jade told her that Mansion No. 001 was not for sale, no matter how much Lily offered.

Lily sold the previous house and found a moving company within days. She renovated the mansion exceptionally well.

Lily did not go live on the platform that day. She stared at the mirror as she took out 'The Worship of

Crystal' delightfully since she was in a great mood. She gazed at the 20 sets of clothing hung in the dressing room and tried them set after set.

Should she wear jeans, a wrap skirt, a dress, or shorts?

"Mom, can you give me your opinion on which to wear?" Lily asked. "I'm going to meet a fan tomorrow."

Exactly. She was dressing up for something important the next day. She was going to meet a fan.

Chapter 213

Lily's popularity had increased tremendously, making her a huge live streamer on the Longya Live Streaming Platform.

Initially, 'Hill' was the only person who would donate to her streams. Then, many other loaded people started donating too.

One of her most generous fans known as 'Mister D' would buy her virtual gifts worth thousands of bucks.

Of course, the amount of money Mister D spent on her did not surpass Hill.

However, Hill only donated money. He never attempted to talk to her. On the other hand, Mister D would donate and chat with her.

Mister D had asked Lily to meet with him as she ended her stream the previous day.

Lily was hesitant, but Samantha was highly supportive.

She wanted her daughter to mingle with wealthy people to have a better future.

She wanted Lily to try out clothes and dress up

nicely for her date with a fan the next day.

'The Worship of Crystal' paired with her jeans had an unexplainable appeal. She looked even more charming than other celebrities in them.

Samatha nodded with a satisfied smile, "Dear, your outfit is going to take Mister D's breath away. You can start going out with him if he is handsome."

"Mom, stop joking," Lily mumbled.

"I'm not joking," Samantha retracted her smile. " Listen, you should find a potential husband. Anyone will be better than Darryl. You can get to know so many rich men as a live streamer. You can pick any of them!"

....

Darryl stared at the row of women in the private room. They were indeed beautiful.

One of them with a great figure was even wearing a short skirt. He sighed as he walked forward to untie them.

"Leave, hurry. Be more cautious next time. Don't get caught," Darryl whispered.

A man of honor knows that there are things that must not be done. All those women were from the Grandmaster Heaven Cult, and as their Hall Master,

Darryl could act out in malice to them. He never saw himself as a good person, however.

It would be grave if he tarnished these women. He could not do it.

"You... Are you letting us go?" Their faces were frozen in shock.

They were utterly devastated when they were caught. They knew that the Grandmaster Heaven Cult and the Eternal Life Palace Sect did not get along well, although they were both cults!

Why was the man letting them go?

"Hurry, what are you waiting for?" Darryl mumbled, leaving the KTV before the women.

The women stood up hurriedly and followed behind him with gratitude.

Oriental Pearl.

Darryl released the women and gave them some cash. He took a cab to the hotel where Chester and his men were having drinks while waiting for him.

He figured that Wayne Woodall would be put to good use that day.

He had been providing services free of charge every time Darryl visited the hotel. He guessed that Wayne would not accept his money again, although

more than a hundred men from the Eternal Life Palace Sect were eating and drinking there.

A woman's shriek was heard from the street nearby when Darryl was about to step into the lobby.

"What are you doing?"

Darryl stopped abruptly from the sudden commotion and looked over. Over 10 men were surrounding a woman, trying to tie her up with a rope.

Darryl shook his head in dismay.

'Kidnapping someone out in the open in the middle of the day? Does the law even exist anymore?'

Many people passed through the busy street, but not one soul dared to get involved, let alone call the police.

The woman's clothing was torn as she struggled, and a valiant fire phoenix tattoo on her back was revealed.

'That tattoo... Sh*t!' Isn't that Dax Sander's wife, Nancy Lee? It is her! Why are these men kidnapping her?'

Darryl sprinted to her without a second thought and shouted, "Stop!"

'Darryl Darby?'

Nancy's face lit up with joy when she saw Darryl before she shouted with panic, "Darryl, don't come over! Get Dax!"

She knew that Darryl was strong enough to defeat a shark by himself. However, those men were not to be trifled with. They were ready to fight and kill!

They were Brandon Guy's men.

The mafia of Donghai City was divided into two. Brandon and Abby Guy owned the east of the city. Dax Sanders owned the west.

Although they did not have any external conflict, they were secretly trying to eliminate each other.

Two weeks ago, Dax Sanders had opened an entertainment center in Donghai City. It managed to attract a bunch of young people.

Brandon sent his men to wreck the place out of pure envy. However, Dax summoned hundreds of his own men to beat up Brandon's. They were promptly sent to the hospital.

He failed to cause trouble, leaving his men injured.

Chapter 214

Brandon was furious and utterly humiliated. He called Dax, demanding that he apologize and compensate him for the incident.

"F*ck off," Dax spat. It was all he said before ending the call.

Brandon had never been cursed at like that, especially in his current status. He was fuming, swearing that he would take revenge.

Then, he heard that Nancy Lee was Dax's beautiful wife.

Brandon was filled with lust. He planned to sleep with Dax's wife as a payback.

Brandon's men had been tailing Nancy the past week. He finally sent around 10 bulky men to kidnap her that day.

Nancy gave up all hope when no one on the streets dared to step forward. She did not expect Darryl to turn up at all.

However, she was doubtful that Darryl could defeat them. He might even lose his life if he got himself involved!

"Darryl, go! Find Dax!" Nancy screamed frightenedly, stomping her feet in frustration.

Darryl approached them hastily without any intention to retreat.

His bro's woman was in trouble. He could never call himself a man if he chose to ignore it.

"Rascal, do you want to die?"

The bald man leading the bulky men had a prominent scar on his head. He pointed his finger at Darryl, glaring at him intimidatingly.

Hundreds of passersby crowded the area, but no one dared to get involved.

"I don't care who you are. I'll give you two minutes to get out of my sight," Darryl snarled.

He would not allow them to take Nancy, no matter what.

Those guys were obviously not good people. They would definitely defile Nancy if they took her away.

"Are you f*cking crazy? Why are you getting involved in our business? Boys, finish him!" The bald man raised a brow menacingly.

The bulky men released Nancy from their grip and surrounded Darryl in an instant. They moved their

arms and revealed the steel pipes hidden in their sleeves!

"Darryl, don't be rash! Listen to me, go and get Dax!" Nancy was anxious—sweating profusely. She stomped over in her heels and pushed Darryl away, her pretty face filled with concern.

"Leave! You're outnumbered; you're not going to win. Go, just go!"

Darryl grasped her arm and pulled her to his back, " Stop talking, stay behind me."

"You—!"

Nancy bit her lip as she felt a ripple of emotions stirring inside her.

However, she was still overwhelmed with anxiety because of Darryl's stupidity! She knew that he was capable, but how could he defeat so many of them?

"Finish him!" The bald man roared with impatience.

'This kid must either be extremely stupid or a complete r*tard for trying to play the hero here. He must be f*cking crazy.'

A cold smile appeared on Darryl's face as he gathered his cultivated internal energy. Then, he charged forward with his fists clenched.

Thump... Thump... Thump...

Darryl threw seven or eight punches, and the few men who were charging toward him were lying flat on the ground within five seconds!

As Darryl's cultivation level increased, his Wing Chun combined with his cultivation perfectly. A Level Four Master's capability was no joke!

However, a strong wolf cannot hold a group of dogs.

There were way too many of them. They wielded steel pipes and even sharp knives.

The other men surrounded Darryl in an instant when they realized that their companions were defeated. They wordlessly charged toward Darryl, ready to strike him down!

Darryl started to panic, cold sweat dripping down his face.

"Kill him!" The bald man was alarmed. He would be severely reprimanded if he could not kidnap Nancy Lee even though he brought around 20 men!

Thump! Thump! Thump!

A few blows from the steel pipes landed on Darryl's head. His blood started to pour out, trickling down his face.

He would not have been injured this severely even if he was alone. This time, he had Nancy to protect. He

wanted to summon the Blood Drinking Sword, but he had no time. The steel pipes and knives fell on him like rain, suffering from every hit from just a tiny bit of distraction!

Someone stabbed Darryl's back with the knife, the blood saturating quickly through his shirt.

"Darryl!"

Nancy stared at the pool of blood teary-eyed as she bit on her lip hard.

Darryl could sense that he was losing strength, his movements getting sluggish. He could not hold on much longer!

"Get the woman, hurry!" The bald man shouted. He noticed that the crowd was growing, which meant that the policemen would be there soon. He let out a battle cry with a mixture of anger and fear as his gaze fell on Nancy.

Around 10 men surrounded Nancy instantly.

Nancy shrieked amid the pulling and dragging before she fell to the ground.

Darryl noticed, climbing on top of Nancy as he gritted his teeth to cover her!

Nancy was incredibly touched to be protected by Darryl.

Chapter 215

"F*ck, get this kid away from here!" The bald man was furious.

'This rascal here really wants to cause trouble!'

Clang! Clunk!

The men instantly closed in on Darryl, striking him with steel pipes repeatedly!

Darryl clenched his jaw, trying to stay on top of Nancy without budging.

His blood was dripping onto Nancy's face.

"Darryl, let me be! Get up! You're going to die..." Nancy trembled as she cried anxiously.

"I'm not getting up!" Darryl gritted his teeth and clenched his fists.

"Hall Master!"

"How dare you lay your hands on our Hall Master?!"

More than a hundred muscular men in black rushed out of the hotel lobby with rage. They were the disciples of the Eternal Life Palace Sect!

They had been waiting for Darryl's arrival in the

lobby. They thought that something was off when Darryl did not appear after waiting for some time. Then, they heard the clamoring outside and rushed out immediately to see Darryl getting beaten on the ground.

It was way over their limit!

"You're—"

The bald guy was stunned. The men were rushing over like a rolling tide!

He wailed before getting into the car to flee!

"Darryl, are you okay?!" Chester asked, his face stricken with worry.

"Darryl, how are you feeling? Are you alright?!" Nancy was sobbing uncontrollably, her tears trickling down her face continuously.

Darryl strained to sit up. Suppressing the burning sensation on his back, he smiled at Nancy.

"I'm fine, you should look for Dax now."

Darryl did not know which gang those men were from. However, he figured that they must have an ominous background, so he asked Nancy to look for Dax for her safety.

"But you..." Nancy bit her lip with worry.

Darryl shook his head and pointed to the disciples

around them, "I'm fine. They'll take care of me."

Nancy left after Darryl insisted. However, she kept turning back to check on Darryl with concern in her eyes.

Darryl tended to his wounds that afternoon. The disciples of the Eternal Life Palace Sect stayed with Darryl in the hospital ward.

The young nurse was alarmed as she clearly remembered Darryl to be a live-in-son-in-law. She even remembered that he could not afford to pay for his father's medical bill when he had a heart attack.

'Why does he have so many men with him this time around?'

It was a rare scene in the hospital. The young nurse did not utter a word while treating Darryl's wounds, leaving immediately after she was done.

Darryl lit a cigarette. "What's your name?" he asked a strong-built disciple.

The disciple clasped his hands together and answered respectfully, "I'm Caelan Lewis, Hall Master."

Caelan. Caelan Lewis.

Darryl nodded in acknowledgment. The disciple

seemed to be a capable one as he was visibly respected by the others. Based on his strength, he should be a Third Level Master. He appeared intelligent, as well.

Darryl smiled lightly and nodded, "Caelan, that's a powerful name. Good, that's good. You are the Vice Hall Master from now on! You will lead the brothers in the Hall when I'm not present."

"Hall Master, I'm afraid that I can't take this responsibility," Caelen stammered.

It was hard to digest that he was suddenly appointed to be the Vice Hall Master. He was just another insignificant disciple of the Hall.

Darryl laughed, "You are the Vice Hall Master, as I said."

A sudden thought came to his mind.

"By the way, pass a message to the military adviser that I'm not going to send him off tonight."

Now that the Hall in Donghai City was established, it was time for him as the military advisor to return to the Altar.

The Altar for the Eternal Life Palace Sect was located in Eternal Life Island, thousands of miles away from Donghai City. Darryl intended to send Chester off, but his injuries were too excruciating.

"Understood," Caelan responded, turning around to leave the ward.

Darryl waited for him to leave. Then, he stood up to refine the Godly pill while wincing from the stinging pain all over his body. He realized that the pill was useful during the auction. There was no harm in refining more of it.

The second morning.

Darryl was sleeping soundly on the hospital bed when he heard someone knocking on the door.

Pearl Hahn—in her professional outfit—trotted to his bed.

Chapter 216

"President Darby, Donghai Television Station sent us an invitation for an evening gala," said Pearl.

"What evening gala?" Darryl asked absent-mindedly.

Pearl smiled and replied, "The Mid-Autumn Festival is near, and they're holding a gala for that. It's a grand event as many celebrities will be there, and all the big shots in Donghai City are going, as well."

Pearl's face glowed with pride as she continued, " Platinum Corporation promoted two celebrities recently, Giselle Lindt and Lana Thomas. The station wants them to attend the gala, so our company is the first to receive an invitation. As the president of the company, you can't miss a celebration event like this."

'Is it mid-autumn already?'

Darryl nodded. "Fine, make the preparations."

"Very well."

....

It was 7 pm, and the TV station building was

showered with brilliant lights.

The Donghai Satellite Television Building was one of the most beautiful buildings in the city. It looked exceptionally breathtaking when it was bathed in lights as it stood beside the city moat at night. Many young couples were on the bridge to take photos of the tower.

That was the venue for the Mid-Autumn Festival Gala.

The banquet hall had been newly decorated; every corner displayed extravagance and grandeur.

Those who attended the gala were either distinguished personages in Donghai City, presidents of entertainment companies, or celebrities.

It was the biggest Mid-Autumn Festival celebration in Donghai City's history!

The celebrated Giselle Lindt and Lana Thomas from S9 were already at the event venue. Some other celebrities also performed their songs at the event!

Countless reporters and fans had gathered at the plaza.

The event venue was already cramped even though the gala would only start at 8 pm.

It was already 7.30 pm when a Mercedes-Benz S600

Pullman Guard pulled into the building.

The event crew quickly approached the vehicle and opened the car door courteously.

Two charming figures walked out of the car; they were Giselle Lindt and Lana Thomas.

The fans started to clamor as soon as those two revealed their presence.

Giselle looked dazzling and charming with her long maroon dress and her silver stilettos.

Lana Thomas was sexy yet elegant in a white evening gown embellished with diamond shards.

The two beauties in red and white complemented each other as they stood side by side. They immediately attracted the attention of many reporters and cameras.

Then, a man in a suit got down from the car.

The man had a neat figure; he looked handsome with the angular contours of his face. He emitted an unexplainable and mysterious aura with his dark sunglasses.

That man was Darryl.

He did not like to attend crowded events like that, but it was an event he could not refuse.

He was worried that he might meet that a*shole

and his past as a live-in son-in-law might get exposed. He decided to put on a pair of shades so that no one could recognize him. 1

Giselle and Lana approached Darryl with a smile when he got out of the car. Then, all three of them entered the venue, with Darryl sandwiched between the two ladies.

'Wow.'

The crowd envied Darryl.

'Who is this?'

'How did he get two celebrities, Giselle Lindt and Lana Thomas, to come to this event with him?'

Many guests had already arrived at the venue. The banquet hall was exceptionally luxurious, and every single guest had an impressive background.

Most of the guests had their eyes on Giselle and Lana. They were stunning and famous, so they would definitely be in the spotlight wherever they go.

Darryl passed through the crowd with Giselle and Lana beside him; he occasionally stopped to socialize with the other guests.

Of course, Giselle and Lana did most of the talk; Darryl kept silent most of the time.

"Aren't you the pretty Giselle Lindt?"

An unpleasant and enigmatic voice echoed just as Darryl found his seat.

Darryl turned around; he was stunned for a brief second before he burst into a laugh.

'Isn't this guy a little overweight?'

Darryl thought that Zhu Bajie had come to life.

However, it was only Dalton Zander, the man Giselle slapped when he tried to take advantage of her.

Chapter 217

Dalton stood arm-in-arm with a young woman, who was taller than him.

"My beautiful Giselle, are you interested in getting a drink with me?" Dalton asked teasingly as he approached her.

He looked at Giselle from top to bottom, but he ignored Darryl, who stood beside her.

He thought that Darryl was a bodyguard because of his sunglasses.

Giselle pursed her lips; she did not reply to him. She felt disgusted whenever she thought about his hands on her when she had an interview in Dalton's company.

Dalton was angry with Giselle's silence. "Giselle Lindt, why are you a prude? How are you these days? No one is offering you movie deals and or even advertisements, right? Do you know the reason for that?"

Dalton looked triumphant.

Giselle's neutral expression turned into anger. "You are the one behind that?"

Darryl's brows furrowed even more.

Giselle had stayed in the company building for some time because she had nothing else to do. In comparison, Lana's schedule was packed even though she debuted later than Giselle. Even less popular variety shows did not want Giselle as their guest.

Darryl knew that something was off when Pearl reported that, but he did not look into it. 1

Darryl finally understood what had happened after he heard Dalton's words.

It was because of that fat man.

"I've warned you! You'd not get any resources no matter how popular you were when you debuted if you refuse to work with me! Do you regret it now? It 's okay; it is not too late yet. There is still space in my bed."

Giselle trembled with fury, and she wanted to retort a reply when Darryl stopped her.

"Don't bother with him," Darryl said in a neutral tone.

Dalton's expression changed drastically; his flabby cheeks twitched.

'The f*ck! How dare this bodyguard talk to me like

that?'

He glared at Darryl as he yelled, "Who do you think you are? You're only a bodyguard; you have no right to speak here. Get out of my sight."

"He's our president," Giselle said.

Dalton was stunned for a moment before he burst into laughter. "Oh, you're the President of Platinum Corporation? I didn't know that your president is only a kid! Why are you wearing sunglasses at night? Are you pretending to be a panda? I was shocked; I thought that you are an emperor."

'Is he dumb?'

Darryl had no intention to bother with him, and so, he kept quiet.

However, Dalton was one of those people who liked to push his luck. When he noticed Darryl's silence, Dalton stood up abruptly and pointed to his nose. " Kiddo, you're the president of Platinum Corporation, but so what? How long has it been since you built the company? How many resources and connections do you have? You are worthless to me! I'll make it clear today, I will definitely have Giselle Lindt! You should terminate your contract with her if you're smart. Otherwise, I will make sure that Platinum Corporation will not last through the year."

Darryl's expression was icy-cold.

There was one thing that he hated the most in his life, and that was when people pointed their fingers at him.

"Get your pig hooves away from my face," Darryl said coldly. 1

"Are you f*cking kidding me?!"

Dalton was enraged!

The event had already started, and the emcee had already made introductions on the stage. The commotion they caused alarmed the other nearby guests, and they looked toward them with curiosity.

Dalton was embarrassed. He waved his arms, and two muscle men appeared from the side.

The men were covered in tattoos, and they were extremely muscular; they were also about 2 meters tall. They were Sam and Liam Jacobs, Dalton's bodyguards. Dalton had spent an enormous amount of money to hire them!

Dalton was smug about it. "Kiddo, come to the washroom with me if you have guts. Let's talk there. "

Darryl smiled and nodded. "Sure, I have some things to say to you in private, too."

"Great, you have guts! I'll wait for you there then. You're a p*ssy if you bail." Dalton smirked.

He walked toward the washroom with his bodyguards.

The guests nearby looked at Darryl and shook their heads.

'Young people these days are just too blatant. No one in the entertainment industry has the guts to challenge Dalton Zander so far.'

'This guy is digging his own grave.'

Darryl maintained the light smile on his face as he walked toward the washroom.

"Darryl."

Lana rushed forward and held Darryl's arm, and concern was written all over her face, "Darryl, don't be reckless. Dalton Entertainment is highly influential in the entertainment industry. Why are you competing with him? Just ignore him."

Lana knew the rules even though she had not been in the entertainment industry for long. She knew that no one would ever dare to provoke Dalton Entertainment.

Chapter 218

Giselle was also overwhelmed with worry. She bit her lips and said softly, "Brother Darryl, it's fine."

Darryl smiled at her. "Don't worry; we'll do nothing but talk. We won't fight."

"Darryl, listen to me. Don't go," Lana advised softly.

The two bodyguards were about two meters tall! Things would not end well for Darryl if he were to go to the washroom.

"Listen, I can't allow you to go. Do you hear me?" Lana continued to persuade him.

"It's fine, don't worry." Darryl walked toward the washroom in giant steps.

When they realized that they could not stop him, Giselle and Lana glanced at each other worriedly.

Darryl arrived at the washroom. He saw Dalton and the two bodyguards as soon as he stepped into the restroom.

Dalton approached him. "Kiddo, there's still time for you to kneel and apologize for your mistake."

Dalton thought the kiddo would be willing to

acknowledge his mistake if he had some sense in him.

However, he was utterly wrong about that.

Darryl chuckled and walked to the urinal. He unzipped his pants and peed as he said in an unhurried tone. "An apology is a must, but it should be one from you and not me."

"F*ck! You a*shole! Finish him!"

Dalton was enraged when he heard Darryl's words.

His bodyguards charged with their fists the moment they heard his command.

Darryl was amused.

'How did they get hired as bodyguards with these skills? Their height is a waste; they're moving too slowly. '

Darryl extended a leg, and it caused Sam and Liam to trip and fall onto the slippery floor!

The two men into Dalton.

"Ow!"

Dalton, who was overweight, did not have agile legs. He could not dodge his two underlings, and so, he fell with them.

"F*ck! You piece of sh*t!"

Dalton cursed furiously when Darryl turned and splashed his urine on Dalton and his bodyguards' faces.

"I'm gonna f*cking kill you!"

Dalton felt extremely humiliated, and he exploded with fury. He started to curse angrily again as Darryl 's pee spilled into his mouth. 1

The shocked and outraged bodyguards tried to get up.

However, Darryl stepped onto their bodies, or their Baihui acupoints, to be exact. The men felt numb all over their bodies, and they could not exert any force at all.

Giselle and Lana were anxious as they waited outside the washroom.

They had followed Darryl to the washroom because they could not sit still. However, they stopped at the entrance because they were embarrassed to go into the room.

"Teacher, why don't we go in?" Giselle bit her lips and asked softly.

Lana's face flushed with embarrassment as she hesitated. "But it's the men's room."

However, Lana could not hide her anxiety.

They had to go in even if it was the men's room!

Lana made her decision after two seconds. "Fine, let 's go."

Both of them walked into the washroom in their heels.

"Darryl, are you okay? You—"

Lana asked with concern as they entered the washroom, but her face flushed crimson when she saw the situation!

Giselle's delicate body also shivered from the shock!

Dalton Zander and his bodyguards were on the floor, and Darryl... Well, Darryl was urinating on Dalton's face.

"Argh..."

Lana and Giselle shrieked simultaneously after two seconds of silence. They covered their flushed faces and turned around swiftly before they ran off.

'Why did Darryl do that? How embarrassing!'

'We shouldn't have gone in!'

Chapter 219

Giselle and Lana looked even more charming with their reddened faces when they returned to the banquet hall even though they were embarrassed.

The scene in the washroom replayed in their minds like a film.

Dalton was on the floor in the washroom, and he was drenched in urine.

Darryl pulled his pants up and said mischievously, " Oops! Sorry for getting my piss on you! Why did you have to disturb me when I was peeing?"

"F*ck you! You are doomed! Doomed!"

Dalton's face was full of hatred; he was exasperated!

As the president of Dalton Entertainment, he had never experienced humiliation like that!

F*cking hell! He would have to murder that kid one day!

Darryl smiled at him. "Fatso, what kind of attitude is that? Come on; I only peed on you a little! Here, I' ll wash it off for you."

Darryl grabbed Dalton's collar and pressed his head

into a urinal.

Gulp

Dalton was shocked and angry, but he could not react in time, so he swallowed a few mouthfuls. His fat body twitched as he struggled like a dying toad.

Darryl pressed Dalton's neck so that he could not budge no matter how he struggled.

Dalton could not get off. He got very dizzy, and so he tapped on Darryl's leg.

Darryl let go of him slowly.

Dalton retched for a few moments before he sat down and gasped for breath.

"Brother, mercy... It was my fault, my fault..." Dalton begged with a horrified expression.

Dalton was utterly petrified! Since his bodyguards were no match to that man, he might torture Dalton again if he acted stubbornly.

Even though he surrendered, his mind was filled with hatred!

'F*ck, I've never tasted piss before! Just you wait, I'll get you when I have the chance.'

Darryl gave Dalton a cold smile and adjusted his suit before he walked out of the washroom.

D*mn it! He got a little urine on him when the fatso struggled against him.

Darryl walked out of the washroom as he thought about whether he should go back to get changed.

As he thought about it, two women walked toward him hurriedly and one of them knocked right into him!

"Argh!"

A deafening scream reverberated in his ear.

'What the f*ck? Is she blind? How did she knock into me with this much space around us?'

Darryl was unable to speak.

However, he looked at the person in front of him, and he was stunned.

The woman seemed to be a celebrity who had attended the gala.

Her lilac evening gown revealed her long slender legs and complimented her lovely figure. She looked enchanting with her long wavy hair.

"Are you blind? Watch where you're going!" The woman shouted before Darryl could speak.

'What?' Darryl was dumbfounded. 'You were the one who knocked into me; why are you scolding me

instead?'

She was Sunny Scott, a celebrity who had gained recent popularity. Another woman in black-framed glasses stood behind her; she was her assistant.

The assistant was also very unreasonable. She pointed at Darryl and yelled, "Look where you're going! Apologize to Ms. Scott now!"

Sunny had a grim expression on her face. The gala would start soon, and she was the first to perform on stage. She was on her way to the stage when she realized that her diamond earring worthed a million bucks was missing!

Sunny panicked and started to search for the earring with her assistant when she knocked into Darryl. She thought he was a security guard because of his attire. Sunny was already anxious, so she unleashed all her anger on Darryl.

"Apologize, now!" Sunny demanded as she gritted teeth; her gaze was cold.

Darryl furrowed his brows before he smiled at her. " I'm confused. Why do I need to apologize to you? You were the one who knocked into me."

'F*ck, these two women must be crazy. They're pretty, but they have no manners at all. How dare they tell me to watch where I'm going when they

were the ones who knocked into me?'

"You—" Sunny was furious, and so, she said arrogantly, "You must be a security guard here. Don' t you have any manners? Do you want to lose your job?"

'How rude! He's a security guard; how dare he talk back to me? This is absurd.'

"Do you know who she is?" The assistant walked toward him. "You'd suffer for offending Ms. Scott."

The assistant demanded again, "Apologize to her. Quickly now!"

Chapter 220

'Such a domineering tone!' Suddenly, Darryl had an idea; he smiled and said, "Tell me, please, who is Ms. Scott? How would she make me suffer?"

The assistant sighed; she thought that the bodyguard was an idiot who wanted to stall instead of apologizing. She shook her head. "This is Miss Sunny Scott, the most popular female celebrity in Dalton Entertainment. You will definitely lose your job if you upset her."

'Oh, Dalton Entertainment? Your president just drank my piss.'

Darryl sneered. Then he said in a calm tone, "I don't care who you are. You are in the wrong because you were the one who knocked into me. I'm already giving you face by not demanding an apology from you. Stop bothering me."

'I just gave the president of Dalton Entertainment a lesson, so why would I be afraid of a little celebrity under his company?'

The other guests had gathered to watch the scene. They pointed at Darryl and shook their heads with disapproval.

'This security guard is really something. Why would he oppose a celebrity?'

Sunny kept a straight face, but she was furious. " Just you wait. Are you confident because you got a job as a security guard after leaving your home in the rural area? How dare you contradict my words!"

There was a commotion from the direction of the washroom before Dalton Zander appeared. The two bodyguards supported him.

The three of them were utterly drenched.

Dalton looked extremely distressed. He had rinsed himself with tap water, but the stench was nowhere near gone. He was extremely disgusted!

"President Zander."

Joy illuminated Sunny's face when she saw him. She called out in a coquettish voice and approached him hurriedly.

Sunny stomped her feet in anger and complained, " President Zander, that security guard knocked into me!"

Sunny furrowed her brows and covered her nose.

'Why is there a stench on President Zander?'

However, Sunny did not put her mind to it.

"Who? Who dares to offend Sunny Scott?" Dalton exploded in a fury.

His lust for women was a commonly known fact, and many of the female celebrities in his company had slept with him. Sunny was his then-current target, so he had to stand up for her when she was bullied. He had to play the hero for her!

"Him." Sunny turned and pointed to Darryl, who stood nearby.

'What?'

Dalton gulped when he realized that it was Darryl; the drastic change of expression on his face was hilarious! The memory of the horrifying scene in the washroom was still vivid for him.

"Dalton Zander, it looks like Dalton Entertainment's management isn't up to standard; you can't even manage your celebrity well." Darryl walked toward him with a fake smile. "She doesn't even have basic manners, although she is a public figure. Why don't I give you a lesson on how to manage your employees?"

"How dare you act like this when you're just an insignificant security guard—" Sunny said coldly as she pointed a finger at Darryl; her delicate face looked furious.

Dalton interrupted her with a sudden roar. "Shut your mouth!"

D*mn! He could not afford to offend him again after he drank the man's piss! A wise man would always know to pick his battle!

Sunny's body trembled from shock, and she kept silent with confusion in her eyes.

'What's the matter with President Zander?'

He never spoke that loudly at her.

Dalton grabbed Sunny's hair before she could react and dragged her toward Darryl.

"Apologize, right now! This is President Darby, the president of Platinum Corporation. Apologize, daft woman!" Dalton panicked and shouted.

Sunny squirmed from the pain, and she finally understood that the 'security guard' was not someone she could afford to offend! Sunny quivered before she decided to give up on her pride and ego.

"I'm sorry; it was my fault." Sunny bit her lips after she said that to Darryl in a soft voice.

Gasp

It caused an uproar in the crowd.

What had happened?

The imperious Dalton Zander had given in someone else?!

Even Sunny Scott, who was famous for her bad temper in the entertainment industry, had apologized to the man!

Darryl looked at Dalton with a smile. "Hmm, that's better. Be more careful next time."

He walked away after he said those words.

"F*ck!" Dalton gritted his teeth in anger with a bitter expression as he stared at Darryl's back.

He had to take revenge for what had happened that day, or he did not deserve to be a man!

'I will treat your wife and your family how you treated me today!'

Dalton clenched his fists tightly as his fat face quivered in anger.

Chapter 221

The gala was quite dull; it was just an event where celebrities performed on stage.

Darryl walked around the venue, but he did not see Giselle and Lana. He figured they were backstage to wait for their turn to get on stage for their performances.

He decided not to stay for them; he wanted to go home, take a shower, and go to sleep.

He left the Donghai Satellite Television Building and lit a cigarette near the entrance. It was almost 9 pm; the lights flickered as people walked around the streets.

Darryl was about to call a taxi when he noticed two men acting suspiciously beside a luxurious MPV.

One of them was skinnier than the other, and they placed a bag behind the MPV's trunk before they hid behind a utility pole.

'What are those two doing?' Darryl smoked his cigarette as he watched with interest.

A pretty woman in a white dress walked by a few moments later. She looked like a college student.

She had the keys in her hand, and she got up to the MPV. She ignited its engine and reversed to get out of the parking.

Thump

The two men, who hid near the utility pole, immediately appeared when the car knocked over the bag on the ground.

"Hey, do you know how to drive? Can't you see that there's something behind your car? Come out!" The fat man knocked on the car window repeatedly with a stern expression as he urged the woman to get out of the vehicle.

The skinny man crouched as he opened the luggage with a pained expression. "My antique vase! I just purchased it for two million bucks! It's broken!"

The luggage was filled with vase shards and pieces.

'How funny! Con men these days are pretty skilled.' Darryl continued to watch with enthusiasm.

The fat man's shout attracted passersby, and they had gathered around the incident.

The young woman was in a daze. She got out of the car and stared at the vase pieces; she looked stupefied.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry..." Her face paled as she was in

shock. The fat man mentioned that the antique vase was worth two million bucks. How could she afford to compensate them?

Dora Simpson bit her lips; she was anxious. She was a student from Donghai University, and she had a part-time job as a driver to earn tuition fees because she was not from a wealthy family.

She did not expect to get in trouble on her first day at her job.

"I didn't see it. I'm sorry. I'm really sorry..." Dora sweated profusely as she apologized over and over again.

"No way! My two million bucks worth vase is broken! You must be rich since you're driving this car! Pay me back now!" The skinny one rolled his eyes and put on a menacing expression.

'What?'

'Two million?'

The crowd gasped. It was an impossible amount for regular folk.

Those who did not understand the situation sighed in relief when they saw the type of car she drove.

"Young lady, you're rich anyway; just pay him back. "

"That's right! You are the one who broke his vase."

Dora was horrified. She panicked and said, "I don't have the money, I'm just a driver..."

It was two million bucks.

She could never earn that much money even if she worked her whole life.

The skinny man kept a straight face and interrupted in an unfriendly tone, "Young lady, you have to fix your mistake. You'll have to pay me back!"

The fat man continued to say, "That's right! Young lady, we're not looking for trouble, and we're not asking for more than the vase's worth. We spent two million on this vase; we even have the receipt and certificate. Look!"

He passed the receipt and certificate that they had prepared earlier to the woman. Then he said, "You seem educated. You can't deny the truth that you broke our porcelain vase."

Dora took the certificate helplessly; she was on the verge of tears.

One of the women in the crowd could no longer stand the situation; she said, "Young lady, you'll have to compensate them for the vase you broke, but is it really worth two million bucks? Two

million bucks? That might be a fake certificate; they're everywhere and easy to get!"

The crowd came to their senses, and most of them agreed with the woman. "Exactly, you have no proof. Was the vase worth two million bucks, even if it was an antique?"

Chapter 222

"You can't just name an exorbitant price just because the girl is young."

The two con men were not worried about the crowd's discussion.

They were professional con men; they were well prepared. The certificate might have been fake, but the vase was an actual antique from the Yuan dynasty, although they had only spent a thousand bucks to purchase it.

The two purposely chose to act on someone with a luxurious car. They placed the luggage behind the vehicle and waited for the driver to knock over it when they reversed their car. Then they would appear and accuse the driver of breaking their vase.

The driver would be bitter if they were to know about it.

"You don't believe that it's worth two million bucks? Anyone here from the antique field? Come and decide if we are lying," the skinny man scanned through the crowd and said confidently.

"I work at Donghai City Museum; I can take a look."

A middle-aged man with gold-rimmed glasses

approached them and showed them his employee card.

The crowd immediately grew silent.

The middle-aged man took a piece of the porcelain and observed it. Then he turned to the fat man and said, "Do you know the vase belonged to which dynasty?"

"Of course. It's palace delftware from the Yuan dynasty," the fat man replied without any hesitation.

The middle-aged man nodded. "You're right; it is indeed delftware. This is a delftware vase from the Yuan dynasty because it has aged firing. The pattern on the vase is also a significant trait. The composition is rich and layered but not messy; it is much simpler and elegant than the delftware from Tang and Song dynasty."

He raised the porcelain in his hand for the crowd to examine as he continued to say, "Here, look at this. The thick patterns rendered on the delftware was formed from one strong yet smooth stroke. I can verify that this delftware porcelain was from the Yuan dynasty, and it should be worth two million bucks!"

The crowd immediately gasped when they heard that.

It was delftware from the Yuan dynasty, indeed.

The crowd shifted their gaze toward Dora after the revelation.

'The reckless young lady is doomed for breaking the vase.'

Dora was utterly dumbfounded and on the verge of tears. "I don't have any money. I'm just a student, and I'm working as a driver. This is my employer's car."

She was worried that the two might not believe her, so she took out her student identification card and passed it to them. "Maybe I can write an IOU and pay you back in installments? You can take my student identification as a pledge."

The con men glanced at each other before they shook their heads in unison.

An IOU? No way!

They would flee as soon as they got their money; there was no way that they would want an IOU!

"What can we do with your student identification? You can call your family to give you the money if you don't have it," the skinny man said indifferently as he pushed the identification aside.

The fat man said, "We're not trying to blackmail

you; everyone else is watching us, too! Don't make this harder for the two of us; money doesn't grow on trees. We are upset because our vase is broken."

Dora could not think of a reply. She bit her lip as her tears started to fall.

Where would she get two million bucks to pay them?

Darryl could no longer bear to stand idle. He took two steps forward and smiled as he said, "Alright, you can stop your acts now."

The con men had no virtue at all.

They refused to let the girl go even though she was clearly a poor university student.

"Who the f*ck are you?!"

The con men got angry and scolded him.

Darryl maintained a light smile on his face as he continued forward; he ignored the two con men. He took a porcelain piece from the luggage and said calmly, "I admit that your acting skills are not bad, but your conning tactic is too despicable."

Darryl walked toward the middle-aged man who claimed to be an employee at the museum and said in a serious tone, "You were right; this is indeed delftware from the Yuan dynasty, but you only

looked at the surface, and you did not look further into it. Let me give you a lesson on how to look at antiques."

Shawn Larson thought that Darryl was hilarious. It was the first time someone had offered to teach him how to identify antiques after he had worked in the museum for 20 years.

Shawn's wife chuckled and said, "Boy, are you trying to teach my husband how to identify an antique?"

Chapter 223

"Your analysis is correct. The vase is worth two million bucks if it is still in pristine condition." Darryl continued, "However, you missed something, the time when the vase was broken."

Shawn's expression changed, but he did not say anything.

"Kid, you're acting like you know more than a museum employee."

"You looked like a security guard. Wait, you smell like you just came out of a washroom. Are you also a janitor?"

The crowd laughed; Darryl indeed smelled like he had urine on him.

There was one person who did not laugh; Dora stared at Darryl frozenly.

Darryl crouched and took a piece of the shattered vase. "Experts would know that the Yuan dynasty's delftware was made from a mixture of two ingredients—china stone and kaolinite. Therefore, when a delftware item broke, its yellowish base would get dark if it was exposed to air."

Darryl handed a piece of the porcelain to the middle

-aged man. "The pieces in the luggage can prove that the vase was broken quite some time ago. Based on the dark base, I'd say that it broke decades ago, possibly when it was unearthed."

Darryl shifted his gaze to the con men. "These pieces are only worth eight or nine hundred bucks, at most. Your luggage bag was only filled with broken pieces. Are you not ashamed to con people with this tactic?"

The crowd grew silent in an instant!

Shawn's fingers trembled as he held the porcelain piece. As someone with 20 years of experience in the museum, he had always believed that he was the best in Donghai City! Not even Yvonne and Kingston Young could compare to him!

He was ashamed that a young lad in his 20s was more learned and knowledgeable than him!

Shawn's wife stared at Darryl with curiosity; his knowledge amazed her!

"My name's Shawn Larson. Young man, you are very wise. I am impressed!" Shawn walked toward Darryl in a daze and handed him a name card. "This is my card. Please contact me; perhaps we can have tea when you are free!"

The crowd was in shock!

"The luggage was filled with shards?"

"How immoral!"

Dora felt like she was in a dream.

She had fallen into despair, and she even racked her brain to think of ways to get two million bucks. However, the situation had reversed in the blink of an eye.

She looked at Darryl with gratitude.

The con men glanced at each other before they pointed at Darryl and said, "Kid, are you saying that our vase is already broken before this incident? Who the hell are you? What do you know about antiques? Stop with your bullsh*t! It's either she pays, or you pay! Maybe you can pay for her if you want to be the hero!"

The fat man took out a switchblade from his pocket and flicked it open.

It seemed like that was not their first time; they must have been in a similar situation before that day.

They were confident that Darryl was just an insignificant security guard, so they were not worried at all.

The people were shocked when they saw the

switchblade. No one dared to say anything or stand up for Dora.

Darryl laughed, "Fine, I can pay you, but give me a minute. Let me call a friend to bring me the cash."

"That's more like it!" The con men glanced at each other again. 'That kid got scared the moment he saw the switchblade. What a coward!'

Darryl took out his phone and made a call.

Dora panicked and pulled on Darryl's sleeve. "No, please don't ask your friend to bring the cash. I got myself into trouble. I'll pay them back myself."

Dora could not think of a way to get that massive amount of money. However, she could not let a stranger pay two million bucks for her! Her mother taught her to take responsibility for her own mistakes, even though they were poor.

Darryl waved his hand, but he did not speak.

The call went through, and Darryl turned on the speakerphone.

"Hey, Younger Brother! What's up?" Megan Castello smiled and said on the other line.

She had called him her young brother the moment she had nothing to ask from him. Her change of attitude was really incredible.

'Hmm?'

The con men's expressions changed drastically.

"F*ck! That voice sounds familiar..." The fat man frowned.

The skinny man gulped and nodded before he said softly, "Why does she sound like Sergeant Castello?
"

The two of them were habitual offenders for highway robberies.

Megan had managed to catch them and subsequently sent them to prison multiple times.

They feared Megan more than any other policeman, so they fled like mice when they heard her voice over the phone.

Chapter 224

"What the f*ck? Is he Megan Castello's brother?"

"F*ck, run!"

The con men panicked; they ran past the crowd and disappeared in an instant.

Darryl could not help but burst into laughter.

"Hello, Younger Brother? Why are you not talking? What's up?" Megan asked.

There was nothing left to say as the two men were already gone.

Darryl laughed again. "Nevermind."

He ended the call without any explanation.

Megan stomped her foot in anger on the other side of the call.

'What the hell is wrong with Darryl Darby? Why did he call at such a late hour and disregarded me right after that?'

'Weirdo!'

The crowd near the Donghai Television building had also dispersed.

"Thank you so much." Dora walked toward Darryl and bowed to him in gratitude.

She was grateful that he had appeared in time, or she would not know that the two men were out to con her.

Darryl smiled and replied casually, "You're welcome. It was nothing."

He looked at Dora as he talked. She looked beautiful and pure.

Dora was a little shy when she said, "I'm still very thankful. I should treat you to dinner, but I have something urgent that I have to do; I have to drive my boss. So perhaps next time. May I add you as a contact on WeChat?"

Dora lowered her head as she talked; she looked reserved and shy.

'This young lady is adorable.' Daryl chuckled discreetly.

Darryl did not refuse her request. He walked to the street to get a taxi after he exchanged contacts with Dora.

There were not many people on the streets as it was already past 10 pm. Darryl had just hailed a cab when he heard some footsteps behind him.

He turned instinctively, but a gunny sack immediately covered his head!

Sh*t!

'What the hell is happening?'

Darryl cursed. He wanted to struggle free when a blow struck the back of his head.

Darryl felt his head buzzed before his vision turned black, and he passed out.

He had no idea how long he was unconscious; it felt like a long dream.

Darryl had a headache when he regained consciousness.

When he opened his eyes, he realized that he was tied up.

He was in a luxurious office with simple furniture; a desk, a couch, and an expensive-looking chandelier on the ceiling.

He looked around and fixed his gaze at the couch.

A beautiful and attractive woman sat there.

She was Abby Guy, Brandon Guy's sister.

'Is she the one who caught me?'

Darryl had to admit that Abby was magnificent. He

remembered that she was the center of attention at Jackson Tim's wedding. Darryl also noticed that she looked even more charming then.

Her sleeveless crop top and pencil skirt really complimented her curvy figure.

Abby looked indescribably elegant and attractive as she sat on the couch cross-legged and swirled a glass of wine.

When she noticed that Darryl was staring at her, Abby smiled and got up from the couch to approach Darryl.

Darryl gulped as her slender waist and long legs were exceptionally near to him.

Abby extended her delicate hands and slapped Darryl's face a few times.

"I'm gonna slap you if you look at me like that again."

F*ck! Darryl sighed. "Miss Guy, you're a little unreasonable. Did you forget that I rescued you when you fainted because of the eight-diagram mirror at the wedding? Why did you tie up?"

Chapter 225

Abby smiled lightly and looked at Darryl. "Yes, you did save me at the wedding, but I gave you the Spiritual herb in return. You wouldn't be a cultivator if it weren't for the herb. My debt was cleared long ago."

Darryl was helpless. He smiled bitterly and said, " Fine, since it is already cleared, why did you kidnap me?"

Abby sipped her wine and said calmly, "Are you really that oblivious, or are you just acting dumb? My brother sent his men to kidnap Dax Sanders' wife, but you interrupted them. You really do have some balls for interfering with our family's business."

She stared at him, coldly.

The tension in the room was suffocating.

'So, it's because of that.'

Darryl was amused, and he stared right into Abby's eyes. "Dax is a friend of mine, so his wife is also my friend. Of course, I had to interfere."

Abby grimaced as she splashed the wine onto Darryl

's face.

F*ck...

Darryl cursed internally as he got angry. He could not free himself as his limbs were tied tightly.

He licked the wine from the corner of his lips and smiled as he suppressed his anger. "Miss Guy, this is not how you buy someone a drink."

Abby snickered. "Stop fooling around! We've been planning to kidnap Nancy Lee for a long time, yet you ruined everything and hurt my subordinates! Do you like getting into other people's businesses? Fine, I'll let you know what happens when you are nosy."

She took out a whip from the desk as she spoke.

She was furious not only because Darryl had stepped into her business.

The bald man who led the troop to kidnap Nancy was Abby's cousin named Pete Yames.

Pete had failed to kidnap Nancy, and Darryl had also beat him up. He was in recovery in the hospital.

Abby had always adored her cousin, so she would not forgive Darryl easily.

'F*ck, that woman is vicious.'

Darryl's expression changed when he saw the whip

in Abby's hand. "Abby Guy, you're going too far."

"Am I?"

Abby smiled as she held the whip in her hand. Her eyes mocked him. "I'm going too far? You are the one who ruined our plan and hurt our men!"

She struck the whip as soon as she said that!

Crack!

The whip stuck Darryl's shoulder, and the wound immediately bled.

'The f*ck! She's really going for it?!'

Darryl gritted his teeth, but he did not scream. His eyes bulged red from the pain!

"Abby, I can choose not to interfere, but you have to promise me not to bother Dax after this," Darryl said coldly after he took a sharp breath.

Abby laughed and looked at Darryl with great interest. "You're funny. Do you think that you are in a position to discuss terms with me?"

She raised the whip and struck Darryl again.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The strikes were crisp and loud! Darryl managed to endure the pain as he gritted his teeth for the first few strokes, but he could not take it anymore after

that. He shouted, "Abby Guy!"

He wanted to curse, but it was too painful to speak!

'F*ck!'

Sweat covered Darryl's face, and his clothing was drenched with blood!

Abby stopped after more than 20 strokes and said smilingly, "Darryl, you gave my brother a Godly pill. You have more, don't you?"

"Why don't you give me one of those, and I'll let you go. I'm in a good mood today."

"You want a Godly pill? No problem, I have some with me. Untie me, and I'll get it for you," Darryl said with a smile.

Abby smirked and loosened Darryl.

Darryl was gravely injured from the whippings, so she was not worried that he might trick her.

"Where's the pill? Give it to me." Abby extended her hand and said in a cold tone after she untied Darryl.

Darryl stretched and replied faintly, "What's the hurry?"

That woman was ruthless.

However, he was not worried about his injuries

because he would recover fully after he took some pills.

Darryl cursed internally as he took the last few Godly pills that he had on him. The pills looked extremely tempting as they sat on his palm and emitted a faint medicinal scent.

Abby shuddered, and her gaze became intense. " Give them to me."

Abby had been stuck as a Level Five Master, like Brandon, for the past few years.

She had tried various ways throughout those years to have a breakthrough, but she did not manage to do it. She was anxious and frustrated about it.

Then, she learned that Brandon had obtained a Godly pill from Darryl and had a breakthrough to Level One Master General.

Chapter 226

Abby utilized her connections and power to look for those Godly pills everywhere but to no avail.

A Godly pill was sold at an extremely high price of five billion bucks at the Roger family's auction.

Abby did not attend the auction, and she regretted it immensely when she heard the news.

She was willing to give five billion, even 50 billion bucks, to achieve the Master General level. She was willing to sell her house, car, and even her company for it as a breakthrough to another level was a cultivator's lifelong target!

Darryl had a few of those pills in his palm! The Godly pills were so rare that not even the major sects have them!

Abby was overwhelmed with delight!

However, Darryl smiled sinisterly as he dodged Abby's hand before stuffing those pills into his mouth all at once.

Gulp.

He had swallowed all of them.

'What?!'

Abby shuddered and glared at Darryl before she emitted a murderous aura.

"Are you f*cking with me?"

Abby was extremely furious, and she wanted to whip him another hundred times!

He had swallowed the rare Godly pills, a few of them at once!

It was such a waste! The main effect of those Godly pills was to aid a cultivator in breaking through blockades.

As a Level Four Master, the pills do not affect Darryl, so they were wasted.

"Do you wish to die?" Flickering lights transformed into a long sword in Abby's hand before she pointed it at Darryl!

Darryl spoke coldly when the tip of the sword was about 20 centimeters from his heart, "You will never get a Godly pill if you kill me."

'F*ck you! Do you think I'd give you the pills just like that when you had struck me with a whip for 20 times? I'd rather waste all of them!'

Abby jolted and stopped the sword when she heard that.

"You already ate those pills; there's nothing left.

Are you lying to me?" Abby said in an icy-cold tone; her delicate face was grim.

Darryl smiled faintly. "They're just Godly pills. I have as many as you want."

'What?!'

'He has as many as I want?'

Abby stared at Darryl without blinking.

Godly pills were considered a rare panacea for cultivators! Even some Elders from the Six Orthodox Sects and Clans were stuck and could not break through because they could not get their hands on a Godly pill.

Yet, Darryl said that he could have many pills?

'Does he really have it, or is he tricking me?'

When he saw how Abby changed her expression so quickly like a fool, Darryl felt somewhat satisfied with the revenge.

Darryl had no intention to chat with her. He grabbed a container, which was clearly from the Qing dynasty, but Abby had used it as decor. He walked to the kitchen and placed the ingredients for Godly pills into the container before cooking them.

A Godly pill was the easiest pill to make because the ingredients could be obtained easily.

Abby frowned. "What are you doing?"

"You will know soon." Darryl was too lazy to explain. He continued making the pills in a professional manner; Abby was dumbfounded.

Alchemy required understanding and experience.

Darryl had gained mastery within that period, so his level had increased.

A Godly pill would usually require more than three hours to make.

However, he only needed less than an hour at that time.

Pop!

Darryl proceeded to open the porcelain container with a smile when he sensed the medicinal aura in it.

There were already two Godly pills in the container.

A faint medicinal scent gradually filled the room.

'What?! Did he practice alchemy to concoct the pills? And he succeeded?'

Abby was completely taken aback; the shock was written on her face, and her body quivered.

Darryl looked at her with a smile; he had the two pills in his hand before he stuffed one of them into

his mouth!

"You!"

Abby stomped her foot in panic. 'Why did he do that?! There's only one left in his palm!'

"Darryl, please! Stop eating it! Give it to me."

Chapter 227

Abby bit her lips in frustration. The Godly pill that she had been dreaming about was right in front of her, but she could not lay her hands on it!

"I can make as many of these pills you want, but I can't just give them to anyone," Darryl said smilingly

"Please, I'm begging you. Please give the pill to me ..." Abby's previous arrogance had completely disappeared as she started to beg him.

There was a hint of pleasure on Darryl's face as he acted as if he wanted to eat the last pill.

"No, stop!" Abby's legs almost buckled. "I'm begging you, don't put it to waste. Please don't eat that, just give it to me... It was my fault, I shouldn't have treated you like that. I shouldn't have whipped you, I'm sorry..."

'That's more like it."

Darryl smiled and sat on a chair. "You whipped me almost 20 times. What do you say to that?"

"You can whip me back..." Abby lowered her head.

Abby did not think that she could say such a

humiliating sentence but she was desperate for the Godly pill.

"Whip you?" Darryl sneered. "I'm not interested."

Despite his words, Darryl observed the surrounding. There were about a hundred bodyguards in the house.

He could never leave in one piece if he did not give Abby the pill.

He sighed and tossed the pill at her.

Thud.

Abby caught the pill delightfully and took it.

Abby stared at Darryl intensely and bit her lip after she swallowed the pill. One Godly pill would not be enough if she intended to go for Martial Marquis, and then Martial Saint...

Abby continued to bite her lips as she kneeled.

Darryl could see her ample bosom from his angle.

He had to admit that Abby had a perfect figure. She looked attractive from any angle.

Darryl stared at her before he asked with a smile, " Ah, Miss Guy, what are you doing?"

"Darryl Darby."

Abby bit her lips as if she was hesitant about her

decision. Then, she said softly, "Please take me as your disciple. I would like to learn alchemy from you."

'What? Learn alchemy from me?'

'What am I going to do if you mastered it?'

Darryl almost jumped in shock. He shook his head without even hesitation. "Learn alchemy from me? Forget it, I don't have any plans for a disciple at the moment."

Abby panicked. She moved toward Darryl on her knees and hugged his leg. "I mean it; I am genuine. Please take me as your disciple!"

Abby let go of all her ego and pride in front of Darryl.

If she could master the skills to make those Godly pills, then her future breakthroughs would be as easy as pie!

"No way." Darryl waved his hand.

"Please, Master. Accept me as a disciple." Abby leaned forward earnestly on her knees.

"No, you—" Darryl was conflicted as he knew that she would persist even if he refused to accept her. He said impatiently, "Fine, get up. I'll think about it."

"Yes, sure! Take your time." Abby stood up with a grin and said respectfully, "Master, shall I send you back?"

"No, I can go that myself," Darryl replied hurriedly before he scurried out the room.

Abby called Darryl almost a hundred times that afternoon.

She called him every 10 minutes. Of course, she wanted to know if Darryl was ready to accept her as a disciple.

Darryl wanted to take a nap in the office but he got her calls repeatedly.

Darryl could no longer endure it. When she called him again, he raged, "I won't take you in if you dare call me again."

His method was proven useful as Abby stopped calling him almost immediately.

....

Dynasty Bar.

The bar was a new entertainment center. It had a grand and extravagant interior which attracted many young rich men.

Lily parked her car and waited near the entrance. It

was the day of her date with Mister D.

Lily was a little unsettled to meet at a bar for their first date. However, Mister D had lavished her with gifts before that so it would not be inappropriate for her to meet him there.

Lily looked exceptionally beautiful that day in her long dress and a pair of the Worship of Crystal. She stood at the bar's entrance and immediately became the center of everyone's attention.

All the women there had thick makeup on their faces, so a woman like Lily was like a breath of fresh air.

Vroom.

Chapter 228

Men would die to have a one-night-stand with a divine beauty like her.

Lily was uncomfortable with the crowd's gaze.

'Where is Mister D? Why is he not here yet?'

Then, she heard some car engine noises.

A McLaren sports car drove by and parked at the curb before a young man got out of the vehicle.

He looked attractive with his handsome features and angular contours. He was one of those men who would make ladies blush when they looked at him. He seemed chic and suave in his casual suit.

The women gaped in awe, and there was a twinkle in their eyes.

'What a handsome man!'

A smile blossomed on Lily's face when she noticed that the man walked toward her. 'This can't be Mister D! How young and handsome! His car must be worth at least millions!'

"Hi, Miss Lily. I'm Donoghue Dixon. I'm Mister D from your live stream." The man smiled as he

walked toward Lily. His well-manners left a good impression on Lily.

Lily was a little nervous when she shook hands with the man. "Hi, I'm Lily Lyndon. Just call me Lily."

Lily was not sure why she was so nervous.

She had grown up in a wealthy family, and she had met many excellent gentlemen.

However, it was her first time to meet someone as handsome and as well-mannered as Donoghue. She could not help but take a few more glances at him.

Donoghue did not keep his hand on Lily for long; he immediately let it go after the handshake. Lily's impression of him improved even more after that.

"Lily Lyndon. The Lily flower symbolizes purity and innocence; you have a great name." Donoghue smiled politely as he retrieved a delicate box. "Miss Lily, it is an honor to meet you. This is a gift for our first meeting."

Donoghue opened the box as he spoke.

The women nearby gasped and widened their eyes in disbelief; they almost screamed in jealousy!

There was a diamond ring in the box, and the diamond was the size of a pigeon's egg. It even emitted an enchanting light.

Any woman would go crazy for a diamond such as that!

"This—"

Lily was stunned, but the gesture touched her.

She had never received any silver accessory from Darryl throughout their three years of marriage, not to mention a diamond ring. 1

In comparison, Donoghue gave her a generous gift on their first meeting.

"This isn't appropriate; it's too expensive. I can't take this." Lily took a few seconds to calm herself before she replied softly as she bit her lips.

Donoghue gave her an assuring smile. "Why not? A diamond ring is worthless without a delicate hand, no matter how expensive it is."

Donoghue took Lily's hand as he spoke and carefully put the ring onto her finger.

Lily was a little reluctant, but she was overwhelmed with happiness when he put the diamond ring on her finger.

"Thank you," Lily said softly with her head lowered. She felt a little dizzy.

An indescribable emotion rippled through her. She

was nervous and excited at the same time.

Donoghue smiled. "You're welcome. Let's go; I have reserved a booth. We'll get some drinks."

Lily did not refuse him; she walked into the bar with Donoghue.

The bar lounge played some uptempo music, and there were many people on the dance floor. Gorgeous waitresses in sexy bunny costumes walked around as they served drinks.

Young men and women moved their bodies to their hearts' content on the dance floor.

It was Lily's first time in a place like that, so she was a little nervous.

However, for some reason, she felt safe whenever she looked at Donoghue.

She was not sure why, but she felt safe with him.

A few waitresses bowed respectfully when they reached a luxurious booth on the first floor.

"Young Master Dixon."

Donoghue nodded in acknowledgment and led Lily to a seat; he even pulled the chair for her.

Lily's fondness for him got deeper. She had made the right decision to meet him.

"Donoghue, why did you donate so much money to me?" Lily asked.

"Do you believe in love at first sight?" Donoghue stared at her with a smile and took a sip of his drink. "Some people can decide to be with someone the moment they meet that person. I fell in love with you at first sight. You deserve all the money I gave you."

Lily was elated to hear those words.

Chapter 229

Dax Sanders and Nancy Lee gave each other astonished glances at the opposite booth on the first floor.

'What's happening? Why is Darryl's wife on a date with another man?'

Dax was cautious after Nancy's fortunate escape when someone attempted to kidnap her; he stayed with her all the time.

He brought Nancy to the bar that night because some housing developers had invited him. They were interested in a piece of land, but some stubborn residents had refused to move.

The developers wanted to ask for Dax's help to chase away those residents.

Dax did not expect to see Lily after his discussion with the developers.

"Is that really Darryl's wife?" Nancy furrowed her brows.

She was not sure because she did not have a clear vision; there was a glass between them.

Dax sighed and answered, "I'm sure. Look at her

Worship of Crystal; there are only two pairs of those in Donghai City."

Dax noticed that Lily was a little drunk. She got up from the couch and went to the washroom.

He saw Donoghue smile as he took a pack of white powder and poured it into Lily's glass.

Dax's face fell when he saw that.

'Is he trying to drug my friend's wife? Is he crazy?'

"Dear, stay here. I'm going to take a look," Dax said before he walked out of the booth hastily.

Nancy nodded.

There were not many who dared to challenge her husband in Donghai City, so she was confident that the man would leave as soon as Dax warned him.

Lily left the washroom and returned to the booth.

"Cheers! This is a joyous day, indeed." Donoghue smiled and raised his glass.

Lily nodded. She was not good at drinking, but she was in a good mood that day.

She raised her glass, toasted with Donoghue, and proceeded to take a sip.

A figure stormed into the booth at that exact moment and grabbed Lily's hand.

Splash!

Lily could not react in time, and she spilled her drink.

"Dax Sanders?"

Lily panicked when she saw Dax; she knew he was close to Darryl.

Then, she figured that her relationship with Darryl was already over, so she should not feel embarrassed about it.

Lily regained her composure and furrowed her thin brows. "Dax, what are you doing?"

"You can't drink this." Dax's tone was stern.

He fixed his gaze on Donoghue as he spoke.

Donoghue stared back at Dax silently.

It went on for a few seconds before Donoghue smiled. "My friend, who are you? What is going on? " His tone was calm without any hint of panic or anger.

Dax's gaze tensed.

'He is really something.'

An average person would be flustered when his plan to drug a girl was foiled.

Yet, he was exceptionally calm.

No man without an impressive background could be that composed because manners could not be faked.

"Who are you?" Dax asked him back.

The smile on Donoghue's face remained as he answered in a neutral tone, "My name's Donoghue Dixon."

Donoghue Dixon?

Dax had never heard of that name.

There were no families in Donghai City with the surname Dixon. That man had to be from an influential family; his acts did not seem like an average person at all.

There was a Dixon family in Jiangnan, not too far away from Donghai City. It was a place called Yunzhou City. The Dixons were a powerful patrician family; every single member of the Dixon family was a cultivator, and their influence was everywhere.

Perhaps...

Was Donoghue Dixon from that Dixon family?

Dax had to admit that the Dixon family had power. However, he must be crazy to hit on his friend's

wife!

Chapter 230

"I don't care who you are, but Lily is my friend's wife. I assure you that you would not be able to leave Donghai City in one piece if you put your hands on her."

Dax stared at Donoghue coldly. "How can you do something as despicable as drugging a woman?"

Donoghue maintained his smile; he still looked very calm.

On the other hand, Lily panicked and tried to explain. "Dax, there must be a misunderstanding. He's my friend; he won't do such a thing."

Donoghue was well-mannered, and he was a gentleman.

How could he have ill intentions toward her? It was impossible.

Dax looked at Lily earnestly. "Trust me. He isn't a good person."

Dax pointed at the broken glass on the floor. "I saw him slip drugs into your glass when you were in the washroom! He wanted to trick you! Come with me."

Dax gripped Lily's arm.

To Dax's surprise, Lily resisted and took a step back.

"Dax, I trust that Donoghue is a good man. I'm not a little girl. I know how to judge people. Please, mind your own business, and don't bother with min. " Lily bit her lips.

Donoghue had lavished her with gifts during her live streams, and he even stood up for her when a hater spread nonsense about her on the internet.

How could he be a bad person?

Dax almost lost his patience.

'What the hell is wrong with Lily?'

She chose to trust a stranger than him, her husband' s close friend?

Dax's tone became even firmer as he thought about that. "No, you need to come with me. Does Darryl know that you're meeting this guy?"

Darryl?

Lily felt conflicted when she heard his name.

She thought that Darryl was in prison somewhere after her family tricked him and chased him out of the family. She could not find him when she needed him the most, so she did not hold any hope for him anymore.

In comparison, Donoghue was so much better than her husband.

Lily lost her interest to explain herself when she thought about that. She walked toward Donoghue and turned herself away from Dax as she bit her lip.

Donoghue, who was silent, finally spoke in a soft voice, "Lily, is this Dax bothering you?"

Lily did not reply; she nodded silently.

All she wanted was for Dax to stop disturbing her and Donoghue; she wanted him to leave.

Donoghue nodded and smiled. "Alright, I'll get rid of him."

He clapped his hands once.

Swoosh.

Burly men in black attire immediately stormed into the booth and stared at Dax with a cold, menacing gaze.

'He called his men?'

Dax furrowed his brows and sneered, "You want to get your hands on me? Do you know who the f*ck am I? No one dares to be this brazen to me in the whole of Donghai City!"

Nancy rushed to the scene and shouted, "What the

hell is going on?"

'Does he not know who Dax is even though he is in Donghai City? How absurd!'

Donoghue maintained the smile on his face as he said to Dax, "I don't care who you are. This is my bar, and you are in my territory. You are the first person who dares to cause trouble here. I can't just let you off even if you are a god because you bothered Lily."

Donoghue raised his arm as he said that.

His men immediately moved toward Dax!

Indeed, Donoghue was the eldest son in the Dixon family, an influential family in Yunzhou city, the provincial capital!

When she realized that the men would fight with Dax, Lily was hesitant, but she chose to keep quiet. She bit her lips and turned the other direction as if she had nothing to do with all those people.

"How dare you!" Nancy was worried and angry at the same time.

"Dear, you should leave. Call the others," Dax said in a calm tone; there was no hint of fear on his face.

Nancy had encountered many situations when she was with Dax. She knew that she would not help if

she were to stay there; she might even bring more trouble to Dax. The smartest thing to do was to call for help.

The tension in the booth peaked. They were ready to confront each other at any moment.

Dax was not worried at all. He walked toward Lily and grasped her hand. "You have to come with me; you are Darryl's wife."

Lily flung Dax's arm away in annoyance. "I said that Donoghue is a good person. Stop bothering me!"

Chapter 231

"Lily, don't worry. I'll get rid of this pest immediately," said Donoghue with a grin as he waved his hand. "Everyone, get him."

In an instant, a dozen men pulled out their knives and rushed toward Dax!

Dax was horrified. He hastily pulled out an axe to defend himself.

However, how can one man defeat a dozen!?

Clash!

The whole room instantly fell into chaos.

Lily's pretty face was full of distraught. She had never seen such a bloody scene before.

Donoghue smiled and comforted Lily. "Don't be afraid, Lily. They're just removing the pest, it'll be fine soon."

Slice!

A knife struck Dax on his back accompanied by a loud noise. His skin and flesh were torn apart as blood came gushing out!

"Gah!" Dax howled loudly in pain. Although he was

a battle-hardened man, he was no match against attacks from all sides!

Dax endured the pain, swung his axe, and knocked out two of those men.

However, half a dozen men started surrounding him again and relentlessly swung their knives at Dax.

Slice! Slice!

Dax's body was bloodied as he was struck countless times. Eventually, his vision faded, and he collapsed on the ground. It was unknown whether he was dead or alive.

Not long after, several men in black dragged Dax's bloodied body and tossed him out of the bar.

...

Meanwhile, Nancy continuously tried to call some numbers on her phone outside the bar.

She made dozens of calls yet none of them were answered. Eventually, she remembered Old Master Sanders was having a family meeting and all of Dax's men must be in the meeting.

Nancy was terribly worried. She suddenly thought of Darryl and immediately called him.

The call was answered soon enough.

"Darryl, come quick! Dax is in trouble!" Nancy had already shouted till her throat went sore before Darryl could react.

On the other side of the phone.

Darryl was lying and resting on his office sofa. He immediately got up when he heard those words. " What's going on? Calm down and slowly tell me!"

"Come to Dynasty Bar, Dax had been attacked and is now unconscious!" Nancy cried out.

What?

Darryl instantly had a serious look on his face. He hung up the phone and quickly left his office.

It was 9pm and the employees of Platinum Corporation had left long ago. Darryl bumped into a man just as he exited the company's main entrance.

However, the man remained still while Darryl almost fell from the impact.

Darryl was in a rush so he simply apologized and tried to go around the man.

At that moment, the man grabbed onto Darryl and said, "Is an apology enough for bumping into someone?"

The man's tone of voice was peculiar and Darryl

lifted his head to take a look at him. The man was wearing a black trench coat and a cap with its brim positioned rather low. Darryl could not make out the face of this man.

"I'm sorry, I've got an emergency. You must be an employee here. I'll give you a promotion tomorrow," said Darryl as he tried to go around the man again.

The man chuckled faintly with no signs of allowing Darryl to pass.

Huh?

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows. "I'm in a rush, please excuse me."

At that moment, Darryl felt an overpowering aura emanating from the man! Even though the man deliberately held back, it was still pretty strong.

"Move aside, I'm in a rush!" Darryl's tone of voice had a hint of impatience as he was rushing to rescue Dax.

The man chuckled faintly again. "Don't be so rash, my master is looking for you."

"Master?" whispered Darryl to himself.

Darryl rejected the man without a second thought. " I'm not interested. I have important matters to

attend to."

Darryl refused to entertain the man any further and left after finishing his words.

As Darryl was about to leave, the man immediately pulled a huge sack and covered Darryl's entire body!

Motherf*cker, another sack!

The man proceeded to strike Darryl on the back of his head with his hand causing Darryl's vision to spin and soon fainted.

Darryl did not know how long he was unconscious. All he knew was that he felt light-headed when he opened his eyes.

'Which f*cker tied me up?' Darryl's eyes were red. Dax was struggling between life and death but Darryl was not there!

Chapter 232

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows and was promptly stunned after surveying his surroundings.

What was this place?

Darryl felt the continuous gusts of the sea breeze. He looked around and noticed he was on a small island surrounded by the ocean. What a scenic view.

A huge stone pillar over 150 feet tall stood not far from Darryl. Two large imposing words were elaborately carved on it—Elysian Island!

Elysian Island!?

'Damn, this is Elysian Island?'

Darryl could not help but feel shocked.

Elysian Island was a man-made island situated not too far from Donghai City. It would take roughly three to four hours to reach here by boat.

The island was initially constructed to make use of marine resources, but the project was eventually abandoned for unknown reasons. This island was currently occupied by the Grandmaster Heaven Cult who turned it into their altar.

No one dared to enter Elysian Island unless they

had a death wish. The nearby fishermen avoided the island. There were some daring cultivators who wanted to explore the island but were never heard from again.

Truth be told, Elysian Island was truly a beautiful place accompanied by the gentle sea breeze. It was quite literally Heaven on Earth.

As Darryl was admiring the view, he noticed there were tons of exotic plants nearby!

Damn, there were Heaven Spiritual Herbs, Saint's Fungus, Three-lobed Mulberry Leaves, Bicolor Flower, and even... Monk's Blood Fruit...

These were all precious ingredients for refining pills and elixirs! If Darryl could harvest all these plants, then would he not be able to refine any pill he wanted!?

At that moment, a man wearing a black trench coat approached Darryl and dragged him along. "You're awake? Come with me."

Darryl knew he was the man who knocked him unconscious.

This man was incredibly strong and single-handedly pulled Darryl along. They took the stone steps ahead toward the plaza.

This plaza on the island was as big as eight football

fields.

Disciples of the Grandmaster Heaven Cult stood guard along both sides of the steps toward the plaza. The place was heavily guarded with disciples at every few steps.

These people were experts without a doubt. Any of them was at least as strong as Darryl!

The Grandmaster Heaven Cult has over a hundred thousand disciples all over the continent. However, only about 3,000 resided in Elysian Island's altar.

These 3,000 people were elite disciples with their ranks being at least a Level Four Master!

Darryl let the man drag him along while his eyes wandered about the surroundings. There was a magnificent cluster of buildings on a nearby hilltop as if it was a palace for the gods. This Grandmaster Heaven Cult's Altar was truly sophisticated.

Darryl was immediately dumbfounded when he arrived at the plaza!

There were over a thousand people lined up in neat rows at the plaza! In front of them was an ornate throne adorned with carvings of numerous dragons.

This Throne of Dragons was aged and appeared to be carved out from an entire block of rosewood! This chair was worth millions!

A woman sat atop the throne. She seemed gentle and dignified with the temperament of a queen!

The 30-odd-years-old woman had a refined facial feature with the beauty of a goddess. She wore a light yellow dress which accentuated her voluptuous curves and had a simply alluring sense of divinity.

This woman was the Cult Mistress of Grandmaster Heaven Cult, Monica Vaughn.

Gulp.

Darryl was surprised to see her and could not help but swallow his saliva.

Darryl never thought he would meet such an exquisite beauty on Elysian Island.

"How dare you look directly at our cult mistress, on your knees!" As Darryl was still fascinated with Monica, a man approached him from behind and viciously kicked the back of his knees.

Darryl lost his balance and immediately knelt down.

Could the woman on the throne really be the Cult Mistress?

The Cult Master of Grandmaster Heaven Cult coddled his Cult Mistress. Therefore, meeting her was like meeting the Cult Master himself. She was

in control of more than a hundred thousand Grandmaster Heaven Cult disciples!

'This is bad, I looked directly at the Cult Mistress. Am I going to get beheaded?' thought Darryl anxiously.

Darryl had never felt so anxious in his entire life. He had some good personal connections at Donghai City so had always been able to solve any issues which came his way.

Conversely, Darryl was powerless now that he was on Elysian Island! His fate was in the hands of the Cult Mistress!

"Darryl, right?" said Monica slowly. Her tone of voice was gentle but with a hint of majesty.

Darryl rigidly nodded his head.

"Do you know why I invited you here today?" asked Monica as she stared at Darryl.

'Invited me? Invited? Was knocking me out an invitation?' thought Darryl with a wry smile.

At the same time, Darryl was afraid as he had previously practiced in private the Ascension of the Nine Dragons secret manual which was stolen from their Altar by Skyler.

Could it be the Cult Mistress had learned about the

truth and sent someone to deal with Darryl?

Chapter 233

Darryl was sweating at that thought. Practicing secret manuals in private was forbidden in the martial arts world. Darryl had no means of escape if that was truly the case.

Darryl was surrounded by thousands of disciples with each of them being the sect's cream of the crop such that not even a fly could escape.

"Don't worry, I'm not here to interrogate you. I just want you to verify a certain matter. Did you rescue a dozen or so ladies three days ago?" said Monica with a smile.

What?

Darryl's expression instantly froze as he was a little confused.

Darryl eventually recalled Chester had kidnapped about a dozen women and gave them to Darryl for his personal pleasure but Darryl released them.

"Do you know who those ladies are?" asked Monica in a gentle tone.

Darryl scratched his head and said, "Madam, I don't know their true identities. I only know they are

members of Grandmaster Heaven Cult. My first thought was to find a way to release them and guarantee their safety."

"Good, good. You did well." Monica nodded and praised Darryl. She looked at him with a beaming smile and continued, "Grandmaster Heaven Cult is destined for greatness if we have loyal disciples like you, therefore I invite you here today to reward you."

'Damn it, all this just to reward me? Their method of rewarding me is f*cking special. Tying me up in a sack and bringing me all the way here!?' Darryl was unsure if he should laugh or cry.

At that moment, Monica raised her hand and a gentle wave of internal energy pulled Darryl's and lifted him to stand upright.

"Those ladies are Oracle candidates for Grandmaster Heaven Cult," said Monica.

The Oracle was a unique position in Grandmaster Heaven Cult as there could only be one at any time. That person must be proficient in the beliefs and ideologies of Grandmaster Heaven Cult whose main responsibilities were to spread the cult's teachings and recruit new disciples.

The Oracle was considered Grandmaster Heaven Cult's mascot. Their status was second only to the

cult master and mistress.

However, an Oracle had no real authority but was still highly respected by the cult's followers.

Darryl was delighted upon hearing that. Never did he imagine he would bumble his way into a great deed. It would have brought much dishonor to Elysian Island were those Oracle candidates violated.

The Oracle was the mascot for the Cult's disciples after all.

Thankfully Darryl did not succumb to his lust. Otherwise, today would be the end of him.

As Darryl internally rejoiced, Monica laughed and said, "You've done a great deed for us, and from what I've heard, Donghai City's Skyler Burr has relinquished his Hall Master position to you."

"However, the Hall Master position is unworthy for such a talented man like you."

Monica slowly raised her hand as she finished.

The servant girl beside Monica immediately walked in front of Darryl and bestowed him a jade slip.

Monica smiled and said softly, "I hereby declare from today onward, Darryl Darby is an Elder Master of Grandmaster Heaven Cult."

Wow.

Grandmaster Heaven Cult's Elder Master!?

Everyone at the plaza was in an uproar upon hearing Monica's words. Thousands of shocked eyes instantly focused on Darryl with admiration and envy.

Darryl was in disbelief as well. Elder Master?

This title was rather intimidating.

'Is this status very high?'

Darryl's mind was filled with questions as he held onto the purple jade slip.

It was well-known the hierarchy of Grandmaster Heaven Cult begins with the Cult Master and Cult Mistress at the top followed by Yin and Yang Messengers, Four Guardian Kings, and the Hall Masters.

However, there was one more position in the cult which was Elder Master.

The status of an Elder Master was second to the cult master and mistress. However, the Elder Master actually possessed real authority and power!

"Mistress, the position of Elder Master has been left vacant for so long because we couldn't find a suitable candidate. Although Darryl is talented, he's only a Level Four Master and simply not strong

enough. How could he be able to bear the responsibilities of an Elder Master? Please reconsider this, Mistress."

At that moment, a burly man stood up from the side and said in a panic.

This burly man was the Black Tortoise—one of the Four Guardian Kings, Sheldon Schwarz.

He glanced at Darryl with contempt as he spoke.

Sheldon started as a mere disciple years ago and only after relentlessly working hard and achieving various accomplishments did he slowly arrive at the position of the Black Tortoise.

"You're just a mere Hall Master. It's unacceptable for you to rise through the ranks in an instant and become an Elder Master," said Sheldon.

Several people around started voicing their opinions upon hearing Sheldon's words.

"That's right. Darryl's power is only average. He won't be able to handle such an important role!"

"True and he's also too young and reckless. He needs more training!"

"Cult Mistress, please reconsider this!"

Thousands of people knelt down and prostrated.

Chapter 234

Monica sat atop her throne and smiled. "Are all of you doubting me?"

Monica's voice was not loud, but could clearly be heard across the entire plaza as a powerful aura emanated from her body!

The Cult Mistress's aura was truly powerful.

"No, Mistress. I dared not!"

Sheldon's body trembled as he prostrated and repeatedly knocked his head against the ground before retreating to the side soon after.

Monica said slowly, "Darryl rescued the Oracle candidates and for this deed, he's entirely worthy to be the Elder Master. The Cult Master and I have discussed this and come to this decision together. Darryl is a talented man and will be able to handle this huge responsibility."

Everyone silenced themselves with none dared to speak another word.

Meanwhile, Darryl was thrilled beyond measure!

'Haha, it seems the Elder Master position is rather high!' thought Darryl.

"Darryl, stay here for today. The Cult Master is cultivating in seclusion and will finish within two days. You've been granted the Elder Master title, so we'll be holding the Elder Master's Banquet in your honor tonight. You cannot be absent," said Monica slowly.

The Elder Master's Banquet was held every time an Elder Master was chosen. It was also a way for the Elder Master to show off his recognition.

This was a tradition that could not be changed.

Darryl was unaware of this and simply smiled before saying, "This... I don't want to trouble you for this."

Darryl had been on Elysian Island for a long time while Dax's condition was still unknown.

Darryl was really nervous and wanted to quickly return to Donghai City.

'What?'

'He doesn't want to attend the banquet?'

The people around were instantly perplexed. They stared at Darryl like he was a fool.

Monica furrowed her eyebrows as well. "Darryl, you have to attend your own banquet as the Elder Master. It won't be called the Elder Master's

Banquet if the Elder Master himself was absent, right? This is the tradition of Grandmaster Heaven Cult, do you think it's a game?"

Darryl was terrified upon seeing Monica's expression.

It seemed Darryl could not afford to be absent for this banquet. Eventually, he relented and decided to stay for a night. He would take this opportunity to harvest the exotic plants on the island.

Darryl hastily replied after some thoughts. " Mistress, you're mistaken. I just thought I'm already receiving such great treatment for my first time here at the Altar and was momentarily taken aback when you would go as far as dedicating a banquet just for me. I've decided to swear my loyalty to Grandmaster Heaven Cult, the Cult Master and the Cult Mistress!"

Darryl was pleased with his own wittiness.

His reply was foolproof.

Monica's expression eased up a bit as she nodded her head. "The Cult Master and I are pleased to have your loyalty. All of you may take your leave then."

Monica slowly stood up after finishing her words. She turned and headed to the main hall behind her along with the support of her maids.

"Take care, Cult Mistress."

Thousands of people at the plaza instantly knelt down and bid Monica farewell in unison. The power of their voices shook the entire plaza.

Darryl imitated them and knelt on the ground as he shouted alongside. However, his gaze was fixed upon Monica's slender back.

Rumor has it that the Cult Master was over 60 years old, yet he was able to have such a gorgeous wife.

The Cult Master was truly a lucky man.

It was 8pm and the entire island was brightly illuminated to grandly celebrate Darryl's Elder Master's Banquet.

Fireworks lit up the entire island with several hundred women performing songs and dances. It was very pleasing to the eye.

Everyone eagerly toasted Darryl for his accomplishments during the banquet with each of them wanting to get close and butter him up since he was now the Elder Master after all.

Among the crowd's toasting and cheering, Darryl did not forget to toast the Cult Mistress as well!

Even so, Darryl controlled his alcohol consumption and remained sober.

He planned to sneak out and harvest some herbs in secret once the banquet was over.

As the banquet ended at midnight, Darryl found an opportunity to slip away from the main hall and headed toward the seaside where those exotic plants grew.

After half an hour, Darryl left fully loaded as he had harvested quite a lot of spirit herbs. It was truly a bountiful harvest.

Darryl could refine tons of pills and elixirs with such a large amount of herbs!

Darryl's room was not far from the Cult Mistress's. He lightened his footsteps as he got closer to avoid alerting Monica. Stealing herbs was not a nice thing to do after all.

Darryl suddenly froze as he walked past Monica's room!

Moan...

A faint painful moaning could be heard periodically from Monica's room.

It was the Cult Mistress's voice!

Her voice resonated from her room with a kind of deadly allure which caused Darryl to feel the bones in his body weaken.

Chapter 235

Damn, what was the Cult Mistress doing in her room?

The noises she made...

Darryl could not hold back his curiosity and slowly approached the door.

Monica heard the packets of spiritual herbs rustling in Darryl's hands.

"Who's there? Come... Come in quickly," said Monica softly.

Darryl immediately swung open the door without any hesitation upon hearing her words.

Gasp.

Darryl gasped and was dumbfounded at what he saw in the room.

Monica wore a purple dress as she curled up on her bed in the aromatic room. Her body shivered incessantly and sweated profusely. She was clearly in a lot of pain!

What... What was going on?

Had the Heaven Cult Elixir activated in the Cult

Mistress?

Monica had the same appearance as Skyler before the toxin activated inside him.

All members of the Grandmaster Heaven Cult including the Cult Mistress must consume this elixir.

Monica was somewhat angry as she could feel Darryl 's gaze on her body. No one in the cult was brazen enough to stare at her body.

However, Monica did not care for such matters now! Her life was on the line due to the toxin's activation!

Today was indeed the toxin's activation day for Monica. The Cult Master was the only one with the antidote for the Heaven Cult Elixir! However, he was currently cultivating in seclusion and no one dared to disturb him as any interruption during one' s cultivation could easily cause them to have a psychotic break!

Monica opened her lips slightly and feebly spoke to Darryl, "Darryl... See if you can find the antidote in the box beside the bed."

Darryl walked over to the bedside and opened the wooden box but it was empty.

"There's nothing here, Mistress," said Darryl.

Monica felt hopeless in an instant!

Could this be her end?

Monica felt as though millions of ants were biting her body as she tossed and turned.

Darryl took a deep breath and smiled. "Mistress, don't worry. I have the antidote."

What?

Does Darryl have the antidote?

Monica's body trembled as she looked at Darryl with disbelief. She was too weak to speak due to the toxin's effects. However, those beautiful eyes reflected the anxiety within her.

Unbelievable!

The method for refining the Heaven Cult Elixir and its antidote had been kept secret by the Cult Masters for centuries. This was to ensure the cult's disciples' loyalty.

Not even the Cult Mistress knew about the method.

How would Darryl who just entered Elysian Island have the antidote?

Monica stared intensely at Darryl. Could he be lying in order to take advantage of the Cult Mistress? Monica blushed, felt ashamed, and angry at that

thought.

Nonetheless, Darryl's next actions were beyond her expectations.

Darryl walked around the room, grabbed a porcelain pot, and lit a fire.

The main ingredient for the Heaven Cult Elixir's antidote was the Bicolor Flower which he had secretly harvested many of them just moments ago.

Monica was in pain and laid there in a stupor while being uncertain of Darryl's actions.

Was Darryl going to refine the antidote on the spot?

It was impossible!

At that moment, the persisted toxin effects had caused waves of immense pain toward Monica who ended up covered in sweat. She could no longer endure and tumbled onto the floor.

The effect of the Heaven Cult Elixir's toxin worsens as time goes by. The pain was initially bearable but it would eventually become too much to endure!

Darryl was distracted by Monica's struggles as he focused on refining the pill.

"Darryl, tie me up," said Monica softly. She was still conscious and was aware that Darryl was her last hope. She could not risk disturbing him!

Darryl nodded his head. It was true that pill refinement required complete concentration. He noticed there was a rope on the table and brought it toward Monica. “Mistress, please excuse me.”

Darryl tied Monica with the rope and also stuffed a silk scarf in her mouth as he spoke.

Monica’s screams were muffled as she cried out in pain.

Chapter 236

Half an hour later.

Darryl smiled and took the pill out of the porcelain pot.

The entire room was filled with the pill's sweet aroma.

Monica was stunned as she stared with disbelief at the pill in Darryl's hand!

Darryl walked toward Monica with a smile. 'Saving the Cult Mistress is yet another great deed by me. I can't wait to be rewarded! Haha!' thought Darryl. He removed the silk scarf from Monica's mouth and slowly placed the pill into her mouth.

Darryl stood at the side and waited patiently for the pill to take effect.

Monica gently closed her eyes. She initially had doubts, but felt the pain in her body slowly dissipate after a few seconds and was pleasantly surprised.

"Darryl, how did you know of the antidote's refinement method?" Monica asked in excitement.

At that moment, her body no longer felt any pains.

"I read it from an old book," said Darryl plainly.

Monica praised Darryl and gave him a few looks. " Excellent! I wasn't mistaken. You truly deserve the position of Elder Master. Speaking of which, I have an assignment for when you return to Donghai City."

'Damn, I saved your life and what I get is an assignment?' Darryl thought.

Darryl was speechless but had no choice except replying with respect, "Just say the word, Mistress. I 'll do my best."

Monica said slowly, "I received news the Six Orthodox Sects are planning to set up a cultivation school called the Hexad School with the purpose of developing excellent disciples for their six sects."

"They want to set up a cultivation school? Why haven't I heard of this?" Darryl asked.

"This school will be established in two days. Of course, you wouldn't know as I receive this information in advance," replied Monica.

So they were still in preparation.

Darryl nodded his head but was internally surprised.

The average joe was still unaware of cultivation and the establishment of such a school would agitate

the entire of Donghai City.

Monica continued, “Many rich children from Donghai City will definitely register to join the school upon its establishment. When the time comes, find a way to join the school and bring me a book titled Supreme Mystery Scripture.”

Supreme Mystery Scripture?

Darryl was stunned and asked with a frown, “ Mistress, how can I find that in such a large school?”

Monica smiled and said, “I’ve looked into it. The school principal is Graham Potter from Wudang Sect. The Supreme Mystery Scripture should be with him. You need to think of a way to steal it.”

Damn it.

One must be really powerful to hold the principal role. Darryl had no choice but to agree with this assignment. “Mistress, don’t worry. I’ll be sure to accomplish this mission.”

Darryl could not help but look at the Cult Mistress as he spoke.

Monica stared at him. “Do loosen the bindings on me.”

“Right!” Darryl quickly went over and loosen the

rope on Monica.

Darryl struggled for a long time but still could not loosen the rope. He was panicking when tying her up earlier and had accidentally tied too tightly. Darryl became anxious as he could not loosen the rope no matter what he did.

Darryl's body trembled when he attempted to untie the rope.

Monica was embarrassed and her body shivered as her beautiful face started heating up.

Monica was known as the Cult Mistress and the Cult Master's wife, but they never had an intimate relationship.

The Cult Master was over 60 years old and was far too old for such intimacy.

Another reason was that the Cult Master devoted himself to cultivation and had no desires for carnal pleasures.

Everyone held Monica in high regard as the Cult Mistress and no man dared to get close to her. Darryl was the first and only exception.

Monica felt a throbbing in her heart unlike ever before.

However, she softly said, "It's fine if you can't

loosen it. There's a pair of scissors in the drawer. Use it to cut the rope."

Darryl acknowledged her, quickly went over to the drawer and opened it. There was indeed a pair of scissors inside.

Hmm?

What was this?

There was a peculiar-looking ginseng beside the pair of scissors. The ginseng was entirely aquamarine and radiated a mesmerizing light.

The colors of ginseng were usually yellow or white.

Even the rare blood ginseng was red.

Why would there be a green one?

Chapter 237

"Mistress, what's this?" Darryl grabbed the green ginseng and asked curiously.

Monica looked at it and said, "It's called the Jasper Ginseng. It's a type of rare ginseng that can increase a cultivator's power. The Cult Master gave it to me."

Monica smiled and continued, "I shall bestow this ginseng to you as a reward for saving my life."

Darryl was full of excitement. His power was at the rank of Level Four Master.

He would first ascend to Level Five Master after consuming the ginseng then ascend to the rank of Master General by consuming the Godly Pill.

'Haha, that's perfect!' thought Darryl. He was incredibly delighted and immediately ate the entire ginseng without a second thought.

"Did you just eat the entire thing?"

Monica was stunned with a worried look on her face. "The effect of this ginseng is very potent. You can't directly eat it. You have to steep it in boiling water and only drink the solution once a month."

What?

It was meant to be steeped?

"Mistress, you should've told me this earlier!" Darryl cried out! Darryl could have stopped even if Monica mentioned it two seconds before!

Darryl was concerned. "Mistress, what's gonna happen to me since I've eaten the whole thing?"

Was Darryl going to die?

'Please be anything but death!' thought Darryl.

Monica shook her head with uncertainty. "I don't know either. No one has ever consumed the Jasper Ginseng in such a manner."

Darryl sighed. He tried to ignore this matter and focused on freeing the Cult Mistress.

Darryl grabbed the scissors and walked toward Monica. Suddenly, he felt that his entire body was extremely cold as he arrived next to Monica. It was as if he was tossed into a freezer!

"It's so cold!"

Darryl shivered as a layer of ice started forming on his hair!

This was without a doubt the effect of misusing the ginseng!

The Jasper Ginseng was an extremely potent spiritual herb. It was meant to be steeped into a solution but Darryl ate it whole. The latent power within the ginseng was instantly released into Darryl's body. It was impossible for him to bear it!

"It's so cold, so cold!"

Darryl shivered continuously, but the cold feelings soon rapidly receded only to be replaced by an indescribable burning sensation.

Darryl now felt as if his entire body was set ablaze!

"Agh!"

At this moment, Darryl felt like he was being incinerated! The painful burning sensations caused him to yell and roll on the floor.

"Mistress, what's going on? It's hot, so, so hot!" Darryl exclaimed.

"I... I'm afraid you're going to have a psychotic break," replied Monica with a frown.

What?

Psychotic break?

Darryl was stunned and felt completely hopeless upon hearing those words.

A psychotic break was a cultivator's greatest fear!

Countless legendary cultivators had died because of a psychotic break!

"This feels unbearable!" Darryl uncontrollably rolled on the ground in pain! He could feel his body heating up and immediately took his clothes off as he felt like he was going to catch on fire.

"Darryl, what are you..." Monica's beautiful face instantly blushed.

Darryl suddenly looked at her after hearing her voice!

"I feel so hot, it's like I'm burning!" roared Darryl as he felt a fire slowly building up in his energy field! The immense heat caused his mind to go blank.

Darryl stared at the Cult Mistress and pounced on her in a flash!

"Darryl, keep yourself together. I'm the Cult Mistress, how dare you behave so crudely!"

Rip!

Darryl ignored her words and simply tore off her long dress.

Monica was still tied up and could not fight back. At that moment, Darryl's lips kissed her without any warning.

"Mmph!" Monica could not help but make a sound as she tightly bit her lips.

...

Donghai City.

Lily had just finished streaming and dressed up in preparation to head out. Her best friend had called her earlier and invited her out shopping.

Although the weather outside was great, Lily's mood was not.

Dax was badly injured in the incident last night at Dynasty Bar when his men rushed to the scene.

Donoghue had Lily leave first as the situation was in complete chaos.

Chapter 238

Dax was one of the prominent figures in Donghai City. Donoghue could be in big trouble for offending him since his condition was still unknown.

Lily was worried ever since last night's incident.

Donoghue was absent in Lily's previous live-streaming session as well. 1

'Could it be that something bad happened to him?'

Lily's mind was filled with worrying thoughts.

Ding ding.

Lily's phone suddenly beeped at that moment.

She took out her phone and was instantly joyous upon seeing a text message from Donoghue.

He merely sent a short sentence. [Lily, I hope you weren't terrified of yesterday's incident?] Even his demeanor through text was gentlemanly.

Lily felt an unexplainable sense of relief as her mood lightened upon reading Donoghue's text.

She deduced from the text that Donoghue was safe from last night's incident.

Lily hastily replied, [I'm alright. How about you? Dax is a powerful man in Donghai City. He'll never let you off easily for beating him up like that. You must be careful.]

Donoghue grinned on the other side of the phone. [Don't worry. Even though Dax is a powerful man, he 's never a threat to me. He has no chance of hurting me, don't worry.]

Lily was relieved at his reply.

At that moment, Donoghue sent another message. [Lily, we were so rudely interrupted by that pesky Dax last night. How about we hang out at Dynasty Bar again tonight? I don't know why, but I feel delighted when you're around. I feel worry-free whenever I'm with you.]

There was even a smiley face at the end of the message.

Lily felt an indescribable sweetness in her heart upon reading his message.

Donoghue was well-mannered and knew how to flatter. Not to mention he was rich and handsome. How was it possible for a man to have all those traits?

'How could any girl not fall for such an excellent man?' Lily thought.

[Sure, see you tonight,] replied Lily without any hesitation.

...

Donghai City First Hospital.

Hundreds of burly men stood menacingly at the second-floor inpatient department! All of them had an unrestrained angered expression with murderous auras emanating from their bodies. Their presence had crammed up the entire second floor.

Those men were Dax's subordinates.

No one dared to move about on the second floor. Even doctors and nurses were afraid of speaking up. Anyone would be scared in the presence of so many burly men.

These burly men were led by an old man wearing a white tang suit. The old man's expression was filled with worry.

This old man was none other than Dax's grandfather, Saul.

Saul had been at the suburbs manor due to the great atmosphere there as he spent his time gardening and fiddling with antiques.

Saul was shocked and angered upon hearing news

of Dax's assault and rushed to the hospital the night before.

Dax was still in his life-saving surgery even till now.

Meanwhile, Saul was worried and angry.

Saul had struggled and worked hard many years ago in Donghai City and made a name for the Sanders family with his own two hands. He was revered by every prominent family in Donghai City with the utmost respect.

However, someone went as far as to hurt his precious grandson! It was simply unacceptable for Saul!

Nancy's face was stained with tear marks as she sat dejectedly on a chair beside him.

Her heart shattered at the sight of Dax's bloodied body the previous night.

A dozen of Dax's men eventually arrived and were about to storm Dynasty Bar last night. However, they did not expect over a hundred of Donoghue's men to rush out against them.

It was without a doubt, Dax's men were ultimately defeated and badly injured after a chaotic battle and they were staying at the hospital as well.

Nancy prayed that her husband would be alright.

He must recover.

At that moment, the operating room door opened as Shelly came out wearing a white coat.

Shelly performed this surgery herself as she knew Dax and Darryl were close friends.

The whole operation took roughly seven hours from last night till now.

Shelly was completely exhausted with her forehead covered with sweat. It was hard for anyone to endure such a long operation.

"Chief Shelly, how's Dax?"

"How's my grandson?"

Saul and Nancy immediately approached Shelly. Their words were different but they shared the same worried tone.

Shelly sighed and hesitated before speaking. "His condition isn't good, there's no guarantee he'll survive. Even if he could stay alive, it's possible he would be disabled..."

In truth, Shelly had been a doctor for so many years and never seen someone so badly injured.

Dax was cut a total of 36 times with his entire body covered in wounds. His flesh was disfigured and

even the muscles in his arms and legs were torn. The entire operating table was stained red with his blood.

Chapter 239

A young nurse who entered the operating room for the first time was frightened to tears upon seeing Dax's condition.

The average joe would not have survived the journey to the hospital with such injuries.

Shelly was distraught, but at the same time found it hard not to admire Dax's tenacious perseverance.

Dax could not be sedated due to the wounds on his body. However, he did not make a single sound during the seven-hour long operation and was conscious all the way through. He finally could not hang on any longer and fainted after the operation was completed.

Saul was shocked and his eyes instantly became bloodshot upon hearing Shelly's words.

'Dax is the Sanders family's sole heir! Do you intend to end our family? Donoghue Dixon, I'll make your family pay with blood!' Saul thought.

This was no longer a mere grudge.

It was now a blood feud!

"Old Master, Madam, something bad has

happened!" At that moment, a younger member of the family ran panicky toward Saul and Nancy.

Saul scolded him, "What's all the fuss? How rude of you to be making so much noise. What's the matter?"

The young man panted heavily. "Old Master, Donoghue brought his men and took over Dax Street."

What?

Donghai City's Dax Street was named after Dax Sanders. This was because 90% of the shops along that street were the Sanders family's property.

Among those shops included hotels, KTV, bars, internet cafes, and billiard halls who would punctually pay the Sanders family a monthly protection fee.

Donoghue had not just injured Dax. He even took over the entire Dax Street, which was equivalent to severing the Sanders' wealth source!

Saul's body trembled with his eyes filled with fiery rage! He clenched his fist and viciously punched the wall. "Yunzhou City's Dixon family, there won't be peace as long as either of us is standing."

Wow.

Saul had punched a big hole into the concrete wall

which was accompanied by a violent shockwave.

The surrounding hospital staff were rendered speechless and held their breaths upon seeing that sight.

"Does he think there's no one left in the Sanders family?" Nancy stepped up with a cold expression on her face. "All of you follow me, we won't rest until Donoghue is dead!"

Nancy was going to bring her men and leave as soon as she finished her words.

"Nancy, don't be rash."

However, Saul pulled her back at that moment.

Nancy halted her steps and trembled. "Grandpa. Dax and many of our comrades are injured because of the Dixons, and now they dare take over our territory. I won't stand for this!"

Saul nodded his head. "I know. We'll have our revenge, but the Dixons are too powerful right now. We won't be able to defeat them directly. Let's return home and discuss a proper plan."

...

Elysian Island.

Darryl slowly regained his consciousness.

Level Five Master!

Darryl took a deep breath. It seemed the Jasper Ginseng was truly effective! Darryl almost had a psychotic break as he had incorrectly consumed the ginseng was luckily fine now.

Darryl was thrilled but immediately turned shocked when he felt something below him.

Oh, no.

There was still a trace of blush on Monica's face as she stared intensely at Darryl from underneath him. She was angry, ashamed, and perplexed.

Darryl was screwed now.

Cold sweat instantly streamed down Darryl's head as he realized might have violated the Cult Mistress. He was totally screwed now!

Darryl's mind instantly went blank!

"Mistress, I..."

Monica interrupted him before he could say another word. "Darryl, can you please get up?"

Monica blushed again as she spoke.

Monica was the high and mighty Cult Mistress, and this brat had the guts to commit such blasphemy against her. Truly asking for his own demise.

Monica had been married to the Cult Master for

many years now. Even though the Cult Master was old, Monica was still quite well and youthful!

"Mistress, I..." Darryl returned to his senses and clumsily stood back up.

"Cut this rope now," said Monica without any expression.

Chapter 240

Darryl immediately put on his clothes, grabbed the scissors, and cut the rope.

Monica did not say a word and quickly went aside to dress up.

Darryl stood at the side in a reserved manner like a child who made a huge mistake.

At that moment, the atmosphere in the room was tense and a little delicate.

Monica bit her lip tightly after putting on her clothes. "Darryl, I'll act as if nothing happened today, but if I find out you've let this leak... I'll kill your entire family."

What would people think if they knew the Cult Mistress had an inappropriate relationship with her subordinate?

Monica wanted to kill Darryl, but alas he did save her life.

"Don't worry, Mistress. I won't say a word about it." Darryl quickly nodded his head and maintained a serious expression.

Phew.

Darryl was thankful that Monica did not change her mind. If not he would be buried on Elysian Island tonight.

Monica did not say another word and returned to the Cult Mistress's usual demeanor and waved her hand at Darryl. "That will be all. It's getting late, you should return to your room and rest."

"As you command, Mistress," Darryl replied and hastily retreated to his room.

As Darryl laid on the bed, he could not help but recall the scenario that had just happened.

Perhaps due to exhaustion, he fell asleep soon enough.

Darryl slept soundly that night.

The next morning.

"Hooah!"

Darryl was awakened by a series of loud yellings as he drowsily opened his eyes and looked across the window. He could hear the cult disciples practicing at the plaza not far from here. They were shouting their battle cry uniformly and thunderously.

'Damn, I can't sleep because of this early morning training,' thought Darryl.

Truth be told, these elite disciples were really

diligent.

Darryl stretched his body and got out of bed.

At that moment, Monica suddenly opened the door and came into his room.

Her beautiful face remained as calm as ever.

It was as if nothing happened the previous night.

Damn it.

Why was the Cult Mistress here?

Darryl started to worry upon seeing her in his room. He was afraid this woman was coming over to silence him forever.

Monica wore a long purple dress today which accentuated her beautiful figure while further increasing her magnificence at the same time.

Her appearance was mesmerizing and utterly alluring.

Darryl looked at Monica for a brief moment before retracting his gaze as he dared not be too presumptuous. He slowly said, "What brings Mistress here so early today?"

Monica slowly walked toward the chair and sat down. "Darryl, let me remind you that you shall bring what happened last night to your grave.

Otherwise, everyone related to you will die. Do you understand?"

"Yes, absolutely. Mistress, don't worry. You have my word," said Darryl as he obediently nodded.

Monica nodded her head in satisfaction upon hearing Darryl's reply as her voice had somewhat calmed down. "Another thing, don't forget the assignment I gave you yesterday. When you return to Donghai City, do everything you can to get that scripture for me."

"As you command." Darryl nodded his head but felt internally helpless and dejected.

Stealing a scripture was easier said than done.

Monica mentioned that the person serving as Hexad School's principal was an expert from Wudang Sect.

Darryl was merely a Level Five Master. Their difference in power was far too vast which made success chances way too slim. Moreover, Darryl had lived for over 20 years and had not stolen anything besides the phone that one time.

Monica laughed and pulled out an ancient book.

"I'm aware this might prove to be a difficult assignment for you, so I've decided to give you this book. Perhaps you'll be able to steal the scripture

once you've read this book," said Monica softly as she handed the book over to Darryl.

What was this?

A secret martial arts manual?

Darryl received the book in excitement. On the yellowing cover were two bold and simple words ' Shadow Skills'.

Shadow Skills?

This book had quite an interesting title. Could it be another unique secret manual like Ascension of the Nine Dragons?

Chapter 241

"Madam, is this 'Shadow Skill' cool?!" Darryl asked excitedly.

Monica answered with a smile. "This is a memoir to be exact."

Huh? A memoir?

Darryl's face stiffened with confusion. Was she kidding? How was a memoir supposed to help him steal the scripture?

Meanwhile, Monica calmly explained, "Eight hundred years ago we had a Heaven Cult's follower who earned the title of First-Ranked Godly Thief during the Song Dynasty. He was gifted with a pair of skillful hands that enabled him to steal from anyone he pleased without being noticed."

At this moment, Darryl had already understood what the memoir was about. It was this thief's memoir. According to Monica, this thief who was able to earn the title of Godly Thief must be very skilled.

"What happened then?" Darryl was excited and wanted to know more.

Monica poured herself a cup of tea. She continued

after a sip. "He would get anything he set his eyes on. Back then, there was a famous incident when all the treasures in the palace were stolen overnight. It was done by this Godly Thief."

'Damn! That's so awesome!' Darryl was amused. When he was learning antique appraisement during his primary school years, he was also interested in history and had learned about this palace incident from books. He knew the palace guards back then were very skilled, so for anyone to not be noticed by those palace guards was something unachievable. However, the Godly Thief managed to do so without anyone noticing.

Monica continued. "A Godly Police had started chasing after the Godly Thief due to the numerous committed crimes by him, but the Godly Police had been unable to catch him after many years. Coincidentally, the Godly Thief fell in love with the Godly Police's daughter."

Though, he didn't know that girl was the Godly Police's daughter. One day, the Godly Thief was stealing from a rich merchant house and the Godly Police who knew beforehand had waited for him in the house. Unfortunately, he accidentally killed the Godly Police when the Godly Thief tried to escape."

It wasn't until later when he visited the girl that he discovered he had killed his future father-in-law.

The girl could not take any revenge on him as she loved the Godly Thief so much and died two years later."

After losing the girl, the Godly Thief suffered in agony and swore to God he was never going to steal again. However, he did not want his skills to vanish in the world, so he decided to compile his experiences and knowledge into his memoir."

This memoir was kept by Grandmasters since then. One year ago, our Grandmaster was afraid I would get bored on this island, so he gave me this memoir."

With that, Monica smilingly said, "Now, I'll hand it to you. I hope it'll help you in the future and it's up to you how much you'll gain from this memoir."

"Thank you, Madam!" Darryl answered calmly while his heart pumped excitedly.

There was such a beautiful and touching love story behind this memoir.

"Alright, this memoir is now yours. Go home and study it," said Monica whose heart fluttered slightly as she suddenly recalled what happened last night. A pink blush appeared on her face.

Darryl nodded.

Around ten minutes later, Monica arranged for a

boat to send Darryl back to Donghai City.

'Haha... I'm finally back! Damn, it wasn't easy at all! ' Thought Darryl as he laid on the boat languidly while enjoying the sea breeze with an eased feeling.

The Heaven Cult Island was beautiful with an amazing view despite making Darryl feel trapped somehow. However, he did gain some benefits from his island trip. With that in mind, he felt happy as he had taken away some spiritual herbs with him on top of having a good time with Monica.

'Oh, the Godly Pill.'

He suddenly recalled he was now a Level Five Master and excitedly took out a Godly Pill before ingesting it.

Gulp.

He put the pill into his mouth without hesitation and sat still with anticipation.

Bam!

A strong current erupted from his energy field half an hour later. As he opened his eyes, two rays of bright light shone from his eyes.

Chapter 242

Aha! Success!

Level One Master General!

Darryl felt his body filled with energy and could not restrain himself from laughing joyously.

...

Donghai City First Hospital.

Darryl took a taxi here and immediately marched into the lobby. He received more than ten missed calls from Dax Sanders when he first arrived at the hospital. When Darryl finally picked up, it was Nancy who called. Her voice was hoarse from crying which caused Darryl to be extremely furious when he heard Dax was severely wounded.

When he entered Dax's ward, Dax was bandaged all over his body with fresh blood still seething through. He looked like a mummy with only a pair of eyes showing.

"Dax!"

His eyes turned red when Darryl saw him. "Dax, I'm so sorry for being late. I'm so sorry..." Darryl was feeling extremely guilty as tears uncontrollably

kept rolling down his cheeks. He felt as if his own heart was stabbed.

Dax had regained his consciousness by then. The doctor said his life was saved, but he might have to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair.

"Darryl, I'm not even dead. Why are you even crying?" Dax muttered weakly as he blinked his eyes.

"Of course I'm not crying! Get well soon!" Darryl wiped his tears and refuted with a faint smile. He then turned to Nancy and asked, "What exactly happened? Who hurt Dax?"

Nancy pulled Darryl out of the ward and said, " Yesterday evening, Dax and I saw your wife went on a date with another man. We saw that man tried to drug your wife and Dax tried to stop."

What!?

Darryl was extremely vexed. Darryl stood there transfixed with anger as his entire body trembled after listening to what Nancy had said.

Dax was wounded, because of Lily!?

Was she not live-streaming? Why was she dating another man? At this instant, Darryl was overwhelmed with not only anger but also guilt.

Argh!

Darryl took a deep breath and immediately called Lily.

The call was picked up not long after. It was quite noisy at the other end of the call as Lily was probably out shopping. This further agitated Darryl just like adding oil to burning flames.

"Where are you?" Darryl tried to restrain his anger.

Lily answered coldly, "Shopping. Why do you call?" She was still angry at him for asking her to leave when she and Samantha visited Darryl's father at the hospital.

Darryl sneered, "Shopping? Who with?"

Darryl's tone offended Lily as she answered with an annoyed tone, "Who are you to ask? The first thing you do after getting out of prison is to harass me."

"I'm asking you now, what happened last night?" Darryl's anger was slowly getting out of control and started yelling, "Do you know Dax was severely injured because of you!? He almost lost his life because of you! Now he has to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair all thanks to you!"

Darryl almost howled his last sentence.

"Darryl Darby! Why are you yelling at me!" At the other end of the call, Lily was getting more furious

as her cheeks reddened. "I was just meeting a fan of mine, but Dax decided to be a busybody and ruined our meeting. Who can be blamed for his injury?"

Busybody?

Hah!

Darryl laughed mockingly. "Busybody!? Hah! I'm intrigued this came out of your mouth! Tell me, who 's that fan of yours?"

"His name is Donoghue. He's handsome, rich, and a gentleman. He sends me gifts every day. Darryl, stop bothering me!" Lily yelled to her phone.

Lily was extremely furious at this moment.

Darryl was trembling with anger too of course. He threatened with an eerily cold and emotionless tone, "I'm telling you now, Lily Lyndon. I'll never forgive you if Dax actually becomes disabled."

Beep.

Darryl hung up the phone with bloodshot reddened eyes while his body exuded a horrific air.

Lily was trembling with anger on the other end of the call. Her face had flushed red. Darryl was being unreasonable! 1

Chapter 243

Lily felt wrongly accused. This was the first time Darryl yelled at her in their three-year marriage. Had she done anything wrong? Dax was injured because he was being a busybody! Why did Darryl blame her? Lily was feeling utterly disappointed at Darryl.

On the other side, Darryl kept his phone and marched out of the hospital.

Nancy sensed something was wrong and followed up swiftly. "Darryl, what are you doing?"

"I'm going to avenge Dax."

This was caused by Lily who was still legally his wife. How was he still a man if he did not even avenge Dax?!

Nancy panicked and held on to Darryl's hand. " Please calm down, Donoghue is from Yunzhou City' s Dixon family. They are a strong cultivation family. If you go now it might as well be suicide. Please calm down."

Dixon family from Yunzhou City!

Darryl smiled and patted on Nancy's shoulder

reassuringly. "Don't worry, just help me take good care of Dax. I don't care who this guy is, I only know he will be stabbed ten times the amount he stabbed Dax!"

Darryl gently loosened his wrist from Nancy's grip and marched away after saying that.

"Darryl, you..." Nancy stood at the spot transfixed with her heart uneasily pumping fast.

Darryl had such a righteous spirit! Dax was not wrong to have called this man his brother! One was fortunate to have someone like Darryl as his brother. However, one still had to be logical! Nancy stumped on her feet.

After Darryl got out of the hospital, he immediately phoned Caelan. Caelan was still an ordinary disciple of Eternal Life Palace Sect until two days ago until he had been appointed as the Vice Hall Master by Darryl. When Darryl was not around, all those other disciples had to obey Caelan since then.

"Hall Master," Caelan greeted as he picked up the phone.

"Gather all the disciples," Darryl instructed with a deadline look.

"Yes, Hall Master!"

...

Dynasty Bar, 8pm in the evening.

Inside the bar's most luxurious VIP room, Donoghue was dressed in a white suit and looking more charming than he was yesterday. A skinny middle-aged man sat beside him and both men were chatting joyfully.

Lily was sitting by the side. Although she had a smile on her face, she appeared more restrained, unlike yesterday. She wanted to talk privately with Donoghue, but this middle-aged man decided to be a third wheel and made Lily uncomfortable. The man was also looking at Lily with his perverted gaze lingering on her body without any respect which only made her feel disgusted.

Meanwhile, Donoghue laughed, stood up, and raised his glass. "Haha, it's my pleasure to have Mister Larson here today, haha! Let's have a great night tonight!"

This middle-aged man was Galvin Larson—a high-ranking Elder of Kunlun Sect and Donoghue's good friend. Recently, Donoghue heard the Kunlun Sect had an elixir which accelerated one's cultivation process. It was known as the 'Accelerating Pill.' Donoghue immediately contacted Galvin and asked for the elixir in order to accelerate his family's cultivation speed.

Galvin nodded with a smile. "Donoghue is right! After so many years of our friendship, we must get drunk tonight!" With that said, Galvin glanced at Lily who was sitting by the side as he continued smilingly. "I've been cultivating away in the forest for most of my time and haven't seen you for years! Tonight, I see a beautiful lady is accompanying you."

Donoghue smiled. "Oh Mister Larson, if you're willing to provide me with the Accelerating Pill, I'll provide you with gorgeous ladies!"

"Haha! Sounds like a good deal, haha—" Galvin laughed as he took a sip of the wine with his lustful and desire-filled gaze lingered on Lily again.

Lily felt uneasy under his lingering gaze. She stood up and whispered to Donoghue, "I'll go to the restroom if you'd excuse me." She then stumped out of the room in her heels.

Galvin said as she left the room, "Donoghue, I'll be blunt with you. I want this woman."

Galvin was known to be a disgusting pervert. He wanted to try her out even if that meant taking a few years of his life away when he saw Lily earlier.

Donoghue sighed. "Mister Larson, I've got plenty of gorgeous women. Does it have to be her..."

Galvin did not let him finish. “No! I only want her. If I can’t get her today, forget about the Accelerating Pill.”

Chapter 244

Donoghue let out a sigh as he thought. 'Damn it, I just got Lily for myself and haven't even tried her out yet. Now, I'll have to give her away?'

In order to get hold of the Accelerating Pill, he had no choice but to sell Lily out. "Alright, Lily Lyndon is yours!"

"Not bad, not bad. You're a smart man. Once I get hold of this woman, you'll get hold of the Accelerating Pill. That woman is comparable to those celebrities with such fair skin and sexy body!" Galvin reassured with a lustful smile.

Donoghue nodded. "Of course, Lily is a famous anchor who I've spent quite a fortune trying to ask her out. She's yours if she pleases you!"

Donoghue took out a small packet of white powder and sprinkled it into Lily's drink upon saying that.

...

A narrow alley opposite Dynasty Bar was filled by a bunch of men dressed in black.

More than two hundred Eternal Life Palace Sect disciples gathered here while being led by a burly

man—the Vice Hall Master, Caelan.

Meanwhile, an Audi R8 pulled over by the alley and Darryl emotionlessly walked out from the car.

"Hall Master, everyone's here." Caelan walked over and reported to him with respect.

Darryl nodded. "Very well, you'll wait for me here. I'll signal you when it's time," Darryl instructed as he was unsure of the situation inside the bar.

Darryl strode into the Dynasty Bar after saying that. This new bar was opened a few days ago, hence it was filled with people. The dance floor was crowded with dancing men and women, alternating lights, and loud music blasting from the speakers. Darryl looked around but could not find Lily, so he went on to the second floor.

Meanwhile, Lily was being pressured by Donoghue to drink the wine which he drugged when she was away. Her face instantly turned red once she finished the glass of wine a strong wave of helplessness followed suit.

It was strange. Although she was not a drinker, she did not usually get drunk from just one glass of wine. Lily bit her lips while trying to stay conscious.

However, Galvin sat down next to her when he noticed she was about to pass out and started

playing with her hair. "Oh my pretty lady, are you drunk already?"

"Get your filthy hands off me!" Lily scowled with her face filled with disgust.

Galvin became more excited instead of removing his hand and started touching her face. "Tsk tsk tsk, my girl is so feisty, I like it! Haha! So domineering, I really like it!"

"You!" Lily was disgusted and wanted to push him away but realized she had no energy left to resist.

Her hands and legs were getting heavier such that she could not even raise her arm! What just happened?

"Donoghue, please ask him to leave me alone!" Lily yelled.

However, Donoghue seemed unperturbed while sitting by the side and shook his head. "Oh, Lily. Why don't you spend a night with him?"

What!?

Lily thought she was hallucinating and stared at Donoghue without blinking. "What are you saying!"

Donoghue repeated himself. "I'm saying, why don't you spend a night with him? I've drugged your drink earlier, so you can't feel your legs and hands.

Lily, spend a night with him and I'll pay you twenty million bucks after this."

"What!? How dare you!?" Lily yelled with disbelief and wanted to immediately leave, but she could not feel her legs nor her hands.

Galvin already had Lily in his arms by then with his hands groping her waist. He took a sniff of her and said, "Haha! My girl smells so good! Come here, let me kiss you."

"Go away! Go away!" Lily yelled through her gritted teeth with her remorseful face.

She should not have trusted Donoghue, but it was too late now.

Galvin's lips almost touched Lily's as she shut her eyes in despair with tears started rolling out of her eyes.

Suddenly, a man rushed into the room and pushed Galvin away.

Darryl grabbed Lily's hand and questioned with a dark voice, "What are you doing here?"

Lily was surprised to see Darryl while her tears uncontrollably rolled down her cheeks. "I... Darryl, please bring me home... Bring me home..."

Chapter 245

Darryl's face darkened as he pulled on Lily's hand, ready to bring her away.

Meanwhile, Donoghue stood up with a smile while judging Darryl from head to toe. "Who are you? Who gave you permission to enter? Get out!"

Get out?

Darryl laughed coldly while exuding an air of eeriness as he glared at Donoghue. "You must be Donoghue?"

Donoghue replied with a smile, "That's me! The Dax guy from last night must've been a friend of yours? I've kicked his *ss. Do you want to end up just like him? If not, you better get out of my sight right now."

A wave of anger rose from within Darryl.

Darryl's eyes turned bloodshot, but said with a smile, "I'll tell you what, I'm not leaving today and I'll also screw you over tonight." The last sentence had come out from his gritted teeth.

Lily stumped on her feet. "Darryl, what're you saying! Don't fool around. You only went into

prison for stealing two phones and you think you're a gangster now?"

What was Darryl thinking? Why was he still pretending to be cool at times like this?

Lily knew she had been drugged and the best way to get out now was to beg Donoghue to let her go. Although she also knew there was no way Donoghue would release her, it was still better than challenging him. Dax was so powerful yet he had been beaten so badly by them last night. There was no way Darryl could fight them off.

"Kid, did you just say you want to screw me over?" Donoghue questioned him as if he just heard a joke. He laughed and clapped his hands.

Suddenly, around ten burly men rushed into the room with knives in their hands and surrounded Darryl with violent looks.

"Ah! Please don't hit this kid, yet. Don't hurt my pretty girl." Galvin interrupted with a smile and pulled Lily on her wrist. "Don't be scared, my pretty girl. Look at you. You can't even stand up properly. Come, let me hug you." Galvin was about to pull Lily into his arms after saying that.

"Get away from me!" Lily scowled and tried to struggle but had no energy.

Damn it!

At this instant, Darryl threw Galvin a punch out of the blue.

Bam!

The punch landed on Galvin's face before he could react and he was tossed into the air before violently smacked against the wall.

"How dare you to hit me!" Galvin staggered up with half his face swollen as he breathlessly groaned.

Darryl did not speak and protectively pushed Lily behind him.

Suddenly, a glaring red light that illuminated the entire bar accompanied the Blood Drinking Sword that appeared in Darryl's hand out of thin air.

"I'm not only going to screw you over today. I want everyone in this room to lay on the floor tonight." Darryl demanded with a cold tone as his sword pointed directly at Donoghue.

"This kid is weird, kill him!" Donoghue called out to his men.

The ten or so muscular men rushed toward Darryl upon his order.

At this instant, the bar's entrance was kicked open with over 200 muscular men armed with knives marched into the bar with Caelan leading them.

"Hall Master!"

"Any man who dared to touch my Hall Master shall be killed!"

Around 200 men rushed in like madmen.

"Leave no man alive, kill them all!" Darryl ordered coldly.

Smack!

With that said, Caelan threw his knife and killed two people at once.

Within five minutes, all of Donoghue's men were laying on the floor. Galvin was also laying on the floor with his livelihood unclear.

Donoghue was curled up on the sofa by now with his white suit tainted in red from blood and his face filled with horror.

"Bro, this is a misunderstanding. This must've been a misunderstanding. I've nothing to do with this. I'm just Lily's fan." Donoghue staggeringly explained with his forehead full of sweat.

Misunderstanding?

Haha...

An eerie look appeared on Darryl's face as he walked closer to him with the Blood Drinking Sword in his

hand. "You're telling me now it's all a misunderstanding? My brother is still lying in the hospital and you are f*cking telling me it's all but a misunderstanding?"

His Blood Drinking Sword stabbed through Donoghue's shoulder after he said that.

"Ah!"

The sword went through Donoghue's shoulder along with a loud moan sounding like pigs in a slaughterhouse.

"The number of stabs which you gave my brother, I' ll return them tenfold!" Darryl warned coldly as he stabbed him again.

Chapter 246

Stab! Stab! Stab!

The sword went through him again and again as fresh blood flooded the floor. Donoghue had fainted, but this did not stop Darryl. All the disciples of Eternal Life Palace Sect looked at Darryl with fear as their bodies shivered at his actions.

...

Darryl emotionlessly walked out of the bar half an hour later.

"Darryl, wait for me..." Lily swiftly followed behind him with her delicate face filled with panic. The drug in her body had ceased its effects by then and she was finally able to walk on her own.

Darryl did not stop moving as if he did not hear her and continued toward his car.

Lily panicked and hastily rushed up. She stopped Darryl by grabbing his arm. "Darryl, I'm sorry. Please, don't leave..."

Haha...

Darryl swung her hand away and said coldly, "Now you're sorry? What were you doing when Dax tried

to help you yesterday? He even told you Donoghue isn't a good person. What were you thinking?"

Lily bit her lips. She was very guilty but still refuted, "Darryl, I already said I'm sorry! Can't you be more reasonable? It's not like I can read minds. How am I supposed to know Donoghue isn't a good person? Besides, he paid me so much money. How can I reject meeting him up?"

Darryl's face darkened and he remained silent.

Lily panted breathlessly with reddened eyes. "I've also been kicked out of my family. I really have no choice but to become an anchor. Where were you when I needed you the most? Did you even help me? Now you reappear out of nowhere and tell me off..." Her breathing became heavier as she said this while staring at Darryl.

Darryl clenched his fists. "I've always been here! In the past three years of our marriage, I've never left! How much did he pay you? What he paid isn't even one-tenth of what I paid for you!"

A shiver went past Lily's body as she stared blankly at Darryl.

The person who paid her the most was 'Hill'. Hill... Hill... Darryl... Rryl... Hill! Darryl's name rhymed with Hill!

Darryl! 'Hill' was Darryl's online nickname!

Lily was terribly trembling and unable to utter a word by then.

"Darryl, I'm wrong. I'm very sorry... Please, can you forgive me? I'm sorry..." Ten seconds later, Lily pleaded as she held on to his wrist tightly and begged.

It turned out he had been by her side since day one and had done so much for her.

"Dax will have to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair because of you, do you know that? Do you? He's disabled. He's disabled because of you!" Darryl yelled at her as he swung her hand and drove away without hesitation.

"Darryl..."

Lily stood there transfixed as she watched Darryl's car drive away as tears uncontrollably rolled down her cheeks.

Lily did not know how she got home as she was overwhelmed with guilt and remorse.

...

On the next day, Lily still locked herself in her bedroom as she had not slept for the entire night while she recalled what happened in the past two days.

Why did she not listen to Dax when he asked her to leave? Dax was Darryl's good friend and they were like brothers. Of course, he would not ask her to leave for no reason!

She was so foolish, so foolish! She could not forgive herself especially when she saw Dax laid on the floor deeply wounded but did not even try to help him!

She was so guilty for what she did or did not do. She was overwhelmed with so much guilt and remorse...

However...

Was Darryl not placed into prison for stealing? Why was he released so quickly?

Also... Who were those people following him around? Who were those men?

...

For the next few days, Donghai City was extraordinarily lively. Everyone was discussing two breaking news that happened in the city. The first news was Master Dixon, Donoghue had been stabbed in his own Dynasty Bar. Nobody knew who did it. Everyone only knew he had 360 stabs on him with every stab intentionally avoided giving him a fatal blow. It was obvious the person did not want to kill him and was just taking vengeance on him.

According to the news, Donoghue was immediately sent to the ICU and had stayed there for two nights till now.

Chapter 247

Who had such courage to hurt Donoghue? The Dixon family was a powerful family in Yunzhou City which was the capital city!

Another breaking news was the formation of Hexad School in Donghai City.

The Hexad School was formed by the Six Orthodox Sect. The principal of the school was Graham Potter —deputy head of Wudang Sect and a highly respectable individual with a good personal reputation—who was greatly admired by the other sects. The appointment of the six sects elders as school teachers only showed how important this school was to the six sects.

The Hexad School had a similar system as any other ordinary high school which only accepted full-time students. The rules and regulations were also as strict as any high school or college. Any unnotified absence would result in being expelled. The school offered a three-year course and after three years, the school would select the best performing graduate to become an Elder of the Six Sect.

An Elder of the Six Sect, who would let this opportunity slip away?

As an Elder of the Six Sect, one would be able to learn the secrets of every sect and at the end of every year, each sect would give out spiritual elixirs and pills to their Elders.

The entire Donghai City went into an uproar when the Hexad School was formed! Lots of people signed up which included high school graduates, college graduates, and heirs of wealthy families. Any wealthy family would know the importance of becoming a cultivator well enough. It would bring glory and pride to their family if one of their members could become an Elder of the Six Sect.

Within a day, more than ten thousand people from Donghai City signed up for the school which included pupils from nearby cities. Within a day's time, the Hexad School had become the largest school in Donghai City.

...

Donghai City First Hospital.

It was almost autumn and the weather was getting colder.

Nancy was accompanying Dax by his bedside in the VIP ward. It had been two days and Dax was still laying on the bed while being bandaged like a mummy. Although his wounds had stopped

hurting, it was announced his legs were completely damaged and he would have to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair. Nancy was depressed but did not show it as she stayed by his side still hoping for miracles to happen one day.

"Dax, don't worry. Grandpa is thinking of ways to help you take revenge." Nancy reassured him despite not being confident about it either.

Dax nodded. He did not regret what he had done. If he was given a chance to turn back time, he would still do what he had done over again. This was the whole purpose of being in a sincere brotherhood. He could not watch his brother's wife being assaulted by others.

Ding...

Meanwhile, Nancy's phone lit up as her face lit up with a smile after reading the message.

"Wonderful news!"

"What's up?" Dax asked curiously.

Nancy walked toward him with excitement in her eyes. "Donoghue was stabbed three hundred times by someone! They are still trying to save his life in the hospital." Nancy trembled with excitement. " Karma, this is karma!"

Huh?

Donoghue was stabbed?

Dax was stunned as his heart was filled with immense joy despite being quite shocked. “Who did it?”

Nancy shook her head. “The news is passed on by your men. They don’t know who did it either. This news has also been spreading around the city. Who cares? The person who did this must’ve been someone with a big background! I’m sure Donoghue had offended many people.” Nancy smiled.

Dax nodded in agreement.

Chapter 248

The door was opened as they spoke and Darryl hastily rushed in toward his bed with a black pill in his hand. "Dax, hurry up. Eat this!"

Darryl seemed anxious.

Dax opened his mouth and swallowed the pill without hesitation.

As he swallowed, he frowned and said with a bitter face, "Damn it! Darryl, what did you put into my mouth? It tastes so weird and smelly!"

It tasted horrible, just like sh*t.

"Hehe, this pill is indeed very smelly. Though it has a very elegant name—the Five Beasts Reincarnation Pill," replied Darryl with a mysterious smirk.

Huh?

Five Beasts Reincarnation Pill?

Dax stared at him dubiously with his eyes wide open.

Darryl wiped his hand with a wet tissue and explained with a smile, "Have you watched Journey to the West? In one of the scenes, the four of them went into the toilet in rotation and that toilet was

called the 'Place of Reincarnation'. This pill was made using five types of animal dung which included horse dung, sheep dung, cow dung, and..."

The other night when Darryl read through the Infinite Elixir Manual, he accidentally came across a spiritual elixir known as the Five Beasts Reincarnation Pill. The manual recorded that this pill could rebuild broken bones and was effective at curing wounds. It was exactly what Dax needed.

Surprisingly, Darryl happened to have all the required spiritual herbs to refine this pill as he had collected quite a few of them from the island. Of course, other than those required rare herbs, the main ingredients were five types of dung. In order to get hold of these five dungs, Darryl had traveled across the city as these materials were usually found in rural areas instead of big cities like Donghai City.

Once he finished refining the pill, Darryl immediately rushed to the hospital and got Dax to swallow it.

After listening to Darryl, Dax's face turned green, and tried to spit out the pill. "What!? Horse dung, sheep dung... Darryl! Why did you make me eat sh* t!? Damn you! Are you trying to kill me when I'm already ill?"

Damn it! It was five kinds of dungs combined

together...

Dax suddenly felt so unwell and only wanted to get the pill out from his throat now. It was so disgusting!

Nancy glared at Darryl as she rushed forward and gently patted on Dax's back. "Darryl, you are... Darling, are you alright? I'll pour you a glass of water..."

What was Darryl thinking? How could he let Dax ingest such a disgusting thing?

Darryl did not explain further and just stood there smiling.

A few seconds later.

"Dear, stop patting me."

Suddenly, Dax started to feel his hands and legs! A few seconds ago, he was still trying to spit out the pill, but was now just like a hyperactive child! He did a backflip before jumping out of bed such that even his legs were moving!?

Huh?

Dax could not even do a backflip before he was wounded!

Nancy was astonished. "Dax, you..."

Doctor Shelly clearly stated that Dax was severely

injured with his hamstrings broken. It was lucky for him to be alive, but he would have to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair.

What happened?! Dax not only stood up just fine but even did a backflip?

This was unbelievable! Nancy would not have believed had she did not see it with her own eyes. She was shaking with excitement by now, but it did not end there.

Dax took a step or two before starting to run around the ward like a monkey, jumping and hopping around. He did not seem to be injured at all!

"I can move! My legs have recovered! Fully recovered! Haha!" Dax hugged Darryl tightly while laughing with joy. "Wow, Darryl! You're good at this! This pill works like magic! I didn't eat sh*t for nothing!"

Darryl was overwhelmed with joy too but pushed Dax away with a look of disgust the moment Dax hugged him. "Damn it, your breath stinks like sh*t. Stay away from me..."

Chapter 249

Darryl knew the pill was effective but thought Dax needed some time to recover after taking the pill. Surprisingly, he instantly recovered. Dax was severely wounded, but those wounds were mostly physical cuts. He would not have recovered even with this pill if he was unlucky beaten by masters.

Meanwhile, Nancy with her lips trembling in disbelief stood by the side transfixed. She knew and heard with her own ears that even the most advanced treatments were of no help and Dax was to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair. However, a small pill actually cured him. What a miracle!

Dax was jumping around like an overly excited kid and grabbed Darryl's shoulder. "Let's go and hit the bar!"

Nancy stumped on her feet and scolded, "That's insane! You just recovered. Can't you be more considerate to those people who care about you? Grandpa is still home worrying about you."

Dax ruffled his hair. "You're right. I'll go home and drink then. That will give Grandpa a surprise!"

"You..." Nancy shook her head, stumped her feet,

and asked him to brush his teeth. Dax had completely missed her point as she did not want Dax to have any alcohol since he just recovered.

...

The Sanders Mansion, 7pm.

Dax's mansion had a special name dedicated to it which was also known as Sanders Mansion. A few days ago, he even thought of purchasing a tall golden stick to place in the living room.

The family was having a heart-warming dinner inside the first-floor dining room.

Six people gathered around the dining table—Darryl, Dax, Nancy, Darryl's grandfather, and two others who seemed to be Dax's cousins.

His elder cousin was called Daisy Palmer while the younger cousin was Daphne Palmer. Both of them were not from Donghai City but had a good relationship with Dax.

Daisy and Daphne were the centers of attraction everywhere they went with Daisy having a mature sense of beauty and an alluring body, while Daphne had a youthful kind of beauty with a charming face. Once they heard that Dax had recovered, they came all the way to pay him a visit.

They were very excited until they saw Darryl

tagging along. He was dressed in cheap clothes which made him seem poor. Today was a special family occasion and they did not understand why Dax had to have him around. They even heard that Dax was injured because of him, therefore they did not like Darryl at the first glance. They also could not understand the reason Dax would be friends with someone poor like Darryl.

The more they thought along this line, the more they looked down on Darryl and gave him the cold shoulders. Were it not for their grandfather, they would have immediately left the dining table. Dining with someone from a lower-class like Darryl could make them look bad after all.

Darryl did not mind the cold shoulders given to him by Daisy and Daphne. He happily continued laughing and chatting with Dax. Of course, he did not forget to include Dax's grandfather in their conversation as he had always been respectful to his seniors.

After a while, Dax's grandfather smilingly looked at Dax. "My grandson, I'm pleased to see you've recovered. Have you heard that The Hexad School was established in Donghai City in the past two days?"

"Yeah, I've heard of it." Dax nodded.

Dax's grandfather continued, "I signed the three of

you up yesterday to go and study there. You, Daisy, and Daphne."

Daisy and Daphne happily nodded as they knew their grandfather always made good decisions.

Grandpa looked at Dax with a hopeful look. He knew Dax would most likely stand out from the rest with his talents and abilities. It was even possible for him to become an Elder of the Six Sect. He would bring glory to the Sanders family if this came true.

Though Dax did not seem too excited, he sounded concerned. "Grandpa, if I joined the Hexad School, who would look after our family business?" He was concerned as his grandfather had retired a few years ago.

Grandpa smiled. "Don't worry about this. After you enter the school, you still have Nancy to help look after the business. I'll also help her when she needs it."

Nancy nodded in agreement.

Dax also nodded with a smile. He then turned to look at Darryl, "Bro, what do you think? Wanna come along?"

Chapter 250

He would of course not leave Darryl behind. It would be fun for both of them to go back to school together!

"Haha! If you're going, I'm coming of course!" Darryl answered without hesitation. He then sent Pearl a message to help him sign up for that school.

Dax raised his wine glass in joy. "That's great news! This is exactly what I want to hear!"

Nancy could not help adding in. "Aww look at the two of you. You're like twins!"

Honestly, she was not too sure about her husband going back to school. She had heard all the big families both from within as well as those outside the city had signed up to that Donghai City's school. This meant the Dixon family would also be sending their men over. It might not be too ideal for Dax to attend it with the Dixons now holding a grudge against their Sanders family. Although his cousins were going to be there, at the end of the day they were just women. Nancy was therefore more reassured when she heard Darryl would be going with him as well.

Meanwhile, Daisy made a snarky comment. "Oh

Darryl, I don't mean to let you down but this school isn't for anyone. I'm curious, do you even cultivate?"

Daphne nodded in agreement and coldly added. " Same here. I'm afraid they might turn you down from looking at you and your cheap clothes."

Darryl smiled and did not answer them. He was used to being spoken to with such nasty remarks for the past three years. In addition, they were Dax' s cousins, hence he could not be bothered being dragged down to their level. He waved and laughed it off while trying to change the subject by taking out a Godly Pill and giving it to Dax. "Brother Dax, this pill is for you. You'll be amazed by its effects."

Dax was still a Level Five Master. If he remembered correctly, Dax wanted to buy a Godly Pill during their time at the auction, but Darryl stopped him from bidding.

This...

Dax received the pill with a confused expression. His first instinct was to assume Darryl had handed him some pill made of animal dung again.

Before Dax spoke, his cousins laughed. "Dax, don't just eat anything you see."

"Yeah, this pill looks dirty. Toss it away," said

Daphne as she frowned at Darryl. A poor guy like him feeding their cousin a dirty looking pill? Who was he kidding?

Suddenly, their grandfather stood up and spoke with an excited trembling voice, "Grandson, let me have a look at the pill!"

Dax handed him the pill.

Szz...

Their grandfather took in a cold breath the moment he received the pill while his old and wrinkly hand was shaking uncontrollably.

"This... This is the Godly Pill, isn't it? Is this the Godly Pill?" He had been cultivating for over ten years now and had been stuck at Level Five Master General for over a year now from not being able to make a breakthrough.

He heard there was a pill known as the Godly Pill which could help cultivators to make a breakthrough and had been looking for it all these years with no luck. Today, he saw this right in front of his eyes and almost broke into tears of excitement.

Huh?

The Godly Pill?

The dining hall was filled with pin-drop silence.

This pill was actually a Godly Pill? The one displayed at the auction?

At this instant, both Dax and Nancy were shocked speechless. They saw the pill was being sold at the auction for 50 billion bucks. The pill was very rare and expensively priced. They would never have thought Darryl had one with him!

The sisters by the side also frowned at the thought of it. Why would a cheap-looking man like Darryl possess a Godly Pill?

Daisy broke out a laugh. "This pill is so rare. Where did you steal it from?"

Chapter 251

'What's wrong with these women? Just because I have a Godly pill, it means I must've stolen it?' Darryl thought while he remained silent.

Saul took a deep breath. "Dax, I can see that your friend treats you very well, giving you such a rare pill, haha! Hurry up and eat it."

His eyes were glowing with sincerity even though he really wanted to have the pill for himself. If Saul took the Godly pill as a Level Five Master General, he would become a Martial Marquis! It was the highest rank one could achieve.

However, Dax was the patriarch of the Sanders family, and the family's future depended on him. It made more sense for Dax to take the pill.

"Grandpa, you've been stuck as a Fifth Level Master General for a few years already. Please, take this. I'm about to enter The Hexad School soon; I'll have lots of chances to eat it in the future," Dax laughed.

"No way. You take it. I'm getting old, and it doesn't mean much to me if I breakthrough or not. You still have a long time ahead of you, and you'll face more dangers than me. This pill will be good for you.

Listen to me and just eat it," Saul refused.

He was determined for Dax to have it. No matter how much he wanted to have it, he knew he had to be rational and do what was best for the family.

"No. Please, Grandpa, you have it."

"What now? You've grown up and decided to disobey your Grandpa?"

By then, both of them were almost fighting for the good of the other.

"Stop fighting, I've another one here," Darryl interrupted them with a smile as he took out another Godly pill from his pocket.

'Huh? Another one?' the crowd thought.

Suddenly, the dining hall turned silent again. Even Daisy and Daphne had to take another look at Darryl with disbelief.

A Godly pill was the most precious pill in the world of cultivation.

Darryl smiled at the eyes glued on him and handed the pill to Dax. "Alright, now that each of you has one, hurry up and take them."

"Darryl, you..." Dax was left speechless with excitement. Without hesitation, he swallowed the pill.

His Grandpa swallowed the pill too. Both of them could not contain their excitement any longer.

Suddenly, Daisy recovered from the shock and asked Darryl with a sincere look, "Darryl, do you still have any more?"

Daisy and Daphne had been stuck at Level Five Master for a very long time and could not breakthrough no matter how hard they tried. After seeing Darryl take two Godly pills out of his pocket, they could not help but look at Darryl differently.

"If you do, please give us one, too," Daphne added.

However, their tone was still rude and arrogant.

"I'm afraid I only brought two with me. That's all I have," Darryl said coldly without even looking at them.

'They mocked me moments ago, and now they're asking for Godly pills? Do they think I'm a kid?' Darryl thought.

However, it was true that he only had two pills with him today as he did not have enough time to refine more these days.

After hearing that, Daisy and Daphne did not seem pleased but did not say anything further since Saul was there.

Meanwhile, Saul excused himself to go back to his room as he had alcohol, and the pill was starting to get to him.

Once he left, Daisy continued mocking Darryl, "So you only have two pills?"

"Yeah, I'm sure that you stole it from somewhere else. You're so brave to steal the Godly pill. If someone caught you, they'd chop your legs and kill your family. Is that worth it for stealing two pills?" Daphne added sarcastically.

Darryl laughed. These women changed so quickly after learning that they could not get a pill from him.

"You two think so highly of me. Who wouldn't keep their Godly pill in a safe place? I can't possibly steal it from someone. If you think it's easy, why don't you two go and steal some?" Darryl said.

"You..." Daphne could not think of any snarky comeback, so she stood up. "Dax, we have things to attend to. We'll be leaving now."

Both of them stomped out of the dining hall in their heels. As they left, they did not even glance at Darryl. They thought they could get the Godly pill from him, but he only had two, and they did not want to waste their time talking to someone like

him.

Chapter 252

Dax and Darryl drank through the night, speaking freely, and having a great time. They had no idea how much they had drank nor how they fell asleep.

The next morning, Nancy woke them up. She was dressed in a black fringed dress and heels, looking charming as always.

"Dax, Darryl, wake up! It's time to register at The Hexad School. Did you two forget?" Nancy said.

Dax jumped up. "Ah! I totally forgot about that. Darryl, hurry up! Wash your face!"

...

Today, Donghai City was extraordinarily lively.

It was the opening of The Hexad School, and everyone would want to check it out.

Private cars filled the school's entrance, and more than twenty thousand students gathered by the square, waiting.

In situations like this, one thing all men were concerned about was to look out for pretty women. To be honest, there were lots of good looking female students in this school.

"Look here, look here! The chick in a dress looks good."

"That woman in a short skirt is sexy!"

The men exchanged their findings with one another.

Among the crowd, some familiar faces were seen: Lily, Elsa, William, Yvonne, and Justin. They had all signed up for the program.

Meanwhile, a loud roar of an engine filled the air.

Everyone turned to see a Rolls Royce driving over.

"Damn, it's a Rolls Royce!"

"Isn't that a few million bucks? I heard even an umbrella inside the car costs ten thousand bucks!"

The Rolls-Royce pulled over, and a young man walked out of the car slowly. It was Kent Hough. He was dressed in branded clothes with his hair dyed bright yellow. It was not the most attractive look, but he would still be considered handsome since he walked out of a Roll-Royce. Lots of female students looked at him with desire in their eyes.

Meanwhile, Megan Castello walked by his side. Her looks stood out from the rest of the girls. Kent thought he looked good and flipped his hair. He enjoyed being the center of attention.

However, this only lasted three hours. The other

side of the square was now in an uproar. Everyone turned over to see a Lamborghini pulling over.

"Damn! Sports car! It's a sports car!"

"It's my first time seeing this car! It's so gorgeous! This is at least ten million!"

The car fans gathered around the car in excitement, while the female students rushed over to check out who was driving it.

The Lamborghini pulled over, and the door opened as a young, handsome man walked out.

"It's Mr. Claydon. Gordon Claydon!"

The Claydon family was in the clothing industry. It was a big and wealthy family with businesses all over the country, and Gordon Claydon was their heir. Gordon looked handsome, and with his Lamborghini, he drove a lot of the female students crazy. It was no surprise when a few women kept on screaming when they saw him.

"Look over here, someone else is coming!" someone shouted in the crowd, and everyone looked over.

Suddenly, the uproar turned into pin-drop silence.

An extended Lincoln drove by slowly. The car was surrounded by hundreds of men in black marching

along, making the scene majestically stunning.

Who could it be? Even the heirs of the wealthy were stunned as they stared at Lincoln.

This extended Lincoln was a customized edition, and probably less than five existed in the world.

Chapter 253

The car itself was crazy enough, but on top of that, there were hundreds of men guarding it. The scene was truly amazing. The person inside the car must be someone important and could not be compared to a small family.

'Who could it be? A student at the school?' everyone wondered.

All eyes were glued to the vehicle as it slowly came to a halt. The hundreds of men stood in two lines, and the lead guard opened the door.

A sexy and attractive lady came out of the Lincoln.

Everyone held their breath.

'Gorgeous! She was so gorgeous!' everyone thought.

She was dressed in a long, black dress and exuded an air of style and elegance. Her body was so captivating. Not only the ordinary men stared at her, but even the wealthy kids stared at her without blinking!

"God! She came to the school, too?" someone screamed with excitement, and the area was in an uproar again.

The Newman family from Kyoto was a big family with a long history, and they had properties and businesses all over the place. Not only that, a few of the family members were the Elders of Tianshan School. Nobody would have thought that the heiress of the Newman family would be here.

"Circe Newman is so beautiful! I'd be happy to die just to spend a night with her!" someone exclaimed

"In your dreams! She's way out of our league," someone replied.

As everyone was talking among themselves, a staff member put up a name list on the board.

"The class arrangement list is out!" someone screamed.

The list clearly stated who was going to which class. In an instant, everyone gathered around the board.

Meanwhile, a private car pulled over, and Darryl and Dax got out.

'Damn it. There are so many people?' Darryl thought.

Darryl was shocked by the number of people at the square. The traffic was horrible on their way here, and he thought it would be less crowded at school, but he was wrong. After all, this was a school built

by the Six Sect. Even the gate was majestic and was as wide as forty meters long. On the left side of the gate, 'Six Sect' was carved while 'The Hexad School' was inscribed on the right side.

"Damn it, Darryl. The list is out already! Let's go and have a look!" Dax said.

There were too many people, and it took them quite a while before finding out which class they were in.

"Hahaha, Darryl! Both of us are in the same class. My two cousins too! The four of us are going to be in the same class, " Dax laughed.

Darryl looked again and saw that the four of them were in Year One Class Sixteen.

"Darryl!" a familiar voice called.

A familiar figure walked toward Darryl; it was Lily.

When she appeared, everyone stared at her as all the men wondered who would be lucky enough to be in the same class as her.

Stopping in front of Darryl, she pulled on Darryl's hand. "Darryl, are you still mad at me? I'm so very sorry."

Her voice was small, and only Darryl could have heard it, but he did not answer her. Nor did he want to speak to her.

"Lily, you're here, too? Haha," Dax greeted as he walked over.

Although he was severely wounded because of her, she was still Darryl's wife, so he forgave her.

Chapter 254

"Dax Sanders?" Lily was shocked to see Dax walking like normal.

'Wasn't he stabbed and cut with thirty or so knives? Why does he seem just fine?' Lily thought as she bit her lips

"Dax, I'm so sorry for the other night-" she muttered.

Before letting her finish, Dax laughed and waved it off. "That was nothing. Darryl's like my brother, so of course, I'd jump in right away when I see you in danger. Haha!"

Dax's laugh instantly made the whole scene seem less awkward.

Lily smiled and glanced at Darryl. She saw that Darryl did not respond to her and started panicking.

"Darryl, please, please don't stay mad at me. I'm really sorry, I really am," Lily pleaded as she bit her lips.

Darryl took in a long breath, his face was still emotionless. No, he was not pretending to be mad at her; he was actually still mad. All his life, he had

always wanted a trustworthy best-friend. He used to have many friends when he was still in the Darby family, but all these 'friends' ran and hid from him when he was kicked out.

Since then, he had no faith in friendships until he met Dax, who was the best brother he could ever ask for. Yet, Dax was stabbed and wounded severely because of Lily, and he almost lost his life! How could he forgive Lily?

Meanwhile, a snarky voice came from behind.

"Oh look, isn't this the live-in son-in-law? Why aren't you cleaning at home, and why are you signing up to the school?"

Darryl frowned and looked back. It was Kent with Megan behind him. Megan was dressed in a long, tight dress and heels, showing off her sexy body.

Darry smiled at Kent, "What now? Who says a live-in son-in-law can't sign up?"

By then, the rich kids gathered behind Ken.

"Nobody said so, but the fact that you came will bring down the reputation of the school. C'mon up, everyone, this dude is a live-in son-in-law, hahaha! I'm sure you all have heard about him!" Kent said, becoming louder.

Darryl and Lily's wedding three years ago was the

biggest joke in the entire Donghai City.

Megan could not take it anymore; she pulled on Kent. "Can you please behave?"

Megan did not come here to study. As the leader of the Criminal Investigation team, she had no time to study. She only came today to send Kent off.

"But I'm just telling the truth! Who doesn't know he's a live-in son-in-law here?" Kent refuted.

Darryl scoffed but did not reply. Though Dax, who was by his side, could not take it any longer.

"F*ck off Kent! What's wrong with you?" he yelled.

'Damn it; he's asking to be punched!' Dax thought as he tried to refrain from beating Kent up.

Darryl was able to hold back his anger, but not Dax. He pointed his finger at Kent. "Shut your mouth! Your voice is annoying!"

Kent was shocked at Dax siding with Darryl. He was embarrassed for being told off in public.

"Dax, bro. I'm just mocking Darryl. I don't think that's any of your business," Kent replied.

Honestly speaking, the Sanders were one of the most powerful families in Donghai City, and Kent did not want to offend him.

"F*ck off!" Dax was agitated further by Kent's

backtalk.

Without warning, he punched Kent right in the face.

"Ah!" Kent screamed as his left eye became swollen instantly.

Without having any time to react, Dax kicked Kent on his shin, and he fell, kneeling on the floor.

Everyone was shocked. Nobody dared to step up and stop Dax from beating up Kent. Anyone in Donghai City knew Dax had a hot temper, and getting punched by him was considered lucky compared to being stabbed by him.

Darryl felt so good watching this, though he still went up to pull Dax away. "Dax, Dax, it's fine. Don't waste your time with this clown."

Although Darryl said the words himself, he still kicked Kent real hard when he pulled Dax away. The kick landed right on Kent's head, knocking his head to the floor like a dog eating mud.

"Ah, I'm so sorry," Darryl said, pretending it was all an accident as he secretly smiled.

"F*ck you, Darryl!" Kent yelled.

He was so triggered and embarrassed, yet he could not come up with anything else to say.

"Darryl, Dax, that's enough!" Megan stomped in

between them in her heels. “We’re at the entrance of the school. Why are you all fighting!?”

Chapter 255

Megan helped Kent up. He was her fiancé, so how could she feel good watching him get beaten?

Megan and Dax 'worked' closely together. While Dax was well-known for his bad reputation in the city, Megan was well-known for being the most attractive policewoman. They had to cross one another's path every so often. Dax was equivalent to a 'street' king in Donghai City, but Megan could not go after him unless he was doing something very illegal.

Dax spat on the floor as he walked to the side. " Damn it, he asked for it!"

Kent cried out dry tears. The punch was so painful that his head was still buzzing. No matter how pissed off he was, he did not dare speak up.

Megan let out a sigh when she saw Dax walking away. She grabbed Darryl's hand and pulled him to the side.

"Hey, why are you pulling me?" Darryl questioned.

By then, both of them were far away from the crowd. Megan stopped.

"My Good big brother, I have a favor to ask you,"

Megan said softly, biting her lips. 1

"What?"

Whenever Megan needed a favor from him, she called him 'Good big brother,' and when there was no favor, she called him 'Good little brother.'

"Do you have any Godly pills on you? Could you give one to me?" Megan asked softly.

'Huh? Godly pill again?' Darryl thought.

He was still pissed that he had to give one to Kent the other day.

He smiled, "I don't have one with me now, but I'll let you know."

He really did not have one with him. He gave the last two pills to Dax and his Grandpa.

Megan bit her lips and pleaded, "My Good big brother, please. You have to help me!"

In a week, the Emei sect was going to host a conference in Donghai City. Megan's close friend, Miranda Fox, was an Elder of the Emei sect. Miranda was in her thirties and was very gifted as she was the youngest Elder in the sect. Not only that, but she was also the prettiest Elder. She had been stuck as a Level Five General Master for a very long time, and Megan knew Miranda would be

pleased if she could give her a Godly pill during the conference.

Meanwhile, a guard walked out of the entrance and spoke into the megaphone.

"Attention everyone. Attention. Classes have been allocated. Please, may all students make your way into the school and go into your allocated classrooms."

With that said, thousands of people rushed to the entrance all at once; it was as scary as a tsunami but seemed majestic from afar.

Everyone was filled with excitement as they all knew that studying here would entail a bright future.

'Damn it! They're all going in!' Darryl thought.

Darryl rushed back in. "Alright, alright, let's talk about this tomorrow. I've got to go!"

"My Good big brother, please don't forget! I'll call you tomorrow," Megan called out as he left.

...

There were at least ten thousand students this year being allocated into different classrooms. Darryl was allocated to classroom sixteen, located on the third floor. When he arrived at his classroom, all

the seats were almost taken. Every student was buzzing with excitement, and the classroom was as noisy as an outdoor market. Though it was no surprise as studying at The Hexad School was something to be excited about.

"Darryl, come over here!" Darryl heard as he entered the classroom.

Dax was waving at him with a grin. He was seated in the middle row.

Darryl smiled as he made his way there. Suddenly, a cold and elegant figure caught his gaze. Sitting in front of Dax was an attractive woman, exuding an air of coldness like an iceberg. It was Circe Newman. Compared to the people around her, she was relatively quiet, and her charm would attract any man.

She was beautiful. Extremely beautiful.

She was a natural beauty with her delicate features and her skin as fair as jade.

'Who would have thought there was such a beautiful lady in their class?' Darryl thought.

Darryl could not help but take a few more glances at her. "Not too bad, Dax. This is a good spot, right behind this gorgeous lady! Hahaha!"

Dax answered with a proud grin, "Of course! Only

both of us get to sit in such a great spot!"

Meanwhile, a woman dressed in professional attire walked to the podium. She was in her thirties with her alluring curves hidden in her work attire. However, she had a very stern look on her face.

"Keep the volume down."

The classroom became pin-drop silent in an instant.

The woman glanced around the room and introduced herself, "I'm Katherine Keith, a Xiaoyao Sect Elder, and I'm the teacher of this class.

'Wow!' the class thought.

Chapter 256

The classroom was in an uproar after the teacher introduced herself. The male students were ecstatic. Not only were they lucky enough to be in the same class as Circe Newman, but they also had a gorgeous teacher.

"Miss Katherine, you're so pretty. Do you have a boyfriend?" a voice asked from the back row.

Lots of male students added their remarks in their attempts to flirt with Katherine, especially the wealthy kids that were used to picking up girls wherever they went. The guy who spoke from the back row was Ryan Nicholas. His family opened a chain of supermarkets in Donghai City.

Katherine, who was at the podium, raised her hand and pointed at Ryan. "You stand up."

Ryan stood up with a grin. He had no idea what was about to happen.

Katherine walked over to him with a stick in her hand. She stopped in front of him, and asked coldly, "Have you been to school before? Has anyone told you to respect your teachers?"

Looking at her glare, Ryan started to panic. "I..."

Smack!

Before he could finish his sentence, Katherine smacked him on the head.

A loud smack was heard, and everyone was shocked! It seemed to be a strong smack, and the classroom lights flickered a little due to the smack's vibration.

"Don't you dare pull that face ever again. Do you understand?" Katherin warned.

She spoke with the force exerted from her energy field, and a strong wave of vibration exploded after she spoke!

'Huh? She was a Level One Master General?' everyone thought.

Everyone felt her rank instantly, and the class became silent. Everyone held their breath out of fear. Especially Ryan. He stood there transfixed. He was one of the wealthy kids, and he was used to always getting the girl, but this was a first! This gorgeous woman was a Level One Master General. With her ability, she could easily kill Ryan with just one finger.

Meanwhile, Darryl secretly gulped in fear. He could tell that the principal of this school must be the strongest of the strongest.

'Damn it, how was he supposed to steal the thing?

He would be killed right away,' he thought.

With that in mind, Darryl seemed disheartened.

"You, get out and stand by the door!" Katherine ordered.

Ryan did not dare to make a sound as he touched his swollen head in pain and walked to stand by the door.

By then, everyone in the class looked intimidated. Who would dare to speak up to such a strict teacher?

She walked back up to the podium and glanced across the class. "There's one more thing. The students who were fighting in the lobby earlier, stand up."

The classroom went into a dead silence. Some even glanced at Dax secretly. Everyone saw what happened between Dax and Kent earlier.

However, Dax remained calm. Who would want to admit this after what just happened in class?

"So you're not showing yourself, are you?" Katherine pointed at Darryl and Dax. "The two of you. Do you think you can get away with it? Stand up."

"Damn it," Dax cursed under his breath, although his face seemed unperturbed as he stood up. Darryl

stood up beside him.

"You're Dax Sanders, right? Your family has quite a reputation in Donghai City. Your grandfather is Saul Sanders. Years ago, he built his family from nothing with only his pair of hands and became successful. Today, the Sanders family can do as they please in Donghai City, and nobody dares to challenge you, am I right?" Katherine said.

'How did she know so much?' the class thought.

In that instant, everyone took a cold breath, their faces in shock. Even Dax looked at Katherine blankly out of surprise.

'How does she know so much about me?' Dax thought.

Katherine continued, "Let me tell you now, I've done my research on every one of you before the school started, and I know exactly who you all are. Every head of class has a clear report of every student's background. I'm telling you now, no matter how big or powerful your families are, this is a school, and you all must behave!"

As Katherin spoke, her gaze stopped on Darryl. " You! Darryl Darby! The live-in son-in-law of the Lyndon family. You've been married into the Lyndon family for three years, but you have done nothing. Your parents are living in the rural area,

am I correct?"

Hahaha!

The class was suddenly filled with laughter.

Chapter 257

"What are you all laughing at? Shut up!" Katherine glared at the class. A strong vibration permeated from her energy field once again.

Suddenly, everyone in the class stopped laughing. Although they still glanced at Darryl with a mocking look.

Katherine glared at Darryl, "Look at you, why do you fight? You're not Dax; you don't have a powerful family. What makes you think you can fight?"

'Damn it. What did I do? Stupid Kent insulted me, and I only kicked him in return.' Darryl thought to himself but did not say it out loud.

Katherine continued, "I don't care who you are. In this class, every one of you will cultivate and not cause any trouble. The two of you fought at the entrance on the first day of school. That's disrespectful. Go down to the field and run a hundred laps."

'Huh? A hundred laps?' Dax thought.

Dax's face darkened. "A hundred laps? I won't run a lap!"

With that said, Dax sat down with an angry look.

'Damn it, is she insane? Nobody had ever asked me to run a hundred laps!' Dax thought.

Out of the blue, Dax got slapped twice on the face before anyone realized.

Slap! Slap!

Katherine had walked towards Dax and slapped him. It was so loud and crisp that everyone in the class could hear how strong the slaps were.

In an instant, Dax's face was swollen. Of course, with a bad temper like his, he stood up right away, and an ax appeared in his hand. He did not care who this Katherine woman was. No matter if it was a man or woman, Dax would not let anyone slap him like that.

However, before Dax could move his ax, Katherine slapped him again.

Slap! Slap!

The other side of Dax's face was swollen like a pig too. He glared at Katherine with such anger that he looked like he would lash out at her at any time.

'Damn!' Darryl thought.

He saw it in Dax's eyes, so he quickly held onto Dax

to stop him. "Alright, alright, don't get mad. Let's just admit-"

Before he could finish, Katherine raised her hand again and slapped Darryl on his cheeks.

Slap! Slap!

Instantly, Darryl could feel his cheeks burning!

'Damn it, what was that for? Why did she hit me? Damn it! I'm an innocent man!' Darryl thought, confused.

"Both of you deserve to be punished for your mistakes. This is a rule. In this school, you have to do anything I say. Either you get out of class and never come back, or go to the field and run," Katherine warned.

Katherine stared at Dax and showed her three fingers, "You have three seconds."

"Three..."

"Two..."

'Damn it,' Dax cursed in his mind.

Dax was triggered, and his eyes were blood red. No matter how much he wanted to lash out at her, he knew he could never fight Katherine.

Meanwhile, Darryl grabbed his arm. "Let it go, Dax.

Let's go run."

One had to admit that Katherine was a very strict teacher. It was their first day of school, and they were already being punished to run laps around the field.

Chapter 258

'What an unlucky day,' Dax thought.

Dax was panting breathlessly with his face looking stone cold as he did laps around the field with Darryl.

"F*ck her! I'll remember this Katherine woman. I've never been more insulted in my entire life!" Dax ranted as he ran.

He had been slapped four times and punished to run a hundred laps.

It was insulting to Dax.

"Alright, with what we've got now, I doubt it's the right time to take revenge. When you're under someone, you really got to let go of your ego," Darryl comforted Dax with a helpless look on his face.

In the classrooms above them, the class teacher let the students do some self-study after introducing themselves.

In Year One Class Seventeen, Kent Hough was sitting by the window. As he was bored, he looked out of the window and saw what was happening in

the field.

"Haha! Everyone look over there! Isn't that the live-in son-in-law? He's been punished to run laps around the field!" he yelled excitedly.

Everyone in his class gathered at the window and laughed at Darryl.

"It really is him!"

Not only them, but the students from the other classes looked at the field as well. Being punished to run laps on the first day of school was definitely something worth laughing at. Even Lily and Yvonne could not resist as they joined in and watched Darryl run.

Today was the opening of The Hexad School, as well as the first day of school. Yet, a few 'famous' ones already got their names to the top of the list.

At the top of the list was obviously Circe Newman. She was the heiress of the Newman family. With such a powerful background and her attractive looks, she gained popularity instantly. There were almost no men in school that did not fall for her.

The person who was second on the 'famous' list was Gordon Claydon. His family was in the fashion industry, so he had a great sense of style. Besides that, he was very attractive, so he gained the hearts

of the women easily.

Naturally, Circe and Gordon became the most popular lady and gentleman in the school.

The next person on the list was obviously Darryl. Darryl gained his fame not because of his hundred laps but because of his title of 'the live-in son-in-law.' Everyone heard how he lived with his wife for three years but never touched her. Who would have thought that Darryl had become the joke of the school before the day even ended?

Since today was the first day of school, there was no scheduled class, and the day ended in the afternoon. Within half an hour, most of the students had left the complex. However, it was not until 3 pm when Darryl and Dax finally finished their hundred laps.

"Damn it. I'm so tired!" Dax complained as they walked out of the school. Dax was covered in sweat; his clothes were thoroughly wet. He grabbed onto Darryl's shoulders. "Let's go shower somewhere. I'm covered in sweat!"

As they spoke, a gorgeous woman walked toward them; it was Lily.

Lily had two bottles of water in her hands. She walked up to them as soon as she saw them. She handed them water. "I got you guys drinks. Darryl, drink this."

"Haha! You're so thoughtful!" Dax accepted the bottle right away and took a big mouthful of water, letting out a refreshing sigh when he finished.

Darryl did not accept the water and grabbed Dax's shoulder. "Dax, let's find somewhere to shower."

Lily panicked as she bit her lips. "Darryl, please don' t stay mad at me. Will you please come home with me? I'm really sorry. I'm begging you..."

Chapter 259

In the past few days, Lily had been feeling incredibly guilty.

With no response from Darryl, she grew more anxious and held on to his wrist. "I'm really sorry, Darryl. Please, will you come home with me?"

Darryl acted as if he did not hear her. He continued talking to Dax, "Let's go, hurry! Didn't you say you want to find a place to shower? Let's grab a drink after you shower."

Dax shook his head. "I'm not drinking with you! I'm not going to shower either. Your wife asked you to go home."

With that said, Dax turned and ran away.

"Darryl, I really am sorry. Please forgive me, and come home with me?" Lily begged with her eyes red as she hugged Darryl from behind.

She had reflected a lot on her past actions these few days and regretted everything she had ever said or done to Darryl.

"If you're not coming home with me, I'll follow you wherever you go," Lily pleaded, biting on her

lips.

After hearing that, Darryl took a long deep breath. " Fine, fine, fine! I'll come with you."

If she was to follow him everywhere he went, it would not be convenient anyway. Going home with her was fine, but he would not forgive her so easily.

On their way home, Darryl kept a straight face and did not speak a word.

...

Half an hour later, they arrived at Windon Villas.

Lily thought the greatest decision she had ever made was buying this villa. Within a few days after her purchase, the prices had already gone up.

It was almost dusk, and the villas loomed in the shadow of the sunset. Surrounded by mountains and mists, the scene was picturesque, like a paradise on earth.

Darryl nodded with pleasure as he looked at the villas built by his company, Windon Real Estate. He was right about Jade. Under her leadership, the company thrived. Jade must have put in so much effort on this project as every single villa was well designed. He recalled Jade saying that the villas were selling well and that only one villa was left.

Lily held on to his arm tightly. "Let's go. Ours is

Number Two."

Darryl smiled, "You go in first. I'll go buy some fruits."

There was a supermarket in the Windon Villas, and Darryl wanted to get some fruits from there. After all, he had not been home for so many days. If he went back empty-handed, Samantha would not be pleased.

"That's not needed. Let's just go home," Lily smiled. It did not matter at all, as long as he forgave her.

Darryl shook his head as he insisted, "I'll go get some. It won't take long. I'll be back soon."

He wanted to buy some fruits and visit his parents, too.

Since he insisted, Lily gave in and nodded. "Alright then, but promise me you'll come back after you're done?"

After getting the cold shoulder from him for the past few days, she was afraid. She was afraid of him leaving.

Darryl smiled and nodded. He then turned and walked toward the supermarket.

As he was almost there, a girl drove toward him in a

motorbike. She was dressed in a faint pink dress and looked youthful and beautiful.

Darryl could not help to take a second glance at her. She seemed familiar.

The girl got down from the motorbike when she passed him. "What a coincidence! Why are you here?"

Darryl suddenly recalled that she was Dora Simpson. They met downstairs of the Television Station when two scammers tried to trick her with an antique. Darryl saved her from being scammed.

"Oh yeah, what a coincidence!"

Chapter 260

"So, you came here to visit the area just like me?" Dora chirped enthusiastically.

'Visit?' Darryl thought. He was caught off guard for a little bit.

Dora was a university student majoring in architecture design. At the end of the semester, they had to submit some drafts. Dora heard that Windon Real Estate had built top-notch luxury villas, so she came here for inspiration.

She was surprised to see Darryl.

"I'm here to visit, aren't you?" she let out an astonished sigh. "These villas are way too pretty!"

When Dora first met Darryl, he dressed like a security guard, and she assumed he worked security part-time. Today, Darryl was dressed casually, too, so she assumed he was a university student like herself who came here to visit.

Darryl smiled but did not speak.

"Oh yeah, which university are you from? Are you majoring in architecture design as well?" Dora chirped.

"I'm..." Darryl was about to say The Hexad School.

Dora continued talking before he could finish. "Ah! I haven't thanked you for last time! Since you're here, let's visit the area together! Do you know which is the nicest spot here?"

Darryl shook his head. To be honest, although his company built this, it was actually his first time here.

"Follow me; I'll show you!" Dora pulled on Darryl's hand, and they arrived at Villa No.28.

"You're lucky that you met me today! This is the most beautiful spot. If it weren't for me, you wouldn't find it!" Dora chirped happily.

Darryl looked around, and she was right. There was a man-made lake right in front of No.28. Beside the lake were trees, making the scene look picturesque, especially now that the sun was setting.

Dora took out her phone and captured a few photos. With a proud and fulfilled look, she turned to Darryl. "What do you think? Do you like the spot I found? This is the best spot to get some inspiration!"

Darryl nodded in agreement. To an architecture student, this scene must have been very inspiring.

"Oh wow, Dora Simpson? What a coincidence!" a

voice said from behind.

Turning around, a girl stood not too far from them. She was average-looking, almost five foot six, and dressed in streetwear with a pair of AJ on her feet. This girl was holding onto a fat guy's arm, and he had a beer belly under a gold chain. It was a real gold chain.

"Lisa Hill?" Dora called out her name with surprise.

Lisa Hill was her classmate. She did not come from a wealthy family, but with her looks, she had quite a lot of rich boyfriends throughout her three years at university.

Lisa scoffed and pointed at Darryl. "Is this your boyfriend? As they say, the same type of people get along. Dora, your family is poor, and you found a boyfriend as poor as you. People like you will never be able to afford houses like this! Do you even know how much per square foot these villas are? You and your boyfriend will never be able to afford something like this."

Dora said softly with a blush, "I...We came here to visit."

Lisa scoffed, "Tsk, tsk, tsk. So you came here to visit. The security guards here are not doing their job right by letting people like you, wearing cheap clothes, in."

"You..." Dora was speechless.

In university, Lisa had always mocked her for being poor. She could not believe that she would bump into her today.

"Oh right, Dora, didn't you come to visit? What's the point of visiting the outside of the villas? You may come in and visit our villa later." Lisa said before turning to look at the fat guy. "Jack is so nice to me; he's about to buy me a villa here. Someone's going to show us around later."

Dora smiled politely and shook her head. "No, thanks."

All she wanted to do was leave here as soon as possible.

Lisa had been bullying her for the past three years. She was used to it by now.

Sometimes, Lisa would shout out loud in class, " Dora's shoes are ten bucks!" or whenever Dora wore something new, Lisa would yell, "Her clothes look so cheap!"

Darryl could not watch any longer. He let out a sigh and said, "I think most of the villas have already sold out. You're too late to buy one now. Only No. 9 9 is left, and it's very expensive. Every square foot is two hundred thousand bucks, and lots of people

are trying to get it."

Lisa scoffed, "Oh, Dora, your boyfriend knows quite a few things! Let me tell you what the general manager of Windon Real Estate is my boyfriend's cousin! She's in charge, and she'll only sell No.99 to us at 40 percent off! What about now? Jealous? No point in being jealous, though. People like you can never afford something like this."

Chapter 261

'The fat guy was Jade's cousin? Jade was pretty, so why was her cousin so ugly and fat?' Darryl thought.

Darryl shook his head. "Lisa and Jack, right? Go home, they'll listen to me, and we won't sell you No. 99."

Lisa was caught off guard. She pointed at Darryl and scowled. "Listen to you? What did you say? That you won't sell the villa to us? Are you a staff member here? Tsk, tsk, tsk, I knew it. You're a security guard here, aren't you? Since when does the security guard have the right to refuse a buyer, eh?"

Her voice was loud and clear, and lots of passersby heard and gathered around them.

Dora's cheeks turned red, and she pulled on Darryl. "Let's just go."

"Don't go yet! Since your boyfriend is a security guard here, I'll phone my cousin now and fire him." Jack laughed.

He picked up the phone and called Jade. She answered the call shortly after.

"Jade, come here now. It's urgent," Jack said.

"Please, please don't make the call!" Dora panicked. She realized by now that Darryl was not here to visit, and he must have been a part-time security guard here as well.

'He can't lose his job because of me!' Dora thought as she stood forward.

"I'll apologize to you all. Please don't make the call. Darryl and I will leave right away."

"It's too late now." Jack kept the phone in his pocket. "What about this? You and your boyfriend kneel on the floor and beg me? I won't get him fired, and I'll make him the head of security."

"Do I really have to kneel?" Darryl smiled.

"Yes, kneel! If you kneel and beg, I won't fire you," Jack said.

"Do I really have to do it?" Darryl asked.

"Yes!" Jack scoffed. "Not only do you have to kneel, your girlfriend, Dora, has to kneel too. You talked back to me just now, and you upset me. I'll fire you unless you kneel on the floor."

As he was talking, a sexy figure in heels marched toward them hastily.

It was Jade.

Jade was wearing a white shirt and tight formal

skirt that showed off her alluring body lines and curves. She was already nearby, so when Jack called her saying there was something urgent, she came right away.

"Jade!" Jack walked toward her, smiling.

Jade nodded and glanced at Lisa. She knew her cousin well enough, and he was always picking up and playing with girls. She heard that Jack was looking to buy a villa lately, so she saved No. 99 for him, and gave him a discount. The price was reasonable after the discount.

"Jade, this security guard is so rude. Fire him!" Jack pointed at Darryl.

Jade followed the direction he pointed at and came eye to eye with Darryl.

"Wh-who did you say the security guard was?" Jade scowled.

"Him!" Jack pointed at Darryl. "Jade, fire him now! He's so disgusting, and having him working here will bring down the class of this area."

Slap!

Jade raised her hand and slapped Jack's face real hard.

"Shut your mouth!" Jade was trembling with anger

as she walked up to Darryl. "Daddy..."

'Huh?' Jack was stunned. 'Darryl was in his twenties. How...How was he a Daddy?'

Darryl smiled at Jade. "Your cousin's so amazing. He asked me to apologize to him. What do you think? Should I kneel?"

At this instant, Jade's mind went blank, and a shiver went through her body as her legs became jelly. She could not help but glare at Jack. Her cousin always caused problems!

Before Jade said anything, Jack's face turned pale, and he knelt on the floor.

"Bro...Sir, I was wrong. I was ignorant to have spoken to you so rudely. Please, please, forgive me," Jack stammered.

Jack was panicking. By now, anyone could see that Darryl was not a security guard. He seemed to be the owner of Windon Real Estate. Since his cousin called him Daddy, he could only call him Sir.

Meanwhile, Lisa followed Jack and knelt on the ground. Her face was pale white, and she was shivering so nervously that she could not utter a word.

'Who was he?' passersby thought.

The surrounding passersby stared in disbelief as

they held their breath, shocked.

"Huh? Didn't you ask me to kneel? Why are you kneeling instead?" Darryl glanced at Jack and mocked.

"Sir, I was wrong. Please forgive me." Jack smiled embarrassingly. As he spoke, he looked at Jade, hoping she could help him out.

"Daddy, how...What are we going to do about it?" Jade bit her lips and asked carefully.

To be fair, Darryl's face was tough to read. He seemed to be smiling but not really, which made Jade even more anxious than she already was. After all, Darryl was the one who gave her everything she had now. If Darryl was angry, she might lose her job.

Watching the anxious look on Jade's face, Darryl smiled, "How do I know? Isn't he your cousin? You decide."

Jade secretly let out a long sigh of relief. Darryl was not angry, so it was not too bad.

Chapter 262

With that in mind, Jade glared at Jack. "What are you still doing here? Get lost!"

Jack trembled and staggered up. He was sad and disheartened as he had anticipated to get the keys today and have a good time with Lisa. Yet this happened.

'This was all Lisa's fault for being such a gold digger!' Jack thought.

After walking away, Lisa asked him softly, "Where are we going tonight?"

"Damn you! Go wherever you want, and get lost! I don't want to see you again!" Jack yelled.

If it were not for her vanity, Jack would not have offended someone he could never afford to offend. He even got Jade into trouble. After yelling at Lisa, he snatched his hand back and marched away.

Meanwhile, Dora looked at Darryl with curiosity, ' Who was he?'

Darryl did not feel like exploring the area any longer, so he said goodbye to Dora and went to get some fruits from the supermarket. He hummed

joyfully on his way back home.

However, the moment he stepped into the villa, Samantha walked out of her room. Seeing Darryl, she felt agitated. "How are you not ashamed to come home now? You left my daughter and had to steal things to survive."

When he stole the phones, the police came here to inform them. It was so embarrassing for Samantha.

She looked at the fruit basket in Darryl's hand.

"I won't eat the fruits bought with stolen money. Go and divorce my daughter tomorrow morning, understand?" Samantha mocked.

Darryl smiled and stayed silent. In the past three years, Darryl was used to Samantha's harsh words, so he was unperturbed. He placed the fruit basket on the table and glanced around the villa. It was so much better than where they lived before.

Seeing the calm look on Darryl, Samantha yelled, "I' m talking to you! Did you hear me? Are you deaf or dumb?"

'This trash hadn't come home in so long; he's forgotten his manners,' Samantha thought.

Meanwhile, Lily rushed out of her room. "Mom, please don't make a scene. I asked him to come back."

Samantha thought she heard it wrong.

'What was wrong with Lily today? Why would she ask this trash to come home?' she wondered.

"Why do I have such a disappointing daughter like you? Why would you miss trash like him? Didn't the guy Donoghue send you lots of gifts when you met up with him? Didn't you say he was amazing? Why are you back with this trash?" Samantha scoffed.

Lily blushed as she was embarrassed. She did not tell Samantha what happened a few days ago, as she did not want her to worry. Samantha still thought that Donoghue was a good man.

"Mom, don't mention Donoghue again. I won't leave Darryl," Lily panicked.

This triggered Samantha. Since her daughter was acting strange, she mocked Darryl Darryl. "Darryl, tell me. What drugs did you feed my daughter? Why can't she think straight?"

Darryl smiled but did not reply. He reclined nonchalantly on the sofa, not bothered by Samantha 's yelling.

Samantha stomped her feet and pulled on Lily's wrist. "Come with me to the bedroom."

Samantha had decided that no matter what it took,

she wants her daughter to divorce that trash today. Lily helplessly followed her mother to the room.

After both of them left, Darryl stood up slowly and walked towards the kitchen. He had been eating out the past few days, but now that he was home, he wanted to cook some dishes. He picked up a newly bought casserole dish in the kitchen and laughed to himself, 'Hmph, this casserole dish is just right for refining pills! Haha!'

Darryl put on an apron and started refining pills while making dinner.

Ten minutes later, Darryl covered the casserole dish and waited for the rice to be cooked. He was bored while waiting, so he took out the "Shadow Skills" from his bag. He did not have time to read it since the Cult Mistress gave it to him. Now was the perfect time to read it.

On the first page, the introduction stated: [The man who steals had been known as a thief, a gentleman of knowledge, a flying thief, and there are sects of stealing, such as...]

"Damn it! Why are they all the same? So pretentious," Darryl muttered, but it was not long before he was hooked on the contents of the book. The Cult Mistress was right; this was indeed an interesting read.

The stealing techniques used by modern-day thieves were considered unprofessional. This included using tools such as using long tweezers to steal a phone from a lady's bag.

However, there were at least a thousand types of stealing techniques recorded in the memoir. For instance, "Bump-steal" was when the thief stole the item as they bumped into their target. Another technique was the "Cut-steal," which was using a small cutting knife to cut open the lady's bag/cloth to take out the item. Another cool technique was the "Powder-steal," which was to apply powder on the skin, and when the target walked past the thief, the victim's mind would go blank for a second. In that one second, the thief would steal the item.

Darryl nodded with excitement. 'This was indeed a treasure! The person who wrote this was a genius!'

Chapter 263

The next morning, Lily woke Darryl up. "Wake up; we need to go to school."

Darryl stretched and sat up slowly. He was so hooked by the book last night that he went to bed late.

Lily handed him clothes. "Go wash your face, and I' ll make you breakfast." She turned and went to the kitchen.

Darryl was shocked by the warm and fuzzy feeling lingering in his heart. In the past three years, Lily had never made him breakfast. Darryl used to prepare their meals for them, but now her attitude had changed entirely. He was still not used to it.

Today was their first official day at The Hexad School. By the time Darryl arrived, almost every student from every class had arrived.

'Weird. Why was Dax not in? Did he oversleep?' Darryl thought.

As Darryl stepped into the class, he frowned. His headteacher taught the first period on human acupoints.

Katherine wrote: [Human Acupoints] on the board,

and started teaching. "The temple, also known as the strange acupoint outside our meridian, is a vital part of the human body and one of the deadly points. If one were hit on the temple, one would faint or die. The Baihui acupoint belongs to the central channel meridian, situated on the top of the head. In the cultivation world, when the cultivator mentions the 'Three Flower Head,' he's referring to this acupoint."

Katherine taught with a serious tone, and nobody dared to make a noise. After all, she was a Martial Marquis; who would want to cause trouble?

Katherine taught in detail, and the girls in the class listened with full attention. However, many of the boys were not paying as much attention as their eyes kept lingering on Katherine's body, checking her out. Today, she was dressed in a tight dress, making her body look sexy and classy.

With a beautiful teacher on the podium, who could focus?

To be fair, she was beautiful, but that was not the most attractive part of her. It was her being a Level One Martial Marquis that made her stand out from the other beautiful women.

Darryl was in no mood to admire her. He held onto his phone anxiously.

'What happened? Why was Dax not here?' he thought as he sent Dax a message.

Not long after, his phone lit up with a message from Dax.

[Darryl, I'm Nancy. Something happened, and Dax is now in the hospital.]

'Huh? Hospital, again?' he thought.

Darryl's face darkened as he replied, [What happened? Why was he admitted to the hospital again? Was it because of the Dixon family?"

Nancy replied quickly, [Not the Dixons. It was Brandon and Abby Guy.]

Brandon and Abby were Dax's enemies for a very long time. If they didn't hate Dax so much, they would not have kidnapped Nancy that time.

Brandon was still upset at not being able to get Nancy the other time. Brandon learned that Dax went to The Hexad School yesterday, and his wife Nancy took over, so Brandon took this opportunity to bring his men to the Sanders yesterday to kidnap her.

However, Grandpa Saul was there, too, and he would not let them kidnap his daughter-in-law. Since he had eaten the Godly pill, he had become a

Level One Martial Marquis, so he was able to fight and beat everyone. However, due to his old age, he still ended up being stabbed by Brandon before he left.

When Dax returned home that night and heard what happened to Grandpa, he was enraged and brought a hundred or so men to Brandon. Yet they fell into his trap.

Brandon knew Dax would come to seek revenge, so he had his men waiting for Dax. As expected, Dax was punched by Brandon once he got there, but he persisted and continued to fight.

When Dax made it back to the Sanders palace, he collapsed and has not woken up since

'Damn it!' Darryl cursed to himself.

If he saw this coming, he would not have sold the Godly pill to the Guy family.

Darryl took a deep breath and sent a message to Abby, [Did you cause trouble for Dax again?]

'This woman hit Dax and still expected him to teach her how to refine pills? In her dreams!' Darryl thought.

As Darryl was typing, he smelt a faint floral scent. He looked up instinctively and was caught off guard.

Somehow, Katherine had walked to his seat and

stood in front of him. She looked at him coldly.

Everyone in the class was smiling.

'Haha! The live-in son-in-law is in trouble, again!'

Katherine slammed his table. "Darryl, was running a hundred laps too little for you? What do you think you're doing? Who permitted you to play with your phone in class?"

Darryl nodded bitterly.

...

Rebecca looked out of the window from the second floor at the Darby mansion and bit her lips as she caressed her slightly rounded belly. The baby was Darryl's, but she did not know if it was right to keep the baby.

In the yard, Old Master Darby sat on a chair as he watched his family members in front of him.

Seven people were practicing their sword moves against one another in the space in front of Old Master Darby. They were practicing the Big Dipper Formation. Among the seven of them were Florian, Yumi, Jack, and four other younger family members. Their steps kept on changing and overlapping, and the swords seemed to be all over the place. Their moves seemed to be all over the place at first, but you would realize that they were

all well synchronized when you looked closely. They frequently changed positions, from a cross formation, then parallel lines, and so on.

Chapter 264

He was sending the message behind his desk, so how did she realize?

Darryl let out a sigh. "Miss Katherine, I wasn't playing with my phone. I'm just checking the time."

With that, he was about to keep his phone.

"Don't you talk back when you've made a mistake. Give me the phone," Katherine declared with a cold tone that made it obvious her order was non-negotiable.

She snatched his phone. "Darryl, you're already a live-in son-in-law. Why do you show no remorse? You should appreciate the opportunity to study at The Hexad School and work hard. Others can fool around because they're from wealthy families; even if they don't succeed, it's okay. But you? You're fooling around. No wonder everyone's laughing at you!"

Katherine turned and walked back to the podium.

Darryl was helpless, and he mumbled, "What's so bad about being a live-in son-in-law? I'm living just fine."

Although his voice was soft, Katherine heard it

clearly, and so did the students around him.

'Huh? The kid enjoyed being a live-in son-in-law?' everyone thought.

Suddenly, a few students around him broke into laughter.

Katherine yelled with anger and pointed at the door. "You're ridiculous! Go and stand by the door! You're not allowed to sit for the rest of the day!"

'Damn it; he was punished to run yesterday and asked to stand today. What an unlucky school!' Darryl thought.

He let out a sigh, thinking that once he had stolen the scripture, he would not have to come to class again.

After Darryl walked out of the class, Katherine did not give him a second look.

"Since the class is almost over, I want to inform you all that we will be choosing a class monitor tomorrow." Katherine glanced around the class with a faint smile. "When I'm not in, the class monitor will take charge of the class, such as the school activities, etc. So we need someone capable."

The class was filled with chatter as she was about to pick a class monitor!.

Although it came with more responsibilities, it also

came with more power and authority. Everyone would have to listen and look up to the class monitor when Katherine was not around.

Many of the student's eyes sparkled with excitement.

...

They had quite a few classes for the rest of the day. After Katherine's Human Acupoints class, there was also Alchemy class, Literature, Art of war, and Formation class. However, these classes were taught by old men that dressed and looked just like those ancient men with a traditional way of thinking and stubborn attitude. Not only the guys, but even the girls were uninterested.

However, when the Alchemy class teacher appeared, everyone seemed excited. The teacher was named Isabella Monte. Like Katherine, she was a gorgeous woman in her thirties. She was also sexy and charming. Though she was different from Katherine with her gentle and soft temperament and soothing voice, which made her seem nicer, she was not strict at all. After one class with her, all the students fell in love with her.

After standing for the whole day, the bell finally rang, and Darryl let out a long sigh of relief.

'It's finally over!' he thought.

After standing for a whole day, his legs were so tired, and he felt like he could collapse at any time. However, a student rushed to the podium before everyone could leave. "Hey everyone, wait up. I'd like to say a few things."

It was Declan Noel. He was a rich kid from another city.

He cleared his throat and spoke loudly, "Everyone, it must've been by fate that we were all allocated to the same class. I'd like to treat everyone to dinner tonight."

When Katherine mentioned picking a class monitor, Declan wanted to be elected. He decided to treat everyone to dinner tonight to campaign for his election as class monitor tomorrow.

"Haha! Sounds good!" a student stood up, clapping.

It was Miles Morrison. Although his family was not poor, he was still nothing compared to the other rich kids. However, he was a smart kid. Within a day, he had made friends with Declan and started following him around. When Declan declared that he was treating everyone to dinner, Miles supported him right away.

Since Miles spoke up, everyone else joined in as well.

"Sure! I'll come!"

"Thank you, Declan!"

In an instant, everyone was going. Declan smiled and looked at Miss Katherine, "Since everyone's going, would you like to join us, too?"

Katherine considered it for a while before she nodded. "Sure, I'll join you guys."

Since everyone in the class was going, she would learn more about her students during this gathering. This would benefit her teaching in the future.

Declan was pleased when Katherine agreed. He waved. "Let's go to the Oriental Pearl."

Chapter 265

The Oriental Pearl was the best hotel in the city. Of course, he had to pick the best hotel since it was their first gathering.

Hearing that they were going to the Oriental Pearl, the class was in an uproar. Everyone walked out of the classroom happily. Once they got out of school, everyone went into their cars. Since most of the students were from wealthy families, most of them drove here and offered a ride to those who did not come with a car.

Since Lily sent Darryl here this morning, he needed a ride from someone else, but most of the cars were filled up by now. Darryl glanced around and saw that Declan's car still had an empty seat.

Declan was driving, and Miles was sitting in the passenger's seat. In the back were Dax's cousins, Daisy and Daphne, and there was an empty seat.

Darryl pulled open the car door and was about to go in, but Daisy pushed him away and looked at him with disgust. "Darryl, can't you go with someone else?"

"Why? All the other cars are filled up. I can only

take this car," Darryl said.

Daisy stared at him. "Darryl, you're lucky enough even to be invited to Declan's dinner, but now you're even thinking of sitting in his car? On top of that, you look dirty, so go and get a taxi!"

She did not want to sit in the same car as a live-in son-in-law.

Even Declan added in with a mocking tone, "Darryl, didn't you see that the two pretty women don't want to sit with you? I can't help you. Go and get a taxi."

After hearing Declan, the students in the other cars burst out laughing and looked at Darryl with disgust.

That was sad. Nobody liked this live-in son-in-law, so he had to take a taxi.

Darryl sighed. 'These people were so materialistic nowadays. Wasn't it just a meal?

He prepared to leave. Meanwhile, Katherine walked toward him and said, "Darryl, I'll give you a ride."

Katherine drove a pink-colored BMW. She saw that nobody liked Darryl, and as his teacher, she felt a responsibility to help him instead of letting him take a taxi. 1

Her car was filled with a faint floral scent. Sitting in

her car, Darryl felt more relaxed and took a few glances at her. She was very attractive, and the only downside to her was that she was too strict.

As she drove, she said, "Darryl, as you can see, the students in the class don't like you and don't want to sit in the same car as you. So you really have to work hard. If you don't, they'll always look down on you, and you'll remain as the live-in son-in-law for the rest of your life."

Darryl smiled bitterly, "Don't worry, Miss Katherine. I'll work hard. May I please have my phone back?"

She took away his phone and had not given it back to him.

Katherine's face darkened, and glared at Darryl, " Didn't you listen to what I said? I confiscated your phone, and now you're asking for it back? I'll give it back to you if you well-behaved tomorrow."

Chapter 266

Watching the scene, Drake Darby could not restrain his excitement and said to Old Master Darby, "Dad, the Big Dipper Formation is so well choreographed! Their attacks and defenses were tight and solid. With this formation, the Darby family will live in glory!"

Although the three of them were only Level Three Masters, with the power of this formation, they would be able to fight a Martial Marquis!

Old Master Darby smiled as he exclaimed with happiness, "The Big Dipper Formation is indeed one of the best formations."

Once they finished practicing, Florian kept his sword and walked toward him with excitement. " Grandpa, what do you think?"

"Good, good, very good! You have all improved a lot lately. This is all beyond my expectations. I'm very pleased, and I'm sure you all will bring glory to the Darby family," Old Master Darby praised with a smile.

Florian was overjoyed by what Old Master Darby said.

"Don't worry, Grandpa, I'll work even harder!" he promised.

Old Master Darby nodded.

"Grandpa, there's a visitor," a voice rang up from behind.

Suddenly, everyone turned to look at the entrance as a group of women walked into the mansion. There were around ten or so women, with every one of them being extremely beautiful. The woman leading them was dressed in a white dress, holding a whisk in her hand.

In an instant, all the men in the family stared at the women without blinking. They were excited to have so many gorgeous women visiting them.

Old Master Darby stood up right away in shock as he saw them. "Ah, it's Abbess Mother Serendipity from the Emei Sect. Welcome, welcome."

Abbess Mother Serendipity was one of the six Elders of the Emei Sect and was a powerful woman with outstanding strength and refined temperament. The women behind her were the followers of the Emei Sect.

A few years ago, Old Master Darby met Abbess Mother Serendipity quite a few times.

She smiled and nodded at him. "Mister Darby, I'm

sorry for visiting you without telling you in advance."

Old Master Darby smiled, "It's no problem. May I know how I can help?"

Abbess Mother Serendipity smiled, "Mr. Darby, there are around 50 of us from the Emei Sect. May I ask if we could reside at your place?"

The Six Sect formed the Hexad School, and every sect allocated some of their Elders and followers to reside in Donghai City. Though all the Emei Sect followers were female, it would not be ideal living on the campus as they could be disturbed by the male students. After some discussions, the Emei Sect had decided to seek help from the Darby family for a place to stay. After all, Old Master Darby was a follower of the Shaolin Sect, so nobody would judge them if they remained at the Darby mansion.

"Mr. Darby, we won't stay for free. We'll pay rent," she continued.

Old Master Darby frowned and seemed hesitant. It was not about the rent, but the fact that the Darby family had gotten involved with the Eternal Life Palace sect, which was a cult. If the Emei Sect followers lived with them, their secrets might be exposed easily.

This was very risky.

Though they came here sincerely, it would not be ideal to reject them. Old Master Darby was caught up with the dilemma.

Meanwhile, Florian walked toward him and said excitedly, "Grandpa, I'd agree if I were you. Abbess Mother Serendipity and the followers of the Emei Sect came all the way here to Donghai City; it must've been hard."

Florian was naturally perverted, or else he would not have assaulted his sister-in-law. Now that there were so many gorgeous ladies staying at the mansion, of course, he would want to keep them in the estate. Every one of them was so beautiful, especially Abbess Mother Serendipity.

Chapter 267

If these Emei followers stayed at the Darby mansion, Florian might even stand a chance with some of them. Or so he thought.

Hearing that, Yumi came up behind him and pinched him. "What are you so excited about?"

Yumi knew her husband well enough to understand how perverted his mind was. If he wasn't perverted, he would not have assaulted Rebecca. This useless trash must have seen that the Abbess Mother Serendipity was gorgeous and began having dirty thoughts about her.

"What? I'm just concerned that the Emei followers have nowhere else to stay, and I feel bad for them," Florian answered with a straight face.

Yumi stared at him but remained silent.

Old Master Darby waved his hand and smiled at the Abbess Mother Serendipity, "Alright, you all may stay at my mansion. Shaolin and Emei have always had a good relationship, which will further improve our bond, so why not? We have plenty of rooms here anyway."

Since they were all here already, he had no choice

but to agree.

The Abbess Mother Serendipity was pleased. “ Thank you, Mister Darby.”

...

At the Oriental Pearl, Declan shouted with confidence as everyone arrived, “Get me the biggest VIP room here!”

There were almost 70 of them, and the Oriental Pearl had the room to accommodate all of them.

“Sir, may I please ask for your VIP card?” a staff member asked with a smile.

The Oriental Pearl only had one room that big, and it was usually used to accommodate VIPs. They would rather have it vacant than to allow ordinary guests to use it. Since the owner, Wayne Woodall, was not in today, the staff required a VIP card to enable them to use it.

Declan was shocked and shook his head, “I don’t have a VIP card, but I don’t lack any money. Just arrange it for me, will you?”

“I’m very sorry, Sir. We only open this room to our VIPs,” the staff member apologized.

‘What? Only the VIPs get to use it?’ everyone thought as they looked at each other with mixed

emotions.

It was the first time most of them had come here to dine at the Oriental Pearl, and lots of the girls had already posted photos online to show off.

Declan was shocked, too. No wonder the Oriental Pearl was the fanciest hotel in Donghai City. You could not even have the VIP room without a VIP card.

Declan thought for a while and asked, "Can I make one now?"

'It was just a VIP card. It shouldn't be so hard,' he thought.

The staff shook her head again, "I'm really sorry. We'll need our boss' signature to make one. Since he 's not in right now, you can only apply for a standard membership."

'Damn it, you needed the boss' signature to make a card?' he thought.

Declan wanted to go to another restaurant, but he saw that the girls did not want to leave. A few of them had already posted on their social media with the caption [My class monitor's treating us to dinner at the Oriental Pearl.]

If he asked them to leave now, it would be embarrassing. As he began to panic, Circe Newman

finally said something after being quiet for the whole time, "Why don't I try? I could try to call the owner."

'Wow! The class goddess spoke!' everyone was shocked as they turned their gaze to her.

She was dressed in a tight top with dark denim jeans. She was cold, elegant, and very alluring. Everyone knew that Circe was the wealthiest in Kyoto; her contacts and connections were better than most of the rich kids in her class. If she spoke up, there must be a way.

Declan seemed pleased and smiled at Circe. "I'm so sorry to bother you with such a thing. Thank you!"

The staff was a woman, but even she could not help but look at Circe with admiration. "Sure, Madam. It would be great if you could phone our boss."

Circe nodded and picked up her phone. She called Wayne, but after a while, all she heard was, "I'm sorry, the number you're calling is unavailable."

'It didn't go through,' she thought.

Everyone heard the phone go to voicemail. The smile on Declan's face disappeared, too.

The staff tried her best to smile and said apologetically, "I'm very sorry. I really don't have the right to let you have the room without a direct

order from our boss."

She believed that this beautiful lady knew her boss, Wayne, but it was the rule. Without a direct order from Wayne, nobody could open up the room.

Chapter 268

Circe remained emotionless as she nodded and kept her phone, stepping to the side.

The situation became awkward as it became apparent that they would not be able to dine here after all. Even Circe could not get in, so it was unlikely that anyone else could. By then, many of the girls shook their heads in disappointment, and so did Darryl.

He was standing at the end of the crowd, so nobody saw him. Suddenly, he walked toward the staff member with a card in his hand. "Hello, could you please check if you can open a room with this card?"

Wayne gave him this card a while ago, and he always carried it with him but never used it.

'Huh? Was this live-in son-in-law going crazy? Haha!' everyone thought.

The VIP room at the Oriental Pearl was the most luxurious room in the entire city and the only room that could fit over 50 guests.

'Declan and Circe could not get in, so what was this trash doing here? Is he joking around again?' people thought.

A few girls laughed, covering their mouths with their hands as they looked at Darryl like he was a joke.

"Tsk, tsk, Darryl. Why are you coming forward? To entertain everyone?"

Meanwhile, Daisy walked out from the crowd and took the card away from Darryl. "Aww, it's a golden card. Darryl, are you joking? Hahaha!"

'Only VIPs could attain the VIP card here at the Oriental Pearl. How could a live-in son-in-law have it? Who was he pretending to be? Haha!' everyone thought.

Everyone burst into laughter.

"Never mind. Give it back to me," Darryl said, as he tried to get back the card.

"No way! Are you scared now?" Daisy mocked as she handed the card to the staff. "C'mon everyone, let's see if this card can get us the room."

Everyone laughed as they surrounded the staff member.

"Ah...Is this....a Supreme VIP card?" the staff member thought in shock. At the same time, her eyes opened wide as her hand trembled slightly while she held onto the card.

No, she did not see it wrong. This was indeed the Supreme VIP card. There were less than three of them in the entire Oriental Pearl.

The staff member was stunned for a moment. She could see that the guests in front of her were from wealthy families, so it made sense for them to dine here. However, she did not expect one of them to be a Supreme VIP.

The Supreme VIP was allowed to spend as much as he wanted at this hotel and got the best service as well as other benefits. Of course, getting into the VIP room was no big deal at all compared to that.

Transfixed, the staff stared at Daisy blankly and said excitedly, "May I know if this card is yours?"

Daisy did not catch the change of tone in the staff's voice, so she shook her head and laughed as she pointed at Darryl, "Why would I have a card like this? Of course, it's not mine. It's his."

'It must have been a fake card. Of course, she would not admit to possessing a fake card like this. Haha!' Daisy laughed to herself.

The rest of the class laughed with her as well.

By then, they were expecting the staff to tell Darryl off.

However, the staff suddenly did a ninety-degree

bow. "Sir, I'm so sorry for not seeing you earlier. I didn't know you were a Supreme VIP here. I'm very sorry. I'll get your room ready, right away."

Suddenly, everyone was shocked.

'This card was legit? That it could open the VIP room? Did-did the staff member call this a Supreme VIP card?' everyone wondered in disbelief.

Everyone stared at Daryl with wide eyes in disbelief and curiosity.

'Was this kid not a live-in son-in-law? What happened? Perhaps this card belonged to the Lyndon family,' they thought.

That could not be right. Although the Lyndon family was wealthy, they were a small family and would not be able to possess a Supreme VIP card. There were less than three of them in the entire Donghai City.

Declan could not hold back any longer.

"Darryl, where did you get the card from?" he asked.

Chapter 269

'Perhaps he stole the card?' Declan wondered.

Watching doubt cross everyone's face, Darryl replied. "It's not mine. It's my boss'."

At first, everyone remained silent, but seconds later, everyone burst into laughter.

'Hahaha! So it was his boss',' everyone thought.

'Haha! It was his boss' after all! He was just a kid playing around with his boss's card! What an opportunist!' Declan thought.

'Damn you all! I'm kind enough to get you the room, and you guys decide to mock me for that? Whatever. Why would I care about these people,' Darryl thought as he smiled.

After going inside the room, Declan asked the waiters to enter.

"Come here. Everyone, please pick some dishes. I want everyone to have a great time tonight!" he announced.

Swiftly, the waiters brought them the menus. Since Katherine was there, nobody dared to pick anything, and they all handed her the menus.

Katherine smiled, appearing less strict than she was back in class, as she pushed the menus away. "I'm fine with anything. You all pick."

Declan handed the menus to the girls. Circe, as always, sat there coldly, and the other girls around her were too intimidated to make an order.

However, Daisy and Daphne were not ashamed at all. They took the menus.

"I heard the wines here are not bad at all," Daisy commented as she flipped through the menu.

The girl beside her took a glimpse and nodded, " Wow, it's Romanee Conti! We won't be able to drink this anywhere else. Let's get this!"

They discussed for a while before smiling at Declan. "Declan, we ordered some slightly expensive wines. Is that okay with you?"

Declan waved it off. "My two goddesses are so funny. Of course, it's fine! Order whatever you want!"

'Romanee Conti?' Darryl thought, laughing to himself as he sat to the side.

He recalled how William Lyndon made a fool out of himself because of this wine as he was almost unable to pay for the dinner. One bottle costs at

least a million bucks.

Declan's wallet was getting thinner by the end of the night. The two sisters were not ashamed at all as they ordered ten or so of the wines.

When the wines arrived, Declan glimpsed at the wine's price when he was pouring it for them, and he was caught off guard.

'Damn, a million per bottle?' he thought.

Suddenly he felt his heart sink. The drinks alone would cost him ten million bucks tonight. However, no matter how upset he was, he still put on a fake smile to cover it up.

"I'd like to make a toast to celebrate our first gathering!" Declan raised his glass as he smiled.

Everyone raised their glasses.

"Oh, look at this. Isn't Declan the perfect class monitor anyone could ask for?" Miles announced as they clinked their glasses.

Everyone agreed instantly. Anyone could see that Declan only treated them to dinner because of the election tomorrow. Watching the reaction of his peers, Declan was excited but tried to refrain from showing it.

"Nah, I only want to get to know everyone better,"

he said, shaking his head as he winked at Miles for speaking up for him.

Declan was ecstatic. They continued drinking for quite a bit. Even Katherine drank quite a few rounds because of everyone's good mood. Though she was not a good drinker, she started becoming flush after a few glasses. She seemed extraordinarily charming.

The boys in the class felt so lucky to have a charming teacher and many beautiful female classmates.

Chapter 270

Circe sat there cold and silently like a blooming orchid, exuding an air of grace that stood out from the crowd. Though nobody found her weird or peculiar, many of the guys wanted to know her better, but they did not have the courage to do so.

Everyone was getting in the mood, and Declan stood up smilingly with an elegant box in his hands. He walked towards Katherine and said politely, " Miss Katherine, today happens to be the Teacher's Day, and I'd like to thank you for being our teacher. This is a gift for you."

Suddenly, the room was filled with exclamations of amazement. Declan was well-prepared, indeed. He even prepared a gift for Miss Katherine. It was quite clear that he was determined to become the class monitor.

Katherine remained calm and smiled. "Declan, I'm already very pleased that you're treating us to dinner. I can't accept this."

Declan was indeed a bright, smart, and likable student. He even knew today was Teacher's Day and prepared her a gift. However, so many students were watching, and Katherine felt bad for accepting

the gift.

Declan shook his head with a smile. "This is a little something I really want you to keep, especially on such a special occasion like today."

He opened the box.

Suddenly, everyone stared at what was inside the box with shock and surprise. Inside the box laid a yellow pill. Even Katherine could not help but take a closer look at it. She thought Declan would give her a bracelet or jewelry as a gift, but she never thought it would be a pill!

Darryl frowned upon seeing the pill. He saw the color and texture of the pill, which resembled a Spirit Petrification Elixir. According to the "Infinite Elixir Manual," this was one of the top pills for cultivators. However, the color of the pill seemed lighter than what it should look like.

'Perhaps he was wrong?' Darryl thought.

Meanwhile, Declan glanced around at his classmates with a proud expression.

"Miss Katherine, this is called the Spirit Petrification Elixir. I bought it from a wandering cultivator back home. Miss Katherine, this pill is only meant for a Martial Marquis. This would not have any effect on cultivators below that level, but

for anyone that's a Martial Marquis and above, they will experience a rebirthing effect.

'A rebirthing effect?' everyone wondered.

The room was in an uproar as everyone seemed more in shock than before. Katherine was already a Level One Martial Marquis, but after taking this pill with the rebirthing effect, she would become even more intimidating.

Although Katherine remained calm, she was very excited after hearing that. She had heard about this pill but had never seen it before. Declan was right to say that the Spirit Petrification Elixir was meant for cultivators, who were at least a Martial Marquis, to strengthen their abilities. A Martial Marquis who had this pill would be much stronger than a Martial Marquis without it.

Declan took out the pill and handed it to Katherine. "Miss Katherine, this is a gift I specially prepared for you. If you don't take it, it would be a waste for me to keep it anyway."

After hearing what he said, Katherine accepted the pill with a smile.

"Miss Katherine, why don't you take it now? Then, we can see what a rebirthing effect is," Miles stood up and suggested.

The rest of the class nodded in agreement as their

eyes filled with anticipation. They were all wondering when they would be able to reach the level of a Martial Marquis.

Noticing everyone's looks of anticipation, Katherine smiled and prepared to eat the pill.

"Don't!" Darryl stood up, trying to stop her.

"What is it, Darryl?" Katherine asked, confused.

Everyone looked at Darryl with a frown on their faces.

'What was this live-in son-in-law doing this time?' everyone thought.

Darryl took a deep breath and explained, "Miss Katherine, I'm afraid this pill won't work. Don't eat it."

Everyone stared in disbelief.

Declan was furious as he scoffed, "Darryl, what the f *ck is wrong with you this time?"

Chapter 271

Miles chimed in, insulting Darryl. " A mere live-in son-in-law—how dare you question Declan's elixir? You're just jealous, aren't you."

Darryl snickered as he looked at Declan.

"Indeed, the elixir you gave her was the Spirit Petrification Elixir. However, did you know that this elixir needs to be kept in a dark, cool, and humid environment? It cannot be exposed to the sun. The Spirit Petrification Elixir is originally a deep dark yellow color. It turns light yellow when exposed to the sun. Since yours is light yellow, I assume it was already exposed to the sun by the time you purchased this from the wandering cultivator," Darryl explained nonchalantly. The room fell silent.

"So what if it has been exposed to the sun?" Declan questioned with a laugh. "Is it still effective?"

'This pretentious Darryl—thinking that people would believe the nonsense he spews.'

Darryl shook his head. "I don't think it will lose its effect, but there will be some changes in its properties."

"What would happen if one consumes it?" Declan sneered.

"I wouldn't' know," he chuckled.

Indeed, Darryl does not know. He had only skimmed through the Spirit Petrification Elixir section in the Infinite Elixir Manual, not studying it thoroughly. He does not know what would happen if someone consumed it after it had been exposed to sunlight.

"Haha! you can't explain, can you?" Declan snickered, seeing how Darryl could not muster an explanation. "You can't go on with your lies anymore. Here I thought that you were an expert."

The others burst into laughter. This pretentious man was such an attention-seeker.

Katherine sighed as she consumed the elixir, refusing to believe Darryl's words.

Miles stood up and jeered, "Darryl, everyone knows who you are. I'm begging you; stop pretending to be an expert. Look at you! You can't even make up any lies. I'm worried about you."

Haha!

The entire room erupted in laughter once more.

"Let's not get worked up by this live-in son-in-

law," Daisy detested. "He's just a know-it-all clown; an absolute idiot."

Katherine glared at Darryl with disapproval. She did not think that he would dare to make such a thing up. What a disappointment he was.

Everyone ignored Darryl after the debacle, continuing to drink and chat with each other.

Darryl sat to the side. Feeling bored, he left to the washroom. As he exited the room, he caught a glimpse of Miles and Declan standing in a corner in a secretive deep conversation.

He crept closer to them out of curiosity to eavesdrop.

"Bloody hell. Daisy, that b*tch! She ordered Romanée-Conti. I'm afraid this meal is going to cost about twenty million bucks or more," Declan said solemnly as he lit a cigarette.

Miles jumped when he heard the figure. "That much?!" His own pocket money was about tens of thousands of bucks per month. This meal costs twenty million, possibly more.

Declan took a puff of the cigarette. He rolled his eyes and said, "You think? F*ck, before I enrolled in Hexad's I just asked for twenty million from my dad. That might not even cover this meal!"

Declan was worried. He thought that buying a meal for his entire class in Donghai City's best restaurant would only cost about a million bucks or so. Who knew that eating at the Oriental Pearl would be way beyond his expectations? The dinner was coming to an end, but he could not afford it. It was too embarrassing.

Miles pondered momentarily, and his eyes lit up with hope.

"Declan, don't worry," he confidently reassured. "I have an idea! When it's time to pay, we'll act drunk. I'm sure the other rich brats in our class can afford to foot the bill."

"Of course, don't put your hopes on Darryl. That live-in son-in-law is a loser."

Bloody hell.

'What the hell did I do to deserve that?' Darryl thought. He could not help but swear under his breath.

"Yeah, f*ck that Darryl," he jeered. "All I did was give Miss Katherine an elixir, yet he had plenty to say about it."

He returned to the topic at hand. He shook his head and asked, "How are we going to act drunk? This meal costs a lot. Who can afford it?"

School had started two days ago, so Declan knew about each classmates' family financial status. Though they were all rich, only a few of them could afford to spend twenty million bucks in a short period.

Miles scratched his head, lost in deep thought. He suddenly slapped his thigh and exclaimed, "Yes! How about Circe Newman? She's the daughter of Kyoto's Newman family. Twenty million bucks is a small amount to her. When we act drunk—and if no one coughs up the money—I'm sure she will offer to pay!"

"I don't think this is appropriate," Declan frowned.

Circe was the Belle of Hexad's. She was a goddess among her classmates. Expecting her to pay on his behalf was too embarrassing, not to mention emasculating.

Miles read his thoughts. "Don't worry, just apologize to Circe in school tomorrow," he offered. "Tell her that you were drunk and that you should've paid for it instead. This can be an opportunity for you to get closer to her. You could even use the excuse of paying her back to get her phone number!"

Declan's eyes sparkled while hearing the plan Miles thought of. He patted his back and smiled, "You're

a good man to even think of such an idea. Let's do it!"

Haha!

He could solve his current problem and get the contact of a gorgeous girl in the process—killing two birds with one stone!

They happily went back into the dining room.

Darryl—who listened to their entire conversation—suddenly had an idea. This guy does not have enough money yet he wants to buy a meal for everyone at the Oriental Pearl? Such a phony. He even expected Circe Newman to pay for it? Dream on.

With that, Darryl returned to the dining room.

Chapter 272

Circe was headed to the washroom just as Darryl entered the dining area.

A playful thought entered his mind, letting out a hushed chuckle.

'If I were to steal Circe's phone and purse, she won't be able to pay. Let's see what happens to Declan then!'

He bumped into Circe. At the same time, he smoothly swiped her phone and purse.

Success!

He was reading up on the Shadow Skills yesterday. Using it in practice for the first time was slightly nerve-racking, but thankfully, it worked.

Darryl was giddy with excitement on the inside, but he pretended to be embarrassed. He apologized to Circe, "I'm so sorry. I was in a rush and didn't notice you!"

Darryl took a good look at her up close. Gorgeous. Extremely gorgeous.

During the dinner, Circe drank the least, but her exquisite face was still slightly flushed. Combined

with her ice-cold personality, it was somehow charmingly seductive.

Darryl's movement was fast and discreet. She did not realize that her phone and purse were missing.

"It's fine," she muttered, walking away right after.

Whether Darryl did it on purpose or not, she did not care. However, the other guys in the room were unhappy.

Bloody hell. How dare this loser bump into a gorgeous lady like her?

A mixture of envy and annoyance, they started insulting Darryl.

"Darryl, are you blind? Can't you see where you are going?"

"You did it on purpose, didn't you? What a retard."

Insults after insults were hurled at Darryl, but he ignored them all and returned to his seat.

As people were about to leave after the dinner ended, Declan slumped onto the table, pretending to be drunk and unconscious.

The rest were flabbergasted. He was supposed to be buying dinner, how could he be drunk and unconscious? If he does not pay, no one can leave.

Miles approached Declan in a faux-drunken state

and gave him a pat on the back.

"Declan, Declan! It's time to go!" he yelled.

Declan did not move, pretending not to hear him.

'Wow, these two can really act.'

Darryl watched them with amusement.

The others—utterly oblivious to their plan—thought that Declan was genuinely wasted.

Someone dragged Miles away from Declan. "It's fine. He's out cold. There's no point in yelling," he exclaimed.

Miles asked helplessly, "What should we do? We haven't paid for the meal." He then asked the waiter, "Please let us know the total amount."

The waiter walked in with the bill.

"Sir, the total is twenty-eight million, three hundred and fifty thousand," he answered.

This meal cost close to thirty million!?

Everyone gasped. Though they were from wealthy families, they had never spent that much on a meal.

Miles was stunned.

"What the f*ck?" he fumed. "My pocket money for half a year is barely five million bucks!"

He tried to show that he wanted to pay, but he did not have enough cash to foot the bill.

The rest were stunned to silence. Who was going to cough up thirty million bucks?

"Wait, didn't we use Darryl's VIP card to reserve this room?" someone suddenly blurted. "Can't we just put it on his tab? Declan can return Darryl the money tomorrow."

Everyone nodded in agreement. Darryl snickered under his breath.

'This bunch of bastards. First, they insulted me for no reason. Now, they use me when they need my help.'

The waiter apologized, "I'm so sorry. We cannot put it on a tab, even for VIP guests."

The crowd fell silent once more. If they could not put it on the tab, it would be hard to deal with.

"I'll pay for it," Circe spoke up.

Thank goodness for Circe. They all cheered in their hearts. She is from Kyoto's Newman family; this should be a small sum for her.

Just as she was about to reach for her phone, she frowned. Odd, her phone and purse were gone. What happened?

Chapter 273

If it were other ladies who lost their phone, they would have been frantic.

Circe Newman was no ordinary woman. She was incredibly calm when she realized her phone and purse were missing.

Darryl complimented her silently. It was no wonder that she was the Belle of Hexad's. Her aura of calmness and confidence was unrivaled.

What happened? Did she lose her phone?

The rest were confused. If Circe could not pay, would everyone have to split the bill?

Declan could not put up an act anymore, being slumped on the table the entire time. What was happening? Circe could not pay? If he continued faking being drunk, people were bound to talk. He would have to face the music.

He was reluctant, but he yawned and stood up slowly. He pretended to be surprised. "Oh, I'm so sorry! How did I fall asleep? I'm sure everyone had fun today! I'll go pay."

F*ck. It looked like he had to beg his family for the

money.

Declan scratched his head. "Guys, this meal costs thirty million. My money is locked in shares," he admitted. "I'd have to get my dad to transfer the cash to me."

He took a deep breath as he took his phone and dialed his father. His father was Jason Noel, a relatively famous businessman in the food processing business.

The phone call went through. Declan forced a smile as he muttered nervously, "Dad, could you wire another thirty million for me?"

He had to get the money somehow, even if it means getting an earful from his father.

"What? More money?" Jason—on the other end of the phone call—was furious. He reprimanded, "You bastard. I just gave you thirty million before you enrolled in Hexad's, and you've already spent it in a few days? You're a huge failure and a disappointment!"

Jason was livid. He worked hard his entire life, yet this bastard son spent tens of millions in a short period.

Declan was almost in tears, but he could not let his classmates know. He pretended as if nothing had

happened.

"Yes, dad, I have about seven periods per school day. Don't worry!" he trembled.

"Bloody hell, bastard! Are you trying to aggravate me? I'm warning you. I'll transfer thirty million bucks to you, but don't even think about asking me for more money within the next six months!" He hung up abruptly.

"My dad is worried for me," he chuckled awkwardly. "He asked how many periods of classes I had in a day."

His phone beeped as he spoke to his classmates. Jason transferred the money to him. Bloody hell, this meal costs twenty-something million, and he has to get a scolding from his father. This was too hard to bear!

Declan's heart bled tears when the money left his account balance.

As the rest left the dining room, Daisy asked Katherine, "Miss Katherine, do you feel anything after consuming the Spirit Petrification Elixir?"

"Nothing whatsoever." Katherine shook her head.

They were stunned. The effects should have been immediate. Could Darryl have been right about the elixir being ineffective?

"Not all elixirs take effect immediately," she added. "Perhaps by tomorrow."

Declan made it seem so grand while giving her the elixir in front of the entire class. How could it have been a fake?.

"Darryl, please don't spew any nonsense from now on. How could the elixir from Declan be fake?" Katherine scoffed. "You're lucky that Declan is a forgiving person. If it were someone else, it might be worse for you."

Darryl laughed in response.

Declan walked over slowly as he finished paying the bill.

Chapter 274

Miles looked proud and arrogant as he stood behind Declan. "This meal costs about thirty million. It's not that much for Declan," he boasted.

What a total ass-kisser.

The rest nodded in agreement. Declan adored being praised, but he was bitter inside. Twenty-something million gone in an instant. Furthermore, he could not ask for more money for the next six months. At least, he would score the position of class monitor tomorrow.

Everyone left in their own cars, yet no one was willing to give Darryl a lift. Katherine walked over reluctantly and grumbled, "Fine, I'll give you a lift."

Darryl laughed and nodded.

In the car, Katherine was surprised to learn that Darryl lived at Peak Mansions.

Peak Mansions was Donghai City's most luxurious area. Darryl was just a live-in son-in-law, so how could he afford to live there?

"Yes, my wife bought the house," he nodded. However, he was the one that gave her the money

via her live stream.

"Darryl, the money belongs to your wife. You should not take advantage of it," Katherine lectured, as if she suddenly understood something.

There she went again. Why would such a gorgeous teacher like her nag so much? They were not even in school. What was with all the life lessons?

Darryl smiled bitterly as he nodded. "Understood, Miss Katherine."

Katherine nodded in return. Suddenly, she started frowning and felt sick to her stomach. She began to sweat, panicking slightly. What was happening to her?

Noticing that there was something wrong, Darryl asked, "Miss Katherine, are you alright?"

"I'm not sure as well," she shook her head. "I don't usually drink, so it could be that I'm slightly drunk."

Darryl grimaced. From the looks of it, she did not seem drunk. She appeared to be poisoned, though it was nothing too serious. Could it be from the Spirit Petrification Elixir? The elixir had lost its primary effect, so consuming it would cause other side effects. As to what kind of side-effects, Darryl was unclear. He needed to consult the Infinite Elixir Manual.

When Darryl reached home, he immediately searched for the Infinite Elixir Manual. When he glanced through the Spirit Petrification Elixir, he was utterly stunned.

The Infinite Elixir Manual stated in detail that once the Spirit Petrification Elixir was exposed to the sun, its properties would go through changes. It was not similar to the Godly pill, where it would become a deadly poison once it has lost its effect.

However, the Spirit Petrification Elixir worked differently. Unlike the Godly pill, once it lost its effect, the side-effects were merely sweat and dizziness. The next day, the cultivator would lose two rank levels. They would continue losing two ranks daily until the cultivator becomes an ordinary person.

Katherine was a Level One Master Marquis, but she would be a Level Four Master General tomorrow and a Level Two Master General the following day. Within a week, she would turn into an ordinary person.

"F*ck," he gasped. The side-effects were mortifying.

Ring! Ring!

Darryl jumped. He realized he still had Circe

Newman's phone. He forgot to return them to her at the Oriental Pearl.

Who would be calling her so late at night? Out of curiosity, Darryl answered the call. He was stunned.

Chapter 275

It was a regular voice call. It was a video call from a girl named Evelyn Featherstone.

Darryl wanted to ignore the call, but his hand trembled—accidentally picking up the call! When the call connected, his eyes widened.

F*ck! The caller was a pretty girl who had just finished showering.

'What is happening? I didn't mean to look!' Darryl swallowed hard, finding it hard to resist. 'The young girl had a great figure. Why does she look so familiar?' Darryl pondered.

Ah! It was the granddaughter of the old man who bought a Godly pill for five billion bucks at Roger's Auction. He was a high-ranking member from the Eternal Life Palace sect!

"Ah!" Evelyn screamed. She did not expect to see a man answering her call. She gasped, ending the call immediately.

'What was happening? Circe did not have a boyfriend, so who was the man on the other side? Also, why did he look so familiar? Was that not Darryl Darby, the man who saved grandpa?'

Evelyn blushed.

Evelyn and Circe were good friends. The Newman family joined the Eternal Life Palace a year ago, unbeknownst to many.

The Eternal Life Palace recruited many families recently, just like how Brian Cunningham recruited the Darbys.

It was Evelyn who recruited the Newmans. Naturally, she and Circe became best friends in no time.

She had just finished showering. She had not spoken to Circe in a few days, so she gave her a video call. She did not expect Darryl to pick up the call. Not to mention, he also saw her nude!

She sent him a text through Circe's phone saying, " Is this Darryl Darby?"

Darryl was still stunned by what he saw. He could not deny that Evelyn had a great figure.

Another message came through. It read, "Why do you have Circe's phone?"

Darryl thought of a response. "I picked it up," he replied.

"Return it to her immediately tomorrow," Evelyn ordered. "Also, nothing happened here. If you dare

speak about this, you'll have to face the consequences."

Are all beautiful women so ferocious?

"What if I don't?" he replied playfully. 'Why was this young girl trying to threaten me?'

Evelyn replied immediately with one word—" Death!"

F*ck, she was vicious.

Darryl turned off the phone. He could not help but think back to the Roger's Auction and how this young girl whipped out an Eternal Life Palace token. She scared the Roger's family half to death. Hopefully, she will not want revenge for this.

At that, Darryl fell asleep.

The next day. The weather was good, roughly about 86 degrees Fahrenheit.

Darryl had a good sleep, feeling well-rested. He hummed as he made his way to class. As he entered, he noticed a new student with a buzzcut sitting in the first row—it was Trent Young.

Trent Young was released from prison yesterday. He heard that the six orthodox sects had established The Hexad School and immediately enrolled through his connections. Even though he

owns a Martial Club, he wanted to become stronger.

Upon seeing him, Darryl was amused. Not only was Trent enrolled at Hexad's, he was also in the same class as him.

Trent was flabbergasted. Why the hell was Darryl here as well?

Previously at the Lyndons' residence, he flirted with Lily, in which he received a beating from Darryl. While in prison, he was beaten up by Darryl again.

How unfortunate was he that he met him again in Hexad's? Trent could not look Darryl in the eye.

Darryl was about to take his seat when Circe approached him. Circe was wearing black, figure-hugging skinny jeans. She still had an arrogant, icy aura.

Chapter 276

Circe was not only the prettiest in her class, but also the belle of Hexad's. She was the center of attention wherever she went.

She walked toward Darryl. Everyone's eyes were on Darryl as she walked toward him. Extending her arm, she demanded, "Darryl, return my phone."

That morning, Evelyn dialed the Newmans to inform Circe that Darryl had her phone.

What? Darryl took Circe's phone?

Everyone was partly confused and partly shocked.

Darryl awkwardly handed the phone back to Circe. "I 'm so sorry," he chuckled. "I wanted to return it to you last night, but you had already left."

He thought of the excuse last night.

"Why would my phone be with you?" she frowned.

She was outraged. Darryl had her phone the entire night, so he must have had gone through her phone! Circe rarely got angry, but she was fuming.

She glared at Darryl. Any ordinary person would have cowered in fear, but Darryl calmly muttered, "

I picked it up."

Picked it up?

Circe was suspicious. "Impossible," she snapped. " My phone goes wherever I go. I would not have dropped it."

She did not have a habit of playing games on her phone. She would only use her phone for calls. She explained that she did not touch her phone once while at the Oriental Pearl yesterday. If he did indeed pick it up, did he pick it from her pocket?

'F*ck, it's getting hard to lie my way through this,' Darryl thought. He smiled bitterly.

"Darryl, come clean," Miles sneered. "Did you steal Circe's phone? Were you planning to sell it for a quick buck?"

Darryl must have been so broke to a point where he would steal someone's phone to sell off!

Darryl laughed but said nothing. This idiot, Miles. Why was he everywhere? His voice was loud. Everyone, including those outside class, heard him loud and clear. All eyes were on Darryl.

At that, Trent stood up. "Did you all know I met Darryl while in prison?" he laughed. "Guess what was he in for?"

Trent initially kept his distance, but it seemed that

Darryl had a bad reputation in class. Everyone looked down on him, the live-in son-in-law. What was there to be afraid of?

Everyone stared at Trent as he spoke. Trent was the owner of a Martial Club, and he was hot-tempered. Being locked up in prison was inevitable and even seemed normal for a person like him. However, Darryl was a live-in son-in-law. All he did was house chores, so why would he be thrown into prison?

"Why?" Miles snickered. "Do tell us!"

"What do you think?" Trent smiled smugly. "It was because he stole two iPhones! Also, I heard that he was arrested the moment he left the store! How dumb is he?"

Haha! It was hilarious. Stealing phones? Haha!

The entire class roared with laughter. A few were almost in tears. This idiot was amusing, locked up in prison for theft!

Amidst the laughter, a few girls looked at Darryl with disdain. How poor was he that he had to resort to stealing phones?

Chapter 277

"Darryl."

Declan stood up as he jeered, "You can't change your ways after all! You still steal out of habit! Are you not one bit embarrassed? You said you found Circe's phone. Can you swear that you found it?"

F*ck. Darryl was trapped. He smiled bitterly and admitted, "Alright, I stole your phone yesterday."

Circe bit her lip as she menacingly glared at Darry. She had never loathed anyone so badly in her life. This was the first time that someone had stolen something from her.

It was an insult to her to be in the same class with a lowly thief like him.

Darryl scratched his head. "Circe, I don't care what you think of me. I stole your phone for a reason. Yesterday at the Oriental Pearl, Declan knew he couldn't afford to pay for the meal. He wanted to make you pay for it, so I stole your phone to prevent it from happening."

'I saved you from spending twenty million bucks!'

Circe's expression was unchanged. She did not

believe Darryl.

There was a burst of laughter. Has Darryl lost his marbles? Why did he think of such a childish excuse? How could Declan not be able to afford it?

Declan was shocked when he heard Darryl's reason. He frowned. How did Darryl know about his plan yesterday? He looked at Miles suspiciously. Miles was equally stunned as he shook his head, denying that he had told Darryl.

Declan panicked, but he laughed, "Darryl, just admit that you stole her phone. Could you find a better reason? I can't afford it? Do I look like the type of person who could not come up with a mere twenty million bucks?

Darryl could only let out a chuckle.

Katherine entered the classroom. Looking at the commotion, she asked, "What's going on?"

Everyone looked at Darryl.

"Miss Katherine, Darryl stole someone's phone," Declan pointed at Darryl.

Stealing phones?

"Declan, stop bullying Darryl," she frowned. "He might be a live-in son-in-law, but I believe that he won't steal phones. Stop this at once." Katherine

defended Darryl.

Declan was unsatisfied with her response. Just as he was about to respond, Katherine walked up to the platform and slammed the textbook onto the table. "Settle down. I have an important announcement to make."

Katherine scanned her surroundings. "I guess you've seen the news. Recently there has been a strong typhoon, which caused a lot of villages to be flooded," she explained. "Many have lost their homes. We, as the Six orthodox sects, have to help the poor."

Katherine turned around and wrote something on the board. "The school has decided that we will raise funds for the affected villages," she continued. "I want everyone to donate to the best of their abilities."

Donation? The class started discussing among themselves.

"To encourage students to donate, the school has decided to reward the highest donor in each class," she asserted. "A substantial reward."

What? A reward? Everyone's eyes opened wide in excitement. The Hexad School was no ordinary school. The reward must be something magical, an elixir of sorts.

At the same time, someone asked, "Miss Katherine, we don't have cash with us. How do we donate?"

Everyone had the same question in mind. They were all rich, but they rarely carried cash.

"Don't worry," Katherine reassured. "The school has created an online donation platform. You can transfer the money to the school's bank account."

Chapter 278

Katherine stuck a QR code print-out onto the blackboard.

The students scanned the QR code and started donating. Some donated two hundred thousand, some five hundred thousand. The generous ones contributed a million bucks.

They had their hearts set on the reward for the highest contributor, as what Miss Katherina had said.

"How much did you donate?"

"Wow! Five hundred thousand."

"I'm not bad as well. I donated six hundred thousand."

Everyone was proud of themselves for donating. Katherine was right. The school's online platform had a list that showed which student contributed the most.

Everyone's eyes were glued to the list.

Suddenly, a student from another class donated a million and eight hundred thousand bucks.

"Look! Declan donated two million!" someone

yelled.

The class was in an uproar. The list stated that Declan Noel from Class Sixteen was the current highest donor at two million.

All eyes were on Declan. Two million. This man had to be rich.

Katherine nodded in approval. This class did not disappoint her at all. Even though they were not overly passionate about their studies, they had a charitable heart.

Everyone praised Declan. He was proud as well. He dangled his phone in front of Darryl and said, " Look, Darryl, I donated two million. Weren't you the one that said I couldn't afford it?"

At that, he lightly punched Darryl in the chest. "You lowly live-in son-in-law," he spat. "When you steal phones, don't use me as an excuse. Isn't it pathetic?"

The other classmates chipped in.

"Yes! Does Declan look like he is short of money?" They each took a jab at Darryl.

Katherine started to believe their words. She glared at Darryl and asked, "Darryl, did you really steal someone's phone?"

She woke up in a bad mood since she found out she

had dropped two levels for no reason. Her spirit was worsened by Darryl.

Miles stood up and said, "Miss Katherine, Darryl stole Circe's phone!"

The others nodded in support.

Katherine was filled with disappointment. "Darryl, I just defended you," she reprimanded. "I refused to believe that you would steal. It is fine if you are poor, just do it with some dignity. Do you understand?"

Darryl's expression darkened as he looked at her. " Miss Katherine, hand me the phone. I want to donate," he declared.

Haha! This idiot wants to donate? He was so poor that he resorted to stealing phones. What could he afford to contribute? Was he trying to protect his self-esteem? The class laughed at him.

Katherine said sternly, "Darryl, I will return your phone on two conditions. One, do not play with your phone in class. The next time I confiscate it, you won't get it back. Two, don't let me find out that you've stolen things. If I do, I'll file a police report. Don't think that I'll cover you since you're my student. As I said, it is okay to be poor, but have some dignity. If you do not have any aspiration to turn over a new leaf, what is the purpose of living?

If you're poor, you could work. It might be tiring, but every penny that you earn is yours."

Darryl was a disappointment in her eyes.

Darryl wordlessly logged onto the online donation platform.

Daisy jeered at Darryl from the back of the class. " Darryl, how much are you planning to donate? A few bucks?"

"Darryl steals phones for a living," Daphne chimed in. "I'm sure he could do with a few hundred!"

The class burst into laughter again.

"My goodness..."

What followed was a stunned silence from everyone. It was unbelievable! The current highest donor donated five million. It was Darryl Darby from Class Sixteen!

Chapter 279

What?

Everyone was floored when they saw the list. A few girls gasped in amazement.

Five million.

How did this live-in son-in-law donate so much? Where did he get the money from?

Clueless, Katherine asked, "What happened? Why are all of you so stunned?"

"Miss Katherine," someone replied, "Look at the online donation platform."

Katherine checked her phone. She trembled.

What? Darryl donated five million? He was the highest contributor out of the entire school!

She was in a daze, staring at Darryl with disbelief.

Circe could not help but look at Darryl as well; her eyes glimmering slightly. If he could donate five million, why would he steal phones? Unless what he said earlier was true?

Among the many who were stunned, the Palmer sisters—Daisy and Daphne—were conflicted. They

were dumbfounded. How could Darryl have donated so much money?

Darryl approached Declan. "Declan, you said I'm poor, so I had to steal phones," he accused. "Please let me know how many phones would I need to steal to be able to donate this five million?"

Dead silence.

Declan's face flushed bright red. He could not find the words, but he was not convinced. How did this guy get so much money? He thought for a while. Suddenly, he remembered that Darryl was a live-in son-in-law. He must have spent his wife's money.

Declan gritted his teeth, took his phone, and donated another five million.

"F*ck! Declan donated another five million!" Someone blurted.

The class was once again stunned. Many girls looked toward Declan with adoration in their eyes. Declan was such a generous person.

Declan shook his phone in front of Darryl tauntingly. "Darryl, stop pretending," he snarled. " Don't think I don't know that the five million bucks you donated were from your wife! Aren't you afraid you'll get a scolding from your wife when you go home? All this just to save your image."

"I'm different," Declan flaunted. "My dad gives me my money. I can spend it on whatever I like, whereas you have to rely on a woman. What a loser! Yet, you still pretend that you're rich."

At that, the entire class came to their senses. Yes! He was just a live-in son-in-law. Where did he get the money from? It must be from his wife.

Declan sneered outwardly, yet his heart bled. He donated seven million. It was a huge amount! However, the class had their eyes on him, so he could not lose!

Darryl—not noticing his surroundings—smiled at Declan. He said, "If that's the case, let's bid." Darryl donated once more.

Ten million! Everyone's jaw dropped.

Declan was furious and shocked at the same time. Darryl must have stolen his wife's money! How could he have added another ten million? Declan was conflicted, having only eighteen million left in his account.

Declan went all out. He looked at Darryl coldly, gritted his teeth, and donated another ten million. His hands trembled when he looked at the amount on his phone.

'F*ck. The live-in son-in-law can't possibly top my

donation,' Declan thought.

"Declan is back as the highest donor, with a total of seventeen million! Such generosity!"

Chapter 280

A burst of praise erupted from the class. Many of the girls looked at Declan in utter adoration. To donate close to twenty million without much thought, Declan must have been extraordinarily wealthy.

Declan's image in his classmates' eyes improved once again.

However, some of them did notice the tiny details—Circe especially. She observed Darryl.

She could clearly see that every single time Declan donated the money, his hands trembled. Darryl, on the other hand, remained calm all this while. He could donate tens of millions and still remain poised.

She was more interested in Darryl out of the two of them.

Darryl could not help but laugh. "Declan, are you almost broke?" he mocked.

Declan could barely afford the meal at the Oriental Pearl yesterday. He had just donated seventeen million, so he must not have much left.

Darryl took his phone and donated once more.

There was dead silence once again. Declan swallowed hard. When he saw the ranking list, he was floored.

Twenty million. Darryl donated another twenty million, making his total donation worth thirty-five million.

Everyone wordlessly gawked at Darryl. They could not find any words. Thirty-five million! The highest donor!

"Declan, if you have the money, we can continue this game all day," Darryl glanced at Declan, chuckling to himself. "The money is for charity, so I don't mind."

The entire class heard him loud and clear. All eyes turned to Declan.

"I..." Declan flushed. He stuttered, unable to finish his sentence. He asked for thirty million from his father yesterday for the meal and received an earful for it. If he were to call his father again for money, he would surely be disowned.

Furthermore, he donated seventeen million. It was all of his pocket money for the next six months.

Declan was frustrated and distressed.

Then, Darryl smiled and walked toward Declan. "

Now, tell me. What was the reason that I stole Circe' s phone again?" he questioned. "I don't have much money, but I definitely have more than you. I don't mind that you claimed that I stole Circe's phone. For those two punches, however, it's payback time."

"You—" Declan's eyes widened.

SLAP! SLAP!

Darryl slapped Declan so hard that Declan flew to the front of the class, landing on the teaching platform!

It was silence once again in class.

"Darryl!" Katherine yelled. She reprimanded, "How could you hit your classmate!"

It was impressive that Darryl donated a large amount, but it is not right that he became violent towards his classmates.

"Miss Katherine, you saw how he punched me in front of the entire class," he shrugged with a smile. "Does that mean that only he can hit me, but I can't return the favor? Miss Katherine, your bias is showing."

"You—"

Katherine was too furious to continue. Indeed, Declan did punch him twice earlier, but it was a

light punch. Darryl's slaps made Declan fly!

Darryl, see me outside of the classroom," she huffed. "Now!"

No matter what, she had to maintain her image as a stern teacher.

Darryl laughed, following Katherine out of the classroom.

"Darryl, I'm warning you. You are not allowed to hit anyone in Hexad's. Do you hear me?" she threatened.

Darryl nodded. He continued, "Miss Katherine, you saw it happen with your own eyes. I was the victim here. He defamed me. By the way, did you drop two levels today?"

Darryl noticed it the moment Katherine entered the classroom. As described precisely in the Infinite Elixir Manual, Katherine's aura was not as strong as before.

What?

Katherine looked at Darryl in disbelief. "How...how did you know?"

Chapter 281

Katherine did not tell anyone that she dropped by two levels to a Level Four Master General. How did Darryl find out?

"Miss Katherine," he laughed as he spoke slowly. " Like I said yesterday, the Spirit Petrification Elixir had some issues. Sadly, no one believed me."

Katherine did not speak, biting down on her lip nervously. Did the Spirit Petrification Elixir truly cause it?

"If I'm not mistaken, you will drop two more levels every day," he continued. "According to your current level, you'll become an ordinary being within the week."

Katherine's expression darkened. There was fear in her eyes, her lips trembling.

It took her a lot of effort to become a Level One Master Marquis. She even became an Elder of the Xiaoyao sect! Everyone respected her.

If she became an ordinary human being, she would lose everything.

Katherine's mind blanked out. "Darryl, did you

come up with this lie to frighten me?" she snarled.

She came to her senses. She had heard of the Spirit Petrification Elixir, but she did not believe it has such a terrifying side effect.

Darryl did not offer any other explanation. "If you don't believe me, there's nothing I can do," he shrugged. "I do have a way to stop this, however. Think about it and let me know." He laughed, returning to the classroom.

He had a solution?

Katherine followed him into the classroom. She could not concentrate on the rest of the lesson. If Darryl was right about losing her level rank, what would she do then?

During class, Circe turned to Darryl as she knocked on his desk. She handed him a note.

'What? A note?'

Darryl opened the note. "Darryl, I'm sorry I blamed you." was written clearly.

Darryl scratched his head, wondering how to respond to her note. A simple 'It's fine.' would not suffice. It would make him look like someone with no manners. However, a long sentence would seem like he was rambling.

Darryl's phone suddenly vibrated. He sneaked a

peek and frowned. There were tens of messages, all from Abby Guy. Yesterday, he had asked Abby whether she was looking for trouble with Dax Sanders. His phone was confiscated at that moment.

Darryl opened the messages. It was all apologies from Abby.

"Master, I will not touch Dax Sanders in the future. Please don't be mad."

"Master, I will not repeat the same mistake. Please, I beg you to not be mad."

The messages were similar.

Darryl frowned as he replied, "Dax Sanders is one of my best brothers. If you were to find trouble with him in the future, you would be an enemy to me. Don't dream of taking the Godly pill from me. Don't even think of being my apprentice."

At the same moment, Circe was slightly impatient. ' Did he not read my note?' she thought. She turned around to have a look, but she was left stunned and displeased.

She noticed that her note was opened but placed at the corner of the desk. Darryl was slumped over the table, playing on his phone.

How could he ignore her note? Circe was furious as she began to tremble. She was the adoration of

many men. She even lowered her head to apologize, yet he ignored her! She huffed softly, turning back around.

Darryl's focus was on his phone. Abby beat up his best friend, yet she still called him Master, wanting him to teach her the Art of Elixir. What was he, a three-year-old kid?

Abby—on the other hand—received Darryl's message. She replied anxiously, "Master, I really made a mistake. I promise I will not repeat it."

"We'll see," he snickered.

He kept his phone and forgot about the note. He started paying attention to Katherine, teaching about acupoints within the human body.

...

The Darbys.

Old Master Darby agreed to Abbess Mother Serendipity's request. He agreed to let the Emei sect followers reside in the mansion next to the Darbys. Seeing as the Emei followers were all female, he forbade the Darby's male followers from entering their mansion.

Chapter 282

Abbess Mother Serendipity was meditating at the pavilion in the courtyard. She exuded an ethereal aura in her long white dress.

There was a silhouette at the courtyard door peeking in with an evil smile. It was Florian Darby.

Ever since the gorgeous Emei sect followers moved into the mansion next door, he hoped to have a memorable encounter with them. However, Abbess Mother Serendipity and the others rarely left the mansion. They were mostly in the courtyard.

Florian dared not disobey his grandfather's orders, so he stood by the fence to look in. Suddenly, an idea came to him.

Abbess Mother Serendipity noticed Florian. "Mister Florian," she greeted politely. "May I help you?"

"Abbess Mother Serendipity, sorry to disturb you," he laughed sincerely. "I was thinking... Since the Mid Autumn Festival is approaching in two days, I would like to invite you and the followers to have a meal at our place."

Abbess Mother Serendipity thought about his offer. "That would be asking too much from you," she

replied, blushing in embarrassment.

She had been extremely grateful that the Darbys provided a place for them to live. It would be too much to let them arrange a banquet for them.

'If the Emei followers attended the banquet, I could get closer to them. Abbess Mother Serendipity, especially, when she's drunk.'

As long as the Emei followers attended this Mid Autumn Festival banquet, he would have a chance to be closer to them, especially Abbess Mother Serendipity when she's drunk, Florian thought.

"It's nothing much!" he chuckled, "Don't worry."

"Let me think about it," she replied.

He giggled excitedly. "Alright! I will wait for your reply!"

Then, he turned around and left.

Back at Hexad's, the last period for the day was Physical Education. It was a coincidence that Class Seventeen who was right next door had the same class as well.

The students of these two classes were mainly from Donghai City's wealthiest families.

Lily, Yvonne, and Kent were in Class Seventeen.

Physical Education was more of a free period for the

students to do anything. Some were playing basketball on the court, some were playing on their phones, and some were walking around while chatting with each other.

Darryl was seated under a tree, humming to himself. Then, a petite figure walked towards him. It was Lily.

Lily handed Darryl a bottle of water that she bought specifically for him.

Darryl could feel that Lily was much more gentle toward him these past few days, even caring for him. The guys on the court looked at Darryl enviously, especially the guys from Class Seventeen. Their eyes widened.

Lily was the belle of her class. Why was she in close proximity with another guy from a different class? They were jealous. Was Darryl not the live-in son-in-law who did not touch her once during their three years of marriage? Why were they so close to each other now?

Then, another figure approached them. It was Yvonne Young. She also had a bottle of water in hand, which she passed to Darryl. "Darryl, have some water," she chimed in.

Yvonne seemed even more beautiful since he last saw her. She wore a white shirt with tight, figure-

hugging jeans. She was the center of attention wherever she went.

She sat down next to Darryl and took out a piece of white jade. "Darryl, do you know what sort of jade this is?" she asked.

She had not seen him in a few days, yet he had been on her mind. She knew that they would have the same class today, so she brought the jade with her.

Her father did not know the history behind the white jade either, so she thought of asking him. She also used this as a chance to approach him.

"This is a White Nephrite Jade from Hetian, the most revered type of jade. It is smooth to the touch, its texture extremely delicate." Darryl looked at the jade in detail.

He continued, "If I guessed correctly, this should be from the palace during the Tang Dynasty."

The boys on the court were pretending to play basketball, but they were all looking at Darryl.

'What is happening? Why are two gorgeous girls sitting next to the live-in son-in-law?'

"Do all girls like thieves nowadays?" The Palmer sisters snickered as they walked past them.

Chapter 283

"What thief?" Yvonne asked curiously as she overheard the Palmer sisters' sneers.

Daisy smiled and said, "Yvonne, didn't you hear? Darryl stole someone's handphone yesterday. You'd better stay away from that thief."

Yvonne smiled, not believing a single word. Darryl stealing phones? This was the funniest thing she ever heard.

He could live comfortably for the rest of his life just by relying on his skill in authenticating antiques and artifacts. Why would he steal phones?

Darryl ignored Daisy, completely engrossed in examining the piece of jade.

"There is a carving of a foreigner playing a musical instrument. If I'm right, this should be from the jade carving of it. This jade is a gem, estimated to be worth roughly around one and a half million or so."

Lily's face was filled with admiration as she heard Darryl's analysis. "Darryl, you're wonderful!" she cheered.

How did she not know sooner that he knew so much

about antiques?

Yvonne was equally in awe as well. Even her father did not recognize this jade, yet Darryl does. He was amazing! At the same time, Yvonne was slightly disappointed as well, regretting not knowing him earlier.

Suddenly, another bottle appeared, followed by an ice-cold voice that said, "Darryl, drink up."

What was happening today? Why did he keep getting bottles of water?

Darryl was stunned when he looked up. It was Circe!

Everyone's eyes were on them now. What was with Darryl? How did he get so many gorgeous girls to approach him? At first, it was Lily and Yvonne. Now, even the belle of the school, Circe Newman.

"Darryl, I'm so sorry that I blamed you today," she apologized frankly.

She was somewhat panicked. This was the first time she ever gave someone water. Initially, she was quite angry at Darryl for ignoring her note in class, but she decided to apologize to him in person during Physical Education. After all, she thought Darryl was a real thief this morning.

"It's fine," Darryl waved his hand in dismissal. He did add on further.

Circe was still apologetic. "Why not let me buy you a meal after school? You can decide on the place," she offered.

What? Circe wanted to buy him a meal? The guys were extremely jealous. It was a huge honor to have a meal with Circe, yet this honor was bestowed upon on the live-in son-in-law? The world was unfair.

Lily and Yvonne looked at each other in confusion. What was happening? Why did Circe apologize to him and offered to buy him a meal? Yvonne was curious, but she did not pry further.

Lily, on the other hand, was slightly jealous. Hexad's most popular girl Circe Newman approached Darryl herself. Of course, she would feel jealous. She did not use to feel this way previously. Perhaps, she was afraid of losing him. Darryl belonged to her. No one could take that away, not even the belle of the school! 1

Lily thought about it for a while and held on to his arm. She said to Darryl sweetly, "Hubby, since your classmate wants to buy us dinner, let's go!"

Lily added, "Yvonne, come along as well!"

Oof!

Darryl had goosebumps. If he recalled correctly,

this was the first time Lily called him 'Hubby' in three years.

BAM!

Suddenly, a ball flew in Darryl's direction and hit him square on the shoulder.

'Who the f*ck could be that bad at basketball?' thought Darryl. He looked in the direction where the ball came from. He saw a huge man approaching him, looking apologetic. It was Xavier King, Lily's PE teacher.

Chapter 284

Xavier King was a Level Five Master General from the Kunlun sect.

His biggest problem was that he was a pervert. He lusted after women. He noticed Lily and Yvonne on the first day of school and tried getting close to them.

He was unhappy that the two of them were so close with Darryl, so he threw the ball at him without a second thought.

"I'm so sorry, the ball slipped!" Xavier smiled

"It's fine," Darryl replied nonchalantly.

Xavier picked up the ball and returned to the court.

Darryl continued his conversation with Circe. "Sure, let's discuss where to eat after school."

The belle of the school was buying him a meal. It would be dumb to not accept.

As Circe left, she cheered silently, not showing it outwardly. She maintained her usual ice-cold composure.

Lily hooked her arm around Darryl's arm as she

asked, "Why is she apologizing to you? Why is she buying you a meal?"

Yvonne was curious as well. After all, Circe was the belle of the school. Plenty of men had tried to court her, but they all failed. However, she approached Darryl personally! At this instant, Lily and Yvonne were now on the same team.

Darryl laughed, but as he was about to reply, a ball flew towards them again. This time, it hit Lily, not Darryl.

Lily cried out in pain. Darryl was fuming with rage as he looked in the direction. He saw that it was Xavier again, clearly doing it on purpose.

Xavier ran up to them, completely ignoring Darryl. " Oh no, I'm so sorry! It must be painful, let me rub it for you," he smiled.

He was about to touch Lily when Darryl stopped him.

"Apologize to Lily," Darryl said coldly.

Xavier was enraged. "What did you say?" he frowned.

Darryl replied bluntly, "Are you deaf? I told you to apologize to Lily."

Their classmates surrounded them, watching the

scene unfold. Was Darryl mad? How dare he speak to a teacher that way?

Kent Hough emerged from the crowd. "Darryl, you are in the wrong," he declared, "Stop pretending to be all high and mighty. Mister Xavier did not do it on purpose. How dare you ask him to apologize? Who do you think you are? You're just a mere live-in son-in-law."

A burst of laughter erupted.

Darryl ignored him. "I'll say it once more, apologize to her," he repeated.

Realizing the situation, Lily tugged at Darryl's sleeve and whispered, "Darryl, it's fine."

She knew that Xavier did it on purpose. However, this was The Hexad School. Darryl might be right, but he could never win against a teacher here.

Xavier was seething. With everyone watching them, he could not possibly apologize to a student. His face flushed as he scolded, "B*stard, are you looking for death? Sure!"

Xavier was preparing to throw a punch.

The rest of the students laughed, knowing Darryl was in for a beating. He deserved it!

Lily and Yvonne were anxious. Though Darryl knew

how to fight, he could not win against a PE teacher.

On the other hand, Darryl was calm, laughing to himself. He was sure that if he threw the first punch, Xavier would die terribly.

Just when Xavier's punch was about to hit Darryl, a high pitch shrill came from afar.

"STOP!" It was not booming loud, but it was overtly powerful. A sexy figure approached them, her face filled with rage.

It was Katherine.

"Mister Xavier, how could you bully a student?" Katherine asked.

Chapter 285

Xavier immediately withdrew his fist. "Oh, Miss Katherine," he chuckled as he sized her up. Katherine was incredibly charming; her maturity immensely attractive.

Lily let out a sigh of relief under her breath. Thank goodness, Miss Katherine came in time. If not, Darryl would have gotten a beating.

After all, Xavier was a teacher. How could Darryl fight back?

Katherine frowned. "Mister Xavier, what were you all doing?" she asked.

She watched the entire scene unfold.

"Nothing, we were just joking around." Xavier laughed loudly.

Katherine obviously did not buy any of his words. "I saw everything. Mister Xavier, as a PE teacher, how could you bully your students?" she accused coldly.

Katherine also loathed Xavier. His perverse character was widely known among the Six orthodox sects.

"Miss Katherine, you must be mistaken!" Xavier

bitterly smiled while pretending to be innocent. " How could I bully a student? I was just playing with him. If you don't believe me, you can ask the other students."

"Yes, Miss Katherine. You're mistaken," Kent interrupted, "Mister Xavier and Darryl were just playing around. Mister Xavier would not hit a student of his."

Darryl got lucky. He was about to receive a beating, yet Miss Katherine stopped it. Such a pity.

Miles chimed in and added, "Yes, Miss Katherine. They were just joking around. Everyone saw it!"

Darryl smiled wordlessly. These two bastards, lying through their teeth.

Lily and Yvonne looked at each other in discomfort. How could the two of them lie so matter-of-factly?

Seeing that the witnesses were siding with Xavier, Katherine had nothing else to add.

"Darryl, follow me." She walked to a tree nearby. Darryl followed suit.

Katherine began, "Darryl, as I said this morning, the highest donor will receive a reward. Your contribution was the highest out of everyone in Hexad's, so naturally, your reward will be the best. The school has notified me that you will be allowed

into the library as a reward."

What? The library? How was that a reward? Darryl was stunned.

The library was a majestic building, not far from where they were standing. When Hexad's was established, the most famous building was the library. The impressive library housed countless books covering all topics, including—but not limited to—astronomy, geography, and history. It was open to all students at any time.

What sort of reward was this? Anyone could enter the library even if they did not donate!

Observing Darryl's expressions, Katherine could read his mind. She laughed and asked seriously, " Were you thinking that the reward was a little sketchy?"

Darryl let out a laugh. Was it not?

Katherine continued, "All students can enter the library, indeed. However, did you know that the library has a basement?"

"A basement?" Darryl asked.

Katherine nodded. "The Hexad School was founded by the Six orthodox sects. They have been in the world of martial arts for thousands of years, and each sect has their own unique skills, including the

Shaolin's Body Transformation Scripture, or the Wudang's Tai chi skills, and even Emei's Nine Yin White Bone Claw. These are all of their secret manuals. A student who can master any of these could easily survive the world of martial arts."

"These manuals are not available for anybody to learn," she added, "They were kept in the library's basement. Since you're the highest donor, Hexad's has allowed you to enter the basement to pick a manual to practice."

Until now, Katherine could not believe that Darryl—the laughing stock of the class—was the highest donor.

Was he not just a live-in son-in-law? Where did he get all the money from?

Darryl was extremely excited. He had previously mastered Grandmaster Heaven's manual, the Ascension of the Nine Dragons, and successfully used it once while killing a shark. It was potent. If he could master another manual, it would be great!

As she looked at Darryl's excitement, she warned, " Darryl, don't be too happy just yet. You need to know that these manuals contain the deepest knowledge of each sect. It will be hard for an ordinary person to learn. You have to understand that even though you have the manual, you might

not master it."

Chapter 286

Katherine took a long breath before continuing, “ The possibility of mastering these manuals are only one in a thousand. So, don’t get your hopes up in mastering these on this occasion.”

How hard could it be?

Darryl frowned. “Miss Katherine, when can I enter?” he asked

“I can bring you there now,” she replied.

“Miss Katherine, please wait here for a while,” Darryl interrupted. He ran back to Circe with an apologetic look on his face.

“Circe, I’m so sorry," he apologized, "I have something on with Miss Katherine. It looks like I won’t be able to have a meal with you. Can we take a rain check?”

Having a meal with a gorgeous woman was tempting, but who could resist mastering the manuals from one of the Six orthodox sects?

"Okay." Circe unhappily nodded and replied bluntly. No man has ever rejected her! Darryl was the first.

Half an hour later, Darryl followed Katherine to the

library. The school bell had just rung, so many students had entered as well.

They pushed through the crowd to a secluded corner with painting on the wall. Katherine lifted the picture up to reveal a golden button hidden behind it. She pushed the button, and the wall slowly opened up to a passage of stairs that led all the way down.

“The door has been opened, but I can’t follow you down," she explained, "You have to do it alone. Remember, you can’t bring the manual out. You can only practice it downstairs. If not, you will be expelled.”

The basement of the school library was a forbidden place. Even the teachers could not enter without approval.

“Yes, Miss Katherine.”

Darryl trod down the steep stairs, about roughly two to three hundred steps. Finally, a chamber appeared before him. The chamber had six adjacent walls, each one representing the Six sects.

There was a platform in the middle of the chamber, but other than that, there were no bookshelves.

‘Where are the manuals?’ Darryl pondered.

Suddenly, countless books flew out of the six walls.

It flew all around the room, making him dizzy.

Ring! Ring!

Darryl's phone rang. He picked it up, it was Katherine. She said, "Darryl, you get to pick one manual. You have to catch it, and remember, you only have one chance! So, make your decision wisely!"

What? He has to grab a manual from mid-air?

Darryl was almost in tears. The manuals were flying at the speed of light, and he could barely make out the writings on their covers.

"Miss Katherine, I can't read the writings on the manuals!" Darryl complained.

This was too random. Picking a manual this way was like buying a lottery ticket—it was based on luck.

Katherine laughed, "Just pick one! You being able to enter the basement is a huge honor. Be grateful! All the manuals are equally great. Just pick one!" Then she hung up.

Darryl took a deep breath. He realized that most of the manuals were worn out in a faded yellow or white shade, except for one manual—which was in red.

That was the one!

He caught the manual immediately with his quick reflexes. The rest of the manuals disappeared the moment he laid his hands on it.

Taking another deep breath, he looked at the manual. On the cover were a few huge words.

Chapter 287

PURE ENERGY SCRIPTURE.

The name seemed powerful! Darryl cheered happily. He impatiently flipped the manual open, reading a few sentences of small words on the first page.

'The Pure Energy Scripture belongs to the Shaolin sect, created by Bodhidharma. It is a masterpiece of the Internal Energy.'

'Internal Energy? Was this not about powerful skills?'

Nevertheless, he continued flipping through the book, eventually becoming deeply engrossed in it.

It did not turn out to be any ordinary Internal Energy book. It described in detail that if this skill was mastered, the user's Internal Energy would become as pure as possible. That meant if one fully mastered the Pure Energy Scripture, they could easily overpower other cultivators of the same rank.

At that, Darryl was ecstatic. He crossed his legs, lowered his energy field, and started cultivating.

The Mid-Autumn Festival arrived two days later. The entire city was in a festive mood, with moon

cakes being sold everywhere.

Many people came out to the park to play. However, Lily was at home, feeling gloomy.

The Longya Streaming Platform—her sole source of income—had shut down. She had no income from not being able to live-stream in a couple of days. To make matters worse, Samantha recently became addicted to mahjong and lost a lot of money. She started off making small bets worth about a few hundred bucks or so, but lately, it had gotten worse. She was losing a couple million bucks a day.

The most Lily could earn in a day was slightly short of ten million, and that money was given to her by Darryl. 3

Having recently bought a mansion, Lily did not have much money on her. She could not afford to pay for Samantha's gambling addiction.

Samantha came downstairs dressed to the nines, lugging the latest Louis Vuitton bag on her arm—clearly prepared for another night of Mahjong.

"Mother, please stop playing mahjong," Lily pleaded, "If you want to continue, place smaller bets next time. We are not rich."

Samantha nodded. "Fine, I promise you I will stop."

She dismissed Lily and took out her phone to chat with her Mahjong friends.

Lily was helpless yet furious. "Mother, don't brush me off!" she snapped, "You've promised me many times, yet you've clearly made appointments with your friends for another night of Mahjong!"

Samantha smiled as she was about to reply when the doorbell rang.

'Darryl came back?' thought Lily. She stood up and rushed to open the door.

Two days ago, he had something on with Miss Katherine. He had not been back since then and did not answer her calls or messages.

Lily happily opened the door, but her face darkened the moment she saw who it was.

"Grandma?" It was Granny Lyndon, with a walking stick, and William right behind her.

Lily felt conflicted when she saw the two of them.

Since Lily was kicked out of the Lyndon family, she never returned. She did not expect Grandma Lyndon to suddenly turn up at her house.

Granny Lyndon scanned the surroundings as she said, "Lily, I heard that you've become rich recently. This mansion is great! What, are you still

angry at Grandma? Are you not going to invite me in?"

Granny Lyndon did not want to come, but she had no choice. The Lyndons were distressed since the Lyndon Enterprise recently faced financial difficulties. William heard that Lily became a famous internet celebrity and earned a substantial amount of money. It would be great if they could get Lily to sponsor some of the cash for the Lyndon Enterprise.

"Grandma, please come in," she nodded.

Granny Lyndon observed the interior decor and nodded. She praised Lily as she took a seat on the sofa. "Lily, the renovation of this mansion is great! It looks like you did a great job on the house. I heard that this is the best mansion in all of Donghai City!"

William nodded in agreement as he said, "Lily, it looks like your livestream career made you a lot of money. Which patron donated the most? Did he invite you out for dinner?"

Lily ignored him. She looked at Granny Lyndon and asked politely, "Grandma, you came here all of a sudden. Did something happen?"

They would not come all this way for no particular reason.

Granny Lyndon smiled bitterly at Lily, sighing as she explained the situation with the Lyndon Enterprise.

When she finished, she looked at Lily with hope in her eyes and said, "Lily, I know I wronged you in the past. I apologize, but the Lyndon family needs help now. You can't just sit around and do nothing."

Samatha—who overheard the entire conversation—could no longer hold back. "Can't just sit around and do nothing?" she sneered, "Previously, when we were kicked out of the Lyndon family, we could barely survive. Who took care of us then?"

Chapter 288

Granny Lyndon looked utterly embarrassed.

"Mother, stop..." Lily pleaded softly.

Lily continued, "Grandma, how would you want me to help you?"

Granny Lyndon and William looked at each other. " Lily, if you give us some money to help the family business overcome this rough patch, we will be grateful," she smiled.

William added, "Of course, we will give you some of the shares."

Lily stayed silent in deep thought.

Samantha continued her insults. "What shameless people! Did you forget that some of those shares were hers? You snatched it away from her. Now that you've run out of money, you come running to us."

"Mother, stop it!" Lily snapped, breaking her silence. She glanced at Granny Lyndon and agreed, " Fine, I agree to your terms."

She still has tens of millions with her. If she kept it any longer, it would be gone due to Samantha's gambling addiction. She would rather spend it in

exchange for some shares. However, she was determined not to be cheated by them this time.

Granny Lyndon smiled widely and nodded. "That's great! I knew you would not be too cruel. We're still family, after all! We will exchange twenty percent of the shares for thirty million!"

"Fine." Lily nodded.

Granny Lyndon got what she came for, so she stood up and said, "Since tonight is the Mid-Autumn Festival, why don't you two join us for dinner with the rest of the Lyndons?"

Lily laughed and shook her head. "Grandma, I can't join you. I agreed to go shopping at Atlantic Street with my best friend."

Granny Lyndon was stunned, but she responded with a nod and a smile. "That's fine too!"

When they left, Samantha rambled to Lily anxiously, "How naive are you? How could you still believe them? Did you forget that they were the ones that kicked us out?"

When would her daughter ever grow up?

"Mother, I've made my decision," Lily assured.

She changed her outfit and went to Atlantic Street with Jade.

Atlantic Street was Donghai City's longest and busiest street. Every Mid-Autumn Festival, the road would be bustling with people. The whole city would be here.

Almost half the city filled the streets. There were plenty of stalls selling a variety of things. Lily held on to Jade and Phoebe as they walked along the streets. They were having fun—getting food to eat and taking pictures. The view was gorgeous. Lily could not help wonder what Darryl was currently doing.

In the basement of the Hexad School Library, Darryl felt a buzz. Suddenly, his eyes opened wide, feeling the force of a strong aura emitting from his body.

He was now a Level Two Master General!

Darryl let out a long sigh. This Pure Energy Scripture was powerful—the real deal of the Shaolin sect!

He had mastered the entire manual and leveled up. Most importantly, his Internal Energy was purer than ever! He was confident that he could beat other cultivators of the same level without using The Ascension of Nine Dragons.

He exited the library and was shocked to discover that there was no one in the school. Then, he

realized that it was the Mid-Autumn Festival, and it was a school holiday.

His phone buzzed vigorously. Who could it be? He checked his phone and smiled.

It was from many people wishing him a happy Mid-Autumn Festival. The message that stood out was from Paul James of Dragon Tech. It read, 'Darryl, Happy Mid Autumn Festival! If you want to visit Atlantic Street, just let me know. I'm in charge of that street, so I could take you there in a helicopter."

Chapter 289

Of course, Darryl knew that Atlantic Street would be packed to the brim with people. How was it possible that Paul booked the entire street?

Then, his phone rang. It was from Lily.

Lily asked, "Darryl, have you come out of the library?"

Lily was walking on Atlantic Street when she thought of calling Darryl. She did not expect that he would pick up! Darryl laughed, hearing the hustle and bustle of the crowd on Lily's end. "Yes, where are you?" he responded.

"I'm at Atlantic Street with Jade and Phoebe. It's crowded here! Come find us!" Lily exclaimed hopefully.

How could Darryl say no? "Okay! Wait for me!" he answered.

Lily hung up the call with her face filled with joy. The fact that she could see Darryl in a short while made her swoon!

The taxi that Darryl hailed had barely reached Atlantic Street when it got stuck in traffic. Darryl

got down and walked into the crowd. There were many stalls; the sellers were shouting to attract customers. Rows of lanterns decorated the entire street.

Darryl admired the view while searching for Lily.

"Come get your fortune predicted! Fortune telling available!"

Megan and Kent were nearby when they heard a fortune-teller yelling. The fortune-teller looked like he was in his forties with a goatee and a Taoist robe. He looked ethereal. A crowd had gathered near him.

"Miss, is your family name Castello?" The fortune-teller smiled and asked Megan.

Megan was amazed at how the fortune-teller could accurately guess her name. She did not know him. How did he know her family name?

"Master, how did you know that my girlfriend's family name is Castello? That's amazing. Please do a reading for her!" Kent laughed and told the fortune-teller.

The fortune-teller combed through his goatee as he spoke seriously, "I require a payment for each session."

"How much?" Kent asked.

"One buck." The fortune-teller nodded. "One buck is all I need!"

This master must be genuine! He only charged one buck for his predictions! The crowd looked on in amazement.

Kent chuckled as he paid the fortune-teller. " Master, please do a reading for my girlfriend," he requested.

The fortune-teller nodded. He asked Megan, "Miss, when were you born? Please let me know the time as well."

Megan replied excitedly, "Sixth of October, three in the afternoon."

"October six, three in the afternoon..." The fortune-teller closed his eyes and muttered to himself. He calculated with his fingers and said, "Your Day Master Heavenly Stem is gold. Among the five elements, you have an affinity for the water element and are lacking in wood!" 1

Lacking wood?

"What does that mean?" Megan was puzzled.

The fortune-teller smiled and explained, "In your life, you need someone with the water element, yet you stay away from people with the wood element."

Megan nodded along, unconvinced.

She did not notice that the fortune-teller glanced at Kent when he finished his prediction. Kent raised his eyebrow in response. This fortune-teller was set up by Kent.

The fortune-teller continued, "I could see that recently, things have not been going smoothly for you. At work, things would seem to go well but turn sour at the most critical moment. If I'm not mistaken, you're a police officer?"

This was way too accurate. Megan shuddered at the thought. It was true, her cases have not been going smoothly, such as the Grandmaster Heaven and the Eternal Life Palace. Getting Darryl to enter prison to get closer to Chester did not work out as well.

Megan was fully convinced of the fortune-teller's ability. She asked anxiously, "Master, what should I do?"

If he could predict things so accurately, he must have a solution to her problems.

Chapter 290

The fortune-teller thought of a solution. "To break your streak of bad luck is simple," he explained. " Just pick a good day to get married."

Marriage?

Megan was stunned, then she came to a realization. She blushed.

The fortune-teller continued, "I just realized that this man next to you has the water element in him. You two are a match! You both are a couple, I assume?"

Megan blushed as she nodded.

The fortune-teller laughed, slapping his thigh. He pretended to calculate with his fingers and exclaimed, "That's perfect! In the next six months, there will be two good days to have a wedding ceremony. Congratulations to the newlywed couple in advance!"

At that, the fortune-teller let out a sigh of relief under his breath. He completed his mission.

Kent smiled widely. He took the opportunity to fish out a box from his pocket and knelt on one knee. "

Megan, marry me." He opened the box to reveal a diamond ring. It sparkled under the lanterns.

The crowd exclaimed in admiration. How romantic it was to propose to someone on such a festive day like the Mid Autumn Festival!

Megan bit her lip. She was touched yet shy. She and Kent had a marriage contract in hand. Their marriage was bound to happen in a matter of time, but she did not expect it to happen so suddenly. She was not ready yet.

However, according to the fortune-teller, she had to get married to break her bad luck streak.

Kent reassured her while he was still down on one knee. "Meg, don't worry. I will treat you well for the rest of my life."

Kent was nervous. This fortune-teller was actually a staff member from his company. He made him set up a stall here just for this moment. Kent strongly believed that Megan would agree to his proposal since there was a crowd watching.

Megan was about to respond after seeing how sincere Kent was, but she saw someone walking her way. It was Darryl.

"Kent, get up first," Megan replied, running toward Darryl. He had not given her the Godly pill she

requested the last time they met.

At the same time, Kent sneered, "My, isn't this the live-in son-in-law? Come here, you rarely get to meet a great fortune-teller. His predictions are highly accurate, so let him give you a reading!"

Kent emphasized the words 'live-in son-in-law', winking discreetly at the fortune-teller. He was previously notified about a live-in son-in-law that was too close to Megan. It seemed like he was here in person, so he had to put on his best performance.

Live-in son-in-law? The crowd snickered.

Megan smiled as she walked toward Darryl. "My good brother," she called, "What a coincidence! About that Godly pill you promised me, do you have it?"

Megan wanted to call him 'my good younger brother', but she changed her tone at the thought of the Godly pill.

"Megan, why did you call him that?" Kent asked anxiously.

Bloody hell, how could his fiancé call another man that?

Megan ignored him, completely focused on Darryl.

Darryl started tearing up from laughing. Megan was

a police officer, how could she believe in fortune-telling?

He smiled at Megan while trying to suppress his laughter and said, "I didn't know that you believe in these sorts of things."

Fortune-telling was an iffy business. Some fortune-tellers had extremely accurate predictions, but most of them—especially from stalls like these—were scammers.

"Darryl, this master's reading is accurate," she muttered. "Why not let him try it out on you?"

If he could guess her surname and her occupation, he must surely be a master!

Chapter 291

Darryl laughed and glanced at the fortune-teller. "I' m not interested."

"No, sir!" The fortune-teller shouted in panic. Kent secretly instructed him to stall Darryl. He grasped onto Darryl's arm and pretended to analyze his palm, "You have a terrible fate awaiting you, buddy."

"Yes, you're right! His life has indeed been difficult!" Kent burst into laughter and yelled, " Everybody! This fortune-teller is really accurate!"

"I am not interested in psychic readings. Let me go." Darryl was exasperated.

The fortune-teller was relentless. "No, buddy. It was fate that we met, so I must take your reading. I can see that you can only live under other's protection as a live-in son-in-law for your whole life."

Hahaha!

'He has to live as a live-in son-in-law for the rest of his life!"

The surrounding crowd burst into laughter when

they heard those words.

Kent patted Darryl's shoulder and sighed, feigning a pained expression. "Did you hear that? The fortune-teller said that you could only ever amount to a live-in son-in-law. It's destiny. I feel bad for you."

Megan was unable to smile, biting her lips out of sympathy.

'Is Darryl's fate really that pitiful? Even the fortune-teller concluded that he can only be a live-in son-in-law for the rest of his life!'

Darryl smiled as he eyed the fortune-teller. He could see that his mustache was odd, as if it was stuck on to his face.

"Darryl, don't be upset..." Megan whispered.

She completely trusted the fortune-teller's words since his reading was accurate.

Darryl interrupted Megan with a chuckle. "Megan, do you really believe in that? It's all lies and bullsh*t."

'Are all con men these days this brazen?'

Megan panicked after hearing Darryl's words. She tugged on his arm and said in a serious tone, " Darryl, he's legit. He gave me a reading just now,

and it was spot on."

Kent gave Darryl a sinister smile, unable to suppress his urge to tease him. "Darryl, it's alright to be upset. You can refuse his words all you want, but how can you doubt him? On what grounds can you say that this fortune-teller is a liar?"

'Darryl, you *sshole.' It was a rare opportunity for Kent to be able to embarrass Darryl.

The fortune-teller stroked his mustache and said unhurriedly, "I am destined and gifted with the skills in prophecy, and I never lie. You're hilarious for accusing me that I'm lying."

'Is he still pretending?'

Darryl was amused. "Oh, really?" he replied, "How about you tell us what is Megan's reading?"

The Geomancy of Yin and Yang consisted of some fortune-telling techniques aside from Feng Shui, so Darryl knew the basics.

The fortune-teller glanced at Megan and said in a calm tone, "This missus over here has the element sign of Metal, which clashes with Wood..."

He shouted suddenly, "Oh, no! Darryl's element sign is Wood! Miss Castello, you have to keep a distance from him from now on!"

Huh? They had clashing signs? Megan

subconsciously took a step back.

Kent seized the opportunity to walk over and hold Megan's hand. "Meg, did you hear that? Remember to keep a distance from that live-in son-in-law!"

Darryl laughed as he stared at the fortune-teller. " You were right in the first half. Megan's element sign is indeed metal, but you're completely wrong about the latter. Megan's eight-diagram mirror symbol is mountain. My element sign is wood, but my eight-diagram mirror symbol is also mountain."

Darryl could not help but snicker with a hint of disdain in his eyes. "We are both Mountains. Tell me, what's clashing here?"

What? His words were hard to understand! The crowd was astonished.

The fortune-teller froze, cold sweat forming on his forehead. Kent hired him to act as a fortune-teller to deceive Megan.

'Why is the live-in son-in-law so professional?'

Megan's face had shock written all over. "Darryl, you know fortune-telling too?"

She knew that Darryl was knowledgeable about Feng Shui and antiques, but how did he know fortune-telling?

The man was full of surprises.

Darryl maintained a slight smile. "Just a little."

Kent was in a complete panic. Since he was about to propose to Megan, he could not let Darryl destroy his plan!

He glanced at the fortune-teller, signaling him to act.

The fortune-teller continued hurriedly, "Mister Darby, I also read that you have terrible luck. Whoever gets close to you will definitely be unlucky. Your wife and friends will be struck with misfortune."

"What did you say?" The smile on Darryl's face disappeared, and his tone turned icy-cold.

He crossed the line.

"You..."

The fortune-teller's voice was quivering, feeling intimidated by Darryl's gaze.

"I'm saying that you are unfortunate—"

"How about I give you a prediction too?" Darryl spat, interrupting him. "A catastrophe awaits you today."

A catastrophe?

The fortune-teller froze and stared at him blankly. "

What catastrophe?”

Chapter 292

Smack!

Darryl smacked the fortune-teller's face hard.

"F*ck!"

The fortune-teller cried out as he spun around from the impact. He fell onto the ground in a daze as blood poured from his nose.

"You..."

He pointed his finger at Darryl in anger and fear after recovering from the shock.

"Darryl, what are you doing?" Kent shouted, "Why did you hit him? Don't you have manners?"

Megan was also panicking. "Darryl, why did you do that? His words weren't good to hear, but he is a well-respected man. You are not treating him with respect by hitting him like that."

"Exactly!"

The crowd agreed and started criticizing Darryl.

"Lad, you shouldn't have beaten a man of Taoism even if you are young and strong."

"Exactly..."

Darryl ignored everyone and walked to the fortune-teller with a sinister smile. He grabbed onto his mustache and lifted him.

Rip!

Darryl forcefully pulled on the mustache, tearing it off the wailing fortune-teller.

"See, his mustache was just stuck on."

Darryl tossed the mustache to the ground and looked around.

The fortune-teller was nervous. "Sir, this is too much. Can't I have a fake mustache?"

"Is there a rule that fortune-tellers cannot have fake mustaches?"

"He just can't let this go, can't he?"

Darryl maintained a cold smile and tore the fortune-teller's clothes wordlessly.

Tear!

The robe was torn off, and his clothing inside was revealed. The crowd laughed when they saw what he wore on the inside.

What a vogue fortune-teller! He wore a Nike jacket and a pair of Adidas track pants.

Haha! How fashionable!

It was their first time to see such a scene. The crowd burst into laughter. Everyone could see that the fortune-teller was fake.

"You..."

The fortune-teller's face was flushed red as his sweat dripped along with his blood. It was embarrassing. He pointed his finger at Darryl, but he could not utter a word.

Megan stomped her foot in frustration. She was enraged and ashamed at the same time.

'He is a con man!' she screamed in her mind. She could not believe that she trusted his words.

"How dare you lie to me in public?! Don't you know who am I?" Megan reprimanded as she took out her phone. She was about to call her colleagues for backup.

Megan hated liars the most. It was grave that he had lied to her!

The man was terrified and desperately begged Kent. "Young Master Hough, please help me! I don't want to get locked up."

'What the f*ck? This guy is stupid and unreliable as f*ck! He gave my name out almost immediately!'

Kent became furious, kicking him harshly. "F*ck

you! Do I know you?!"

'This good-for-nothing is going to drag me into this sh*t just because he didn't do his job!'

Megan called twice, but no one picked up.

Her colleagues in the station were on-duty to maintain public order since it was the Mid-Autumn Festival.

"I'm going to let you off today. I'm not going to be this merciful if you do this again." Megan raged, utterly furious that she could not contact her colleagues. "Get out of here."

The man nodded and scurried away, leaving his booth behind.

The crowd scattered away when the scene was over.

Megan walked to Darryl awkwardly. She bit her lip and whispered, "I'm sorry. I didn't know that he was a fake."

Megan wanted to dig a hole and hide in it. How could she, the Criminal Investigation Team Leader, fall for a con man's words?

How embarrassing.

Chapter 293

Darryl smiled at Megan. "Be more alert next time. Most fortune-tellers out there are fake."

Megan nodded and continued softly, "By the way, do you have any Godly pills with you now?"

She could never forget that!

Darryl shook his head. "I don't have any. Maybe next time."

He had just returned from the library. He had no time to go home, which was where he kept the pills.

Disappointment flashed across Megan's face as she nodded. "Alright then, I'll contact you again. Can you bring some Godly pills with you next time?"

Darryl nodded and bid farewell to her. He had to look for Lily.

Megan grabbed her bag and walked in the opposite direction.

"Meg, wait for me!" Kent shouted in panic, chasing after her.

Megan was furious. She remembered that the fake fortune-teller shouted Kent's name in his panic

when she was about to arrest him. She knew that all of it was Kent's doing.

She was disappointed.

He had once asked someone to act like a shark, and now he found someone to act as a fortune-teller. What a piece of trash!

Darryl walked around for ten minutes, but Lily was nowhere to be seen.

Atlantic Street was bustling with people. There were many sweet couples there.

Darryl realized he never did anything romantic for Lily throughout their three years of marriage. ' What if I do something romantic today to surprise her?'

He chuckled and sent a text to Paul.

Hmm?

Darryl stopped abruptly after sending the text.

The rows of decorative lanterns at the roadside were gleaming with brilliance.

The word 'Lily' appeared on the lanterns every few seconds.

'What is going on? Why do the lanterns have her name on them?' Darryl muttered to himself and

raised his gaze to see Lily, Jade, and Phoebe from a distance!

'Found her!' Darryl passed through the crowd before he realized there were two men behind Lily.

'Justin Quinn and Zayler White?'

Zayler was the eldest grandson in the White family. He was merely an acquaintance of Darryl's.

On the other hand, Justin was an 'old friend' of his.

He acted friendly and tried to flirt with Lily in front of everyone during their outing.

Darryl even mocked his name previously, calling him a 'queen.' Haha, Darryl wanted to laugh whenever he thought about that memory.

Justin was in a great mood that night. He came to Atlantic Street with Zayler to walk around and ogle at pretty girls.

They coincidentally met Lily and the girls, following them since then. Lily was the girl of his dreams, after all!

Lily was exasperated by Justin's lack of shame. However, she could not do anything about it. She could not just ask him to leave as they were there for a walk.

"Lily, look! It's your name. They're carved on the

lanterns," Phoebe exclaimed in wonder.

Lily and Jade looked in the direction where Phoebe pointed, and they were stunned.

Lily's name appeared on the rows of jack-o-lanterns every two seconds with different fonts. The writing clearly took a lot of effort.

Justin walked towards them with a smile. "Miss Lily, do you like it?"

Justin racked his brains to think of a surprise for Lily. He made sure that Dragon Tech rented out the entire Atlantic Street for the Mid-Autumn Festival.

The Quinn family had an ongoing cooperation with Dragon Tech.

Justin used his position as a partner to ask the employees of Dragon Tech to write Lily's name on the lanterns. There were more than 200,000 lanterns with Lily's name throughout Atlantic Street. It was a grand scene!

Girls would definitely fall for this, especially a pretty one like Lily!

'Haha, I am so smart!' Justin's face was filled with satisfaction.

Lily turned to Justin in astonishment, a ripple of emotions spreading throughout her. "You did this?"

Chapter 294

Lily honestly thought that Darryl surprised her with the lanterns that had her name on them. Her guess was rebutted almost immediately. It was a huge project. Darryl would never put in the effort to do this.

"Look, the lanterns have words on them!" Somebody called out.

The crowd clamored. How romantic! They wondered who was the lucky girl!

"It'd be great if someone wrote my name on those ..." Some girls were envious.

Phoebe walked to Lily and held her hand, "Lily, you're really lucky!"

Lily smiled and nodded to Justin. Although she did not have an interest in him, she was touched. She could sense that Justin was willing to put in the effort for her.

Beaming with happiness, Justin smiled. "I'm willing to do anything to see you smile."

He could see that Lily was touched. That was a good sign to ask her out!

Lily smiled and took out her phone to take a photo when she noticed a familiar figure walking toward her.

She was elated and surprised! "Darryl!" Lily ran toward him with a cry of surprise.

At the same time, Jade was shocked and became nervous. She stuttered, "Da...Darryl..."

She was used to calling him 'Daddy,' but she could not use that nickname in front of so many people. It would be embarrassing. Sensing Jade's awkwardness, Darryl smiled and nodded to her in acknowledgment.

Justin clenched his fists in anger. Damn it, the live-in son-in-law appeared during the most crucial moment as he was about to get close to Lily.

'Why is he here? Isn't he in the library?'

Lily smiled and asked Darryl, "What took you so long?"

It had been over half an hour since their call.

Darryl smiled bitterly, "There are too many people here."

His gaze fell on Justin as he snickered, "Justin Quinn, you really are shameless to flirt with someone's wife in public."

'F*ck, he's flirting with my wife, and he even spent a huge amount of money on her!'

He had been bugging Lily throughout their outing. The lanterns with Lily's name were all part of Justin's plan.

Justin's expression changed instantly. He was about to speak when Jade interrupted, "Darryl, what are you talking about? Mister Quinn planned for a surprise for Lily and nothing else. How could you talk to him like that? How dare you act arrogant when you're just leeching off Lily?"

"Jade, stop..." Lily whispered as her smile disappeared.

"Darryl, did you hear what the pretty lady said?" Justin scoffed, "I'm giving Miss Lily a surprise. What are you going to do about it? You're just her husband legally, but you're not spouses in reality, am I right? I admit that I like Lily, and I'm going after her. Do you have a problem with that?"

Justin looked at the rows of lanterns and continued, "I see, you are upset that I'm being romantic. Darryl, to be frank, what did you provide to Lily after being married for three years? You must be angry that I gave her a surprise."

Many passersby stopped to look at Darryl. People

were nosy and attracted to drama.

Darryl laughed and stared at Justin. "Justin Quinn, you are true to your name; you are as arrogant as a queen. How dare you speak so blatantly when you're interested in my wife?"

Darryl paused to look at the rows of lanterns and continued, "Where did you get your superiority complex from? It's just a small trick."

Justin was taken aback before he burst into laughter, "Haha, you are right. Darryl, I do feel superior, so what? All the writings on the lanterns throughout the whole street were done by me, how about that? Do you have the ability to do that?"

The crowd laughed in approval. Everyone could see that the guy's wife was getting chased by an admirer who put in a considerable effort to write her name onto a few hundred thousand lanterns!

Poor guy.

Chapter 295

Justin became more agitated as he talked. He took out his phone as he snickered, "Darryl, you're here just in time. I'll show you what I can really do. Wait, the lanterns will show Miss Lily's full name very soon."

He was even more pleased when he said, "They will not only show Miss Lily's name, it will show mine too."

The nosy crowd exclaimed in surprise.

'Isn't that a little too much? How is he able to show their names on all these lanterns? That guy's indeed powerful!'

Even Jade could not help but mutter, "Lily, Mister Quinn is such a romantic. He's so much better than Darryl."

Jade was still baffled why Lily cared about that piece of trash so much. Justin Quinn was so much better! He was rich, and he was a romantic. 2

Ignoring her, Lily held Darryl's hand and said softly, "Darryl, let's just go."

Since Justin could make the whole street light up

with her name, he could make both their names appear.

Lily wanted to leave as soon as she could to avoid the scene instead of staying there to embarrass Darryl even more.

Darryl remained unmoved. He smiled and said, " Honey, it's fine. Let's see what else he can do."

Lily was panicking. Darryl's insistence on staying there was going to backfire on him.

The crowd grew; people were enjoying the drama. A rich young man was competing with a live-in son-in-law for a woman. It was such a dramatic scene. It was much more interesting than taking a stroll along the street.

Justin made a call to arrange the lanterns to show both their names, but no one picked up.

Darryl asked with a smile, "What's the matter? It's been some time. Why are the writings still the same?"

"Hush, can't you see that I'm making a call?" Justin shushed him in a mocking tone.

Darryl nodded. "Okay, I'll try to make a call as well."

He took out his phone and called Paul, and he answered within seconds.

"Switch off all the lanterns on the street," said Darryl to the phone.

Swish!

All the festive lanterns were off in an instant. Atlantic Street fell into darkness in a blink of an eye!

What?

Did he turn all the lights on Atlantic Street off with just one phone call? Jade was speechless!

What just happened? Who did Darryl call?!

"Justin Quinn, where is your romantic gesture? Has it been turned off too?" Darryl smiled.

"You..." Sweat was pouring from Justin's forehead.

F*ck, what was happening? He called Dragon Tech numerous times, but no one picked up!

"Look, helicopters!" someone shouted.

End everyone looked up into the sky, and their mouths gaped open with awe!

Three helicopters were flying toward the street from a distance with a gigantic object hanging below them. As the helicopters descended, the object was clearly presented in front of everyone.

It was a piano!

Gasp!

Everyone was stunned, and no one uttered a word! Someone used three helicopters to transport a piano over?! Who did this? It must have cost a fortune!

Many of them threw their gaze at Justin and Darryl amid the shock.

One of them managed to control the lanterns' writings, and another arranged to switch off all the lights on the street!

This grandiose scheme must have been arranged by one of them!

Justin stared at the piano blankly and fell into a daze.

'Was this... arranged by the live-in son-in-law?'

Some of them turned to Darryl with astonishment.

Darryl took Lily's hand and kissed it lightly before walking straight toward the piano.

Indeed, he called Paul to arrange for a band so that he could serenade Lily. Her heart was thumping like crazy.

The crew placed some chairs in front of the piano.

Chapter 296

It was complete silence!

The street became exceptionally quiet as everyone fixed their gazes on Darryl.

Lily stood there mystified with her heart almost jumping out of her chest.

'Is Darryl... going to perform for me on the spot? He never mentioned that he knew how to play the piano ...'

Darryl walked to the piano and took a seat. He stretched his fingers and gently placed them on the piano keys.

Learning the piano was one of the compulsory skills in the Darby family. He learned to play the piano for two years with a world-famous pianist Baker when he was still with his family.

However, it had been three or four years since the last time he practiced.

A crew emerged from the crowd with a microphone when Darryl was seated and he placed it in front of Darryl.

Four stylish men walked over and stood behind

Darryl, each carrying a guitar.

Wow.

The crowd was boiling with enthusiasm at that instant.

The four guitarists were not just anyone, they were the most popular rock band, FBY!

Did he really hire FBY to foil his performance?

Many young girls were screaming and beaming with excitement.

The crowd took out their phones to film Darryl.

Darryl smiled as he looked around before finally settling his gaze on Lily. He said, "Honey, it has been three years since we got married but I haven't got to do anything romantic to you."

"Everyone criticized me saying that I'm a live-in son-in-law and treated me with disdain throughout these three years."

"They have been mocking you for getting married to a piece of trash but none of them thought that you suffered a lot too. I'm sorry."

"We have let each other down in the past, but we will not relive that in our future days."

Wow!

Lily became the spotlight when the crowd shifted their gazes to her.

Lily's tears were welling up as she stared at Darryl without blinking.

Finally, Darryl placed his fingers on the piano gently and started playing.

Darryl smiled and fixed his gaze on Lily as he sang, " I could not forget your charming eyes when we first met..."

"Your figure haunted my mind..."

"Feeling your grace while holding your hands, I could not breathe. I want to appreciate your innocence, I want to share your sadness when you are upset."

Darryl's voice was gentle yet magnetic. It was as if a singer was actually there.

The girls in the crowd screamed!

Lily covered her mouth in awe as her tears poured down uncontrollably!

Overwhelmed with excitement and emotions, Lily was unable to speak. She felt as if she was the happiest woman in the world.

The song ended. Darryl stared at Lily with a gentle

smile as he opened his arms slowly.

"Honey!"

Lily's tears streamed as she ran into Darryl's arms without hesitation!

"Bravo!"

Someone started clapping, leading to thunderous applause!

Darryl hugged Lily tight. It was their first hug in three years.

Snap.

Darryl raised an arm and snapped his finger.

Explosive noises filled up the sky!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The crowd looked up to the sky to see streamers which exploded into fireworks in the sky!

"How beautiful!"

The girls were beaming with emotion as they screamed while pointing at the sky.

The sky was filled with bright and colorful lights which illuminated a huge part of the city as if there was meteor rain!

Two names appeared in the sky when the biggest

fireworks exploded.

Darryl Darby, Lily Lyndon!

A striking red heart was lit between both names!

Wow...

The passersby exclaimed one after another. Lily was at a loss for words. She held Darryl tightly and asked in a quivering voice, "Honey, is this real? Am I dreaming?"

Her teardrops fell one after another. She was overwhelmed with emotions.

Darryl smiled as he stared at her, "Do you like the surprise?"

'Did Paul bought off every single firework in the city?'

Lily was overwhelmed with happiness as she nodded. She rested her face on Darryl's chest, "Yes, I love it..."

Chapter 297

The Young family's house, Donghai City.

Yvonne who just had dinner with her family stood in front of the window by herself.

She was uneasy because of her lack of Darryl's information in the past two days.

'What is wrong with me? Why am I thinking about him every night although I'm well aware that he's in love with Lily Lyndon?'

She thought of how he helped her in evaluating valuables in Pearl Pavillion.

She also thought of him courageously rescuing her from the shark during their outing.

Then, she thought of his dauntless bravery while fighting off robbers.

Those scenes were imprinted in Yvonne's mind as if they were stamped.

Explosive noises were heard as fireworks blossomed in the sky in Atlantic Street's direction. The colorful lights lit up the sky in an instant.

How beautiful.

The fireworks grabbed Yvonne's attention.

Two names appeared in midst of the fireworks. Yvonne was stunned as she read them.

They were Darryl and Lily's names.

'Are they at Atlantic Street now?'

What a grand firework show.

He seemed like he really loved her...

Yvonne felt an unfathomable bad feeling.

Atlantic Street.

Darryl and Lily were still locked in an embrace.

Everyone was fixing their gazes on them. Some were envious and some were wishing them happiness.

"Kiss!"

Someone shouted.

Countless voices chanted along the next moment.

"Exactly, kiss!"

"Come on, kiss! Haha!

Lily's face was flushed with embarrassment from the chanting but she felt immense joy internally.

It was embarrassing because the crowd was huge.

Darryl smiled as he stared at Lily before he moved closer to kiss her rosy lips.

Buzz.

Lily's body quivered as her legs gave way instantly and she slumped into Darryl's arms.

"Bravo!"

The crowd applauded and laughed, many were recording the scene with their phones when a commotion was heard nearby.

"Run!"

Someone shouted in the crowd and everyone started scurrying around!

More than 30 men in black clothing were dashing over from a distance with daggers!

The person leading the troop was a middle-aged man named Timothy Dixon, Donoghue's father. He was the head of the Dixon family!

Donoghue barely survived after getting beaten up by Darryl after getting rescued in the hospital for three days straight.

Timothy was furious when he got to know that his son was almost killed. He swore to take revenge for his son! He would get Darryl that day and he must

die!

"Finish him!" bellowed Timothy, his eyes red with fury!

The 30 men charged toward Darryl in no time!

Darryl clenched his fists tight. He could tell that those were the Dixon family's men.

Timothy looked extremely similar to Donoghue Dixon, he was clearly his father.

Darryl had no way to run as Atlantic Street was filled with visitors, he could only face them!

Darryl grabbed a guitar and charged!

Lily was anxious and she wanted to help, but Jade stopped her in time.

"Those are bad men, you will not be of great help. How about we call the cops?" asked Jade anxiously as she took out her phone to call the police.

However, no one picked up the phone.

The policemen were out in force to maintain public order instead of staying in because it was the Mid-Autumn Festival.

Jade understood what happened when her call was not picked up. She called out to Phoebe who was still in a daze, "Let's go and look for the cops near

the intersection. Hurry!"

Darryl was engaged in a fight with the men within a few seconds.

Thump... Thump...

Darryl's Internal Energy was a lot more refined than before ever since he practiced the Pure Energy Scripture. He knocked out the few men who were charging toward him effortlessly in the blink of an eye.

However, the men Timothy brought with him were the elites of the Dixon family who were remarkably strong. The few men who were knocked out rested to catch their breath before leaping back up and charged toward Darryl again.

Kick!

Darryl dodged a dagger and gave the man a kick on his stomach!

Chapter 298

All the 30 men were cultivators! The strongest of them was a Level Five Master whereas the weakest was Level Three!

Darryl was getting exhausted after some time. He would deplete his energy fully if this went on any longer!

"Kill him, kill him!"

Timothy was shouting his lungs out when he lunged at Darryl unexpectedly and thrust a dagger into Darryl's back!

Slash!

Fresh blood was gushing out of his wound!

"Darryl!"

Lily saw what happened and got extremely worried, she could feel her heart at her throat. Anxiety was written all over her face.

Darryl was slightly distracted because of Lily's shout, Timothy smiled sinisterly and raised his dagger for another strike in that split second!

He was aiming toward Darryl's heart!

"Look out!"

Lily could not help but exclaimed when she noticed, she ran to Darryl and hugged him without thinking!

Stab!

The dagger was embedded into Lily's back forcefully and blood spurted from the wound!

"Lilybud!" Darryl held Lily and shouted as if he lost his mind!

Blood drained from Lily's face as she limped onto the floor.

Blood was oozing out of her back uncontrollably and she was in great pain.

However, she did not regret her action.

Darryl had been putting so much effort into her.

She could finally help him for once.

'What?'

"Lilybud, don't scare me, stop scaring me!" Darryl roared and broke down completely!

'Why are you so stupid?'

'You don't even cultivate, why did you take the dagger for me? Why?'

"Stop scaring me..." Darryl shook Lily's body

lightly as he choked with his sobs.

Lily's face was as pale as paper. The wound was a deep one. Lily could feel her body getting lighter and lighter.

She forced a smile as she could hear Darryl's shouts, "Honey, I'm fine. Don't cry, you look...ugly when you cry..."

"Shush, wait for me. I'm taking you to the hospital." Darryl's tears started pouring uncontrollably!

Timothy gave a sinister smile, "The hospital? Hehe, kiddo, no way. I can send both of you to hell though!"

The 30 men charged toward them!

Darryl let go of Lily and turned slowly, his eyes crimson with rage!

"All of you f*ckers, have to die today!"

Roar!

A golden ray appeared and formed into nine ferocious dragons swirling around Darryl!

"Die! All of you f*ckers have to die!" shouted Darryl in a hoarse voice, the air surrounding him was getting twisted!

"Ascension of the Nine Dragons!"

Boom!

The nine dragons flew toward the men brutally as Darryl shouted!

"Ah!"

Horrifying screams erupted from the 30 men!

It took less than 20 seconds for those men to collapse onto puddles of blood!

Timothy was the only one left. He covered his chest as he stood there with a terrorized expression!

Puke!

Fresh blood spurted from his mouth. He made a huge effort to block the skill and he did, but he also suffered grave injuries!

'How is this possible?'

How could a Level One Master defeat all 30 elite men of the Dixon family?

"Kiddo, you're lucky today. You wait for me!" shouted Timothy before turning to flee.

'Something is clearly wrong with the kid, I should go back first to think of another way to get rid of him.'

Phew...

Darryl held the Blood-Drinking Sword as he gasped for air.

"Honey, hold on, stay with me..."

Darryl carried Lily in his arms as he walked out of Atlantic Street full of anxiety and pain.

"I don't think that I can hold on much longer. Honey, I love you. I love you..." A tear fell from Lily's face as her vision was getting blurry.

"Don't, honey, stop talking. You cannot die!" Darryl trembled as he ran from Atlantic Street like a mad man.

His arms were stained red from her blood. The vitality on her face disappeared bit by bit and her lips were completely pale when she finally closed her eyes.

Chapter 299

At the same time, Darby Seaview Mansion was exceptionally lively.

A dozen tables were arranged in the hall as all the offspring of the Darby family were present for the reunion dinner.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was at the seat for honored guests with a dozen pretty Emei female disciples around her.

They were a unique scene in the Darby reunion dinner.

Old Master Darby was seated on the main seat when he said emotionally, "Is everyone here? Alright. Today is my first Mid-Autumn Festival after I ended my isolation to cultivate. I am glad to see the Darby family growing and prospering."

He looked toward Abbess Mother Serendipity and smiled, "Aside from that, we have Abbess Mother Serendipity from the Emei sect with us today for the Darby family's Mid-Autumn Festival reunion dinner. We are honored to have you here!"

The Darby offspring nodded in agreement.

Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded lightly and said

humbly, "Old Master Darby, don't mention it. We are grateful for your kindness in letting us stay in your home. You even invited us to join you for dinner this Mid Autumn Festival. The honor is ours."

She did not intend anything with those words but the others were caught up with something.

A hint of awkwardness spread through the Darbys.

Even Old Master Darby was uneasy. After all, he was the one who led the family to enter the Eternal Life Palace Sect.

She mentioned that the Eternal Life Palace Sect was a cult with demonic roots, was she mocking the Darby family too?

Old Master Darby could not rebut so he coughed awkwardly and smiled dryly, "Indeed, cough... Abbess Mother Serendipity, you're right."

He was anxious.

He could not continue the topic anymore or he might say something wrong and expose themselves.

Abbess Mother Serendipity spoke again, "By the way, Mister Darby, the Darby family certainly has wide connections since you are one of the wealthiest families in Donghai City. I have something to ask here, do you know a Darryl

Darby?"

Darryl Darby?

Everyone's expression changed into bewilderment when they heard the name.

'How did Abbess Mother Serendipity know about the good-for-nothing Darryl?'

Florian stood up with a smile, "Abbess Mother Serendipity, are you close with Darryl?"

She shook her head and said, "Not really, we've never met. The eldest of our young disciples in the Emei sect named Megan Castello informed me a few days ago that Darryl Darby from Donghai City has Godly pills, hence I'm asking about him."

What?

'Darryl has Godly pills?'

Haha...

Laughter erupted in the mansion hall upon Abbess Mother Serendipity's words, humor, and disdain were written all over the Darby family's faces.

A disciple snickered and said, "Abbess Mother Serendipity, you might not know this but Darryl is indeed from our family. He is the second young master."

Abbess Mother Serendipity's face gleamed with

delight, "Is that so?"

The disciple laughed and continued in a scornful tone, "However, he violated a family rule and he was chased out of the family. He is now a live-in son-in-law and we have nothing to do with him. How can a piece of trash like him have Godly pills?"

"Exactly. He is a loser, how can he possess such rare medicine?"

"Abbess Mother Serendipity, you must have mistaken him for someone else."

"Right..."

Listening to the Darby family's conversation, Abbess Mother Serendipity raised her thin brow as confusion emerged on her delicate face.

Something was off.

Darryl Darby sounded worthless from the Darby family's words.

However, Megan said that Darryl was an amazing individual as if he knew everything.

How could this happen?

Florian added, "Abbess Mother Serendipity, Darryl is the black sheep of the Darby family, he is a monster! He tarnished my brother's bride on their wedding night! How wicked is that?"

He was trying to impress Abbess Mother Serendipity and he lost control of his mouth.

Old Master Darby coughed and glared at Florian, gesturing him to stop as one must not air their dirty linen in public! How could he tell outsiders about a member of their family tarnishing his brother's wife?

How could the Darby family sustain their reputation after this?

"What?"

Chapter 300

Abbess Mother Serendipity's expression changed drastically upon hearing Florian's words. Tarnishing a brother's wife was a huge condemnation in their society!

The Emei disciples around her furrowed their brows in disapproval.

Slam!

Abbess Mother Serendipity's face turned cold as she slammed the table and said angrily, "I didn't expect Darryl Darby to be such a shameless man. I will make him pay if I meet that hooligan one day for the Darby family's sake."

She looked gentle and humble but she could never accept a transgression like this!

....

The next day.

Donghai City was still immersed in a joyous holiday mood although the Mid-Autumn Festival was over.

It was a sunny day. The streets near Hexad School were lively and bustling with people.

The students were walking to the academic

buildings respectively as classes were going to start soon.

Katherine Keith walked out of the teacher's office with a frown.

She noticed that she dropped two Levels after waking up in the morning.

She had a total of six Level drops since two days ago.

She downgraded from a Level One Martial Marquis into a Level Four Master.

Even some of her students were stronger than her.

How could this happen?

Katherine thought of Darryl in her frustration.

He mentioned that she would drop two levels every single day until she became an ordinary person. Should she trust him?

To be honest, Katherine already started to believe his words that there was something off about the medicine!

She should have listened to him and refuse to take the medicine but there was no use crying over spilled milk.

However...

Darryl also mentioned that he had ways to solve her

downgrading issue!

Katherine had a glimmer of hope when she thought about that. She then trotted toward the academic building in her heels.

She was stunned when she reached the classroom, disappointment was written all over her face.

The class was crowded but Darryl was not there. Dax, however, was present.

"Good morning, miss!"

The students greeted Katherine while sitting straight. She earned their fear after a few days of interaction.

Katherine nodded in acknowledgment and asked, " Dax, why is Darryl absent?"

Dax shrugged and shook his head, "I don't know."

He did not contact Darryl because he was in the hospital for the past few days.

Miles stood up suddenly and said with a chuckle, " Miss, he must be grounded at home!"

He just had to get himself involved whenever people talk about Darryl.

Declan also stood up and asked, "Miles, how do you know?"

The duo's interaction was entertaining the whole class.

Miles chuckled, "Do you really have to ask? He made a huge donation using his wife's money, all for his own image. What else could he be doing?"

He then squat down and acted, "He might be busy doing laundry at home."

Hahahaha!

Laughter erupted in the class.

Dax could not suppress his anger anymore. He stood up abruptly and glared at Miles, "Hey, * sshole. Do you want to fight? Just say it."

He could not bear to listen to his friend getting mocked when he was absent from class.

Also, Miles was a d*ck. He deserved a lesson.

A hint of panic flashed past Miles's face but he continued, "I didn't say anything wrong. I'm just humoring the class by teasing Darryl, is there a problem with that?"

Dax beat up Kent Hough from the next class on the first day of school.

His violent tendencies were not a joke. Miles could not afford to offend him.

Miles sat down after that, he dared not talk any further, his fear clearly visible on his face.

Katherine sighed. 'Is that it? Is Darryl really doing housework as punishment because he made a donation of 20 million using his wife's money?'

Chapter 301

Katherine was distracted throughout the class as she kept thinking that she would drop another two Levels the next day into a Level Two Master if she did not look for Darryl immediately.

She was extremely frustrated.

She returned to her office as soon as the class was over to make a desperate call to Darryl.

No one picked up.

...

Donghai City First Hospital.

Darryl kept pacing outside the operation room because he just could not stand still. Worry was written all over his face and his bloodshot eyes were red.

Shelly Sullivan performed the operation herself after Lily was sent to the hospital.

They had not come out of the operation room since the surgery started at 11.00 pm the night before.

Despite the fact that he was overwhelmed with anxiety and rage, Darryl still prayed for Lily as he

waited for more than 10 hours.

'We finally accepted each other after three years, you have to be fine.'

The lights of the surgery sign were off and Shelly walked out with exhaustion.

Darryl approached her hurriedly and asked, "How was it?"

Shelly gave him a light assuring smile and said gently, "Darryl, your wife is past the critical stage. However, the wound is indeed a close one, it was only about half an inch away from the heart. She is stable now."

Phew...

Darryl heaved a long sigh of relief and clutched Shelly's hands because he could not contain his happiness, "Shelly, thank you, thank you so much! I mean it..."

Shelly's delicate face blushed as a wave of emotions rippled within her when Darryl held her hands tightly.

"It's...it's nothing."

Failing to free her hands, she lowered her head as she was afraid to look into Darryl's eyes. She bit her lip as she continued softly, "Saving people's lives is

my duty as a doctor."

Darryl let go of Shelly's hand when he noticed her blush and replied with a smile, "I'm still grateful to you, no matter what you say."

He could not help but eye her.

He noticed that she looked exceptionally charming when she was blushing.

Shelly was extremely anxious and her palms were sweaty for some reason. She was never this nervous even before performing surgeries.

"I'll head back to my office," said Shelly softly before leaving hurriedly.

Darryl entered the ward eagerly.

Lily was on a drip on a hospital bed in the ward, her face pale as paper. Her eyes were tightly shut and her lashes fluttered lightly. It was heartbreaking to see her like that.

Darryl felt a pang of indescribable guilt as he stared at her.

At least she was past the critical stage. Darryl calmed himself slowly before checking his phone and noticed a few missed calls.

Three of them were from Dax and the recent two were from Katherine.

'Why did Katherine call me? Is it about the Spirit Petrification Elixir? She must be losing Levels.'

"Honey?"

A weak voice sounded.

Darryl's heart leaped when he saw Lily who regained consciousness looking at him with twinkling eyes.

He sprinted over to hold her hand. "What were you thinking? Why did you take the stab meant for me?"

Lily smiled and replied softly, "You're my husband, you're going to stay with me for my whole life and I don't want anything to happen to you."

Darryl jolted and became teary-eyed.

"Honey, don't cry. You don't look good when you cry." Lily forced a smile and said, "I'm sorry for causing you pain all these years."

Darryl gave her an assuring smile before taking her into his arms.

Creak.

The door of the ward was forced open suddenly and a few people rushed in. Samantha being one of them.

Chapter 302

A few rich ladies followed behind Samantha into the ward.

One of them had a fox fur coat on with a necklace and many rings.

Darryl was amused.

'Haha, she's wearing fox fur right after the Mid-Autumn Festival. She does look loaded with it but isn't it hot and stuffy?'

Samantha trotted over and asked in a worried tone, "Lilybud, how are you feeling?"

She spent the whole night playing mahjong and she was only told about her daughter this morning.

The ladies who came with her were clearly her mahjong buddies.

Lily shook her head and answered weakly, "Mom, I'm fine. Don't worry."

Samantha heaved a sigh of relief before turning to Darryl, her anger visible in her eyes, "You piece of trash! Lilybud has always been a good person and yet this happened when she was together with you! You were right beside her but you allowed this to

happen? Are you a man? Tell me, is she hurt because of you?!"

Darryl smiled bitterly and replied, "Mother, I apologize, it is my fault. I did not take good care of her."

What happened was because of his negligence no matter how he looked at it.

Samantha became even more furious and yelled while pointing to Darryl's nose, "Do not call me mother! You don't deserve Lily! You're a jinx that always brings bad luck to everyone around you. I don't care what happened and you don't need to explain, I want you to get a divorce right after Lily gets discharged."

Lily could no longer stay out of it. She got nervous and voiced, "Mom, stop it. It isn't his fault..."

She eyed Darryl as she talked so that he would leave the room to avoid her mother.

Darryl got the hint and said, "I'll go and get some fruits."

He left the room as quickly as possible.

Lily asked angrily right after Darryl left, "Mom, were you playing mahjong again? What did you promise me?"

Lily recognized the ladies behind her mother as her

mahjong buddies.

She remembered the lady in the fox fur the most, her name was Sophie Thompson. Her husband was loaded and owned a seafood business.

Samantha sighed, "My dear, I didn't play mahjong as I promised. I was just having some tea and a chitchat session with these ladies."

Sophie sneered and said, "Samantha, stop lying to your daughter! Having tea? We clearly played mahjong."

"Ssh!" Samantha glared at her.

Sophie continued with a smile, "I played mahjong with your mother for the whole night, she still owes me two million bucks or I wouldn't have followed her to the hospital."

Samantha could not utter a word, her face flushed.

Lily's pale face was flushed with anger as she stared at her mother, "Mom, we are running out of money. Why are you still playing with big bets?"

Samantha lowered her head and said softly, " Lilybud, don't be mad. It's just two million bucks, it' s not like we can't afford that."

Indeed, they could not!

Lily was so angry that she could feel a digging pain

in her chest, she replied, "Mom, did you forget that I already gave all our money to Granny in exchange for Lyndon's stocks? How can we get two million bucks?"

They did not even have 20,000, let alone two million!

Samantha was stunned.

How could she forget that?

Sophie tutted, "Ah, that's enough, stop acting broke, both of you! Get me my two million bucks or I will stop being nice."

Samantha panicked but forced a smile, "Sophie, can I owe you the money first? Give me a few days, I promise that I'll pay it back."

Samantha believed that Lily could think of ways to get money even if they used up their money for stocks because her daughter was smart.

Sophie shook her head, "Samantha, that's easy to say. How can you put mahjong wins into debt? You were the one who asked us to play mahjong with you last night, are you acting shamelessly now? The money has to be ready today."

People would usually not put mahjong wins into debt. After all, there would be no point playing mahjong with a penniless man.

A hint of ridicule appeared on Sophie's face, "Just don't play if you can't afford it. Your daughter doesn't have the money? You can ask your son-in-law to pay!"

Laughter erupted in the ward when she mentioned Darryl.

Sophie patted her forehead and muttered, "I've been absent-minded lately! I almost forgot that Darryl is a live-in son-in-law. How can he have any money when he is sponging off from your family?"

Lily was unhappy but she remained quiet.

Chapter 303

Lily was extremely disappointed with her mother.

She clearly promised her that she would not play mahjong anymore.

She did not expect her to call her mahjong buddies immediately after she went out.

Her friend even went to the hospital to demand payment. How embarrassing.

"Sophie, can you kindly give me two days?" Samantha smiled and continued, "You know my son-in-law, he was married into our family and stayed with us so of course, he wouldn't have any money. Can you just give me a few days, for old times' sake?"

Samantha was filled up with pent-up anger every time someone mentioned her good-for-nothing son-in-law.

Aside from getting her daughter injured, he was of no help when she fell into debt.

Sophie sneered, it was clear that there was no room to argue. "Samatha, stop talking. Your daughter has to leave the hospital if you don't pay up today. I'm

calling my nephew, just wait."

She took out her phone and dialed a number.

"No, please!" Samantha lost her cool the moment Sophie brought up her nephew as he was involved with sects and he was rumored to be a brute.

However, Sophie already made the call. She believed that Samantha and her daughter would pay up when her nephew made an appearance.

The call was picked up soon enough.

Sophie spoke loudly, "I'm getting bullied here! Someone owed me an amount of money and refused to pay. You have to help me!"

An angry voice boomed from the other side of the call, "What? Who owed you money? Does he want to get chased out of Donghai City? I'm bringing my men over now, where are you?"

His voice was loud and imposing.

"I'm at the hospital," replied Sophie immediately.

She looked at Samantha with a pleased expression after hanging up, "He will be here very soon. Hurry and think of ways to get me my money or you're doomed."

Lily forced herself to sit on the bed and begged anxiously, "Aunt Sophie, it's just two million.

Please give us a few days, we really don't have the cash. How about three days? I'll get you the money in three days."

Sophie had been playing mahjong with Samantha for quite some time so Lily knew quite a bit about her.

She knew that she had a nephew in a sect and he had hundreds of men!

Who knew what sort of criminal records her nephew had and what would he do to them?

Sophie smiled and shook her head, "It's not that I don't believe you. Mahjong has its rules, don't you know that? Also, your mom was the one who asked us to play. She shouldn't have called us if she didn't have the money!"

There was no room for discussion.

Sigh.

Lily was at a loss for words.

Samantha's face was flushed with anxiety, "Sophie, you don't have to do this. I never said much when you owed me money previously! Why can't you give me a few days?"

She was being asked to pay her debt while her daughter was in a hospital.

How unlucky.

Sophie snickered, "Are you comparing yourself to me? I am loaded! I can just make a call and someone will send the money to me! How about you? You're acting rich although you are actually broke!"

Samantha lost it completely. She was about to beg when a series of rapid footsteps came.

"Who? Who owes my aunt money?"

An aggressive voice called out even before he entered the ward. The nurses in the hallway were terrified and hurried away.

A huge figure walked into the ward with five subordinates behind him. All of them looked ferocious.

The man in the front was Caelan Lewis, the Vice Hall Master of the Eternal Life Palace Sect. He was Sophie's nephew.

Caelan had been helping Sophie to get things settled for quite a few years now.

Caelen scanned the room with a grim expression and shouted, "Who owes my aunt money?"

The tension was spreading in the ward.

Sophie pointed at Samantha, "It's her."

A hint of menace flashed past Caelan's eyes as he glared at Samantha. He walked in her direction, " Don't you know who I am? Do you want to get chased out from Donghai City?"

Samantha was petrified, her body quivered with fear as she replied softly, "I'm just... I don't have the money now, can you give me a few days?"

She noticed the tattoos and scars covering those men. They had to be fugitives!

Lily was also nervous and she asked carefully, "Can you please give us a few days?"

Sophie reacted impatiently, "Caelan, stop wasting your time with them. Chase them out since they're not giving me my money back. They don't deserve to stay in a hospital since they're broke."

Caelan waved an arm and his men walked to Lily instantly.

Samantha panicked and tried to stop them, "You can 't do this."

Chapter 304

Lily was still recovering from her injuries. Her condition would definitely worsen if they touched her wound.

However, the men could not care less about her and proceeded to surround the hospital bed.

"What's going on in here?"

A deep voice sounded from the door at that crucial moment.

A man walked into the room.

It was Darryl.

Samantha stood up abruptly when she saw him, " This is my son-in-law, he will pay on my behalf! Look for him for the money! You can break his legs if he doesn't have it."

Caelan had no idea who was it as Darryl was facing his back. Caelan furrowed his brows and turned.

He was stunned!

'Hall Master?'

'Why is he here?'

Caelan's subordinates were also confused. They

stared at Darryl in a daze and they were unable to react for a while!

'Is the woman in the hospital bed the Hall Master's wife? It can't be!'

The men finally reacted and greeted, "Greetings, Hall Master..."

Darryl waved an arm to interrupt them and turned to Caelan, "What's the matter? Why are you guys here?"

Well...

Caelan hesitated and threw Sophie a glance before he shook his head as cold sweat formed on his forehead, "Nothing, Hall Master. We are just passing by, nothing's going on."

Caelan was not a fool. Of course, he would not tell Darryl that he was there to demand payment from his mother-in-law!

Darryl furrowed his brows and asked Lily softly, " Honey, what's going on?"

There was no way that Caelan and his men were there without a reason.

Lily bit her lip anxiously and lowered her head in embarrassment before she admitted, "Honey, they' re here to demand a payment."

She told Darryl everything.

Demand a payment?

Darryl was stunned and he threw Caelan a glance.

'Oh sh*t...'

Caelan was bewildered. 'How can I demand money from the Hall Master?! That will be like digging my own grave!'

Darryl sighed. Samantha was really something for playing mahjong with huge bets although her family was broke. She lost two million bucks in one night! 'What kind of family is that?'

Darryl thought to himself before giving Caelan a reluctant gaze. "Fine, give me the bank account number. I'll pay for her."

Two million was not a huge amount for him anyway.

Although Samantha sometimes goes overboard, she was still his mother-in-law.

He was obliged to pay her debt.

"Exactly, he'll pay for me!" Samantha pointed at Darryl as if he was her straw to clutch at and said, " He's my son-in-law. Take the money from him and don't bug me after this!"

"Your account number?" Darryl turned to Caelan.

Thump!

Caelan got down to his knees suddenly without hesitation and stuttered with dread, "Hall Master, there's no way that I'm going to take your money. You don't need to return the money, there's no need ..."

His position as the Vice Hall Master was given by Darryl himself.

He would not be where he was without him. Therefore, he would never take his money!

What?!

It was complete silence in the ward.

Sophie and the others were shocked! They fell into a daze and they could not speak!

'What is happening? Why is Caelan calling the live-in son-in-law Hall Master? Why is he afraid of him? '

Lily who was on the hospital bed stared at Darryl intensely, her mind filled with shock and emotions!

'Do I know anything about this man at all?'

'He seems omnipotent...'

Chapter 305

"Hurry up, I have to pay for my mother-in-law's debt." Darryl shook his head.

He always adhered to his principles.

He had to pay the debt even if Caelan was his subordinate because those were two different things.

"Hall Master, stop putting me in a difficult position here. How am I supposed to take your money?" asked Caelan in anguish.

"Why not?" interrupted Sophie as she took a step forward and said, "I won the two million! Caelan, have you mistaken him for someone else? He is just a live-in son-in-law! Why are you afraid of him?"

"Aunt, stop talking! Please!" Caelan thumped his chest as he was on the verge of losing his sanity. He then knocked his head on the floor, "Darryl, my aunt does not know the rules, I apologize on her behalf, I'm sorry..."

He kept knocking his head on the floor as he apologized, his forehead was starting to bleed.

"Fine, get up." Darryl waved his hand in dismissal.

Sophie finally shut her mouth and forced a smile, " Samantha, well... I have something else to do, I should leave."

Sophie and the ladies then scurried away hurriedly.

Samantha stared at Darryl with astonishment. 'How did the piece of trash know those people? Did he get to know some mafia boss when he was involved with stealing? Why was Sophie's nephew terrified of him?'

Darryl walked to the bed and comforted Lily softly, "It's alright, everything's fine now."

He kissed her forehead before turning to Caelan, " Follow me." He then walked out of the room.

Caelan dared not to take his own sweet time. He followed Darryl immediately and his subordinates tagged along.

Darryl said in a serious tone when all of them were in the hallway, "Caelan, I have something to ask. Please find out everything about the Dixon family."

The Dixon family?

Caelan was confused for a moment he thought of something and exclaimed, "Hall Master, are you talking about the Dixon family from Yunzhou City? They are an extremely powerful family in the city."

Darryl sneered with a hint of menace in his eyes. "I don't care how powerful they are. I am going to make the whole Dixon family disappear."

'They injured my wife, I have to take revenge!'

Sensing the murderous aura from Darryl, Caelan quivered and replied hurriedly, "I understood."

Darryl nodded in acknowledgment. "By the way, tell everyone to assemble at Donghai International Hotel tonight. We will discuss how best to destroy the Dixons."

....

8.00 pm, Donghai International Hotel.

The hotel had a great environment as it was located at Donghai City's coast. It was one of the best hotels in Donghai City, right after Oriental Pearl.

Darryl reserved the entire first floor of the hotel for the meeting.

The 1000 square feet hall was fully seated with almost 200 disciples of the Eternal Life Palace Sect.

Darryl was seated on the main seat at the biggest table with Caelan right beside him being the Vice Hall Master. Their table was loaded with glasses of beer.

"Caelan, did you manage to find anything about the

Dixon family?" asked Darryl.

"Hall Master, I've checked about them. The head of the Dixon family is Timothy Dixon, he has a son named Donoghue Dixon. Besides that, Timothy Dixon also took in four stepsons and named them after natural phenomena, Zephyr Dixon, Nimbus Dixon, Levin Dixon, and Volt Dixon.

Pfft.

Volt Dixon?

Darryl almost spat out the tea he just sipped.

'Haha, he is pretty creative with their names.'

Even Caelan could not suppress his laughter. He then regained his composure soon enough, "Hall Master, these four are not to be trifled with, they are Timothy Dixon's strongest and most capable men. I heard that these four are Level Five Masters."

Level Five Masters?

Darryl furrowed his brow. 'Level Five Masters? It will not easy to take them down.'

Caelan continued, "Aside from the four stepsons, the Dixons have at least 200 men too."

Darryl nodded, "I want the whole Dixon family to disappear, what do you say?"

Caelan scratched his head and replied in a serious

tone, "My men did an analysis, all our available men are present here and we have 198 men in total so we are on the losing side in terms of numbers and we don't have much chance of winning if we confront them head-on. It will be a tough win even if we win, it wouldn't be worth it."

Caelan paused for a moment and continued, "Then, I thought of a plan."

"What is it?" asked Darryl.

Caelan smiled and continued, "I found out something about Timothy Dixon's stepsons. Zephyr and Levin Dixon like drinking and Volt Dixon likes gambling. I already made arrangements according to their interests to take them down!"

Caelan said confidently, "The other Dixons will not be much of a problem as long as we get a hold on these four."

"Fantastic idea!" Darryl nodded and patted Caelan's shoulder, "I'll let you handle this. By the way, Timothy Dixon's stepsons must be captured alive. As for the other Dixons, get rid of every single one of them."

Those four were Level Five Masters.

They would be of great use, killing them would be a waste of resources.

Darryl would rather keep them as his own men.

Caelan nodded with eagerness, "No worries, Hall Master. I assure you that I will complete this mission."

Darryl nodded and raised a glass, he laughed and said, "Great, that's great! Cheers, my brothers. I wish all of you victory!"

"Victory is ours!"

All the men stood up and raised their glasses at once, their voices boomed and they finished the glass in one shot!

They drank and feasted before the meeting reached its end.

Chapter 306

Darryl drank a substantial amount ended up tipsy. He stood up to go to the washroom.

One of his men held him for support and asked, " Hall Master, how about I take you there?"

"It's fine." Darryl waved in dismissal.

He was indeed getting drunk. Actually, he could just utilize his Internal Energy to force the alcohol out of his system as a cultivator. However, it was a joyous reunion, and everyone intended to get drunk.

Darryl wobbled downstairs, the washroom was on the ground floor.

He noticed a crowd near him when he reached the ground floor. There were a dozen young adults and they seemed like students from a university nearby.

Darryl was turning into a corner when a youngster who was occupied with his phone knocked into him.

Thud!

His phone almost fell to the ground.

Darryl was speechless.

It was absurd that he could crash into him when

there was so much space in the lobby.

"Are you blind?"

The youngster was triggered, "Watch where you're going!" He was covered with branded clothing, he was clearly rich.

Darryl was confused. 'F*ck, why was he acting arrogantly when he was the one who knocked into me?'

The youngster was a student of the university nearby called Lester Rock. He was from a rich family.

Darryl muttered to himself as he eyed Lester. He was clearly from a loaded family as all his apparel was branded.

"What are you staring at? Apologize." Lester's tone was cold and indifferent.

Darryl looked at him with a smile, "Why should I apologize? You knocked into me because you were looking at your phone."

'Is he really a university student? Why doesn't he have any manners?'

Lester was furious. "Wow, are you not admitting your mistake? Just apologize when I ask you to! Stop giving me bullsh*t!"

A few of Lester's friends approached them and gave

Darryl an unfriendly look.

"Just apologize and this will be over. Why are you wasting your energy arguing?'

"Don't you know who he is? He's the famous Young Master Lester in our university. How dare you provoke him?"

Young Master Lester?

Darryl almost could not suppress his laughter.

There were more than enough families in Donghai City. Darryl wondered whose family was he from, he crowned himself as a young master!

It was Darryl's first time hearing about Young Master Lester.

He must be from a small family.

Darryl had no intention to argue with them. He took a deep breath and said in a neutral tone, "I don't want to waste my energy with you, and I'm not going to apologize. Also, watch your words."

What?

'Is he threatening me?'

Lester furrowed his brows as he noticed the scent of alcohol from Darryl and he laughed dryly, "You must not know your position because you are

drunk! Let me sober you up!"

A hint of menace flashed on Lester's face and he threw his fist toward Darryl's face.

Darryl was just another insignificant ordinary person in his eyes.

He thought that Darryl deserved a beating for offending him.

Darryl sniggered and stood still.

He could tell from the start that this rich young man was just a dandy. He had no strength at all as he was not a cultivator.

His punch was weak and Darryl did not even dodge.

"Lester, stop at once!"

A clear and pleasant voice shouted with a hint of panic.

A charming figure walked over in a hurry. It was Dora Simpson.

Darryl did not expect to see her there. They rarely contacted each other after they parted ways near the villa area.

Dora looked eye-catching that day dressed in a different style.

She looked cute with a subtle hint of attraction in

her mini skirt.

Lester halted and turned to Dora with a smile. “ Dora, it’s fine. I’m teaching this fool a lesson then I’ ll be right over.”

So Lester was friends with Dora.

He had been chasing after Dora in their three years of class together but she was not interested in him.

Lester invited his class for a meal as it was the last holiday of the Mid-Autumn Festival and he wanted to grab this opportunity to confess to Dora.

Dora walked over hurriedly, “Lester, his name is Darryl, he’s a friend of mine. Stop pestering him.”

“I’m not pestering him...” Lester tried to explain.

“You’re not? So why are so many of you are closing in on him?!” Dora stomped her foot in anger.

Chapter 307

"Lester, please stop pestering him. Can you do it for me?" Dora pushed Darryl behind her.

She was well aware that Lester's family was involved with the mafia. She heard that Lester's father had dozens of fighters. Darryl would suffer terrible consequences if he offended Lester.

Although Darryl was a businessman and Jade, the manager from Windon Group called him daddy at the villa previously, he could not afford to offend the mafia.

Lester sighed and squinted, "I'm going to let you off since Dora asked me to. Be careful the next time I see you."

His male friends walked near Darryl and spat.

"You're lucky."

"You're lucky that Young Master Lester is in a good mood today or you'd be f*cked."

Darryl smiled without saying a word as he thought, ' All of you would be on the way to the hospital right now if not for Dora. There are more than a hundred disciples from the Eternal Life Palace Sect drinking

upstairs, I wonder what will happen if Lester Rock started a fight with me and those disciples rushed downstairs?'

Dora approached him and asked with a smile, " Darryl, what are you doing here?"

It was amazing that she would meet him by coincidence whenever she left school.

Darryl replied with a smile, "To eat, of course. Thank you for helping me to get out of that situation."

To be honest, he would have already fought with those guys if Dora did not make an appearance.

Dora shrugged, "It's fine, I know you and I can't just watch you getting beaten up by them. I should go now, I'm having dinner with my friends."

She turned and left.

Darryl walked to the washroom and returned to the first floor after using the toilet.

Caelan and the other disciples of the Hall had quite a few drinks and all of them were tipsy.

Darryl returned to his seat and talked to Caelan more about the Dixon family before calling for the bill.

Around two hundred disciples of the Hall followed

behind Darryl as they walked downstairs with vigor in an imposing manner.

The employees at the hotel lobby dared not a let out a fart as the swarm of men in black walked down the stairs!

Darryl who took the lead became the spotlight in an instant!

Darryl felt a huge tension as the employees fixed their gazes on him.

'Who is that guy?'

'He's so young, is he some kind of bigshot?'

Dora and her friends who were seated in a private room near the lobby shifted their gazes to the staircase!

'Isn't that... Darryl?'

Dora could feel her legs go limp!

Her friends placed their cutlery down and held their breath.

Cold sweat formed on Lester's forehead!

'Sh*t, he's in a mafia.'

'He has around 200 men? I...'

Lester quivered as the fear after the event crept up

on him, he could not even hold his cutlery well.

Gulp...

His male friends gulped silently and they were thankful that they did not start a fight with him just now.

They would be in the hospital already if they did! All of them lowered their heads, afraid to meet Darryl's gaze.

Darryl paid the bill and walked to the hotel lobby entrance. He turned to Caelan and said, "Alright, the Dixon family's matter is all yours. I will be waiting for good news from you."

Caelan nodded affirmatively, "No worries, Hall Master. I will not disappoint you."

Darryl nodded in silent acknowledgment and turned to leave.

Caelan looked at Darryl's leaving figure and called, " Take care, Hall Master!"

"Take care, Hall Master!"

The men standing behind Caelan greeted all at once, their voices boomed into the sky.

Gasp.

Lester and the others inhaled sharply as they

witnessed the scene, they were at a loss for words!

The next morning.

Darryl went to school early.

He returned to the hospital to take care of Lily after handing the matters about the Dixon family to Caelan last night. He had a chat with Lily and only slept after midnight.

Nonetheless, he was energetic when he woke up.

It was all thanks to him practicing Pure Energy Scripture.

His donation of 20 million was not for nothing. He could sense that his Internal Energy was three times stronger after finishing the cultivation of the scripture! He could now be invincible even without using his skill of Ascension of the Nine Dragons!

He reached school and his classroom was noisy as the class had yet to start. He noticed Dax at his seat the moment he stepped into the classroom.

'Haha, I guess he recovered from his injuries!'

Darryl was delighted and quickly walked to him.

Dax punched Darryl's shoulder lightly and asked with a grin, "Darryl, where the hell were you yesterday? Why didn't you pick up my calls?"

It had been almost a week since the last time they

met!

Darryl grinned too, "Nah, it's nothing. I slept in so I didn't come to class."

He decided not to tell Dax about what happened to Lily.

Chapter 308

Dax would definitely look for the Dixon family for revenge if he knew.

He would be at a disadvantage as the Dixon family was way too powerful. Darryl would rather hand everything to Caelan.

Dax grinned, "I see, you must have been getting all lovey-dovey with Lily at home. By the way, our teacher was looking for you yesterday."

'Katherine?'

Darryl was stunned before he remembered the few missed calls from her, he forgot to return her calls. Her strength must be dropping substantially these few days.

Circe Newman who was seated in front turned suddenly and threw him a note.

F*ck!

Dax grabbed onto Darryl's arm as if he got a stroke!

'What's happening? Why is the beauty sending me a note?'

Darryl fell into a daze as Dax leaned into him

excitedly and asked with surprise, "Wow, Darryl, you've gotten close to the campus belle within these few days?"

Darryl chuckled, "Yeah."

He unfolded the note and it was written, 'Are you free tonight? I'll buy you dinner.'

'Haha, She is pretty persistent.'

He was pulled away by Katherine and went to the library to cultivate the last time she treated him to a meal.

He totally forgot about that and he did not expect Circe to remember.

Dax peeked at the note and got even more surprised, "Sh*t, is this for real?"

Circe was the cold campus belle of the entire Hexad School.

She always had an icy-cold attitude and she never gave any guys a second glance, not even the outstanding ones.

'Why is she asking Darryl out for dinner?'

Noticing the surprise on Dax's face, Darryl smiled and said, "Fine, stop looking at me like that. You can come with me."

How could he forget his friend to a meal with a

beauty?

Dax was ecstatic.

Darryl scribbled an 'I have time later' on the note and passed it back.

An elegant figure walked into the classroom right after Darryl passed the note. She had a graceful and serene aura with shoulder-length hair. It was their elixir instructor, Sunny Scott.

Wow.

The boys in the classroom stared at Sunny without blinking as she entered.

There were two attractive teachers in Class Sixteen, their class teacher Katherine Keith and Sunny Scott.

Katherine was strict despite her pretty appearance.

Sunny was gentler in comparison.

Sunny smiled and spoke, "Class, I have explained about the production of elixirs two days ago but the theory is very different from practice so we will do something practical today. We will be going to the elixir producing room for today's class."

The class clamored.

None of them had anything to do with elixirs before this, elixir production was a complete mystery in

their minds!

The elixir producing room of the Hexad School had an ancient atmosphere with many precious herbs stored inside.

The class queued in front of the elixir boiling pot.

Sunny was the first in line and she instructed softly, "Do not simply touch the apparatus in the room. Today, I will demonstrate how to produce a Blood Clotting pill. Blood Clotting pills are very effective to treat internal injuries, it is a type of healing medicine."

She took a few ingredients and heated the boiling pot to produce the pills.

The students were beaming with excitement as it was their first time witnessing pill production. They watched intensely without blinking as they were afraid to miss anything.

Hmm?

Darryl could not help but frown suddenly.

He was aware that Blood Clotting pills were extremely common pills and producing them would not require complicated steps.

However, Sunny missed an ingredient, the Ice Coagulating Herb.

The herb was cooling in nature and it would function to adjust the heat in the pill production process.

The boiling pot might burst without it!

Darryl had to voice out, "Miss Scott, wait."

However, it was too late as Sunny already closed off the lid and the flames beneath it were already burning.

Sunny looked at Darryl in curiosity and asked in a gentle and pleasant voice, "Yes? Do you have any questions?"

The students fixed their unfriendly gazes on Darryl.

It was a rare occasion that their instructor was demonstrating pill production. What was he going to do again at that time?

Darryl smiled at Sunny, "Miss Scott, you should put out the fire."

Producing a Blood Clotting Pill would only take three minutes.

Half a minute already passed by then.

The pot would burst in just another two minutes. The students would be injured if the flame was not put out.

Sunny jolted and smiled, "Why should I do that?"

There were many forbidden rules in the process of pill producing since ancient times and putting out fires in the middle of the process was one of them as it would cause damage to the burning pot.

Sunny remembered that she told the class about that before. 'He must've been dreaming in class.'

She was a little displeased.

Chapter 309

"Darryl, didn't you listen to me in class?" Sunny explained, "You should not put out the fire while producing a pill, I've repeated this many times."

"Miss, you missed an ingredient. The boiling pot has an extremely high temperature, it's dangerous." Darryl frowned as he looked at his watch.

The boiling pot would burst in just two minutes!

However, Sunny glared at Darryl with anger and said, "I've been in this field for a long time and I've mastered dozens of elixirs. Although this is my first time producing a Blood Clotting Pill, it is a beginner level pill and it is fairly easy to make, no accidents would happen. You should stop doubting your instructor."

She was usually gentle even when she was teaching in class. However, she got inevitably offended as she was doubted by a student in class when she was the instructor.

"Darryl, can you please shut up and stop distracting her?" asked Daisy Palmer impatiently. The whole class became infuriated and everyone started

pointing fingers at Darryl.

It was a known fact that there were far too few cultivators who knew about pill producing despite the vast number of cultivators! It was a rare opportunity for those students to witness the process of producing pills by their instructor!

Miles Morrison stood up abruptly, "Darryl, what are trying to do here? Are you seeking attention?"

Declan Noel who was the class monitor of Class Sixteen furrowed his brow and took few steps forward, "Darryl, you can leave if you're not willing to listen in class, don't disrupt the class. Why are you causing trouble when Miss Scott is demonstrating for everyone? You can leave the class early if you don't like the subject."

The other students nodded in agreement and a few girls scowled at Darryl with annoyance.

Only Dax furrowed his brow silently.

He knew that Darryl was not one of those who liked to enjoy the limelight. There must be a reason why he wanted to put out the fire!

'Perhaps there is really something wrong with Miss Scott's production?'

Darryl was exasperated.

'These people are really something. You guys are

accusing me that I'm stirring a problem when I'm just giving a kind reminder?"

Dax whispered, "Darryl, what's wrong?"

Darryl was about to reply when he saw the bronze boiling pot getting red from the heating and emitting heat in the air.

Sunny was unaware of the danger, she continued teaching while standing right in front of the boiling pot.

Darryl's expression changed drastically. He threw himself at Sunny without a word and forced her into his arms as they fell to the floor. He knew that she would not listen if he asked her to run so he had to protect her!

"Darryl, what...what are you doing?"

Sunny who was pressed under Darryl became nervous as she was overwhelmed with shyness, her cheeks flushing from embarrassment.

Everyone was startled and some of the male students could no longer suppress their annoyance.

"Darryl, what are you doing?"

"How dare you take advantage of our teacher?!"

Many of the female students were repulsed by Darryl's action. 'What a brazen pervert! He did that

to get his hands on Miss Scott during class!'

Darryl was humored and annoyed at the same time when Sunny tried to struggle free. He said, "Miss Scott, please stop moving!"

He shouted to the others, "Run! The boiling pot's going to burst!"

'What the f*ck, these idiots.'

'I'm just trying to save her and yet you're accusing me of being filthy-minded.'

What?

The boiling pot was going to burst?

The crowd went silent for a moment before bursting into laughter.

Declan sneered, "Darryl, stop making excuses. Get up and let Miss Scott go."

Daphne Palmer could not hide the disdain on her face as she called out, "Darryl, you're shameless for doing such a despicable thing to our teacher! Just wait, I'm calling the school authorities over."

She turned to walk out of the room.

Boom!

It was that moment when the temperature in the boiling pot reached its peak and the pot burst. The

entire elixir producing room quaked from the explosion!

The crowd was frightened and scattered to the sides in panic, some of the girls were in tears.

Dax reacted in time by grabbing both Daisy and Daphne and left the room hurriedly.

Circe who was initially standing behind the crowd already walked to the room's door when she heard Darryl's warning about the burning pot. She trusted him for some reason.

Those students aside, everyone from the class fell to the ground from the quaking!

The explosion had a huge impact and everyone was injured, many of them had abrasions from the debris of the exploding boiling pot.

The students were covered in ashes and they cried in pain.

Most of the herbs in the elixir producing room were burned to dust.

Chapter 310

Sunny was overwhelmed with shock as she trembled!

'How...how did he know that the boiling pot was going to burst?'

The students were also shocked and they turned to look at Darryl with disbelief!

'How...how is that possible?! The pot really exploded?'

'How did he know?'

'Did he just predict the future?'

'Did he do something to the pot?!'

Darryl ignored the crowd's gaze and took a sharp intake of breath. He could feel a burning sensation on his back.

The debris from the boiling pot scraped Darryl's back during the explosion and huge flames spread to him, his shirt was burned.

Sunny was well protected and she was perfectly fine.

Realizing that Darryl was still pressing on her to protect her, she bit her lip and asked softly, "

Darryl, can you...please get up?"

Oh.

Darryl only remembered and stood up embarrassedly.

He smiled at Sunny when he noticed her embarrassed expression. 'I didn't expect Miss Scott to be this charming when she's embarrassed.'

Sunny stood up hastily and looked around the room with her cheeks flushed. She asked nervously, "Is everyone okay?"

She noticed that many students were injured.

The entire elixir producing room was a mess.

Many of her students sustained injuries from the explosion, especially those male students near the boiling pot, they had more serious injuries. However, she was relieved that no one died.

Sunny panicked. "Hurry, to the school infirmary."

The students regained their composure when they heard their teacher's words. The heavily injured male students supported each other and walked in the infirmary's direction.

"Darryl!"

Dax trotted to Darryl and looked at the blood

behind him and got worried, "Darryl, are you gonna die? Do you need to go to the school infirmary?"

Then, he gave Darryl a huge thumbs up.

It was remarkable that he knew that the boiling pot was going to burst, even Dax himself was shocked. It was fortunate that Dax reacted on time and did not get hurt, he even saved both his cousin sisters.

"I won't die!" Darryl chuckled. The pain receded as it was just minor abrasions.

"That'll do. I'll check on my cousins first, they got a huge shock," said Dax before scurrying away, leaving only Darryl and Sunny in the elixir producing room.

"Darryl?" Sunny could not suppress her curiosity anymore and ask, "How did you know that the boiling pot was going to burst?"

She was still unsure of the reason why the explosion happened. Did she miss a step while producing the Blood Clotting Pill?

It was her first time producing Blood Clotting Pills, after all. She thought that the pill was a beginner level and its production would be fairly easy.

Darryl answered with a smile, "Miss Scott, you missed out on an ingredient, the Ice Coagulating Herb which functions to adjust the heat."

Darryl continued in a serious tone, "The herb is a mandatory ingredient in producing Blood Clotting Pills, or there will be danger of the boiling pot bursting due to extremely high heat."

Sunny understood and nodded, "I see."

She should never produce pills without full confidence anymore in the future.

It was fortunate that no one had fatal injuries from the explosion. Sunny turned to Darryl with curiosity, "Darryl, do you know alchemy too?"

She did not even know that Ice Coagulating Herb was a necessary ingredient in producing Blood Clotting Pills.

Yet, Darryl saw through everything.

Darryl thought a while and gave a humble smile, "I do know a little as I've always been interested in elixirs. I've had practice on three of four of them."

Sunny was impressed, "Elixir producing was a prosperous field in ancient times but many recipes failed to be passed down ever since. Even an elixir producing instructor from the Hexad School like me only produced dozens of pills, you are quite good at this for knowing how to produce four as you're only a student."

Darryl only smiled.

His instructor misunderstood him. He meant he mastered four recipes instead of just knowing how to produce four types of elixirs.

There were thousands of elixirs in the Infinite Elixir Manual.

Darryl had been reading it whenever he had the time and he studied the manual thoroughly.

It could be said that he could produce thousands of elixir and pills as long as he had the right ingredients!

Chapter 311

Isabella continued, "Actually it was not too difficult to produce an elixir. The key is to master the proportion of raw materials and heat management, then production will be a success. However, many of the elixir production prescriptions were lost after generations."

"For example, the Godly pill, Spirit Petrification Elixir, these fantastically unique prescriptions were all lost after several generations. No one knows about them now."

Isabella's beautiful face looked sad while saying that.

"Master Sunny is really cute. Ha-ha" thought Darryl.

Isabella felt that Godly pill and Spirit Petrification Elixir were fantastically unique prescriptions. Darryl was so excited when he heard Sunny's words.

To be honest, the Infinite Elixir Manual had recorded that the Godly pill and Spirit Petrification Elixir were just ordinary elixirs. Many other elixirs were more valuable than the Spirit Petrification Elixir. Besides, production of the Spirit Petrification

Elixir only required seven to eight types of ingredients, hence the process was not too difficult.

'The Infinite Elixir Manual mentions a special elixir that could only be generated by Martial Saints. It was the Heaven Wonder Elixir. It required over fifty types of raw material to brew it. Only that sort of recipe could be classified as complicated to produce. ' Darryl thought, but he did not reply.

Isabella then added, "Darryl, since you are interested in elixirs, perhaps you can join me in attending the Elixir Competition to be held this Sunday at Donghai City."

Elixir Competition?

Darryl was surprised, "There is a competition in producing elixirs?" There were just so many things that could happen in the world.

Isabella nodded, smiled, and replied, "The cultivators have the martial arts competition; of course, there would be elixir conventions. The Six Sects would organize the elixir competition once every three years."

Isabella added, "You need to understand that an Elixir Master is really rare among the cultivators. This is because many prescriptions were lost. Most Elixir Masters are reluctant to train to be an Elixir Master as the future is uncertain. This has led to the

reduced number of Elixir Masters around."

Darryl nodded. Isabella was right.

Most people that Darryl knew, no matter whether they were cultivators, or they were from rich and wealthy families, none of them had the knowledge of producing elixir.

Ever since Darryl had mastered the skill of producing elixirs, everyone treated him as their savior.

For example, Megan, the arrogant Goddess, would have to greet him as a brother so that she could obtain a Godly pill.

Or Abby, the famous and powerful person from Donghai City, had been consistently persuading Darryl to train her with the skill of producing elixirs.

Isabella added further, "The objective of the convention was to select the best Master of Elixirs among the Six Sects. During the competition, the elixir that is the rarest will be awarded the highest mark, with the brewer having the highest chance of being champion. The champion will receive a special prize, while the first and second runner up will gain the opportunity to learn a special skill from the Six Sects."

Wow! There was a prize?

Hearing that, Darryl was excited.

Even though he might not be able to be the champion, no harm in being the first and second runner up.

Isabella went on further, "I am taking part in the Elixir Competition this year. Considering I am short of an Elixir Assistant, and you are so interested in elixirs, you can join me as my Elixir Assistant."

Isabella added excitedly, "Darryl, the Elixir Competition is only held once every three years. You must appreciate the opportunity and don't miss it. You will learn a lot."

Ha-ha!

Darryl took a deep breath and smiled while nodding, "Yes, sure."

He had no intention to join the competition, but after thinking further, he felt there was no harm in joining. There would be many Elixir Masters present at the competition who probably brought along plenty of raw materials with them. Perhaps he would be able to purchase some raw materials from them. The challenge Darryl was faced was the lack of raw materials.

It was Saturday, there were no lessons at the Hexad School.

A few days ago the oven exploded at the elixir room due to mishandling by Sunny, Darryl was injured during that accident too. Although it was only minor injuries, Darryl could not make it to the dinner plan with Circe.

Lily was discharged from the hospital the day before. With Shelly's treatment, Lily was recovering well.

Darryl was sleeping soundly in bed when he heard some noises from the door, with a nice scent flowing into the room.

Puff!

The next second, he could feel a pair of warm lips kissing on his lips. Lily smiled, "Dear, time to wake up, the sun is up."

Lily was grateful she was still alive. She finally understood she needed to appreciate life. She appreciated all the time she had with Darryl.

Chapter 312

Darryl laughed when he pulled Lily into his arms.

Lily had been so sweet to him; it was so irresistible.

Lily struggled slightly and blushed, "Dear, stop it. Mother is just outside"

How awkward it would be. Darryl let go of her and got off the bed, getting dressed.

Lily grabbed his arms and said, "Dear, since today is a day off, let's go out."

"Great!" Darryl replied immediately.

He felt the reliance of his wife on him was getting stronger.

Lily was delighted. She quickly headed to get dressed. While she was choosing or her shoes, she picked up The Worship of Crystal but put it back after taking a look.

Darryl was puzzled, he laughed, "This pair of shoes look good on you. Why did you put it back?"

Lily's expression looked complicated. She said, " Dear, I will not wear it. Why don't you get me a pair of stilettos later, I wish to wear something that you

got for me."

Until then, Lily had no idea who sent her The Worship of Crystal.

As her relationship with Darryl was getting closer, she felt awkward wearing a pair of shoes that was given by others while going out with him.

If it was not because of how valuable the shoes were, she would have just thrown them away.

Darryl was stunned, he could not stop laughing, " Silly dear, The Worship of Crystal was a present from me."

Ha-ha, how cute she was, thinking that someone had sent her the shoes. The shoes were worth tens of millions of bucks. How would someone have given it as a present without informing?

Lily had a shiver and was speechless.

What?

The Worship of Crystal...a present from Darryl.

She felt so lucky and warm as she dove into Darryl's arms.

She felt guilty and apologetic, "Dear, I'm sorry. I had always misunderstood you."

That was true. When she received The Worship of

Crystal, she thought it was from Ashton. Who would have known the one that Ashton had sent was just an artificial copy of the shoes?

"Dear, is there anything you have been hiding from me?" Lily pushed Darryl away. "How could you have afforded it? A pair of The Worship of Crystal was over 30 million bucks. Earlier at Roger's Auction, The Worship of Crystal was sold at 1 billion bucks. Where did you get the money from?"

"Besides, the other day at the hospital, why Caelan appeared to be fearful of you, even though he was there to collect his debt?" Lily could not stop asking.

Darryl smiled. He should have explained all about himself to her much earlier. Darryl looked at her curious face and answered, "Actually I am Darby..."

Ring, ring, ring.

Before Darryl could mention that he was the second son of the Darby family, his cellphone rang suddenly.

Darryl took out his cellphone, it was Skyler.

Skyler used to be the Hall Master of the Grandmaster Heaven Cult. Ever since Darryl gave him the Heaven Cult Elixir as an antidote, he passed the Hall Master title on to Darryl.

Later when Darryl visited the Elysian Island, the

Cult Mistress had honored Darryl with the title of Elders Master, and hence Darryl had returned the Hall Master title to Skyler once he got back to Donghai City.

Darryl answered the call. Skyler sounded like he was in a rush, "Brother Darryl, where are you?"

"I'm at home. What happened?" Darryl replied.

"Brother Darryl, it is the birthday of the Cult Master of the Grandmaster Heaven Cult. You are now an Elders Master; you need to be there at the Elysian Island to congratulate the Cult Master. Please don't forget." Said Skyler.

Darryl laughed awkwardly as the moments he had with the Cult Master's wife was playing in his mind.

"Brother Darryl? Brother Darryl?" Skyler was calling for Darryl as he did not hear a reply from him.

"Yes, yes, I'm listening." Darryl replied, "The birthday is three days later, there's no rush."

Darryl then ended the call. The most important thing for him to do at that moment was to go out with his wife.

Chapter 313

At the pedestrian walkway of the Greenway Road.

That was the widest pedestrian walkway in Donghai City. The place was crowded with young people going out on the weekend.

Darryl was about to explain his background to Lily when he was interrupted by Skyler's phone call. Lily did not pursue further too.

Lily was holding tight onto Darryl's hands. Walking happily while holding a large cotton candy on her other hand that Darryl had bought for her.

"Dear, do you think the pair of jeans earlier looked good?" Lily asked softly.

Lily saw a pair of jeans when they passed by some shops earlier. She did not stop to check it out as she felt that she might find something even better later.

That was a typical lady shopping, always debating to buy or not to buy during the entire trip.

"It looked nice, let's buy it," Darryl replied.

Lily had always had the perfect figure. The pair of jeans would be a perfect match with The Worship of Crystal.

They reached a jewelry shop as they spoke. Lily smiled, "Dear, let's buy that later. Let's take a look at the jewelry for now."

"Sure, sure." Darryl smiled and nodded.

Once they stepped in, Lily's eyes were attracted by a sapphire necklace displayed on the pedestal.

A love-shaped sapphire pendant, surrounded by diamonds all over it. The workmanship was so fine, it looked really elegant.

The shop assistant immediately went forward to explain more about the necklace as she noticed their arrival. "How are you? This is a new arrival item; the name of the necklace is Eternal Love."

Eternal love, what a wonderful name.

Lily was really attracted to the necklace. She sighed, "What a beautiful necklace."

Just at that moment, a female voice was heard saying, "Dear, look how beautiful this Eternal Love is, get it for me."

A couple stepped in, both of them looked great. What a perfect match.

They looked at Lily and was startled, "Lily? It has been a long time."

Both of them were university mates with Lily. The

man was Lincoln Dann, while the lady was Denise Warren. Lincoln was Lily's admirer during the university days.

Unexpectedly both of them ended up together after all the years.

Lily was stunned, she smiled, "Oh hi, what a coincidence, we have not met since graduation."

Denise smiled and stepped forward in her stilettos, "Yes, what a coincidence."

She was not happy with the fact that Lincoln was an admirer of Lily's before. She was definitely annoyed at Lily.

Denise took a glance at Darryl and said, "Lily, is this your husband? I heard he is a live-in husband. I still remember you had so many admirers during the university days, pick any one of them, would be more capable than your husband now."

Darryl squeezed his brow in annoyance.

Sh*t!

He thought that being Lily's friends, they would have had a nice relationship. He did not expect such hurtful words to come out from Denise's mouth.

They looked good in their dressing but had no manners at all.

Lincoln went forward at that time too, and laughed, "Lily, I met your mother, Samantha the other day. She told me about your husband. Not only is he not working and just laying around at home, he even got arrested for stealing a cellphone. Is that true?"

Lincoln visited Lily's family during the university times, hence he had met Samantha.

The shop assistant could not stop but laugh as she looked at Darryl with disdain.

Lily was furious, she wanted to fight back, but she could not. Darryl being arrested for stealing a cellphone was true.

Lincoln gave a cold smile seeing that Lily did not respond. 'You didn't pick me when I treated you as my Goddess. Look where you ended now? With a thief, and a live-in husband?' thought Lincoln.

Darryl squeezed his brows and ignored them. He said to the shop assistant, "How much is this Eternal Love? I would like to buy it."

Since Lily liked the necklace, he planned to just purchase it and leave.

Ignoring Darryl's words, Lincoln added, "Don't sell it to him. How many necklaces of this do you have? I want all of them."

The shop assistant was in shock. She then smiled

and replied, “I’m sorry misters, there is only one. There is only one of it in the entire Donghai City. The price is very expensive.”

Expensive? How expensive?

The shop assistant smiled and said, “Dear misters, this necklace is designed by the famous designer Miss Meena. I’m not sure if you have heard about her, she is one of the top designers in the world. Eternal Love is her work. That is why it is very expensive.”

Just at that time, the shop assistant pointed at Lily and Denise’s shoes, “Miss, both of you are wearing The Worship of Crystal?”

Chapter 314

Although her voice was not too loud, everyone in the jewelry shop heard her words and started to gather around them.

That was right, both Denise and Lily were wearing The Worship of Crystal.

Everyone knew that that was the most expensive stilettos in the world. It was worth 100 million bucks! It was also limited to 99 pairs in the whole world, and both of them were wearing The Worship of Crystal?

Darryl squeezed his brow, to be honest, the pair of stilettos that Denise was wearing looked rather odd. It did not look genuine.

"Oh Lily, where did you get your Worship of Crystal?" Denise smiled coldly.

"It was a present from my husband," Lily replied.

Ha-ha!

Everyone laughed at what Lily had just said. Lincoln had already mentioned that Darryl was arrested earlier for stealing a cellphone. A thief? How would he afford to buy The Worship of Crystal for his

wife? It must be a fake!

Denise smiled coldly, "Lily, during the school days, I remember you mentioned that you will not wear any imitations for your entire life? Now you are walking around with a pair of imitation shoes?"

Lily did not want to argue. She pulled Darryl's arms and said, "Dear, the necklace is too expensive, let's go, I don't want it."

Darryl nodded and they were about to leave.

Lincoln laughed loudly, "Someone knew that the price of the necklace is very expensive, can't afford it. Ha-ha, don't come to the mall if you have no money. Disgusting. Excuse me shop assistant, how much is it? I want it! I have plenty of money!"

The shop assistant replied with a smile, "Sir, the price of the necklace is 65 million bucks."

What? What a cut-throat price!

Lincoln's mind was spinning. Although he knew that the necklace was expensive, he did not expect the price to be that high. Damn it, 65 million bucks.

Even though Lincoln had plenty of money, he could not have afforded a necklace worth 65 million bucks.

Lincoln turned his head and said, "The necklace does not look that good after all, let's find

something else."

Everyone was whispering after hearing their conversations. After all the drama, he could not afford the necklace.

Darryl smiled. It was only 65 million bucks? He thought the necklace would be around 100 million bucks when the shop assistant mentioned that the necklace was designed by Meena.

Darryl met designer Meena once. Her designs are really famous throughout the world. A necklace designed by her cost only 65 million bucks? The price was really reasonable.

Darryl smiled and asked Lily, "Dear, do you want it?"

Lily shook her head and started leaving the jewelry shop while holding Darryl's hand.

She said while she was walking, "Dear, it's too expensive, I don't want it."

Lincoln and Denise followed behind them.

Denise stepped forward on her stilettos, "Lily, since we have not seen each other for so long, we should catch up for a little longer."

Since she found joy in teasing Lily, she would not want to let Lily leave so easily. Lincoln added, "That

's true. Let's find a place for a drink. Don't worry, I will not ask your husband to foot the bill."

Lily laughed. Not letting Darryl pay for the bill? Although Darryl might not afford the necklace, he would still afford to pay for the meal.

Darryl smiled and said softly to Lily, "Dear, I need to go to the washroom."

Hearing that Darryl was leaving, Lincoln laughed, " I hope you are not going to borrow money from somewhere. Don't worry, I will not ask you to pay the bill!"

Darryl ignored him and walked straight towards the jewelry shop.

He knew that Lily really liked the Eternal Love necklace which meant he had to buy it.

Once he walked into the jewelry shop, he pointed at the necklace and said, "Please wrap it for me."

The few shop assistants looked at each other, they did not blink as they were in shock.

Is something wrong with this guy? The necklace was 65 million bucks. How could a live-in son-in-law afford it?

"Sir, did I not say it clearly just now?" The shop assistant walked forward and said impatiently. "Let

me repeat. The necklace is 65 million bucks. If you understand me, please leave and do not disturb us."

Chapter 315

Darryl did not wish to speak to the shop assistant anymore. He took out the black card issued by the Amethyst Bank and threw it at the counter. He said impatiently, "Hurry up, I am in a rush."

The few shop assistants were stunned. Not knowing what a black card was, they just burst into laughter.

One of them explained, "Sir, perhaps you didn't hear us clearly just now. The necklace's price is 65 million bucks! Not 65 thousand bucks!"

Darryl was speechless. Shi*t! It was bad luck to meet the friends of his wife, but again having terrible shop assistants!

"I would like to speak to your manager." Darryl sighed. It was impossible to explain any further to the shop assistants.

The store manager came from behind. She was a lady in her twenties, with a decent look. She took a glance at the bank card lying on the counter and was stunned.

Of course, she could recognize a black card! There might be only less than three persons in the entire Donghai City.

"How are you sir, what would you like to get?" She asked.

"This necklace, hurry up!" Darryl said.

The rest of the shop assistants went forward quickly and spoke softly to her manager, "Manager Lynn, this is a troublemaker. He is a live-in son-in-law, he was arrested for stealing a cellphone earlier. He went to jail for that. He can't afford it, just ignore him."

"Shut up!" The store manager scolded. She then took the back card and swipe it through the terminal.

Ding, ding! Payment success!

Everyone was stunned. 65 million bucks went through?

In addition to that, bank cards issued by the Amethyst Bank would display the bank balance at the end of the transaction.

A long string of numbers displayed on the computer screen! After purchasing the necklace, the bank balance was a few billion bucks?

All the shop assistants were shaking, and could barely stand up straight!

Was he just a live-in son-in-law? What had just

happened?

The store manager walked forward to Darryl, and handed back the bank card politely, "I am sorry Sir for what had happened."

Not waiting for her to finish apologizing, Darryl interrupted, "That's fine, please pack it up quickly."

He just wanted to buy a necklace, what a hassle.

The store manager nodded immediately, "Yes, yes, sure."

She then turned to the rest of the shop assistants and scolded, "Why are you still standing there? Hurry up, pack the necklace for our valued customer here."

The few shop assistants finally gathered themselves and went on to pack the necklace."

After a while, Darryl walked hurriedly out of the shop, holding a gift box.

Not far away, Lincoln and Denise were still chatting with Lily.

Denise had concluded that The Worship of Crystal that Lily was wearing was an imitation. She could not stop teasing Lily and asking her how much she had paid for the imitation product.

Lily shook her head, "I don't know. My husband

gave the shoes to me."

"Imitation products now look so real don't you think?" Denise said loudly to attract attention.

Darryl arrived at that moment, and handed the gift box to Lily with a smile, "Dear, a present for you."

Lily was so happy, she kissed Darryl, "Thanks dear."

She was going to open the gift box.

Chapter 316

Lily did not expect Darryl to get her a gift as he had only gone to the washroom. She felt so loved.

"Don't open it yet." Darry smiled. "It's nothing expensive; let's open it at home."

Darryl did not want Denise to be jealous as she had wanted the necklace from the same shop.

Lily nodded and said softly, "Dear, I already love it even though it's not expensive. I will always cherish it as it is a gift from you."

Denise laughed.

"Open it, Lily. Let me see what your husband got for you. I am curious," Denise said coldly.

'A gift for the wife, but she can only open it at home. It must be something cheap; he must be worried about people laughing at him.' Denise thought. 'Lily, you were the most famous girl in school. Who knew you'd marry such a useless man.'

Lily smiled. "My husband already said that it is nothing expensive. You don't need to be curious."

Then she put the box into her bag.

No one expected Denise to snatch the gift and

laughed. "Don't be stingy; let's have a look, shall we?"

Denise opened the gift box.

"Hey!" Lily was annoyed. How rude could that woman be? How could she open the gift without her permission?

Lily wanted to take the box back, but all of them were stunned, especially Denise. Her jaw dropped.

There was a gorgeous necklace in the gift box.

Eternal Love!

An Eternal Love that was worth 60 million bucks!

Lily shivered; she was surprised and excited!

Had her husband bought that for her? How could that have happened?

Denise looked at Lincoln; both were still in shock.

After a short while, Denise finally came to her senses. She laughed as she looked at Darryl. "Wow, it looks like you didn't go to the washroom; you must have gone to steal the necklace!"

It was definitely a theft. How would a live-in son-in-law like him have the money to buy that?

Even the Lyndon family's Grandma would not have purchased a 60-million necklace without a second

thought. He must have stolen it!

That was why Darryl told Lily to open the gift at home. He did not want others to find out about it!

Lincoln smiled too. "Wow, Lily! I did not know you married such a great man. He could steal a 60-million item so easily."

Lily was worried. "Stop saying that. My husband will never steal anything."

"He'd never steal? Didn't he get arrested and sent to jail for stealing two cell phones?" Denise laughed. Then she raised the gift box and shouted, " Come and take a look! There is a thief here! Someone here had stolen a necklace worth 65 million bucks. Come quickly!"

Everyone started to gather around them; they pointed at Darryl and criticized him.

A theft in broad daylight?

Darryl could not stand it anymore. He stared at Denise and said, "You can't afford it, so others can' t, too?"

Denise laughed. "So, is it stolen? You would know."

More people gathered around them, and everyone started to reprimand him. A few workers at the mall even took out their cellphone to call the police.

Chapter 317

A lady suddenly appeared amongst the crowd.

"He's not a thief," the lady said gently.

It was Yvonne Young.

She was at the mall to look for lipstick. She did not expect to bump into Darryl.

Darryl was shocked to see her, as well. She looked even more attractive, and he had not seen her for about two days.

She was dressed in a formal suit. The attire showed off her perfect figure, and she also wore a pair of The Worship of Crystal. Darryl had bought them for her at Roger's Auction.

Wow!

Yvonne's appearance had attracted the attention of the men in the crowd.

A man followed beside Yvonne. He was dressed neatly in a suit and a pair of black-frame glasses; he looked smart.

Yvonne stepped forward and pointed to the man beside her to introduce him to Darryl. "Darryl, this

is Matt Taylor."

Yvonne was pretty upset that day. Her father had decided to introduce men to her; from rich heirs to successful businessmen, he had not stopped his efforts.

As Yvonne had always had her heart set on Darryl, so she felt so annoyed.

Just two days before that, her father had introduced Matt to her. He introduced Matt as the apprentice of the famous antique appraiser, Simon Joe. He had excellent appraiser skills.

That morning, her father had pressured Yvonne to meet Matt, and so she had agreed. After she chatted with Matt, she realized that he had a good personality and was very polite, too.

They saw a crowd as they walked by, and so they stopped to take a look. She did not expect to see Darryl there, and someone had accused him of theft.

Denise shouted, "You are brave for a live-in son-in-law. Say all you want to other people; you shall spend the rest of your life in jail."

Denise laughed coldly. She was furious when she saw the pair of The Worship of Crystal on Yvonne's feet.

Why were there so many fake The Worship of

Crystals?

How could so many women wear them?

Yvonne looked at Denise and said, "You must be mistaken. Darryl would never steal anything."

Darryl had spent 100 million bucks to bid for The Worship of Crystal that Yvonne had worn on her feet. How could he be a thief? What a joke!

Denise looked at Yvonne and said, "You may say he is not a thief, but he is one. This necklace costs 60 million bucks. How could a live-in son-in-law like him afford something like that? How would he get it if he did not steal it?" 1

Yvonne smiled. "I trust that he would never steal anything. I can guarantee that personally."

Denise laughed when she heard Yvonne's reply. " Your personal guarantee? Who do you think you are? You might even be wearing a pair of fake The Worship of Crystal. Stop acting as if you're someone important."

The crowd stared at them.

Yvonne sighed before she said, "I am Yvonne Young; my family owns the Pearl Pavilion.

What?

She was the Young family's eldest daughter?

Everyone was surprised when Yvonne said that.

The Young family was famous in Donghai City! They had been in the antique business for generations. The upper society loved to get antiques as gifts; hence the Young family had a great network.

Chapter 318

Denise blushed; she was shocked when she heard that. Then she saw the jewelry store manager rush toward them. Denise immediately shouted, "Come quickly; is this the necklace you lost?"

Denise hurried forward and handed the gift box to the store manager. "Take a look. Does this necklace belong to your shop?" She turned and pointed at Darryl, "He had stolen it."

Stole? The store manager seemed puzzled and did not know what to do.

Denise laughed loudly. 'The store manager came running for the necklace. Now all the evidence is here. Let's see how he explains himself! A 60-million-buck necklace is enough to put him in jail for the rest of his life!' Denise thought.

"Sir," The store manager said politely as he handed the gift box back to Darryl. She bowed at him. "Sir, I forgot to inform you that with your high spending in our store, you are immediately upgraded to a Privileged Member. Would you mind leaving your number with us so that we can process the membership for you? Also, you forgot the receipt for your purchase."

What? A receipt for a purchase?

He purchased the necklace?

The crowd was silent. They could not believe what had happened.

A 60-million-buck purchase; that guy must be rich!

Denise blushed as she stood there. 'That's impossible! How can a cell phone thief afford a 60-million-buck necklace!' she thought.

Denise was skeptical about what had happened. She stepped forward to take a look at the receipt. She was stunned.

The receipt showed the price of the necklace; Darryl had indeed bought the necklace!

Everyone looked at Denise. Was something wrong with her? Why did she yell theft when Darryl had bought the necklace? She must be a crazy woman.

"I won't need the membership." Darryl grabbed Lily 's hand and said, "Dear, let's go."

There was no point in staying as the truth was out. After he took a few steps, Darryl stopped and turned toward Denise, "Oh, right. Let me tell you one thing. "

Everyone was curious about what Darryl had to say.

Darryl laughed and said to Denise, "There are only 9 9 pairs of The Worship of Crystal in the world. The serial numbers are engraved at the heels. Even though the three of you are wearing a pair, I know for a fact that only the shoes on my wife and Miss Young are genuine. The ones on your feet are fake. Given the poor reproduction quality, it must have only cost you 500 bucks."

Darryl turned and left after that!

Wow! Everyone started to point at Denise as they laughed.

Denise felt so ashamed. She did not expect Lincoln would give her a pair of fake shoes! He had sworn that they were genuine when he gave them to her!

Lincoln smiled awkwardly as he looked at everyone laughing at his wife. "Dear, I am sorry. The shoes were indeed imitations, but I swear I didn't get them for 500 bucks. I paid more than 10,000 bucks for them."

"Get lost!"

Chapter 319

Outside the mall, Yvonne, Matt, Darryl, and Lily walked as they chatted with each other.

Lily suggested they go to dinner, and everyone agreed unanimously.

While they talked, Yvonne's cell phone rang. It was her father, Kingston.

Kingston's voice came through once the call connected. "My dear daughter, how did your date go? Matt is quite the gentleman, right?"

Most of his matchmaking efforts for his daughter had failed, and Kingston had come to a conclusion.

Yvonne rejected all the candidates because she had Darryl in her heart.

What was so special about Darryl? He only had some skills in appraising antiques.

When he realized that fact, Kingston immediately contacted Matt. That man might still be very young, but he had excellent skills in appraising antiques, too! He was the world-renowned antique appraiser, Simon Joe's apprentice!

Darryl's skill was of no match to Matt. Besides that,

Matt was also smart and committed. There was no reason for Yvonne not to like him.

"My dear daughter, tell me, what do you think of Matt?" Kingston asked impatiently.

Yvonne did not want to let her father down, so she replied briefly, "Fine..."

"Just fine?" Kingston sighed. You are so picky."

Then she heard Kingston shouted.

"Hey, Boss, how much for the painting?" It seemed like he was in a crowded and chaotic place; the conversation seemed to be centered on paintings. After a few moments, Kingston was back in the conversation. "My dear daughter, I just found a unique painting. Come with Matt, please. I need him to appraise it. Hurry up!"

Then he hung up.

Yvonne was speechless. Her father had remembered Matt when it came to antiques. It seemed like her father wanted to choose a successor for himself instead of a son-in-law.

She had just met Darryl, and she did not want to leave so soon.

Yvonne had an idea. "Darryl, would you want to go take a look as well?"

Well...

Darryl was reluctant to go. He would rather go shopping with his wife than going for an antique appraisal.

Before he could open his mouth, though, Lily held his hand and said, "Let's go, since Yvonne has graciously invited us."

Lily was grateful for Yvonne when she tried to help clear Darryl's name when he was accused of theft early that day.

Darryl smiled and said, "Sure, let's go take a look."

"Let's go."

Yvonne was very excited, and she smiled widely.

However, Matt was disappointed. 'Why does this guy have to be there on every occasion?" he thought. Matt was a smart man; he knew that Yvonne was interested in Darryl. What was so special about him? Yvonne got so excited when the man agreed to tag along with them.

...

At Maple Street.

Maple Street was named for the maple trees planted along the street. It was also famous for the antique

businesses that had set up shop there.

When the weather was most comfortable in mid-September, the owners would join forces to hold an antique festival on that famous street.

Antique lovers from all over Donghai City crowded the street. Antique collectors from all over the world would also be at Maple Street to find more treasures for their collection.

Chapter 320

When four of them arrived, the place was really crowded.

Yvonne and Lily suddenly became the centre of attraction.

Those two goddesses were too beautiful!

Some of the men did not even blink. Both of the ladies were beautiful in their own way!

The two ladies did not notice the attention that they commanded; their attention was on the stalls set at both sides of the street. There were many stalls with antique items displayed for sale.

Handwritten scrolls, jade, ceramics and many other delicate items; all of them looked interesting.

Darryl looked around as he strolled.

The antique festival was an interesting one. He noticed a couple of good quality antiques as he walked by them.

They finally arrived at the largest stall in the market; there were many people surrounding it, and Kingston was one of them.

Yvonne was happy to see her father, and she quickly

approached him, "Father."

Kingston turned and nodded at her. "Matt, come quickly, see how much this painting is worth!"

The stall owner held an antique painting in his hands.

It was a painting of a spotty tiger, with its paw on a rock mountain as it roared toward the sky. There was an elegant-looking tree beside it.

It was the painting of the Tiger Roar Mountain.

The name 'Thompson' was scribbled at the corner of the painting; there were also a dozen stamps on it.

Was it a painting by Watt Thompson?

Darryl took a glance and furrowed his brows.

Everyone was amazed by the painting.

It was a genuine painting! What a treasure—the painting of the Tiger Roar Mountain.

A few collectors there were nervous too; they had all hoped to offer a reasonable price for the painting. However, in the antique business, there was a rule. No one should interfere when a potential buyer negotiated on the price of an antique. Kingston was negotiating with the antique seller; hence the other collectors could only wait

impatiently.

Kingston handed the painting to Matt as he smiled with pride. "Matt, take a look. What do you think about this painting?"

The painter had excellent skills; the emotion on the tiger looked real and grand. The whole painting style matched Watt Thompson's original style.

The asking price for the painting was 1 billion bucks!

The price was fairly reasonable for a Watt Thompson painting.

At the Handerson Auction in 2004, a Watt Thompson painted fan, called the Cherry Appreciation, was sold for 4.7 million bucks; it was equivalent to about a billion bucks after so many years had passed. However, that was only a painted fan.

The painting in question at that moment was an art piece called the Tiger Roar Mountain. It could fetch 3 billion bucks in an auction, but the seller had asked for 1 billion bucks for it.

Kingston was worried, though. He only had slightly more than 1 billion in his assets. If the painting were proven to be a fake, he would lose all his money. Hence, he decided to ask for Matt's help.

Matt took a thorough look at the painting. He said, "

Everyone knows that Watt Thompson was an incredible talent. Not only was he a painter, but he was also a poet and a calligrapher."

"All his paintings had the strong energy of a drawing and the gentleness of an artist. The Tiger Roar Mountain exuded these qualities perfectly. Look at the tiger; there was a strong and clear definition in its strips, and it displayed the strength of a tiger flawlessly. The tree beside it gave the whole painting a more gentle touch."

"Overall, the painting looked strong, energetic and gentle at the same time. It matches all the qualities of a Watt Thompson painting. It is definitely a genuine painting." Matt spoke clearly.

Everyone was impressed with Matt's analysis of the painting. What a skilful young man!

His antique appraisal skill was the best among everyone there. A few of the collectors nodded in agreement.

The collectors all had in-depth knowledge of antique painting. They were all impressed with Matt 's talent in the appraisal.

Chapter 321

Kingston chuckled proudly after he heard Matt's appraisal for the painting.

He had chosen correctly! Matt had cleared all of Kingston's doubts in his analysis. That was the standard of an internationally renowned antique appraisal master's apprentice.

Besides that, Matt looked really handsome. What a perfect match with her daughter!

Yvonne nodded her head in agreement too.

Matt's antique appraisal talent was really impressive.

The antique seller, Austin, gave Matt a thumbs up. " Looks like you are a professional, Mister! You analyzed the painting so easily, but clearly."

Matt smiled proudly but did not reply. As an apprentice to a famous antique appraisal master, he had gotten used to all the attention and compliments.

Kingston laughed happily and said, "Fine then, Austin, I shall buy it!"

One billion bucks! Even though he needed to spend

his entire fortune, he still felt that it was worth it. If he sold the painting later, he would quickly gain 3 billion bucks.

Yvonne was delighted; she could not take her eyes off the painting.

All the other collectors and merchants sighed. Since Kingston had bought the painting, they would not have the chance to buy it anymore. They had lost a tremendous money-making opportunity!

"Congratulations, Mister Young!"

"Yes, Mister Young, you will make another fortune!
"

A few antique sellers congratulated Kingston.

Kingston smiled brightly; he was so eager to make the payment. Suddenly, a calm voice spoke, "When did Watt Thompson paintings become so common that it landed on a normal antique stall?"

It was Darryl!

Wow!

Suddenly, all eyes were on him.

Who was that guy? Was there something wrong with him? What rubbish did he spout?

Matt immediately looked upset. He had just

mentioned that the painting was a genuine one. What did Darryl try to imply?

"Yvonne, why is he here?" Kingston asked annoyingly. He asked for Matt, so why was Darryl there too?

Once Kingston saw Darryl, he recalled the time he saw Darryl tied all the three ladies together, and one of them was his daughter.

Kingston was furious when he remembered that!

Yvonne did not say a word. She took the painting and handed it to Darryl. She said softly, "Please take a look at the painting, Darryl."

Yvonne did not think further. She felt that something must be wrong if Darryl decided to speak out about it.

Matt was upset when he saw what Yvonne had done.

'He is only a live-in son-in-law. Does he think that his antique appraisal skills are stronger than mine?' Matt thought.

Darryl took a glance at the painting and said calmly, "This is not a bad painting, but it's a little far off from Watt Thompson's skill level."

What?

Did he say that the painting was fake?

Suddenly everyone started to discuss, and the atmosphere was quite chaotic.

The antique seller was angry. "Young man, what do you mean? Are you saying that my painting is fake? Everyone in the antique business knows me, and they know that I have a rule for myself. Even if I don 't make any money, I would never sell fake antiques! "

Everyone nodded; they agreed with Austin. He had told the truth; Austin had never sold any fake antique!

Kingston could not hold it anymore, and he shouted, "Darryl, I know there is some imitation antique in the market. You are still young, and you may make some mistakes. Do you know who Matt is? He is the famous antique appraisal master, Simon Joe's apprentice."

Chapter 322

It was obvious what Kingston had just said.

Even though Darryl was quite knowledgeable in antique appraisal, Matt was the one who was the famous antique appraisal master's apprentice.

Everyone agreed with Kingston.

Matt was the one who was the famous antique appraisal master's apprentice.

Master Simon Joe was famous in the country; he was a famed antique appraisal master. Simon had frequently appeared in antique magazines, and Matt was his apprentice.

Matt must be right about it; the Tiger Roar Mountain should be a genuine one.

Lily felt a little embarrassed; she pulled Darryl gently and said, "Dear, do mind your words."

The Young family was a famous antique merchant family in Donghai City. Even Kingston believed that the painting was genuine. Darryl would just cause trouble for everyone.

Yvonne was nervous too. "Darryl, are you sure the painting is fake?"

Darryl smiled and explained, "Matt was right when he said that Watt Thompson paintings had special characteristics and qualities. His paintings had strong energy and the gentleness of an artist. I have to admit, this copy of the painting had some of the characteristics, too."

The crowd laughed.

'He is still claiming the painting is fake. Perhaps he is just seeking attention, and speaking rubbish,' Matt thought.

Austin, the seller, was furious. He had been in the antique business for over thirty years, and he had never sold a fake antique to anyone! He had found the painting by chance and treated it as his most treasured item. When Darryl claimed that it was a fake, he yelled, "You are lying! Fine! Tell me why you think that painting a fake. If you can give me a valid reason, then I shall retire from the antique business. However, if you can't, then you'll have to bow to me and apologize!"

Everyone was even more curious about the situation.

"Yes, let's see what he's got!"

"I don't think he knows anything. He is just saying rubbish."

Lily was nervous when she realized that everyone was unhappy with Darryl. "Mister Austin, please don't be angry. I shall apologize on behalf of my husband. I am sorry, his antique knowledge is quite limited..."

"Limited knowledge?" Austin slammed his fist on the table. "Then he should just keep his mouth shut! Annoying bugger!"

Kingston could not stand it too; he scolded coldly, " Darryl, you are only a live-in son-in-law, do not cause trouble here."

Darryl laughed coldly as he reached out with two fingers and folded a mark on the painting.

Everyone paled.

Did he mean to destroy the painting?

He had made a fold on such a rare painting! It was something pretty hard to forgive!

Austin wanted to stop Darryl, but he was too late. Darryl had made a fold on the top right corner of the painting.

However, a cold sweat ran down Matt's spine.

He was still stunned; he looked at Darryl with widened eyes.

The Gull Folding Method?

That was Matt's grandmaster's skill, the Gull Folding Method.

Matt's grandmaster, Stellan Smith, was the top antique appraiser at Herard City.

The Gull Folding Method was Stellan's unique technique to appraise antique paintings. The fold looked like the image of a giant seagull; hence it was named the Gull Folding Method!

Matt had only seen his grandmaster use the unique technique once in an international appraisal competition. That was the only chance he had to see the technique in action.

Everyone felt lost; they were speechless when they saw the fold that Darryl had made on the painting!

The Gull Folding Method—everyone would know it when they saw one. Only Stellan had the skill to do that. Where would Darryl have learnt that unique technique?

Chapter 323

Everyone stared at Darryl and the fold that he had made on the painting.

Darryl laughed. "Mister Austin, you said that if the painting is a fake, you will retire from the antique business?"

Austin dared not reply after he saw the Gull Folding Method. Prior to that, he had sought the help of dozens of antique appraisers, and all of them had confirmed that the painting was genuine. Darryl was not even someone famous in the field; how could he determine that the painting was a fake one?

Austin got upset. "Yes, and I will repeat it. If this painting is a fake, I shall leave the antique business! However, if it were proven to be genuine, then you shall kneel and apologize to me!"

Darryl took a deep breath. "Watt Thompson had painted many paintings in his lifetime; however, not many were retained. In the early twentieth century, there was an artist named Herman Landy, who had admired Thompson's painting so much that he kept many of the original paintings. He spent many years imitating Thompson's work."

Darryl continued to say, "This Tiger Roar Mountain

painting should be one of his works."

Someone in the crowd asked, "How can you prove what you have just said?"

Darryl shook his head and said, "Herman had excellent painting skills; his Thompson paintings were near to perfection. Most professional appraisers would not be able to differentiate between them."

Then, Darryl pointed to the fold. "However, no matter how good his skills, Herman had overlooked a crucial part, and that was the paper he used for the painting."

"Watt Thompson used art paper produced by the Hill Family for his paintings. Those papers were very famous during that time. However, the production line was shut down sometime later."

"The Hill Family art paper had an exceptional quality; no matter how hard one folded the paper, it would always return to its original state. It would never wrinkle. Fake paintings would never be produced with the same type of paper."

Wow!

Everyone stood closer to take a better look at the fold.

Even Lily and Yvonne could not help themselves;

they went closer to observe the painting, too. Darryl was right; the fold was still there, and the paper showed no sign of recovering.

Was the painting a fake?

Yvonne shivered as she looked at Darryl with deep admiration and respect.

'He was not a useless ma...'

Matt held his fist tightly; he wanted to argue with Darryl, but he could not. He thought that the painting was genuine...

How could he, the apprentice of a famous antique appraiser, lose to a live-in son-in-law?

Matt's face reddened! He took the painting and said, "I still think that the painting is genuine. I will call my master."

He took out his cellphone and video-called his master.

Everyone was amazed when they saw the name on Matt's cell phone screen.

Master Simon Joe?

The call was connected almost immediately. An elderly man appeared on the screen. He was petite-sized, but he looked wise.

It was Master Joe!

Everyone was stunned when they saw him on the screen.

Matt enjoyed all the attention he commanded at that moment. He quickly moved the camera toward the painting and asked, "Master, this is a Watt Thompson painting. Please take a look if it is genuine."

They would have the truth once Simon opened his mouth. Who would dare to doubt the words of the Master Antique Appraiser?

Simon took a look at the painting and said, "The Tiger Roar Mountain painting? The tiger looked lively and energetic. This is a genuine painting!"

Everyone was amazed when they heard that.

Chapter 324

The situation turned chaotic!

The live-in son-in-law was wrong with his appraisal!

Master Simon said the painting was genuine, so how could it be a fake?

"Buddy, did you hear that?" Austin stood up and said to Darryl, "Kneel and apologize!"

"Mister Austin, please don't be angry, calm down." Yvonne went up to him quickly. "My friend made a mistake, please don't be mad. The painting is for 1 billion bucks right; we will buy it."

She smiled awkwardly and took out her cell phone; she was ready to transfer the payment to Austin. Darryl rushed forward and snatched Matt's phone.

"Is there something wrong with your eyes, Simon Joe?" Darryl said coldly as he looked into the screen. "Open your eyes and look at it. Is this a genuine painting? Look at it again!"

Matt was furious as he stared at Darryl. "How could you speak to my master in such a manner? Where are your manners? Give me back my phone!"

Master Joe was already in his sixties, and he was the top antique appraiser. Everyone would greet him politely.

How rude was that live-in son-in-law! How could he speak to the master in such a way!

The crowd also pointed and commented on Darryl's rudeness.

"So rude!"

"Even though you have some knowledge of appraising antiques, you shouldn't be so arrogant! He is a master!"

Suddenly, they heard Simon's voice on the phone as he exclaimed, "Is that you, Mister Darby? I'm sorry, I must not have seen it!"

What?

Had the master addressed the man as Mister Darby? In such a polite tone? What had happened?

Everyone was speechless. The entire Greenway Road had stayed silent.

Matt was confused. Did his master know that live-in son-in-law?

Darryl smiled and replied, "Simon, do not appraise a painting unless you are absolutely confident

about it. Do you know you might give the wrong information?"

Darryl and Simon were both apprentices of Stellan Smith; Darryl was Simon's senior.

Even though Simon was famous and did well in the antique business, he had started with nothing. He could not even differentiate a genuine coin from a fake one.

One of his mistakes even cost one of his customers' tens of million bucks. The customer was about to kill him before Darryl went to his rescue.

That was why Simon would forever be grateful to Darryl. As he listened to Darryl's words, Simon nodded. "I'm sorry, I was mistaken. The painting is fake..."

Everyone was stunned. They looked at Darryl as if he was a monster.

Yvonne bit her lips and looked at Darryl. She was so amazed at what Darryl had done. She could barely hold on to herself. She wanted to kneel and worship the man.

'This man is just so unpredictable,' she thought.

Chapter 325

Lily felt so emotional as she stood at the side.

Even though she did not have much knowledge in antiques, she had heard about Simon Joe; he was always at antique events. She did not expect Simon had so much respect for her husband.

Darryl ended the call and threw the painting aside. Then, he said, "Mister Austin, you said that if the painting is a fake, you will retire from the antique business."

"I—" Austin was furious. Suddenly, he dropped to the ground; he had fainted.

Darryl smiled and then turned to look at Kingston. " Mister Young, when I walked in here just now, I saw an engraved vase from the Qing dynasty at the third stall on the left. It is worth buying if it is priced below 20 million bucks."

Even though Darryl spoke softly, many in the crowd heard him.

"Let's go get it!" Someone in the crowd shouted, and everyone rushed toward the third stall!

Everyone believed Darryl's words; no one would

doubt him!

Kingston was worried; at his age, how could he reach the third stall fast enough?

After everyone left, Darryl smiled and said to Kingston, "Mister Young, don't worry, let them go. The twelfth stall on the right, there is an antique sword worth buying at 20 million bucks. The sixteenth stall on the left, there is a lamp that was used in the palace, and it's worth buying at 10 to 20 million bucks. I shall bid you goodbye then."

Then, Darryl turned and left as he held onto Lily's hand.

'Darryl is such a rare talent! He is a miracle in the antiques' field! No wonder Yvonne is attracted to him! However, he is married; Yvonne can't share a husband with another woman, right?' Kingston thought.

...

Away from Greenway Road, Darryl walked as he held onto Lily's hand. Lily's mind was still blank, though.

Was that man her husband? That man knew everything; how did she not realize that earlier?

Ever since she married Darryl, all her relatives laughed at Darryl. They said that he was a useless

person; he knew nothing.

Lily felt guilty about that. She hugged Darryl and said, "I'm sorry, Dear."

Darryl was walking when she touched him. He stopped and patted her on her shoulder. "What happened? Why are you apologizing to me?"

"Dear, I have not been treating you well all this time. I am so sorry. I will make it up to you; I will never leave you," Lily said softly as she hugged Darryl tighter.

...

After they left Greenway Road, Darryl and Lily went to another mall and theme park.

Finally, after they watched a movie that ended at around 10 pm, they headed home.

Lily was delighted that day. That was her happiest day after she got married for three years. They were so tired from shopping; they went straight to bed.

The next morning, Darryl was still asleep when his cell phone rang.

Sh*t!

Who would call so early in the morning? It was barely seven in the morning. Darryl reluctantly looked at his cell phone. It was Isabella.

"Darryl, the Elixir Competition is today. I shall wait for you in front of the school. Hurry," Isabella said gently.

He had almost forgotten about that.

Darryl slapped his forehead and quickly got up to change.

Once he reached the Hexad School gate, he saw Isabella was already waiting for him.

She looked perfect; her hair was long, and she wore a pair of light blue jeans.

Darryl gulped as he walked toward her. "You are early, Miss Isabella."

Isabella smiled and said, "The competition starts at eight, it is not too early now. Let's go."

Darryl was curious. "Where is the Elixir Competition held?"

Chapter 326

Isabella replied, "At Neptune Mall."

Neptune Square was the largest mall in Donghai City. It was located along Atlantic Street. It was estimated to be the size of seven to eight football fields.

Every night, many senior citizens would practice line dancing there, and the younger generations would skate. It was always crowded.

When Darryl and Isabella arrived, Neptune Square was already crowded with many people. Many luxury cars were parked at the parking lots.

There was a big stage in the middle with many colorful flags with the names like Shaolin, Wudang, and Emei printed on them.

The Elixir Competition attracted many visitors from everywhere; most of them were there to witness elixir production.

On the stage, one could see many elixir cauldrons that were meant for the competition. The pots were made of pure copper; they were the best in heat transfer. It would usually take two hours to produce elixirs, but it would be reduced to only an hour with

the copper pot.

Neptune Square was packed. Darryl could see many familiar faces there—Kent, Megan, Justin, William, Zayler, and others.

Many of those who had attended the earlier outing were also there; to be precise, the rich and famous families in Donghai City were at the competition. The main attraction that day was the auction of the elixirs produced by the contestants.

They wished to purchase one or two elixirs as those items were really rare and not easy to get.

Darryl and Isabella went to the contestant lounge.

Each of the Six Sects would send ten contestants to the competition. So, there were sixty contestants in total; each of them would also bring their assistant.

Once Darryl and Isabella had arrived at the area, one of the staff handed Isabella her number in the competition.

Isabella was number 13; she stuck the sign onto her shoulder. There was also a big sticker on Darryl's shoulder—'Assistant'.

A middle-aged man with a mic in his hand walked to the stage. He smiled and said, "Hello, attention, please."

Everyone's focus was on him; the entire place was

silent. The man was satisfied with the reaction and attention he received, so he nodded. "I am the host for this year's Elixir Competition. Here are some announcements."

"There are 60 contestants this year. Whoever generates the most extraordinary elixir would win the competition! Simultaneously, all the elixir produced in this competition will be up for sale in the auction. The starting price for each is one buck."

Everyone laughed.

An Elixir for one buck?

Everyone was excited when they heard the announcements from the host.

All the contestants that year had high standards, which meant that their elixirs would be of high-quality, too! It would be great if one could purchase one of their elixirs.

When he saw the chaotic atmosphere, the host waved his hand and said, "Silence, please! The competition is about to begin. Let's invite our judges. The first judge is Master Reed from the Shaolin family."

Master Reed appeared in a red cape; he looked to be in his fifties.

"Wow, even Master Reed is here!"

Master Reed was one of the Shalin family elders; he was at Level Three of the Martial Marquis.

The Shaolin family was the leader of the Six Sects, so everyone cheered when he appeared.

He walked to the center of the stage, took a bow, and sat at the judges' place.

The host went on. "Our next judge is Master Leonard from the Wudang family!"

Master Leonard walked gracefully onto the stage as everyone cheered again.

"Next, an elder from the Emei family—Abbess Mother Serendipity."

Everyone cheered and gave a standing ovation.

Abess Mother Serendipity sauntered up the stage. She was in a long white dress, and she looked elegant and attractive.

Chapter 327

Abess Mother Serendipity's elegance attracted many men; all of them stared at her with their eyes wide open.

She was beautiful; she looked perfect! The men could only gulp when they saw her.

Abess Mother Serendipity had been staying at the Darby family's residence. She had gracefully agreed when the organizers from the Elixir Competition invited her to be their judge.

Then, the host introduced another four to five judges; they included the Jiangnan Elixir Association vice-chairman. He was already an old man.

Then, the host continued with a big smile. "Let's welcome the final judge! Chairlady of the Jiangnan Elixir Association, Ophelia Lane."

The Chairlady of the Elixir Association was there, as well!

Everyone focused their attention on the stage. Everyone stood up just to get a clearer view.

A beautiful lady appeared as she walked gracefully

toward the stage.

She looked so fresh and attractive with her pencil skirt and a white blouse! The radiant smile on her face enhanced her beauty; that was Ophelia Lane, the Chairlady of the Elixir Association.

Everyone was attracted to her beauty; she looked perfect.

No one expected the Elixir Association leader to be a woman; a very beautiful lady at that!

Everyone at Neptune Square cheered. The men stared at Ophelia; none of them blinked.

Ophelia walked gracefully to the middle seat and sat down.

The hosts announced, "Great! I believe everyone is excited to meet our contestants. Let's welcome them!"

All the contestants at the waiting area walked toward the stage. Darryl and Isabella followed behind the crowd. Isabella was the most beautiful contestant there that day.

"Look! Isn't that Miss Isabella?"

"She looks so beautiful."

Most of the men's attention was on Isabella.

Suddenly the crowd broke into laughter.

"Look! Isn't that the live-in son-in-law?"

"Oh, that is Darryl! He is here as an assistant!"

The crowd continued to laugh.

Kent, who sat in the front row, saw Darryl. He was stunned, but he also laughed when he saw the assistant sticker on Darryl's shoulder.

Justin and others also laughed at Darryl when they saw him.

"This is so funny. How much does he earn in a day as an assistant? Maybe 150 bucks a day?" Laughter ensued.

The roaring waves of laughter almost turned the elixir competition into a circus. Everyone laughed as they stared at Darryl.

Megan could not stand it anymore; she pulled Kent toward her and scolded him. "Just shut up! Be quiet! "

She was surprised to see Darryl at the competition. She did not think he should be ashamed of his job as an assistant. He was a live-in son-in-law anyway. Perhaps he wanted to earn some pocket money as an assistant. There was nothing wrong with that. It was an honest living, so there was nothing shameful about it.

She could not understand why everyone else would laugh at him.

Abess Mother Serendipity turned her attention on Darryl when she heard the laughter and taunting from the crowd. There were traces of anger on her beautiful face.

Darryl Darby? Was that man Darryl?

Chapter 328

The Darby family informed her that Darryl had attacked her brother and sister, which was why he was removed from the family.

Such an evil man had appeared at the competition as an assistant?

That was such a disgrace to the Elixir Competition!

Abess Mother Serendipity grabbed her hands tightly; she wanted to kill Darryl.

She was the Emei family's elder; she had always been fair and brave! She could not stand an evil man like Darryl.

The competition was about to begin. If she were to kill him, they would not be able to proceed with the competition.

She tried her best to hold her anger back, but her eyes were filled with disgust when she looked at Darryl.

"Great! Contestants, please step in front of your cauldron," the host said.

Darryl trailed behind Isabella as they walked toward cauldron number 13. The rest of the contestants

went to their spots too.

The staff carried the materials for the elixir production and put them in front of the respective contestants.

"Contestants," the host said, "There are more than 100 types of materials in front of you. You may decide the type of elixir you want to produce and choose your ingredients for that. Also, two points to note. Firstly, the duration of the competition is one hour only. Those who failed to produce an elixir within this one hour will be disqualified."

"Secondly, the contestant with the rarest elixir will be chosen as the winner. There is a special bonus for the first prize winner, and the first and second runners-up will have the chance to study a manual. So, please appreciate the chance that you have been given. The judges will decide the winners. As long as you can produce a rare elixir, the judge would award you with something."

Then the host shouted, "Great! Let's begin!" Everyone cheered.

All the contestants started their work; they selected their ingredients and started a fire. Everything was done in order.

Isabella was very confident. She instructed Darryl, " Please get me the ingredients; 5 grams of pearl

powder, 2 grams of silver and golden flowers..."

Isabella lighted the cauldron and dropped the ingredients into the pot.

Darryl observed her as he stood at the side. He waited for Isabella to finish the ingredients and sealed the pot. Then he said, "Miss Isabela, are you producing the Energy Enhancer Pill?"

The Energy Enhancer Pill was used to improve the energy in one's body. However, it would only work on cultivators who are still within the Martial Marquis level. Once consumed, their Martial Marquis level would increase by one level. However, each person could only take it once in a lifetime.

Isabella was surprised, "You know about the Energy Enhancer Pill?"

That pill was the highest-level of elixir that she could produce. Typically, the elixir could only be made by an Elixir Master. She did not expect Darryl would be able to identify it so quickly.

Darryl smiled. "I have seen it done by an Elixir Master; hence I have some knowledge about it."

Darryl had already known about it when Isabella instructed him to gather the ingredients. In the Infinite Elixir Manual, the Energy Enhancer Pill was only a medium-level elixir. It was still good if they

were able to produce it.

Isabella nodded, but she did not say another word. She kept her concentration on the cauldron.

If she could produce the Energy Enhancer Pill, she would positively win one of the top three prizes. She would succeed!

All the crowd paid attention to the stage. A young man in a white shirt was the one who attracted the most attention. He was in his twenties, and he was from the Shaolin family. His name was Chuck Deed.

Chuck grabbed about four to five types of raw materials before he placed them into the cauldron.

Darryl shivered when he saw Chuck's ingredient. It looked like he wanted to make the Soul Solution Pill.

Soul Solution was a very rare elixir. It seemed like some great talents had joined the competition!

Darryl nodded his head just as he detected a burnt smell. He was stunned when he saw the pot. He immediately said, "Miss Isabella, the pot is too hot, we need water to cool it down!"

Elixir cauldrons made of copper would reduce the elixir's production time. However, they would also overheat pretty quickly. It was very difficult to manage that.

It was apparent that Isabella still lacked that skill.

Isabella smiled. "Don't worry, Darryl. You still don't have much knowledge about elixir production. I have produced this Energy Enhancer Pill many times; there won't be any problem."

"Miss Isabella, please listen to me. You need to reduce the heat with water," Darryl repeated.

How could he let that continue? Elixir production would not be successful at such high temperatures.

Isabella smiled again. "It's fine, Darryl. There is still plenty for you to learn about this. I'm your teacher, and I have done this for many years. Don't worry."

Chapter 329

Darryl sighed.

Miss Isabella had pretty good skills, but she was also stubborn.

Time passed by quickly.

The competition was only for one hour. At about 50 minutes in, more than half of the contestants had completed their elixir.

Bang!

Suddenly, there was a loud noise from Isabella's cauldron, followed by the strong burnt smell.

The pot was all badly scorched, and there was no elixir.

She had failed! How was that possible?!

Isabella paled; she was in shock. How did that happen?

She had made the Energy Enhancer Pill many times before that, and she had never had any problem with it. How could she have failed then?

That was the consequence when one did not listen to others.

Darryl sighed and said, "Miss Isabella, I told you. Heat management is crucial for a copper cauldron, such as this, but you did not listen."

Isabella was about to burst into tears. She asked, " Darryl, what should I do?"

The Elixir Competition was only held once every three years. Would she really fail?

Most of the contestants smirked at Isabella. They were happy about what had happened to her.

Darryl shook his head and said, "Let me help you to produce the elixir."

What? Him?

Isabella felt lost, so she hesitated. However, there were only less than 10 minutes left.

Besides, Darryl was only an assistant. In the competition, the assistant would only support and not produce the elixir on their own.

Isabella had no choice. There was nothing else she could do to help the situation, so she decided to let Darryl try. Perhaps she would get a chance to rectify things.

Her chances were slim as there were only 10 minutes left. Even a Senior Elixir Master would not be able to produce an elixir in 10 minutes.

No matter what, it was better than to give up, so Isabella nodded. "Fine."

She quickly stepped to the side.

Darryl took a deep breath and lit the fire again. Then, he grabbed a handful of ingredients.

What had happened?

The judges were all stunned.

How could an assistant produce an elixir? Were they fools?

Ophelia's eyes were locked onto Darryl. The emotion on her delicate face was complicated. It was a bad sign when the assistant had to make the elixir for the contestant. No one had ever done that in the previous competitions.

Everyone looked at Darryl; they felt disgusted.

"Look at the live-in son-in-law."

"He wants to produce an elixir too? That's ridiculous!" Laughter ensued.

Kent, who sat in the front row, laughed out loud. " That stupid Darryl thinks that this is just a game? How can he represent Miss Isabella?"

Everyone pointed and commented about Darryl.

Megan furrowed her brows. "Kent, why do you say

that? Did you forget that it was Darryl who saved Nancy's life with that elixir when she accidentally ate the poisonous fruit?"

Megan was also surprised when Darryl started to work on the elixir. However, she believed Darryl would have considered it before he made that decision.

Kent replied coldly, "That was pure luck when he rescued Dax's wife. How could he have the skills to participate in this competition?"

What a joke! Megan did not reply to him. She focused on Darryl; she was worried.

Darryl was confident. Had he also produced the Godly Pill?

No, that was impossible. Godly pills were extremely rare.

Most Elixir Masters could produce it; Darryl would not be able to do that too. Besides, Darryl had already explained that it was a gift from a friend.

Most contestants on the stage had completed their elixirs successfully; they held the elixir in their hands.

Contestant number three was a young lady.

When she held her elixir in her hands, the host

announced, "Janet from the Xiaoyao family had produced the Timeless Beauty Pill. It can be used to maintain a lady's beauty timelessly. You will not age in the next ten years."

What? A Timeless Beauty Pill?

Everyone was stunned, and some ladies squealed softly.

A beautiful woman would eventually grow old.

Chapter 330

Who would not want to have eternal youth and beauty? The Timeless Beauty Pill could freeze one's youth. All the ladies desperately wanted that pill.

"Look! Look at the sky!" someone shouted.
Everyone quickly looked up at the sky.

Dark clouds had formed above a contestant's head. It was Chuck from the Shaolin family, and it was an Elixir Cloud!

The elixir that Chuck produced had attracted the Elixir Cloud.

Everyone started to talk about that!

Cultivation was against nature's rule, and elixirs were against God's will. So, if one produced an extremely rare elixir, it would attract nature's phenomena.

The Elixir Cloud was one of nature's phenomena. Extremely rare and powerful elixir might attract thunders too, and the most extreme ones might even cause natural disasters!

Everyone looked at Chuck; they were all speechless as they were still in shock.

Only the highest-level master could produce an elixir that would attract the Elixir Cloud.

There were many great talents in that year's Elixir Competition; the judges were amazed too.

The happiest person, of course, was Master Reed from the Shaolin family. Chuck was the most talented person in their family's younger generation. He also had excellent skills in elixir production. Chuck certainly did not disappoint him in the competition.

Pop!

Chuck's cauldron vibrated before it released a loud sound.

Chuck lifted a pure white elixir from the pot. The elixir had a layer of air around it, and it looked so lively.

The host took a careful look at the elixir and said," Chuck, please tell us; what is this?"

Chuck smiled. "This is the Soul Solution Pill. It can improve one's cultivation and calm one's soul; it can also prevent any evil intention."

The judges nodded. The journey of cultivation was a tough one. It was tough to upgrade one's level once one had reached the Martial Marquis level. Apart

from the need for self-realization, one also needed to prevent any evil intention from overtaking their minds. So, the Soul Solution Pill was a treasure to all the cultivators.

Everyone was amazed by Chuck.

It looked like Chuck was the winner of the competition. One must be very talented and skillful to attract the Elixir Cloud.

Isabella felt very sad when she saw the Elixir Cloud. It seemed like she had no chance to be one of the top three winners in the competition.

There were only two minutes left. Darryl's cauldron was still boiling; the elixir was not completed yet. However, Darryl was not worried, not even when he saw the Elixir Cloud.

The Infinite Elixir Manual did record some elixirs that could attract natural phenomena. When Darryl produced the Godly Pill, it did not draw the Elixir Cloud, even though it was an extremely rare one. He wondered about the reason for that too.

Darryl finally figured it out after he had read the Infinite Elixir Manual thoroughly. The Godly Pill was an upper-medium level elixir. It was only an enhancer pill, which could help the cultivator to break through a level. Other than that, it had no other useful effect.

It would not be able to improve the cultivator's skills or strength; it could only help them break through a level. Such an elixir would not attract a natural phenomenon.

"Final minute!" the host announced.

Everyone's focus was on Darryl.

Kent pointed at Darryl and laughed. "Everyone had completed their elixir, and only that guy is still battling with the pot. Darryl, what are you doing? Are you just trying to be funny?" He laughed.

The crowd laughed with him too. That live-in son-in-law was a joke.

"Kent! Can you stop humiliating Darryl?" Megan was furious. She scolded as she pulled him.

How could he humiliate Darryl? The man had produced an elixir that saved Nancy's life during the last outing. Even though he did not have top skills, he dared to step up to the task. His courage deserved to be complimented.

"Look! What is that in the sky?" someone shouted.

Everyone looked up as they quieted down.

Three fiery red clouds had gathered in the sky, directly on top of Darryl.

Those were three Elixir Clouds?

Chapter 331

The entire Neptune Square fell silent in an instant!

The three fiery red Elixir Clouds still persisted above Darryl's head!

The crowd halted their laughter and stared at Darryl in a daze. They were shocked speechless!

How... How was this possible?

Three Elixir Clouds!? Darryl did not just refine a pill in merely 10 minutes, he even attracted three Elixir Clouds!

Isabella's heart violently shook with surprise and joy. She could not believe her eyes!

It turned out her student's pill refinement mastery far exceeded her own!

Megan was in shock as she stared intensely at Darryl from below the battle stage. She knew Darryl could refine pills, but never did she imagine his mastery would be so high.

Even Shaolin Sect's Chuck could only attract a single Elixir Cloud.

However, Darryl attracted as many as three clouds!

At that moment, each of the judges stood up from their seats! How could a mere Elixir Assistant be so amazing!?

Hum!

The air released from Darryl's elixir cauldron vibrated the surrounding air. The next moment, a bright red pill erupted from the elixir cauldron in a flash and landed on Darryl's hand!

"Time's up!" shouted the host loudly.

The entire venue's gaze was instantly fixed on this red pill.

The host hastily walked toward Darryl as he was unable to hold back his excitement and curiously asked, "May I ask this contestant? Sorry, I mean Elixir Assistant. What's this pill?"

Darryl handed the pill over and plainly said, " Heavenly Restoration Pill."

Heavenly Restoration Pill!?

Isabella's body immediately trembled!

The judges also were busy discussing among themselves! The Heavenly Restoration Pill was an extremely mystical pill.

It was widely known that not everyone can become

a cultivator. Some people were unable to generate proper internal energies as their meridians were blocked at birth. They could not cultivate regardless of whatever elixir pill they took or any master's teachings.

This was an unchangeable congenital defect.

However, the Heavenly Restoration Pill was the only cure for this defect!

At that moment, the audience was in a heated discussion. Even if they had never heard of the Heavenly Restoration Pill, they knew whatever pill Darryl had refined must be extraordinary.

Darryl was going to be the winner judging from their reactions!

The white-clothed youth merely attracted a single Elixir Cloud.

Meanwhile, Darryl managed to attract three clouds.

The pill Darryl had refined must be of a higher quality and rarer than the white-clothed youth's, judging solely from the Elixir Clouds Darryl attracted!

Something unexpected then happened. A sexy and slender figure stood up on the battle stage and walked toward the host.

It was the Elixir Association's Chairlady, Ophelia

Lane.

Wow!

Everyone's gaze instantly focused on her.

Ophelia was very pretty such that any man would be seduced upon seeing her exquisite appearance.

Ophelia gave Darryl a glance but did not say a word.

She took the pill from the host's hand and softly said, "This pill seems to be a failure. The Heavenly Restoration Pill was recorded to be dark red, while this is bright red. It would have no effect when consumed."

Ophelia turned her head toward Darryl and sized him up before smilingly spoke, "You must be Darryl? Truth be told, your ability to attract three Elixir Clouds proves that your pill refining skills are on another level. It's unfortunate you couldn't successfully refine the Heavenly Restoration Pill. Keep working hard on it and good luck. Hopefully, you'll be able to find the proper Heavenly Restoration Pill's refinement method refining soon."

Ophelia's voice was not loud, but everyone present could hear her clearly!

Master Reed, Master Leonard, and the remaining judges nodded their heads in agreement upon

hearing Ophelia's words.

Chapter 332

The fact that Darryl attracted three Elixir Clouds truly shocked the judges.

However, the judges felt the Heavenly Restoration Pill Darryl refined did not match what was described in their records upon careful examination.

Master Reed and the remaining judges had their speculations further reinforced after hearing Ophelia's explanation.

After much consideration, they believed it was not possible for a mere Elixir Assistant to refine such an exquisite pill like the Heavenly Restoration Pill.

It was utterly impossible!

Darryl secretly frowned without saying a word.

It was impossible for him to fail! The refinement method for Heavenly Restoration Pill was clearly recorded in the Infinite Elixir Manual and Darryl correctly completed each step.

Isabella thought she was going to be champion this time, but she was thoroughly disappointed upon hearing Ophelia's words.

How could the Heavenly Restoration Pill's

refinement fail?

Isabella was immensely depressed. She was on cloud nine just moments ago and before being brought back to earth.

The crowd below the stage burst into laughter as well!

The refinement failed even after all that!

Kent laughed uncontrollably and said to Megan, " Look, it's like I've said. How's it possible for this live-in son-in-law to know pill refinement? He's just pretending and now his whole act has failed, haha!"

Kent was shocked earlier and truly thought Darryl had the capabilities to refine such a rare pill.

It was just a false alarm.

Kent was tremendously relieved at that moment as he stared toward Ophelia onstage who became increasingly pleasing to his eyes. It was no surprise she was the Chairlady of Jiangnan Elixir Association with those truly sharp eyes of hers.

Ophelia eventually placed the Heavenly Restoration Pill on the table and returned to her seat before evaluating the elixir pills of other contestants with the panel judges.

The results were decided after 10 minutes.

The host excitedly said, "Alright, settle down everyone. The competition has ended! Let's give a warm round of applause to the Jiangnan Elixir Association Chairlady, Ophelia Lane as she announces the competition's results."

Wow!

The audience was exhilarated!

Ophelia stood up and walked toward the battle stage center amidst the crowd's eager applause.

She was a beauty after all.

The men's gazes instantly fixed upon Ophelia as they were yet again in awe with her flawless figure and alluring appearance.

Darryl's pill refinement failure was merely a passing wave for the audience.

Admiring beauties were more enjoyable than watching an Elixir Assistant's failure.

Ophelia took a look around and gently said, "I hereby announce the champion of today's Elixir Competition is Chuck Deed from Shaolin Sect."

"Excellent!"

The entire Neptune Square erupted in applause once again upon hearing the announcement!

Ophelia smiled and continued, "The second runner up is Sally Cooper from Xiaoyao Sect."

Darryl was utterly speechless.

'This is so f*cking strange, I've never failed at refining pills! Ever since I've gotten the Infinite Elixir Manual, every pill refinement I did is successful. I've even attracted the Elixir Clouds, how could I still fail? That's not possible. Could it be that Ophelia is mistaken?'

A barrage of questions bombarded Darryl's mind as he noticed Isabella was saddened by the matter. He gave her a bitter smile and said, "I'm sorry, Miss Monte..."

Isabella barely managed to force a smile and shook her head. "It's fine, I don't blame you."

However, her voice still carried great disappointment.

Chapter 333

Darryl felt somewhat relieved from seeing Isabella not blaming him. Miss Monte was truly a considerate person.

At that moment, Darryl suddenly felt a certain chill coming from nearby.

He looked toward that direction and saw the cold piercing stares of Abbess Mother Serendipity.

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows.

'What's going on? Why is she staring at me like that? Abbess Mother Serendipity is so elegant, refined, and has a nice personality too, so why is she looking at me like I'm her mortal enemy? I don' t think there are any grudges between us, right?'

As Darryl was pondering, Ophelia had finished announcing the competition results and Abbess Mother Serendipity suddenly stood up at that moment.

Her beautiful eyes gave Darryl a forbidding stare filled with hatred and anger as her graceful body emanated a murderous intent.

Abbess Mother Serendipity already struggled to

hold herself back even during the competition. It was truly an insult to the Elixir Competition that a crooked man like Darryl could even attend it!

However, she never thought as an Elixir Assistant, Darryl would go as far as to take the place of another participant halfway through the competition.

Having such a disgusting person who even violated his own sister-in-law to refine pills onstage had truly disgraced the Elixir Competition!

Darryl was perplexed.

He wondered what Abbess Mother Serendipity wanted from him.

"Darryl! Go to hell!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity flicked her wrist to pull out a white longsword and pointed toward Darryl before coldly saying, "How can a despicable disciple like you even attend the Elixir Competition? You've committed such a heinous and unforgivable act. All Six Sect Disciples are honorable people. How can we associate ourselves with someone like you? You don't deserve to live. I shall exact retribution on behalf of the heavens today!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity gripped her longsword tightly and immediately aimed toward Darryl's

chest after finishing her words.

She mercilessly went for the killing blow!

Damn, was Abbess Mother Serendipity crazy!? She was so pretty yet so unreasonable. Darryl had not even offended her before!

Darryl tried to dodge, but alas Abbess Mother Serendipity was too quick and was already next to him in a blink of an eye!

This was the end!

Darryl was hopeless as he felt an indomitable aura firmly locked him on the ground.

What?

The crowd was shocked upon seeing this scene.

What was going on?

Why did Abbess Mother Serendipity suddenly attack Darryl?

Kent who was below the stage was inexplicably thrilled and said to Megan, "Look at your good big brother. He must have messed with Emei Sect's female disciples. Otherwise, why would Abbess Mother Serendipity be so angry?"

The longsword was about to pierce Darryl's chest! Ophelia immediately went toward Darryl and stood

in front of him at this crucial moment. She stretched out two fingers and tightly gripped onto Abbess Mother Serendipity's sword tip.

Ophelia could hold onto the attack with just her two fingers!

Almost the entire crowd gasped in that instant!

Abbess Mother Serendipity was an extremely powerful Emei Sect Elder! Her attack was as quick as lightning!

However, Ophelia actually managed to intercept such a fierce attack.

Everyone was thoroughly shocked! It turned out this sexy and alluring Elixir Association's Chairlady was also an expert!

Abbess Mother Serendipity furrowed her eyebrows as she tried to move the sword's hilt yet it could not even budge.

Ophelia smiled faintly and said, "Abbess Mother Serendipity, you're a prominent person from Emei Sect. It'll seem inappropriate for you to injure someone during the Elixir Competition."

Chapter 334

Ophelia glanced at Darryl before continuing. "If there are any grudges between both of you, consider settling it in private."

As the Chairlady of the Jiangnan Elixir Association, she could not allow such an incident to happen.

Ophelia used her fingers and gently flick the blade upon finishing her words.

Ding!

A sharp ringing reverberated from the sword as Abbess Mother Serendipity felt a wave of energy against her and could barely hold onto the longsword before staggered a few steps backward.

"Miss Lane, Darryl is a horrible person. He violated his sister-in-law and was even kicked out of his family. How could such a man have the right to stand atop this battle stage?" Abbess Mother Serendipity exclaimed in anger.

The crowd was in an uproar upon hearing her words! They started judging and berating Darryl!

"I can't believe this live-in son-in-law is such a person."

"Is this even something a human will do?"

At that moment, Kent could not hold back his laughter. "It seems Darryl indulges himself in such acts even to the extent of laying his hand on his own sister-in-law, tsk."

Megan speechlessly bit her lip tightly. She believed Darryl was not that kind of person. However, Abbess Mother Serendipity announced it during such an occasion. How could it be false?

Darryl's expression was flushed with anger as he stood on the stage.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was not aware of the truth, and yet she dared take matters into her own hands without understanding anything!?

Darryl stepped forward and coldly said, "Abbess Mother Serendipity, I'm telling you right now that I 've never done such a thing."

He still dared to argue! Abbess Mother Serendipity' s chest trembled with rage. Old Master Darby had said it himself that Darryl violated Rebecca. How could it be untrue?

'This brat doesn't have the guts to admit to his own actions. Is he even a man?' Abbess Mother Serendipity thought.

Ophelia could not help but stare at Darryl for a

moment. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, his action truly violated the code of the martial arts world, but we're still in the middle of a competition. Perhaps you should calm down."

Ophelia looked at Darryl and said, "Come with me."

She slowly walked down the battle stage with Darryl following behind her.

They walked to the backstage where Ophelia halted her steps and turned herself toward Darryl. "Are you interested in visiting the Elixir Association?"

Truth be told, Ophelia was a marvelous beauty.

She was simply flawless from every perspective upon seeing her from such a close distance. She was tall, slim, had slender legs, and an exquisite face. There was not even one imperfection on her.

Her maturity was simply alluring with the addition of her slightly curled long hair.

However, Darryl's expression remained indifferent and without a second thought said, "I'm not interested."

'What's the use of such beauty? You're supposed to be the Elixir Association's Chairlady. There was nothing wrong with the Heavenly Restoration Pill that I refined, but you determined I was unsuccessful simply because the color was incorrect,

' thought Darryl.

Darryl felt that his thoughts and Ophelia's interests were not aligned. Naturally, he would not be interested.

'Not interested?'

Ophelia furrowed her eyebrows as she found it funny. Countless people would like to get close to her because she was the Elixir Association's Chairlady.

An invitation from Ophelia would not just happen to anyone even in their wildest of dreams.

However, Darryl rejected it so willingly.

How interesting.

Ophelia curiously asked, "Why don't you wanna go?"

Darryl bluntly replied, "There is nothing wrong with the Heavenly Restoration Pill which I refined and yet you said I've failed. As such, I'm not interested in you or your so-called Elixir Association."

Chapter 335

Ophelia smiled upon hearing Darryl's words and said, "How would you know the Heavenly Restoration Pill that you refined did not fail?"

Darryl smiled plainly and confidently replied, "I've never failed at refining pills."

It would be hard to fail with a magnificent book such as the Infinite Elixir Manual!

Ophelia nodded her head. "You're an interesting kid with such confidence. You should know that ever since I became the Chairlady of Jiangnan Elixir Association, none dared to reject me as you did. Even Pill Refining Masters and the Six Sects Elders were respectful to me, yet you dare reject my invitation to the Elixir Association?"

Darryl laughed without saying a word as he found her arrogance amusing.

'You look barely older than me and yet you're calling me a kid?' Darryl thought.

At that moment, Ophelia suddenly smiled and slowly said, "Kid, the truth is the pill that you refined is indeed the real deal. You didn't fail at refining the pill."

What?

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows.

'Damn, what's going on? I obviously succeeded so why did you say I failed just now? Is something shady going on?' Darryl thought.

Ophelia saw that Darryl was filled with anger and continued explaining, "I understand you must be really dissatisfied with the outcome, but I did so for your own good. Think about it, what will happen had I publicly announced the Heavenly Restoration Pill you refined is indeed genuine?"

What would happen?

Darryl smiled lightly and unhesitatingly replied, " What would happen is that Miss Monte would be crowned champion."

Ophelia shook her head. "Do you know why I called you a kid? It's because you're immature. You should know many prominent families' members came to watch today's competition and among them are those rich and powerful kids who for various reasons are unable to cultivate. If they knew you could refine the Heavenly Restoration Pill that would allow them to cultivate, don't you think they will capture and force you to refine pills for them?"

This...

Darryl calmed down upon hearing her words. He felt a little anxious after some consideration.

Ophelia was right. Darryl would be in danger had the truth of him being able to refine the Heavenly Restoration Pill was revealed during the competition.

They would do everything they could to get their hands on the Heavenly Restoration Pill from Darryl.

Darryl could not help but take a look at Ophelia.

She was truly mature despite being barely older than him. She had properly considered her thoughts and actions.

Ophelia continued, "There's another reason. This Elixir Competition is organized by the Six Sects. You 're just a mere Elixir Assistant and not even any of the Six Sects' disciples. Where will their reputation be had you refined the best pill? That's why I could not publicly announce you and Isabella as the champion. Don't worry, I'll have the Elixir Association send a reward to Isabella according to the standard of a champion once the competition is over."

Ophelia was filled with admiration for Darryl. He was an absolutely talented man for being able to attract three Elixir Clouds at such a young age.

However, she was not aware that Darryl could not only attract Elixir Clouds but also easily attract thunder and lightning during pill refinement. The condition was he needed enough time and ingredients!

Darryl shrugged his shoulders and said, "Fine, contact Miss Monte once everything is over and issue her reward."

Ophelia gently nodded her head and smiled. "In all honesty kid, you're truly a pill refining genius. Are you interested in being my apprentice?"

Being her apprentice?

Darryl could not help but laugh and decisively shook his head. "I'm sorry, I'm not interested." He left backstage as soon as he finished his words.

Darryl was utterly speechless when he thought back to what had happened during the competition on his journey home.

Damn, today was such a mess.

First, it was Abbess Mother Serendipity who wanted to kill Darryl because of a rumor she heard somewhere.

He then managed to refine the Heavenly Restoration Pill which would clearly help Isabella

become the champion but Ophelia said that it could not be announced in the end.

The most amusing of all was that Ophelia even wanted Darryl to be her apprentice.

What elixir pill could he not refine with the Infinite Elixir Manual such that he needed Ophelia to be his mentor?

...

The time was 8pm.

Darryl sat on the sofa after dinner and watched some television with Lily.

Holding his wife while watching television was such a wonderful thing to do after a long and hard day. The matter which made him happiest was Caelan's phone call before going to bed.

Chapter 336

Darryl was so excited by Caelan's phone call that he could not fall asleep!

The Eternal Life Palace Sect had eradicated the Dixon family!

Timothy Dixon, the patriarch of the Dixon family was killed under Caelan's plans. His four stepsons—Zephyr, Nimbus, Levin, and Volt—were captured and locked in the Eternal Life Palace Sect's hall.

Donoghue who was previously slashed by Darryl over 300 times and had not recovered from his injuries received numerous more slashes when Eternal Life Palace Sect eradicated the Dixon family.

However, Donoghue's body was missing when they cleared the battlefield.

Caelan insisted that Donoghue would not be able to survive after suffering such heavy injuries.

Caelan sighed toward the end of their conversation. "Hall Master, the Dixon family committed all sorts of vile acts since their main income comes from prostitution and gambling. They own several large hotels that are also involved in the illegal sex industry, casinos, and even oppress the local

residents. Yunzhou City's residents are displeased but dare not say a word against the Dixon family."

Darryl was excited and gratified as he furrowed his eyebrows. "Shut down all those illegal businesses. We must not bully the locals once we take over the Dixon family. Do you understand? We shall only conduct proper businesses and nothing illegal!"

"Understood."

...

Darryl rushed to Hexad School early the next morning.

Darryl was thrilled upon the eradication of the Dixon family and slept soundly the previous night. He was refreshed and invigorated when he woke up that morning.

He saw that Dax had already arrived when he reached the classroom.

Darryl walked toward Dax with a beaming smile and felt something off with the classroom atmosphere as he sat down.

The people around Darryl looked at him with eyes were filled with ridicule and mockery while trying to hold back their laughter.

Darryl sighed. There was no doubt they must have

known about what happened yesterday at the Elixir Competition.

Darryl pretended not to have seen them and smile at Dax before softly saying, "Dax, I have good news for you. The Dixon family has been eradicated."

Such good news naturally must be shared with good friends.

Dax laughed upon hearing Darryl's words. "Darryl, I know about this last night. I hear none of them were left alive. F*ck, I'm so happy simply thinking about it!"

Dax continued, "It's a pity I don't know who did it, else I'll properly thank him."

A pretty figure stepped into the classroom as Dax finished his words. It was their teacher, Isabella.

Their first lesson was Alchemy. Isabella wore an emerald green dress that looked modern and refined.

"Miss Monte is a real beauty."

Several of the male students in the class could not help but exclaim.

However, everyone could tell Isabella was in a bad mood today. There was a sullen expression on her pretty face. It was obvious she was still depressed

from losing the Elixir Competition yesterday.

Darryl sighed as he thought about looking for an opportunity to console her.

At that moment, Miles grinned and said, "Miss Monte, I hear that you participated in the Elixir Competition yesterday."

The students in the classroom all gazed at Isabella upon hearing his words.

In truth, everyone already knew about what happened yesterday. They had no intentions of mocking Isabella, but rather they wanted to take the opportunity to embarrass Darryl.

Isabella merely nodded as her face was flushed red with embarrassment from the mentioning of yesterday's Elixir Competition.

Sure enough, Miles looked toward Darryl with a face filled with ridicule upon seeing Isabella nodding. " Darryl, you know how to refine pills too? Why didn' t you help Miss Monte win the championship?"

Several of the other students jeered after Miles finished his words.

"That's right. Miss Monte, you've got too much faith in Darryl. How would a live-in son-in-law like him know how to refine pills?"

"Exactly, Miss Monte won't have lost so badly if

not for his fooling around. She isn't even in the top 10."

Darryl could not be bothered entertaining them and simply smiled with indifference.

Isabella was a little anxious and stepped in. "All of you, stop mentioning it anymore. Actually, it was my own mistake during yesterday's Elixir Competition, it has nothing to do with Darryl."

Declan could not help but stand up and said, "Miss Monte, you don't have to explain yourself. It's clear to everyone that Darryl has dragged you down. You're a kind person that's why you won't be impolite to say it out."

Declan looked at Darryl and continued, "Darryl, Miss Monte lost so badly because of you. Don't you have anything to say for yourself?"

Chapter 337

Darryl was utterly speechless.

'F*ck these brats. Isabella and I participated in the Elixir Competition ourselves. What does it have to do with any of you? You guys are talking a lot of nonsense,' thought Darryl in anger.

Daisy stood up before Darryl could speak and disdainfully said, "Darryl, I can't believe you still have guts to be here. I won't even dare attend school if I'm the one who ruined Miss Monte's chance of winning."

Dax could not hold back any longer and slammed the table. He stood up and took a look around the class before scolding, "Do you guys have nothing better to do? Darryl and Isabella's participation in the competition is none of your business."

The entire class immediately fell silent upon hearing Dax's scolding.

Declan was the only one who stood up, bit the bullet, and said, "Dax, we're just telling it as it is. Darryl himself didn't even argue about it, so why are you being so unreasonable? So what if you're a powerful man in Donghai City? This is the Hexad

School and fighting is prohibited."

"F*ck you."

Dax had no regard for school rules as he pulled out a metal pipe from his desk drawer and moved toward Declan.

"Just leave it, Dax. There's no point arguing with them." Darryl quickly held him back.

Darryl and Dax got into a fight on the first day of school and were punished to run a hundred laps around the sports field. He did not want to run again!

"What a joke!" Dax huffed and sat back down. " Darryl, I can't believe you can put up with their nonsense."

Declan felt emboldened after seeing Dax sitting back down. He pointed at Darryl and said, "Darryl, you probably have nothing left to say since you know you're in the wrong."

The entire classroom burst into laughter in an instant.

Isabella was anxious and said, "Students, enough. Stop bringing up the past. Let's begin our lesson."

Isabella felt sorry for Darryl.

She lost the competition yesterday because of her

own mistake. Never did she think Darryl would be the one to shoulder the blame.

The class settled down a little after hearing Miss Monte's scolding, but several students still quietly spoke about Darryl.

At that moment, footsteps were heard by the classroom door, and following it was a knock on the door.

"Excuse me, is this Miss Monte?"

The entire class immediately focused their gaze toward that direction. A man in a suit stood by the door who was clearly not an ordinary man with his refined appearance.

Isabella was about to begin her lesson but placed the textbook down upon hearing the sound. "That would be me. Who would you be?"

The students were very curious.

This person seems like a fine man, could it be Miss Monte's suitor?

At that moment, the man walked in holding an antique box and toward Isabella with a smile. " Greetings Miss Monte, I'm an Elixir Master from Jiangnan Elixir Association. My name is Joel Seaworth. I'm here to present you with your reward." 1

Reward?

Isabella raised her eyebrow. She did not even manage to get into the top 10, how could she get a reward?

At that moment, the entire classroom of students was dumbfounded.

What was going on?

Did Darryl not take Isabella's place and ruined her chances of winning?

Why was there still a reward?

Darryl sat among the crowd's confusion with a smile. It seemed Ophelia was quite a trustworthy person.

Yesterday Ophelia said she was going to provide compensation for Isabella, and today someone had already arrived early with her reward.

Chapter 338

The man handed the box over to Isabella with a smile and said, "The Chairlady mentioned that your group was the true champion of yesterday's competition. She misjudged yesterday, please forgive her for this error. Miss Monte, please accept the champion's reward."

The man turned and left once he finished his words!

Isabella was immediately stunned as she stood in front of the class.

Yesterday's results were misjudged!? The elixir pill which Darryl took over 10 minutes to refine was the champion! Isabella could not help but glanced at Darryl as she felt her legs weaken. She had been a teacher for such a long time and this was the first time she felt such adoration toward a student!

The entire classroom was silent as everyone was dumbfounded!

'What's going on!? Darryl the live-in son-in-law actually won the Elixir Competition Championship!? '

Daisy and Daphne were also speechless as they looked at disbelief Darryl.

At that moment, Isabella walked on her heels toward Darryl with a joyous face. She blushed a little, bit her lip, and said, "Darryl, this is all because of you. Take this reward."

She handed the box over to Darryl.

Isabella's mind was still buzzing even till now.

She could not believe she won the championship. The whole scenario felt like a dream. However, this was all thanks to Darryl's efforts which allowed her to win. Naturally, the reward should belong to him.

Darryl smiled and shook his head. "Miss Monte, you 're too kind. You're the participant in the competition. How can I take this reward from you? You should keep it."

Truth be told, Darryl had no intentions of showing off during the Elixir Competition. He would not have joined the competition on Isabella's behalf had he not saw her fail. It did no matter to him whether he was rewarded or not.

Isabella could only smile and nod upon seeing Darryl's persistence and returned in front of the class.

Isabella was absent-minded as she taught her lesson.

Circe turned around halfway through the lesson and

softly asked, "Darryl, what pill did you refine yesterday?"

Circe did not attend the Elixir Competition as she had matters to attend. However, she heard a lot about the competition even before arriving at school today. She heard a disciple from Shaolin Sect refined the Soul Solution Pill.

Which meant the pill Darryl refined must be rarer than Soul Solution Pill.

Darryl thought for a moment and smiled. "It's nothing much, just a simple elixir pill."

Upon hearing his response, Circe gently asked, " Darryl, can I ask a favor? A friend of mine wants to have an elixir pill refined."

Darryl smiled and said, "Sure."

Darryl felt it would be rude to reject such a beautiful lady. After all, Circe had invited him out for meals twice but he did not attend.

"Aren't you going to ask me what pill my friend wants?" Circe asked in shock.

"I can make any pill they want," said Darryl plainly.

The Infinite Elixir Manual recorded methods to refine over a thousand different elixir pills. Darryl could pretty much refine any pill so long it was not

extremely rare.

Circe could not help but glanced at Darryl a couple more times. Everyone called him a good for nothing live-in son-in-law, but he does not seem that useless at all.

Dax was filled with admiration for Darryl and subtly directed a thumbs up toward him.

'Darryl is such a capable man. Even a beauty like Circe asked him for help,' thought Dax.

Dax then looked toward Circe and said, "Circe, you can come to me as well if there's anything else you need help with. I have great connections in Donghai City. Just let me know if anyone in Donghai City is disrespectful toward you, I'll make sure..."

Circe smiled and interrupted Dax before he could finish his sentence. "Thanks, but no thanks."

She immediately turned her body away. A beauty like Circe was obviously going to act arrogant and superior.

Motherf*cker!

Dax scratched his head while feeling dejected and softly whispered to himself, "Sigh, she so simply rejected me. She's truly a femme fatale."

"Dax Sanders, shut your mouth." At that moment,

Isabella stared at Dax with furrowed eyebrows.

However, Isabella's eyes showed a gentle expression when it landed on Darryl.

Chapter 339

It was 8pm.

Donghai City truly portrayed itself as a vibrant and bustling city from being brightly illuminated.

Darryl had arrived at a villa community in the suburbs upon Circe's invitation. This villa's front faced mountains while its back was against a lake, its location was pretty good but a little remote.

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows as he stood in front of the villa and could not help but asked, "Circe, why did you bring me all the way here? Aren't I supposed to help your friend refine a pill?"

Circe was extraordinarily beautiful, alluring, and mysterious tonight with her black slip dress.

Circe smiled at Darryl's inquiry and gently replied, " That's because my friends are here. My best friends and I are having a gathering here today. I bought this villa just yesterday to have fun with my friends, we don't like being disturbed that's why it's so remote."

Damn.

Circe bought a whole villa just to have fun with her

friends.

She was a young lady from one of Kyoto's richest families after all, so it's natural her spending would be so lavish.

Darryl was completely dumbfounded when he stepped through the villa's main entrance. The several girls' playful sounds could be heard from within the villa.

This villa was furnished quite extravagantly!

Its facilities were also well-equipped with a garden as well as an outdoor swimming pool. The environment was peaceful yet was not lacking in elegance. It was not the least inferior to the Sanders Mansion.

The villa's interior was very lively with a small party being held by the swimming pool.

A dozen or so bikini-clad women were drinking while chatting with laughter.

Several beauties were also having fun playing and swimming in the pool.

These women were not as beautiful as Circe, but were still quite pretty!

Darryl was rather overwhelmed by the sight of so many attractive figures.

So many beauties, it was a pity Dax was not here!

"Circe is here."

At that moment, the crowd of beauties came over with a curious look on their faces upon seeing Darryl.

"Who's this guy?"

"He looks silly and funny."

"He's also wearing such cheap clothes. Why would Circe have a peasant as her friend?"

These women were young ladies from prominent families and also Circe's close friends. They were not locals from Donghai City of course.

These women knew Circe was always arrogant, classy, and had never taken an interest in any man. No man could even walk with her at night.

All the ladies were astonished at the sight of Darryl.

At that moment, Darryl's gaze was drawn toward a particular woman. She was the most noticeable among these women with long red hair and particularly beautiful. This woman was...Evelyn Featherstone!

Darryl and Evelyn had indeed 'met' twice previously.

The first time was during Roger's Auction where Evelyn's grandfather was poisoned from an elixir pill and Darryl saved him.

The second was when Darryl stole Circe's cellphone. Evelyn made a video call that night...and had just finished bathing...

Darryl could not help but reminisce about that incident back then.

At that moment, Evelyn hastily walked up and coldly said, "Darryl, how dare you show up here?"

Evelyn flicked her wrist and pulled out a dagger as she finished her words!

Evelyn still remembered that incident clearly. She had just finished bathing and wanted to chat with Circe. Little did she know it would be Darryl at the other end of the video call.

Evelyn had never dated anyone even at her age.

However, she had exposed herself to Darryl!

Never had she thought she would meet him here today of all places!

Darryl scratched his head and said, "Miss Evelyn, I believe we're well acquainted with one another. There's no need to get so personal."

Chapter 340

Darryl put on an innocent face before continuing, " Honestly, it truly isn't my intention to..."

"Shut up!"

Evelyn blushed and gritted her teeth as she cut Darryl off and angrily thought, 'Darryl is so shameless. He had seen me in the video call that time and us now acting innocent. Such a nasty man.'

However, there was no way for her to retort. She was surrounded by her close friends after all and it would be embarrassing for Evelyn if they knew what happened.

At that moment, Circe walked over and asked with surprise, "Evelyn, do you guys know each other? What are you doing?"

Evelyn blushed again and said, "Circe, I won't know this scumbag of course."

Scumbag?

Darryl had a wry smile on his face and seriously said, "No, no, we don't know each other..."

Evelyn gave Darryl a stare and could not help but asked Circe, "Why did you bring him here?"

Circe smiled gently and replied, "He's here to refine a pill for you."

What?

Darryl was there to refine a pill for Evelyn?

Evelyn was stunned and a little anxious. "Circe, stop messing around. How could he know anything about pill refinement?"

Even famous Pill Refining Masters might not be able to refine the pill that Evelyn wanted.

It was even more impossible for Darryl to do it.

At that moment, the other ladies surrounded them and could not hold back their laughter.

"Circe, are you sure this guy knows how to refine pills?"

"Yeah, he looks so dumb. He looks nothing like a person who knows pill refinement."

The ladies covered their mouths and laughed at Darryl after finishing their words.

Circe chuckled and said, "He's a man who does know pill refinement."

She turned her head to Darryl and continued, " Darryl, do you know how to refine the Yang Pill? Evelyn needs it."

Darryl laughed and said, "Yang Pill? Does Evelyn's abdomen hurt when she's on her period? The Yang Pill's function is to manage abdomen pains during menstruation."

"You!" Evelyn stomped her feet in anger. Her abdomen indeed hurts during her periods but the way Darryl said it was too crude.

Circe then explained Evelyn's situation to Darryl.

It turned out Evelyn had been practicing the Immaculate Girl Scripture cultivation method for the past two years.

This cultivation method was rather popular in the martial arts world. Evelyn's power increased drastically after practicing this cultivation method, but there was a downside. The Immaculate Girl Scripture was a Yin-type cultivation method that only females can cultivate using it.

After cultivating the Immaculate Girl Scripture, Evelyn would be in extreme pains during her menstruation cycles with a chilly feeling all over her body.

Later on, she found that the Yang Pill could dispel those chilly energies in her body. Unfortunately, this pill refinement method had been long lost.

Circe tried for years to find the Yang Pill for Evelyn

through her personal connections but was still unable to do so.

Evelyn was embarrassed beyond measure with her face as red as a tomato. She stomped her feet and said, "Circe, how could you tell him everything?"

Darryl had already seen all of Evelyn during that previous video call and he even knows her secrets now. Evelyn felt utterly embarrassed.

Circe smiled as Evelyn was like a little sister to her.

Moreover, Evelyn's matter was not anything shameful that should not be known.

Circe had a serious look on her face as she looked at Darryl and asked, "Can you refine the Yang Pill?"

Darryl smiled slightly and nodded. "Lucky for Evelyn, I happen to know how to refine the pill. However, she tried to kill me with a dagger just now so I won't refine this pill for her. Unless... She begs me for it."

"You!"

Chapter 341

Evelyn stumped on her feet as she scoffed, "Want me to beg you? Just keep dreaming!"

Hmph.

Darryl shrugged. "It doesn't really matter, go find someone else to refine the pill then. Goodbye."

Darryl turned and left with that. However, Circe stopped him when he almost reached the door.

"Darryl, please don't be mad. Evelyn really needs this pill," pleaded Circe softly.

Darryl laughed as he knew too much Yin energy would result in painful menstruation cramps and Evelyn would suffer terribly every month without the Yang Pill. Darryl was just messing with Evelyn but when he saw that she did not even speak up, he turned around and was prepared to leave.

"I-I beg you on behalf of her, is that okay?" Circe panicked as she was afraid Darryl would leave. She bit her lips and pleaded softly, "I beg you on behalf of Evelyn. P-Please, help Evelyn to refine the pill."

Circe could never imagine herself saying that! She was usually as cold as ice, especially in front of

men, yet she pleaded Darryl today.

"Circe!" Evelyn pulled on her hand before yelling at Darryl, "You! You better watch out! I don't need your help!"

"Aww..." Darryl laughed. He found her so cute that he could not help messing with her. "Your best friend Circe has begged me. Of course, I'll help you even if you don't need it."

The ladies beside them frowned in confusion.

"Circe, this dude doesn't seem like he knows how to refine the pill. Is he lying?"

"Yeah, he would have earned a fortune selling them if he really does know how to refine those pills. Look at him, he's dressed in cheap clothes and doesn't seem rich at all."

"I know! In addition, Yang Pill's recipe has been lost for a long time."

The ladies gossiped among themselves.

Indeed, the Yang Pill's recipe had been lost for a very long time such that even famous Pill Refining Masters could not make it. How could Darryl even be able to refine the pill? Who was he kidding?

Circe knew Darryl was not someone who would fool around. She just smiled at their comments and said,

"Darryl, follow me."

Darryl nodded and followed her to the second floor. She brought him into a room filled with rare herbs and ingredients.

Damn, so many ingredients? Not just any ingredients but those rare spiritual herbs!

Circe smiled. "Darryl, just grab whatever you need to refine the pill."

Circe had taken many ingredients from her family in an attempt to help Evelyn, yet she had not been able to get hold of the recipe. Darryl started picking dozens or so ingredients out of the pile without hesitation.

The ingredients he picked were not only for the Yang pill. In fact, he picked an additional seven to eight herbs meant for other pill refinements.

Circe smiled and said to him as he got out of the room, "Darryl, feel free to find a place for the pill refinement. My friends won't be disturbing you." Circe went off to the swimming area after saying that.

Darryl smiled and went to the backyard. There was a pavilion in the backyard which seemed to be a good location. Darryl started refining the pill after finding a porcelain pot. He was able to focus at first,

but his ears soon started picking up the ladies' laughter from the swimming area which was annoyingly tempting and distracting!

Damn it, here he was refining pills all by himself while those gorgeous ladies were having fun in the swimming pool!

A loud ping was soon heard before three pills shot out from the pot.

Haha! Success!

Darryl grabbed the three flying pills with a proud grin on his face.

Chapter 342

The first pill was Yang Pill which Evelyn needed while the remaining two were Mixture Pill and Blooming Pill made from those extra ingredients Darryl picked earlier. Those two pills were rare and special. As Darryl happily kept them in his pocket, he suddenly felt a strong presence behind him, and instinctively turned only to be shocked by what he saw.

A short bald monk of around 1.5m was walking toward him. He exuded an oppressive temperament air while a black Scorpio was tattooed on his bald head.

Damn it, a tattoo on his skull!? Although it seemed rather foolish, it was no doubt very intimidating but the most intimidating part was the aura he exuded. He was not an ordinary man.

"Who are you?" Darryl asked after staring at him for a few seconds.

The man was obviously a high ranking cultivator. Was he perhaps Circe's security guard? However, wasn't it rather unlikely to hire a monk as a guard?

The monk did not respond as he marched toward

Darryl. He stopped in front of him, without uttering a word, and instantly pressed an acupoint on Darryl.

Darryl was caught off guard. He wanted to flinch but was too slow to react and instantly rendered immobile from his pressed acupoint.

Damn it!

Darryl stared at the monk both terrified and angry. " Wait, who are you? I didn't offend you?"

This monk was so powerful and must at least be a Martial Marquis!

The monk did not respond as he pressed on Darryl's acupoint again to shut him up. He swiftly and effortlessly carried him before jumping out of the villa with both of them disappearing at the blink of an eye.

By the poolside.

It had been more than two hours as Evelyn sat on the chair and pouted, "Circe, are you sure that dude knows how to refine a pill? He must have lied to you!"

Evelyn still did not trust that Darryl could refine the pill. After Darryl saw her naked on the video call, Evelyn had asked her men to investigate his background and found that he was just a famous live -in son-in-law in Donghai City. How could a live-

in son-in-law refine pills?

The ladies nodded with laughter upon saying that.

"Yeah, Circe. He must have lied to you. I bet he saw that you're pretty and wanted to get close to you. That's why he lied to you claiming he knows how to refine pills."

"It's been so long, he probably ran away."

Circe shook her head. "Nah, he won't lie to me. He took part in the Elixir Competition and really knows how to refine pills."

"Oh Circe, perhaps he can refine some cheap and entry-level pills, but definitely not this."

"Yeah, even members of the Elixir Association couldn't make this Yang Pill. How could he know? He must have lied in order to get close to you."

Circe smiled upon listening to their speculations. " You girls are overthinking. Why don't we go and check the backyard if you don't believe me?"

Circe led the girls to the pavilion in the backyard upon saying that.

However, the pavilion was empty without any traces of Darryl despite those flames under the pot still burning.

Circe trembled at the sight as her brows furrowed

while covering her mouth in shock. Did Darryl run away?

The ladies looked at each other with a knowing smile. "Circe, it looks like we are right! He doesn't know how to refine pills and lie to you! Don't trust these people next time. Men are not trustworthy!"

"What a douche!" Evelyn scowled with an embarrassed glare.

'This douche not only lied to me but also Circe! I won't let it go.'

Chapter 343

On Elysian Island.

Today, the island was livelier than usual with brightly lit lights and rows of disciples patrolling. Darryl's acupoints were pressed by the monk and could not speak nor move. He was scared when he saw the monk bring him to the island.

Did the Cult Master find out about his Ascension of the Nine Dragons mastery?

Or did the Cult Master find out about Darryl's affair with the Cult Mistress?

Damn! His mind buzzed with the thought of that.

The monk carried Darryl while avoiding those patrolling disciples to a room before gently knocking on the door.

This... Isn't this...room the Cult Mistress's room?

"Cult Mistress, he's here," announced the monk with a deep and powerful voice.

"Hmph, come in." A gentle voice was heard from within the room.

The Monk carried Darryl into the room with her

permission and dropped him on the floor before leaving.

'Damn it, at least place me gentler!' Darryl murmured as his body was sore from being thrown, but his eyes soon started going wild when he looked up.

The Cult Mistress, Monica was sitting on a chair inside her room filled with an enchanting scent. Her exquisite and elegant body was dressed in a purple silk dress with a delicately calm expression on her face.

Gulp.

Darryl could not help but swallow his saliva. The Cult Mistress seemed more enchanting than before.

Monica scowled upon watching his lingering gaze, " Darryl, what're you looking at!"

With that, she tossed two nuts from the plate at Darryl which landed on his acupoints and freed him.

Phew.

Darryl stretched his arms and smiled bitterly. "Cult Mistress, why did you kidnap me here?"

Monica refuted, "What do you think? Tomorrow is the Cult Master's birthday. Have you forgotten? As an Elder Master, do you know how serious your

crime is if you didn't come? You should thank me for bringing you here!"

Damn it! Darryl ruffled his hair. He really had forgotten about it.

A few days ago, Skyler Burr called to remind him, but he was caught up with appraising antiques and the Elixir Competition for the past few days that he had completely forgotten about.

Darryl's eyes sparkled and smiled at Monica. "Cult Mistress, are you worried the Cult Master will kill me if I offended him, therefore you won't be able to see me again?"

A faint blush appeared on her cheek upon hearing that before she glared at Darryl. "How dare you flirt with me!?"

She consciously bit her lips after she spoke. Somehow, she could not stop thinking about Darryl since the last time they parted from reminiscing what happened that night...

Perhaps she had fallen for him after what happened?

No... No way! She was the Cult Mistress!

Monica tried changing the topic. "Darryl, how's the mission I've assigned to you?"

'Hmmph, she seemed to be excited after seeing me,

yet tried to act as if it's nothing,' thought Darryl.

Chapter 344

'Is she in love with me?' He answered her with a grin with that in mind, "Of course, I haven't forgotten about the mission you've assigned me. I've entered the Hexad School as a student and been waiting for the right moment."

Damn, how could it be easy to steal something from the principal? He was not even able to meet the Cult Master despite being on the same island!

Monica smiled. "Hope I can hear some good news from you soon."

Darryl thoughtfully nodded before showing a bitter face. "Cult Mistress, this is not an easy mission. Do you know how many times I've sneaked into the principal's office with no results? The last I did so, I was found out by the security guard and almost got beaten to death! I still have those wounds on me."

'I'm so smart to come up with this. She'll definitely fall for it.'

As expected, Monica's face was flushed with panic and concern as she instinctively walked toward him. "You're hurt? Where? Let me have a look."

Monica did not understand why she was so

concerned about Darryl.

As Monica got closer to him, the floral scent grew stronger along with his courage. He hugged her in his arms and flirted. "Cult Mistress, I'm not hurt. It' s just that I haven't seen you for such a long time and missed you."

At that moment, Darryl was certain Monica liked him, hence she would not be angry at him. Monica softly cried out with her delicate face which was overwhelmed from embarrassment. She wanted to fight back, but Darryl's alluringly attractive and manly scent made her weak in the knees.

"Darryl, you..." Monica was embarrassed and angry, but could not lash out at him.

Darryl did not let go of her as he suddenly leaned forward and kissed her.

As the Cult Mistress, no other man had the courage to treat her this way. After what happened with Darryl the other night, she had dearly missed him. She now fell in love again from his kiss.

Suddenly, laughter came from outside.

"Haha! Darling, oh darling!"

Oh no! The Cult Master was coming!

Monica trembled at the resonance of his voice as

she hastily fixed her hair and pushed Darryl away. She said in a low voice, "The Cult Master is coming, you..."

Huh?

The Cult Master!?

Darryl was caught off guard.

Damn it! Why now? Monica and Darryl being in the same room at night during this hour. If the Cult Master saw them, how would he react?

What now?

Darryl broke out in cold sweat with panic and wished he could just vanish in thin air.

Monica regained her calm shortly after fixing her clothes and pointed at the bottom of her bed. " Quick!"

Darryl understood right away and hid under her bed without hesitation.

Darryl let out a soft relief upon settling under her bed. No wonder she was the Cult Mistress. She acted so calmly even during a crisis.

The Cult Master had in the meantime entered the room. Despite his hair turned white from old age, he was still quite a handsome man with a tall and strong physique.

Monica still smiled at the sight of him although internally she was struggling with channeling every effort to hide her unease and panicky feelings. "Cult Master, what brings you here at this hour?"

Normally, he was either cultivating or resting at this hour. What was he doing here tonight?

Chapter 345

The Cult Master waved his sleeves as he walked toward the bed and sat beside, "I'm thrilled tonight, hence I came here to find you. Haha!"

Ever since Monica married him at the island, the Cult Master had been treating her with so much love and care. He would satisfy anything she asked for as long it was not sexual, therefore the disciples treated her as if they were serving the Cult Master. Anyone caught disrespecting her might end up receiving the death penalty. However, Monica treated the Cult Master with no particular enthusiasm or coldness as she had never been truly happy ever since moving to the island.

Monica poured him a cup of tea and gently blew on it before asking, "May I ask what made you so happy?"

The Cult Master patted the empty space beside him and signaled for her to sit there before smilingly explained, "Darling, I found an interesting book written by the Thirteenth Cult Master during his spare time in the library."

"The book recorded a type of ventriloquism which could change a person's voice. I find it interesting

so I learned a thing or two. Let me show you!" said the Cult Master enthusiastically.

"Sure!" Monica nodded and looked at him with anticipation.

An old man's voice came out as the Cult Master opened his mouth, "Dar...ling!"

The voice was different from his usual voice. It was the same 'Darling' word that came out but it sounded much older than usual.

He smiled and opened his mouth again to call out, " Darling."

However, it was no longer an old voice. Instead, it sounded like a teenage boy!

Monica tried her best to smile with appreciation. " Oh my! This seems so cool! How did you do it?" Her heart was thumping uncontrollably as she said so since Darryl was right under her bed and nobody knew what would happen next!

What if he accidentally made a sound? His life would be over with if the Cult Master found out about it! Truthfully, she was not impressed by the Cult Master's ventriloquism performance but had to pretend as if she was interested in order to avoid Darryl from being found.

The Cult Master laughed and excitedly explained, "I'

m glad my darling finds this interesting! If you like, I'm happy to teach you. It's actually quite simple, you only need to transfer the inner energy up from your energy field to your throat, then you'll be able to control your voice.

Darryl—who was hiding under the bed—seemed interested in this technique. He silently transferred his energy up to his throat which instantly caused his throat to feel different.

Of course, he dared not make a sound! The Cult Master out there was no joke. If he was found out, he might immediately die.

Meanwhile, Monica's eyes wandered around, and smiled. "My dear Cult Master, you came all the way here to show this to me?"

All these years, the Cult Master had been trying all kinds of tricks and treats to entertain her. Although he did put in a lot of effort, they were mostly small tricks that Monica was not interested in.

Especially after what she had with Darryl the other night. She felt that Darryl was the best man....

'Arghh!! What am I thinking?' Whenever Monica thought of Darryl, her cheeks would flush red.

Luckily, the Cult Master had not realized the change in her expression as he smiled and said with a

gentle tone, "Whenever I come across something interesting, you're the first person I'd like to show it to. Oh yeah, there's one more thing. The Eternal Life Palace Sect sent me a birthday gift just now."

The Eternal Life Palace Sect?

Monica frowned. "Why will they send you a birthday gift? The Heaven Cult and Eternal Life Palace Sect always had a bad relationship. They even kidnapped our Oracles not long ago. Why did they send you a gift now?"

The Cult Master nodded with a confused expression and said, "You're right. Our relationship with them has always been strained." He then continued with a more hopeful tone, "However, the Six Sects' disciples had always seen both Heaven Cult and Eternal Life Palace Sect as the cults! The Six Sects had always worked closely with one another in trying to diminish our two cults! Therefore, however much we dislike one another, we shouldn't ruin each other since we're both against the Six Sects. Perhaps this is why they sent me a gift as a gesture of friendship?"

A smile appeared on his face as he looked at Monica. "Guess what they sent me?"

"What is it?" she asked curiously.

The Cult Master said with a grin, "A volume of the

Supreme Mystery Scripture."

A shiver went through Darryl who was hiding under the bed as he announced the book title.

Huh?

The Supreme Mystery Scripture!?

Chapter 346

'Was this not the Scripture Cult Mistress asked me to steal?'

Monica also trembled with shock as she stared in disbelief at the Cult Master. "What?"

The Supreme Mystery Scripture was a book every cultivator wanted to get hold of. The Scripture had a total of seven volumes with each volume's cover being red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo, and violet respectively.

According to a myth, there was a big secret hidden in these seven books. If one could get hold of all seven then that person would discover a secret that could make him the strongest in the world.

"My dear Cult Master, who won't want to keep this for themselves? Why will the Eternal Life Palace Sect suddenly be so kind and give this to you?" Monica doubtfully questioned.

The Cult Master just smiled it off. "Don't worry, darling. I don't know what they're trying to do, but I might as well keep this without asking further questions since they sent it over!"

Monica nodded but did not say anything more.

Though the Cult Master seemed very pleased and continued, "I've now collected three volumes of the Supreme Mystery Scripture. We already have red and green ones. The volume which they just sent me is the yellow one, haha! It seems getting hold of all seven is not so difficult after all!"

Darryl gulped as he heard what the Cult Master said above him. The Cult Master had already collected three of the volumes. One of the volumes was kept by The Hexad School's principal. The Cult Master would possess four of the seven books if he got a hold of this!

One must admit the Heaven Cult was indeed a powerful cult.

Meanwhile, the Cult Master took out the Supreme Mystery Scripture volume and handed it to Monica with a smile. "Darling, I'll leave this with you tonight."

Monica was confused. "Isn't this a precious book? Why did you leave it with me?"

This was the most wanted book in the world of cultivators. Many high-ranking cultivators would do anything to get hold of this book.

The Cult Master let out a sigh and said, "Darling, everyone said that within the seven volumes lies a

big secret upon careful reading. Unfortunately, I've been carefully reading for so many years with no clue! I've thought about it. Perhaps I'm not as smart as you, therefore I'll leave it with you tonight. Perhaps you could learn something from reading it."

Monica was his most trusted person in the world.

Monica smiled and agreed since all she wanted now was for him to leave. "Alright."

The Cult Master sounded pleased upon hearing that. "Thank you, my darling. I'll leave you to it."

He waved and walked away after finishing his words.

Darryl let out a long sigh of relief upon hearing his footsteps.

Damn, he was finally gone!

Darryl felt his body going numb from hiding. He had to admit the Cult Master had an extraordinarily strong aura. Darryl could even feel the oppressive air he exuded from under the bed. Luckily, Darryl had a strong will and did not make any sounds throughout the ordeal. Had it been anyone else, the Cult Master might have found out by now.

Darryl rejoiced as he climbed out of his hiding spot. When his eyes finally laid on Monica again, her cheeks were flushing which only made her seem

even more charming and alluring to Darryl.

Obviously, she was frightened throughout the Cult Master's sudden visit. As Darryl climbed out of the bed, Monica was embarrassed and nervous.

'What if the Cult Master turns and comes back?' Monica raised her delicate hands and pushed Darryl away with that in mind. "Leave! Quick!"

Haha! She was so charming even when she was scared.

Darryl smiled and nodded. "Goodnight, Cult Mistress." Darryl did not immediately leave after saying that.

Instead, he caught Monica off-guard from walking forward and gave her a peck on her cheek before leaving with a grin.

"You..."

Monica trembled a little as her cheeks started flaming with a bright red. She was utterly embarrassed and stumped her feet.

'This man...is getting bolder each time! He almost bumped into the Cult Master earlier and still dares to act so vulgarly! However... Why am I not angry at him at all? I even liked what he did...' as she thought that in her mind, Monica's flush further reddened while feeling completely embarrassed.

Chapter 347

Heaven Cult's island was very lively the next day!

Many cultivators traveled from afar to celebrate the Cult Master's birthday. The Heaven Cult was a powerful cult, hence many powerful people wanted to maintain their relations with this cult.

Over a hundred tables were set up inside the main hall. All high-ranking cult members were present along with their guests as those seats were swiftly taken up.

The Dragon Throne was placed at the very center of the hall as the Cult Master looked very impressive and majestically sitting on it while the Cult Mistress sat beside him.

Monica was dressed in a faint purple long gown and exuded a sense of motherly beauty on top of her alluring and charming figure.

Darryl was appointed as the Elder Master which was the highest rank in the hall right below the Cult Master and Mistress. He was seated on the first chair below both of them.

Right below Darryl was the Four Guardian Kings. This was the first time Darryl had seen all of them

gathered together. Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Peafowl, and Black Tortoise. All four of them were great masters!

The Azure Dragon was a skinny looking middle-aged man who had a green dragon tattooed on his neck. Although he sat quietly and did not speak much, his strong aura was hard to dismiss.

The Vermillion Peafowl was a woman in her thirties which caused Darryl's eyes to brighten the moment he laid eyes on her. She was dressed in a burgundy long dress with dark red hair which nicely complemented her alluring body and appearance. However, an air of danger lingered around her presence which made her seem dangerous to approach just like an enchanting snake.

The Guardian King who shocked Darryl the most was none other than the White Tiger. He was the one who kidnapped him to the Island last night!

'Damn, so it was him after all? No wonder he's so powerful!'

This was also the first time the Cult Master saw Darryl. He frowned and said to Monica, "Darling, Darryl seems to be a young man with very little strength in him. It seems to be a mistake to appoint him as the Elder Master."

The Cult Master was cultivating when Darryl came

to the Island for the first time. Monica was the one who appointed him as the Elder Master, but his cultivation and strength were way too low!

Monica smiled. "My Cult Master, Darryl is indeed not the strongest, but strength can be built since he is young. If it isn't for him, our ten or so Oracles would not have made it back safely. That's why I think he deserves this position."

The Cult Master nodded and smiled. "You're right, we don't lack any high-ranking cultivators nowadays, but we do need more capable young men like him!"

The Four Guardian Kings were not too pleased upon hearing that. Darryl was just a young man yet his ranking was higher than all of them! This was not fair at all, but they could not say anything.

The Cult Master had every right to appoint anyone after all and nobody dared to complain.

Meanwhile, Darryl stood up and smilingly said, " Long live, the Cult Master. Today is your special day, so I've specially prepared you a humble gift." Darryl took out two elixir pills from his pocket.

Darryl knew everyone in the hall did not like him because of his high position since his strength was indeed much lower than most of them after all. Therefore, he had to find ways to please the Cult

Master. Luckily, he made extra two pills at Circe's villa last night and they happened to be the perfect gift for the Cult Master—Mixture Pill and Blooming Pill.

Darryl presented the two pills—one bright pink and the other one dark purple. Both of them exuded a spiritual air that tempted every cultivator in the hall.

The Cult Master became excited as he smilingly asked, "Brilliant! I'm pleased with this thoughtful gift! May I ask what pills are these?"

The Cult Master did know a thing or two about pills refinement. Though he had never seen these two pills they stood out from the rest, especially the bright pink one.

Darryl smiled and explained, "This pink pill is the Blooming Pill. Upon ingestion, it has a rebirth effect which can prolong one's life!" He then picked up the Mixture Pill and smiled. "This is the Mixture pill, it's a healing elixir pill that could heal severely wounded cultivators. If the energy field was injured, this pill will heal and restore the body's energies."

Wow! These two pills were superb!

Everyone in the hall held their breath. All of them knew the energy field was a cultivator's body's most fragile part. The cultivator would become an

ordinary person or even lose his life if their energy field were injured!

However, this Mixture Pill could strengthen and restore the energy field!? It was unbelievably magical! In other words, having this Mixture Pill was akin to having an extra life!

Chapter 348

'These were top-notch spiritual pills, where did he get them from!?' The Cult Master excitedly thought with his face being overwhelmed with pleasure and anticipation. "Haha! Brilliant! Brilliant! The Elder Master is so thoughtful!"

These two pills were the real deal!

Although Darryl was smiling, his heart was secretly hurting as he had refined these for himself later on since the ingredients to make these were too rare and precious! Were it not for those special herbs last night from Circe's villa, he would not be able to refine these.

Regardless, he had no choice since today was the Cult Master's birthday. Had he not shown some kind gestures toward the Cult Master today, the Cult Master might further dislike Darryl.

After gifting the pills, guests made toasts toward the Cult Master who seemed to be pleased and accepted them all as he stomached multiple glasses of drinks. Monica was pleased since it was a festive occasion today and had also drunk quite a lot. Her delicate face gradually turned flush.

After three rounds of drinking.

The Cult Master asked Monica, "Oh yeah, did you find anything from reading the volume?"

Everyone in the hall was high-ranking cultivators and halted their chopsticks when they heard the book's name. All of them knew the volume which the Cult Master just mentioned were none other than the Supreme Mystery Scripture!

Monica shook her head, took out the volume, and softly said, "Darling Cult Master, I've been doing some careful reading, but I can't find anything either."

The Cult Master let out a sigh and frowned upon hearing that. "Sigh...the myth had mentioned that within those seven books lies a big secret. If anyone could discover it, the person will be able to rule the world. I've been studying for so long with no luck. I' m surprised my smart and intelligent wife could not find anything either."

Perhaps the myth was not real?

Everyone held their breath upon watching the Cult Master's face being overwhelmed with disappointment.

After a while, White Tiger stood up and said with a respective tone, "Cult Master, could it be that one has to collect all seven in order to discover the

secret?"

The Cult Master's eyes glittered and nodded. Perhaps that was the reason.

Monica, who was by his side nodded. "It's alright, my Cult Master. Now that we have three of them, I believe we'll get hold of the fourth one soon."

"Praise to our Cult Master, the world's best who will gain all seven volumes!"

The disciples cried out in unison.

The Cult Master nodded with pleasure. The whole point of him mentioning these three volumes he had collected at this occasion was to show his disciples how powerful he was. After all, everyone wanted to get hold of the scripture volumes and he already had three of them!

"Cult Master."

Darryl suddenly stood up and said out loud, "Cult Master, do you mind if I have a look at the three of them?"

Huh?

Was he insane?

Suddenly, everyone in the hall looked at Darryl in confusion. Everyone knew that the Supreme Mystery Scriptures were very precious to the Cult

Master.

How dared him to ask to have a look at them? Even if he was the Elder Master, he should know his place.

The Cult Master's face darkened as his brows tightened.

'This kid is so rude! How dared him to ask for the volumes in front of so many people?' he thought.

Monica pulled on his arm upon watching the Cult Master's expression change and said, "Please, don't be mad. Darryl! What do you think you're doing!?"

At this moment, Vermillion Peafowl could not restrain her anger any longer. "Elder Master, do you know how precious the Supreme Mystery Scripture is? Only our Cult Master is allowed to look at it. Who're you to ask? You've been appointed as the Elder Master for such a short period of time and now you think you have the authority to ask?"

She was not pleased about Darryl being appointed as the Elder Master, therefore she would not let this opportunity to kick him down a notch.

Darryl faintly smiled while being unperturbed by the furious gazes and comments directed at him as he calmly explained, "Cult Master, I don't mean to offend you in any way. I only feel that out of the three volumes, the yellow one seems a bit off. It's

likely to be a fake one."

The red and green volumes seemed 'ancient' at a glance. However, the yellow one sent by the Eternal Life Palace Sect seemed to be a replica. Darryl was gifted at appraising antiques, so he could immediately tell that the yellow volume had gone through an 'aging' process to replicate its ancient-looking appearance.

Chapter 349

The Cult Master frowned as he looked closely in an attempt to differentiate the three of them and said, "This volume is sent to me by the Eternal Life Palace Sect. What's wrong with it?"

Other than its color, they seemed to look similar to each other.

Darryl smiled. "May I please have your trust to look at the yellow volume?"

Meanwhile, the Cult Master doubtfully handed the volume to him.

After accepting the volume, Darryl touched the cover and could not help laughing out loud. He had to admit the replica was skillfully done. However, the paper used was obviously new.

Darryl felt there was a slight bump below the cover page as he flipped through it.

'There's something hidden in here,' he thought.

Suddenly, he ripped the book apart!

Ripped!

Everyone in the hall stared in disbelief as they held

onto their breath from watching him!

'What!? He... He ripped the volume apart!?'

The White Tiger could not stand it any longer as he jumped up and glared at Darryl. "Elder Master, how dare you!?"

Meanwhile, the Vermillion Peafowl added on and scowled, "How dare you rip this volume apart!? Are you tired of living?"

The Supreme Mystery Scripture was the dream of every cultivator and Darryl just ripped it apart.

The Cult Master's face darkened as he rose in anger. He was fed up with the disrespect Darryl showed to him. How dare Darryl damage the volume in front of him and everyone else!? He should not be shown any mercy!

The Cult Master gathered energies from his energy field in fury and a dangerous energy domain was being released.

However, Darryl did not panic at all and took out a black disk after tearing the front page off.

A tapping device!?

Indeed, a tapping device was hidden beneath the cover page.

Meanwhile, Darryl held onto the tapping device and

everyone in the hall including the Cult Master fell silent.

"Cult Master, if I'm not mistaken, the Eternal Life Palace Sect isn't so kind after all. Perhaps they're trying to spy on our cult secrets," said Darryl with a smile.

Smack!

Suddenly, the Cult Master's face was terrifyingly darkened. He smashed the table while terrifying energies were exuding from his body before yelling, "I can't believe they sent us a fake volume with a tapping device in it! They're asking it! Once I get hold of all seven volumes, they'll be the first ones I' ll destroy."

Everyone in the hall shivered and fell silent. The Cult Master's aura was way too intimidating and nobody dared to breathe out loud when he was furious.

Meanwhile, Monica furiously stared at Darryl. She was terrified earlier when she thought Darryl was actually trying to tear the volume.

The Cult Master clenched his fists as his anger started to dissipate. "Elder Master, I'll still be fooled by them if not for you. You did a good thing!"

The Four Guardian Kings looked awkward as he

spoke. All of them previously thought Darryl had been unjustly appointed as the Elder Master, but now it seemed otherwise.

Darryl humbly smiled. "It's my duty."

The Cult Master nodded with pleasure and raised his glass. "Come, I'd like to make a toast to your outstanding knowledge!"

Everyone in the hall started toasted Darryl upon hearing that. All of them knew Darryl was the highest-ranking Elder in the hall right after the Cult Master and Mistress. Everyone wanted to please Darryl especially after what he did earlier.

The dinner had lasted for almost five hours with everyone in the hall ending up either tipsy or drunk at the table.

Monica also had one too many glasses to drink. She had her palm on her forehead with her drunken face being even more alluring than usual. Her cheeks were flushed red and her eyes squinting as she exuded an air of lustful temptation.

After everyone had left the hall being completely wasted, only the Cult Master and Darryl were left.

"Darryl, there's something I want to speak with you about," said the Cult Master while staring into Darryl's eyes.

'What? What's that which he needs to say in private with me!?' Darryl's heart thumped so heavily that he could feel it nearly jumping out of his throat as cold sweats uncontrollably kept trickling down.

However, the Cult Master raised his hand and smilingly said, "Oh Darryl, I really appreciate what you did today. I'm a man who keeps a clear track of rewards and punishments. You did a good thing and I want to reward you for that."

Chapter 350

Damn!

Darryl let out a long relieved sigh. Damn, he had been frightened for no reason!

Meanwhile, the Cult Master took something out.

Darryl was shocked at the sight. It was a white soft armor with exquisitely designed patterns that sparkled under the lights.

It was very exquisite! This was no doubt a piece of art.

Darryl could not help asking, "Cult Master, what's this?"

The Cult Master smiled and explained, "This is called the Celestial Silkworm Armor. It was made by one of our disciples five hundred years ago. The armor was made from silk and metal making it firm. It could shield one from most weapons and probably save your life during extreme circumstances."

The Cult Master handed the Celestial Silkworm Armor to Darryl and said, "Keep this."

Darryl accepted the gift with much enthusiasm and

immediately put it on. The armor stuck on him like a second skin as he thanked the Cult Master with excitement. "Thank you, Cult Master."

He gave out two pills and received the precious armor in return! He could refine more of the pills later on, but this armor was one of a kind! It was a good trade! Haha!

The Cult Master nodded. "Do good for our Heaven Cult in the future, don't disappoint me." He continued with a gentle smile, "Alright, it's getting late. Go and get some rest. You need to return to Donghai City tomorrow. Don't forget about your mission."

"I won't disappoint you, Cult Master," answered Darryl.

Darryl made his way back to his room half an hour later. He was extremely excited on the way back to his room and could not wait to test out this armor by stabbing himself with a knife!

Darryl's room was not far from Monica's and as he walked past her door, a slight tremble washed through his body causing him to halt.

"Darryl... Darryl..."

Monica's door was left ajar while a soft and sweet voice called out from within.

"It's the Cult Mistress's voice! How does she know it's me?" Darryl muttered as he gently pushed the door open and walked into her bedroom.

Suddenly, his eyes widened with surprise.

Monica languidly reclined on her bed and was obviously drunk. She was drunk-talking with her eyes shut.

Darryl's heart softened with warmth. Was she thinking of him even when she was drunk?

"Cult Mistress, you're drunk. Here, have some water," said Darryl as he poured her some water.

How much did she drink to be so drunk?

Darryl handed her the water but she refused to drink. Instead, she latched into his arm to cuddle. " Darryl, I don't want to drink. I just want you to stay and hug me to sleep..."

Under the influence of alcohol, Monica finally spilled out the truth and finally knew what she really needed.

Truthfully, she did not want to be the figure everyone looked up to. She only wanted a passionate kind of love.

Only Darryl could give this to her. Not even the Cult Master.

Huh?

Stay with you?

Darryl felt so as if an electric current had gone through his nerves upon hearing that and smiled. “ Cult Mistress, you’re drunk. Do get some rest.”

He would be dead even if he had ten extra lives if the Cult Master ever came by. No, he had to stay rational and leave right away.

However, Monica trapped him with her arms thrown around his neck and had no intentions of letting him leave. Monica looked at him charmingly and mumbled with her pouting lips, “Darryl! I won’ t allow you to leave! I won’t allow it!”

“Cult Mistress, don’t be silly. Get some rest,” said Darryl with cold sweats dripping down. However, Monica’s grip tightened after hearing his voice as her delicate face leaned on his chest and declared, “ I don’t care! You won’t leave my room tonight. You won’t!”

Darryl had no other choice but to get in the bed with her.

Chapter 351

The next morning, Darryl was lying under the scented blanket with Monica in his arms. Any man would be jealous of a sweet scene like this.

Last night, Monica was very drunk, and she did not let him leave, so Darryl had no choice but to stay for the night. Nothing happened between them last night because Monica was drunk and Darryl was too tired. He only hugged her to sleep.

Ding!

Suddenly, a loud ring on a phone woke Darryl up from his sweet dream.

'Damn it, who would call at this hour!?' he wondered.

Darryl opened his eyes in a blur and looked at the incoming call. In an instant, he frowned.

"Damn it, the caller's ID ends with six sixes. Whoever's calling is not an ordinary man," he muttered as he picked up the phone.

Suddenly, Darryl heard a familiar voice from the call.

"Darryl, where are you?" the voice said.

It was his uncle, Drake Darby, the patriarch of the Darby family.

Darryl's face darkened, and in an instant, he was wide awake.

Not long ago, his father was captured by them and punished cruelly. He would never forget the bloody scene he saw. Darryl had cut off all contact with the Darby family since then, yet Drake was suddenly calling him out of the blue? What did he want?

Darryl clenched his fists as his mind was overwhelmed with the scenes of them punishing his father. Meanwhile, Monica moaned softly beside him. She was woken up by the call.

She hugged Darryl and buried her face in his chest. " Who's calling you at this time?"

Although she was very drunk last night, she was still conscious of what she did, and she knew she asked Darryl to stay with her. At this moment, Monica was feeling embarrassed and confused.

What was wrong with her last night? Why did she have to keep Darryl here with her? She was the Cult Mistress!

Could it be that she has fallen in love with him?

Meanwhile, Drake kept pestering Darryl on the

phone. Darryl smiled at Monica and said, "Give me a second. I'll go out and take this call."

Monica nodded. Darryl then leaned forward and gave her a gentle peck on her delicate cheeks. He got off the bed with a smile.

"You..." Monica said as she blushed, feeling the lingering warmth on her cheek.

She recalled that Darryl hugged her throughout the night, and she was embarrassed by the thought of it. She had been with the Cult Master for so many years, but they had never been so close before. The feeling of being hugged in someone's arms felt so comforting.

As the Cult Mistress of the Heaven Cult, she had been treated with the utmost respect by everyone. All these years, she was showered with all the treasures, spiritual elixirs, and pills in the world. However, she never felt this feeling before. The feeling of being snuggled in someone's arms was the best thing she ever experienced.

Darryl put on his clothes and took out a cigarette before walking out of her room. He had not been smoking recently, but the sunrise and the scenery of the morning mist on the island was so beautiful that it felt wrong not to compliment it with a cigarette.

He sat on a stone bench and asked coldly, "What do you want?"

Since he was no longer associated with the Darby family, he did not have to show Drake any respect.

"Darryl, your grandpa is ill," Drake answered softly, upset.

Hearing that, Darryl shivered a little. He did not like any of the Darby family members, but hearing that Grandpa was ill, he could not help feeling concerned.

"What happened?" Darryl asked.

"It's serious. He might lose his life. Darryl, you might not be able to see him again if you don't come to the hospital now. After all, he's still your Grandpa," Drake sighed, feeling anxious.

Chapter 352

The Donghai City First Hospital was busier than usual, especially the second floor. It was filled with people, including the Darby family members as well as all the wealthy families across the city.

The heart-breaking news had spread around the city yesterday. One had to admit that the Old Master Darby was one of the most important people in Donghai City. Once the news of his health got out, all the established families sent their men to visit him.

The news was true. Old Master Darby was ill. He was diagnosed with acute leukemia, and all his visitors felt bad for him while feeling confused. Everyone knew that Old Master Darby was a high ranking cultivator, and he had reached the level of Martial Marquis. How could he possibly get leukemia?

Everyone knew that the body of a cultivator was stronger than any ordinary man. The body's immune system became stronger after cultivating. Although you could still get infected with the flu or fever, it was unlikely to get any major diseases like leukemia. Especially someone like Old Master Darby, who was already a Martial Marquis; it was

highly unlikely to get it. That's why everyone was confused and shocked by the news.

Meanwhile, Old Master Darby laid on the bed quietly inside the Executive Ward. Pipes and machines were connected to his arms, and anyone could see they had lost some weight. He appeared much paler and weaker than before. He was surrounded by Florian, Yumi, Jackson, and Rebecca. The four of them seemed extremely worried and concerned. The ward was filled with dead silence.

Old Master Darby was suffering. Normally, a cultivator would not suffer an illness like this. He cultivated the Body Transformation Scripture for the past five years. The Shaolin Sect and the Wudang Sect wrote this scripture, and the teaching was leaning toward the Yang side of the body.

After five years of cultivating, he led his family to join the Eternal Life Palace Sect. Two days ago, Old Master Darby received a manual from the sect, the Flower Palm Manual. This manual was known for its evil practices, and upon receiving it, Old Master Darby could not wait to start studying it right away. Little did he know that he was making a deadly mistake.

The Body Transformation Scripture was a Yang practice, while the Flower Palm Manual was a Yin practice. The Yang and Yin practice could not be

incorporated at the same time.

At first, he had no idea of the dangers he was imposing on his body. However, when the two opposing forces started clashing with one another inside his body, it was already too late! Two days ago, Old Master Darby was cultivating in his private room, and all of a sudden, the two opposing energies went out of control. It almost caused him to have a psychotic break.

Old Master Darby had been cultivating his whole life, and he knew the dangers of having a psychotic break. At least, he was able to save his own life by using up all his energy.

Unfortunately, the cultivation he had made all his life vanished instantly. He was diminished into an ordinary man. As an ordinary man, the illness engulfed his body right away, and he became diagnosed with acute leukemia.

Being reminded of what happened completely disheartened Old Master Darby. He stared blankly at the ceiling without uttering a word. Watching him, nobody dared to make a sound, and the ward remained pin-drop silence. Old Master Darby had always had the reputation of being aloof, and with what just happened, everyone was afraid that he would not take it.

Meanwhile, the door opened, and Drake walked in.

He went to the side of the bed and said to Old Master Darby carefully, "Dad, I've called Darryl. He'll be here in no time."

Old Master Darby frowned but remained silent. Although Darryl committed an inhuman act, if he visited Old Master Darby, he would be happy.

However, Yumi, who was by his side, did not seem pleased at all. "Dad, why did you have to call that trash? He's no longer part of our family. Also, Grandpa wouldn't want to see him anyway!"

"Yeah, Grandpa can't be agitated in his state. The trash will just piss him off further!" Florian added, agreeing with her.

Jackson's face darkened when he heard that Darryl was coming. His wife's tummy was getting bigger these days.

'It was all Darryl's fault. Wasn't he ashamed to come and visit Grandpa?' Jackson thought.

Chapter 353

It was three o'clock in the afternoon when a taxi sped and pulled over at the Donghai City First Hospital. A young man rushed out of the car and marched into the hospital.

It was Darryl.

After getting the call from Drake, Darryl had mixed feelings. He was not sure whether he wanted to come. They almost killed his father after all. However, he thought about the likelihood of his Grandfather passing away, and he felt the need to pay him a visit. Since he was young, Grandpa had been fond of him, and Darryl could not let Grandpa down even if he did.

Upon arrival, he marched straight to the second-floor hallway. It was filled with visitors and some familiar faces that he was not in the mood to greet. Some ladies even called out when they saw Darryl.

"Didn't this live-in son-in-law get kicked out of the Darby family?" someone asked.

Darryl was not bothered by the comments and went straight into the ward.

The moment he pushed open the door, everyone

stared at him coldly.

'What was a bastard like him doing here!? He committed such a horrible act against his sister-in-law and got kicked out of the family. Wasn't he ashamed to show up here?' some people thought.

If eyes could shoot bullets, Darryl would have been dead by now, with holes all over his body.

He did not care about the stares and looks as he walked right to Old Master Darby.

"Darryl! How dare you show your face here!" Yumi shouted, blocking his way.

Darryl took a deep breath and contained his emotions. "Drake called me and asked me to come."

"Darryl, you're not welcomed here. Get out!" Florian scowled as he stood up.

'This dude has such thick skin to be unashamed! So what if Drake called him? Didn't know how embarrassing his reputation has been!? He's shameless!' Florian thought. 1

Jackson stood to the side but remained silent. His face darkened to the point that an air of deep hatred exuded from his glare. Behind him, Rebecca was biting her lips as her body trembled.

Nobody thought he would actually show up. Who

would have thought he could be this shameless!

Darryl scoffed at the unfriendly gaze locked on him, "I'm here to visit Grandpa, not to visit you all. What are you guys staring at?"

Darryl anticipated this on his way here. He frowned and walked to the bedside.

In that instant, he saw how pale and weak Old Master Darby looked. He felt a sharp pain in his chest. "Grandpa, I'm here to visit you."

Old Master Darby nodded with a faint delight. He mouthed weakly, "Good...good..."

Old Master Darby did not expect him to show up. After all, he did impose the cruelest punishment on Darryl's father. Yet he showed up anyway. He could tell that Darryl was a family man with a sincere heart.

Suddenly, Yumi walked forward and scoffed at Darryl, "Are you done? Leave if you're done."

'What trash. You can't help getting agitated looking at trash like him,' Yumi thought.

Darryl smiled coldly and refuted, "Sure thing. It's only been a few days, and you've bought the hospital? Do you own it now that you can ask anyone to leave?"

"You..." Yumi was furious as she pointed at Darryl

with her face flushed red, yet she could not respond.

Meanwhile, Drake, who remained silent, could not take it anymore.

"Alright, Grandpa's still laying in bed. Just calm down! I was the one who called Darryl and asked him to visit. After all, he was Grandpa's favorite since he was young. Now that he's ill, we shouldn't bring up the past," he sighed.

Yumi scoffed but did not speak further.

Later, Shelly Sullivan marched over in her white coat. Drake walked up to her right away and asked, " Director Sullivan, how's he doing?"

Everyone gathered around, including those who were waiting outside the ward. They were all concerned about Old Master Darby. He was the pillar that supported the entire family from falling apart.

Shelly let out a short sigh and announced with a serious tone, "Old Master Darby is not doing very well. Right now, the illness has spread all over his body. He needs an immediate bone marrow transplant."

'Bone marrow transplant?' everyone thought.

Chapter 354

Everyone was in shock. Darryl frowned as he knew it was not going well.

"I need to clarify that a bone marrow transplant is a high-risk procedure. The donor might even lose their life during the transplant. Although this is highly unlikely, it's still possible. Even without the apparent side effects, the donor's immune system will be weaker after the transplant. The most important thing is that it would slow down the process of cultivation compared to others," Shelly continued as she glanced around the ward.

After hearing what Shelly said, everyone looked at each other with a confused and terrified look. Nobody seemed willing to donate their bone marrow. Some of them even took a few steps back.

Of course, humans were a selfish species.

Watching the change of expression on the faces of the fellow members, Darryl laughed to himself secretly. Old Master Darby had given up so much for his family. It went without saying that there would be no Darby family as you know it today if it weren't for him. Unfortunately, everyone seemed hesitant once they heard that donating bone marrow would

damage one's immunity. Who needed these kinds of family members. Luckily, Darryl no longer had anything to do with these people. All he had to do was pay his respects to Old Master Darby and do what he had to do.

"How do I donate the bone marrow?" Darryl asked Shelly.

Grandpa had always liked Darryl, and he could not watch Grandpa die without trying to help him.

"Darryl, don't panic. Not everyone can donate their bone marrow. We need to examine if the bone marrow matches with Old Master Darby's," Shelly explained, smiling bitterly.

With that, Shelly walked out of the ward.

'So not everyone could donate...' everyone thought.

In an instant, many of the members let out a sigh of relief secretly, feeling lucky.

'Please, don't be me!' many of them prayed in their hearts as they followed Shelly to the examination room.

The results were out within two hours.

Everyone's eyes were glued on Shelley as she walked over with the results in her hands. They were all dripping with sweat, terrified that they

could be the one with the matching bone marrow.

Shelly let out a sigh and announced, "We have checked 131 people, and only two of them were suitable to be donors."

Hearing that, most of them let out a sigh of relief. They felt lucky that only two people were matches.

"Who are they?" Drake asked swiftly.

Shelly glanced around the room and announced, " Florian and Darryl."

Instantly, Florian felt a loud buzzing in his ears. If he was to donate his bone marrow, how could he ever drink and party in the future? After the operation, his body would be much weaker than before which he'd have to refrain from his favorite activity between a man and woman.

The doctor might as well be asking for his life!

"Old Master Darby's calling all of you," a young family member yelled.

A hundred or so of them gathered around Old Master Darby.

Watching them, he sat up weakly and asked, "Who was a match?"

"Florian and Darryl."

Hearing that, Old Master Darby smiled. Although he

was over 70, he was not ready to die just yet. Luckily, his grandsons were matches.

Knock! Knock! Knock!

A nurse knocked on the door and entered.

"Hello, please decide on who would like to donate. We will arrange the operation for tomorrow," she said before leaving the ward.

The ward was left with pin-drop silence. As the situation unfolded, one of them had to donate. Drake sighed and said, "Florian, prepare for the transplant tomorrow."

Darryl had left the family, and it was very generous of him to pay a visit today. It was too much to ask for his help.

Suddenly, Old Master Darby coughed and said, "I think...Darryl should be the donor."

Cough! Cough! Cough!

Suddenly, everyone's eyes were glued to Darryl.

Old Master Darby smiled and continued, "Darryl, the doctor already said that donating bone marrow could harm the body. Your brother, Florian, will have to take over the family business in the future. His body needs to remain healthy. So why don't you become the donor?"

Chapter 355

Darryl almost wanted to laugh. He did not mind donating his bone marrow, but Grandpa's words were heartbreaking. He appointed Darryl to donate merely because it could harm your body? He did not want Florian to be harmed, but it was okay if Darryl was harmed?

"Good choice, Grandpa. Let Darryl do it," someone called out from the crowd.

Suddenly, everyone nodded in unison.

"Exactly, a bastard like him owes it to the family. It should be him!"

"It's your chance to pay back the family."

Hearing that, Darryl could not help laughing.

'Haha! So this is my so-called family! I saw their true colors a long time ago!' he thought.

Meanwhile, Yumi walked out from the crowd and scowled at Darryl. "Darryl, don't be too sad. It's an honor to be the donor. This is your chance for redemption, so shouldn't you be thankful?"

'Redemption? As if it was true!' Darryl thought.

Darryl took a deep breath and laughed, "Yumi, you

don't have to try to force me into it. I can donate no problem."

He halted suddenly and looked around him with a darkening gaze. "But I'll tell you, being the donor is just my tribute to Grandpa. It isn't because I owe the family. You all almost cost me my father's life the other day, and since then, I've cut all ties with the Darby family. So don't you dare speak of redemption or whatever. I don't owe it to the Darby family!"

Darryl's words resonated loud and clear around the ward. The space fell silent for a few seconds before Yumi scoffed, "Darryl, don't you try to pull this trick again. What do you mean by not owing to the family? How do you explain this!?"

Yumi pointed at Rebecca's tummy. Rebecca was so ashamed; she lowered her head in embarrassment as she trembled.

Darryl glanced at her and declared with conviction, "How many times do I have to repeat myself!? I can be the donor, but this thing in her tummy is none of my business. I didn't do it!"

Hearing that, the crowd could not restrain their laughter. They looked at Darryl with mocking disdain.

'So, he was brave enough to do it but too cowardly

to admit?' everyone thought.

"Alright, alright, stop bickering!" Old Master Darby intercepted, "Darryl, I'm very ill. Without the bone marrow, I might not be able to live. I know this will cause serious damage to the body, so Florian shouldn't do it because he'd have to take over the family. So, I'll need you to donate." He paused for a while before continuing. "If you become the donor, we'll start off with a clean slate and forget what you've done in the past. What do you think?"

"F*ck off!" someone shouted as the door was suddenly kicked open.

Bang!

A loud bang rang out loud, and everyone jumped. Suddenly, Dax marched in with his eyes red.

Earlier today, a few of his men were beaten, so he rushed to the hospital to visit them. By chance, he overheard the discussion of donating bone marrow between Darryl and the Darby family.

Dax was a short-tempered man, and he had restrained himself throughout the discussion, but he could no longer hold back his anger.

'Dax?' Darryl thought.

Watching Dax march in, Darryl was shocked.

"Dax, why are you here?" he asked.

Dax's face darkened, and he did not speak further as he held onto Darryl's wrist, "Leave with me."

Darryl was confused. "What's up with you?"

Dax clenched his fists and yelled, "What's up!? What do you think? They are just a bunch of ungrateful bastards! Have you forgotten what they did to your father? How dare you donate your bone marrow to them!? Leave with me now!"

Darryl was touched by his concern. "Dax, I know what you mean, but...Grandpa did raise me. I can't leave him to die."

"F*ck it! Of course, you can leave him to die!" Dax growled, "As long as I'm alive, you will not donate your bone marrow to him. Never!"

His loud voice attracted a lot of attention. Many of the doctors and nurses looked at them curiously.

Meanwhile, Florian stood up and yelled at him, " Dax Sanders, this is our family business. Why are you messing around? What does Darryl donating bone marrow have anything to do with you!?"

The family members nodded in agreement.

"Yeah, even Darryl agreed to it. What are you going on about?" someone said.

Chapter 356

"This involves our family. You have no say in it."

'F*ck you all!' Dax thought.

Dax was so enraged that he lunged at Florian and grabbed him by his shirt without a single word.

Smack!

Without warning, Dax landed a loud and crisp slap on Florian's face. The slap was so strong that Florian's face was instantly swollen.

Suddenly, the ward became pin-drop silent. Everyone was scared and angry, but nobody dared to make a move.

Florian groaned in pain as he looked at Dax in shock and fear. "You...you..."

'Damn it! He was the Young Master of the Darby family. It was humiliating to get slapped by Dax in front of everyone! Many of the big families were watching them from outside the ward. It was so mortifying!' he thought.

"Florian, right? Let me tell you that the Darby family has nothing to do with me, and I have no interest in your sh*t, but strain your ears and listen

carefully. If it has anything to do with Darryl, it has to go through me first! I'll kill whoever touches a strand of his hair!" Dax's voice was toneless and cold.

Bam!

He flipped his wrist, and an ax suddenly appeared in his hand. He swung it hard and tossed the ax right into the wall.

Bam!

The ward shook slightly as the wall jiggled.

The entire hospital was pin-drop silent.

Florian, with his swollen face, took a few steps back instinctively, and his body knocked into the door. He wanted to fight back, but he did not dare to.

Florian had been cultivating lately and had become a Level Five Master, which was quite powerful. However, when facing Dax, he had no courage even to defend himself.

"You...you..." Yumi's face paled. She wanted to speak up, but she felt as if her throat was blocked.

Dax glared around the room and declared coldly, "I just want to know how shameless every one of you is? You kicked Darryl out of the family and cut all ties with each other. But now that you need him,

you ask him to come back?"

His gaze fell back on Darryl. "I heard your Grandpa saying that Florian was going to take over the family; if so, let him be the donor! As a patriarch, it's important to show he's willing to sacrifice his health. If he can't even do him such a small favor, how can he be the patriarch? What a bunch of heartless idiots!"

The ward was filled with dead silence as the family members looked at one another, speechless.

Florian and Yumi were flushed.

"How dare you? How dare you..."

Meanwhile, Old Master Darby helped himself up and glared at Dax. "How dare you, Dax Sanders. Not long ago, you brought your men to mess around in my mansion. Today, you come here to cause trouble again. Who do you think you are!?"

Old Master Darby was furious.

Darryl did such a despicable deed, ruining the reputation of his sister-in-law. To Old Master Darby, giving him a chance to be a donor was as generous as one could get! However, Dax Sanders decided to come to cause trouble right at this instant. He thought Dax was a rude and brazen kid. He paid no respect to the Darby family.

Dax seemed unperturbed by the accusation.

"Old Master Darby, I'm calling you this only because of Darryl. As long as I'm here today, there's no way Darryl will donate his bone marrow," he laughed.

"You..." Old Master Darby panted heavily as he pointed at Dax with his trembling finger, unable to speak.

All of the family members were furious, yet none of them had the courage to speak up.

"Please calm down, Old Master Darby. I'll help you get rid of trash like him!" a voice suddenly said.

The sudden voice was followed by a charming figure marching towards them. The figure had a beautiful face with a cold expression and a long sword in her hand.

It was Abbess Mother Serendipity!

Chapter 357

Recently, Abbess Mother Serendipity and the Emei disciples have been residing at the Darby mansion. She had been grateful for the kindness shown to them by the Darby family. Once she heard the news, Abbess Mother Serendipity rushed to the hospital right away.

She was furious at the event unfolding before her eyes.

"Old Master Darby, please stay calm. You're quite ill. Please take good care of your body. Let me help you get rid of trash like Darryl," she comforted.

She stared at Darryl with an unusually chilling glare. In an instant, Darryl felt trapped by a deadly aura and panicked a little.

'Why was this Abbess Mother Serendipity everywhere? Most importantly, why was she helping the Darby family?' he wondered.

Dax, who was beside Darryl, frowned at the sight of her. Abbess Mother Serendipity had such a strong presence.

Darryl tried his best to calm down.

"Abbess Mother Serendipity, I don't remember

offending you? Why do you have to keep bothering me?" he asked, frowning.

The first time they met during the Elixir Competition, she tried to kill him without a word. Now she was trying to kill him again. He was confused as he was quite sure that he never offended her.

Her beautiful face was overwhelmed with disgust.

"Darryl, your Grandpa is ill, and you're not willing to donate your bone marrow. What a disgraceful grandson. No wonder you were capable of such a despicable act against your sister-in-law. I'll get rid of you on behalf of the Darby family today," she claimed.

'You got away during the Elixir Competition. This time, you won't be as lucky,' she thought to herself.

Intense energy exuded from the Abbess Mother Serendipity. In an instant, everyone could feel her powerful aura, and everyone could not help but smile. They were all too excited to watch. With Abbess Mother Serendipity in the room, Darryl would be the donor, either dead or alive!

However strong Dax was, he was only a Master General, and the Abbess Mother Serendipity was at least a Martial Marquis! With her ability, even 10 of Dax fighting her at the same time would not stand a

chance.

Dax walked toward her and glared at her with no fear. "You're wrong. Firstly, Darryl never assaulted his sister-in-law. Secondly, Darryl has already cut all ties with his family. The old man lying on the bed is no longer his grandpa. Thirdly, these people almost killed Darryl's father. They have wronged him so much that he has no obligation to be the donor. I don't care if you're the Elder of Emei. You have no right to be unreasonable!"

'Did he call me unreasonable?' Abbess Mother Serendipity thought.

Abbess Mother Serendipity's face darkened as she yelled, "Kid, I know you're quite a powerful man in the city, but you have no right to speak to me so rudely. You can ask around who Darryl is. Ask everyone here if they believe Darryl is innocent!"

She was the Elder of Emei, and everyone showed her the utmost respect. Yet, Dax had the guts to call her unreasonable!?

"Abbess, I've said many times that I've never assaulted my sister-in-law. If you don't believe me, we have a blood test done right away since we're at a hospital. We can all find out who the child belongs to," Darryl said, walking forward.

Suddenly, Florian and Yumi's face darkened.

Right, they were all at the hospital. If they test the blood of the baby, the truth will be exposed. Yumi bit her lips and stepped forward. "Darryl, don't think you can get away with this! I know what you're thinking, and you're going to run away or call for help during the test, right? How dare you pull tricks in front of Abbess Mother Serendipity!"

After that, everyone nodded in agreement.

"Abbess Mother Serendipity, Darryl is full of tricks. Don't fall for it and let him escape," Yumi smiled faintly.

"F*ck you! You're all idiots! Including Abbess Mother Serendipity! All idiots! I'm leaving with Darryl!" Dax yelled as he could not contain his anger any longer.

This triggered the Abbess Mother Serendipity as she screamed, "As a cultivator, I hate seeing heartless bastards like Darryl! I'll kill him today no matter what it takes!"

She pointed the long sword in her hand directly at Darryl. The move was quick and deadly.

"Darryl, run!" Dax yelled. He did not expect Abbess Mother Serendipity to attack so quickly. Without hesitation, he ran in front of Darryl to protect him.

"Dax, be careful!" Darryl said, shocked.

He gritted his teeth and rushed forward. This Abbess was at least a Martial Marquis; even if the two of them fought her together, they still did not stand a chance.

Chapter 358

They had no choice but to fight back.

"Why are you still here!? Run!" Dax yelled when he saw that Darryl did not run away but stayed with him. Dax blocked the sword with his ax.

"Ignorance kills," Abbess Mother Serendipity scoffed.

'He was only a Master General. What made him think he could fight. He was asking to be killed,' she thought.

Without warning, Abbess Mother Serendipity moved swiftly, and her sword went right through Dax's heart.

Instantly, blood gushed out of his chest, uncontrollably. Dax slowly fell to the ground. The sword went through his body.

"Argh!" Dax groaned and staggered in pain, his aura weakening immediately.

"Dax!" Darryl groaned as he watched Dax in pain, shivering.

He rushed toward Dax to hold him up, but by then, Dax's face had already turned pale as blood kept

spilling out of him, staining his body. He could feel that he would not make it this time, but he did not regret what he did.

"Dax..." Darryl groaned with anger, his eyes bloodshot as he was overwhelmed with agony.

Meanwhile, all of the Darby members were overjoyed and excited.

'Haha! Dax was so arrogant moments ago, and now Abbess Mother Serendipity has killed him! Haha! It was such a good decision to host the Abbess Mother Serendipity and the Emei followers!' the family members thought.

On the other hand, Darryl's eyes were red as he held on to Dax tightly while tears streamed down his cheeks. "Dax, Dax, stay awake! You need to stay awake!"

Dax's face was ashen and white. He used up all his strength to smile a little and mouthed weakly, "Why ...why are you crying...I-I'm not...not dead yet. Darryl...remember...don't...don't donate..."

"Shut up!" Abbess Mother Serendipity gradually walked closer to Darryl. Her delicate face showed no emotion. "Darryl, you're next."

She raised her sword and pointed it at Darryl.

She did not feel bad for stabbing Dax. She thought

whoever befriended Darryl must be a bastard like him, too.

"Bring it on! I'll fight you!" Darryl raised his head and gave Abbess Mother Serendipity a deadly stare.

He exuded an air of violence. He raised his hand, waiting for his Blood Drinking Sword to appear, ready to fight her.

'I didn't fight you because you're an Elder, but it doesn't mean I'm afraid of you,' he thought.

However, Dax stopped him and mumbled, "Darryl, please, run...run... Don't get killed..."

"Argh!" Darryl groaned in objection as he carried Dax in his arms and ran toward the window, ready to jump.

"Trying to get away?" Abbess Mother Serendipity called out before he could jump as she launched her sword at Darryl.

Ding!

In a blink of an eye, the long sword stabbed Darryl right in the back. However, no blood gushed out of him. Instead, all they saw was a flash of light.

It was the Celestial Silkworm Armor!

The armor saved him after wearing it for one day. However, Abbess Mother Serendipity was way too

powerful. Even though the sword did not go into his body, her inner energy was so powerful that Darryl spat out blood from his mouth. Luckily, he jumped from the ward, which was only on the second floor.

'What!?' everyone thought.

Everyone was confused that the Abbess Mother Serendipity did not hurt him. How come?

Even Abbess Mother Serendipity shivered a little.

'What just happened?' she thought.

She knew well enough that her sword would severely injure a person even if he or she was a Martial Marquis or even a Martial Saint! Her expression became serious, and she jumped out the window to follow Darryl. She wanted Darryl dead no matter what.

Chapter 359

Abbess Mother Serendipity landed steadily on the floor. She looked around but did not see Darryl.

"You're lucky to have gotten away today, but I'll kill you the next time I see you," she muttered with the sword in her hand.

She was standing in a pool of blood on the floor that must have been Dax's. He was unlikely to make it. Then, she made her way back to the ward.

On her way back, she could not help wondering what happened.

'Why did my sword not hurt him? Even if he mastered one of those self-defenses like the Golden Defense, with his power of a Master General, there was no way he could have shielded himself from the sword,' she thought.

Meanwhile, the ward was filled with silence. Abbess Mother Serendipity walked in and glanced around. " Old Master Darby, I'm sorry if I frightened you earlier. I'm sorry that I let the bastard get away. Please, rest. I'll leave you with your family."

She was ashamed to have let Darryl run away.

Old Master Darby nodded and watched her till she

left.

The rest of the members in the ward regained their composure and stared at Florian. Since Darryl had left, the Old Master Darby's livelihood depended on Florian.

Gulp!

Feeling the attention on him, Florian was trying so hard not to cry out loud.

'Damn it. Didn't we all agree that Darryl would be the donor? How dare he run away! Argh! How am I supposed to drink and party like I used to? It'd be difficult for me to cultivate in the future, too! What can I do?' Florian's thoughts were running a mile a minute as he was trying hard to restrain his anxiety.

Old Master Darby let out a long sigh and announced calmly, "Please, leave me alone now. I'm not feeling well, and I'd like to rest."

He was agitated by what just happened and felt dizzy. The rest of the Darby family looked at one another before leaving the room till only Florian, Yumi, Jackson, Rebecca, and Drake were left.

The more he thought about it, the angrier he got. He was diminished into an ordinary man all because of a slight cultivation mistake and became severely ill instantly. He was unlucky enough, yet Dax

Sanders decided to come and cause more trouble. He could not take it.

Florian and the rest stood by his bedside as they saw the change in Old Master Darby's face. None of them dared to make a sound.

Meanwhile, there was a knock at the door. Shelly entered the ward and asked gently, "Have you all decided who the donor is going to be?"

She had left earlier and missed the violent fight in the ward.

"Darryl ran away, so I'll be the donor," Florian spoke up unwillingly.

As the situation unfolded, there was no other way Florian could get away from donating.

Shelly frowned at what she heard.

'What? Darryl ran away? He's not that kind of man. It's impossible!' she thought.

Chapter 360

Meanwhile, Old Master Darby took in a long breath and said, "Director Sullivan, the operation is happening tomorrow? I'll get some rest now."

All he could think of was what happened earlier. His eyes darkened in anger, so he wanted to get some rest.

Shelly smiled and nodded. "That's right. The operation is tomorrow. Please keep the noise down when Old Master Darby is sleeping. He needs all the rest he can get before the operation tomorrow."

With that, Shelly left the ward.

After she left, Yumi walked forward and said, "Why don't you all go back and get some rest? I'll stay here with Florian to take care of Grandpa."

Everyone had stayed here since last night. None of them managed to get any rest.

Drake was tired as he asked, "Are you two alright staying here?"

"Dad, we'll be fine," Yumi smiled. "Florian and I will take good care of Grandpa. Just go home and get some rest."

"Alright, alright." Drake was pleased that his son was lucky to have such an understanding wife.

Since Florian and Yumi insisted on taking care of Old Master Darby, Drake and the rest of the family could go home and get some rest. Not long after, he and the rest of the family members left the hospital, leaving Florian and Yumi alone.

"Follow me." Yumi pulled Florian to a corner on the second floor.

"Yumi, why do you insist on staying to take care of Grandpa?" Florian complained. "I still have an operation to go through tomorrow, and I'd like some rest."

"Rest? All you can think of is rest?" Yumi kicked him hard and said coldly, "Why am I married to trash like you? You not only assaulted your sister-in-law, now you're going to donate your bone marrow? Do you know what the side effect of this is? Don't ever think of becoming a high-ranking cultivator because even if you cultivate day and night, you'll always be stuck as a General Master."

She was right. Donating one's bone marrow was like giving out your body's inner essence. It would make one's cultivation journey harder than anyone else.

"What can I do?" Florian muttered."The idiot

Darryl ran away, and only I have matching bone marrow."

"You're really trash!" Yumi glared at him. "I have an idea that will spare you from donating your bone marrow."

Florian almost jumped in joy. "What is it?"

He would do anything as long as he did not have to donate his bone marrow.

Yumi breathed in deep and looked around. No one was on the second floor, and there was no CCTV in this area. She spoke slowly, "If he's dead, you won't have to donate."

"Huh?" Florian almost cried out loud. "But Grandpa 's still alive..."

Yumi glared at him again. "Your Grandpa is over 70 years old. He's enjoyed a good and long life. Since he 's very ill now, why don't you spare him from the suffering and send him away."

'Huh!?' Florian thought.

Suddenly, Florian's forehead was dripping with sweat. "Yumi, are you...are you asking me t-to kill Grandpa?"

"Keep your voice down!" Yumi scowled. "Do you have a better idea?"

"But...but if I kill Grandpa, how are we going to convince the rest of the family? Now that only the both of us are at the hospital, if Grandpa dies all of a sudden, they'll suspect us," Florian reasoned.

"Don't you worry. I have ways to make sure they won't suspect us," Yumi reassured Florian.

"But..." he seemed unwilling to kill his Grandpa.

Watching him, Yumi scowled. "You're such a useless piece of trash! Do you want to spend the rest of your life being stuck as a Master General? If so, go ahead and be the donor."

She turned around and walked toward the ward as Florian followed swiftly behind her.

Inside the ward, Florian clenched his fists. He had mixed feelings about this, but he finally decided that he would not donate his bone marrow.

'Yumi was right. Grandpa has lived a long and luxurious life. He's enjoyed all the richness and pleasures in life. He has nothing to regret even if he dies today.' Florian thought.

Chapter 361

Florian clenched his fists tight.

'I'm sorry, Grandpa. I really don't want to donate my bone marrow, and I have no other choice. If I donate my bone marrow now, how will I lead the family in the future?' Florian thought.

"Grandpa. Grandpa?" he mumbled softly.

Old Master Darby did not respond. He must have fallen asleep.

Seeing no reaction, Florian was excited and nervous. After locking the door from the inside, he walked to the side of the bed.

Yumi took a few deep breaths before she walked to the door and looked around to make sure nobody was passing by. Florian grabbed a pillow and pressed it onto Old Master Darby's face.

"Hmph..." Old Master Darby woke up all of a sudden.

However, he was now an ordinary man and had no power to fight back. Florian pressed the pillow into his face harder. He let Old Master Darby struggle without flinching. Not long after, Old Master Darby stopped struggling, and his legs straightened.

Florian was dripping with sweat when he finally removed the pillow. Watching his Grandpa with his eyes shut, he was frightened.

"Yumi, What...what...what should we do now?" Florian reclined into the chair, panting for breath.

Yumi marched over to make sure Old Master Darby was dead. She let out a long breath and placed the pillow back. After that, she took out her phone and called Drake.

Not long after, Drake picked up the phone.

As if she was a professional actor, Yumi's tears rolled down her cheeks uncontrollably.

"Dad, I have some bad news! Grandpa...Grandpa died because of what Darryl did to him earlier. He died because of him!" she sobbed.

Meanwhile, at the Sanders mansion, private doctors were trying their best to keep Dax alive. Outside the room, Darryl was pacing back and forth anxiously with his eyes bloodshot as his heart burned in pain. To the side stood Nancy, Old Master Sanders, Daisy, and Daphne. They were all anxiously waiting for the past few hours. When Darryl brought Dax home, Dax was covered in blood. Everyone was terrified and worried.

The Sanders mansion was dead silent, and the

atmosphere was stifling and somber as everyone was extremely worried about Dax's life. Especially Darryl.

He clenched his fists and prayed with all his heart. Although the chances of Dax living were slim, he could feel that Nancy and Old Master Sanders did not blame him. In particular, Old Master Sanders was a family man who always kept his word. He had influenced Dax since he was young. Even Nancy became influenced after being married to Dax for so many years.

Yet the more understanding they were, the more guilty Darryl felt. If it was not for him, Dax would not have been stabbed for no reason! If Dax actually died, Darryl would never forgive himself.

After a long suspense, the door finally opened. The doctor walked out with a tired look on his face. Everyone surrounded him in an instant.

"Doctor, how's Dax?" Darryl cried out.

Old Master Sanders added swiftly, "Is my grandson, okay?"

Dax was his only grandson.

'My grandson survived last time, so he has to survive this time, too. He will...' Old Master Sanders thought.

Chapter 362

The doctor took a deep breath and announced somberly, "Old Master Sanders, Young Master Sanders condition is not looking good. The sword went through his body, he's lost a significant amount of blood, and his organs were damaged. During the operation earlier, I only managed to stop the blood and stabilize it temporarily. From what I can tell, he'll only make it for another day."

Old Master Sanders' heart sank as his mouth opened. "And...what will happen after that?"

Darryl clenched his fists instinctively; he felt like his heart was in his mouth.

The doctor remained somber. "Old Master Sanders, I've tried my best. Please, prepare for the funeral." He bowed and walked to the side.

It was as if Old Master Sanders was struck by lightning. He shivered and took a few steps backward.

"My darling! Nancy sobbed as she trembled uncontrollably.

'How could it be? Dax wasn't going to make it? Impossible! Impossible!' Darryl thought.

He was dumbstruck, and a loud buzz filled his ears. His mind was blank. Dax would not make it, and everyone's heart bled for him.

Meanwhile, Daisy walked forward; her eyes were completely red. She scowled at Darryl. "You're such trash! If it wasn't for you, Dax wouldn't be like this. It's all your fault!" She slapped Darryl.

Before, Dax was hurt because of Darryl's wife, and he was almost disabled. Now, Dax was about to die because of Darryl.

Darryl was feeling extremely guilty. He could not utter a word as his eyes were bloodshot from the tears.

Daisy was right; it was all his fault. If it was not for him, Dax would not be hurt.

Since Darryl did not respond, Daisy continued yelling at him with tears in her eyes, "You're such a useless piece of trash! Dax has been hurt so many times because of your useless problems! This time, he's going to die all because of you! You have no right to be here. Go away! Go away!"

"Yeah, it's all your fault! You're not welcomed here. Get lost!" Daphne could not hold it in any longer.

'Is he not ashamed to have stayed here for so long!? Did he want to cause more harm to Dax?' Daphne

thought.

Darryl lowered his head with his fists clenched so tightly that his nails dug right into his flesh, although he could no longer feel any pain at this instant.

Smack!

Suddenly, Old Master Sanders could not stand it anymore. He smacked the wall and cried, "You two, shut your mouths and get out!"

Old Master Sanders knew that although Darryl was responsible for this, he was not to be blamed. Since Dax was young, Old Master Sanders had always taught Dax to be a good and sincere friend. Therefore, he was doing the right thing. Even if he was not going to make it, at least he lived up to his word to Old Master Sanders and to the family.

Watching Old Master Sanders become furious, Daisy and Daphne shut up right away. They went downstairs, unwillingly. Old Master Sanders had the highest authority in the house, so everyone had to listen to him. However, when the two sisters walked past Darryl, they glared at him.

Meanwhile, Old Master Sanders could not help but ask the doctor again, "Doctor, is there really no way to save my grandson?"

'He had survived being stabbed 30 times. Why

couldn't he survive this time around, too?' Old Master Sanders wondered.

The doctor sighed and answered in a low voice, " The sword completely damaged his lungs. There's nothing else I can do. Even the best doctor in the world would say the same."

Chapter 363

The doctor felt guilty. He had been appointed as the family doctor for many years, yet he could not save Dax at this crucial moment.

Old Master Darby would not give up, so he asked again, "Doctor, what if the hole in the lung can be blocked? Would that save my grandson?"

'Blocking the hole in the lung...' the doctor considered it for a while and shook his head.

Theoretically speaking, of course, the Young Master could be saved if the hole was blocked. However, the hole was deep and large, and with the current medical advancement, there was no way we could block up the hole.

"There is a way!" Old Master Sanders said, his eyes sparkling. "There's actually something that could block the hole."

"What is it?" Darryl replied.

Old Master Sanders said with excitement, "Ten years ago, during the first Roger's Auction, they sold something called Heart of the Ocean. This pill can heal a wound in an organ."

'Heart of the Ocean?' Darryl thought. His eyes

sparkled with a faint glow of hope.

Meanwhile, Nancy stopped crying and looked at Old Master Darby with hope in her eyes.

Old Master Darby continued speaking, "Heart of the Ocean was refined by an Elder of the Xiaoyao family 200 years ago. He made this healing pill with ten unique and rare treasures. If one's organ was damaged, this pill could help its recovery."

Hearing that, Darryl shivered with excitement. "Old Master Sanders, where's this pill now?"

Old Master Sanders looked at him with mixed emotions. "Heart of the Ocean was sold for ten billion dollars to the Newman family from Kyoto!"

'The Newman family?' Darryl shivered a little and instantly thought of Circe Newman.

Meanwhile, Nancy spoke excitedly, "Grandpa, doesn't it mean that the Heart of the Ocean is now with the Newman family?"

Old Master Sanders smiled bitterly, "It's hard to say. They bought it ten years ago. We don't know if they've used it or given it to someone." Old Master Sanders continued with a sad tone, "Even if we send someone over to the Newman family, they might not even want to see us. After all, they're a big and noble family, and we're nothing in comparison to

them. Also, Dax only has one more day to live. How are we supposed to get hold of the Heart of the Ocean in such a short amount of time?"

Old Master Sanders' eyes turned red again.

However, Darryl seemed rather excited! As long as there was a way to save him, Dax still had a chance to live!

The sound of footsteps came from the staircase. Daisy and Daphne came up again with some relatives following behind them. All of them seemed very upset. Daisy walked up to Old Master Sanders and said in a lowered voice, "Grandpa, they're here to visit Dax."

The relatives nodded at Old Master Sanders.

Dax was his everything. Now that Dax was hurt, nobody dared to speak a word in front of Old Master Sanders in fear of frightening him. As more people gathered, the atmosphere became tenser.

When Daisy saw that Darryl was still there, she jeered, "What are you still doing here? You're not welcomed here. Go away! Leave now!" She pushed Darryl away with a disdainful look.

Darryl did not respond. He let out a sigh and left with his head down.

As he came out of the Sanders mansion, he took out

his phone and called Circe Newman. While he waited for her to pick up, he was anxiously praying with all his heart.

'God, please tell me the Heart of the Ocean is still with the Newman family. Dax cannot die. He can't!' he prayed to himself.

Chapter 364

Back at Donghai City, something was going on inside the Adios cafe. This was a popular café in the city, known for its elegant ambiance and fancy decor. Even though the food cost more than any of the other cafés in town, this remained a favorite dating spot for rich kids, even if that meant paying a thousand extra bucks for a cup of coffee.

Usually, this café was filled with customers, but it was unusually quiet today. Only a few young ladies sat around a table. Every one of them was gorgeous, and they would have caught the eyes of any man who set foot in the café.

Circe Newman and her friends rented the entire space for coffee today. Even sitting among the other ladies, Circe still stood out as the most gorgeous one. Today, she was dressed in a pair of tight denim jeans, topped with a coffee-brown jumper. Her glowing hair rested on her shoulder, which made her look sexy and charming. Beside her was a lady with burgundy hair, and she looked as good as Circe. It was Evelyn Featherstone.

It was not only the ladies chatting happily inside the cafe. The owner was extremely pleased, too.

After all, he was paid more money than he usually made in a day for letting the ladies book his space for a few hours.

Circe and her friends were from one of the wealthiest families. It only made sense for them to rent public places to protect their privacy.

"Circe, how's studying at The Hexad School?" a friend of hers asked.

"The school is alright..." Circe answered.

Ring! Ring! Ring!

Suddenly, a loud ringing was coming from her phone. Circe smiled faintly before picking up her phone, "Please excuse me."

However, she frowned at the sight of the caller ID. It was as if a dark cloud hovered over her head. It was Darryl.

Suddenly, Circe seemed disturbed. Darryl promised to refine her pill but ran away in the middle of it? Why was he calling?

Evelyn saw the name on her phone, and her face darkened instantly before she grabbed the phone.

"It's that douche calling!" Evelyn jeered.

Their friends leaned closer with curiosity.

"Hmm...Who's calling Circe? Is it her boyfriend?"

"Ah! Are you secretly in a relationship? Show us. Show us!"

Evelyn almost threw up at their remarks. She scowled with a disdainful look, "Huh, a person like him!? Even if all the men in the world had vanished, he still wouldn't stand a chance."

"So, who is it?" they were excited to find out.

Evelyn explained angrily, "It's the trash guy Darryl, who lied to us saying he could refine pills but ran away from the villa the other day."

"Oh, him."

"Hah! He seemed so dumb. It's funny even thinking of him."

All the ladies laughed, covering their mouths with their hands.

Chapter 365

Circe bit her lips as she thought about Darryl, which made her upset. She had invited him to dinner twice, but he always found an excuse to get out of it. Two days ago, she invited him to the villa to refine pills, but he ran away halfway through. He was not a man of his word!

Circe said to Evelyn flatly, "Evelyn, turn it off."

She did not want to speak to Darryl.

However, Evelyn shook her head and smirked, " Why? He ran away the other day! I'm intrigued to find out what he's got to say." She answered the call and put it on the loudspeaker.

After answering the call, Evelyn yelled, "Why are you calling, douchebag?"

Darryl was panicking as sweat dripped down his head. He asked politely, "May I know if Miss Newman is with you?"

Only the Heart of the Ocean could save Dax. He had to get hold of it no matter what it took.

"She's not here," Evelyn answered coldly. He never explained why he ran away and instead asked for

Circe right away. What a rude guy. Did he think he could get away with it?

'Damn it! What was wrong with this Evelyn woman! ' Darryl thought.

Darryl sighed and continued anxiously, "Please, Evelyn. I really need to speak to Circe urgently. Could you please pass her the phone?"

'Urgently? What urgent matter could he be facing?' Evelyn thought.

She scoffed, "If you have something urgent, then come to us. We're at the Adios café." Without waiting for him to answer, Evelyn ended the call.

"Evelyn! Why are you letting him come?" Circe asked in confusion. She had the reputation of being cold and charming at school, yet a live-in son-in-law played her three times in a row! The thought of seeing Darryl made her feel almost embarrassed!

Evelyn smiled and gave her back the phone. "Circe, I know you hate this douche. That's why I asked him to come. Don't worry. When he comes, I'll make him pay for what he's done to you!"

'This douche stole Circe's phone and saw me naked. He even lied to Circe and claimed to know how to refine pills. I won't let him get away with it later!' she thought.

Half an hour later, Daryl finally made it to the entrance of the café as he panted for air. He looked up at the sign and made sure he was at the right place.

'Damn! Why were there so many gorgeous ladies!?' he thought as he walked into the café, and was shocked by the sight of Circe and her friends. The sun was out, and all of them had their summer clothes on, which consisted of short skirts and tight shorts. It was all very alluring!

However, he was not in the mood to be caught up by these. He took a deep breath and marched towards them.

"Look, the fool is here!"

"Haha! I wanna laugh just looking at him. He looks so dumb." The ladies could not help but laugh and giggle as they looked at Darryl. Their smiling faces made them even more captivating than they already were.

Meanwhile, Evelyn walked toward Darryl swiftly. Without any warning, she slapped him on his cheek! The slap resonated a loud and crisp sound in the cafe. In an instant, the giggles stopped, and the café became completely silent.

'Damn it!' Darryl cursed to himself.

A burning pain lingered on his cheek as Darryl glared at Evelyn. "What are you doing!"

'Damn it! What's wrong with this woman? I haven't even spoken, and she slapped me? What for?' Darryl thought angrily. If Darryl did not have to beg for the pill, he would have stopped her.

Evelyn scoffed coldly and looked at Darryl with disdain, "Oh, no particular reason. I just don't like your face. Got a problem with that?"

Darryl frowned as he covered his face and looked directly at Circe, "Miss Newman, I need an urgent favor from you."

What mattered the most was saving Dax. If getting slapped meant being able to save Dax, he would not hesitate to be slapped twenty times!

Circe seemed unperturbed. She did not even spare him a glance. She just sat with a wine glass in her hand.

"Darryl, you never knew how to refine pills, so you ran away in the middle of it. How dare you speak to me now?" she said, her red lips parted slightly and her tone cold.

Chapter 366

'Damn it! I was captured by the Heaven Cult from her villa the other day. It seems that she's still angry at me!' Darryl thought.

"Miss Newman, I really need a favor from you. It's a matter of life and death," he pleaded.

Although he did not know Circe long, he knew she had a kind heart under her cold façade. If not, she would not have apologized to him for the phone incident.

"A matter of life and death?" Circe replied.

Meanwhile, Evelyn smirked, thinking Darryl was suspicious, "Oh, cut the act! I can see that you're just trying to get closer to Circe, am I right? Don't you even dare to fantasize about that, you douche! Go lost and stop ruining our day!"

Evelyn felt better after slapping him, but his face still annoyed her.

Darryl did not respond and kept on looking at Circe with sincerity.

Watching Darryl just stand there, Evelyn said, " Why are you still here? Aren't you ashamed? Was

the slap not enough for you?" She walked toward him and prepared to slap him again.

The other ladies looked at Darryl's dumb face and laughed silently. Darryl looked dull, boring, and talentless. How would Circe fall for him? Ever?

"Evelyn," Circe called out as she looked at Darryl with concern. "What is it?"

She really did not want to speak to Darryl, but she could not stand to see his anxious face. This was the first time she had ever seen him looking so nervous.

Darryl took a step closer. "Miss Newman, I'd like to know if your family still has the Heart of the Ocean that your family bid on during the Roger's Auction ten years ago?"

'Heart of the Ocean?' Circe wondered.

Hearing that, the ladies were shocked. They unconsciously turned their gaze onto Circe's neck.

Indeed, the Newman family bought the Heart of the Ocean from the auction. The Heart of the Ocean was not only a miracle pill, but it also had an exquisite look. Circe had always worn it as a necklace since she was young, and she loved it dearly.

'This dude was brave. He actually inquired about Circe's favorite thing!' Circe's friends thought.

In that instant, Circe's face flushed red with anger.

He promised to refine the pill for Evelyn and ran away, and for two days, she did not hear back from him. Now he decided to show up because he needed a favor.

Circe remained calm and answered coldly, "Yeah, the Heart of the Ocean is what I'm wearing on my neck right now."

'This was great news!' Darryl thought.

His face flushed with joy and excitement. He felt as if the heaviness in his heart had been relieved. Upon a closer look at her neck, he saw a white gold necklace with a blue-colored gemstone hanging on it. Its surface was so smooth and reflective that you could feel its presence even standing a few meters away. Not only that, but you could smell its unique lingering scent vaguely.

'The Heart of Ocean was indeed a real treasure!' Darryl thought.

At this instant, Darryl was stunned by the sight of it and trembled a little. He looked at Circe sincerely and asked, "Miss Newman? Could you please sell this to me?"

'He wanted to buy The Heart of Ocean? Haha!' Circe thought.

Suddenly, all the ladies around them started

laughing.

'What was this idiot thinking? Did he think he was buying a necklace at the market? Could he even afford it?' the ladies laughed to themselves.

Among the laughter ringing in the air, Evelyn sneered, "Darryl, what's wrong with your brain? You want to buy it from Circe? Do you know how much it costs?"

Darryl nodded without hesitation, "I do. Ten billion bucks."

Evelyn laughed at his response. "It was ten billion bucks when Circe's family bought it. But that was ten years ago!"

The ladies resumed their laughter.

"Yeah, ten billion bucks then is incomparable to ten billion bucks now!"

"Huh, why are you even telling him that? Look at his dumb face and his cheap clothes. Don't bother about ten billion; I doubt he even has a million bucks with him!"

Darryl did not speak and smiled faintly at their remarks.

Meanwhile, Evelyn snarked, "Do you know that there's only one Heart of the Ocean in the world? It

was worth ten billion bucks ten years ago. Now it's worth at least 20 billion bucks!" She looked at Darryl with disdain. "Looking at you and your poor face, do you even know how much twenty billion bucks is? Even one truck can't carry all that cash. You'd need a few trucks to do so. Do you understand? If you were to count every note, you'd be counting for the rest of your life. Do you get it?"

"I'd buy it if it's two hundred billion bucks," Darryl declared without hesitation.

He knew that there were at least 60 billion bucks in his account right now. Also, the Platinum Corporation had been doing quite well recently with their new show 101 Superstar making decent profits. He could get hold of a few hundred billion bucks from the company. If that was not enough, he could phone up Felix Blakely or Wayne Woodall. Two hundred billion bucks was not a big deal. Even getting two thousand billion bucks was possible if he really needed it.

Of course, the Newman family was the wealthiest people in Kyoto, but even a wealthy family would not reject earning a few extra hundreds of billions of bucks! Darryl was determined to get a hold of the Heart of the Ocean today, even if it meant going bankrupt. Only the Heart of the Ocean could save Dax's life, and that was all that mattered.

Meanwhile, the ladies could no longer hold back their laughter and started laughing uncontrollably. They looked at Darryl like he was an idiot.

"He really was a good liar! He says he could afford it. Who was he kidding!' they laughed to themselves.

Chapter 367

Darryl was unperturbed by their mockery.

"Miss Newman, I'm serious. Please, tell me how much would you sell this for? I need it to save a life!" he said sincerely.

It had been two hours, and Darryl did not know how Dax was doing or if his wound was worsening.

"To save a life? Who's life?" Circe frowned.

Darryl came here covered in sweat, and he did not mind Evelyn slapping him earlier. It seemed that he was in a panic.

"Dax," Darryl answered.

'Dax Sanders?' Circe thought.

Darryl did not seem like he was joking. Circe put down her wine glass and handed him the necklace right away. "If so, take this with you. Save him first; then we'll talk about the money later."

A man's life was at stake! Of course, she had to save him.

Darryl was overwhelmed with excitement as he rushed forward to receive the necklace.

However, Evelyn leaned forward and took the Heart of the Ocean away from Circe.

"You!" Darryl stared at her in disbelief. "Give it to me. I really need it to save a life!"

Evelyn held onto the necklace tightly with a proud look. "Like I care? You stay right there. If you step any closer, I'll destroy this."

She transferred her strength from her energy field till her energy gathered on her hand. If she squeezed slightly, Evelyn could destroy the Heart of the Ocean.

"Evelyn..." Circe called in a panic, her face darkening.

She knew Evelyn well enough. She grew up at the Eternal Life Palace, and her Grandpa was the Guardian King. There was nothing that Evelyn was afraid of.

"Please, don't!" Darryl was in a cold sweat. " Alright, alright. I won't move. What can I do for you to hand it to me?"

Evelyn smirked, "A douche like you wants a treasure like this? Even if Circe agreed to give it to you, I wouldn't agree."

Darryl was panicking, but he tried to reason with

her. "Miss Evelyn, I know why you're mad at me. I did not run away the other day. I even finished refining the pill. I disappeared because something happened, and I had to leave right away." Darryl took out a pill from his pocket and showed it to Evelyn. "Look, I'm not lying to you. This is the Yang pill I refined the other night."

'Huh? He did refine the pill?' the ladies were shocked and exchanged looks with one another. They knew that even the best pill refining masters could not refine this. How could a poor dude like him refine it? He must have been lying!

One of the ladies said, "Evelyn, don't believe him. None of us knows how the Yang pill looks like. Who knows if it's real or fake."

"Yeah, maybe he took a fake pill to fool you."

"Exactly, a person like him could do anything! Don' t fall for it."

'Damn it! Just when I finally gained Evelyn's trust, these other women decided to screw things up!?' Darryl thought.

Hearing what they said, Evelyn hesitated for a few seconds and said, "Give me the pill first."

Whatever it was, as long as she got hold of the pill, she could show it to her Grandpa, who could tell if

this was real or fake.

Darryl handed it to her without hesitation and smiled bitterly, "Now that you believe me."

Evelyn shook her head and looked at him half smilingly, "Darryl, I hope you remember making me beg you the other day to make this pill? Now it's your turn."

'Damn it!' Darryl cursed to himself.

Chapter 368

'Why was she so difficult!?' Darryl thought furiously.

He would do anything to save Dax's life. Without hesitation, he bowed in front of Evelyn and said sincerely, "Miss Evelyn, I'm begging you. Please give me the Heart of Ocean."

Evelyn looked at him and shook her head with a smile. "Nope, that wasn't sincere enough."

Darryl was speechless. 'Damn it, why don't I just dig out my heart and give it to her to show my sincerity!?'

As he was thinking, he heard Evelyn demand, " Kneel and beg me."

Darryl's face darkened while the ladies could not help laughing out loud. All of them sat on chairs with coffees in their hands, anticipating the unfolding event. Circe wanted to say something, but she could not under the peer pressure.

Darryl took a deep breath. He felt a flame igniting in his heart, and his body trembling with anger. A man only kneels to God and his parents. He clenched his fists and wanted to lash out, but he could not. He

had no choice; without the Heart of Ocean, Dax would die.

"Acting cool, eh?" Evelyn scoffed. "I'm running out of patience. If you don't kneel, I'll destroy this." She squeezed the necklace.

"No!" Darryl groaned like a mad man. "I'll kneel. I'll kneel."

Suddenly, he fell on his knees in front of Evelyn. As the ancient saying went: a man's knees were as precious as gold, and no man should kneel in front of anyone besides God and his parents. However, it was Dax's life at stake. What choice did he have?

'Haha! He actually did it! So unmanly!' the ladies giggled to themselves.

"I beg you to hand me the Heart of the Ocean!" Darryl said through gritted teeth.

Evelyn looked at him with satisfaction. However, another thought occurred to her. "Do you think you'll get it by kneeling? How ignorant!"

At this instant, Darryl shivered, and his fists tightened. He was using all his strength to restrain himself from lashing out.

Evelyn smiled faintly and called out to a staff member, "Bring me a bowl of warm water."

The staff was confused. Why would someone ask for

a bowl of warm water at the café? However, since they rented the entire café, the staff member had to do what he was told. Not long after, the staff member brought a bowl of warm water to Evelyn.

Evelyn said to Darryl with a smile, "Well, I can give the Heart of the Ocean to you, on one condition. Come and wash my feet. Then, I'll give it to you. Don't worry; I always keep my promise."

All the ladies laughed out loud. 'Evelyn was so good at humiliating people! Haha! She was literally walking all over Darryl's dignity!'

Meanwhile, Darryl's eyes were bloody red.

"Huh? What are you staring at? Are you going to wash my feet or not?" Evelyn scowled at him as her hand threatened to squeeze the necklace again.

Darryl stared at her as waves of anger tried to burst out of him.

Chapter 369

"Hurry!" Evelyn scoffed, her fingers ready to break the necklace.

Meanwhile, Circe could not stand it anymore.

"Evelyn, that's enough," she said softly.

Although Darryl did turn her down twice and ran away from the villa, perhaps he really did have his reasons.

Evelyn was determined. She shook her head, "Circe, don't feel bad for men like him."

Evelyn smiled as she watched Darryl try so hard to contain his anger. "What now? Do you want to fight me? I'll give you three seconds to wash my feet, or you'll never see the Heart of the Ocean ever again."

"Three!" She called out in a cold tone.

"Two!"

Darryl remained silent, his body trembling as he fought hard to restrain his anger. If he did not give in, Dax's life would be ruined. If Dax died because of this, he would spend the rest of his life living with guilt. Darryl gritted his teeth and walked toward Evelyn. Under the gaze of all the ladies, he knelt in

front of Evelyn and gently took off her shoes.

Her feet were fair and clean; they did not need any washing. She only wanted to humiliate him. With his teeth gritted, he placed her feet into the bowl of warm water. He did not want to trigger her further, so he kept the movement gentle without showing any of his anger. He washed her feet with full concentration.

Meanwhile, the ladies broke out in laughter, and some of them even took out their phones to record Darryl as if it was breaking news.

Darryl could feel his cheeks become red, but he had no other choice.

All Evelyn could feel was a pair of big hands massaging her feet with adequate strength. She leaned back slightly, enjoying the bliss. At the same time, she looked down at Darryl. This man had no sense of dignity. How could a man kneel and wash a woman's feet in public!? Calling him a douche was a compliment.

Evelyn kicked off his hands and scoffed, "You look like a dog washing my feet. I don't want to look at you anymore. Take the Heart of the Ocean and get lost." She raised her hand and tossed the necklace toward the door.

In that instant, Darryl was overwhelmed with

excitement as he ran towards the door and picked the necklace from the floor. After that, he ran away and disappeared out of sight. He could still hear the laughter coming from the café long after he had left.

By the time he got back to the Sanders mansion, the sky had turned dark. He went straight to the second floor and fed the Heart of the Ocean to Dax.

Knowing that he came back with the Heart of the Ocean, Old Master Sanders and Nancy were delighted. They waited for Dax to wake up till midnight. The doctor came by and checked on Dax, but he shook his head and left.

It was two o'clock in the morning when Old Master Sanders and Nancy became too tired and went back to their bedrooms. Darryl was left alone outside Dax 's room.

He knew that Dax was unlikely to wake up ever again after being asleep for so long. Yet. he did not want to leave him. He wanted to stay and wait till he woke up, even if the chances were slim. After a while, Darryl could no longer fight back his fatigue and fell asleep leaning on the wall outside the door.

He was roused awake when he felt someone tapping his shoulder. At first, he thought it was Dax, and he opened his eyes in anticipation, he saw it was Nancy instead.

She was dressed in her nightgown, and her body was alluring.

"Darryl, you don't have to wait," Nancy said gently. "Dax probably won't wake up anymore."

"I'm not sleepy. I'll wait for a little longer," Darryl shook his head as he spoke with a hoarse voice.

Since he insisted, Nancy nodded and brought him a blanket before returning to her bedroom.

Chapter 370

It was four o'clock in the morning when it began to drizzle, and Darryl gave in to sleep again. This time, he dreamt on and off throughout, and he vaguely felt someone kicking his leg.

He suddenly woke up and looked up to see Dax standing by the door staring down at him with a huge grin on his face.

"Darryl? Are you trying to make me laugh at you being my guard? Haha!" Dax laughed, rocking back and forth.

In this instant, Darryl's eyes watered as he tried his best to hold back his tears.

'He was alive. Dax was alive!' Darryl thought.

He jumped up right away and hugged Dax so tightly in his arms.

"Damn it. Why are you hugging me!" Dax said with a look of disgust, but he could not fight back the grin on his face. He punched Darryl's chest and laughed, "Right, I'm alive! Haha! I'm still alive! Hahaha!"

Darryl started laughing too. The two men looked at

each other without speaking as they kept on laughing.

Nobody would understand the bond between them. Its beauty was beyond words. Their laughter had woken Nancy and Old Master Sanders up as well. When they saw that Dax was alive, everyone was dancing in joy!

The villa was filled with cheer and excitement. The most uplifting news was that Dax was not only fully recovered, but his power had increased. He was now a Level Four Master General! This was because Dax had taken the Godly pills not long ago, and after taking the Heart of the Ocean, he skipped three levels and became a Level Four Master General right away.

"Hahaha! Darryl, the pill you got me is a real babe!" Dax exclaimed with excitement as he removed his shirt and pointed at his chest. "After eating it, I'm not only three levels higher than I was, the wound and scar completely disappeared!"

Darryl laughed with joy as he reclined on the sofa. " That's because you've got really thick skin! Haha!"

"Damn you! You're the one with thick skin!" Dax refuted happily.

Ding!

Meanwhile, Darryl's phone lit up with an incoming

call. He glanced at it and saw it was Megan calling. Once he picked up, he could hear Megan say, "My good big brother, where are you?"

"What's up?"

Darryl knew that whenever Megan called him 'good big brother,' she had a favor to ask. He knew her well enough by now.

Megan said softly, "Good big brother, do you have a Godly pill now?"

She had asked for it some time ago, but Darryl had not gotten back to her since then. She had no choice but to phone him.

"Meet me later, and I'll give it to you," Darryl said as he smiled.

Darryl was so happy that Dax made it through; he would agree to anything right now.

Megan was excited, making her voice sound even sweeter. "That's great! Thank you, my good big brother!" She paused for a moment before asking, " Oh yeah, my good big brother, could you....could you give me one more?"

'Huh? One more? Does she think I'm a pill supplier now and that I can supply however much she asks for?' Darryl thought.

Although it was not too difficult to refine a Godly

pill, it did take some time and effort. Most importantly, giving Megan one pill for free was alright, but giving her a few pills at once was quite unfair to the others. What if her relatives come running to him for the pills in the future?

Darryl smiled. "Why do you need so many for?"

Megan explained honestly, "My good big brother, listen to me. My master, the Abbess Mother Serendipity, needs the Godly pill badly. She's been stuck as a Level Five Martial Marquis for a very long time. The bottleneck has been keeping her from becoming a Martial Saint!"

'Huh!? Her master was....who?!' a loud buzz overwhelmed Darryl's ears.

Since he did not respond, Megan continued to beg him, "My good big brother, if you can give me the Godly pill and help my master breakthrough, she'll be forever grateful. I'll be so thankful for you!"

Chapter 371

Yes, Abbess Mother Serendipity was Megan's Master. Technically, her second Master.

Five years ago, Megan joined the Emei sect. As Emei 's newest generation of Senior Sister, Megan initially had the Head of the Sect as her Master.

However, in recent years, the Head had completely shut off to concentrate on cultivating and did not have time to train the disciples.

Abbess Mother Serendipity had been the one training Megan, teaching her about cultivation. Hence, Megan had a deep respect for her and treated Abbess Mother Serendipity as her own Master.

When Darryl heard this, he was floored. He thought he misheard. "Who did you say was your master?" He frowned.

Megan had not detected the hint of detest in his voice. "My master is Abbess Mother Serendipity, one of the Elders of the Emei sect," she whispered, "She was stationed in Donghai City recently..."

F*ck!

At that, Darryl's expression darkened. He was

fuming with rage.

Abbess Mother Serendipity. Those three words were especially aggravating to Darryl. He had no problems with her, yet she almost killed Dax due to her so-called justice. He had not paid her back for that, and now she wanted a Godly pill? Dream on!

The more he thought of it, the angrier he became. His tone became cold as he snarled. "That's enough. I don't need to hear any more. I don't have a Godly pill here."

What?

Megan was anxious and confused. "My good brother, what happened? Didn't we agree on a place to meet for the Godly pill? Why are you contradicting your words?"

Darryl sighed. "It's only because of your Master. Nothing else," he spat.

"My Master?" Megan was confused, her mind blank.

What happened with her Master?

She was about to respond when Darryl interrupted, "Ask your Master what she did." He hung up.

Megan trembled as the call dropped. Darryl slammed his phone down on the coffee table, immensely livid after the call. Bloody hell, now that

he knew her Master was Abbess Mother Serendipity, he regretted giving her the two Godly pills.

At the same time, Dax came over. "Darryl, what happened?" he laughed, "Why are you so angry?"

Darryl took a deep breath. "It's Megan," he sighed.

Dax was shocked. "Ah, it's that beautiful officer. She 's gorgeous," he chuckled, "Darryl, you do have a way with women."

Darryl did not know whether to cry or laugh. "You don't know who her Master is?" he scoffed, "Let me tell you..."

RING! RING!

Darryl's phone interrupted him.

He was enraged. Would Megan ever stop pestering him?

He picked up the phone and yelled, "How many times must I say that I don't have the Godly pill with me? Not now, not ever! Don't call me again!"

He was about to cut the call when a soft and frightened voice came through. "Hubby, something happened..."

Lily!

"What happened? Honey, don't panic! What

happened?" Darryl panicked.

He could hear that Lily's surroundings were extremely noisy. She was almost in tears. "I'm at the hospital. Hubby, please come quick..."

Hospital?

Darryl left immediately without any further questions once he heard.

On the first floor of Donghai City's City Hospital, there were many seriously injured patients with many nurses attending to them. It was like a scene of a catastrophic event.

Darryl was utterly stunned when he arrived.

Chapter 372

What was happening? What had happened?

"Hubby, I'm here." Lily approached Darryl anxiously.

"Lily, what happened?" Darryl sighed with relief as he realized she was not injured.

Lily was incredibly gorgeous in her skinny black jeans that flaunted her legs. She looked alluring in her high heels. Many men could not help but look at her.

Lily hugged Darryl. "Hubby, my mother just called," she cried, "She said she was in an accident, I rushed here but could not find her. I'm scared."

Samantha was hit by a car?

Darryl patted Lily on the back, comforting her. "Don 't panic, it will be fine." He scanned the surroundings as he hugged Lily, his heart shuddering.

F*ck, the injured patients waiting around looked like they were in a car crash. Some were bleeding profusely, some had broken limbs. It was tragic.

Lily was almost in tears as she held Darryl's arms

tightly. "Hubby, do you think mother would be fine?"

Her father was still overseas. What if something happened to Samantha?

"Don't frighten yourself." Darryl kissed Lily on her forehead. He stumbled upon a group of people on the staircase outside. One of them was Samantha.

"Honey, over there!" Darryl pointed.

Lily rushed over to Samantha. She was unhappy, although her arm had a minor bruise that stopped bleeding. Compared to the others, she was fortunate.

There were about twenty people with her, all lightly bruised, but they seemed enraged.

Seeing that Samantha was in one piece, Lily was relieved. However, how huge was this car accident that involved so many people?

Samantha's eyes were bloodshot as her face darkened. "Lily, I did something bad," she admitted.

"Mother, are you alright?" Lily was slightly stunned. She noticed that her mahjong friends were among the injured patients. "Mother, were you playing mahjong again?" she asked.

Samantha shook her head. "I've... sold the mansion

away," she mumbled.

What?

Lily trembled. "Why? Why would you do that?" She was anxious and furious.

Samantha sighed before she explained in detail. When Lily previously bought some shares in the Lyndon Enterprise, they did not have much savings left. However, Samantha's daily makeup and skincare routine cost a lot. Not having the financial freedom she was used to having was a bitter pill to swallow.

A few days prior, Eleanor Francis—one of Samantha 's mahjong's friends—shared a way to get rich quickly. It was through the Genesis Financial Corporation. It was a relatively new financial scheme that promised returns in a short timeframe. All they needed to do was invest ten thousand bucks into the company, and they could earn about five hundred bucks per week.

Samantha was extremely interested. She sold the mansion for eighty million and invested it all in the scheme. She thought she could buy another mansion when the returns came in.

A week later, Genesis Financial Company claimed that the scheme had issues and that there would be no returns for the time being.

Samantha was floored. It was then that she realized that she had been scammed.

However, she was not alone in this. There were tens of others who were in the same position. They gathered together and protested in front of Genesis ' building.

The president of Genesis Financial Company—Cyrus Carney—had security chase them away, but they would not budge. In the end, he got annoyed to the point where he drove his car into the crowd, injuring Samantha and the group.

When Samantha finished her explanation, she was fuming. "This corporation is evil!"

She was filled with regret. The mansion was bought by her daughter's hard-earned money, yet it was gone in an instant.

Samantha looked at Darryl and reprimanded, " Darryl, you useless being! What else can you do, you good-for-nothing? I don't want to see you! Bugger off!"

This useless piece of crap did nothing for the house. Why did she need a worthless son-in-law like him? Other sons-in-law could earn money, but what about Darryl? If he could make some money, she would not have desperately sold off the mansion

and gotten scammed. Samantha's mood worsened at the thought of Darryl.

Darryl laughed. His mother-in-law was beautiful, but she nagged all the time.

Chapter 373

Darryl smiled but stayed silent. He was used to Samantha's scoldings.

Seeing how he ignored her, Samantha was even angrier. "How dare you laugh so shamelessly? I shouldn't have let you marry my daughter! Look at the other sons-in-law; they are successful and wealthy. How about you? If you could earn at least ten thousand a month, I would not have had to sell the mansion!"

Lily bit her lip. "Mother, stop." She tried to defend Darryl.

Samantha turned to Lily. "Lily, what is with you? Why do you love him so much? I don't care, you will divorce him tomorrow."

It was because of him that she was in this situation now.

Everyone looked at Darryl and shook their heads. They had all heard how Samantha had a useless son-in-law.

Lily kept gnawing on her lip. She tried to change the subject. "Mother, how could you trust these financial schemes?"

To get five hundred back within seven days with a mere ten thousand investment—it was clearly a scam.

Darryl sighed. According to Samantha's explanation, this corporation sounded like a scam. Also, they definitely had huge support from someone influential. Otherwise, they would not have so boldly scammed people out of their hard-earn money.

Eleanor stood up, muttering in despair, "I think it will be hard to get our money back. I just found out that the president, Cyrus Carney, is from a crime syndicate. Why else would he dare to hit us with his car?"

Everyone was disappointed. How could they stand up to someone like Cyrus?

'Cyrus Carney? Why did the name sound so familiar? ' Darryl frowned. He came to a realization, this man must have been a follower of Felix Blakely. Darryl had dinner with Felix once, and Cyrus was just a bodyguard then.

Who would have thought that we would become a president now?

Just then, Samantha stood up and said confidently, "What are you afraid of? Don't worry! I'll get our

money back!"

Everyone looked at Samantha in shock. Eleanor laughed. "Samantha, how are you going to do it? Everyone discussed and came up with nothing, yet you think you could get our money back? Let's just give up."

Samantha's face flushed as she rebutted, "Let me tell you, my daughter used to be pursued by a man named Ray Gregory. Do you know what his family does? They have a trading company and are very well connected. As long as I call him, I'm sure he will be able to settle this for us!"

Pursuer?

Darryl frowned, slightly unhappy.

His mother-in-law was indeed an interesting person. Whenever she faced trouble, she would call one of Lily's old pursuers. It used to be Ashton Adagio, but it was now this Ray person.

Lily panicked as her face flushed red. She tugged at Samantha and whispered, "Mother, why did you have to mention him?"

Samantha was not wrong. Before Samantha got married, she had many pursuers, and Ray Gregory was just one of them. He was rich and powerful, but now that Lily had married Darryl, why did

Samantha bring him up?

Samantha disagreed. “Lily, don’t you worry about this. We must get back our eighty million!” she exclaimed, “If we don’t get help from Ray, who else do we have? This loser of a son-in-law?”

Chapter 374

"Do tell, what can you do?" Samantha glared at Darryl despicably.

Darryl could not be bothered to argue with Samantha. He told Lily, "It's fine. Since your mother believes in your ex-boyfriend, let her be."

"What ex-boyfriend?!" Lily was distressed as she said, "Hubby, Ray and I had nothing going on. He pursued me, but we were never together!"

Darryl was unhappy. He wanted to see how great this Ray was; that his own mother-in-law still thought of him.

Samantha took her phone out and made a call.

Samantha smiled widely after the call was picked up shortly after. She softened her tone and said, " Hello, Ray? This is Auntie Samantha. Could you come to the hospital? I have a favor to ask of you. Alright, I will wait for you."

When she hung up, she looked at Eleanor smugly. " Just you wait and see, Ray will arrive shortly. As long as he agrees to help, we will get back our money!"

"Are you for real?" The rest started to chime in.

"If he really could get our money back, we'll have to thank you!"

Samantha snickered as she stood up and said, "You have no idea how well Ray treats me. When he was pursuing my daughter, he would shower me with gifts daily. There was once he gave me a Tourmaline bracelet. It costs as much as a BMW!"

Everyone exclaimed as they looked at Samantha with envy. She adored being the center of attention. She continued, "There was once, my phone was stolen at a mall. I called Ray, and guess what happened?"

"What happened?" They asked in unison.

Samantha said proudly, "Turns out, the mall was owned by Ray's boss. He gave his boss a call, and he ordered the staff to lock down the entire mall until the thief was caught."

Everyone was in awe—if Ray was this powerful, they might have a chance at getting their money back!

At the same time, a car came screeching from afar. A white Porsche came speeding through and stopped right at the entrance of the hospital. A handsome young man came down—it was Ray! He wore a casual suit, elegant and classy.

"Ray, over here!" Samantha smiled widely, waving at him.

"Is that a Porsche?" someone exclaimed.

"The Porsche is nothing," Samantha barked, "he even has a Bentley!"

Lily was embarrassed. She had not seen Ray for a long time. She bit her lip and wished she could escape.

Samantha gushed, "Ray, I'm so sorry for making you come here all of a sudden."

"Auntie, you're too kind. I'm glad that you thought of me." He handed Samantha a gift box and said, "I came in a rush, so I could only prepare a small gift. I hope you don't mind."

"That is so kind of you!" Samantha smiled and accepted the gift. She opened the gift, and everybody gasped. It was a hairpin made out of pure jade. It suited a mature woman like herself.

Chapter 375

"Ray, you're too kind. How much did this cost?" Samantha was elated.

"Auntie Samantha, it's nothing," Ray assured as he waved, "it wasn't even close to a hundred thousand. It suits you!"

Samantha was enthralled to hear that. She liked Ray even more now.

Ray turned to Lily and said, "I haven't seen you in a while."

Lily nodded in acknowledgment.

"You've gotten even more gorgeous since the last I saw you," Ray said chivalrously. He turned to Darryl with a hint of disgust in his eyes and added, "You must be the infamous Darryl Darby."

In Donghai City, everyone knew that the beautiful Lily Lyndon married a useless loser.

Samantha pulled Ray aside as she scoffed, "Ray, don 't bother talking to this loser. Come, let me explain the current situation." She explained everything to him.

"Hubby, what should we do now?" Lily panicked as

she whispered to Darryl.

She understood Samantha well. If Ray managed to get their money back, Samantha would definitely force Lily to leave Darryl.

"Let's see how things go." Darryl smiled.

After Samantha finished recounting the story, Ray replied, "Auntie Samantha, don't worry. How dare this financial corporation steal your money? I will get it back for you!"

This was just what Samantha wanted to hear! She exclaimed in relief, "Ray, I knew you would be able to do it!"

Could this young man really do it? The others were slightly skeptical, yet they believed him all the same. They started to praise Ray and beg him to help them get their money back.

Ray loved the attention and adoration from the crowd. He waved and said, "Everyone, don't worry. If you are all Samantha's friends, I'll help you all get your money back! Let me make a call!"

He had heard a little about the Genesis Financial Corporation. The president was Cyrus Carney, a follower of Felix Blakely.

Felix was a powerful man in Donghai City. He might not know him personally, but his father might since

their business expanded rapidly within two years.

He took his phone and gave his father a call. He spoke carefully, "Dad, I might have a favor to ask of you..." He then explained the issue.

As he finished describing the situation, his father reprimanded him. "Why are you getting involved in other people's problems? Do you think I am omnipotent? Why are you causing so much trouble? Do you think I would know Felix? I don't even know his follower, Cyrus! I'm having a drink, so don't call me!" He immediately hung up.

Ray just received a scolding. He was done for now. How could his father not know Felix Blakely? How was this possible? He was worried, but he managed to force a smile. "Auntie Samantha, don't worry," he nervously reassured, "I've made a call. You'll receive your money back by tomorrow latest!"

He had no other choice but to lie to Samantha for now!

"That's great news, Ray! Thank you so much! We'll wait for your good news!" Samantha praised.

Darryl could not help but laugh. He was a Master General that had mastered the Pure Energy Scripture. His hearing abilities were more refined than an ordinary person—so he heard the call clearly.

Darryl deduced that Ray had extremely thick skin. He could not resolve the issue, yet he pretended as if he could.

Darryl sighed as he approached Samantha. "Ray does not have the means to get your money back. Why not let me make a call? Maybe I could be of help."

What? The crowd was stunned. They looked at Darryl as if they were staring at a fool.

How was this live-in son-in-law going to help them get their money back?

Samantha's face flushed. "Shut up!" She hushed him. "Don't embarrass me, you good-for-nothing!"

Ray pointed at Darryl and laughed, "Darryl, what did you say? Could you get back the money? Haha!" Ray laughed out loud.

Darryl was really a joke. His father could not return their money, so how could this loser possibly do it?

"Ray, don't be mad," Samantha explained, "This useless loser won't be able to do it. We'll still have to rely on you."

"Yes, Ray, don't be mad." The rest chimed in.

"According to Samantha, Darryl is completely

useless. He is a good-for-nothing, so please don't be offended by him."

They were all afraid that if Ray got mad, he might not help them anymore, and they won't be able to get their money back.

Darryl let out an exasperated sigh as he left the group silently. He made a phone call to Felix Blakely.

Chapter 376

In the Metrojade Private Club's Executive Suite, Felix Blakely and Cyrus Carney were on cloud nine.

Two gorgeous, sexy women were giving them a massage.

Felix was delighted that his follower Cyrus made hundreds of millions through his new finance corporation. Cyrus wanted to treat Felix to a relaxing massage session.

"Felix, now that I'm rich, I should thank you the most!" Cyrus laughed. He beckoned a lady over with a mutton fat jade in her hands.

Cyrus raised his eyebrows. "I heard that you are into jades," he explained, "now that I've earned some money, I bought this mutton fat jade for you."

"That's great!" Felix nodded. His follower knew how to please him. All those years of looking after him did not go to waste.

Felix took the jade over when his phone rang.

'F*ck, Darryl Darby?'

Felix sat up rigidly as he answered the call. If Brother Darryl called, it must have been an urgent

matter.

"Felix," Darryl growled, "I realized you've gotten bold. Your follower has even started an illegal business, am I right? Are you looking for trouble?"

"What?" Felix was confused. He hesitated. "Brother D...no, I mean, Second Master, no, Mr. Darby. I do not understand."

Previously, Darryl warned him to refer to him only as Mr. Darby.

"You don't understand me? You have a follower called Cyrus Carney. He scammed my mother-in-law out of her mansion. I'll give you ten minutes to return their money. I'm waiting at the hospital," Darryl threatened coldly, hanging up the call immediately.

Felix came to a realization. He kicked Cyrus in the head!

"Felix, what... What's happening?" Cyrus was equally confused.

"Motherf*cker, do you want to die? You scammed people out of a few hundred million. How dare you be so smug?" Felix yelled and punched Cyrus.

Cyrus was almost in tears as he choked, "I did cheat them, but they were all ordinary folks!"

"F*ck you! You scammed Brother D's mother-in-

law! She sold her entire mansion!"

D? Who was Brother D? Cyrus blanked out.

Felix grabbed his head and screamed, "Brother D is the Darby family's second eldest. He is the person I am most grateful for in my life! You bloody well return the money!"

Cyrus had never seen Felix lose his temper in such a frightening way. He quickly put on clothes and left for the hospital.

Samantha and Ray were chatting at the entrance of the hospital when a Land Rover sped by.

Cyrus ran toward the crowd.

Samantha exploded as he saw him. "That's the person that took our money!"

"Yes! That's him!"

"He's here to return our money!"

Everyone cheered. Samantha was extremely elated. She held onto Ray's arms and gushed, "You're amazing! One phone call and you could get Cyrus to come!"

What? Ray was confused. What was happening? His father did not know who Cyrus was—let alone Felix—unless his father asked for help to get to Felix? It must be! Ray had a huge smiled plastered to his face.

Cyrus was profusely sweating as he walked toward the crowd. He clutched onto a card, kneeling and apologizing. "I'm so sorry. I should not have scammed all of you for your money. I'm so sorry, I came here to return the money to you. I promise I won't make the same mistake again. Ever!"

Haha! Looking at Cyrus's remorseful action, everyone laughed and praised Ray.

Ray stomped up to him and swiped the credit card out of his hands. He looked down on Cyrus and said, "As long as you know you've made a mistake. Next time, I won't go so easy on you!"

'Who?' Cyrus was confused by the person speaking to him. He did not recognize Ray. Was he Brother D' s friend?

Cyrus did not dare say much while admitting his mistake. "Yes, yes. I won't dare to do it anymore! This card has not only the money, but it also has the interest as well!"

Everyone gasped in delight!

Samantha smiled widely. "It's all thanks to you!" she squealed, "You're amazing! One phone call was all it took for you to resolve this issue. If only my daughter could marry you instead!"

Lily's face flushed in anger and embarrassment.

Chapter 377

Lily felt extremely awkward since Ray used to be headstrong in his pursuit of her courtship. Although she had not spoken to him in ages, he really did her a huge favor this time.

"Thank you, Ray," Lily whispered.

"Yes, thank you, Ray!" Samantha chimed in. Glaring at Darryl, she spat, "If I were to rely on my useless son-in-law, I wouldn't be able to get my money back. Ray, are you free tonight? Join us for dinner!"

"That sounds good!" Ray nodded. He was elated as he assured, "Auntie Samantha, if you need any help in the future, just call me!"

He then kicked Cyrus. "F*cker, if you dare scam more people out of their money, I'll make your life a living hell! F*ck off!"

Cyrus did not dare to utter a word as he knelt on the floor. After all, he was Brother D's friend. He nodded furiously, "Yes, yes! I promise I won't do it again! I'll leave now!"

He was about to stand up and leave when his phone rang. It was Felix. He picked up the phone with his

trembling hands as he mumbled, "Felix, don't worry. I've returned them their money."

Felix had not calmed down. He shouted into the phone. "F*ck you! After you've returned the money, apologize to Brother D! He has to forgive you, only then can you return. If not, I'll skin you alive!" Felix hung up.

Cyrus was on the verge of tears. He stood up to face Ray and asked, "Brother, can I see Brother D? I have to apologize to him in person."

"Who? There's no such person here. My name is Ray Gregory, and my dad is Rich Gregory." Up until now, Ray had thought that it was his father that made Cyrus come over.

What? Cyrus was equally confused. Did this person not know Brother D? He tried again to ask, "So, you're not Brother D's friend?"

Ray was stunned as he replied impatiently, "Are you deaf or what? I do not know him!"

Bloody hell! If he did not know Brother D, why was he here acting all high and mighty?

"Bloody f*ck!" Cyrus kicked Ray in the stomach.

Everyone was stunned. What happened? Why did they start fighting?

"I'll kill you today!" Cyrus was on top of Ray

throwing punches.

Bloody hell! How dare he act as if he was in charge and being so arrogant about it?

Samantha could take it no longer when she cried, " Cyrus, that's enough! It's bad that you scammed us of our money, now you dare to beat Ray up? Do you know who his father is? He's Rich Gregory! He's not someone you can afford to offend!"

"F*ck you, I don't care if he is Rich Gregory or Poor Gregory! I will beat him today! You better f*ck off as well. If not, I'll hit you too!" Cyrus yelled. He was about to hit Samantha.

Samantha trembled in fear, frozen in place. She did not expect that Cyrus would dare to slap her.

Lily was anxious as well. She wanted to step forward, but she was too late!

Then out of a sudden, a cold voice came from behind Cyrus!

"Cyrus, enough. That is my mother-in-law." Darryl walked toward him slowly.

Upon hearing his voice, Cyrus immediately stopped. He turned around and met Darryl's eyes. Cyrus was Felix's most loyal follower. Of course, he should have known how Brother D looks like.

This beautiful woman was his mother-in-law? F*

ck, he was done for! Dead meat!

THUD!

He immediately knelt on the floor and bowed in prostration.

Chapter 378

"Brother D, I am so sorry! I did not know she was your mother-in-law! If I knew, I would not have dared!" Cyrus howled, his forehead bleeding from slamming onto the floor as he bowed.

In an instant, everyone was floored!

What was happening?

The 'Brother D' that Cyrus mentioned turned out to be the live-in son-in-law?

Samantha was stunned as well, barely able to stand. She looked at Darryl in admiration. Cyrus returned their money because he feared Darryl!

"Brother D, please forgive me. You must forgive me!" Cyrus was in tears. He hugged Darryl's leg and begged, "If you're unhappy, I will give them another thirty million as an apology! Please forgive me..."

The crowd gasped in surprise! They were delighted.

Darryl waved his hand in dismissal. He replied, "It's fine. Go and tell Felix the next time he or any of his followers decide to do anything illegal, they'd better watch out."

"Yes, yes, thank you, Brother D!" Cyrus bowed two more times before he ran off.

The crowd was in awe of Darryl.

"Samantha, you're son-in-law is great!"

"Yes! You always said that he is a loser. You must be mistaken!"

"Your son-in-law is amazing! Please don't tell me he's part of the crime syndicate..."

The bunch of women who were scammed all sang praises in Darryl's name.

Samantha slowly came to her senses. "Yes, yes. My son-in-law is useless most of the time, but he has connections too! Now that you all have your money back, it's time to go home! We'll see each other another day!"

Everyone left, but not before praising Darryl. Lily hugged Darryl tightly, extremely happy with her amazing husband.

Half an hour later, Darryl, Lily, and Samantha were back in the mansion.

As he sat in the living area, Darryl felt overwhelmed. His mother-in-law did quite some damage. They had barely lived in this lavish mansion, and she had sold it off. Luckily, the

person who bought it would only move in within the next month or so, which gave them at least another month to secure another place to stay.

Lily bid them goodnight and went to bed.

For three years, Darryl and Lily did not share the same bed. They shared the room in their old place, but Lily slept on the bed while Darryl slept on the floor. Now that they had a larger mansion, Darryl had his own room.

Darryl was extremely exhausted after a long day. He switched off his lights, looking forward to having a good night's sleep when there was a knock on his door.

'Could it be Lily? Does she finally want to spend the night with me?' He thought delightedly. He quickly opened the door and was stunned to see Samantha. What was she doing?

Chapter 379

Samantha was still dressed in the same clothes she wore during the day. Darryl gulped. He could not help but give Samantha another look or two. She maintained her figure and youthfulness. If she stood next to Lily, they looked more like sisters rather than a mother-daughter duo.

Samantha hushed Darryl with a finger to her lips. " Don't turn on the lights. Lily is asleep, I don't want to wake her up."

What? Keep the lights off? Why was she so mysterious?

In another mansion by the Donghai City seaside, an old man was sitting on a couch. It was Zion Featherstone, Evelyn's grandfather. He previously consumed an ineffective Godly pill and fainted.

"Grandpa, help me take a look—is this Yang pill genuine?" Evelyn impatiently rushed into the living room and handed the pill to her grandfather.

Zion took the pill. He scrutinized it and nodded. " This is the real thing."

He read about the Yang pill in an old manual. The manual described the pill exactly as what he saw. At

that, Evelyn let out a sigh of relief. It seemed as if Darryl did not lie to her after all, that he could extract a Yang pill.

Zion continued, "Evelyn, do you need this pill to lessen your period pain? Was it after you've practiced cultivating the Immaculate Girl Scripture?"

Evelyn smiled and nodded. "Grandpa, you're so observant! How did you know?"

Zion smiled bitterly. He shook his head and said, "It 's true that the Yang pill will be able to reduce your pain. However, this is not long-lasting. Cultivating the Immaculate Girl Scripture will cause your yin aura to be too heavy. If you continue practicing it, the yin aura will eventually envelop your body, and you will be in immense pain. Listen to Grandpa, stop practicing this manual."

Zion looked at Evelyn with concern. At the Eternal Life Palace sect, many tried the Immaculate Girl Scripture but gave up due to the pain of having an excess of yin aura in their bodies. He only had one granddaughter, and he could not bear to see her in pain.

Evelyn replied nonchalantly, "It'll be fine, Grandpa!"

Zion sighed. There was nothing he could do to

change her mind.

On the other side of the city, Donghai City First Hospital was in chaos. Hundreds of luxury cars were parked around the area.

The news of Old Master Darby's passing had spread, and every family in Donghai City was shocked. He was a powerful and successful person. The entire hospital was filled with rich and wealthy people paying their last respects.

Many were gathered in the patient's ward.

Chapter 380

They were people of high social status, including Brandon Guy, Abby Guy, Abbess Mother Serendipity, and each family's elders.

"Dad..."

Drake Darby knelt by the bed, sobbing. He held Old Master Darby's hand. He choked, "Dad, wake up..."

Drake was hit hard by his father's passing. The expressions of everyone around him were equally somber.

Drake turned to Florian behind him and asked, " What happened? Wasn't he still in good condition earlier when we left the hospital? Why did he pass away suddenly?"

All eyes were on Florian Darby.

He panicked and had a guilty conscience. He struggled to find the words to say as he stuttered, " I...I don't know. He just..."

Yumi stood up and shrieked in anguish. "It was Darryl! He was the one that killed our grandfather! When you left, Old Master Darby clutched his heart, wheezing while muttering how much of a

disappointment Darryl was! How Darryl was greedy, and that he committed incest!"

Yumi acted out the scene as if it happened. She clutched her heart tightly and choked, "Both of us were scared to death when we tried to comfort Grandpa. We were about to call the nurse when he ..." She started to cry.

At the same time, she gave Florian a side-eye. How did she end up married to this loser? He could not even lie with a straight face in times of need. He almost exposed himself.

Florian did not notice Yumi's glares. He nodded in support, "Yes! It was exactly like that!" He secretly let out a sigh of relief. His wife's acting skills were superb. If it were not for her, he would not have known what to do.

Everyone in the room gasped, starting heated discussions among themselves.

How evil was Darryl that he committed patricide, killing his grandfather?

"Darryl!" Drake yelled through gritted teeth. He clenched his fist tightly, but no words came out. If he knew, he should not have asked Darryl to visit Old Master Darby!

SLAM!

Abbess Mother Serendipity punched the table and stood up.

"Not Darryl Darby again!" she screamed, "This filthy animal committed incest. He refused to donate his bone marrow to save Old Master Darby, and now he's angered him to death! This pest should be eliminated once and for all!" The Abbess trembled. Her Internal energy reverberated throughout the entire patient ward.

It was such a strong aura that everyone gasped. She was extraordinarily powerful!

The entire ward fell quiet for a while.

"Abbess Mother Serendipity is right." Someone broke the silence. "A failure like Darryl should not be allowed to continue to live on this earth."

The others came to their senses and nodded in agreement.

"Abbess Mother Serendipity is fighting evil. She is such a heroine!"

"Such is the power of the Emei sect! Their reputation precedes them!"

Everyone sang their praises. A few Emei sect followers beamed in pride.

Chapter 381

The praises meant nothing to Abbess Mother Serendipity. She grew up in the Emei sect and was brought up with a strong sense of justice ingrained in her. Evil had no place in her life.

The more she thought, the more furious she became. She looked at Drake and spat, "The Darbys are a legendary family. Who knew that such a great family could produce such a failure like Darryl. Don' t worry, I won't let Darryl continue his evil ways. I will eliminate this pest."

Drake looked at Abbess Mother Serendipity gratefully. He nodded fiercely.

RING! RING!

At the same time, a phone rang. One of the Emei followers approached Abbess Mother Serendipity and respectfully said, "Master, it's from Sister Megan."

"Hello, Megan," said the Abbess gently.

Among all the followers, Abbess Mother Serendipity loved Megan the most. She had even considered Megan to be her successor in the future.

Megan was slightly agitated as she asked, "Master,

I know that you've been stuck as a Level Five Martial Marquis and could not break through to a Martial Saint. I know you need a Godly pill for that. I 've mentioned before that I have a friend named Darryl Darby who has a Godly pill, but when I called him just now, he...he..."

Megan faltered. She rambled helplessly, "He initially agreed to give me a Godly pill, but upon hearing that you were my master, he declined immediately. Master, did something happen between you two? Do you know Darryl as well? Has there been a misunderstanding?"

Megan knew that Darryl was a man of principle who abided by his words. However, during the last phone call with him, he was furious when he heard the words 'Abbess Mother Serendipity.' What happened?

The Abbess was equally enraged and gritted her teeth. Darryl Darby, this pest! She replied coldly to Megan, "Do not mention his name to me ever again."

She then ordered strictly, "Megan, I'm warning you. Stay away from a person like him. If you were to go against my order, don't bother calling me Master. You got it?"

What? Megan trembled. How could it come to this?

What on earth happened between both of them?

Seeing how Megan did not respond, Abbess Mother Serendipity repeated, "Did you hear what I said?"

Being involved with a filthy animal like Darryl would only ruin her reputation.

Megan bit her lip, feeling conflicted. She did not understand why Abbess Mother Serendipity would be so against Darryl, despite having helped her countless times.

Megan pondered before she softly blurted, "Master, Darryl is-"

"Is what? He is filth. He committed incest and killed his grandfather. An utter failure! Death is not even worthy enough for him!" the Abbess interrupted loudly.

Chapter 382

Abbess Mother Serendipity took a deep breath before she snapped, "I do not need to explain any further. Anyway, you are not to see him again. Understood?"

What? Committed incest? Killed his grandfather?

Megan was confused. After a while, she said carefully, "Master, you must have been mistaken. Darryl is not this sort of person. He helps others and is courageous—he is a good man."

Darryl could not have done such things. Impossible!

"The foul things he has done are an open secret in the Darbys. How could I have been mistaken?" She frowned. "I do not care. If you go against my orders, I'm no master of yours. Megan, tell me the truth. Do you have feelings for Darryl?" Megan rarely had a good opinion of any person, but she pleaded on Darryl's behalf.

Megan blushed. She bit her lip and stuttered, " Master... I... No. I don't have feelings for him. I'm engaged to Kent Hough! How could I have feelings for another man?"

"That's a relief to hear." Abbess Mother

Serendipity let out a sigh. She coldly continued, "I don't care what you think of Darryl. If you ever see him again, don't bother calling me Master." She hung up.

In the mansion, Darryl was sitting awkwardly by the bedside.

Samantha looked at him wordlessly, keeping silent for a minute or two.

What on earth did she want?

Finally, Darryl could not take it any longer. He awkwardly stuttered, "Auntie... Why... Why are you here? It's late."

Samantha let out a soft sigh. She looked at him hopefully and asked, "I want to ask you about something. Are you hiding anything? Are you pretending to be poor when you're actually extremely wealthy and powerful? Why was Cyrus so afraid of you, where he not only returned the money but knelt and apologized to us?"

She continued, "Also, previously at the hospital, Sophie's nephew was also extremely polite with you."

'Oh, it's about that. I thought it was something bigger,' Darryl thought.

Darryl let out a breath. He wanted to explain his

identity, but he thought about how Darby's Second Young Master was known to many in the upper social circle. They also had the impression that he raped his brother's wife; his name has not been cleared.

It would be an utter embarrassment.

At that, Darryl shook his head. He simply stated, " Auntie, those two occasions were thanks to Dax Sanders," he laughed, "You know him. We met him during our last excursion. We're close."

Samantha suddenly came to a realization. She glared at Darryl as she grumbled, "I knew it. How could a useless person like you have any achievements? I see, it was all because of Dax. You really do know how to use other people's power to make yourself feel good."

Chapter 383

Samantha looked at Darryl despicably—he was still a loser after all! Here, she had thought that he improved. The only reason Cyrus returned their money was because of Dax.

Darryl smiled. He did not bother to give Samantha an explanation. He was used to her looking down on him.

Samantha turned around and left the room after she discovered the so-called truth.

Suddenly, she tripped over in her high heels. She was about to fall when Darryl quickly caught her by the waist.

'She smells good,' Darryl thought. "Be careful," he laughed.

"Let go of me, you good-for-nothing!" Samantha was embarrassed and offended. Letting this loser touch her was a huge insult.

Darryl let her go as he thought, 'I prevented you from falling! No good deed goes unpunished.'

Samantha glared at him once more and said, "Good -for-nothing! Why did my daughter marry you?

You do nothing the whole day!"

Darryl sighed when she left and went back to bed.

It was Monday the next day at the Hexad School. Everyone looked well-rested.

Classes had not started, and the students were catching up with each other. Darryl walked in and noticed that Dax's seat was empty.

'Is he not here in school today? It must have been the attack from Abbess Mother Serendipity. It was too vicious. He must have needed a few days of rest. Hopefully, he gets well soon,' Darryl thought.

As he sat down, he felt a weird atmosphere around him. His classmates were all looking at him strangely, as if he were a fool. They stared and laughed at him.

F*ck. What was happening?

The first period was Ancient Literature—a subject which Darryl has no interest in whatsoever.

Though the class had started, the classmates around him were still giggling and laughing, especially the Palmer sisters. They were not listening to what was going on in class, but they were looking down at their phones instead.

Suddenly someone uttered sarcastically, "Sigh,

some men. It's bad enough that they are a live-in son-in-law, yet they don't even have any self-respect. To be their classmate is a complete insult."

'F*ck,' Darryl frowned. He turned his head to see a few ladies watching a video on their phones. It was him washing Evelyn's feet!

Bloody f*ck! He was pissed. Who recorded this the other day?

No wonder everyone was laughing at him. The video became viral, and it garnered millions of views.

Darryl was furious. He clenched his fist tightly and sat through the rest of the class simmering in rage.

Finally, it was recess. Darryl went out of the classroom to get some fresh air. What happened next aggravated him even more.

Lily was standing in front Class Seventeen next door. Towering over in front of her was Xavier King, her PE teacher. He smiled pervertedly, with a paper bag in his hand. He was sizing Lily up as he said, "Lily, I bought this especially for you."

He was attracted to Lily's beauty since the first day of school. She was extremely attractive today; her short skirt left little to his imagination. He could not help it as he went down to buy breakfast just so

he could flirt with her.

However, Xavier's stares made Lily very uncomfortable. He was a teacher—he should act like one.

Lily forced a smile as she rejected, "No, thank you. I've had my breakfast."

Chapter 384

Xavier ignored her. He grabbed Lily's hand and smirked. "Lily, don't be shy. I'm just looking after my students, that's all. Take it."

He shoved the bag to her. Lily panicked as her face flushed and mumbled, "Mister Xavier, please let go of me. Don't..."

Darryl's eyes flared. It was bad enough he had to go through jabs and taunts this morning, now this pervert b*stard was harassing his wife. He had enough!

"Get your f*cking hands off her!" He screamed, shoving Xavier aside.

Xavier almost lost his balance as he shouted back, " It's you again! I have not paid you back the last time!"

In the last Physical Education class, Xavier got jealous that Lily, Yvonne, and Circe spoke to Darryl. He threw the basketball at him, yet Darryl asked him to apologize. If it were not for Miss Katherine that stopped them in time, he would have beaten Darryl up.

Xavier clenched his fist, a powerful aura emitting

from his body. He stared and Darryl and snarled, " Are you looking for death? I did not beat you up the last time, so are you asking for it now?"

Lily panicked. She blocked Darryl and cried, "Mister Xavier, please don't bother him. He meant no harm."

She was glad that her husband stood up for her, but Xavier was a teacher with a bad temper after all. Seeing how Xavier was about to flare up, Lily got anxious.

Many students were starting to take a look at the ongoing commotion.

Xavier laughed coldly. He glared at Darryl and demanded, "Apologize, now."

Apologize?

Darryl snickered, "You're an immoral person who barely acts like a teacher, yet you dare ask for an apology?"

"B*stard, are you looking for death?" Xavier roared. He was about to punch Darryl when Miss Katherine—who witnessed the scene from afar—yelled, "Mister Xavier, what are you doing?"

She approached them with a frown and asked, " Mister Xavier, are you fighting with the students again?"

Xavier was annoyed. How was Darryl so lucky? Whenever he was about to beat him up, Miss Katherine would appear.

The students who were watching shook their heads in disappointment. They hoped to see Darryl get beaten up.

Xavier shook his head. He replied, "Miss Katherine, I have ignored Darryl once out of respect for you. However, this time he has to apologize. I will not let this go."

Katherine's face darkened. She could see that Xavier was extremely furious. If her powers were still intact, she could have stopped him if anything were to happen. However, after losing all her ranks by consuming the ineffective Spirit Petrification Elixir, she was an ordinary human now. Katherine could only pray that Xavier did not get violent.

"You should be the one apologizing," Darryl said coldly.

"Darryl!" Katherine panicked. Why was Darryl still so stubborn? If he did not apologize, he would get beaten up for sure.

"F*ck, what did you say? I will still beat you up with Miss Katherine here! No one can stop me!"

Xavier threw a punch.

Everyone gasped. The ladies held their breath; they could not bear to watch. Xavier—a Level Five Master General—could kill a bull with just a punch.

Lily was almost in tears. She wanted to block Darryl, but she was too late.

No one noticed that Darryl did not panic. He smiled instead as he declared, "Xavier, I have the same feelings towards you. No one can stop me from beating you up too!"

He harnessed his energy field. Strong currents of Internal Energy were radiating from him. It enveloped the entire crowd!

Chapter 385

Darryl's eyes were blood red. He was pissed off. He had to beat Xavier up today, no matter what!

"Darryl is such an idiot. Why did he go looking for trouble by challenging Mister Xavier?"

"Haha! He deserved it!"

No one wanted to stop the fight. The other students had all hoped to see Darryl get beaten up.

Xavier was a Level Five Master General. He might not have intense strength, but it was more than enough to beat up a student. "This will teach you a lesson!" Xavier yelled as his punch almost reached Darryl's chest.

The ladies were worried for Darryl—this punch would break his ribs! Even if he did not die, he would be paralyzed!

However, Darryl had no intention of escaping nor avoiding the punch. He had mastered the Pure Energy Scripture—his Internal Energy was much more potent than his peers of the same level. Even though he was only a Level Two Master General, he had no fear!

"Hubby, run!" Lily stomped her feet in a panic. Her

eyes were red with worry.

She knew that Darryl was strong, but definitely not as strong as a teacher. After all, the teachers at Hexad's were high-ranking members of the six orthodox sects. She did not wish to see Darryl hurt after all they had been through together.

THUD!

Xavier's punch hit Darryl square in the chest. Lily's heart broke, almost feeling Darryl fall to the ground. However, she did not expect that Darryl would still stand up—he barely moved! However, Xavier howled in pain. He took a few steps back and spat out blood!

What?! The entire crowd was silent.

What was happening? Xavier's punch not only barely harmed Darryl, but it also took a toll on Xavier instead. Katherine was in disbelief as well! She stared at Darryl, completely stunned.

Darryl was wearing the Celestial Silk Armor. The sword wielded by Level Five Martial Marquis—Abbess Mother Serendipity—only made him spat blood. Xavier—a Level Five Master General—did no harm to him.

On the other hand, Xavier was shocked and furious. He felt as if he punched a steel wall. His entire arm

was numb. He took a look at his fist and saw bone fractures.

What was happening?

Xavier was almost in tears, shocked to the core.

"Since you've already thrown your punch, it's my turn," Darryl said coldly. In an instant, he rushed toward Xavier and threw a punch while harnessing the Internal Energy of the Pure Energy Scripture.

Xavier could barely react when he was slammed to the floor!

There was a collective loud gasp among the students. They saw a monster.

PUNCH! PUNCH! PUNCH!

Darryl sat on Xavier and threw punch after punch.

Xavier could not fight back. He was howling in pain and cried, "B*stard, how dare you hit a teacher... Ah!"

Being beaten up by a student in front of so many people was an utter embarrassment.

Xavier—in anger—tried to stand up a few times, but Darryl did not give him the opportunity to. Every punch was powered with the colossal force of Pure Energy.

Chapter 386

"Argh!" Xavier was almost unconscious as blood poured out from his nose aggressively. He yelled for backup, "Help me!"

A few guys who had a relatively good relationship with Xavier came to their senses.

"Go! Let's go!"

"Help Mister Xavier!"

They rushed to help him.

"F*ck off!" Darryl growled, standing up to slap each of them.

SMACK! SMACK! SMACK!

His slaps were so hard that they collapsed. A few ladies screamed. Who would have thought that a student would be able to beat a PE teacher up so badly?

"Apologize now!" Darryl demanded with a kick to Xavier's head.

"F*ck you, Darryl. I'll kill you!" Xavier clenched his fist. He lost all control. He had never been so embarrassed before. He only wished for Darryl's

death.

"Apologize!" Darryl howled as he violently kicked Xavier's head again.

Xavier saw stars, and his head was bleeding as well.

"Darryl, you..." Xavier gritted his teeth. A few hundred students were watching. How embarrassing was it for him to apologize?

"Apologize!" Darryl kicked hard another time.

"Darryl, enough! You'll kill him if you continue!" Yvonne finally came to her senses, pulling Darryl back.

"You'd better f*cking pologize to my wife!" Darryl screamed. He was delirious. No one could stop him while he kept kicking Xavier in the head.

Xavier broke. He knew if he did not apologize, Darryl might kill him.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry!" Xavier screamed. He hugged his head. "I was wrong. I'm sorry. I'm sorry..."

"Honey, do you forgive him?" Darryl laughed and gazed at Lily. His eyes were extremely gentle. It was a one eighty-change from the lunatic he was a second ago.

Lily trembled. She nodded. If she said that she does not forgive, Darryl might not have stopped—Xavier

could have died.

Then, a sixty-year-old man approached them—it was the Discipline Master. He asked, "What is going on?"

Upon seeing him, a few students were delighted—they indulged in schadenfreude. The Discipline Master was extremely strict. Darryl was done for since hitting a teacher was against the school rules.

Seeing Xavier on the floor, the Discipline Master's face darkened. He asked slowly, "What is happening?"

Fighting in school?

There was silence. Most of the students were looking at Darryl. Lily panicked. She wanted to explain since this started because Xavier flirted with her.

Before she could speak, Declan Noel stood up. " Master, Darryl openly beat a teacher up!" he exclaimed, "It's despicable! He should be punished!"

Katherine approached the Discipline Master. " Darryl is my student," she added, "I will punish him accordingly."

She then walked up to Darryl and slapped him without warning.

SLAP!

Katherine was an ordinary human. The slap was not painful, but it rang loud and clear. 3

Chapter 387

Katherine's slap was deafening in the quiet environment. Darryl felt his face burn.

The students were jeering softly at him. They enjoyed seeing him being punished.

Darryl was only a meter away from Katherine—he could even smell the perfume on her. He could not deny that Katherine had a great body.

However, this was the second time she slapped him!

Darryl wanted to get angry, but the Discipline Master was here. If he threw a tantrum, he might get expelled from Hexad's—how was he going to steal the manuals? He had to hold back.

"Darryl, do you think that this school is your house, where you could fight whenever you want? If you can't study, then I suggest you leave!" Katherine yelled coldly, slapping him again.

SMACK!

The red marks on Darryl's face were pronounced.

"Run fifty rounds around the field," Katherine commanded.

Darryl said nothing as he clenched his fist tightly.

"Are you deaf? Did you not hear me? I'll say it once more. Run fifty rounds around the field. Now." Katherine frowned.

Darryl took a long breath before he walked to the field and started running under the hot sun.

He had to run another fifty rounds? Darryl sweated profusely. The last time he ran, he was almost half dead. He slumped on the floor and took deep breaths.

Then, he saw Katherine approach him with a bottle of water in her hand.

Katherine bit her lip as she whispered, "Darryl, you must be thirsty. I brought you some water."

Darryl did not accept the water. "What are you doing, Miss Katherine?" He smirked. "Feeling guilty for slapping me?"

His cheeks were still red from her slaps.

Katherine was slightly anxious. "Darryl, I had no choice," she replied, "you saw what happened. I had to punish you in front of the Discipline Master."

She lowered her head and begged. "Darryl, don't be mad at me. Please?"

Darryl laughed. He took the bottle and gulped some water down. "Since you've pleaded, how could I

hold a grudge against you?" he replied.

He stood up and walked off.

"Darryl, wait!" Katherine called after him.

He turned to see Katherine biting her lip. She was slightly hesitant as she asked, "Darryl, could you follow me to my office? I have something to talk to you about."

They headed back to the office. In her office, Darryl slumped onto the couch. He took the teapot and poured himself a cup of tea. He just ran fifty rounds —he was exhausted.

Katherine locked the door from inside, then she turned around and asked Darryl, "Darryl, the last time you said you had a solution to prevent me from losing ranks. Was it true?"

Katherine had become an ordinary person. She was extremely anxious and did not know what to do.

'Ah, so it's because of this,' Darryl sneered silently in his heart and nodded. "Yes, but I remembered when I told you that Declan gave you a faulty elixir, you did not trust me. I also remembered clearly that you told me not to fabricate lies."

"I trust you, Darryl." Katherine panicked. "Help me, please." 1

Chapter 388

Darryl smiled as he thought, 'You slapped me twice and expected me to help you out?'

He pretended to let out a sigh while he hinted slyly, "Miss Katherine, I can help you for sure. But, my body is aching from all the running—if only there were someone around to give me a massage."

Katherine blushed at his words. How dare he hinted at her to massage him! She was his teacher for crying out loud! It was inexplicably inappropriate for her to give him a massage.

"It's fine. I still have things to attend to, so I'll make a move." Seeing no response from Katherine, Darryl stood up and left.

"Darryl, you..." Katherine stuttered in panic.

She had done her research by reading ancient manuals—there was no way whatsoever to restore her ranking. If Darryl did not help her, she would be an ordinary human for the rest of her life!

Katherine bit her lip in despair. She approached Darryl cautiously and placed her hands on his shoulders, pressing into them gently.

"Darryl, is this comfortable for you?"

"It's alright." Darryl felt as if he was on cloud nine. He closed his eyes in enjoyment.

He did not expect that a strict teacher like Katherine had a gentle persona.

Darryl stretched out lazily and groaned, "I think my calves are sore as well."

"You..." Katherine held back. She gnawed on her lip and whispered, "Let me help you with it."

She bent down and gently massaged his calves.

Darryl felt spirited. From his point of view, it was an eyeful for him to ogle at her body. This was such a rare opportunity.

Katherine did not notice Darryl's ogling eyes. " Darryl, tell me. What can I do to get back my rankings?" she asked, biting her lip.

Darryl, satisfied with the massage, nodded in response. He smiled and said, "I know of an Elixir called the Resumption Pill. It helps you repair your energy field and regain your Internal Energy.

"Is that so?" Katherine trembled with excitement, barely able to hide her joy. "That's great! Darryl, do you have the pill with you?"

Darryl laughed. "Nope, but I can make some." The ingredients that were stated in the Infinite Elixir

Manual for the Resumption Pill were common.

What? He made Elixirs?

Katherine was a little shocked. She thought about how at the last Elixir Competition, he was appointed by Isabella Monte as the Elixir Assistant. He must have known how to make this pill! She could not wait any longer.

Seeing her reaction, Darryl chuckled. He walked to the window and retrieved a porcelain pot on the window sill. Katherine bought them to plant flowers, but there were a few empty ones.

He prepared a few ingredients and started to extract the Elixir. He did not fumble since he had done it many times prior.

Katherine stared in disbelief—how could one extract Elixirs this way? You usually had to do it in an elixir producing room, and it had to be done with an elixir cauldron!

However, it seemed that Darryl knew what he was doing. Every step was done with steady precaution.

While she was deep in thought, Darryl turned around and said cheekily, "Miss Katherine, my calves are still sore."

Katherine came to her senses. She approached Darryl and continued to massage his legs.

Chapter 389

Katherine stared at the make-shift elixir cauldron while massaging Darryl.

All she needed was the pill to be ready, then she would gain back her ranks! Before that, she must make him as happy as possible.

Darryl smiled. He could ogle at such a gorgeous woman while he concocted the elixir—he was elated.

Suddenly, he asked casually, "Miss Katherine, let me ask you something."

"What is it?"

"Where is the principal's office? I've been at Hexad's for quite some time now, but I've not seen it."

Darryl still had his mission to steal the manuals, and a few of them were with the principal. He had checked the school's office many times, yet he could not locate it.

"We don't have a principal's office," Katherine chuckled.

What? The principal's office did not exist? Darryl was stunned.

Katherine nodded. "Graham Potter might be the principal, but he rarely appears in school. He's a simple man, so he decided not to have an office."

Darryl was bewildered. Was there really no principal's office? How was he going to steal the manuals?

Katherine pried further. "Darryl, why are you asking about the principal's office all of a sudden?"

"I'm intrigued by the principal. I've heard of him even before I enrolled in Hexad's. I know he was one of the Wudang sect Elders. He is a famous and powerful person," Darryl lied, feigning a look of adoration. "From that moment onwards, he became my idol. I look up to him a lot."

Katherine nodded. "Yes, Graham is indeed powerful. He was one of the Wudang sect's strongest Elders. Apparently, two years ago, he reached the Level Five Martial Marquis rank. He would soon breakthrough to become a Martial Saint!"

What? Level Five Martial Marquis? He was as powerful as Abbess Mother Serendipity!

Darryl could not help but swallow hard. He was such a powerful man. If Darryl ever met him, he would not be able to pull any tricks on him.

BAM!

Suddenly, the porcelain pot exploded. The Elixir's scent wafted through the air as six Resumption pills fell into Darryl's hands.

Katherine looked at the six pills in disbelief, trembling with excitement.

"Miss Katherine, this pill is for you." Darryl smiled. He gave her one pill and said, "This pill can help you level up two ranks."

Katherine swallowed the pill without any hesitation. Suddenly, she shuddered as she felt her powers return. She was now a Level Two Master!

It worked! Katherine was delighted.

"Darryl, let me have the other five pills," she pleaded.

Darryl laughed but did not hand her the pills. He kept them instead.

"Darryl... What are you doing?" She stomped her feet, feeling panicked.

Darryl replied calmly, "Miss Katherine, what's the hurry? You could only take one pill per day. It won't work even if you had more than one. You need at least 24 hours before you could take the next pill. Even if I gave them to you now, it would be pointless!"

Darryl smirked. "I understand how you feel," he reassured. "Don't worry, it'll be with me for safekeeping."

What? Only one per day? That meant Katherine would have to wait six days for her powers to be restored. She would have to listen to Darryl for a few days.

Katherine bit her lip so hard, it almost bled.

"Ouch, my shoulders are sore. Don't stop," Darryl complained. He sat down on the couch.

Katherine walked over and massaged his shoulders.

When school ended, Darryl left Katherine's office. He found out Lily was waiting for him at the entrance. When she saw him, she gave him a huge hug. After all, her husband ran fifty laps around the field because of her.

When they reached home, Lily prepared dinner and watched TV together with Darryl.

After the incident with Xavier King, Darryl clearly felt a change in Lily's attitude towards him. She was more gentle and slightly more dependent on him.

The next few days were the happiest throughout their three years of marriage.

However, nothing good lasted forever.

One day, when Darryl and Lily came home, they were stunned.

A girl—roughly eighteen or nineteen years old—was sitting on the sofa. She looked adorable and pretty. She had a lollipop in her mouth while she watched TV.

Chapter 390

'NO!' Darryl screamed internally as his face collapsed. This girl was his kryptonite. 'Why is she here?!'

This girl was Queenie Garfield, a distant cousin of Lily. She visited her every year.

Queenie was a cute and extremely kind girl. She never once looked down on Darryl and was polite towards him.

'Queenie Garfield.' Those two words were a huge trigger for Darryl. She was his nightmare. Whenever Queenie visited, she demanded that Darryl made her whatever she wished to eat. If not, she would throw a tantrum.

Darryl could not do anything about it.

Furthermore, this cousin of hers was quite naughty. There were a few times where she put the blame on Darryl for things that she broke. Darryl was helpless.

"Queenie, why are you here?" Lily was surprised yet delighted. She walked toward Queenie with a huge smile.

"Lily, Darryl, you guys are back!" Queenie jumped

from the sofa and hugged Lily. "Lily, you've gotten even more beautiful," she complimented.

She hugged Lily's waist and commented, "Your figure is getting sexier too."

In Queenie's eyes, Lily was like a sister to her. They could joke around with each other.

Lily blushed, "Girl, you're in university. Please act your age!"

Lily was overjoyed. She missed her, having not seen her in almost half a year. It was a pleasant surprise that she turned up at their house.

Queenie glanced at Darryl and chuckled, "I haven't seen you for half a year. You've gotten even more handsome too!"

"You too, as sweet as ever!" he smiled.

Darryl felt slightly dejected. He thought that he could use these few days to get to know Lily better, that they might even spend the night together. Now that Queenie was here, she would definitely want to sleep with Lily in the same bed.

Lily looked at Queenie lovingly and asked, "Aren't you supposed to be in school? Why are you here?"

Queenie cocked her head as she replied, "My subjects are slightly special. When others have to

study, we'll have breaks instead."

Lily nodded, not wanting to pry further. They changed the topic. Girls would either talk about celebrities or makeup.

The living area was filled with their chipper voices. Darryl did not interrupt, sitting beside them as he observed the conversation between them.

Queenie laughed and said to Darryl, "Come shopping with us!"

Darryl sighed, then he nodded. Queenie loved shopping. Whenever they went shopping, they would spend at least half a day walking around. Darryl's head hurt at the thought of it. However, he had no other choice. After all, Queenie was Lily's favorite younger cousin.

"Yay! Let's go!" Queenie jumped from the sofa and cheered.

Ten minutes later, they were at the Red Flag pedestrian walkway. It was one of Donghai City's busiest streets. When they reached, there was still a crowd. Queenie was over the moon when they arrived. She would stop at each shop for a long time. She did not forget about the small stalls too.

"Candy! I've not had them in such a long time!"

"Buy it."

"This shop has the newest bags!"

"Get it."

When they entered the mall, Queenie's eyes sparkled. There was a massive sign at the entrance. " What? ETM is here? You've got to be kidding me!" Queenie held her cheeks in surprise.

ETM was a girl group that was all the rage recently. Queenie adored them. Who knew that she would be able to see them in person today?

Darryl chuckled at Queenie for being so excited. There was a crowd in the mall and loud music was playing too. It seemed like the group was currently performing.

Lily exclaimed, "I like ETM too! They have good songs!"

Queenie pulled Lily's hand and said, "You like them too? Let's go! We might be able to get an autograph!"

"Let's go!" Lily nodded. She was equally ecstatic.

Darryl, however, was speechless. Why did girls like these celebrities? He could not do anything but follow them into the crowd as well.

Chapter 391

A huge stage was set up in the middle of the mall. Three scantily clad ladies were performing on stage, they were ETM.

Around the stage, barriers were set up to prevent the fans from rushing through. The fans were screaming passionately.

This performance was almost like a full-sized concert. Darryl was nonchalant toward celebrities ever since he became the president of the Platinum Corporation. Celebrities were also human, there was nothing special about them.

Just then, Queenie and Lily managed to squeeze through to the front of the stage.

"ETM!" Queenie screamed excitedly, she waved her hands. The three members were performing on stage, they did not bother to acknowledge Queenie.

This group was famous. They were long numb to the cries and cheers of the fans.

Suddenly, Lily and Queenie were shoved to the front and they ended up breaking the barrier.

A man in a suit walked over with two bodyguards,

he yelled, "What are you doing? Didn't you see the barrier? Don't you have any manners? Back off!"

Due to the loud noise, Queenie did not hear the man's threats. The man was furious, he shoved Queenie back and yelled, "Are you deaf? I asked you to back off!"

Queenie almost fell to the floor. Luckily Lily caught her on time.

"Why did you have to do that?" Lily said angrily.

"I pushed you lightly. Don't you know that you can't cross the barrier?" the man yelled. "You two are pretty yet how do you not have any manners?"

Lily was about to rebut when ETM finished their performance. It was the intermission, they walked down to head backstage to rest.

Seeing them coming toward them, Queenie took out a piece of paper and smiled at them. She said, " ETM, I love you all! Could you sign this for me?"

Queenie was hopeful, she was a huge fan of ETM, she was sure they would not reject such a small request.

More fans behind Queenie came to have a look as well. If ETM agreed to an autograph, they would want one too.

The leader of ETM, Vivian Clark, smiled lightly, she

said, "I'm sorry, we can't autograph this for you."

Queenie was upset.

Vivian continued, "We came to Donghai City to promote, this is not a meet and greet session, so I'm sorry. We need to go backstage to change for the second half of the concert, so please move and don't block our way."

Lily was equally disappointed, she said, "Queenie, it's fine, let's go."

Queenie's eyes were red, she was almost in tears. She really liked ETM, they were her idols, yet they were so rude to her."

Darryl approached Queenie and said, "Don't cry, I'll get the autographs for you!"

Chapter 392

Whenever she cried, Darryl's heart broke.

When he finished his statement, a roar of laughter exploded. Even Vivian Clark jeered, "How interesting, I just said we don't have the time for autographs, don't you understand? I don't care if it were you, or your parents that asked for the autograph. We will not sign anything."

Darryl took a deep breath. He held back his anger and said, "I'm Pla-"

"I don't care who you are. Please back off, you're in our way," Vivian said impatiently. She just finished the first act and was exhausted.

Someone from the crowd suddenly exclaimed, "Isn' t that Lyndon's live-in son-in-law?"

"Why would a loser like him think that he can get their autographs?"

The jeers and taunts were awful. Lily could not bear it any longer, she tugged at Darryl and said, " Hubby, let's go."

They were here to have fun today, who knew that asking for an autograph would turn out so badly?

Queenie rebutted, she said loudly, "So what if he's a live-in son-in-law, he's not relying on any of you all."

In Queenie's eyes, Darryl could do no wrong. She could live without the autograph, but no one could insult her cousin's husband!"

"Darryl, let's go, I don't want the autograph anymore." Queenie pulled Darryl away with an apologetic expression. She did not think that asking for an autograph would lead to this.

Darryl tried not to flare up, he smiled and nodded. He was about to leave, when Vivian said, "The poor are usually the most demanding, you might have to wait your next life to get an autograph for your sister!" Vivian sneered.

It was not loud, but Darryl heard it loud and clear. His smile instantly vanished. He looked at Vivian coldly and said, "You think your autograph is worth a lot?"

"What did you say?" Vivian frowned. She approached Darryl, she was slightly taller than Darryl in heels. She looked down on him and said, " Yes, it's worth a lot. A poor country commoner like you is not worthy of our autograph. So what if I don' t sign for you today? What are you going to do?"

"Hubby, let's go, it's fine..." Lily pulled Darryl once

more.

After all, ETM were celebrities. You can't afford to offend them.

Darryl did not move. He laughed at Vivian and said, "I will not only get the autographs from you all today, I'll make you apologize to my cousin."

Laughter exploded from the crowd.

Is he for real? He wants the ETM to apologize? He must be mad.

Lily blushed, she tugged at Darryl once more. " Hubby, let's just go. Please."

"Yeah, I don't need the autograph anymore," Queenie chimed in softly.

Chapter 393

"Don't worry, I'll definitely get you the autographs." Darryl waved in dismissal.

Vivian roared in laughter, she said, "Wow, you can boast! Since you want the autograph so much if you bow to me, I'll sign it for your sister."

How are they so rude?

Darryl's face darkened. He took his phone out and dialed.

In three seconds the call was picked up. "President, can I help you with anything?" Pearl was on the other end.

Darryl took a deep breath, he asked, "ETM is performing in Donghai City, which company are they under?"

Sensing his tone, Pearl got a little nervous. She said softly, "President, ETM recently made a film called The Three Golden Flowers. They were here to promote this movie. However, we've invested in half of the shares in this movie, so their performance here was arranged by us."

ETM was by the Platinum Corporation?

Darryl snickered, "Those three refused to sign an autograph for Lily's cousin. So I do not want to see the three of them anymore. You know what to do right? Also, stop their performance. Now." He hung up.

The crowd exploded in laughter.

"Yo live-in son-in-law, who did you call? Do you want to stop their performance? Who do you think you are?"

"HAHA!"

Vivian Clark and the rest of ETM laughed too.

Is this person mad?

Lily blushed. She guessed that Darryl called Dax Sanders. After all, he only knew one powerful person in the entire Donghai City.

Though Dax was powerful, he had no clout in the entertainment industry!

Lily stomped her foot in panic, she pulled Darryl and said, "Hubby, let's go! We don't need the autograph anymore. Dax Sanders is not almighty, it was pointless calling him for help."

Suddenly, the stage lights were switched off. The mics on Vivian and the ETM were turned off as well.

What? What was happening?

The crowd was bewildered and confused. Vivian trembled, looking at Darryl, she could not utter a single word.

Could this be a coincidence?

Then, her phone rang. She fished it out and saw that it was from her boss.

Her boss was nicknamed Lame Lee. He used to be in a crime syndicate. After he lost a leg, he turned to the entertainment industry where he set up an entertainment company.

"President Lee..." Vivian picked the phone up and she complained, "President Lee, I was just about to call you. We're performing at Donghai City, but halfway through there was no electricity. What rotten place is this?"

"You f*cking shut up!" Lame Lee yelled.

Vivian shuddered in fear. ETM was the company's most famous group. President Lee always looked after them. Why did he flare up today?

"Do you know who have you offended?" Lame Lee continued yelling.

"The Three Golden Flowers, Platinum Corporation owns half of the shares. They called to say they are not investing in it anymore! Plus they will use all

their power to stop your careers! Bloody hell, do you know who you've offended?!" He scolded.

F*ck, he spent billions on them. They almost had a film done, when Pearl called him all of a sudden to say that they are canceling all prior arrangements with them.

Chapter 394

Pearl mentioned that the reason for canceling them is because the president of Platinum Corporation wanted their autographs, but they were not willing to.

Vivian was confused, she looked at Darryl and said on the phone, "President Lee, I did not offend anybody! There was just a man that caused trouble here, he not only broke through the barrier, he asked for autographs too..."

"You bloody apologize to him immediately! Now!" Lame Lee yelled like a lunatic. He was extremely on edge. "Do you know who that man is? He is Darryl Darby! The president of the Platinum Corporation! Darryl Darby is our main sponsor! You have a movie to act in because of him!"

"What?" Vivian trembled, she said, "You must be mistaken, he's wearing cheap clothes."

"Cheap clothes? The money he spends per day, you can't even earn in a year!" Lame Lee yelled. "You do exactly as he says! If President Darby wants autographs, you give it to him! If he wants to sleep with you, you say yes! Bloody f*ck, if he does not forgive you today, you can say goodbye to your

career! I'll terminate your contract immediately!" He hung up the phone.

Vivian's leg felt like jelly. She could not stand up straight.

"Brother...Darryl." She finally came to her senses. She did not dare look at Darryl at all.

The entire crowd was confused? What was happening? Why did she talk to him so politely?

Darryl smiled and said, "What's happening? Weren't you extremely arrogant just now? My wife's cousin wanted an autograph, yet you wanted me to bow to you?"

Vivian shuddered. She panicked and bowed immediately, "It was my fault!"

She was extremely anxious. President Lee said that if Darryl does not forgive her, he was going to terminate their contract.

Everyone gasped.

A celebrity like Vivian was actually bowing down to Darryl, a live-in son-in-law? Their jaws dropped.

Darryl frowned. He said softly, "There is no use apologizing to me. Apologize to Queenie!"

It was not loud, but it was enough to frighten Vivian. She trembled in fear. She approached

Queenie with a smile, she said, "I'm so sorry. We were rude to you just now."

'I must be dreaming! This is not real!' thought Queenie excitedly. She did not expect to be so close to her idols, and they were apologizing to her as well!

Queenie replied, "I don't blame you."

These were her idols!

Vivian bit her lip, she tried to please Queenie. She said, "I can see that you really like us, let's be friends and exchange contact numbers." Then she took her phone out. She could see that Queenie was still young, if she was kind to her, Queenie might forgive her easily.

The crowd was in envy! To exchange contacts with their idols would be a dream!

Queenie excitedly replied, "Sure!"

After exchanging contacts, she walked to Darryl and asked timidly, "Brother Darryl, is this good?"

Darryl ignored her. He looked indifferent.

She was almost in tears when Darryl did not reply. If there were no one around, she might have even knelt and begged for forgiveness. "I'm really sorry."

Chapter 395

Darryl snickered, "You're sorry? You did not want to give her your autograph wasn't it?"

Vivian quickly replied, "We'll sign it immediately."

She turned around and got a sharpie from one of the staff. However, Darryl waved in dismissal, he said, "It's too late."

Vivian was stunned. She quivered with fear.

Darryl continued flatly, he pointed to the stage and said, "I want the three of you, to sign on the stage floor. It has to fill the entire stage and I'll come to check on it tomorrow. If not, I leave it to you to think of the consequences."

What? The entire stage?

Vivian looked reluctant. The stage was almost as huge as a basketball court. How long would it take them to finish it?

"What? You're not willing to?" Darryl smiled sarcastically.

"No! No! We'll do it." Vivian and the others each took a sharpie and started signing on the stage floor.

The entire crowd was silent. Those that jeered previously could not utter a single word.

Darryl smiled, turned, and left. Lily and Queenie soon followed after.

"Darryl, you're amazing!" Queenie was extremely delighted! Her eyes were filled with admiration for Darryl.

Darryl smiled and looked at Queenie lovingly.

"Why were they afraid of you?" Queenie asked. Darryl was always the butt of the joke, how did he become so impressive suddenly?

Darryl jokingly said, "Maybe they thought I was good looking? They felt that they should treat good -looking people better, so they apologized!"

"What nonsense!" Queenie pouted. She added, "But I do feel safe around you!"

Darryl was overjoyed, he patted her and said, "I hope your future husband will make you feel safe as well. Don't worry, in Donghai City, as long as I'm here, no one can bully you."

Then he added, "On one condition, that it has to be valid and logical."

Queenie was elated, she pecked Darryl on the cheek.

Darryl felt warmth on his face. This girl is too open!

He was her cousin's husband!

Lily said awkwardly, "Queenie, he's my husband, how could you..."

It was out in public as well!

Queenie did not care, she giggled and said, "Lily, you're blushing, don't tell me you're jealous!"

"You!" Lily blushed even more. She was part embarrassed, part helpless. After a while, Lily asked Darryl, "Hubby, did you call Dax? That's how you got ETM to apologize?"

She was slightly confused. Dax was powerful in Donghai City, but ETM were extremely famous stars. How did he have a hold in the entertainment industry as well?

Darryl laughed, he replied casually, "You're right. I called Dax, he has a good relationship with the president of an entertainment company."

He planned to keep his identity a secret until Rebecca Song's baby was born and he could clear his name, then only he would let Lily know that he was the president of Platinum Corporation.

Lily bit her lip, she said, "Hubby, in the future, don' t bother Dax. Though you two are close, you should not constantly ask for his help..."

Darryl nodded, he said, "Yes, sure. I'll listen to my

wife!"

...

At night, when they reached home, Queenie was still excited. She bought a lot today, and even had the contact of her idol! Today was her lucky day!

She pulled Lily to the bedroom and said, "Lily, help me take a look at the clothes I've bought today! I want to try them on!"

Then she turned to Darryl and asked, "Do you want to help me try them on as well!"

Lily blushed, she interrupted, "Don't be silly! Darryl 's a guy! How could he watch you change!"

Chapter 396

She was almost twenty, yet she still acts like a child.

Darryl laughed, he said, "Yeah, and you're a lady now. Let Lily accompany you."

His heart was beating fast, he thought, 'This girl has no filter, she really can say anything.'

Queenie was indifferent, she said, "It doesn't matter anyway, Darryl is family."

Darryl almost spat out the water he was drinking upon hearing that.

RING! RING!

His phone suddenly started ringing. It was already almost ten at night, who would call so late?

He looked at his phone and saw it was from Katherine Keith.

Darryl smiled. He had not given her the Resumption pill for a few days now. She must be anxious.

The moment he answered Katherine said, "Darryl, didn't you mention that you want to meet the school principal? Your chance is here! Next Monday, the six orthodox sects will hold a Lion

Slaughtering Conference. Not only will the school principal be there, but a few high-rank members of the six sects will be there as well! You could see him then!"

Darryl was delighted. As long as he could meet the principal, he could steal manuals!

He thought for a while, then asked, "Miss Katherine, what is a Lion Slaughtering Conference?" He has not heard about this meeting before at Hexad.

Katherine said seriously, "Darryl, I'm sure you have heard of the Eternal Life Palace sect, one of the two main cults. They have been up to no good all the while. We finally caught one of the Guardian Kings —The Golden Lion, Zion Featherstone! So the Lion Slaughtering Conference will be a public execution event for Zion."

The Golden Lion? Zion Featherstone? He should be Evelyn's grandfather!

Katherine suddenly turned gentle, she said, " Darryl, I've been good these few days, could you give me the remaining Resumption pills?"

Since the day Darryl extracted the Resumption pill, he promised to give her one per day, but up till now, he only gave her two. Five days had passed and she was still stuck at Level Four Master.

Sensing her anxiety, Darryl laughed. "Don't worry, Miss Katherine, I'll give you all the pills next Monday at school."

Katherine was overjoyed, she said, "Thank you, Darryl! I promise I'll be good to you in school..." Katherine blushed, then she hung up.

When he finished the phone call, Lily and Queenie had also just finished trying out the new clothes they bought.

Lily was slightly sleepy when they were done, she said, "I'm going to take a shower and head to bed."

When she walked to the bathroom, Queenie hugged her arm and said, "Lily, let's shower together!"

Lily was stunned, she blushed. She said, "You're not a child anymore, why do you still want to shower with me? I'll go first, ok?"

She patted Queenie on the head.

Queenie did not let go of Lily, she pleaded, "Why not! I want to shower with you!"

Then she added, "I'm not a guy, Lily, are you afraid I would do things to you?" Queenie looked at Lily innocently.

Lily could do nothing but nod.

Queenie cheered, "Yay! Let's go shower!" She then

turned to Darryl and stuck her tongue out. She said cheekily, "Are you envious?"

F*ck. Darryl was speechless. Of course, he was envious. He was so envious he could die.

Since marrying Lily, they did nothing, except for holding hands, at most, it was a kiss during the last Mid-Autumn Festival.

To be able to shower together was a dream.

Lily's face flushed, she urged, "Let's go!"

The bathroom was an open concept with frosted glass. Darryl tried to shift his focus away from the two ladies' silhouette in the bathroom by playing with his phone, yet he could not sit still.

Chapter 397

Hearing Queenie and Lily play in the bathroom was a struggle for Darryl. He could not help but think back to the last time he was at Megan's house after the robbery—her shower was covered with frosted glass as well. It was a similar experience, except now there were two ladies instead of one.

In the bathroom, Queenie was playing with bubbles, she laughed at Lily, "It's been so long, have you two not shared the bed?"

Previously, Lily looked down on Darryl a lot. Now that their relationship was quite good, Queenie could openly joke about it.

Lily blushed. She bit her lip and said softly, "Quickly finish up your shower! Why did you have to bring him up?"

Lily's heart beat faster. To be honest, her relationship with Darryl was getting better. She had thought about sharing the bed every night. Though she was looking forward to it, she was also quite anxious about it—she was just not mentally prepared yet.

Seeing her blush, Queenie laughed and said, "Lily,

are you embarrassed? You're blushing!"

Then she said mysteriously, "Are you shy? Why not let me help you two?"

Lily was embarrassed, she asked softly, "How are you going to help?"

Queenie smiled cheekily, she said, "If I call for help, Darryl will surely rush in, heh!"

What? Lily blushed even further. She laughed and scolded, "What are you thinking? Don't joke around!"

Here she thought that Queenie would really have a good idea.

Looking at Lily blush, Queenie got even more excited, "Lily, you're blushing again. I'm sure you thought of this as well? I want to get to play with your babies. You two have to work harder! Hehe!"

Queenie put both her hands by her side, she said, " Lily, I'm going to yell, get ready."

Before Lily could stop her, she yelled, "Help! Darryl come quick!"

'F*ck, what's happening?' thought Darryl. He rushed and opened the bathroom door.

He was completely stunned—he saw Queenie laughing teasingly at Lily, and Lily was part

embarrassed, part angry.

Chapter 398

The most beautiful thing of all was both of them were wearing nothing!

Darryl's mind blanked out. He ogled at them.

After a short silence, Lily reacted, she screamed and scrambled for a towel to cover herself. She said, " Get...get out!"

Queenie suddenly came to her senses as well. She noticed Darryl's eyes on her and Lily, she trembled. She was so busy teasing Lily she forgot she was not wearing clothes too!

She blushed and screamed louder than Lily. Darryl saw her naked! She was extremely embarrassed.

"Do...do continue," Darryl said. He did not know whether he should cry or laugh. He turned around and left, but slammed into the glass door.

He held his head and hobbled to the sofa, he would not calm down for a long time after seeing what he just did.

After half an hour, the bathroom door opened. Lily and Queenie walked out. They were in their pajamas, faces still blushed from the incident just

now.

Seeing Darryl outside, they were both extremely awkward. They sat on the sofa, not knowing what to say to each other.

Queenie blurted, "Lily, let's get out of the house for a while."

Lily bit her lip and nodded. Even though it was already quite late, having some air would be good for them. It was too awkward and embarrassing just now.

"Darryl, we'll head out for a while," Queenie blurted and escaped the living room area. Lily's face was still flushed. She followed suit.

"Be careful," Darryl called out.

...

Donghai City's night scene was bustling with young people. There was traffic everywhere and the bars and pubs were filled to the brim.

Outside, with the cool air, Lily began to calm down. She looked at Queenie and said, "It was your fault!"

Luckily Samantha was not at home, if not it would have been a huge mistake. Queenie defended herself, "It was nothing much! Letting your husband see you is totally normal! You should've

seen Darryl's expression—he must've thought many times of having babies with you!"

Lily blushed and said, "Don't talk nonsense!"

Chapter 399

Lily shook her head, she stared at Queenie and said, "If you're going to spew more nonsense, I'm gonna go home!"

That did not scare Queenie at all, she laughed and said, "Sure, since I won't be there you two love birds could be together!"

"You..." Lily was furious, but she could do nothing. To tell the truth, what happened just now was extremely embarrassing for her. She did not know how to face Darryl alone.

Queenie giggled, she said, "Fine I'll stop. Anyway, since we're out, let's have some fun!"

"Where do you plan to go?" Lily asked.

Queenie thought for a while, she said excitedly, "I know a newly-opened bar, called the Nightview bar, it has a great atmosphere, let's go!"

What? A bar?

Lily shook her head. "I do not want to go to those places." She does not like bars, and after the incident with Evelyn Featherstone, she was even more against it. 2

Queenie hugged Lily's arm and pleaded, "Let's go! We won't drink, we'll sit down and listen to music, accompany me please?"

Lily could not resist her pleas, so she agreed.

...

Nightview bar, a favorite among the young people.

It was rumored that if you were not ugly, you could definitely find someone to spend the night with.

Lily held Queenie's hand when they entered the bar. The music was deafening, people were dancing on the dance floor, gyrating their bodies to the music.

They found their seats and ordered two cups of wine.

Lily pursed her lip. She said, "Queenie, what you did just now, asking Darryl to come in—that was wrong, do you understand me?"

Queenie pouted, she replied, "Yes, fine."

Lily continued, she said, "Also, you kissing him on the cheeks was inappropriate! You're almost twenty, not a child anymore." Lily was indeed jealous when Queenie kissed Darryl on the cheeks.

Suddenly a fashionably dressed young man approached them with a smile. He sized both of

them up and laughed. "Girls, interested in a drink?"

Lily shook her head. She knew if she were to be in a bar, someone would hit on her.

Queenie did not look at the man, she just said, "Not interested."

He did not get mad at Queenie's rejection, yet he continued, "Hi, my name is Yoel Fisher, I saw that you pretty girls looked unfamiliar, it must be your first time here in Nightview? I mean no harm, I just wanna be friends."

Yoel was a thug, a regular at Nightview. He was pretty good looking, hence he could get a lot of pretty girls.

Queenie looked at him and said calmly, "We're really not interested, please leave us alone, we want to chat in private."

Yoel's face darkened. He was slightly drunk, he said, "Hey pretty girls, can't you just go along with me?"

These two ladies were gorgeous, with great bodies, he did not want to miss his chance.

Chapter 400

Many were looking at them now. A few thugs giggled.

"Yoel has a new target."

"Those two are hot! Yoel has great taste."

The few talked among themselves. Yoel was slightly embarrassed. He has not failed to get any girl he wanted before, if he did not succeed today, it would be extremely shameful for him.

At that, he took a swig of beer, and grabbed Queenie, he said, "I told you that you are my type. If you don't drink with me, don't think about leaving today!"

Queenie did not flinch, she flung his hand off, looked at him in disgust and detest. "How dare you. Do you know who my cousin's husband is? He is Darryl Darby!" She said with pride.

Previously, if she were to encounter situations like these she would be extremely anxious. However, now she knows that Darryl has the power to even make a celebrity bow, he could deal with a small thug easily.

What? Darryl Darby? They were stunned? Who is

he? Is he powerful?

Yoel frowned. He sobered up slightly. He did not know who Darryl Darby was. But Queenie's aura was confident and frightful. Was Darryl a thug too?

He shook his head. He does not want to get in trouble, in case Darryl was really powerful.

He laughed and said, "It's fine, I'll leave you two alone."

When he left, Lily and Queenie looked at each other in surprise. Is Darryl really that powerful? That his name was enough alone to chase someone away?

Queenie cheered, "Yay! Lily, you are so lucky! Darryl is indeed our hero!"

Lily could not help but laugh.

They did not notice that at the corner of the bar, a lady with heavy make-up was looking at Lily and Queenie.

This lady was Jean Xander. She was an Emei sect disciple. She was the disciple of Abbess Mother Serendipity. Though she joined the sect late, she was one of the Abbess' favorites. She knew about how the Abbess wanted to kill Darryl.

She took out her phone and called the Second Senior Sister. Abbess Mother Serendipity did not

have a phone. If you wanted to contact her, you had to go through Second Senior Sister.

"Sister, quickly pass the phone to Master. I'm at a bar and heard someone mention Darryl Darby."

"Where?" the Abbess asked. She had been following Darryl's whereabouts closely. However, that loser was always at Hexad's. The Hexad School was founded by the Six orthodox sects—she as an Elder could not kill him there.

Now that she's heard of his whereabouts, she was elated.

Jean quickly said, "I think it was his sister that argued with someone in the bar."

It was not Darryl, but his sister?

Abbess Mother Serendipity frowned, she was slightly disappointed. She said, "Wait for me there. I 'll be there soon. Capture his sister first. Also, how could you go to that sort of place?"

It was extremely inappropriate for an Emei disciple to be in places like these.

Chapter 401

Jean maintained her silence as she had snuck in. Her master made the rules clear that Emei sect disciples were not allowed to go to entertainment centers like bars or KTV centers.

"Master, I...I didn't enter, I am at the bar's entrance." lied Jean.

Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded, "That's acceptable. Remember, as one of the orthodox sects, we can never step into places like this. I'll be there soon."

"Understood, Master!"

Jean heaved a sigh of relief after hanging up and trotted into the bar.

Lily and Queenie already had quite a few drinks. Lily then went to the washroom when it was 12.00 am.

Queenie scrolled through her phone while she was waiting for Lily when a woman with a curvy figure entered the bar with a whisk in her hand. There was unreadable tranquility on her beautiful face, her steps were light as a feather and she looked like she was a floating divine figure.

It was Abbess Mother Serendipity.

Total silence.

The entire bar became silent as soon as she made an appearance.

Her aura was so overwhelming that even the DJ stopped blasting the music.

Everyone fixed their gazes on Abbess Mother Serendipity.

"Hahahaha!"

A burst of laughter erupted and broke the silence a few moments later when a few thugs held their stomachs with laughter in a distance.

"Haha, what the f*ck! Even abbesses go to bars now? The world is indeed changing! Hahaha!" Their laughter was painful to hear.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was wearing a long dress instead of her Taoist robe and she let her hair down. The only unusual thing about her was her whisk which gave away her identity as an abbess.

"Yoel, the world has indeed changed, what an exotic abbess! Hahaha!" Another thug clamored along.

Abbess Mother Serendipity did not say a word.

However, Yoel Fisher had a death wish. He

approached Mother Abbess Serendipity with the other thug with a grin and teased her, "Abbess, are you willing to spend the night with me? I feel like I've known you for a long time, I'm willing to..."

Smack!

Abbess Mother Serendipity raised her arm and gave two seemingly elegant smacks!

Yoel and the other thug flew through the air like cannonballs!

"Ah!" The two shrieked as they flew more than 20 meters away before landing hard. They puked blood and shut their eyes tightly in pain!

Gasp!

Everyone was dumbfounded and stared at Abbess Mother Serendipity without blinking. No one said a thing, even the music stopped abruptly!

Abbess Mother Serendipity raised the corners of her lips and asked unhurriedly, "Jean, where are they?"

Jean who was standing behind Abbess Mother Serendipity took a step forward and pointed to Queenie. "Master, she said that Darryl is her sister's husband."

Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded and approached Queenie. She stared at her silently for a while before

speaking in a neutral tone, "You, follow me."

Queenie was stunned and her hands were trembling because of Abbess Mother Serendipity's overbearing presence. There was something unique about her.

'Darryl is really something, even an elite like her knows him..."

Queenie asked with a grin, "Abbess, are you friends with Darryl?"

'Friends?' Abbess Mother Serendipity's beautiful face turned grim instantly.

'How can a sc*mbag like him be a friend of mine?'

She asked her back in a cold tone, "Is Darryl your sister's husband?

Queenie nodded innocently, "Yeah, he is. He treats me well."

"Very well, very well then." Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded.

Smack!

Abbess Mother Serendipity slapped Queenie and she passed out!

"Jean, take her."

Chapter 402

Abbess Mother Serendipity instructed in an indifferent tone before turning to leave the bar.

....

Darby Mansion.

It was late at night but the hall was still crowded with people. Drake Darby sat in the middle with a grim expression with a hint of sorrow in his eyes.

The Darby offsprings stood in two rows at the sides.

Old Master Darby had passed and the Darby family's reputation in Donghai City plummeted tremendously. They were having a meeting to discuss the Darby family's future.

"Abbess Mother Serendipity is here!"

Someone announced from the outside.

Abbess Mother Serendipity's curvy figure appeared at the entrance and she trotted over.

Drake stood up hurriedly to greet her and took a courteous bow, "Greetings, Abbess."

Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded in acknowledgment and stifled a light chuckle, "

Mister Darby, please forgive for my sudden visit. It is late, why are you not resting? Are you troubled because of the sc*m, Darryl Darby?"

Her tone showed a hint of guilt as the disciples of the Emei sect and she had stayed with the Darby family for some time and they had been treating them generously. Abbess Mother Serendipity wanted to do something for them out of gratitude.

It was a few days ago when Old Master Darby died in anger because of Darryl.

She would have murdered Darryl on the spot at the Elixir Competition if she knew, even if she would be breaking the rules.

Old Master Darby would not have died if Darryl was murdered beforehand... Abbess Mother Serendipity was overwhelmed with regret.

Drake smiled bitterly and spoke, "Our family must be a joke to you because we bred such a failure."

He was actually sweating profusely internally despite his smile. 'Why is Abbess Mother Serendipity here?'

The Darby family joined the Eternal Life Palace Sect long ago.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was from the Emei sect.

Their secret would get exposed sooner or later if

they stayed in contact with each other. 'This can't be it.'

Old Master Darby was the pillar of support of the whole family when he was alive no matter what the catastrophe and that responsibility fell on Drake now that he was gone. 'What should we do if Abbess Mother Serendipity knows that we joined the Eternal Life Palace Sect? Will she kill me?'

Drake was nervous whenever he thought of that.

Abbess Mother Serendipity did not realize Drake's drastic change in facial expression and said firmly, " Mister Darby, I have an idea to lure Darryl Darby so that we can get rid of the sc*m."

What?

All the Darby offsprings present were stunned before motivation lit up their faces.

A glimpse of hope flashed past Drake's eyes and joy was visible on his face, "What is it?"

The truth was, he was actually frustrated in thinking of ways to get rid of Darryl. To attack Darryl would be fairly simple, however, he had Dax.

Abbess Mother Serendipity smiled and looked around the hall before sharing her idea, "I caught Darryl's sister just now and I can see that they're close. We can release the news that we kidnapped

his family to him, he will definitely come to us voluntarily."

'What a great idea.'

'Abbess Mother Serendipity is really something!'

Smiles were appearing on the faces of the offsprings of the Darby family.

Florian stood up and asked out of curiosity, " Abbess, where is his sister?"

Abbess Mother Serendipity waved a hand lightly and two disciples of the Emei sect brought Queenie over.

Queenie was still unconscious and her body was tied up in knots.

The offsprings of the Darby family looked over to her immediately before turning to give each other meaningful glances with a smile. 'I didn't expect Darryl's sister to be this charming!'

Gulp! Florian gulped from the sight of Queenie. He was always perverted and he got excited upon seeing Queenie, a beauty, being tied up. The visual was arousing him.

"Father, let me lock her up." Florian stood up and said to Drake.

"Alright, hurry." Drake nodded and turned to

Abbess Mother Serendipity to make obeisance, “ Thank you, Abbess.”

Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded in acknowledgment, “We will leak the news tomorrow to lure Darryl out, we will kill him on the spot then.”

Chapter 403

Yumi Griff stood up and spoke in a soft voice, " Abbess, Darryl Darby's all yours when he comes for his sister tomorrow. You are righteous and respectable, you are indeed the hero of the generation!"

"Of course! Our Master is the pillar of support of Emei sect, she's one of the most outstanding ones in the Six Sects." Jean took a step forward and said with pride.

She was favored by Abbess Mother Serendipity as her youngest disciple because of her wits.

The crowd was distracted when Yumi silently took out her phone when the crowd was distracted and sent a text to Florian. It was a short and straightforward text. [Hurry back, don't have any funny ideas! It will not end well if you're not here in three minutes.]

It had been five minutes since Florian went to lock Queenie up. He must be having filthy ideas for her for volunteering to lock her up since he was a lazy person!

Yumi understood her man a little too well. 'Why did

I get married to this good-for-nothing?'

--

Florian tied Queenie up tight in the Darby Private Room.

It was a restricted room since it was where Old Master Darby cultivated in seclusion. The room had been left unused since his passing.

Florian was excited as he stared at Queenie from top to toe with a grin. The more he looked at her, the more thrilled he felt! 'Haha, I can't believe that Darryl has such a pretty sister. Wait, she's Darryl's wife's sister, right? She is technically the sister of my sister-in-law.'

Florian gulped. 'This pretty lady is passed out, what a god-sent! Everyone is in the hall and no one will come to the private room, I can't miss out on such a good opportunity...'

He rubbed his hands in anticipation and reached for Queenie's shirt.

Buzz...

His phone in his pocket vibrated at that moment.

'Who the f*ck sent me a text?'

Florian was furious with the interruption and he checked his phone to see the text from his wife.

Sigh.

Florian sighed in frustration and forfeited his plan because of his wife's warning.

He was afraid of getting henpecked.

"It seems like I will not have the opportunity to have fun with this pretty lady tonight."

Florian muttered to himself as he tied Queenie to a pillar before proceeding to leave reluctantly.

He was just about to walk out of the private room when another phone vibration sounded, it was Queenie's phone this time.

Florian walked to her hurriedly to check her phone and he was stunned.

It was displaying a text from her cousin.

Lily sent a short text to her, "Queenie, where are you?"

Florian furrowed his brow together and racked his brains when he saw the text. He remembered that Abbess Mother Serendipity said that they would spread the news of the kidnapping the next day to lure Darryl and it was not the time yet. Therefore, Florian decided to secure Lily first.

He thought as he replied to the text by imitating

Queenie's tone, "I'm not going back later. I met a friend and I will stay at her place tonight."

At the same time, Lily held her phone with an exasperated expression on her face near the entrance of the Nightview Bar.

Queenie had been missing after she came back from the washroom. 'She can just get crazy while having fun and not caring about anything else, how annoying.'

Then, she received the reply from Queenie's number and heaved a sigh a relief. 'She must be fine since she can still reply to my text.'

'What a troublesome girl, she could've waited for me to come back from the washroom first before leaving with her friend!'

--

Florian slipped Queenie's phone back into her pocket and left the private room hurriedly as time was ticking. He was certain that he would get a scolding from his wife because he took quite some time.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was almost done with the discussion about the details of their plan to catch Darryl on the next day when Florian returned to the hall.

Chapter 404

Florian gave Drake an assuring smile, "Father, I've locked her up well, she can't flee."

"Good!" Drake nodded in acknowledgment.

Abbess Mother Serendipity stood up and maintained a smile, "Mister Darby, it's getting late, I should take my leave. We will lure Darryl Darby here tomorrow at night because I have to attend the Lion Slaughtering Conference in the daytime."

It would be an important conference and she could not miss it.

Drake smiled and nodded, "The plan is all yours, the Darby family will provide full support to every decision of yours."

...

It was 3.00 am.

The skies were exceptionally breathtaking that night with the moon and the vast stars.

However, Queenie was terror-stricken in the Darby Private Room! She was terrified the moment she opened her eyes when she finally regained her consciousness.

She was dumbfounded when she realized that she was in a private room with stone walls! She tried to move subconsciously before realizing that she could not move an inch because she was tied up. She was frightened.

'Where am I?...'

Then, a series of light footsteps came from the door.

The footsteps were exceptionally loud in the Darby Mansion's dead silence in the middle of the night.

Creak.

The door was pushed open slowly.

Queenie panicked and looked over as a young man in sports apparel walked into the room slowly with a grim expression.

It was Jackson Tim!

Queenie mustered up her courage and asked although she was terrified, "Who...who are you people? Why are you keeping me hostage?"

Jackson looked at her silently and asked straight to the point, "Who is Darryl Darby to you?"

Abbess Mother Serendipity mentioned that the girl was Darryl's sister.

Jackson knew that Darryl never had a sister.

Queenie found her courage when he mentioned Darryl's name and said with pride, "He is my sister's husband!"

Hehe...

Jackson's expression changed into a sinister smile because of her reply.

Queenie was pleased to see his change of expression. She said, "What? Are you scared now? Let me go or Darryl's going to beat you up. Do you not know how strong he is?"

"Let you go?"

Jackson's expression was turning sour, "Are you proud of Darryl being your sister's husband? Here's what I think, he's a monster! No, he's worse than a monster!"

He always treated Darryl like his own brother but he raped his wife instead! He was inhumane!

Queenie's face flushed with anxiety and shouted in defense of Darryl, "I'm not allowing you to talk about him like that! He's a good person, you are the bad ones!"

Slap!

Jackson walked over swiftly and gave Queenie a hard slap!

Queenie shrieked, the marks on her cheek were clearly visible. She felt extremely wronged from the burning pain.

Jackson glared at her intensely and scoffed, "Good person? He doesn't even deserve to be human! You have no idea how that monster ruined my life! He made me feel inferior to the Darby family, he destroyed everything!"

He was almost roaring like a beast, "He raped my wife on the first night of my wedding, he also angered his own grandfather to his death! He is a monster! A monster!"

Chapter 405

'What?'

Queenie's body quivered with shock as she stared at Jackson with disbelief. Then, she shook her head violently, "You're lying, you must be slandering him! He would never do that! Stop slandering him! He's one of the best people I've met!"

Jackson clenched his fists hard, "I'm going to say it again; he is a monster! Not only did the Darby family know about this, even the entirety of Donghai City knew! You can ask around and you'll find out that he has a stinking reputation! Me, slandering him? Garbage like him doesn't even deserve my slander!"

His voice became hoarse from the agitated shouts!

Queenie was upset, her teardrops were falling one after another, "Stop talking, I don't believe you! You can't talk about him like that! I don't allow it..."

"Don't be mad at me, be mad at him instead."

Jackson's tone was cold. Then, he threw himself at Queenie as if he was a madman!

Hexad School, the next day.

The Hexad School was exceptionally lively that day as it was Monday and students were there for classes.

Breaking news just came and spread throughout the entire Donghai City that the Lion Slaughtering Conference would be held in the Hexad School! Everyone was discussing the event because the Golden Lion, Zion Featherstone, had been captured by the Six Sects!

The Eternal Life Palace Sect had four Guardian Kings and the Golden Lion, Zion, was the eldest among them. His position was right under the Sect Master and Chester Wilson, the military adviser!

The Golden Lion was seen as an archvillain as the Eternal Life Palace Sect was a cult. The news that he was captured was something to be celebrated among the community!

Most importantly, there was a rumor that Zion possessed a Supreme Mystery Scripture. Everyone was curious as to the scripture's whereabouts after he was captured!

Countless cultivators decided to attend the Lion Slaughtering Conference!

An enormous stage the size of five basketball courts

named the Judgment Stand was set up on the sports field! Rows of seats were set up around the stage and most of them were already taken. Almost all of the students were there, forming a dark crowd from afar. It was a grand scene for any onlookers!

Aside from the students, members of the Six Sects were also seated on the bleachers.

There were also dozens of sects other than the Six Sects including the Iron Palms, Giant Whales, Beggars' Sect, and more. All the sects had at least hundreds of their men attending the Lion Slaughtering Conference!

The field was filled with hundreds of thousands of people and they were waiting in anticipation for the conference to start!

Darryl was hurrying to the school when he saw the commotion on the field and he was stunned.

'Sh*t.'

'So many people are attending the conference?'

Darryl muttered to himself and looked to the side. A woman with a curvy figure was standing right at the entrance of the school in a white dress. She looked attractive and charming.

It was from Katherine Keith.

"Darryl." Katherine's face lit up with joy and she

trotted over in her heels.

Katherine could no longer suppress her desperation and emotions. She asked softly, "Darryl, you're finally here. Do you have the Resumption Pill?"

She had been there since early in the morning and she waited for more than half an hour.

Darryl could not suppress his amusement when he said, "Yes, it's right here."

He took out a pill and put it on Katherine's palm.

Chapter 406

'Has she been waiting at the school entrance because she was worried that I might not give her the Resumption Pill? Katherine is hilarious, haha.'

Katherine hurriedly took the pill and stuffed it into her mouth.

Darryl could not suppress his curiosity and ask, "Is the Lion Slaughtering Conference that huge of a conference? Everybody was talking about it when I'm on the way here."

Katherine smiled and answered casually, "Of course, Zion Featherstone is one of the high-rank members in the Eternal Life Palace Sect. Countless lives were lost thanks to his hands! Capturing him is a huge thing in the community. Aside from the Six Sects, dozens of other sects are attending too."

Darryl nodded in acknowledgment. He did not expect Evelyn's grandfather to be such an influential figure in the community.

Katherine bit her lip and asked carefully, "Darryl, do you...do you only have one Resumption Pill with you?"

Darryl answered simply as he was distracted by the

Lion Slaughtering Conference, "Yeah."

Then, he walked to the field in huge steps.

Katherine was exasperated and stomped her foot in frustration before she followed him.

The Lion Slaughtering Conference commenced.

Darryl found his classmates and looked for an empty seat. Katherine took the seat next to him.

Darryl could not calm his emotions as he took in the grand scene in front of him. He took a look around the spectators' seats and froze.

Circe Newman was seated on the third row among his classmates and a familiar figure was sitting beside her, she had eye-catching long maroon hair.

It was Evelyn Featherstone.

'Sh*t.'

The Lion Slaughtering Conference was her grandfather's execution.

Yet, she was there. She had guts.

Darryl muttered to himself and tilted his head to Katherine on purpose, "Miss Katherine, who is that girl sitting beside Circe? These are seats for our class, why is an outsider sitting here? She even has maroon hair, doesn't our school prohibit students

from dyeing their hair?"

Darryl raised his voice on purpose and caused his classmates to turn to Evelyn.

Evelyn glared at him in anger. After all, she was guilty of sneaking into the seat as it was supposedly for students only.

Katherine replied casually, "Oh, she's Circe's friend."

There were no classes arranged that day because of the Lion Slaughtering Conference. Therefore, it was not prohibited for students to bring friends over.

Darryl went back to silence and stared at Evelyn silently as anger burned inside him. He thought of himself helping to wash her feet in the cafe whenever he saw her.

What bugged him more was the clip her friend took and uploaded to the Internet. It went viral! How disgusting!

Evelyn gave Darryl a cold glance before turning back to the front to focus on the judgment stand.

She was actually extremely anxious at that moment!

Her grandfather was ambushed by the Six Sects when he went out two days ago and they gave him the Trio Poison, a poison prepared with the mixture

of venom of vipers, centipedes, and scorpions with the effect of making a person's body go weak. As he was poisoned and alone when he was getting attacked by a dozen elites from the Six Sect, Zion was finally defeated and captured.

Evelyn had been racking her brain for a plan to rescue her grandfather for the past few days but she failed.

She had no other choice but to follow Circe to the Lion Slaughtering Conference to seek out an opportunity to rescue him.

Chapter 407

Determination could be seen in Evelyn's gaze. It was her final chance to rescue her grandfather and she had to succeed no matter what, he was her only family left after all!

The spectators' seats were almost fully taken with the elites from the community. There were even some familiar faces.

Ophelia Lane, the Chairlady of Jiangnan Elixir Association was there and hundreds of Elixir Masters from the association were seated behind her.

Mother Abbess Serendipity, the Elder of Emei sect was also there with hundreds of disciples behind her, Megan Castello included,

'D*mn it.' Even the sight of Abbess Mother Serendipity was annoying to Darryl.

Many other elites were seated on the bleachers.

"Miss Katherine, what clans are here aside from the Six Sects?" asked Darryl out of curiosity.

Katherine smiled lightly and introduced them to him.

There were many other organizations and sects of cultivators in the community aside from the six major sects and the two cults.

Although these sects were not as strong nor as famous as the Six Sects, some of them had a long history especially the Beggars' Sect, Hall of Swords, Island of Peach Blossom, and hundreds of others. However, only dozens of them were invited to the Lion Slaughtering Conference because of the limited seats. Even so, there were more than hundreds of thousands of people there and the seats were packed.

Darryl was overwhelmed with emotions when Katherine finished her introduction.

He just realized that there were so many sects and organizations of cultivators.

Darryl exclaimed silently and could no longer suppress his curiosity. He looked around and noticed that the elites of the community were dressed uniquely! Some of them were wearing mandarin jackets over long robes, some were even wearing Ming Dynasty clothing.

Two of those elites grabbed most of the attention.

One of them was Steven Simmons, the Six-Fingered Legend, the head of Beggars' Sect.

The other one was Linda Holt, the lady of the Island of Peach Blossom.

Steven was giving out an old-fashioned aura as he was in his eighties and he had a serious hunchback. He looked clean although he was wearing clothing made of rags.

Darryl looked at him, amused by the fact that he was attending the conference even though he was old.

On the other hand, Linda attracted even more attention. She was around 18 years old and she looked fresh and refined in her yellow silk dress. Her long silvery hair was extremely eye-catching.

There was a rumor that her hair became silver because of her cultivating method in the past. Her hair made her look surreal and different from the rest.

A middle-aged man in a Taoist robe with a calm demeanor walked to the judgment stand and spoke in a thick voice, "Silence, please."

The man's voice was heard throughout the whole school although he was not holding a microphone! It was obvious that he had solid Internal Energy!

Everyone shifted their attention onto him in an instant.

Katherine whispered, "Darryl, didn't you mention that you wanted to see the principal? He is the one talking on stage right now, his name is Graham Potter."

Darryl was shocked internally as emotions overwhelmed him. He looked over to Graham.

He was a Level Five Martial Marquis, same as Mother Abbess Serendipity! He was only one step away from being a Martial Saint!

Darryl gulped. 'Sh*t, at this stage, I will never have the chance to get him even if I improve myself.'

Graham looked around the field and continued, " Greetings, everyone! I am Graham Potter, the principal of the Hexad School. As you all know, we will hold the Lion Slaughtering Conference right here."

"As for why is the conference being held in the Hexad School, I'm sure that many of you already have answers." Graham continued word by word, " The school is established by the Six Sects to educate and culture young talents for the Six Sects. Therefore, every student seated here is possibly a future elite of the Six Sects! That is why we are holding a public execution for Zion Featherstone in the school because we want everyone to know that cults will never end well. Only the Six Sects bear

true justice."

Thunderous applause followed Graham's speech!

Chapter 408

Many students were touched and motivated by the principal's words.

Evelyn sat there as she quivered. Her face was flushed and rage burned within her eyes.

'How dare you claim yourselves to be on the justice' s side when a dozen of you ambushed my grandfather who was alone and used a dirty tactic to poison him? You're disgusting!'

The applause went on for a while. Graham waited for them to recede before he continued, "The public execution of Zion Featherstone is not just the indication of the Six Sect's righteousness. There is another reason."

The crowd went silent and fixed their gazes on Graham, waiting for him to continue.

Graham made a mocking smile and continued, " There is always the rumor that there are seven Supreme Mystery Scriptures in the world and Zion Featherstone has one of them."

'Supreme Mystery Scriptures?' The crowd became agitated the moment they heard those words.

Everyone knew that one could rule the world after

collecting all seven Supreme Mystery Scriptures and understanding the secrets within them.

However, no one had achieved that in thousands of years as it was near to impossible for a person to collect all seven of the scriptures.

Graham lifted the corners of his mouth and raised his voice, "The Six Sects has been questioning Zion Featherstone about the whereabouts of the scripture for the past few days but he swore not to tell us! To everyone present, if you have the confidence to find out the whereabouts of the scripture, the execution of Zion Featherstone will be yours in the Lion Slaughtering Conference! Also, the scripture will be yours!"

Wow!

His words resulted in a clamor!

Shouts were heard the moment he said those!

"I'll do it!"

"I'm sure that I can question him!"

Everyone was shouting with agitation!

Darryl smirked silently at the scene. It seemed like all those sects were there for the scripture.

Graham nodded with satisfaction on the stage, " Fine since everyone intends to take over Zion

Featherstone's execution, we will hold a competition right now. It will be a simple one on one! The winner stays and the defeated gets eliminated, and everyone is eligible to participate! The final winner will take over the execution of the Golden Lion!"

Gasp.

His words caused another uproar in the crowd!

"Principal Potter, that isn't fair."

The head of the Black Dragons sect stood up reluctantly and spoke loudly, "Smaller sects like us are not as powerful as the Six Sects. Even I, the head of Black Dragons, admit that I am not as strong, the Six Sects will definitely win the competition! Just ask around, who here has the confidence to defeat you, Mother Abbess Serendipity, or Master Reed from Shaolin sect?"

"Exactly!"

Another middle-aged man stood up on another side, "Since the Six Sects invited so many of us to join this conference, you have to be fair! How are we, the smaller sects, supposed to win in a one on one competition?"

"Silence, silence." Graham smiled politely at the criticisms and continued, "We will be fair. How

about I set up a rule? Only those aged under 25 years can participate in the competition. Is this acceptable for you? I'm sure that every sect has younger disciples, we will let the young ones compete. Is this fair enough?"

"That's better..." The members of the smaller sects discussed among each other and nodded.

The younger generation present beamed with excitement with the new rule as they could be the one who would execute Zion Featherstone! It did not matter whether they could get to know the whereabouts of the scripture, the winner would certainly become famous after executing Zion Featherstone!

Circe's face lit up with a smile and she held Evelyn's hand, "Evelyn, only those under 25 can participate! You have a chance to rescue your grandfather! No one from the younger generation can be a worthy opponent of yours!"

Evelyn nodded. As a Level Three Master General, she had the highest rank among the younger disciples, not to mention she just cultivated the Immaculate Girl Scripture! She was certain that no one beneath the Martial Marquis level could defeat her!

Chapter 409

Graham smiled lightly and instructed, "Bring Zion Featherstone here."

The rattling of chains was heard from the stage.

The crowd went silent and everyone looked to the judgment stand.

They were curious as to how one of the Four Guardian Kings the Eternal Life Palace Sect ended up!

"Walk faster!" Two disciples from the Wudang sect held Zion Featherstone and walked onto the judgment stand.

Zion completely lost his magnificence as the Golden Lion. His limbs were locked with heavy metal chains and his hair was a mess. His body was covered with bloodstains and his face was pale as paper. He looked nothing like a strong elite with his raspy breath.

However, the intense wildness in his eyes remained.

Many were disappointed with his state. The crowd started booing, some even whistled in a teasing manner.

'So, this is the Golden Lion.'

'There's nothing special about him.'

Zion ignored the crowd's gaze and fixed his gaze on Graham and the elites from the Six Sects. He sneered, "How dare you despicable people call yourselves righteous sects so shamelessly? You set a trap when I was unprepared and besieged me with a dozen men! Are you not ashamed of yourselves?"

Zion was overwhelmed with suppressed fury at the moment. After all, he lost his position and was subjected to indignity.

The elites of the Six Sects shifted uncomfortably because of Zion's words. They were indeed not proud of their methods in capturing Zion.

Zion laughed sarcastically when he noticed that they could not think of a rebuke. There was no hint of fear on his face when he shouted, "Are you at a loss of words? You, the alleged righteous sects, caught me just because you wanted a volume of the scripture! I would rather destroy the scripture than let you have it! Torture me all you want, or just kill me! I have no regrets in this life!"

His words were impactful!

Darryl was touched by his words and his eyes gleamed with respect. He did not expect Evelyn's

grandfather to be this bold and tough. Those from the Six Sects clearly had low insight compared to him!

Evelyn quivered and she was on the verge of tears. She was teary-eyed and heartbroken for her grandfather.

Graham walked to the judgment stand and extended his hand to seal Zion's Mute Acupoint swiftly.

He had to stop him to maintain the Six Sects' reputation

"Get him off the stage," instructed Graham coldly before walking to the center of the stage again. He cleared his throat and continued, "I'm sure that all of you can see how stubborn the Golden Lion is. Whoever wins will get the right to execute him. Without further ado, let's start the competition right away!"

He continued, "I have to make a disclaimer here. The competition isn't just a friendly match, there will be no rules on the battle stage and we leave all lives to god's will! Unfortunately, the death of participants is just another natural course so those who fear death should not participate! Younglings who intend to show your strength, please come on stage!"

The crowd went silent. The young disciples were eager to try but none of them wanted to be the first.

"I'll go first!"

A burly young man broke the silence and walked onto the stage. His hair was messy and he looked grimy. He was clearly a disciple of the Beggars' Gang.

The young man held his fists courteously to the crowd, "I am Sawyer Cameron from the Beggars' Sect. Who am I competing with?"

A lean man walked out from the crowd of disciples from the Kunlun sect. He leaped through the air and landed right in front of Sawyer. He smiled politely and introduced himself, "I am Aaron Tanner from Kunlun sect!"

Everyone was fixed their gazes on the two.

They could sense that Aaron from Kunlun sect was a Level Four Master. On the other hand, Beggars' Sect' s Sawyer hid his aura well, no one could tell how strong he was.

They guessed that he could not be stronger than a Master based on his young age.

However, Sawyer gave a meaningful smile as he looked at Aaron from top to toe, "Cut the crap. I'm

going to let you hit me first, I will not hit you back.

What?

Chapter 410

Sawyer was confident enough to let Aaron hit him first.

The crowd was amazed.

Aaron's face was red with anger as he felt insulted. He sneered, "Do not blame me after this, you're the one with a death wish."

He let out a battle cry and sprung through the air like a bullet before charging toward Sawyer with his fists! He concentrated all his might into a punch! Splitting a fully-grown tree would be a piece of cake for him!

Thump.

The punch landed hard on Sawyer's body but he stood there unflinching, as steady as a rock!

What?

Aaron's expression changed drastically the next second as an excruciating pain spread from his arm. He looked down to see the bones of his fist cracking into many fractures!

"Ah!" He screamed in pain. He looked at Sawyer with disbelief with a horrified expression!

"Dragon Conquering Method?"

It was the ultimate skill of the Beggars' Gang which would increase a person's defense tremendously! One must be extremely talented to cultivate that method successfully! No one expected the shabby-looking Sawyer to know this skill.

Sawyer smiled sinisterly, "You used up your chance. It's my turn now."

Then, he thrust his palm toward Aaron's chest!

Pfft!

Aaron could not dodge in time. He was thrown back before landing with a huge thud. He passed out immediately, it was unknown whether he was still alive!

Gasp!

No one expected the disciple from Beggars' Sect to be this strong!

The crowd gasped and they were dumbfounded!

Darryl furrowed his brow but he was amused. 'It seems like there are hidden talents in the Lion Slaughtering Conference. It is a surprise to see such an interesting match although the competition just started.'

A few other disciples from Kunlun sect hurriedly

went and carried Aaron away.

Sawyer was pleased as he looked at the crowd. "Who 's next?!"

He knew that an opponent with the same level as him could not hurt him one bit because of his extremely strong defense from the Dragon Conquering Method!

The crowd looked at each other with doubt when Katherine who was also seated in the spectators' seats nodded her head in acknowledgment. 'What a young warrior. I can't believe that he learned such a skill at this age!'

"Guys, which of you has the confidence to defeat Sawyer?" asked Katherine.

Class Sixteen shook their heads reluctantly. 'Sawyer is too strong of an opponent. What if he kills me?'

Daisy Palmer stifled a chuckle and spoke up, "Miss, isn't Darryl a Level One Master General? Let him compete, he defeated Mister King!"

The class burst into laughter.

A smile escaped Katherine's lips. She was there during Darryl and Xavier King's fight and she knew that the reason Darryl won was that Xavier got distracted after he missed his attack on Darryl. Darryl then seized the opportunity and gave Xavier

a sneaky counterattack to win.

She was certain that Darryl would not be able to defeat Xavier if he did not attack him by surprise.

Chapter 411

Darryl must not go to the battle stage. If he were to die in battle, who would give Katherine the Resumption Pill?

When she thought about the Resumption pill, Katherine bit her lip as she handed a bottle of water to Darry. "Some water, Darryl?"

"No need. I'd take a foot massage," Darryl said casually.

What?

Katherine blushed. Her students were all there, so how could she give him a massage?

"Later. Later in the office, alright?"

"Fine, then." Darryl nodded as he kept his eyes on the battle stage.

At that moment, a Xiaoyao family member went onto the stage and said to Sawyer, "Fabian Travis from the Xiaoyao family. I'm here for the challenge. "

Sawyer smiled. "Level Five Master General? Please."

Fabian did not waste a second longer; he turned and

punched Sawyer.

However, the punch was so weak and soft!

Sawyer laughed. "Have you not had your meal yet?"

"Oh, no! Fabian is a loser; what a weak punch."

"Precisely..."

Everyone around the stage nodded.

Bang!

Their fists hit each other, and the arrogant expression on Sawyer's face immediately changed.

He could feel Fabian absorbed his inner energy as his fist connected with the man.

He had lost almost one-third of his inner energy.

"Energy Draining Method!"

"Wow! This is the Xiaoyao family's special technique—the Energy Draining Method!" someone amongst the crowd shouted.

The Energy Draining Method was a unique skill that the Xiaoyao family members practice. Its focus was not to attack their opponent but to drain their inner energy instead. They would absorb the energy into their body to strengthen their skill.

Fabian grinned coldly as he grabbed the chance to

kick Sawyer in his stomach.

Sawyer yelled in pain as he rolled off the stage. He was so weak that he could barely stand up!

"Thank you!" Fabian bowed as he stood in the middle of the stage. He looked around the stage slowly.

Although he did not speak, his intention was obvious; he was waiting for a contender.

The crowd gulped.

Whoever dared to challenge Fabian would most likely end with their inner energy drained and absorbed by Fabian; they would be too weak to survive. Who would be brave enough to take the challenge?

When no one approached the stage, Fabian said to Graham arrogantly, "Mister Potter, shall we impose a time on this? If there is no contender in the next five minutes, I shall be announced as the winner. I can't wait forever, right?"

A muscular man stood up and said, "Don't be so arrogant, you have yet to win. I shall challenge you."

The muscular man charged onto the stage, but within ten minutes, Fabian had absorbed all of his inner energy, and he had fainted on the stage.

Oh, no!

Everyone looked worried. Some men had planned to challenge Fabian on stage, but they had decided to pull out.

The Energy Draining Method was undefeatable.

Three minutes passed by, and there were no new contenders. Graham was about to announce the winner when Evelyn stood up and spoke gently, but firmly, "I'll do it."

"Evelyn..." Circe grabbed Evelyn and said worriedly, "He is powerful, and you—"

Before Circe could finish her words, Evelyn stopped her. "Don't worry, Circe, he is just a normal man."

Evelyn leapt and landed on the stage gracefully like a butterfly.

Wow, what a beautiful sight!

All the men's attention was on Evelyn once she stepped onto the stage.

She had prominent facial features and a perfect body shape; she was irresistible.

However, there was some deep and dark energy surrounded the beautiful lady.

Darryl laughed when he saw Evelyn on the stage.

Fabian smiled as he looked at Evelyn. "You are no

match for me, Pretty Lady. Why don't I give you a hug and then you can leave the stage? I don't want to destroy a beautiful lady. I—"

Slap!

Before Fabian could finish his words, Evelyn gave him a big slap on his face.

Evelyn did not use her inner energy, so that was not cheating.

Chapter 412

Fabian's face was scarlet red; he was furious that someone slapped him in front of everyone. Then he punched Evelyn with the Energy Draining Method.

Evelyn did not move an inch; she stood still as Fabian hit her shoulders.

Wow!

At that moment, Fabian let out a cold breath! He had used the Energy Draining Method to absorb some of Evelyn's inner energy. However, that was enough to break him!

"What a strong and chilly inner energy!"

Fabian felt cold; his teeth chattered uncontrollably, so he could not say a word. Was that the Pure Feminine Method? Fabian felt extremely fearful.

That was right! Evelyn had cultivated the Pure Feminine Method from the Immaculate Girl Scripture.

What had happened? Could Fabian not move?

The crowd around the stage was unsure about what had happened.

There was a layer of ice all over Fabian, and he was

frozen.

Darryl was very impressed with Evelyn. She was able to use her cold inner energy to defeat Fabian's Energy Draining Method.

Graham nodded too. It was really rare to see such a talented young lady with such powerful cold inner energy.

Bang!

Evelyn lifted her hands and punched Fabian in his chest.

Thump!

Fabian's face paled as he collapsed a few steps backward. The ice that surrounded his body shattered all over the stage. He vomited a mouthful of fresh blood before he fainted!

Wow!

The crowd gave her a thumbs up! That was so impressive!

All the men's vision was locked onto Evelyn; they were impressed beyond description.

Evelyn kept her cool and said, "Who else?"

"Me!" A man in a white shirt stepped onto the stage. The very next second, he flew off the stage a

dozen meters away; it was only one slap from Evelyn.

All the men were so emotional; Evelyn was not only beautiful; she was so powerful, too.

All the men were excited to see the beautiful lady on stage; around six to seven men went up to the stage.

However, Evelyn managed to defeat all of them effortlessly!

"Who else? Please, come up," Evelyn said arrogantly. She was so enthusiastic!

She had defeated eight men; if there were no other contenders, she would be able to save her grandfather.

One minute... Two minutes... Three minutes had passed!

The younger generations from all the families looked at each other, but none of them was brave enough to do anything about it.

Then, a man in black jumped up onto the stage.

He looked smart; he was average-sized, and he had a handsome face; no one could tell if he was only an ordinary person.

Wow, what a handsome man!

All the ladies around the stage went crazy; some

even shouted excitedly.

The man clapped his hands gently as he walked toward Evelyn. He smiled and said, "You have excellent skills, Pretty Lady! How could these normal men dare to challenge you? They were foolish."

The defeated men blushed, but they did not dare to say another word. They felt that the man on the stage was at least a Level Five Master General; he was most probably one level below a Martial Marquis. He looked like he was only in his early twenties. He must be very talented!

Evelyn furrowed her brows and said coldly, "State your name."

"Wyatt Yenus from the Wudang family." His voice was so loud that everyone heard them.

"Wow!"

"Wyatt Yenus!"

"The Wudang family's most talented member in the past one hundred years, Wyatt Yenus!"

The atmosphere turned chaotic!

That was right. Wyatt was the leader of the Wudang family's younger generation. He had achieved Level Five Master General status and at such a young age,

too! He had battled with a Master Marquis from the Grandmaster Heaven Cult for over three hundred rounds, and he was not defeated.

Chapter 413

Circe had heard about Wyatt too. In fact, who had not heard about that young man?

Circe broke out in cold sweat. She was worried for Evelyn as she was not sure if she could handle him.

Wyatt looked at Evelyn on the stage, and he smiled, "You are such a beautiful lady, I don't wish to hurt you. Don't worry; I will be gentle as I respect you as a lady."

"Let's begin then," Evelyn replied coldly.

Wyatt might have looked smart and strong, but he was such a flirt. However, Darryl was not better than him.

Wyatt smiled as he bowed. "Ladies first."

"You ask for it!" Evelyn said coldly, and she immediately launched a punch toward him.

"Oh, Pretty Lady, you are too slow."

"No, you are too weak."

Wyatt was just too strong and skilful; he could still tease Evelyn as they fought.

Evelyn was angry and ashamed, she tried harder

and harder, but it did not work. Each time she tried to attack, Wyatt was able to block her.

All the audience were impressed with their skills.

They had already battled for more than a dozen rounds, but Evelyn still did not manage to attack Wyatt! She was furious and ashamed, and she was also worried.

She had gotten so far, and she could not let her effort go to waste! Her grandfather was her only family; she would not survive if she were to lose him.

Bang!

Her attack was blocked by Wyatt again. Evelyn bit her lips and reached for her weapon. It was the Crescent Moon Blade.

"Oh, Pretty Lady. Are you bringing out the weapon now?"

Wyatt smiled at Evelyn. "Pretty Lady, now that I've played with you for so long, it is time to end this."

Right after he said that, Wyatt held his palms together and gathered his internal energy. Then, he launched his fist with all his strength!

Evelyn shouted, "Pure Double Slay!"

Suddenly, Evelyn had blades on each of her hands

and charged aggressively toward Wyatt. She was as fast as lightning.

Did she plan to go all out? Everyone wondered about that.

Everyone felt that Evelyn had a higher chance to win it. However, Darryl shook his head; he knew Evelyn would definitely lose.

It was apparent that Wyatt had not really used all his skills. The only reason he did not defeat Evelyn was that he wanted to play around with her.

Since Evelyn utilized all her skills, Wyatt would not give way so easily anymore.

It was true. Wyatt avoided Evelyn's blades and flicked his finger on the blades as he did that.

Zing!

That was the metal sound from the blades, and Evelyn almost lost her grip on the blades. She tumbled a few steps backward.

"Pretty Lady, you are about to lose," Wyatt said with a big smile, and he quickly rushed forward and grabbed Evelyn's waist.

Evelyn tried her best to avoid him, but she had lost all of her energy. He had no choice but to let Wyatt's hand grab her waist.

"Let go of me!" Evelyn shouted in anger and embarrassment.

Wyatt took a deep breath. "Pretty Lady, you smelled so nice. Don't worry. If I were to win this, I wouldn't mind bringing you along to kill the Golden Lion. What do you think?"

Wyatt guessed that Evelyn was a competitive person.

"Let me go!"

Chapter 414

Evelyn looked terrible. She was furious, embarrassed and in despair.

She thought she could win the fight and be the champion quite easily; she never thought that Wyatt would appear. She was from the Eternal Life Palace family while Wyatt was from the Wudang family. How could she go with him to kill her grandfather?

"Let go of me!" Evelyn snarled.

Wyatt let go of her. They were in a public space; it was not appropriate for him to keep his hold on her waist.

Evelyn bit her lips and walked down the stage, back to her seat. Her eyes were all read, and she almost cried.

Circe felt sad; she consoled her, "Evelyn, don't worry, we'll find another way."

Evelyn did not say another word. She could not stop crying. The battle would end soon, how could there be any other way?

Wyatt, who was still on the stage, smiled

confidently. He looked around the stage and said, " Anyone else would like to challenge me? For those who wish to step forward, be warned. The beautiful lady was able to leave the stage unharmed, simply because she was beautiful. For the rest of you, you shall be dead or seriously injured!"

His words made all the young people shivered.

Wyatt had warned them, who would dare to step up onto the stage?

The atmosphere turned silent! No one dared to go onto the stage.

Darryl, who was at the side of the stage, took a deep breath.

The Cult Mistress had given him the task to steal the scripture, but it was an impossible task.
Principle Graham was a Level Five Martial Marquis. Even though Darryl had cultivated the Secret Theft Skill, there was just no chance for him.

Darryl saw a new opportunity for him to obtain a scripture. He just needed to defeat Wyatt, and he would win the right to kill Zion Featherstone. Then he could obtain the Supreme Mystery Scripture to complete his task and return to Elysian Island.

At that moment, Katherine sighed. "Wyatt is not only talented; he is good-looking too. I guess there'

s no doubt he will be the champion today."

"Not necessarily. I have not gone up the stage yet." Darryl laughed.

Even though Darryl talked to himself softly, few of his classmates heard him!

They all broke into uncontrollable laughter.

Darryl, the loser, tried to be silly again.

Their laughter brought the rest of the crowd's attention toward them. Everyone looked at them, puzzled.

Darryl did not say a word. He contemplated whether he wanted to join the challenge on the stage.

Daisy Palmer, who sat in front of Darryl, said loudly, "Did you hear that? Darryl said that Wyatt might not win as he had not gone up the stage yet!" Then she laughed.

"Wow!"

Everyone broke into laughter again.

"Darryl, do you know that you do not even qualify to be Wyatt's servant? People like you would dare to challenge him?" Xavion said while he admired Wyatt, who was on the stage.

Not only was Wyatt good looking, but he was also

the most worthy young talent in the Wudang family. Many ladies dreamt to be with him.

Darryl smiled. "What if I dare to go onto the stage?"

What? Did he want to go on the stage?

Was that an effort to save his dignity? They laughed again.

Daisy replied, "What's the point of you going up to the stage anyway? You would be defeated within the first round. Please don't embarrass our class."

Darryl laughed when he heard what she had said. " How would you know that?"

Was Darryl kidding? Did he mean he could win? They laughed again.

Daisy could not hold her laughter. "Darryl, why don' t we make a bet?"

She raised his hand and pointed toward the running track on the field nearby. "If you were to lose, you would have to run around the track naked for five rounds in front of everybody."

Chapter 415

He would run in the field naked?

The entire Class Sixteen broke into laughter when they heard what Daisy said.

Declan gave Daisy a big thumbs up. What a brilliant idea!

Darryl shook his head. Xavion and Dax's older cousin sister was a pretty and capable person. How could she come up with such a silly idea?

'Fine, If you want to humiliate me, then I shall let you humiliate yourself in front of everyone.'

Darryl smiled as he looked at Daisy. "Fine. But if I were to win, then you would have to confess your love to me in front of all the teachers and students. A sincere confession."

Wow!

The entire class broke into laughter again; how arrogant was Darryl!

It must be humiliating to confess one's love to a live-in son-in-law!

Daisy was a popular lady; she had dozens of

admirers in school. All of them looked angry.

"How could a goddess confess her love to a useless man like you?"

"Why don't you keep dreaming?"

Darryl ignored all of them; he smiled at Daisy. " What do you think? Would you take the bet?"

"Of course. Don't forget to go by the bet. Everyone could be our witness." Daisy smiled. She knew she would never lose.

Wyatt was a talented and powerful man; Darryl, the live-in son-in-law, would not be able to win.

Darryl smiled and nodded. Then he stood to stretch his hands and legs as he got ready to go onto the stage.

"Darryl."

Katherine pulled Darryl's hand; she looked worried. "Darryl, where are you going?"

She could not believe that Darryl would want to go up onto the stage.

"I am going to a fight." Darryl smiled.

"No, I won't allow you to do that," Katherine said gently. "Darryl, let's be rational. Wyatt is the Wudang family's most talented member. No one

from the same generations in the Six Cults can beat him."

Katherine continued to say, "Even Xavier would not be able to defeat him. The reason you defeated Xavier was purely based on a surprise attack. Wyatt might have a tough time if he were to face Xavier. Besides, Wyatt already said that he would not let anyone who challenged him to leave the stage unharmed.

"It's fine," Darryl replied. He patted Katherine's hand to comfort her.

"Darryl!" Katherine panicked. She could only watch as Darryl walked toward the stage.

Everyone started to gossip about Darryl when they saw him step onto the stage alone.

'Is he not afraid of death? How would he dare to challenge Wyatt?' most of them thought.

"Isn't that the live-in son-in-law from Class Sixteen?"

"He wants to challenge Wyatt? Is he looking for death?"

Almost everyone recognized that it was Darryl.

"My dear!"

A panicked voice was heard from the back of the

stage. Darryl turned and saw Lily at the Class Seventeen area. She looked distraught. "My dear, what are you doing? Come back here!"

There were tens of thousands people there, but no one was brave enough to challenge Wyatt. Even though Darryl was not too weak, he was no match to Wyatt's skills.

Yvonne, who sat beside Lily, looked tightly at Darryl. She was so worried that her body shook.

Chapter 416

That was Wyatt on the stage. Was he out of his mind?

Darryl felt the care from Lily and Yvonne's eyes. He felt a rush of warmth in his body. He nodded to both of them before he turned to walk up to the stage.

"Evelyn, look!" Circe said to Evelyn as she pointed at Darryl. "He is going up the stage."

"He is looking for death," Evelyn replied coldly.

When Evelyn battled Wyatt, she could feel his strength. She believed no one in the crowd would be able to defeat him.

Abbess Mother Serendipity, who was seated at the opposite side of the stage, locked her sharp eyes on Darryl.

How could such a useless person join the fight?

It might be a good idea. If Wyatt could kill him on the spot, it would save a lot of her effort.

"Why is he up there?"

Megan, who stood at the back, covered her mouth

as he sighed.

'How could he not know his own strength?' Megan started to worry, too.

Abbess Mother Serendipity saw the emotion on Megan's face and asked, "Meg, are you worried about him?"

It appeared her speculation was correct. Megan had fallen for Darryl. She had always been calm and never had any worry for another man. How could she fall for such a useless man like Darryl?

Abbess Mother Serendipity knew she must stop Megan from falling for such a man.

Megan felt the coldness from Abbess Mother Serendipity. She said softly, "No, I am not. I told you my fiancé is Kent. How could I fall for someone else?"

Abbess Mother Serendipity did not ask further questions and started to focus her attention on the stage.

Darryl was finally on the stage. Wyatt took a good look at him and furrowed his brows. "Hey man, you are looking for death?"

Darryl was a student from the Hexad School. He was definitely looking for death.

Darryl seemed like he was only a Level Two Master

General. Wyatt shook his head and said, "No, I shall not bully you."

"Rubbish, let's get started," Darryl said coldly with both hands behind his back.

"Sh*t. Fine, let me send you to your death!" Wyatt did not waste any time. He lifted his hands, and a glaring and shining light appeared around him.

"I had said earlier, whoever dares to challenge me will either be dead or seriously injured." Everyone had heard him clearly. They dared not speak another word. Then Wyatt shouted, "Million Arrows Shooting Stars."

Wow!

The air immediately froze into air blades. Thousands of air blades surrounded Wyatt.

"Die!" Wyatt pointed at Darryl. The blades flew toward Darryl. The silence was broken.

The crowd hissed.

It was apparent that Wyatt wanted to kill Darryl as fast as he could. Who would be able to avoid the thousands of air blades? The man would be seriously injured.

"My dear!" Lily shouted as she started to rush toward the stage, but she was too late.

Chapter 417

Darryl did not panic. He stood there steadily.

He was not worried when he saw the air blades. However, we marched forward. He used his body to defend against the air blades.

Interestingly, the air blades shattered into pieces when it touched Darryl's body. The man was not injured at all!

What had happened?

Everyone was surprised.

Darryl smiled. He had worn the Celestial Silkworm Armor. The air blades would not be able to pierce through that. As such, he only needed to use the upper half of his body to defend the air balance!

Then, Darryl was right in front of Wyatt. He did not expect Darryl would be completely unhurt. He reached out his palm to hit Darryl.

Everyone thought Darryl would avoid the punch, but the man stuck out his palm to strike against his opponent's palm!

It looked like they were fighting with their inner energy?

Darryl and Wyatt's palms were locked against each other, and they battled with their inner energy.

"This guy is looking for death!"

"Yes, a Level Two Master General wants to go against Wyatt? He must be crazy."

Everyone was excited about the fight.

No one noticed the smile on Darryl's lips. That was right. Darryl did that intentionally.

Darryl would not be able to defeat Wyatt as he was the Wudang family's most talented member. Wyatt had cultivated from countless martial secret manuals.

However, if they were to battle with their inner energy, Wyatt might not be able to defeat Darryl.

Even though Darryl was at a lower level than Wyatt, but Darryl had cultivated the Pure Energy Scripture; his inner energy had improved tremendously. His internal energy was in par with a Level One Martial Marquis.

Wyatt was stunned, and he struggled to hold on. However, his inner energy was weak; it was like water had flowed into Darryl's body. There was no damaging effect at all.

'How could he be so strong? That's impossible. He

is only a Level Two Master General," Wyatt thought.

Finally, after he held on for five minutes, Wyatt could not stand it anymore. His face was blood-red, his body shook, and he withdrew a few steps backward. He dropped onto the floor and vomited a whole mouth of fresh blood!

What? Had Darryl won?

Everyone was in shock when they saw the results. All of them had their mouths wide open; he was speechless. The crowd was dead silent!

Abbess Mother Serendipity, who sat near the stage, slammed her fist on the chair beside her; her face looked terrible.

At that moment, none of the students from the Hexad School made a single sound.

"You—"

Wyatt stood up slowly and stared at Darryl; he could not believe what had happened. Wyatt was the top talent from the younger generation. His face was so pale, and he fainted while he pointed at Darryl.

The silence was rather frightening.

Finally, someone in the crowd started to clap, and everyone started to applause Darryl's victory.

'He won? Had he really won? My husband has won?'

Lily thought.

Lily just wanted to run toward Darryl to hug and kiss him. If Yvonne had kept a hold on the woman, she would not be able to stand up.

Chapter 418

Circe was also amazed by what had happened. " Evelyn, this—"

"This is nothing; he won because he was lucky," Evelyn replied coldly. Darryl was at the right place and at the right time. Wyatt had lost his energy when he fought with Evelyn. It was not honorable for Darryl to attack Wyatt with his internal energy.

Daisy's face was scarlet-red, and her body shivered; she was in shock.

How could that useless man have won?

So, she had to confess her love to him in front of the whole school?

No! How could she do it? How could she confess her love to a live-in son-in-law?

The applause lasted for about one minute. Darryl stood on the stage, and looked around before he asked, "Does anyone want to come up for a challenge?"

"Spencer Luke from the Mountain Peak Sect is here to challenge you."

A young man stood up slowly in the crowd.

"What? Spencer Luke from the Mountain Peak Sect? "

Everyone was surprised, and they started to shout.

If Wyatt was the number one talent, then Spencer was the number two.

He was only twenty years old, but he had already achieved Level Five Master General; he was as talented as Wyatt.

The Mountain Peak Sect was only a small sect; it only became famous because of Spencer.

All the sects were jealous of Mountain Peak Sect. They felt that the sect was lucky to have such a talent in their family. He was really famous.

"Spencer..." The deputy head, which was also Spencer's master, pulled Spencer's arm and warned him. "When you fight him later, remember not to do it with your inner energy. Be careful."

Spencer nodded. "Don't worry, Master. I will take note."

Once Spencer was near the stage, he looked at Darryl. There was nothing special about the man; the only thing he had was stronger internal energy. He had no other special skills. Spencer leapt onto the stage.

"Let's start. I don't have much time to play with you," Darryl said coldly.

"You will die now!" Spencer was angry as he felt humiliated. He charged toward Darryl with his sword.

He had a flawless sword, and Darryl had no chance to avoid it. The blade almost pierced Darryl's chest. However, it was blocked by his Celestial Silkworm Armor.

Spencer was stunned. He did not expect the sword would not pierce through Darryl's body. He was about to retract his blade when Darryl smiled and reached out to punch Spencer!

Thump!

Spencer could not avoid it; the punch landed on him. He tumbled and rolled off the stage.

What? Just one hit?

Darryl defeated Spencer with only a single hit, and it was done in less than two seconds.

How could it be possible?

"Anyone who still wants to challenge me? You can come up the stage together," Darryl said coldly but clearly.

His deep voice made everyone shiver. What a wild

idea; he wanted everyone to go up the stage together?

Chapter 419

"This guy is too arrogant; let's fight him together," someone in the crowd shouted. Then, more than 20 people rushed onto the stage.

They were from different sects and families, but they had only one aim, and that was to defeat Darryl.

Whoever defeated Darryl would get the opportunity to kill the Golden Lion, and the person to kill the Golden Lion would be famous.

Megan bit her lips and said unhappily, "It was supposed to be a one-on-one battle, but now all of them want to attack him at the same time. Bullies!"

Right as she said that, she felt a pair of eyes staring at her.

She lifted her head and met Abbess Mother Serendipity's eyes.

"What did you say, Megan?" Abbess Mother Serendipity asked her.

At that moment, Darryl was surrounded by more than 20 people on the stage.

All of them had their blades and swords out, and

they charged toward Darryl!

Even though the men on the stage were from famous families and sects, they did not hesitate to attack together. How shameless!

Darryl smiled coldly at them, but he remained calm.

He raised his arms slowly; nine long dragons appeared, and they surrounded his body!

One of the dragons roared.

All the animals in the close vicinity dropped to the ground; that was the might of the dragon.

Everyone stood up to look at the stage. Then they looked at Darryl.

Bang!

The nine gold dragons circled the entire stage.

"Argh!" There were many screams and shouts on the stage. The person with the highest level was a Level Two Master General. How could they take that hit? In the blink of an eye, there were splashes of blood everywhere. The men dropped to the ground like flies; none were left standing on the stage.

What technique was that?

Everyone was in shock; no one said a word.

The crowd realized that Darryl had not been using

his full power. If he were to unleash his full potential, then everyone on the stage would be dead.

All the leaders and elders from the respective sects were stunned when they saw that. They knew that Darryl would be famous after that fight. He would make history.

However, they knew that the technique Darryl used was not one from any of the Six Sects. No one had ever seen it before.

Darry was the only one on the stage when he said coldly, "Anyone else?"

There was complete silence! No one dared to challenge Darryl when they saw his real strength.

What a joke! None of the 20 men could beat him. If someone challenged him by themselves, they would only ask for trouble.

"Anyone else want to challenge me?" Darryl shouted again. He was not loud, but everyone could feel the pressure off him.

The crowd was silent again. Darryl asked for three more times, but no one answered his challenge. Darryl smiled proudly.

Graham sighed and walked toward the middle of the stage. He said softly, "Darryl had defeated all of them. Since there is no new challenger, I shall

announce the winner is from the Hexad School, Darr —"

Before he could finish his words, Abbess Mother Serendipity stood up and shouted, "Hang on! There is one more contender from the Emei family."

Everyone shouted in shock.

Abbess Mother Serendipity smiled and gave Megan a slight push. "Megan, go ahead."

What? Megan was stunned when she said, "Master, I am only a Level One Master General, I—"

Megan had never expected that her master would want her to join the fight. Darryl was a strong opponent; he had defeated Wyatt and Spencer.

Abbess Mother Serendipity furrowed her brows and said annoyingly, "I've asked you to go, so go. No questions!"

Megan was worried when the 20 men surrounded Darryl. She must have feelings for him. Even though she denied it, her emotions still showed; she could not hide it.

Abbess Mother Serendipity would never let anyone from her family to have any connection with such a bastard!

Megan felt conflicted. "Master, I do not wish to go

onto the stage—"

Everyone stared at them.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious. She yelled, "Will you not follow my order, Megan? How dare you disobey me!"

Chapter 420

Megan shivered when she heard Abbess Mother Serendipity's words. She felt conflicted. Tens of thousands eyes were on her. She had no choice but to nod. "Fine, I will go."

Megan had no other choice; Abbess Mother Serendipity was already so furious.

Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded and said, " When you fight him, do not aim your sword at his chest. I suspect he is wearing armor. Got it, Megan?"

Megan said, "Master, I should—"

"Aim at his lower abdomen. The armor should not cover that part," Abbess Mother Serendipity said coldly.

Megan's mind went blank. The lower abdomen was the most fragile part of the human body. Would he still be alive if she were to pierce him there?

'Did Master want me to kill Darryl?' Megan thought.

Darryl had always been kind to Megan, he even gave her the Godly pill, and he had always been a fair man. How could she do that to him?

"Go." Abbess Mother Serendipity gave Megan a

slight push after she gave her some advice.

Everyone's eyes were on Megan. She wore a pair of tight jeans; her body was perfect. All the men were staring at her.

However, Megan was only a Level One Master General. Could she be as powerful as Darryl?

The place was chaotic again; everyone talked all at once.

On the stage, Megan stood a few meters away from Darryl. She looked complicated.

"Megan!" Abbess Mother Serendipity pressured Megan further.

Megan shivered, but she had to obey her master. She held a sword in her hand.

She sighed.

Darryl also sighed as he said, "Megan, please leave the stage. I do not want to hurt you."

Even though she was Abbess Mother Serendipity's student, Darryl did not want to hurt Megan.

Megan was very emotional when she heard Darryl's words. She bit her lips and felt embarrassed. The man had said that he did not want to hurt her.

Darryl's words played on repeat in Megan's mind;

she was happy to hear that.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious. She shouted, "Megan, don't listen to him. Just go ahead! "

How could that useless bastard teased Megan; he must be looking for death.

Darryl must be tired and weak after he defeated so many people. When she thought about the pressure from Abbess Mother Serendipity, Megan was about to cry. "Master... I can't do it."

Megan was caught between her friendship with Darryl and her master. She would have never gone to the fight that day if she knew she would be caught in such a predicament.

Abbess Mother Serendipity shouted fiercely, "I am ordering you to do it. If you still hesitate, then don' t call me Master. You will no longer be part of the Emei family."

Abbess Mother Serendipity continued to say, "Keep in mind that you are representing the Emei family, Megan. Do you want to shame our family?

She was right. Megan was a representation of the Emei family. She bit her lips as she held her sword tightly in her hands. Then she charged toward Darryl.

Darryl did not suspect that Megan would move from her aim at his chest to his lower abdomen. The blade pierced through his stomach.

The sword penetrated Darryl's abdomen; blood oozed from the fresh wound.

"You—" Darryl's face immediately paled. He did not expect the sword would turn in his stomach. Darryl's breath was labored. He was pierced through his abdomen, one of the most critical points for cultivators. Darryl was heartbroken. He did not expect Megan would actually injure him.

Chapter 421

"Darryl—" Megan panicked; her tears flowed uncontrollably with the sword still in her hand. Her body shook as she said, "Sorry... I'm sorry, I didn't mean to hurt you, I really didn't mean it..."

Her heart shattered into pieces when her sword pierced Darryl's abdomen. She had no choice. She had to obey her master's instruction as she was a representation of the Emei family.

Darryl smiled; he wanted to speak, but he could not!

"Kill him, Megan!" Abbess Mother Serendipity roared. Megan shivered as she shook her head.

She felt incredibly guilty for hurting Darryl. If she were to kill him, she would regret it for the rest of her life.

Darryl felt as if he was about to burst like a balloon. A strong wave of energy rushed through from his wound.

Since Darryl had cultivated the Pure Energy Scripture, he had powerful internal energy; it rushed out of his wound in his abdomen. The intense energy sent Megan tumbling off the stage.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was impatient, and she

was furious. Megan had just lost the perfect opportunity to kill Darryl. When Megan fell off the stage, she had lost the battle.

On the other hand, Darryl did not do so well as his abdomen was injured. After she considered everything, Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded her head.

At that moment, Darryl dropped to his knees on the stage; he was extremely weak. He could only hold on due to his strong determination.

"My dear!" Lily cried; she wanted to run up onto the stage.

"Lily." Yvonne pulled the woman toward her. Yvonne looked terrible too, but she said, "Calm down, all the representatives from the Six Sect and colleges are here. This is a battle; stay here and pull yourself together."

Yvonne was heartbroken when she saw Darryl's injury, but she tried her best to stay calm.

Lily heard Yvonne's words, but she started to cry, and her body shook badly, "My dear, please hang in there..."

Darryl could not stand it anymore; he fell off the stage and fainted on the ground.

"Take Darryl off from the stage. See if we can still

save him." Principal Grahamrushed toward the stage. He said, "Everyone, I think the battle should come to an end now. Even though Darryl has fainted, I will declare him the winner... everyone in agreement?"

Even though Darryl had fainted, everyone had seen that he was the most powerful member of the younger generations.

He defeated Wyatt, Spencer, and 20 other contenders. Everyone could see that he did not want to fight Megan when they battled.

Darryl deserved to be the champion. However, he could not enjoy the moment. For a cultivator, an injury to their abdomen was a serious matter.

Dozens of strong men from the Six Sect worked together to carry Darryl down from the stage.

Katherine dropped to the ground. She bit her lips, and her body shivered.

That was why she was worried; Darryl might be the only one who could cultivate the resumption pill. He had to hang in there.

Lily cried uncontrollably as she held onto Yvonne's hand. She was anxious about Darryl. "He will be fine, right, Yvonne?"

Lily's heart clenched pain when she saw Darryl's

bloodied body. Her pain was beyond description.

Yvonne sighed and patted Lily's hand as she tried to console her. "Don't worry, everything is fine. He will be fine."

Even though she said it, she thought that Darryl could not be able to make it through his injury.

Megan returned to her seat in the crowd.

She felt pain all over her body when she was thrown off the stage. Her heart had ached, too.

Pain, coupled with regrets and guilt. What had she done?

Chapter 422

Darryl had helped Megan countless times. She had solved many cases with his assistance. It was because of Darryl that Megan could cultivate the Master General level. However, she had injured him.

Would he die?

Megan's heart sank when she thought about that. Abbess Mother Serendipity did not notice Megan's emotion; she smiled when she saw Darryl's injury. His chances of survival were slim.

"Mister Darby, I have eliminated your useless grandson. You may now rest in peace," Abbess Mother Serendipity said softly as she nodded with a smile.

Graham, who stood in the middle of the stage, raised his hands and said, "Everyone. Everyone! We don't know about Darryl's condition yet, so we'll end the challenge here. When Darryl is awake, he can execute the Golden Lion then. If he does not survive, then Miss Megan from the Emei family will be our champion, and she will get to execute the Golden Lion."

No one said a single word. Graham continued in a

solemn voice, "Now, I have another announcement. Recently, the Six Sects received news about strong cultivators at the New World. They are planning an attack against us."

All of the students from the Hexad School looked at each other; they felt lost.

New World? What was that about?

When he realized that the students were confused, Graham explained, "My dear students, after you've graduated, you'll join the Six Sect. You are the future of the Six Sects, so it is time for me to share some information with you."

Graham said calmly, "There are two main parts of the land in our world. The part that we are living in is called World Nature, and the other is the New World."

"During ancient times, the emperor and Janson were at war. Janson lost the war, so he brought the remainder of his soldiers and citizens to reside in the New World. Janson used all of his energy to create the Sea of Death to separate the two lands."

"Only the strongest cultivator could cross the Sea of Death. This is because only the strongest cultivator would be able to float and use his internal energy to defend the Sea of Death's gravity. It is a perilous journey for cultivators who are not strong enough,

" Graham said slowly.

Everyone was amazed.

The Hexad School's students were surprised to hear that. There was another land on earth. How wicked!

Graham went on to say, "Janson and his millions of citizens retreated to the New World; they spent thousands of years to reproduce and rebuild. They had never interacted with our land."

"It was not until the Qing Dynasty that interaction started between our lands. Of course, due to the Sea of Death, only strong cultivators could cross over to the opposite side."

Graham looked worried. "Recently, we received news that the Emperor of the New World had sent cultivators to our land to invite strong families to join them. They had plans to dominate World Nature."

"If all the families and sects were to join the New World Emperor, they would destroy World Nature. The New World Emperor is a cruel and aggressive man. Sooner or later, there will be a battle between our lands.

The atmosphere was silent; no one said a single word. Everyone felt a sense of danger and threat in their mind.

Graham smiled when he saw everyone's worried faces. "Well, I believe that everyone understood what I meant. The future may not look optimistic for now, but I hope that when the New World attacks us, we will be united to work together. We will never bow to the New World Emperor," Graham said in confidence and pride.

Everyone was motivated. The Beggars' sect leader, Steven Simmons, stood up and shouted, "I am Steven Simmons, the Six-Fingered Legend 32nd generation leader of the Beggars' sect. I shall swear on behalf of our sect that we would fight to our end. "

"That's right. We, from the Mountain Peak Sect, agree to that, too!"

"The Great Honor Family is in agreement as well. Even though we are not a big sect, we would still defend World Nature until our last breath."

"United we stand!"

The students were highly-motivated, so they started to shout. "United we stand!"

Tens of thousands of them shouted at the same time, in pride and honor.

Chapter 423

"We shall stand united to defend our land against the New World!"

Graham was glad to hear that. He took a deep breath and nodded with a big smile. "Great! Every one of you is a true hero. Thank you."

Graham bowed and shouted, "We are gathered here today, and we have made alliances; this is something to be celebrated. As the principal of the Hexad School, I shall take good care of everyone here. I have prepared meals for you, so let's continue the celebration in the school field. Cheers! "

"Great! Cheers!" The whole field was filled with laughter.

It was late at night, and the moon and stars were exceptionally bright. The entire Darby family was asleep on that peaceful night.

In a private room, the air was tight. Queenie hugged her knees as she sat motionlessly at a corner. Her eyes were red—they looked hopeless. She had been crying for a long time that her tears had dried.

She had sat there a full day and a night. The Darbys

sent her food, but she had not touched any of it.

The previous night was a nightmare that she would never forget. After Jackson raped her, her wonderful world had collapsed. She was too ashamed to continue her life after the monster had raped her.

Creek!

The door made a sound; Queenie shivered in fear. Was it that monster again? Was he there to rape her again?

While she was worrying, someone walked in. It was the leader of the Darby family, Drake Darby.

When he saw the fear in Queenie's eyes, he said, " Miss, don't be afraid."

Drake did not know what Jackson had done in the secret room the previous night. He thought the tears on Queenie's face were because she was afraid.

"You may leave now," Drake said.

Abbess Mother Serendipity had sent a message to Drake to inform him that one of her students had seriously injured Darryl. She did not think he would be able to survive it. They would not need to go ahead with their plans, and there was no reason to hold the lady for ransom.

Queenie asked, "Who are you? Why did you kidnap

me here?"

Drake sighed and said, "Darryl would most likely die, so I don't have to lie to you. We are the Darby family. We brought you here to lure the bastard, Darryl, out."

The Darby family was one of the largest families in the city. Of course, Queenie had heard of them.

Drake spoke slowly, "I know that Darryl is your brother-in-law. You should know that he had raped his brother and sister, and he had killed his grandfather... We would never forgive such a person. "

Even though it was not honorable to restrain the girl, he had to let her know the truth.

Before he could finish, Queenie turned furious. She shouted, "You are a liar. My brother-in-law is not a bad person, but all of you are! All of you are evil!" She would never forget about the incident the previous night.

Drake sighed. "It is up to you to believe me or not, but it is the truth. After all the bad things that he had done, he finally got what he deserved. He is injured, and he would most probably not survive."

Queenie's head started to spin. Darryl was injured?

That was impossible. Darryl was so strong; how

would he be injured?

Queenie did not believe him; she started to cry. "I don't believe you. You are lying!" They were all bastards!

Drake did not want to say anything further. "If he is not seriously injured, do you think that I would let you leave? Just go. Open the door and leave. No one will stop you." Then Drake turned and left.

...

In the hall, Drake was visibly upset. He had always admired Darryl. How could he make all those mistakes repeatedly, and ended up in such a manner? What a waste!

Chapter 424

Florian walked excitedly into the room. "Father, I heard that Megan had injured Darryl, and he would not survive tonight. Is that true?"

That was the best news ever!

If Darryl was dead, then there was no proof that he had raped Rebecca.

Drake nodded his head silently.

Florian felt relief as he smiled. "Oh, yes! What about the girl that we captured? We have no use for her now. Shall I get rid of her?"

His wife, Yumi, had been with him the whole night, so he had no chance to go to the secret room. It was the perfect opportunity to do that.

Drake sighed. "I have released her."

"What? You let her leave?" Florian was disappointed.

Drake was not in the mood to speak further, so he waved his arms and said, "She left a couple of minutes ago. Now get out. Leave me alone."

"Fine..." Florian walked out with a smile.

'Such a beautiful girl, what a waste that I didn't get to sleep with her.' Florian rushed out of the residence to look for Queenie.

The sky was dark, and there were not many people on the streets. In less than three minutes, Florian saw Queenie alone on the road.

'Perfect timing!'

Florian trailed behind Queenie silently. He walked as softly as he could; he did not want to make a sound.

Queenie would definitely head back to Darryl's place. In about five minutes, she would walk past a quiet alley. Florian had already planned to rape her there.

Florian was puzzled when Queenie walked past the alley; she did not turn into it. She headed toward the direction of the sea instead.

Why would she go to the sea at such an hour?

Soon enough, Queenie arrived at a cliff. The cliff was about a hundred meters high, and the sea was below it. The wave crashed onto the rocks aggressively.

Queenie stood there and started to cry. "Cousin Sister, Darryl, I miss you all so much, but I am too

ashamed to see any of you again..."

Queenie tried her best to hold her tears back the entire journey to the cliff; she could finally release her emotions.

"Darryl, they sullied my reputation. I wish to die, but I'll miss you all dearly. What should I do?"

Queenie was devastated; she could not stop crying. Her body was so fragile, so she almost fell off the cliff. She held her fists tightly as she cried.

She wanted revenge, but the family that abducted her was the Darby family. They were the most prominent family in the city. Even if Darryl were to survive his injury, he would not be able to go against the Darby family.

Queenie's hope was gone. She was utterly devastated. She thought that she would end her life.

Queenie closed her eyes, and she was about to leap off the cliff.

Suddenly a devilish laugh was heard from behind her.

Queenie shivered and turned around to see an evil man approaching her.

Florian!

He must have followed her. He looked like the devil,

and she hated him.

"Who are you?" Queenie asked.

Florian stared at Queenie as he approached her. "It is not important to know who I am. The most important thing is that it's a waste for a beautiful girl like you to die so young."

Chapter 425

Florian walked closer toward the girl. He was surprised to see Queenie was about to jump off the cliff.

He had heard Queenie when she said that she was no longer pure; she had been raped. He was puzzled.

The person who raped Queenie must have been someone from the Darby family. Someone had acted faster than him and taken advantage of her.

Florian continued to walk toward the girl with a dark expression on his face.

"Don't come near me!" Queenie shouted loudly as she was afraid when Florian walked closer toward her.

Queenie closed her eyes; she wanted to jump off the cliff.

However, she was not fast enough. Florian jumped on her and pressed her body against the rock. He was about to kiss her.

"Stop!" Suddenly, a woman's voice shouted; it was stern and cold. Florian was stunned. He stopped and turned around.

A slim body figure approached them quickly.

Florian was amazed when he saw the woman; she was as beautiful as a goddess.

She wore a traditional purple long dress. She looked so elegant. She also wore a mask, so he could not see her face clearly. However, it was obvious she had a pair of attractive eyes.

Her beauty attracted Florian. Even though he had seen many beautiful girls, she looked special and different.

Sh*t!

Florian finally gathered his thoughts. He sized up the lady, and smiled as he asked, "My beautiful lady, what can I do for you?"

The girl in the long purple dress did reply to him.

Slap! The girl lifted her arms and slapped him across the face.

The slap might have looked gentle, but only Florian knew how scary it had been.

He felt energy swapped in him, and then he bounced off like a kite.

"Argh!"

Florian shouted in shock; one slap had sent him

right off the cliff. As he tumbled off the cliff, he could hear the wave beneath him.

Queenie was stunned, but she was very grateful that the lady had saved her. Even though Fabian did not manage to do anything to her, she still had no intention to live.

She was no longer pure, so why should she continue to live? Then, Queenie jumped off the cliff!

Just as her feet left the ground, the lady in purple lifted her hands gently. She managed to grab a hold on Queenie and pulled her back to safety.

"You—" Queenie was panting. "Why did you save me? I do not want to live anymore. I don't want to live!"

The lady in purple looked at her. "You are still so young, why would you want to commit suicide?" Her voice was calm and convincing.

Queenie sighed; her eyes were red. Then she started to sob. "I was raped. I don't want to live anymore." She began to cry; it was a pitiful sight.

The lady in purple looked at her and said calmly, " Since you dare to die, why won't you have the courage to live? Learn to be stronger, and one day you shall seek your revenge."

"I—" Queenie had nothing to say.

"I had never taken a disciple. Today, I shall make an exception and accept you as my disciple," the lady in purple said, her voice sounded fresh.

Queenie shivered. The images of Florian as he flew off the cliff when the lady slapped him went through her mind.

"Sister, may I know your name?" Queenie asked curiously.

"That doesn't matter," the lady in purple said casually. "From now onward, you shall address me as Master."

Then she paused and added, "I am the Honorable Pianist, Celine Maine."

'Honorable Pianist, Celine Maine.' Queenie repeated that in her mind.

Then, Celine gently made a swish movement with her hands, and Queenie floated in the air. Celine grabbed a hold on her as they flew off and disappeared into the dark sky. 3

Chapter 426

Somewhere underneath the cliff, Florian gradually opened his eyes. He was covered in blood.

"I am alive?" Florian wanted to cry. He had been lucky. When he fell off the cliff, he thought that he was a dead man. Who knew that a tree would break his fall?

That was the only tree on the face of the cliff; he would fall if he moved even a little.

"Help..."

Florian panicked as he started to shout. He tried to stabilize his hold on the tree.

The tree had grown in the middle of the cliff walls. The walls were slippery, so he could not climb to safety. The sea was directly beneath him. There was no way for him to move up or down.

Florian finally took out his cellphone to call for help.

He wanted to cry when he realized that there was no signal on his cellphone.

'Sh*t! I did not get to rape the girl, and I almost die because of her,' Florian thought.

A few moments later, Florian realized that the tree

could no longer hold his weight. He had no choice but to jump down to the rough seas.

It was dangerous to jump at that height. However, Florian was a Level Five Master General, and so, he managed to land safely on the beach. However, his feet were numb.

Florian sighed in relief when he landed on the beach. However, he did not know how he could return to the top of the cliff, and his cellphone had no signal.

He ran forward to find other ways to leave. After some time, he arrived at a cave. It was dark and creepy, so he was too scared to go into the cave. However, he had no other place to go, so he held his breath and walked in.

The cave was not that big. He heard some noises from the ground as he entered it. He got the shock of his life when he looked down; it was some human skeletons. "Sh*t!" He kicked the skeletons aside.

Suddenly, among the skeletons, a yellow-colored scripture appeared in front of Florian. He picked it up quickly, and he was delighted with his find. The words on the cover were 'Mysterious Godly Scripture'.

...

At the Lyndon family mansion.

They were in the bedroom, and Darryl laid on the bed with his eyes closed. He was motionless. His breathing was feeble, and it might even stop at any time. During the day, Principal Graham and some elders were there to pass some of their inner energy to Darryl. It was so he could hang on for a little longer.

However, that was only a temporary measure. His abdomen was wounded!

Lily brought about eight doctors to treat Darryl, but they had unanimously given her the same suggestion; she should make funeral arrangements for him.

Lily and Yvonne sat beside the bed; they were devastated.

"Yvonne, why don't you take a rest? I can take care of him," Lily said weakly.

Yvonne bit her lips. Her heart had shattered into pieces because she was that Darryl would die. She tried her best to force a smile. "It's fine. I will stay here with you."

When it was morning, Samantha walked out of her bedroom in her pajamas and said to Lily, "Lilybud, Yvonne dear, you should get some sleep. What is

the point of sitting here? The doctors already said that he would not survive this."

When they brought Darryl home with his body covered with blood, Samantha was shocked.

What was the point of staying with him if he would not survive the ordeal?

Samantha furrowed her brows. "Lilybud, don't be foolish, you must take care of yourself. Just let this useless guy die."

'Lily had lost three precious years married to him. If Lily had married to some rich family, she would have had a perfect life,' Samantha thought.

"Mother!" Lily cried angrily as her body shivered. " How could you say that? He is your son-in-law!" Samantha's words made her heart clenched.

When she saw Lily was emotional, Samantha shook her head and said "What do you mean son-in-law? I never admitted that he was one."

Then she walked away to change. Their grandmother had announced that everyone should go to her place for a big announcement.

After she changed her clothes and finished her makeup, Samantha looked in the mirror and nodded.

She looked sexy and elegant. She put on her

stilettos and headed out. As she stepped out of the door, she said, "Get rid of him now! A dying man in the family? That's bad luck! Get him out of here, do you hear me?"

"Mother!"

Lily could not hold in anymore; she started to cry loudly. "Mother, stop saying that! I love Darryl! Even if he dies, I will still only love him for the rest of my life!"

Chapter 427

"You— Argh, I am so angry!" Samantha growled.

Lily said that she would only love Darryl! Samantha stomped her feet and shouted at her, "I shall deal with you when I get back!" She slammed the door and left.

Lily sighed; she only wanted to cry. She held Darryl's hand tightly.

Darryl's cell phone started to ring. Lily looked at the phone and realized the call was from Miss Keith, Darryl's class teacher.

Lily answered the call. "Hi, is this Darryl's wife?" Katherine asked worriedly.

Lily answered, "Yes, it's me, Miss Keith."

Katherine said softly, "There's something that might save Darryl. It is called the Nine Resurrection Pill. If you can find it before Darryl catches his last breath, you might be able to save him."

The abdomen was a cultivator's most critical body part. One would typically die if their stomach were injured. Who else could produce a Resumption Pill for Katherine if Darryl were dead?

So, Katherine looked at all the ancient manuals to look for a way to rescue Darryl. Finally, she found it in one of the ancient manuals, the Nine Resurrection Pill.

"Really?"

Both Lily and Yvonne were delighted to hear that.

"Miss Keith, do you have the Nine Resurrection Pill? " Lily asked in excitement.

Katherine sighed. "The Nine Resurrection Pill is extremely rare. The method to produce this elixir was lost over the generations. I don't have it."

Lily was speechless; all her hope was gone in a second.

It was lost many generations ago, so it was impossible to find it anymore. Lily's eyes were red as she cried.

At that moment, Yvonne was excited. "Lily, you take care of Darryl. I need to go out for a while. I'll be back soon."

Yvonne turned and left the room; she took out her cell phone and dialled a number. The call was answered within seconds.

"Why are you calling me, Yvonne?" A man's voice was heard from the other side of the call.

Yvonne bit her lips and hesitated a few seconds. " Jeremy, are you free? Can we meet?"

Jeremy Langley was the son of a wealthy family in Donghai City. Yvonne had met Jeremy in an antique exhibition about two years ago.

Jeremy had fallen in love with Yvonne at first sight. However, Yvonne was not interested in him. That was why he was curt with her.

Yvonne had not contacted him for more than a year.

However, she wanted to save Darryl, so she did not hesitate to call him. In order to show off his family' s wealth, Jeremy had told Yvonne that his family had spent three billion bucks on a Nine Resurrection Pill at a private auction.

Even though that was some time ago, Yvonne still remembered it clearly.

Jeremy was excited when he heard that his goddess wanted to meet him. He replied quickly, "Of course, I haven't seen you in a while, Goddess. I've missed you, dearly."

Chapter 428

Yvonne continued to say, "Can you come now? I shall wait for you at the Dream Destiny Café."

"Sure, I will be right there." Jeremy was so excited. What fantastic news; his goddess had asked him out!

...

At the Dream Destiny Café.

There were not many customers at that time; only a few youngsters were there.

Yvonne walked into the cafe; many men looked at her. Short skirt, stilettos, and the perfect facial features—she looked extremely elegant and irresistible.

However, Yvonne looked worried.

Not long after she sat down, a fashionable young man walked in; he had a bouquet of roses in his hand. The man was Jeremy.

"Yvonne, this is for you." Jeremy looked at Yvonne emotionally. When he saw her perfect body, he said, "You look wonderful."

He was honest about it. Yvonne had become more

and more beautiful after they last met a year ago.

Yvonne forced a smile on her face as she took the flowers. She said, "Jeremy, I remember you said that your family has the Nine Resurrection Pill, is that right?"

Jeremy was surprised; he replied with a smile, "That 's right. Why do you mention this?"

Yvonne was nervous; she looked at Jeremy and asked, "Jeremy, can you sell it to me? I will buy it at any price."

As long as she could save Darryl, she was willing to sacrifice her wealth.

Jeremy did not reply immediately. He furrowed his brows and said, "Why do you want it?"

"I need it to save someone, Jeremy. Please sell it to me, just name your price." Yvonne was desperate.

Darryl was still unconscious; he probably had another four to five hours!

"The person that you wanted to rescue, is it Darryl? "

Jeremy smiled as he looked at Yvonne. Everyone in Donghai City had heard about Darryl's injury at the Lion Slaughtering Conference. Everyone knew that one would not survive if their abdomen were

wounded. Only the Nine Resurrection Pill would be able to save him. Coincidentally, Jeremy had one at home.

That might be the only pill in the whole wide world.

Yvonne had asked about it immediately when they met. It was apparent that she wanted to save Darryl.

"Yes, it is Darryl." Yvonne nodded.

Jeremy smiled, "Yvonne dear, you should know. Even though we bought the Nine Resurrection Pill in the auction, it is the rarest pill in the world. It's really difficult for me to sell it to you."

He mocked her in his mind as he said that. 'You had always looked down on me, and now you are begging for my help.'

Yvonne was desperate, so she leaned forward and said, "Jeremy, the pill is critical to me. Please tell me what you want for you to sell me the pill. I will agree with your every request!"

"Anything?" Jeremy smiled.

Yvonne nodded firmly.

Jeremy looked at Yvonne's face and said, "Fine. Marry me, then. We shall have our wedding in three days. What do you think?"

Jeremy's blood pumped in excitement. For the past

year, he had tried to get close to Yvonne, but she never responded to him. It would be great if he could marry her.

Would Yvonne agree to do that to save Darryl? She did look desperate.

"How dare you!" Yvonne was furious; her body shook in anger.

Chapter 429

He wanted to marry her in three days?

Yvonne did not want to do that. Jeremy was infamous for his lust. She had heard about his messy sexual relationships with many women. Even though he looked smart, he had no manners at all. He would always shout at the waiters or security guards when they went out together. He wanted to show off!

Those were some of the reasons Yvonne did not want to go out with him. How could she marry a man like him?

However, if she did not agree to his terms, he would never agree to give the pill to her, and she would not be able to rescue Darryl.

Yvonne was confused and puzzled.

When he saw that Yvonne was still in doubt, Jeremy held her hand and said, "Yvonne, I am not taking advantage of you. I really like you; I was attracted to you from the first sight. It is my dream to marry you. It's true. I will treat you well, I promise."

Jeremy looked sincere. "If you agree to this, then I will give you the Nine Resurrection Pill to save

Darryl."

Yvonne blushed; she pulled her hand back quickly.

"If you don't agree to that, then I shall leave." Jeremy stood up and turned to leave. He could see that Yvonne wanted the pill desperately.

As expected, Yvonne was nervous once Jeremy stood up. She grabbed his hand. "Don't go, I—"

Yvonne bit her lips until it was about to bleed!

"Fine, I agree with your terms! I agree!" Yvonne's eyes were red. She had no choice; she would regret her if anything bad were to happen to Darryl.

Jeremy was happy to hear that. "Great!"

He had always dreamed about marrying Yvonne.

Yvonne looked firmly at Jeremy. "Don't forget your promise. Jeremy. I want you to send me the pill immediately."

Jeremy nodded and smiled, "Fine. As you have agreed, we shall announce the news about our marriage tomorrow morning. This is excellent news. We shall celebrate it grandly and let the entire Donghai City know about it."

Jeremy knew the only reason Yvonne agreed to marry him was to save Darryl.

He wanted to announce the news so that Yvonne

would not be able to go back on her decision. Her family would be in shame if she were to go back on her words.

Yvonne shivered, and her lips bled.

He wanted to announce the news. Once he released the information about their marriage, then she would not be able to turn back! All the families in Donghai City would send gifts, and she would have to marry him.

Yvonne felt complicated, but she nodded. "Fine."

Jeremy was excited, so he smiled and said, "Alright, then. Wait for my call, I will go home to discuss it with my family, and then, I'll send you the pill."

Jeremy stood up and walked out of the café happily.

As Jeremy left, Yvonne started to cry. 'Darryl, I would do anything for you.'

Chapter 430

'I am willing to marry anyone if I have to do it for you. I just want you to live.'

...

At the Young family residence.

The Young family residence was calm and peaceful as always, but the atmosphere at the main hall was solemn.

Yvonne had returned with the news of her impending marriage. She would marry a son from the Langley family. Of course, she had omitted the part about saving Darryl.

Kingston looked at Yvonne and asked curiously, " Do you really want to marry Jeremy?"

Ever since Yvonne met Darryl, she was head over heels in love with him. It looked like she was finally over that.

He had met Jeremy a couple of times. The young man looked smart, and his family was wealthy. He was a much better choice than Darryl.

Yvonne's eyes were red as she replied softly, " Father, I have thought about it. Please help me

spread the news."

"Good, that's great!" Kingston was so happy; his daughter was about to get married. He left the main hall and started to call their relatives.

The Young family had many relatives and connections in Donghai City. The eldest daughter of the Young family would get married in three days! The news spread all over Donghai City.

...

An hour later, a luxurious sports car drove into the car porch of the Young residence. Jeremy stepped out with a unique wooden box in his hand.

"Yvonne, Yvonne..."

Once he stepped into the garden, he walked excitedly to the hall and handed the wooden box to Yvonne. "The Nine Resurrection Pill, this is it."

Yvonne walked out quickly in her stilettos; she took the wooden box from Jeremy.

She opened the box and saw a pill in it. It was shining, and it looked lively.

Yvonne did not think any further. She stood up and headed out.

Jeremy followed her. "Yvonne, are you taking this pill to Darryl? I can go with you."

They would get married soon; he wanted to be with her.

Yvonne bit her lips and said coldly, "That's fine. I can go on my own."

Then she continued to say, "You should take care of the wedding preparations."

Even though she had agreed to marry him, she still rejected him. She did not want him by her side. Hence, she had to find some excuse to make him stay away.

Jeremy nodded. "You're right. You are such a nice person, Yvonne. The most important thing right now is the wedding arrangements. This will be the most luxurious wedding in the entire Donghai City! Don't worry, Yvonne, all the ladies in Donghai City would be envious of you! I shall invite many rich and famous people to our wedding, and also people from our social circles!"

Jeremy laughed. "I have been cultivating for the past year, Yvonne. There will be elders at our wedding too..."

"Fine, you can go ahead with the arrangements." Yvonne interrupted him.

"Great, great! I shall go now." Jeremy left happily.

Yvonne sighed when she saw him leave. Then, she

took a deep breath and drove straight to the Lyndon family home.

Chapter 431

The Lyndon Mansion.

It was daytime yet the entire house was silent with only the sounds of Darryl's weak breathing.

Lily had been taking care of Darryl for a long time and was extremely exhausted yet she still endured.

She was waiting for a miracle where Darryl would open his eyes and called her 'Honey'.

However, she was uncertain whether this moment would arrive at all.

Creak.

At that moment, the door suddenly opened and a haggard Yvonne came rushing in with a pill that irradiated a brilliant glow in her hand and quickly said, "Lily, look what I've got here!"

"Yvonne, that's..."

Lily excitedly stood up when she saw the pill in Yvonne's hand.

"It's the Nine Resurrection Pill!" Yvonne exclaimed with joy and anxiety as she quickly walked to the bedside and placed the pill into Darryl's mouth.

Nine Resurrection Pill!?

Lily was stunned for a moment before feeling delighted. Both ladies smiled and teared up upon seeing Darryl consuming the pill.

However, it was tears of joy this time! 1

As expected, a hint of rosiness soon returned to Darryl's pale face.

Lily was overjoyed but eventually came to her senses and asked Yvonne, "Yvonne... Where did you get this pill?"

Miss Katherine said the Nine Resurrection Pill refinement method had been lost for centuries!

Yvonne went out for barely three hours and returned with the pill!? How could this be possible!

Yvonne tightly held her hands as she forced a smile and simply said, "I got it from a friend."

"A friend?" Lily's face was filled with curiosity.

"It's fine, there's no need to talk about this. Anyway, I've got some good news to tell you. I'm getting married three days later." Yvonne put up a happy expression, but her smile contained some reluctance.

What?

'She's getting married even though she never had a boyfriend? Who's she marrying?' Lily thought.

Lily stared at her with disbelief.

Yvonne carried a faint smile on her face, but her heart was truly aching. There was a slight shimmer in her eyes as she tried to hold back her tears. "The groom is Langley's young master, Jeremy. I better get going. Darryl should be waking up in a moment."

Yvonne turned and left the room as soon as she finished her words.

"Yvonne! What's going on? You're marrying Jeremy!?" Lily anxiously called out as she hastily walked toward Yvonne.

Everyone in Donghai City knew that Jeremy was a good for nothing playboy who always created problems for his father. He was a pervert with a drinking and gambling habit! How could Yvonne marry such a man!?

"Lily, give me your blessing. I've made up my mind," said Yvonne coldly as she turned and left. However, tears burst out of her eyes as soon as she left.

Yvonne looked back at the mansion and quietly gave her blessing. 'Darryl, you already have Lily by

your side. You must cherish her for treating you so well. You and I are simply not meant to be together in this lifetime.'

Yvonne's makeup was instantly ruined by her tears.

...

Two days later at the Lyndon Mansion.

Darryl was unaware of how long he had been unconscious as he laid on the bed. His mind was in a muddle as though he just had a long dream.

Huff.

Darryl felt that his entire body was weak and sore when he opened his eyes. His energy field in particular was still aching.

"Hubby!"

Chapter 432

Darryl instantly heard a joyful voice which was followed by the appearance of a beautiful figure in front of him.

It was from Lily!

Darryl could not help but laugh upon seeing Lily's eyes that were swollen from crying. "What's wrong, Lilybud? Why are your eyes so red?"

Lily tightly held Darryl's hands as she laid on his body and cried tears of joy. "Hubby... it's amazing that you're awake. I thought I've lost you..."

Lily had been constantly praying for him to come round ever since Darryl's injury! The heavens finally listened to her prayers and Darryl was awake now...

Of course, the person who contributed the most was none other than Yvonne who brought them the Nine Resurrection Pill.

Darryl felt warm as saw Lily's tears and gently patted her shoulder. "There, there, I'm fine now..."

He heartily smiled and continued, "Besides, how can I die when we haven't even made love yet?"

Lily became shy and her delicate face immediately blushed upon hearing Darryl's words.

Darryl was still a smooth-talker even now!

Lily stood up in embarrassment and stomped her feet. "So uncouth."

She could not help but tuck Darryl under the blanket as she spoke and gently asked him, "Hubby, are you hungry? I'll cook something for you."

Darryl had been unconscious for two days and had not even drunk a drop of water. No cultivator would be able to endure that situation.

Darryl licked his dry lips and said with a smile, "I'm not hungry, just a little thirsty."

Lily nodded her head and hastily poured a glass of water upon hearing his words. She carefully propped Darryl up and fed him the water. Even though her movements were a little clumsy, it was still kind and gentle.

Gulp gulp.

Darryl happily drank a few mouthfuls of water while savoring Lily's tenderness. He immediately felt a lot better now.

"Lilybud, how long was I unconscious?" Darryl asked after swallowing the water.

Lily huffed and smiled gently. "You've been unconscious for two days now. I was so afraid during the past two days that something might've happened to you. Thankfully the Nine Resurrection Pill managed to save you."

Nine Resurrection Pill?

Darryl's expression became solemn in an instant upon hearing Lily mentioning the pill.

It was recorded in the Infinite Elixir Manual that the Nine Resurrection Pill was very mystical. It was specifically used to treat lower energy field injuries! There were three energy fields on the human body, located on the head, chest, and lower abdomen respectively.

The Nine Resurrection Pill only had a single function which was to heal a cultivator's lower energy field.

If the lower energy field was injured, no other medicine except the Nine Resurrection Pill could help! Therefore this elixir pill was one of the best! It could not be bought on the market even if one had money!

Moreover, the Nine Resurrection Pill could not be refined by any ordinary person. In addition, the pill' s refinement method had been long lost and

presently only Darryl knew how to refine it.

Darryl could not help but ask Lily after thinking, " Lilybud, where did you get the Nine Resurrection Pill?"

Lily had just become a cultivator and would not know of any Pill Refining Masters.

Lily's expression was uneasy as she gently sighed and softly answered, "It's...Yvonne, she brought the pill."

Yvonne Young?

Darryl was stunned as his mind flooded with the image of a slim and beautiful figure.

Yvonne actually found the Nine Resurrection Pill?

Although Darryl was shocked, he did not think much of it and changed the topic. "Lilybud, what did the principal say after I fainted on the battle stage?"

Lily thought for a moment and said, "The principal said that you're completely worthy of being the champion, it's just that you are heavily injured. The responsibilities of dealing with the Golden Lion will have been yours had you survived. Otherwise, Megan will be handling it. They probably think that you're dead now...and I'm guessing they'll be handling the responsibility to Emei Sect's Megan

soon..."

What?

"Honey... Quick... Get me the phone," said Darryl anxiously. He almost died for the right to kill and was not about to lose it!

Chapter 433

Darryl grabbed his phone and gave Katherine a call.

"Miss Katherine, I'm awake. Has Megan been given the Golden Lion's killing rights?" Darryl asked hastily.

Katherine was stunned on the other side of the phone as she heard Darryl's voice. She was pleasantly surprised and asked, "You're awake?"

Katherine gently rubbed her chest in relief. "That's great news. I'm so glad you're alright."

Katherine pondered as she spoke, 'Only the Nine Resurrection Pill could heal Darryl's injury. Could it be that his family found that mystical pill?'

This would be too amazing.

Katherine was still stunned as she heard Darryl slowly say, "Miss Katherine, please let the principal know it's time for him to fulfill his promise since I'm the champion."

Katherine nodded her head and said, "Don't worry, I'll inform the principal. He's still at school along with the other sects' elites. I'll inform them now."

Click.

Katherine quickly hung up the call as soon as she finished her words.

...

The time was 2pm.

The Lyndon Mansion was extremely lively!

Several dozen luxury cars were parked in front of the mansion while hundreds of people gathered inside.

Most of those who attended were the Six Sects' elite disciples, some cultivators, and even members of prominent families. All of them came to visit upon hearing the news that Darryl had awakened.

Darryl's performance during the Lion Slaughtering Conference was utterly stunning after all! These cultivators were fascinated with Darryl's survival even after his lower energy field had been stabbed.

The neighboring residents crowded the mansion's exterior upon seeing so many luxury cars parked outside.

"Look, all these million bucks cars..."

"I saw those who came down from these cars are the Six Sects' famous elites. I can't believe such powerful people will visit here..."

"Yeah right, who are they visiting? I don't believe

there's such an important person in our little community..."

Meanwhile, in the mansion's bedroom.

Darryl cozily sat on the bed with Lily sitting by the bed as she attentively cared for him. Numerous snacks including a peeled apple were placed on the table beside him.

Many people were envious of such moments.

There were a lot of people in the bedroom including the Principal, Graham, Six Sects' high-ranking members, heads of other smaller sects, and even prominent family leaders were there.

Graham was amazed and said to Darryl with a smile, "Haha, I knew the heavens will bless good students like you to be safe."

Darryl humbly nodded his head and said, "Sir, you're too kind. I'm immensely grateful for you and all the other elders' visitation. I should get down the bed and pay my respects, but instead..."

Darryl smiled wryly. He was heavily injured such that even lifting his arm would prove strenuous. He could not get off the bed...

Graham waved his hand and laughed. "That's alright. Everyone knows you haven't fully recovered from your injuries, there's no need for

formalities."

Everyone around nodded and laughed upon hearing Graham's words. Darryl was so powerful at such a young age while still being humble and patient toward his elders. He was such an outstanding and talented man!

At that moment, Wudang Sect's Master Leonard fervently looked at Darryl and said, "Darryl, I would like you to be my apprentice. What do you say?"

What?

Master Leonard wanted Darryl to be his apprentice?

One should know that Master Leonard was Wudang Sect's deputy head whose status and renown in the martial arts world was even higher than Graham's. Darryl's future would be limitless were he to become his apprentice.

"This..." said Darryl as he scratched his head.

Darryl was honestly tempted to be Master Leonard's apprentice. However, he already had two other titles—Eternal Life Palace Sect's Hall Master and Grandmaster Heaven Cult's Elder Master.

His roles would be too confusing if he were to also join Wudang Sect.

Master Leonard assumed Darryl was still stunned

seeing his hesitation. He did not press on but instead smilingly looked at him.

"What's so good about becoming Wudang Sect's disciple?"

At that moment, a beautiful lady emerged from the side. She was Xiaoyao Sect's, Naomi Grand.

Naomi was head of the Xiaoyao Sect. Although she was a female just like Emei Sect's leader, her power surpassed many others. She was widely known in the martial arts world and should not be underestimated.

"Miss Grand, what's the meaning of this? Trying to snatch my disciple?" said Master Leonard with discontent.

Naomi ignored him and instead looked at Darryl with a smile and said, "Darryl, I'll have you as my sole apprentice. I'll teach you Xiaoyao Sect's hidden techniques and within two years, you'll be the rising star of the martial arts world."

Naomi would not allow Wudang Sect to snatch away such a talented man.

Darryl was dumbfounded as he quietly swallowed his saliva.

A venerable monk wearing a red robe while emanating a dignified and refined aura emerged

from the crowd before Darryl could regain his senses.

He was Shaolin Sect's, Master Reed.

Master Reed placed his palms together and nodded at Darryl and said with a serious expression, " Xiaoyao Sect's cultivation methods are too graceful and unsuitable for you to cultivate. How about you join the Shaolin Sect, and I'll teach you our secret techniques."

Master Reed was interrupted by another voice before he could finish his words. "Darryl, come join Kunlun Sect..."

"Don't listen to them, Tianshan Sect's cultivation methods are the most suitable for you."

"Although the Sanyang Sect is a small sect, we also have powerful techniques available for you to learn ..."

In an instant, all the elites requested Darryl to join their sect. They would have tried to snatch him physically away were it not for Darryl's weak body.

Chapter 434

Oh sh*t.

Darryl was utterly stupefied at the scene in front of him. He never thought he would be so popular.

The funny part was that these Six Sects' Elders were usually high and mighty, but now they were like street vendors vying to attract customers.

It was truly an interesting moment.

Darryl smiled without saying a word as he silently sat there and watched.

Graham laughed as well and loudly said, "Everyone stop arguing, Darryl hasn't completely recovered from his injuries. He needs a peaceful rest..."

Everyone looked at each other and stopped arguing upon hearing Graham's words. However, their gazes at Darryl were still fervent as before.

Darry let out a sigh of relief. Thankfully the principal stepped in. Otherwise, it would be hard for Darryl to make a decision with all Six Sects' Elders refusing to back down.

At that moment, Graham pulled out a key and handed it to Darryl. "Darryl, it's clear to everyone

you are the Lion Slaughtering Conference Champion. The Golden Lion is locked in the Hexad School's private room and this is the key to the room."

Darryl's expression was filled with joy as he accepted the key. As he was about to speak, a burst of loud laughter erupted from the room's entrance!

"Sorry I'm late, please excuse me, Mister Darryl!"

This voice was thunderous and magnificent which obviously came from a man with immense internal energy. Everyone looked in the direction of the voice.

A man who was roughly 50 years old stepped into the room. He was wearing a gray Chinese jacket and had an extremely powerful aura!

The man walked toward his bedside and said slowly, "Mister Darryl, you instantly became famous during the Lion Slaughtering Conference, truly an admirable sight to behold. I'm Zoran Carter, glad to make your acquaintance."

Zoran Carter!

Darryl took a deep breath upon hearing that name and could not help but asked, "Carter? Could you be from Mid City's Carter family?"

"Indeed, Zoran is the Carter family's patriarch,"

replied someone from the side.

Damn.

Darryl was shocked as his mind was in a buzz upon hearing that answer. He blankly stared at Zoran.

There were so many families from all sorts of places, but there were only a few that were truly famous across the lands. For instance, the Darby family was known as Jiangnan's top family, but it was still restricted to the Jiangnan region. His family was rather insignificant at the national level.

Naturally, only extremely large families were known across the world. For instance, everyone knew about Kyoto's Newman family.

Besides these extremely large families, there were also a few hidden families.

These hidden families were tremendously powerful but did not involve themselves in matters of the martial arts world, therefore only a few people knew about them.

The Carter family was a family of cultivators that had been hidden for centuries! Indeed, their whole family consists of cultivators and all of them were quite powerful!

Rumor has it that the Carter family's patriarch, Zoran did not involve himself in the martial arts

world's matters, but his strength was not inferior to the Six Sects' heads! He was an absolute first-class expert!

At that moment, Naomi could not help but asked, " Sir Carter, you're here too? Are you here to fight over an apprentice as well?"

Master Leonard, Master Reed, and everyone else instantly showed a worried expression.

If Zoran were to ask Darryl to be his apprentice and Darryl accepted, they could do nothing but look on in despair.

After all, the Carter family was a family of cultivators that had been hidden for centuries and whose strength was not weaker than any of the Six Sects'.

More importantly, the Carters and the Six Sects always had a good relationship and it would be inappropriate to ruin it.

At that moment, Zoran looked at Darryl with a smile and asked, "Mister Darryl, I came here today to ask if you know Daniel Darby? I feel both of you look quite alike."

Darryl smiled wryly and said, "Daniel is my father."

"He's your father?"

Zoran's eyes were wide opened as he checked out

Darryl and suddenly laughed. "It's as I thought. No wonder both of you look so similar, turns out you're his son!"

What was going on?

Everyone present looked at each other in confusion.

How were these strangers suddenly so well-acquainted?

Darryl was shocked and said, "Sir, you and my father..."

Zoran laughed as he could not hold back his excitement and interrupted Darryl before he could finish his sentence. "Your father and I are pretty much-sworn brothers."

Zoran lightly sighed and continued speaking with much emotion, "It all began twenty years ago when I was still an ordinary child of the family with no way of inheriting the patriarch position. I was still young so I wandered the martial arts world trying to make a living. I still remember clearly it was winter when I arrived in Donghai City. I was badly injured from fighting off a group of gangsters in order to save a female student and laid on the snow with barely an inch of my life left."

Zoran paused for a moment, looked at Darryl, and smiled. "Your father rescued me at that time. Your

father even took care of me for over two months after I had awakened. During those two months, your father and I immediately hit it off and almost became sworn brothers. However, your grandfather stopped us saying that my origins were unknown."

Darryl smiled wryly seeing Zoran's helpless feelings. Indeed his grandfather was rather stubborn at times.

Zoran continued, "Eventually I recovered and before I left, your father and I made an agreement. Our children will be sworn brothers if they are both males and shall be married if they are of opposite genders..."

"Eventually I had two daughters and my eldest should be married to you," said Zoran followed by loud laughter, "I wonder if Mister Darryl is engaged to anyone at the moment?"

Oh sh*t.

Darryl was immediately stunned upon hearing those words and instinctively took a glance at Lily beside him.

Never did he think his father would have such experiences when he was younger. It was unexpected that Daniel would know such a hidden and important figure.

It was just that...Darryl was utterly embarrassed by

his father's and Zoran's agreement to marry their children with his wife present.

As expected, Lily's expression slowly flushed, and rolled her eyes at Darryl seemingly from anger, but her eyes still contained tenderness for Darryl. It was simply alluring.

Chapter 435

Darryl scratched his head. "Uh... I already have a wife, Sir..."

There was a slight disappointment in Zoran's eyes as he said, "Ah... That's alright. I guess your father must've forgotten about our agreement. We haven't seen each other for over 20 years after all. It takes a lot of effort for us to communicate with one another since technology back then isn't advanced and eventually we drifted apart. Speaking of which, where's your father?"

Darryl scratched his head and smiled. "My parents are in the countryside."

Darryl was speechless after bringing this up. He bought the mansion right next to Mansion No. 001 for his parents to enjoy, but these two old folks complained about lots of things including the lack of the countryside's freedom, and did not even stay for a week.

Darryl had no choice but to let them return.

Zoran nodded his head and solemnly looked at Darryl. "Darryl, by right you should've been my son-in-law due to the agreement between your father

and I, but seeing that you're already married, how about you be my godson instead?"

What?

Zoran wanted Darryl to be his godson?

The surrounding people instantly froze in shock with an uneasy look on their faces. Everyone wanted to have Darryl as their apprentice, but Zoran unexpectedly made his own way and asked Darryl to be his godson.

Darryl scratched his head as he was uncertain how to reject him and simply said, "Sir, I think I'll need my parent's approval before accepting a godfather, right..."

"Give me your father's number. I'll call your father right now," said Zoran.

Zoran really dialed the number which Darryl gave him.

The following scene proved that Zoran and Darryl's father was indeed good old friends. Both of them were happily chatting away for over 10 minutes before Zoran brought up the main topic. He told Daniel he wanted Darryl to be his godson.

Daniel without even thinking said, "Zoran, pass the phone to my son."

Darryl answered the phone and heard his father

shouting from the other side, "Listen here you little brat. You'll be Zoran's godson from today onward, do you understand? Quick, call him Godfather."

"Uh..." Darryl's face was filled with anguish.

What was the meaning of this? Darryl's performance during the Lion Slaughtering Conference was exceptional but what he received was another father...

"You better call him quickly!" Daniel said angrily and was about to lose his patience.

"Godfather," mumbled Darryl begrudgingly. He had no choice but to accept Zoran as his godfather.

Daniel nodded with satisfaction and hung up the phone after hearing his son call Zoran Godfather.

Zoran burst into laughter and patted Darryl's hand. "Son, I'll send someone to bring you to the Carters' residence as our guest once you've fully recovered. Well then, you should get some rest. We won't bother you anymore."

Zoran pulled the Six Sects' members out of the room as he spoke.

"Darryl, consider the Mountain Peak Sect. I'll accept you as my final disciple!"

"Xiaoyao Sect welcomes you too..."

The crowd of people was already at the entrance yet they still turned around and relentlessly threw their offers at Darryl.

...

In a luxurious mansion within Donghai City.

Evelyn flung the fruits on the table to the ground. The servants nearby were all so frightened that they dared not breathe aloud.

Everyone knew Evelyn was in a bad mood and no one dared to offend her.

"The Six Sects claimed to be honorable sects, yet they used such underhanded tactics! Otherwise, how could they capture Grandpa." Evelyn was so angry her chest trembled as she sat on the sofa.

Evelyn's grandfather was her only relative and she could not let anything happen to him!

Ring ring.

At that moment, Evelyn's phone rang.

She answered the call from Circe as she said, " Evelyn, I just received news that Darryl is fine. The principal even handed him the private room key where they imprisoned your grandfather."

What?

Darryl was alive?

Evelyn was stunned and in complete disbelief upon hearing those words.

Darryl's lower energy field was stabbed by that Emei Sect lady on the battle stage.

The energy field was a cultivator's most vital area.

Chapter 436

Darryl should be dead after suffering such a heavy injury. How was he still alright?

Circe's voice continued, "Evelyn, I'll accompany you to meet Darryl. Let's see if we can convince him to let your grandfather go..."

There was a glint in Evelyn's eyes as she softly said, "Circe, thanks for telling me this news. I-I'll go find him myself."

Evelyn hung up the phone before Circe could reply.

Previously, Evelyn made Darryl apologize to her on his knees and even had him wash her feet. He would surely begrudge Evelyn.

Darryl would definitely make things difficult for Evelyn if she were to seek his help.

It would be embarrassing in the event Darryl rejected Evelyn's request in front of Circe.

...

Early the next morning, Lily fed Darryl some porridge before hurriedly leaving for school.

She had already taken two day's leave to care for

Darryl and could no longer delay her lessons.

Darryl felt miserable being at home alone today. He did not even have the energy to relieve himself at the toilet.

According to the Infinite Elixir Manual, Darryl would be extremely weak during the first three days after consuming the Nine Resurrection Pill as the pill was slowly repairing his energy field. However, he would be fully recovered on the fourth day.

Today was already the third day. Darryl only had to endure one more day before returning to his usual active self.

It was noon and Darryl's bladder was already at its limits. At that moment, a sound came from the bedroom door.

Creak.

Darryl thought Lily had returned, but when he was immediately stunned upon looking over.

A beautiful lady with a simply alluring figure walked into the room with an even more eye-catching red hair.

It was Evelyn.

Darryl came to his senses and looked at Evelyn in astonishment. "It's you? What are you doing here?"

Evelyn did not say a single word with her emotionless face. She went toward Darryl and started frisking all over his body.

Circe had told Evelyn that the Hexad School's Principal had given the private room key where they had imprisoned Evelyn's grandfather to Darryl. Once Evelyn found where Darryl lived, she wanted to get the key and leave without talking to him.

Damn!

Darryl was restless upon feeling Evelyn's delicate hands touching all over his body. The constant scent of Evelyn's fragrance made Darryl's mind fall into a daze.

Evelyn eventually stopped after failing to find anything on Darryl. She took a few steps back and stared at him coldly. "Where's the key?"

'This is so frustrating. I can't believe this bastard doesn't have the key on him!' Evelyn thought.

Evelyn blushed at the thought of her hands brushing against Darryl's skin as she was frisking his body.

'Haha, so she's here for the key.'

Darryl could not help but laughed and looked at

Evelyn with a smile. "I've hidden the key away. No one knows where it is other than me. Not even my wife nor my mother-in-law could find it."

Darryl almost died on the battle stage for this key. How could he simply keep it on his body? He had it hidden way beforehand!

Darryl purposely teased Evelyn and said, "Sigh. What you're doing here isn't right, Miss Evelyn. Barging into my room and frisking my body. Could you have taken a fancy for me? Good thing that my wife isn't at home. It'll be terrible if she saw it."

"You..."

Evelyn blushed as she felt a little anxious. "Where did you hide the key?"

'This bastard is pissing me off too much!' Evelyn thought.

Darryl laughed and said, "The world has truly changed. How can one be so assertive when asking for someone else's things?"

'F*ck you. You made me wash your feet in the cafe, recorded it, and even uploaded it all over the internet last time. Now, you come demanding the key from me with such sh*tty attitude. Is this even reasonable?' Darryl thought.

Chapter 437

"I'll ask you once more, where's the key!?" Evelyn flicked her wrist and pulled out a dagger before pressing it against Darryl's neck. "Hand over the key!"

Oh sh*t!

Darryl could feel the blade's coldness against his skin. He could not dodge Evelyn's actions with his current body condition.

Darryl doubled down and said to Evelyn, "Come on, kill me then. Once I'm dead, Emei Sect will be dealing with your grandfather. There'll be no hope for you to save your grandfather at that time."

"You're still so stubborn!" Evelyn lightly pushed the dagger against Darryl's neck and left a bloodied line.

"Come on, do it," said Darryl coldly. He was certain Evelyn would not kill him!

"You..." Evelyn bit her lip and kept the dagger upon hearing Darryl's words before saying to him in a gentler tone, "Darryl, could you please give me the key?"

Darryl felt pleased as this was his first time hearing

Evelyn talking in such a gentle manner. He smiled, looked at her, and said, "Finally some sincerity."

Evelyn quickly grabbed an apple and a fruit knife beside Darryl as he finished his sentence. "How about I peel an apple for you?"

'When did Evelyn become so submissive? This is probably her first time peeling fruit for someone, such sincerity!'

However, Darryl still shook his head and smiled. "I don't feel like eating."

'This bastard!' Evelyn scolded internally.

She anxiously stomped her feet and said, "What exactly do you want?"

Darryl did not say a word and simply checked her out with a smile. He looked at Evelyn from top to bottom with a sly grin on his face.

Evelyn looked young, pretty, and was simply alluring today wearing a pair of black jeans and a sweatshirt.

'This bastard... What does he want?' Evelyn thought.

Darryl's stare made Evelyn shy and angry as though her entire body was trapped under his gaze. However, she could not afford to get mad under such circumstances and simply endured.

Darryl was filled with smiles. Evelyn previously made things difficult for Darryl when he wanted the Heart of the Ocean. How could he so easily give her the key now?

Darryl retracted his gaze and softly said, "I can give you the key, but...first I need to pee."

Although Darryl was a shameless man, he still slightly blushed after saying those words.

Darryl had been holding his pee for the whole day and was about to burst if he continued holding any longer.

Evelyn blushed and rudely said, "Then go! Why are you telling me this?"

"Miss Evelyn, can't you see? How am I supposed to go when I can barely move?" The smile on Darryl's face widened as he continued, "Didn't you want to prove your sincerity? Now's your chance so help me to the washroom."

What?

Evelyn was stunned as she stared at Darryl with embarrassment and anger.

'I can't believe this bastard wants me to accompany him into the washroom. How shameless can he be!? How could I agree to such an embarrassing thing!'

Evelyn thought.

Darryl was not worried the least when he felt Evelyn 's anger and slowly said, "I've given you a chance, but since you're still unwilling then you may leave. I 'll go to the washroom when my wife is back. Please close the door on your way out."

"You!"

Evelyn was downright mad. She could not believe such a shameless man could exist!

However, were she to refuse there would be no other way for her to obtain the key. Evelyn was raging with embarrassment and only wanted to kill this bastard at that moment.

"Hey, I can't hold it much longer. Are you helping me or not?" Darryl exclaimed loudly.

Darryl was not faking it, he truly could not hold it much longer!

Evelyn took a deep breath from seething with anger. "Fine, give me the key once I help you to the washroom!"

Darryl indifferently said, "Maybe I'll give you the key when my mood is good once you've helped me to the washroom, but I might also not give it to you when my mood is bad. What's certain is that I definitely won't be giving you the key if you don't

help me to the washroom."

Darryl's words made Evelyn utterly angered. She wanted to retort, but Darryl had already closed his eyes in a smug manner before she could. She could only stomp her feet toward Darryl and said, "Fine, fine, I'll help you."

Chapter 438

Evelyn helped Darryl up as she spoke.

"Hey, you can't just hold onto my arms. You need to wrap an arm around my waist, else how am I supposed to walk?" Darryl mumbled as he carefully got down the bed while trying hard not to reopen his wound.

Evelyn held her anger back as she gently wrapped her arm around Darryl's waist while supporting him with her other arm.

Step by step...

They eventually arrived at the toilet with Evelyn blushing with her eyes shut.

However, she did not hear any activity sounds after a while.

Evelyn curiously opened her eyes and saw Darryl staring at her with a cheeky grin on his face.

'Why hasn't this bastard settled his business? What is he staring at me for?'

Evelyn felt annoyed, lost the flirtatious attitude from before, and softly said, "What's up with you?"

Darryl smiled helplessly. "How am I supposed to

pee with my pants on? I dare not move my arm. Can you help me...unzip my pants...?"

Evelyn blushed again upon hearing Darryl's words as she exclaimed, "How about you go to hell? I'm not doing it!"

'Such a nasty bastard!' thought Evelyn.

"Come on, do you want the key or not?" said Darryl hopelessly.

Evelyn took a deep breath as she tried keeping her emotions calm. After some deliberation, she bit the bullet and slowly unzipped Darryl's pants...

Evelyn could feel her face becoming completely red.

Darryl let out a long breath as he prepared to go about his business. However, he could not continue with a woman beside him!

"I-I can't pee..." Darryl felt devastated.

"You bastard! Are you just messing around?" Evelyn said coldly. She was angered beyond measure.

'Didn't he say he couldn't hold it any longer? Now he's saying he can't pee. This bastard is clearly doing it on purpose,' thought Evelyn.

Evelyn's body trembled with rage and felt like just kicking him into the toilet.

Darryl's face remained indifferent. "It's fine. We'll just stay here since you refuse to help."

"You!"

Evelyn was about to burst as a murderous intent emanated from her body.

However, she relented the next moment. Evelyn pursed her lips and whistled under Darryl's smiling gaze.

"Phweet... Phweet..."

"You're too soft, I'm not getting a reaction." Darryl laughed as he teased her.

"Phweeeeeeeeeeeeet..."

"Alright, alright." Darryl finally managed to relax and go about his business.

Darryl returned and laid back down on the bed with Evelyn's support. At that moment, Evelyn was utterly flushed with her face turned as red as a tomato.

Huff.

This bastard was finally done.

Evelyn was inexplicably embarrassed by what just happened.

The whole ordeal in the washroom with this

bastard only took a few minutes, but it felt like years to Evelyn!

Chapter 439

Evelyn regained her composure and without looking at Darryl said to him, "Can you hand over the key now?"

"Definitely!" Darryl laughed as he felt refreshed, laid on the bed, and smiled at her before continuing, "But you must first call me good Big Brother."

"What did you say?" Evelyn's expression instantly changed and looked like she was about to snap.

How could Evelyn call him such a name!?

"You bastard, do you wanna die?" Evelyn said as she gritted her teeth.

Darryl did not say a single word and simply smiled with a smug expression.

Evelyn clenched her fist, yet she could not express her anger at Darryl. She bit her lips and exclaimed, " Good... Good..."

Evelyn's face blushed even before finishing her words.

'This bastard!' Evelyn scolded in her mind. She relented and struggled for a moment before

ultimately softly saying, "Good... Good Big Brother! Is this enough?"

Darryl was pleased as the smile on his face intensified upon hearing Evelyn calling him that. " You're such a good little sister. Come, this time call me the Best Big Brother."

Today was a rare opportunity and Darryl planned to take advantage of it.

What?

Evelyn stared angrily at Darryl with her puffed up chest and trembling body. She looked like she was about to explode.

'I gave this bastard an inch and he wants a mile!'

Evelyn loathed Darryl immensely but she still shouted, "Best Big Brother..."

Darryl was still unconvinced by Evelyn's performance.

Even though Evelyn had called Darryl that, he felt she was still angry. He laid in a comfortable position, shook his head, and said, "I'm still quite unsatisfied with it. How about you call me both those names at once?"

"You..."

Evelyn's body trembled as she pointed at Darryl and

shouted, "Darryl, you're crossing the line here!"

'First Good Big Brother then Best Big Brother. Do I have to call him hubby next?' Evelyn thought.

"Crossing the line?"

Darryl laughed as he stared at Evelyn directly in the eyes. "I won't be crossing the line as much as you did. You made me wash your feet in front of so many people. I believe I'm already quite lenient with you considering there's only the two of us here."

Darryl's face was indifferent as he loosened his shoulder and continued, "It's up to you whether you want to say it or not. I'm not forcing you."

Evelyn was stunned, angry, and helpless but she finally relented and softly said, "Good Big Brother... Best Big Brother... Are you satisfied now? Quickly hand over the key!"

Darryl felt content and relaxed as though his bones were melting. Evelyn truly called him nicely.

Darryl enjoyed the moment and nodded his head smilingly. "Seeing such sincerity from you, alright then. Come find me tomorrow morning. We'll go to the Hexad School together."

Tomorrow?

Evelyn was shocked and stared fiercely at Darryl. "

What's the meaning of this? Why tomorrow?"

Darryl calmly looked at Evelyn and smiled. "Why are you looking at me like that? Don't forget that your grandfather is imprisoned within the Hexad School. You won't be able to leave together and can only look at him even if I give you the key."

Darryl lazily stretched his body and continued, "So there's no point in giving you the key now. Come with me tomorrow and I'll get your grandfather out."

Sigh...

Evelyn sighed deeply. She felt like exploding and was left speechless. "Why didn't you say that earlier?"

Evelyn would not have entertained Darryl today if she knew that earlier!

She first went to the washroom with him then had to call him Best Big Brother...

Darryl had a shameless wicked look on his face as he shrugged before saying, "Well, you didn't ask. You just barged in and asked for the key. Moreover, you're the one begging for it. I didn't force you to do anything."

"You!"

Evelyn's face flushed as she could not retort against

Darryl. "Fine, I'll kill you if you dare mess with me again tomorrow."

Evelyn huffed, stomped away, and left the room once she had finished her words.

...

The next morning.

Chapter 440

Darryl enjoyed his breakfast under Lily's care.

Darryl's appetite was great as a result of those joyous feelings yesterday from messing with Evelyn. He even slept soundly the previous night and woke up feeling refreshed.

The Infinite Elixir Manual was very true. He was now fully recovered after three days since taking the Nine Resurrection Pill.

Darryl took a shower after Lily left for school. He heard the door open as soon as he finished bathing and putting on a change of clothes with Evelyn hastily walking in.

"I'm warning you, don't mess with me today. Quickly get me to my grandfather," said Evelyn coldly as she dragged Darryl to the Hexad School.

Evelyn would forever remember the humiliation she suffered yesterday from Darryl.

Darryl allowed Evelyn to drag him all the way to the Hexad School's entrance.

"Alright, alright, we're at the entrance now. Stop dragging me... It's not like I can run away..." Darryl

mumbled.

Darryl sighed as he spoke.

It was recess and students were wandering all over the school. How could Darryl bring Evelyn in whose red hair stood out so much?

Darryl helplessly shook his head and said to Evelyn, "How about...you wait for me outside?"

It would not be a big deal if the students saw Evelyn. However, it would be hard to explain if she was spotted by the school's officials.

"No, I must go with you. Don't even think about messing with me." Evelyn resolutely stared at Darryl with no room for discussion.

After what happened yesterday, Darryl was an absolute bastard in Evelyn's eyes.

She would not believe a word from him ever again.

Darryl smiled wryly and said, "Fine, but you have to follow my lead once we're inside. Otherwise, don't even think about going in with me."

Evelyn agreed. She would follow Darryl's plans as long as it would get her to her grandfather.

"Tie up your hair and put on a cap," said Darryl impatiently.

A red-haired person walking around the school

would be too obvious.

Evelyn followed Darryl's words.

There was a private room in the Hexad School. The purpose of this private room was to serve as a detention room for students who broke school rules.

Zion was imprisoned in that room!

This private room was located right behind the academic building. Darryl brought Evelyn along through the building. They heard a rather unfriendly voice coming from nearby as they approached the stairs, "Oh my, isn't that Darryl? Tsk, tsk, I didn't believe you're still alive. You're truly a lucky man."

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows and turned around.

Kent stood there smilingly with a few followers behind him.

'Damn it, why do I meet this idiot everywhere I go?' Darryl thought.

Darryl looked at Kent with a smile and said, "Yeah, I 'm quite helpless about it as well. I couldn't die even after suffering such a heavy injury. Are you jealous?"

Kent's expression stiffened and had nothing to retort his discontented feelings. At that moment,

he noticed Evelyn and laughed, "Oh, who's this? Your outstanding performance during the Lion Slaughtering Conference must have attracted this beauty. Women these days are so easily impressed ..."

Kent's followers laughed along upon hearing his words.

Although Evelyn had shown herself during the Lion Slaughtering Conference, the cap which covered her red hair had changed her appearance which was why Kent and his gang could not recognize her.

Evelyn's expression was unpleasant upon hearing their ridicule. Kent and his gang would be long dead if she still had her temper. However, she could only put up with it today because she was here to rescue her grandfather.

Darryl glanced at Kent and slowly said, "You're mistaken. She's my personal maid. Isn't she pretty?"

Darryl was merely pretending in addition to using this opportunity and teased Evelyn.

What?

Personal maid?

Kent and his gang were stunned in disbelief.

Who would believe such a beautiful person was only

a personal maid?

They were doubtful by what Darryl said which led to him turning toward Evelyn and said, "Come on, call me Master."

"You!" Evelyn was so enraged that her chest trembled along with her face instantly flushed. She was extremely humiliated and angered!

'This bastard is taking it too far!'

Never mind that Darryl wanted Evelyn to call him Good Big Brother and Best Big Brother, but now he was trying to take a mile after being given an inch.

Chapter 441

Evelyn was furious from the slowly built up rage in her body and wanted to slap Darryl!

However, it would be suspicious if she defied Darryl now given the circumstances.

Evelyn struggled for a moment but alas she relented and obediently exclaimed, "M... Master."

Darryl nodded his head in content. "Good, let's go."

Darryl then walked toward the private room direction without looking back at Kent and his gang with Evelyn closely following.

'Damn.'

'She's really Darryl's maid. Isn't she too pretty to be a maid?'

Kent and his gang were frozen on the spot and dumbfoundedly looked on as the two of them walked further away. It took them a moment before regaining their senses.

Kent was particularly stared intensely at Evelyn's beautiful figure from the back as his heart was filled with envy and hatred for Darryl.

'Motherf*cker. I can't believe a piece of trash like

Darryl will have such a classy maid. I won't mind losing a few years of my life for her to be mine!' Kent thought.

...

Darryl surveyed his surroundings to ensure there was no one around when they arrived at the private room's entrance. He then said to Evelyn, "Stay here, I'll go get your grandfather."

Evelyn was suddenly worried. "Why should I stay here?"

Darryl had pranked her a few times yesterday and just now took advantage of her again. Evelyn wanted payback!

Darryl smiled and nonchalantly said, "You have to stay here and keep an eye out of course. This is the Hexad School. What will happen if someone comes here? In addition, you promised you would listen to everything I say once we entered school."

Evelyn felt reluctant but eventually, she stomped her feet and went with Darryl's plan.

Darryl did not say another word and directly headed into the private room.

Clang!

Darryl heard the loud and sharp clanking of metal

chains just as he entered the room.

The private room was not big with about only 100 square feet and Zion was completely immobile from being chained onto a pole in the middle of the room.

Zion's hair was messy and his clothes were tattered. The Eternal Life Palace Sect's Golden Lion was in such a destitute state with his glorious past demeanor all gone.

"Mister Featherstone?" Darryl looked at Zion and softly greeted him.

Zion lifted his head and stared fiercely at Darryl before he coldly said, "So you're the Lion Slaughtering Conference Champion?"

Darryl nodded and smiled. "Exactly. My name's Darryl Darby. Nice to meet you, Mister Featherstone."

Clang!

Zion struggled against the chains before furrowing his eyebrows at Darryl. "Don't try to flatter me, you little brat. If you're looking for the scripture, I recommend you to give up. Kill me, torture me, or do whatever you want!"

Zion let out a long and resigned sigh. "Who will have thought that Zion Featherstone, one of the world's greatest warriors would fall in the hands of

a nameless brat."

Darryl felt touched by Zion's fearless attitude when facing death.

This old master was truly bold as he would rather die than yield.

It was no wonder he was one of Eternal Life Palace Sect's Four Guardian Kings. What a brave man!

Darryl looked at Zion smilingly. "Old Master, don't be so agitated. Why will I want to kill you? I'm here to get you out."

What?

Zion was shocked as he sized up Darryl and followed with a burst of laughter. "Don't mess with me, little brat. I've been in the martial arts world for decades. There's nothing I've not seen before. You're just pretending to get the scripture, do you think I'll fall for it?"

Darryl was speechless seeing Zion did not believe him. He then took out a silver token and waved it in front of Zion. "Old Master, just like you I'm from the Eternal Life Palace Sect. This is my identity token."

This token was given to Darryl by Chester before he left.

"You..."

Zion was stunned as he looked at Darryl with disbelief. "You... You're Donghai City's Hall Master?"

Previously, Chester had announced there was a new candidate for Donghai City's Hall Master, but Zion did not know who it was. Never did he expect this young brat would be him.

Chapter 442

Darryl nodded his head. "Indeed, that's me and not just so. In fact, the White-Fanned Military Adviser —Chester Wilson and I are sworn-brothers."

What?

Zion was shocked when he heard those words.

Chester was the highest authority directly beneath the Eternal Life Palace Sect's Sect Master. His position was right below the Sect Master, but above thousands in the Sect. Even the Four Guardian Kings had to greet him with respect.

It was hard to believe this brat in front of Zion was the White-Fanned Military Adviser's sworn brother!

Zion's sadness immediately turned to joy as he laughed. "After all this time, it turns out you're one of us. I must have been seen as a joke to you just now."

Darryl waved his hand. "Besides that, Old Master Featherstone, do you remember you had bought a Godly Pill during Roger's Auction? I was the person who saved you when the pill lost its effectiveness and caused your poisoning. You were unconscious, that's why you didn't see me."

"You..." At that moment, Zion's face was filled with gratitude!

Darryl laughed as he walked toward Zion and released his acupoints.

Zion started moving his muscles with his regained freedom as cracking sounds could be heard all over his body. A powerful aura instantly emanated from him!

'Damn, this Old Master has such strength!' Darryl was secretly surprised.

Zion had just ascended to the rank of Level Five Master General during Roger's Auction, but after just two months he has now become a Level Five Martial Marquis! His cultivation speed was truly terrifying!

It was no wonder the Golden Lion's title caused every cultivator to tremble in fear!

While Darryl was still in shock, Zion went toward him and shook his hand with gratitude. "Thank you so much for saving me, Mister Darryl. You have my eternal gratitude. I'll be sure to visit you at the Hall and give you my thanks once I've fully recovered."

Darryl waved his hand. "Old Master Featherstone, there's still one important matter. Don't tell anyone about my position in the Eternal Life Palace

Sect, not even to your granddaughter. I'm still a student in the Hexad School after all..."

"Don't worry Mister Darryl, I won't mention this to anyone!"

Darryl nodded and went into the main topic. "Old Master Featherstone, you have the Supreme Mystery Scripture according to the Six Sects. Is this true?"

Zion smiled upon hearing Darryl's words and proudly said, "It's true. If not why would they organize such a large joint attack to capture me?"

Zion then used his internal energy to shatter the chains before continuing, "But why will I be carrying such an important item with me? I've hidden the scripture at an obscure location. Mister Darryl, you've rescued me twice. You should have the scripture which I hid at the outskirts of Donghai City."

What?

The outskirts?

Darryl was stunned for a moment with a little uneasy and shocked.

'This Old Master is truly brave. I can't believe he simply hid such an important item.'

Zion continued again, "There's a valley in the

mountains toward the north of Donghai City. There's a stone ruin in this valley. Look toward the northeast once you're there and the scripture will be under the third stone pillar..."

"Stone ruin, third stone pillar." Darryl quietly uttered the location and remembered it. He then smiled at Zion and said, "Thank you, Old Master Featherstone."

'The scripture is almost at hand. I can finally report back to the Cult Mistress!' Darryl could not help but smile when he thought of the Cult Mistress.

Darryl and Zion left the private room after 10 minutes.

Evelyn who was still waiting outside grew impatient. She was extremely cheerful and excited the moment she saw Zion and immediately held onto his arm and exclaimed, "Grandpa..."

Evelyn then remembered she was still in the Hexad School which was under the Six Sects' influence and quickly covered her mouth. Her behavior indeed was adorable.

"That's enough. We shouldn't stay here for long. Let's quickly leave," said Darryl as he walked toward the school's entrance.

Darryl finally stopped when they left the school and

entered a secluded alley. "Old Master Featherstone, it should be safe here. You may leave now."

Zion nodded his head and was about to speak but Evelyn interrupted by stepping forward and said coldly, "Alright, my grandfather is safe now. You can piss off."

'Damn. She's kicking me away the moment she gets what she wanted,' thought Darryl.

Chapter 443

Darryl shrugged his shoulders and left. He had no time to argue with Evelyn as he had more important matters at hand which was to obtain the scripture!

Zion looked toward Evelyn after seeing Darryl was long gone and softly reprimanded her. "Evelyn, Mister Darryl has saved my life twice. How can you be so rude to him?"

Evelyn raised her eyebrows and coldly snorted. " Grandpa, this man is a bastard. I'm already behaving rather politely to him just now."

In just over a day, this bastard had ordered Evelyn around and humiliated her numerous times.

The worst part was Evelyn had even accompanied him into the washroom.

Evelyn would never forget the humiliation she suffered for the rest of her life.

She wanted to kill Darryl were it not for the fact her grandfather needed to rest after being released. Darryl should consider himself lucky that Evelyn let him go!

Evelyn would get her payback eventually!

...

In the mountains north of Donghai City.

Darryl was walking along the forest path on this huge mountain alone while being accompanied by the sounds of insects and birds around him.

The sky was dark and looked like it was about to rain, but the weather was still rather hot.

"Come on, quickly rain..." Darryl wiped the sweat off his head. The weather was simply too hot and Darryl hoped for the rain to fall quickly so he could cool off. Darryl felt a little dejected at the moment as he thought the place Zion mentioned would be easy to find, but he found that it was really difficult upon his arrival.

'Damn it, these mountains are huge. How am I supposed to find the valley?'

Darryl complained as he walked through the bunch of trees in front of him and his eyes suddenly became wide open!

Darryl had found the stone ruin!

He instantly smiled upon seeing the scenery before his eyes and hastened his steps. Zion was right. There really was a stone ruin in the valley!

These must have been an ancient palace that

collapsed and only these stone pillars ruins remained.

Darryl felt as though he had stepped into the past upon arriving at the location.

"These carving techniques and art on the pillars resemble the ancient Tang Dynasty..."

Darryl took a look around and mumbled to himself. He then walked toward the northeast location Zion mentioned where the scripture was hidden.

'One, two, three. This is the third pillar. The scripture should be right here.'

Darryl knelt down and pulled out a package wrapped in oilpaper from a crack beneath the pillar. He was instantly ecstatic upon opening up the package!

It was a yellow-covered book with the words Supreme Mystery Scripture written on it.

The scripture gave Darryl a quaint feeling and a single look was enough to determine its authenticity. Darryl finally had it at hand.

Darryl suddenly recalled the Eternal Life Palace Sect had given a fake scripture to the

Cult Master during his birthday upon seeing its yellow cover. The fake volume also had a yellow cover.

Darryl's hands trembled as he proceeded to open the scripture without a second thought.

The Supreme Mystery Scripture contained a huge secret. Anyone who managed to discover it would be able to unify and control the martial arts world. This was a treasure greatly desired by numerous cultivators!

No one could resist reading the scripture and Darryl was no different!

However, Darryl felt disappointed as there was nothing interesting in the scripture at all. It was filled with famous Taoist quotes and not a single martial art technique.

'Damn it, where's the secret? Could it be that I have to collect all seven volumes to see it?'

Boom!

At that moment, a thunderbolt appeared followed by the downpour of rain.

'It's finally raining. The heat is killing me!' Darryl complained in his mind as he quickly wrapped up the scripture and looked for shelter.

It was at that moment Darryl was suddenly stunned!

He noticed to his surprise that some writings had appeared on the first stone pillar after it was

drenched by the rain!

'Damn, there's actually words on this stone pillar?'

Darryl was curious and he walked to the stone pillar for a proper look.

'Three, I, two, sky, mountain, scripture, king... What 's the meaning of this? These words make no sense! Perhaps it needs to be rearranged?'

Darryl was deep in thought as he stared at the stone pillars forgetting to blink.

Chapter 444

Darryl had been looking at the words for over 10 minutes with his body soaking wet from the pouring rain before finally making progress!

"I get it! These stone pillars are arranged in the order of the Nine Division Eight Trigrams!" Darryl exclaimed as he slapped his thigh!

Previously, Darryl had studied The Geomancy of Yin and Yang where the Nine Division Eight Trigrams' order was recorded in it. The order was Heaven, Earth, Wind, Thunder, Water, Fire, Mountain, and Lake!

Everything started making sense when Darryl read the words on the pillars in this order!

Darryl attentively read those words while being careful not to miss a single one!

Written on those pillars was a unique cultivation method!

"This technique is immeasurably advanced and once practiced to the highest level, one will have the powers to reverse Heaven and Earth... This technique is called the Grand Destruction Art!"

Darryl read out the sentence and could not help but

swallow his saliva!

Never did Darryl think he could blindly stumble upon a technique! Seems like he was not drenched in vain!

'The pillars' words mentioned that at its highest level, the Grand Destruction Art would be able to reverse Heaven and Earth. How was that even possible? Was this technique really that powerful?' Guided by his curiosity, Darryl sat cross-legged on the ground and followed the instructions recorded on the pillars. He slowly channeled his internal energy and started cultivating...

Darryl subconsciously lost himself in the cultivation and could not even hear the heavy rain and roaring thunder!

There were three levels to the Grand Destruction Art!

A technique would be learned upon mastering each level!

The technique learned in the first level the Single Finger Wonder.

The second level would be the Mountainous River Art.

At the third and highest level was the Celestial Rotation!

The rain became heavier as time slowly passed. Darryl was completely drenched by this time.

After an unknown amount of time, Darryl suddenly opened his eyes and roared toward the sky!

Roar!

The first level was successfully mastered!

Darryl smiled and at the same time felt strange energies coming from his energy field which was spreading across his entire body! This was the prelude to an ascension!

Just as Darryl thought so, he felt his internal energy slowly rising!

Level Three Master General, Level Four Master General!

Darryl almost leaped up in ecstasy! He did not just master the first level. He even ascended two levels!

The Grand Destruction Art was truly terrifying! Darryl could only master the first level, the Single Finger Wonder with his current understanding.

No matter what Darryl did, he could not master the second and third level! He then took out his phone and snapped photos of the stone pillars' secret technique. He would slowly master it when he returned home.

After Darryl took the pictures, he destroyed the pillars using the Ascension of the Nine Dragons!

Darryl guessed that this ruin could have belonged to an ancient sect which eventually declined and disappeared.

This cultivation method was the only item left and Darryl considered himself lucky to have stumbled upon this technique. However, this technique was too powerful and the consequences would be disastrous if it fell into the wrong hands, therefore the best solution was to destroy the pillars.

Crack...

Almost a hundred of those pillars crumbled into dust from the Ascension of the Nine Dragons' power.

Darryl let out a satisfied smile upon seeing this scene and left.

He hailed a cab returning to the city and told the driver he wanted to go to Milan Mall.

Milan Mall was an exceptionally popular mall in Donghai City where fancy and expensive goods were sold.

Darryl wanted to buy a set of new clothes as he was quite dirty and completely drenched by the rain.

The cab driver was very friendly as he smiled at Darryl upon seeing how soaking wet he was and said, "Young man, where have you been? You're completely drenched by the rain."

"I just came back from the outskirts and have nowhere to shelter against the rain," said a smiling Darryl.

The driver handed Darryl a towel. "Wipe yourself with my towel. You don't want to catch a cold."

"Thank you, sir..." Darryl felt a warmth in his heart as he took the towel and wiped himself.

The driver smiled and nodded. "Good thing you met me. The Young family's young lady is getting married today and traffic in Donghai City is jammed up. Most of the cabs are taking a break with only a few of them still working..."

Darryl laughed. "The Young family's young lady is getting married? Which Young family?"

The driver laughed and replied, "Which Young family could it be? Aren't you from around here? The only Young family in Donghai City is the very family that owns the antique business. Their lady that's getting married is none other than Yvonne Young."

Chapter 445

"Sir, you must be kidding."

Darryl could not help but laugh and said to the driver, "Yvonne is my friend. How could she get married if she doesn't even have a boyfriend?"

"Huh? She's your friend?" The driver turned his head around and glanced at Darryl before sighed.

'This guy is wearing such cheap clothes. How could he know Miss Yvonne?' thought the driver.

"Look out the window," said the driver.

Darryl looked out the window and he was instantly dumbfounded!

The cab was now on a bustling road that had hot-air balloons hovering every 20 meters at the sides of the road. On each of these hot-air balloons hung banners that were over 10 meters long!

The words on the banners were especially eye-catching as they billowed in the sky!

"Today is Miss Yvonne Young and Mister Jeremy Langley's joyous wedding day. Wishing them a lifetime of love and happiness!"

Darryl's mind went blank in an instant!

"You can see for yourself that I'm not lying to you, am I?" said the driver helplessly as he sighed. "I don 't even know what Miss Yvonne is thinking. She has so many suitors yet she chose Jeremy. How could this playboy be suitable for Miss Yvonne..."

"Stop, stop the car!" Darryl suddenly shouted as though he went mad!

Screech.

The tires screeching were heard as the driver abruptly braked and Darryl quickly tossed the driver a hundred bucks before leaving the cab. He then took out his cellphone and called Yvonne!

Darryl did not beat around the bush when the call connected and exclaimed, "Yvonne, it's me! Why are you marrying Jeremy? You could marry anyone you wanted so why did you have to marry him!?"

Jeremy Langley was notorious in Donghai City! Everyone knew he was a playboy!

Yvonne bit her lip and held back the pain in her heart. She gently laughed and tried to speak with a relaxed tone. "Yup, I'm getting married soon. Make sure you attend the wedding reception."

"What wedding reception? I don't want it!" Darryl felt a buzz in his mind as he clenched his fists. "Tell me why are you marrying Jeremy? Tell me right

now!"

"I... I want to marry him so don't ask me these questions..." Yvonne tried to control her tone, but Darryl could feel what she said was not her true feelings!

"Yvonne, tell me. Are you in trouble, that's why you had no choice but to marry him? Tell me and I'll help you out, alright?" Darryl choked with a hoarse voice!

At that moment, Yvonne could not hold it any longer and cried out, "Darryl, stop talking. You can't help me, no one can. I'm marrying Jeremy on my own accord."

"On your own accord? I don't believe you! Tell me the truth!" Darryl's eyes were red as he started flaring up.

Yvonne's distressed voice came from the other side of the phone as Darryl finished his words! "Jeremy gave me a Nine Resurrection Pill in exchange for marrying him..."

It felt like time instantly froze!

What?

Darryl was stunned for a few seconds as he stood there in shock!

It turned out that Yvonne had paid such a high price

to obtain the Nine Resurrection Pill...

"Yvonne, you're willing to sacrifice a lifetime of happiness just to save me. How could you be so stupid?"

Chapter 446

Darryl's eyes were completely red as he spoke.

At that moment, Yvonne could no longer control her emotions and started crying. "Yes, I'm stupid! I'm stupid for liking you. I know that you have a wife, but you're always on my mind. You're always on my mind regardless if I'm sleeping, eating or whatever I 'm doing..."

Yvonne completely revealed the feelings she hid in her heart for a long time to Darryl!

She felt that it was inappropriate to say it before. However, she was going to get married soon and all her emotions came pouring out in an instant as tears covered her face!

Yvonne's eyes were red from crying. "Darryl, did you know? I'm willing to give up anything for you. I 'm willing to sacrifice a lifetime of happiness if you can live... For you, I'm even willing to marry someone I don't like!"

Darryl's mind went blank as he heard Yvonne's unrestrained confession. His arm went stiff holding his phone.

Both fell eerily silent.

After some time, Yvonne choked and said, "Darryl, I love you, but we're not meant to be together. So please give me your blessings..."

'Blessing? How the f*ck can I bless you!' Darryl thought angrily.

Darryl panted as he said, "Yvonne, don't worry, I'll return the Nine Resurrection Pill that Jeremy gave you. Will that work?"

If Yvonne were to marry Jeremy, she would regret it her whole life!

Yvonne wiped her tears and said, "Darryl, don't be stupid and stop talking nonsense! The Nine Resurrection Pill is one of the rarest medicinal elixir pills with its refinement method lost for centuries. The Langley's probably had one of the last few pills in this world. Where would you find such a rare pill? Let's calm down and accept reality."

Click!

The call ended as Yvonne finished her words.

...

Donghai City's Langley Manor.

Langley Manor was a private manor which belonged to the Langley's. It had an antiquity style with a spacious pavilion along with man-made hills and

rivers. The elegant and refined environment was exceptionally lively today.

Reason being today was Jeremy's and Yvonne's wedding day and the ceremony was being held at the manor.

The Langley Manor was brightly lit and colorfully decorated! Luxury cars lined up outside the manor which almost filled up the entire street!

The manor was extremely crowded with more than ten thousand people in attendance!

Almost all Donghai City's prominent families had come to the manor!

Besides that, Jeremy became the Tianshan Sect's Deputy Head, Zachary Hume's apprentice last September. Zachary pampered his apprentice a lot and was tremendously happy with his apprentice's marriage. He had invited many famous warriors to attend the wedding!

Zachary was after all Tianshan Sect's Deputy Head and had vast personal connections. Therefore, many esteemed cultivators came to celebrate Jeremy 's wedding as well. Jeremy's and Yvonne's wedding were more lively and grand in comparison to the Lion Slaughtering Conference!

An average joe would never see such a scene in their

lifetime.

As a result, numerous city's residents excitedly surrounded the manor with hopes of catching a glimpse.

There was a giant sea of flowers in front of the manor's main hall. All of them were imported roses of a special breed with its flowery scent permeating the air around the manor.

In the middle of the manor Yvonne's father, Kingston and Jeremy's father, Timothy sat atop the two thrones. Timothy's face was filled with smiles as he was happy that his son was getting married today.

What made Timothy even happier was that so many esteemed guests attended the wedding. He was proud of the fact that even the Six Sects' elites were here!

Chapter 447

Thousands of lounges were set up below the wedding stage with those sitting in front were elders and elites from every martial arts world's major sects. Master Leonard, Master Reed, Abbess Mother Serendipity, and even the principal of Hexad School, Graham was there.

Besides that, members of prominent families attended as well with Kent, Zayler, Justin, and William also attending the wedding.

This wedding was Donghai City's most spectacular display!

All the guests were ready to witness this beautiful moment with smiles on their faces. Several patriarchs even went up to congratulate the two parents.

"My heartfelt congratulations to Mister Young and Mister Langley!"

"Indeed, it's a big deal in Donghai City that your families are tying the knot."

Kingston laughed with his mouth wide open from unable to contain his happiness.

Kingston had been worried about his daughter's

marital affairs for quite some time now. Yvonne was a dignified young lady and yet she did not have a boyfriend. She was even obsessed with the live-in son-in-law, Darryl.

Jeremy was several times better than Darryl, therefore Kingston was glad and at ease with his daughter marrying into the Langley family.

At that moment, an emcee jubilantly walked onto the stage with a microphone in hand and loudly said, "Alright everyone, may I have your attention please! Now's the time we invite our bride and groom onto the stage!"

Boom boom boom!

A display of fireworks erupted as soon as he finished his words!

Several little children started tossing flower petals into the air. At that moment, the entire manor was tremendously gorgeous.

Jeremy held Yvonne's hand as they slowly walked out from the main hall under the crowd's gaze.

Everyone felt refreshed during such a joyous occasion!

Jeremy wore a red suit and was handsome beyond measure.

However, the crowd's gaze was affixed at Yvonne.

Wow!

The whole venue was in an uproar when Yvonne stepped out! Several men's eyes widened and became mesmerized while the ladies looked on with envy.

Yvonne was simply too beautiful.

Yvonne wore a red silk wedding gown that showed off her sexy figure with the red translucent veil above her head partially hiding her delicate face. She looked like a goddess among mortals with her incomparable beauty.

The only unpleasant thing was Yvonne's forceful smile. However, everyone paid no mind to it under such a lively atmosphere.

"F*ck, this brat Jeremy is such a lucky bastard. I can't believe he could marry a beauty like Yvonne."

"Indeed, this brat is truly lucky."

"If I have to spend the rest of my life in a wheelchair to marry such a beauty, I'd still think it's worth it."

Some of Jeremy's rotten friends quietly discussed among themselves as they gazed upon Yvonne's body to the point of salivating.

Yvonne was truly a beauty who married a beast!

Everyone else felt the same way but none said it out.

The Langleys were after all a prominent family in Donghai City. Moreover, Jeremy was the Tianshan Sect's Deputy Head's apprentice. He had a bright future and no one dared to offend him.

Jeremy pulled Yvonne's hand as they slowly walked through the flower arches and stepped onto the stage under everyone's eyes. Jeremy's excitement to marry his beloved woman was obvious and he was at the peak of his life!

The emcee let out a laugh and surveyed his surroundings upon seeing the couple on stage. " Ladies and gentlemen! The entire Donghai City is celebrating this auspicious day! Mister Jeremy and Miss Yvonne will be married soon. Just look at them, they are a match made in heaven! On behalf of everyone present today, I wish both of you my most sincere blessings. May you have eternal love and happiness together."

The whole manor burst into applause as soon as the emcee finished his words!

The emcee signaled everyone to settle down by waving his hand before looking at the time and shouted, "Alright, it's time to invite the bride and groom for the wedding ceremony!"

Chapter 448

"Yeah!" cheered the crowd below the stage.

Even the stoic cultivators were influenced by the atmosphere and looked at the stage with expectancy.

"The first bow is to the Heavens and Earth!" exclaimed the emcee loudly.

Jeremy and Yvonne walked to the front of the stage and bowed toward the crowd three times.

"Yeah!" The crowd cheered again with a few rich kids even standing up and whistled.

"Second bow as a respect to the elders!"

Jeremy looked at Yvonne deeply as he held her hand and slowly walked toward their fathers before bowing. At that moment, both their fathers were extremely happy and smiling with satisfaction and affection.

"Finally bow to respect each other!" shouted the emcee. He was exceedingly enthusiastic as if he was the one getting married.

At that moment, the guests were all cheering with laughter! Those especially close to Jeremy shouted

even louder!

"Come on and get it over with. It's time to enter the bridal chamber."

"We're all waiting to cheer on you guys, haha..."

Jeremy smiled with the utmost joy upon hearing his friends' urges. He then turned toward Yvonne and looked at her with a beaming smile.

The woman of his dreams was truly beautiful.

Jeremy swallowed his saliva as he thought about simply lifting up the veil and giving Yvonne a passionate kiss. He had already bent down as he entertained these thoughts of his.

"Yvonne, quickly bow! We'll be officially married after this!" Jeremy said with a grin as he held Yvonne's hands tightly.

"Come on. Pay your respect to each other, haha!" The crowd relentlessly cheered them on. However, Yvonne simply stood there with no intention of bowing!

"Yvonne?" At that moment, Kingston could no longer sit still. What was happening? Why was her daughter in a daze during such a crucial moment?

"What's... What's going on?" The crowd exchanged looks as they stared at the stage without blinking.

The emcee felt a little awkward as well, but thankfully he was experienced and laughed. "It seems the bride isn't quite ready yet, guys! She looks a little shy. Marriage is after all one of life's greatest moments!"

The emcee laughed and shouted again, "The bride should be ready now, let's cheer her on together! Pay respect to each other!"

Wow!

Everyone's gaze focused on Yvonne!

She bit her lip so tightly that it was about to bleed! Tears inexplicably started forming in her eyes.

Yvonne would be Jeremy's woman after this final bow.

She was extremely reluctant! However, she had no choice!

Yvonne lifted her head up toward the sky and tried to force a smile. She then slowly lowered her body to pay her respects.

"Hang on!"

At that moment, a powerful and firm voice came from the manor's entrance!

Everyone looked toward the entrance at the next

second!

At the entrance stood a completely drenched teary-eyed young man.

It was Darryl!

Chapter 449

'Darryl!?'

'Why is he here!?'

'This brat was stabbed in the lower abdomen and yet he's still alive!?'

Everyone at the venue furrowed their eyebrows. The newlyweds on stage were about to pay their respect to each other. What was Darryl trying to do?

"Darryl... You're here..."

Yvonne had a hard time keeping herself steady on the stage. She stared at Darryl in a daze as her heartbeat paced!

"Yes, I'm here," said Darryl coldly as he proudly walked onto the stage! He stood in front of Yvonne and stared intensely into her eyes!

Wow!

The entire venue was in an uproar!

What was going on?

"Hubby!" Lily shouted from below the stage as she anxiously stomped her feet. When she came to attend Yvonne's wedding, she assumed Darryl was

still recovering at home. Never did she think that Darryl would be here and even stood on stage. What was he trying to do!

Jeremy finally came to his senses and coldly stared at Darryl. "Darryl, If you're here to give me your blessings, you can say it from below the stage. There 's no need to come up here."

Jeremy assumed this brat was here to show his gratitude after giving him the Nine Resurrection Pill which saved his life.

However, Darryl simply ignored him and removed the veil on Yvonne's head in one swoop as he held onto her hand. "Yvonne, come with me!"

Yvonne's hands were sweaty as her body trembled while being forcefully pulled by Darryl! She could not help but follow Darryl off the stage.

What?

The crowd was instantly fired up!

There were many taboos on such traditional weddings. One of them was that the bride's veil should never be removed before entering the bridal chamber!

Even though the crowd was in shock, several men stared blankly at Yvonne as her true face was revealed.

Beautiful, truly beautiful!

Yvonne wore red lipstick and her refined facial features made countless men fall head over heels for her!

"Darryl, what are you trying to do? Get your filthy hands off her now!" Jeremy reacted, quickly went toward them, and blocked their way!

At the same time, the entire venue was in chaos.

'What's happening? Was Darryl trying to snatch the bride!?'

Yvonne bit her lip tightly as she finally came to her senses and gently struggled against Darryl before softly saying, "Darryl, don't cause a scene."

How can Darryl cause a scene in front of more than ten thousand people!

"What do you mean by causing a scene? I'm taking you away today!" Darryl's eyes were red as he roared!

Wow!

The entire manor was a complete mess upon hearing Darryl's words.

Some of Jeremy's elders were angry as they stood up and stared furiously at Darryl!

Jeremy clenched his fists and angrily walked toward Darryl before pointing toward him and scolded, " Darryl, you ungrateful bastard! Don't forget that were it not for my Nine Resurrection Pill, your pathetic life should've been long gone! Do you know how much the pill costs? You'll never see so much money in your entire f*cking life! You better piss off and I'll act like this never happened! Don't f *cking make troubles here!"

Darryl forced a smile and said, "The Nine Resurrection Pill? Fine, I'll return you the pill and you'll give Yvonne back to me!"

Darryl pretty much roared his words out!

"How presumptuous!" At that moment, many of the Six Sects' elites slammed the table and stood up! As honorable cultivators, they could not stand the sight of such audacity!

Jeremy was about to go mad with anger as rage slowly welled up in his body. "You idiot! There's only one Nine Resurrection Pill in the entire world! The refinement method has been lost forever! F*ck you, you're just here to cause trouble, aren't you? Idiot! Do you think you can return me the pill!?"

Chapter 450

"Of course, I'll definitely be able to return it."

Darryl's eyes were completely wet with tears! He had a black plastic bag in his hand which he instantly tossed toward the sky!

"I'll return it to you. Your damn pill, I'll f*cking return it to you!" Darryl roared so loudly that his voice turned hoarse!

Crash...

The plastic bag's contents came falling out and over 200 Nine Resurrection Pills poured down like a waterfall at that moment! Every single one of those pills was glowing with an intense spiritual aura!

The entire venue was as silent as the graves!

That was over 200 Nine Resurrection Pills!

"Gulp!" The sound of saliva being swallowed came out of nowhere and immediately triggered a heated discussion among the crowds!

"Am... Am I seeing this right? So many Nine Resurrection Pills?"

"How is this even possible! The pill refinement

method had been lost long ago!"

Yvonne's body trembled as she dumbfoundedly stared at Darryl. She could not say a single word!

'Darryl is always so great at giving pleasant surprises... He really has the Nine Resurrection Pill! Does that mean I don't have to marry Jeremy anymore?' Yvonne thought with her heart full of thrill and excitement!

Jeremy was dumbfounded as well with his eyes transfixed on the pills!

The Nine Resurrection Pill was a rare and unique elixir pill. The one he had before was considered a family heirloom.

Were it not for the fact that Jeremy liked Yvonne a lot, he would not have handed the pill over!

However, how did this brat in front of him obtain so many of them? They must surely be fake.

Jeremy let out a cold laugh and looked at Darryl with disdain. "Darryl, don't mess with me. Do you think you can fool me with these fake pills? Do you take me for an idiot?"

'Indeed, how could a useless man like Darryl have one of the best pills?'

'They were definitely fake!' Everyone around

nodded their heads in agreement.

"May I invite the elders to verify these pill's authenticity?" Jeremy said anxiously.

Master Reed who sat at the front row stretched out his palm and pulled a pill toward him with a terrifying force!

Master Reed was perplexed as he examined the pill in his hand. "This... This pill is indeed real, it's exactly the same as what's written in the records."

'What?'

'It's real!?'

The crowd was shocked at Master Reed's words!

Jeremy flushed as he felt surprised and embarrassed. He gritted his teeth and said to Darryl, "So what if these pills are real? The pill I gave you three days ago saved your life. I'll consider these two hundred pills as my interest! No one can change the fact that Yvonne is my wife."

"You haven't paid your respects to each other yet, how is she your wife? I'm definitely bringing Yvonne away today," said Darryl coldly.

Smack!

At that moment, a loud noise came from Timothy as he smacked the chair. He angrily stood up with

fire in his eyes! How dare a live-in son-in-law to behave so wildly and disrupt his son's wedding!

What would the people of Donghai City think of the Langleys if this live-in son-in-law was allowed to bring Yvonne away?

"Kill him, I'll bear the responsibility!" Timothy shouted. Darryl had gone too far!

Around a dozen Langley family's offspring surrounded Darryl in an instant upon hearing Timothy's words. They crazily rushed toward Darryl with machetes in their hands!

Chapter 451

"Everyone, please stop. Let me say a few words," a stern voice resonated in the air.

Kingston stood up, his body trembling in anger as he yelled at Darryl, "Darryl, what are you doing? My daughter is getting married. What does that have anything to do with you? Get lost!"

Kingston was furious at the sight of Darryl. Whenever he saw him, he could not help recall the sight of him tying three women in rope with one of them being his daughter!

At first, Kingston thought his daughter was finally getting over Darryl and had decided to marry Jeremy. Who would have thought that the main reason his daughter was marrying Jeremy was to save Darryl.

"Uncle Young," Darryl took a deep breath and walked toward him, "as long as I'm here today, I won't allow Yvonne to marry Jeremy! Everyone knows what kind of man Jeremy is. He's useless and does nothing all the time. How is he even good enough for Yvonne?"

"Shut up!" Timothy Langley jeered as he could not

hold back anymore, watching his son get publicly insulted. "Who's the useless one here doing nothing all day long? An ignorant kid like you decided to cause trouble here? Do you think nothing of the Langleys? However, I'll give you a chance. As long as you let go of Yvonne, you may leave, and I won't go after you."

This was meant to be a happy occasion, and with so many guests around, it would be a joke if they broke into a fight.

However, Darryl remained silent, only smirking coldly.

Meanwhile, the Deputy Head of The Hexad School, Graham Potter, could not stand it anymore. He stood up instantly. "Darryl, today is a happy occasion. It's wrong of you to cause trouble here. Leave now."

Even though this pupil was very gifted at cultivating, his current behavior was too rude and ruthless. Even guests like Master Reed and Master Leonard nodded in agreement.

On the other hand, Kent Hough and his gang could not stand it any longer either. They stood on the chairs and scowled at Darryl.

"Aren't you ashamed, live-in son-in-law?"

"Exactly, this is too much!"

The crowd taunted and insulted Darryl. However, he kept his tight grip on Yvonne's wrist and was not intending to let go. If he let her marry Jeremy today, he would regret it for the rest of his life.

Meanwhile, Lily was sitting to the side with her fingers crossed tightly. Her delicate face was filled with confusion and anxiety. Of course, she did not think Yvonne should marry this man, too. After all, Jeremy was not the man she should spend the rest of her life with. If someone else was messing up their wedding, Lily would be happy, but it was her husband! Lily was utterly confused and did not know how to react.

Watching the tension building in the hall, Yvonne's palms were sweating. She bit her lip and said softly, "Darryl, why don't you just let it be?"

"No way," Darryl announced without hesitation.

Suddenly, Abbess Mother Serendipity stood up after holding back her anger for quite a while. She flicked the whisk in her hand and jeered, "Bastard! How dare you come and cause trouble? A bastard like you should not be allowed to even be alive." She paused before looking around the hall as her voice resonated. "I received news just now that Darryl let the Golden Lion of the Eternal Life Palace Sect, Zion Featherstone, go and he has now gone back to the

Sect Hall!"

The Six Sect surrounding her and the highest-ranking disciples were shocked and furious. They all glared at Darryl as he was given the right to dispose of the Golden Lion, but he let him go.

The Golden Lion was almost demonic! Letting him go was like letting a murderer go back to the streets! Darryl was indeed a bastard.

"Not only that," The Abbess Mother Serendipity jeered, "this bastard assaulted his own sister-in-law and killed his grandfather! And now he has bribed the Elder of Eternal Life Palace Sect? This is unacceptable! What else is there to say about this bastard."

Suddenly, all the elites of the Six Sect stood up and locked a deadly gaze at Darryl.

Chapter 452

If he was here to cause trouble at their wedding, it was still okay. However, if Darryl bribed the cult sect, that was utterly unacceptable!

"Sinful, this is sinful! Someone, come and take Darryl down!" the Deputy Head of Tianshan School, Zachary Hume, yelled.

Darryl ruined his disciple's wedding and let Zion Featherstone go? This was a sin in Zachary's books.

Suddenly, ten or so Tianshan disciples rushed towards Darryl. Seeing the turn of events, the crowd dissipated in a hurry.

"The disciples of Emei sect, listen up!" Abbess Mother Serendipity called out. "Take this bastard down!"

"Wudang disciples, take Darryl down!"

Suddenly, all the disciples of the Six Sect, with the exception of the Wudang disciples, heard their orders and rushed to surround Darryl. There were at least a hundred of them!

People like Master Leanord thought that Darryl was merely a student of The Hexad School, and they did

not have to fight him themselves. These disciples were good enough to destroy him. Even though he stood out at the Lion Slaughtering Conference, the contestants there were of lower rankings. They were all below the age of 25 and below Martial Marquis.

However, the disciples of the Six Sect were high-ranking fighters. The lowest ranking among them was at least Level Three Master General, and there were even a few Martial Marquis among them.

Meanwhile, Master Reed put his hands together and uttered a prayer. He looked at Darryl with mixed emotions. "Darryl, if you let this lady go and give us a reasonable explanation for Zion Featherstone, I'll make sure you'll leave here in one piece today."

A monk like him was more compassionate and did not wish to see a nice wedding ending in a bloody scene.

"What if I say no?" Darryl stood up slowly as he curled his lips.

"You asked for it!" Abbess Mother Serendipity was fed up by this point. "Listen up, everyone! Kill this bastard!"

With that said, hundreds of Six Sect disciples drew out their sabers madly and charged towards Darryl!

"Darryl, run. Run away! Don't worry about me, just

go!" Yvonne's beautiful face paled and was drained of any color. She was so anxious that she almost cried out loud. Yvonne knew that Jeremy's master, Zachary Hume, was the Deputy Head of the Wudang Sect. The Six Sect would not let Darryl get away with ruining this wedding.

Watching the Six Sect disciples getting closer with their long sabers, Yvonne was washed in sweat and pushed Darryl away in a panic, "Go! Leave me alone! They won't let you bring me with you! Don't bother about saving me! Go!"

Yvonne began to sweat as she watched the Six Sect disciples get closer with their long sabers. Panicking, she pushed Darryl. "Go! Leave me! They won't let you bring me with you. Don't bother saving me. Just go!"

"I'm not leaving you." Darryl tightened his grip on her hand, interlocking their hands.

"Please don't do this, Darryl. I'm begging you. Leave! Please leave now!" Yvonne's eyes reddened as she stomped her feet anxiously. "Why are you so stupid! If you don't leave now, you might end up dying here today! Do you know that?"

"I'll ask you one thing." Darryl took a deep breath and looked Yvonne in the eyes. "Answer me, do you want to be with me? Do you want to leave with me?

Do you want to be with me forever?"

"Please don't be foolish. I'm begging you..." Yvonne whimpered in tears as she spoke with a hoarse voice, "What can I even do if I want to be with you. There's no way I can leave now."

"I'm asking you, do you want to!" Darryl snarled.

When he spoke, Yvonne saw that the Six Sect disciples had closed in on them and were less than ten meters away. She could almost see Darryl dying in a pool of blood in seconds.

At that moment, Yvonne's delicate face was overwhelmed with panic; her tears streamed down her face uncontrollably. "I want to. I really want to! I love you, and I want to leave with you! But we can' t leave here. Do you know how much I love you!"

"Good," Darryl forced a faint smile.

Bam!

The Blood Drinking Sword cut through the air with a loud bang and appeared in Darryl's hand.

"As long as you want to be with me, nobody can stop me."

Chapter 453

'Nobody could stop you? How was that possible?' Yvonne thought.

"Darryl, don't be foolish!" Yvonne's tears rolled down uncontrollably. Meanwhile, the disciples of the Six Sect had arrived before them. Their long sabers dropped like heavy rain.

At the same time, Florian joined in the ambush. He seemed delighted. "Darryl, I'm here to get revenge for Grandpa and kill an ungrateful bastard like you!"

Since so many people were rushing over, how could he miss out on this wonderful opportunity? Also, he had been practicing the Mysterious Godly Scripture lately and today seemed like a good opportunity to try it out. A smile speared on Yumi's face, who was beside him.

"Darling, kill this bastard for the sake of the Darby family!" she shouted.

"Yes, this bastard deserves it!" the Darby family members called out. "Florian, you'll have to kill him in the name of justice today! Don't spare him!"

"Kill him in the name of justice? What a noble excuse!' Darryl thought angrily as he clenched his

fists tightly, and his eyes reddened.

"Darryl, don't be a fool! Leave and run!" Yvonne stomped her feet in a panic as she pulled on Darryl's sleeves.

However, Darryl stood still, without even flinching.

Yvonne's face turned paler than it already was as she pleaded, "Darryl, please listen to me. Go, just go!"

"Go?" Darryl finally let out a smile as he watched the oncoming swarm of disciples coming his way. There was not a hint of fear on his face.

'If you all want a challenge, bring it on!' Darryl thought.

Roar!

Suddenly, a growl of a dragon was heard rising in the sky. The sound instantly shattered the windows and glasses into pieces.

The Nine Dragons circled Darryl as he held his Blood Drinking Sword. He looked like a killer.

"Ascension of the Nine Dragons, go!" Darryl roared as he pointed his sword toward the crowd.

The Nine Dragons launched towards them upon his order. The air crackled wherever they passed.

"Argh!"

Hundreds of disciples felt their vision blur, and a huge pressure crashed over them, making it hard for them to stand still. More than 20 disciples were beaten and spat out blood instantly, unable to resist falling to the ground with a single blow.

"Hold him! Hold this bastard! He only has one trick, but he's used it all! Don't be afraid!" Jeremy cried out as he wiped away his sweat.

The remaining 60 or so disciples looked at one another and charged towards Darryl.

"Darryl, I'm begging you, please go! I'm begging you. I'm begging you." Yvonne's tears streamed all over her face as she hugged Darryl, unwilling to let him go.

She already saw that Darryl had used up his one trick, and his lips had turned white. If this went on, Darryl might not be able to leave here in one piece.

"I'll go, only if you are," Darryl growled through his gritted teeth and pushed Yvonne behind him.

"Damn you all! You want to kill me, right? Bring it on!" Darryl had lost all sense of rationality. In the next moment, he rushed into the crowd with the Blood Drinking Sword in his hand.

Clash!

Clash!

The sword went up and down. Up and down.

Darryl shuttered among the crowd with his reddened eyes. One move followed by another! He did not know how many moves he had made, but all he knew was that one man was hit with every move. By the end, his arm was sore, and his mind was ringing with the sound of the Blood Drinking Sword.

Chapter 454

Weapons were ranked from low to high with red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo, and purple. Every ranking could be divided into five other levels. When Darryl first got his Blood Drinking Sword, it was at the Red rank's lowest level. Now his sword was stained with fresh blood and exuded and unruly, wild temperament.

In an instant, it had reached Level Four of the Green rank, which stunned the surrounding crowd.

"What happened? This kid is so strong?"

"Under the attack of so many high ranking disciples, he was still able to knock over so many people? Is he a monster?"

"A few days ago during the Lion Slaughtering Conference, he was still a Level Two Master General. How has he become a Level Four Master General now?" the crowd murmured.

Abbess Mother Serendipity glared at Darryl coldly with her fists clenched tightly. "A bastard like Darryl upgraded two levels in two days! He must have been given something from the Eternal Life Palace Sect after letting Zion Featherstone go. If

you can't catch a bastard like him alive, you should kill him! The Emei Sect will generously reward whoever kills this bastard."

Hearing that, the disciples of the Six Sect became more pumped and determined. Suddenly, someone attacked Darryl from the back by slashing his head with a knife.

Slash!

Suddenly, fresh blood spilled out from his head.

"Darryl!" Yvonne cried out loud as she felt like her heart was in her mouth.

"Haha! Hahaha!" Darryl burst into laughter at this instant.

He laughed at the sects that claimed themselves to be noble and proper. He laughed at them for their conceited nature, pretending to be better off than the other two cults.

'I wanted to bring Yvonne with me, yet you all attacked me in the name of justice and fairness. I had the right to dispose of Zion Featherstone in whatever way I saw fit. So what does it have anything to do with you all if I let him go?' he thought.

"Darryl, why don't you surrender!" Florian stood up from the ground. The Ascension of the Nine

Dragons wounded him earlier, and his lips were still bleeding. However, he had been practicing the Mysterious Godly Scripture, so this wound did nothing to him.

"Darryl, a man should pay for his sins!" Florian scoffed coldly as he took a step closer to Darryl. " You killed your Grandpa and assaulted your sister-in -law. You deserve to die! Today is your final day, and I'll kill you with my bare hands!"

Vroom!

A glowing, black light appeared behind Florian, and a giant, black python appeared by his side instantly. The python exuded an air of dark energy around it. It was obviously formed by the condensation of Inner Energy, yet it was magically vivid!

The giant python was at least twenty meters long, and every scale on its body was clearly cut. Its fangs were so pointed and sharp; it could cause goosebumps from just a glance.

When this python appeared, the temperature seemed to become colder, and everyone could feel it 's chilliness as their eyes widened like saucers.

"Mysterious Godly Scripture?!" all the elites took in a cold breath.

'Was this the Mysterious Godly Scripture? How

could it be! This scripture had been lost for so many years! Ho-how did Florian get it?!' they wondered.

The Mysterious Godly Scripture was one of the best practices in the world. Throughout the years, many community elites fought hard for this scripture, and many battles and wars were fought over it. There were a few ranks in this scripture, which started with using the internal energy to create a bird illusion. With a higher level of practice, you would be able to transform the internal energy into storms and lightning. After that, it would enable one to generate an illusion of a beast. This scripture was truly powerful.

"Stay away! Stay away from Florian and surround Darryl!" Shaolin's Master Reed was shocked. The power and damage caused by the Mysterious Godly Scripture practice, even if it was just the aftermath of the attack, was not something the disciples could withstand.

The Deputy Head of Tianshan, Zachary, stared at Florian. Zachary was extremely excited after seeing that Florian was practicing the Mysterious Godly Scripture.

"A giant, black python! A python! Florian Darby has a bright future. A very bright future!" Zachary called out, his voice trembling.

Chapter 455

Florian's lips curled into a deadly smirk as he pointed at Darryl. "Be ready to face your death!"

Hiss!

The giant, black python, opened its big bloody mouth and struck at Darryl.

"No!" Yvonne shouted with her hoarse voice as her legs were no longer able to support her.

She regretted telling Darryl about this wedding. It was too late now!

"Hubby!" Lily ran toward Darryl in her heels as tears streamed down her face. She wanted to protect Darryl from the python.

Even though Darryl was here to destroy the wedding, which hurt Lily, she still would not want to see her husband die here today.

"Drag the ladies away!" Florian yelled out among the crowd, his voice penetrating through the air. "I' ll kill this bastard on behalf of my grandfather. Today, Darryl dies."

"Hahaha! I'm going to die?" Darryl glared at the giant python fiercely. His body was filled with pure

Yang energy.

"Well, then let's see who's the one dying today!" he scoffed. In a swift movement, he reached out a finger and pointed it at the sky.

"What-what is he doing..." waves of exclamations resonated through the crowd as everyone's gaze turned to Darryl.

In the next moment, Darryl's hoarse voice resonated through half of Donghai City.

"It's a One Finger Big Bang!"

Vroom!

A terrifying tornado swirled up in the air.

Vroom!

Smoke and dust covered anything within a ten-mile radius. Everyone was blinded by the dust storms caused by the tornado.

"Argh!" someone yelled as ten or so disciples of the Six Sect were swirled up in the air.

The tornado was getting bigger and stronger!

"Hurry! Stay under cover!" Master Reed shouted as he was the first to snap out of the shock. He used his internal energy to form a protective shield to shelter the people around him.

It was not until he did that when the other elites snapped out of their shock and used their internal energy to form shields.

This technique could only be described as horrible! If they did not form a protective shield, many people would have died under this tornado.

Vroom!

Finally, the giant tornado crashed into the giant, black python, and a loud buzzing noise was heard.

Instantly, the giant, black python was crushed into pieces! Florian cried out, and blood came out of his mouth as he staggered backward.

"Dang!"

A pair of hands grabbed onto Florian's shaking body. It was Master Reed! However, even he had to stagger a few steps back to steady himself!

It was completely silent in the huge estate.

Everyone stared at Darryl as if they had just seen a monster.

'Was he even human?' everyone wondered.

"Huh!" Abbess Mother Serendipity walked towards him slowly as she looked at him quizzically. "Who'd have known a bastard like you know a trick or two.

Unfortunately, you're crooked. So what if you've learned this powerful technique? You'll still have to die today!"

She flicked her hand and charged at Darryl as she raised her palm and slammed it on Darryl's chest. She normally did not get involved, because like people like Master Reed, they cared about status and did not want to fight with someone of a lower rank like Darryl in front of everyone.

She had no choice now but to get involved. This bastard was able to knock out at least a hundred of her disciples. Not only is that a miracle, but it's a legendary feat! You had to admit that Darryl was indeed a gifted young man.

Despite his talents, his attitude was horrible, and he even bribed the Eternal Life Palace Sect! If she did not destroy him today, he would only become worse in the future. Abbess Mother Serendipity did not care about what others might say. Even if the community called it unjust or bullying, she had to get involved today.

Darryl's face paled as he witnessed her strike coming at him at lightning speed.

Chapter 456

Darryl had no energy left in him after completing his two tricks. He was unable to escape, so he had no choice but to throw out his palm with all his remaining energy in an attempt to protect himself.

Bam!

The moment their palms touched, Abbess Mother Serendipity's strength overwhelmed Darryl. She flicked her palm and threw out another strike that landed precisely on Darryl's chest.

"Argh!" he shouted.

All Darryl could feel was a terrifying energy wash over him that threw him into the sky, made him spit out blood, and caused him to land on the ground finally.

He felt a sharp pain, and all his veins break inside of him, especially his arteries. His entire body was at its weakest, as blood spilled uncontrollably. He was suffocating, and it felt as if all his organs were shattered into pieces.

"Hubby..." Lily could not help crying out in panic. She felt a pain in her heart as her legs went soft, and she fell to the ground.

"I'm asking you, do you admit to your wrongdoings!" Abbess Mother Serendipity said with zero emotion as she glared at him.

'Wrongdoings? Hah!' Darryl thought.

"I'd like to ask you who did I wrong?" Darryl growled, but since he had no more energy, he spat out more blood.

There was total silence as everyone's eyes were glued to Darryl's without a hint of empathy.

He was close to death, yet he was still so stubborn? The Eternal Life Palace Sect was an evil cult causing harm to the community, and Darryl was associated with them but should not be pitied even if he died.

Watching the determined and persistent look in Darryl's eyes, Abbess Mother Serendipity was infuriated. A longsword appeared in her hand as she walked slowly towards Darryl. With every step she took, it was as if she was walking on the hearts of the crowd.

"Abbess Mother Serendipity, you're doing the best thing for the community. Kill him!" someone yelled among the crowd.

The crowd roared in agreement as everyone called for justice by demanding Darryl's death.

"Yeah! Kill him."

"A bastard like him deserves to die!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity frowned at the jeers of the crowd as she approached Darryl with the sword pointed at his neck.

"No..." Yvonne felt as if her heart was being stabbed as tears fell down her face.

She wanted to run towards them, but the people surrounding her stopped her. She had made up her mind; if Darryl died today, she did not want to live either!

Darryl slowly shut his eyes in despair as he saw the sword was less than half a meter from him.

"Stop!" someone roared. His voice was powerful, with a hint of authority.

A figure blocked Abbess Mother Serendipity and stood in front of Darryl. He moved as quick as lightning, and his two fingers accurately pinched the tip of Abbess Mother Serendipity's sword.

He was tall, strong, and dressed in a majestic tunic suit. It was Zoran Carter!

"Godfather!" Darryl called out instinctively, surprised and delighted.

Zoran nodded in acknowledgment before he turned to Abbess Mother Serendipity and exerted a force

slightly with his fingers.

Click.

Abbess Mother Serendipity felt a loud wave of energy launch toward her, and she staggered a few steps back.

'Dad's internal energy is so powerful,' Darryl thought in awe. He had first-hand experience with Abbess Mother Serendipity's power, and it was close to the power of a Martial Saint! Although he could not tell who was more powerful, he knew for sure that Zoran was at least as powerful as Abbess Mother Serendipity.

Chapter 457

A glint of anger flashed through Abbess Mother Serendipity's eyes as she scoffed coldly, "Mr. Carter, are you siding with this fraud!?"

The elites like Master Reed and Master Leonard glued their gaze on Zoran.

"Fraud? The rules of the Lion Slaughtering Conference were clearly stated. The right of disposal falls on the winner. My son won the conference, and he has the right of disposal. So whether he does or does not let him go, what does that have to do with all of you?" he smiled faintly.

As he spoke, his intimidating gaze scanned through the crowd slowly and terrifyingly.

At Zoran's words, the crowd exchanged looks with one another, unable to speak.

"Even if we let this go, he came here today to ruin a wedding. This is unacceptable!" Abbess Mother Serendipity refuted.

Zoran could not help but start laughing as he asked her, "Oh? Only ruin a wedding? And you want to kill him because of that?"

"He killed his grandfather and assaulted his sister-

in-law. Are these good enough reasons to kill him?!" Abbess Mother Serendipity glared, her brows furrowed.

Zoran took a deep breath and declared with a deep and resonating voice that echoed through every corner of the manor, "I don't care what everyone thinks here. I take my son away today, no matter what."

In a blink of an eye, Zoran grabbed Darryl and flew out of the manor. Within the time it took to take a short breath, they disappeared out of sight of the crowd.

High above the ground, Zoran held Darryl tightly. Hearing the gusts of wind in his ears, Darryl was anxious.

"Godfather, where are we going? I can't...I have to go back!" Darryl could not help coughing up a few more times. Although he was weak, his eyes were full of determination.

Yvonne was still at the Langley mansion. Now that he had left, what would happen to her?

Zoran took a long breath. 'Does he know how weak he is right now? Yet he still wants to go back?'

"I'm bringing you to the Carter mansion. You're severely wounded and need to recover. Don't

speak," he explained.

Darryl was the son of his good friend back in the days. He only became Darryl's godfather recently, and he would not let anything happen to him.

"If you go back now, you might find yourself walking into death. It was pure luck earlier that I was able to save you. You've wounded so many of the Six Sect's disciples; if you go back now, they won't let you go," he continued.

Honestly speaking, the situation back there was dangerous and risky. If he arrived a second later, his newly-claimed godson would have been killed right then and there.

"Godfather, I'd like to go back-" Darryl clenched his fists.

Before he could finish, Zoran cut him short, "Don't think about that. I won't let you do it. Listen to me; rest at the Carter mansion for the next few days. After that, I'll see what the situation's like in Donghai City. If things are better, we'll come back."

He ruined a nice wedding and even wounded so many of the Six Sect's disciples. If he went back now, it would be a suicide mission.

After taking into account what Zoran said, Darryl let out a long sigh with a face filled with despair.

At the Langley mansion, the festive and lively scene was left in shambles with debris everywhere after the battle. All of the wedding guests had run away and escaped hastily during the battle. Only the Six Sect, the well-known families, and the community elites were left.

Chapter 458

Everyone had a straight face on, feeling furious and shocked, especially the Six Sect disciples. All of them had an extremely unpleasant look on their faces.

There were at least a hundred of them, and yet none of them were able to catch that bastard! If rumors got out, how would people view them and their reputation?

As they exchanged looks with one another, Abbess Mother Serendipity stood up and glanced around the crowd. "Alright, even if we did not manage to catch that bastard, you don't have to worry. I've destroyed his arteries and veins. He might be alive, but he won't be able to cultivate ever again."

The crowd felt better and instantly reassured. However, Florian stood up with a cross look. "Even if he'll no longer be able to cultivate, he's still alive!" an evil glint flashed in his eyes. "As long as he's alive, my grandfather will not be able to rest in peace."

Darryl had to die, no matter what it took! As long as he was still alive, Florian could not sleep or eat in peace. He had to live in fear of his assault and his

murder of Grandpa being exposed every day. Only once Darryl was dead would Florian be able to live without the constant fear and terror.

"A bastard like Darryl shouldn't be alive. However, he was taken away by Zoran Carter, and the Carters are a private cultivating family. They're powerful. We can't just go up there, can we?" someone from the crowd said.

Instantly, the crowd fell silent with mixed emotions on their faces. They knew that the Carter family was more powerful than the Six Sect combined. Besides, the patriarch of the family, Zoran, had a prestigious reputation in the community.

Abbess Mother Serendipity frowned. "Let it go. Although Darryl is still alive, he's pretty much useless and vulnerable. There are plenty of chances to kill him in the future."

The crowd nodded. Meanwhile, a fat man walked out of the crowd slowly.

It was the President of the Dalton Entertainment Company, Dalton Zander!

During the Mid-Autumn Festival celebrations at the television station, Darryl peed on him in the toilet as he was trying to steal Giselle Lindt away from Darryl's company. He still held onto the grudge to this day and probably will for the rest of his life.

Dalton was here to attend the wedding. With his arrogant temperament, he liked to be the center of attention wherever he went. However, this wedding was filled with high-ranking people of the community that he had no chance to speak up.

This was a good chance for him to make his voice heard finally. Since everyone was criticizing Darryl, he could not help to add on, "I'm guessing a lot of you here don't know about this, but Darryl is quite a resourceful man in Donghai City." He glanced around the crowd. "Most of you may not know that this man is the President of Platinum Corporation."

'Darryl was the President of the Platinum Corporation?' everyone wondered, stunned.

They all knew that the Platinum Corporation was the most successful entertainment company for the past two years. They have signed with the most famous celebrities and entertainers, making them one of the most resourceful companies.

Utterly shocked, many people in the crowd exchanged looks with one another. They were left speechless, especially people like Ken Hough, Justin Quinn, and William Lydon. They were unable even to process this information.

"The live-in son-in-law is so rich?"

"Yeah..."

Seeing the shock on their faces, Florian scoffed, “ Please don’t be too shocked. He stole the Platinum Corporation from the Darby family. Most of you may know that he used to be the Second Master of the Darby family, but he was kicked out after committing inhuman acts. We let him keep this company out of generosity.”

“I see...”

“No wonder, I was just thinking how a useless live-in son-in-law could become the President of the Platinum Corporation!”

The crowd acted as if it all made sense to them.

Chapter 459

Florian nodded and continued, "I have a suggestion. Business people like us in Donghai City should get together and demolish all of Darryl's resources in the city."

Upon hearing this, everyone seemed delighted. Jeremy Langley was the first to stand up and agree. " Exactly! We can't give him any way to get back on his feet."

Darryl came to ruin his wedding, and Jeremy wanted him to pay for it.

Others joined in, showing their support, too.

"Yeah, there are so many families here. Once we all get together, how hard can it be to destroy his company?"

"Haha! Without his powerful resources to back him up, Darryl won't be able to get back on his feet!"

"Yeah! Even when he comes back to Donghai City, he won't cultivate anyway without money. He'll be useless!"

The crowd laughed together, delighted by their plan.

Master Reed let out a sigh and looked at Timothy Langley. "So, is this wedding still happening today?"

Upon hearing his words, everyone became silent.

'Yeah, was the wedding still going on? The stage was shattered into pieces...' everyone wondered.

Timothy let out a sigh as he glanced around the surrounding and the debris. "Okay, we'll reschedule my son and Yvonne's wedding to a month from now. My apologies for not being the best host today."

"Mister Langley's too polite!"

"We can all understand. Please don't blame yourself," the elites of the Six Sect said to Timothy and Jeremy.

As the crowd dispersed, someone pointed at Lily. " Oh yeah, Darryl's wife fainted. What should we do?"

By then, William and the members of the Lyndon family had already left. Instantly everyone turned their attention to Lily.

Although she was Darryl's, she was humble, polite, and was gentle. It was a headache to think about what they should do with her.

Since nobody spoke up, Florian gazed at the

unconscious Lily with squinted eyes. "She's Darryl's wife and my sister-in-law. Even though Darryl's a bastard, she's innocent. Since the Lyndons have left, I'll bring her back to the Darby mansion first. When she wakes up, then I'll send her back to the Lyndons."

He said it with such an obligatory and heroic tone that it earned him praise and respect from the crowd.

"No wonder you're the Master of the Darby family. You're so generous and such a gentleman!"

"Yeah, with the Darby family under your guidance, it'll be as glorious as ever!"

Having earned praise and respect from the public, he curled his lips into a smirk and slowly approached Lily.

He could not help gulping his saliva. 'Who would have thought that Darryl's wife o could be as pretty as a flower and her body...'

He was not able to take a shot with Darryl's Queenie. Of course, Florian would not let this opportunity pass, so he reached out his hands, ready to carry Lily in his arms.

However, he heard the loud clicking sound of heels as a woman came to stand in front of him. It was

Yumi!

Yumi's face was stern as she glared at Florian. "You're hurt; you can't carry her. Let me do it."

She knew her husband well enough to know that whenever he saw gorgeous ladies, he would do anything to get them. She knew what he had in mind when offering to bring Lily home. Of course, she would not expose him in front of so many people. Yumi bent down and carried Lily in her arms.

The Carter mansion was located in the heart of Mid-city. It was well-known for its antique-looking garden. The estate occupied tens of thousands of acres, built with an ancient-looking architecture that was magnificent and majestic. It was surrounded by bamboo forests giving it a sense of elegance and peace.

The moment Darryl arrived at the Carter mansion, he could not help to take a deep breath. The architecture was like poetry or artwork. It was truly magnificent!

Chapter 460

After being charmed by the sight of the magnificent building, Darryl could not help ask in awe, " Godfather, is this the Carter mansion? It's huge; it' s mag-"

Before he could finish his words, he felt a burning pain in his heart. He spat out more blood, and his sight went black as he fainted instantly.

Abbess Mother Serendipity attacked him with all her might. Luckily Darryl was wearing his Celestial Silkworm Armor. Even then, his arteries and veins were all broken, as well as his organs. Darryl had used up all his will power to stay awake on the way here, but now that they had arrived, he could no longer hold it any longer.

"Darryl!" Zoran called out in a panic. With Darryl in his arms, he rushed to the main hall.

The Carter mansion was divided into the inner court and outer court. The outer court was used to host guests, while the inner court was where the family cultivated. No outsiders, even the most honorable guests, were allowed to enter this area without being invited by Zoran.

Zoran carried Darryl right into a room in the inner

court and yelled at the door, "Hurry, hurry. Go and get Mister Jacob!"

The person outside the door responded immediately and went away hastily. Not long after, an older man rushed over with a box full of medicine. This older man was Philips Jacob, a well-known miracle healer in Mid-city and a dear friend of Zoran's.

After taking Darryl's pulse, Philips remained silent for a long while with a serious look on his face.

Zoran was anxious and panicking as he asked, " Mister Jacob, how's my godson?"

Philips smiled bitterly and said slowly, "I've saved this young man's life, but his arteries are broken. It appears that he won't be able to cultivate anymore." He paused before continuing, looking guilty, "I've tried my best."

Zoran was stunned for a while before he asked anxiously, "Mister Jacob, what if I use my internal energy in combination with your healing. Would you be able to heal his arteries?"

'If he couldn't cultivate as a cultivator, there won't be any reason to be alive,' Zoran thought to himself. If he could save Darryl, he would not mind giving up some of his internal energy.

Philips shook his head, "You're too naïve. How

could internal energy heal arteries? The most important thing now is for him to recover. Don't bother thinking about cultivating." Philips clasped his fists together as a gesture and left.

Zoran looked at Darryl in a coma and let out a sigh before leaving the room.

Darryl felt as if he had a very long dream. He saw someone chasing him in the dream and trying to kill him as he kept on running and running.

Finally, Darryl yelled out and sat upright in shock, dripping in sweat.

The second he looked at his surroundings, he was stunned beyond words. He was in an exquisitely furnished room with antique chairs, a table, a bed, and cupboards. There was also an antique landscape painting hanging on the wall.

'Where am I? Have I died and gone to heaven? No, no, it can't be,' Darryl thought before he snapped back to reality and slapped his forehead. For a second, he had forgotten that Zoran saved him, and this must have been the Carter mansion.

After mumbling to himself, he cautiously got off the bed with gritted teeth. His arteries were broken. Although it no longer hurt, his body was still very weak.

Meanwhile, he could hear the sounds of laughter

along with splashing water coming from outside.

'Who's showering outside? Their voice is so sweet. She must be a gorgeous lady,' he thought.

Darryl was captivated and went out of the door without hesitation.

After walking through the bamboo forest, he saw a clear pond. As expected, two graceful figures were playing inside the pond. However, when he saw the faces of the two women inside the pond, he was stunned.

Chapter 461

The two women were extraordinarily gorgeous and were currently playing in the water like ethereal fairies.

Darryl ogled them. 'Godfather mentioned that he had two daughters. Could this be them?'

The two ladies playing in the water were indeed Zoran Carter's daughters. The older one, Rachel Carter, was sexy and attractive, while Sara, the younger sister, was cute and adorable. They were both equally charming.

As Darryl continued staring at them, a few maidservants screamed.

"Wh-who are you?"

The two sisters noticed Darryl's presence and blushed in embarrassment. Although they were covered, playing in the water did not help much as it made their clothes stick to their body.

Rachel was partly ashamed and partly furious. She pointed at Darryl as her voice trembled while she spoke, "Who the hell are you? Leave at once!"

This creepy man looked like a beggar covered in

blood. They were disgusted by Darryl's gawking.

Sara, on the other hand, was more curious. She cocked her head and looked at Darryl, asking curiously, "Who are you? Why are you in our home? And why do you have blood all over you?"

This man was strange. He did not have the aura of a cultivator, but one of an ordinary person, yet he was covered in blood as if he just came from a battle.

Rachel was anxious as she pulled Sara back.

"Sara! He must be a thug. Why are you still talking to him?" she said as she frowned, turning to Darryl. "Leave, or I'll call for help!"

Darryl shook his head. He could feel that the two sisters were complete opposites in terms of character. Rachel was more conservative with an air of arrogance and spoke rudely, while Sara was cheerful and adorable. A little bit like Queenie Garfield.

At the thought of Queenie, Darryl grimaced. He had not heard from her for a few days now. It was as if she vanished.

"Are you deaf? I asked you to leave!" Rachel said once more.

Darryl laughed and replied slowly, "Why should I leave? This is my godfather's house."

'Godfather?' Rachel was stunned as she looked at Darryl despicably.

Her father once mentioned a godson in Donghai City and that he was a powerful and rich young man. Could it be him?

'Which part of him looked powerful? His clothes barely cost a hundred bucks. How could he be rich? He also does not have any Internal Energy. He was such a loser. Why did her father claim him as his godson?' Rachel wondered.

Rachel was even more disgusted by him.

Sara, however, lit up.

"I do remember! Dad did mention a godson. Could that be you?" she said.

Darryl laughed and nodded. "That's right."

"That's awesome! I have an older brother!" Sara splashed happily.

"Sara, shut up!" Rachel looked at Darryl and yelled, "What are you still doing here? Go away! Can't you see we're in the water playing?"

"Oh," Darryl shrugged before adding, "sure. I'll leave, but let me give you some advice. The Feng Shui of the pond is not great. It's not good to stay there for too long. It's best you two come out of it

soon.”

Chapter 462

Darryl was not spewing nonsense. He had scanned the surroundings of the pond, and the Feng Shui was not right.

A few maids giggled at Darryl's observation.

"Darryl? Did you know that Finnegan Nicholson, the Feng Shui master, specially designed this yard?" Rachel snickered.

Finnegan Nicholson was a great Feng Shui master in the fifties. The entire Carter Mansion, including the pond, was specifically designed by him. Yet, Darryl mentioned that the Feng Shui of the pond was not great? What nonsense is that?

Darryl laughed and said, "Yes, you're right. According to Feng Shui, the pond is in a great place." He continued to calmly explain, "However, the pond is considered a Yin-Yang pond. The north side of the pond receives a great deal of sunlight; hence it's considered the Yang side, whereas the south is constantly under a shade, making it the Yin side. When Finnegan Nicholson designed the pond, it was meant to balance the Yin and Yang—it was a Feng Shui pond, to put it precisely. So, it's not meant for playing in, especially the south side. The

Yin energy is too strong. You two should get out soon."

Sara exclaimed in admiration as she clapped her hands, "Darryl, you know Feng Shui? That's so cool!"

Rachel retorted coldly, "He's talking nonsense. Look at him all poor-looking! We'll go to play. Don' t bother with him."

Darryl was about to leave since they did not heed his advice. Suddenly, one of them in the pond screamed, "Help!"

Rachel was trying to keep herself afloat as she drowned. A few maids were all shocked, and Sara was stunned as well.

Darryl immediately jumped in. He quickly rescued Rachel and brought her out of the pond while admiring her gorgeous body. She had a great body.

Rachel was trembling in fear. She did not know why her body suddenly went numb, almost causing her to drown. Thank goodness nothing happened.

She clutched her chest when she realized Darryl's hands were still on her. She got embarrassed and said, "Let go of me!"

Rachel was disgusted.

'How could this dirty, creepy man touch her!' she

thought.

Darryl let go of her.

She slapped him hard.

"How dare you touch me! Who do you think you are?" Rachel said coldly.

"The f*ck is wrong with you?" Darryl looked at her. "F*ck, I just saved you from drowning, and you slap me?"

Chapter 463

"What did you say? I dare you to say it again," Rachel's Internal Energy exploded from her. It was so strong it almost crushed Darryl. She was a Level Four Master General! Being at such a high level at such a young age, she was considered a genius.

Darryl could not breathe. Abbess Mother Serendipity totally destroyed his powers. As of now, he was only an ordinary human.

Sara got out of the pond and tugged at Rachel. " Stop it. Why did you have to do that?"

Darryl was great, in Sara's eyes. If it were not for him, Rachel could have died, and he was right about the pond's Feng Shui!

At noon, Rachel went back to her room to change before she headed to the study.

Zoran was reading old manuals in the study as he was anxiously trying to find a way to help Darryl regain his powers.

Rachel approached her father and said, "Dad, why did you bring Darryl here?"

Thinking about him made her mad!

Zoran looked at Rachel and said, "He's my godson, and he was hurt badly. Of course, it makes sense that I'd bring him home." He continued with a smile, "Since you're here, I have something to talk to you about."

Rachel was annoyed. "What is it?"

Zoran laughed and said, "Rachel, you're not getting any younger. I've been thinking about your marriage recently. There was always no one suitable previously, but now there is."

"Who is it?"

"Your godbrother, Darryl Darby. He's a genius. He cultivates and makes elixirs; there's nothing he can't do! Also, I've asked around, and he does business as well. He's in charge of a company. When you were still in your mother's womb, I made a promise to Darryl's father that you'd marry him one day," he said excitedly.

'What? Marry that b*stard?' Rachel thought.

She was completely stunned. She covered her ears and shook her head. "Dad, I won't marry him!"

She thought her father would suggest the son of a wealthy family and that she might even consider it, but it had to be Darryl!

She was disgusted just at the thought of him. How

could she possibly marry someone so repugnant?

Zoran was taken aback. "Why?"

He did not understand Rachel's reaction. Darryl was an amazing person, so why was she so against it?

Rachel took a deep breath and said, "Dad, you've mentioned that Darryl has a wife and that he's a live-in son-in-law. How...how could I possibly marry him?"

'Ah, so it was because of that,' Zoran thought.

He laughed and shook his head. "Rachel, you're young. How are you as stubborn as me? We come from the world of cultivators; we do not follow the traditions of ordinary folk. Also, your godbrother is one of a kind!"

Rachel would not listen. She shook her head. "Stop talking. I won't marry him at all."

Zoran was helpless, and his eldest daughter was too stubborn. However, he was not in a rush. Darryl would be staying here for a long time. Given time, Rachel would come to see how great Darryl was.

At the same moment, a maidservant entered and said, "Sir, Chairlady of Jiangnan Elixir Association, Ophelia Lane, is here together with her disciple, Ewan White. They are waiting in the living room."

Chapter 464

'Ewan White was here?' Rachel wondered.

She was surprised as she quickly said, "Dad, I'll come with you."

Ewan White was Ophelia Lane's disciple. He was also from the famous White family in Mid City.

Ewan and Rachel were good friends, and she liked him a lot as she felt he was charming.

Ophelia was seated on the sofa, an epitome of grace with her alluring body.

Ewan, her disciple, stood behind her in a suit, looking extremely dapper.

Ewan has been Ophelia's follower for almost four to five years and was quite skilled in producing elixirs.

"Ewan!" Rachel greeted him happily. "It's great to see you! We've not seen each other for ages. I've been almost bored to death!"

Ewan laughed. "I've been busy! But here I am!"

Ophelia smiled. She thought that Ewan and Rachel were a match made in heaven.

Zoran walked over and greeted Ophelia, "Welcome

to our humble abode."

The Jiangnan Elixir Association was an influential force in the world of cultivators, especially Ophelia Lane. She was not to be offended. Many masters and cultivators respected her.

She stood up and said, "Zoran, you're too kind. I'm so sorry to visit you out of the blue. I hope you don't mind."

"Sit, sit. Make yourself at home," Zoran offered. He commanded his servants, "Bring out our best tea."

When tea was served, Ophelia jumped straight to the point. "I came here for a happy occasion."

'Happy occasion?' Zoran wondered.

"What happy occasion?" he asked.

Ophelia smiled widely and said, "Ewan, my disciple, and your daughter like each other very much. They get along with each other well as well. So, I brought Ewan here to ask for your daughter's hand in marriage."

Rachel blushed. She was extremely delighted. If she could marry Ewan, she would be the luckiest woman on earth!

Zoran frowned, then laughed awkwardly and said, " I see. Unfortunately, I have to apologize to you,

Ophelia. My daughter already has an arranged marriage with someone else."

Ophelia and Ewan's smiles vanished.

"May I ask to whom?" Ophelia asked curiously.

'Strange. Ewan and Rachel grew up together and got along extremely well. Why would Zoran arrange her marriage to someone else instead?' Ophelia wondered.

Zoran smiled and replied proudly, "His name is Darryl Darby."

This godson of his is a genius, and there was no one as good as him. Marrying his daughter off to Darryl was not an insult at all.

Ophelia trembled as she frowned and asked, " Donghai City's Darryl Darby?"

If it really were him, then it would be a huge coincidence.

At the previous Elixir Competition, Darryl's performance was outstanding. She still remembered him. He was indeed special, and she wanted him to be her disciple. Many would kill to be her disciple, but he rejected her.

Chapter 465

Zoran nodded and laughed, "It seems like you know my godson too! I have decided that Rachel should marry him."

Ewan White was not bad as well, but he is no Darryl Darby.

Rachel finally could not take it. She stomped her feet and said, "Dad, I've told you. I will not marry him! I like Ewan! Not that live-in son-in-law!" Rachel held Ewan's arm tight.

"Nonsense!" Zoran reprimanded. "How could you disobey your father's decision! Marriage is not a matter of choice for you."

Rachel panicked. She bit her lip and said, "Dad, I don 't understand. What good is Darryl? If you think he' s a genius, let him have a competition with Ewan and see who's the better one among the two. If Darryl wins, I'll listen to you. But if Ewan wins, you' ll let me marry him."

Zoran was silent. He did not expect his daughter to propose such a deal. Darryl has lost all his powers. How could he compete with Ewan? He was handicapped.

Ophelia chimed in, "Zoran, since Rachel proposed this, why not let them try it out."

Zoran nodded. He ordered his servants to call Darryl.

Not long after, Darryl appeared. He was stunned when he entered the living area.

He saw the gorgeous Ophelia Lane. Why was she here?

Seeing Darryl, Ewan clenched his fist. This person is covered in blood and was so dirty. His was not a good match for Rachel.

Darryl ignored him and turned to Ophelia, smiling. " Chairlady, we meet again."

Then he walked to Zoran and asked, "Godfather, I heard you called for me?"

If it were not for Zoran, Darryl would have been long dead. In his heart, Zoran was like a father to him.

Zoran smiled kindly and said, "Darryl, why don't you compete with Ewan?"

'What? Why do I have to compete with him? I don't even know Ewan White,' Darryl thought.

Darryl was confused, but since Zoran asked him, he would not disobey. He nodded.

"I have never met a person who was so dumb and didn't know their own strengths as much as you." Rachel frowned. "Look at you. You look like a cheapskate. How could you compete with Ewan? Since you agreed, I'll let you choose your death. What would you like to compete in?"

Darryl was not an idiot, and he could see that Rachel liked Ewan.

He laughed and replied, "Anything is fine."

Since he lost his powers, as long as it was not martial arts, he was fine with anything.

'What? Anything? He sure is arrogant,' Rachel thought.

Chapter 466

Rachel snickered, "Anything? Then we'll compete in producing elixirs."

No matter what, Darryl has to lose. Her father said that Darryl knew how to produce elixirs, but how could this loser beat Ewan? As long as Ewan wins, she could marry him.

"Sure," Darryl shrugged.

Ophelia smiled. Darryl's performance in the previous Elixir Competition was outstanding. He was indeed a rare talent. However, compared to Ewan, he was miles behind.

They left and entered the elixir production room. The Carter's elixir production room was the most professional one in Mid City and contained not only assorted cauldrons but also rare herbs and ingredients.

When they reached the room, Darryl heard someone calling him from afar.

"Darryl!" Sara approached him. She was wearing a cute yellow dress, looking very bubbly. She was too excited as she said, "I didn't know you knew how to produce elixirs! You're amazing. Can I stay next to

you and watch?"

Though she only met him today, Sara felt a genuine connection with Darryl. Plus, a whole lot of curiosity. He not only knew Feng Shui, but he could also produce elixirs as well? Is he all-knowing?

"Sure, sure!" Darryl laughed and patted her head. This godsister of his is way too cute.

Looking at them, Zoran smiled. Though Rachel was extremely against Darryl, he was relieved that at least Sara could get along well with him.

Rachel was unhappy and stomped her feet. "Sara! What are you doing! Come over here!" She did not know why her sister liked that useless live-in son-in-law so much.

Rachel was annoyed as she urged them to start the competition. "Let's get this done and over with!"

Ophelia said to Zoran, "Zoran before we start the competition, may I add on another bet?"

"Of course," Zoran said.

Ophelia nodded as she walked to Darryl and said, " Darryl, if you lose, Rachel will marry my disciple Ewan. Also, you have to be my disciple. Do you agree?"

Darryl's rejection of her offer to become her

disciple was still a fresh wound in her heart. This was an opportunity she could not miss.

Of course, even before the competition began, she knew Darryl was going to lose. After all, Ewan has followed her for many years, and his elixir producing skills were amazing.

Darryl laughed and said, "Sure. But if I win? Would you become my disciple?"

The maids gasped at Darryl's boldness.

Ophelia's expression darkened. She was slightly offended but did not show it as she gritted her teeth and said, "Sure."

Ewan did not take it well and said to Darryl coldly, " Dude, when we're done, don't forget to call me Senior Brother."

How dare this person talk to Master Ophelia that way! He must win for Ophelia's sake.

Chapter 467

"Alright, let me explain the contest rules," Ophelia explained as she sat down. "Whoever produces the rarest elixir in one-hour wins. If the time is up and you haven't finished, you lose."

She looked at her watch and set it. "Your time starts...now."

Ewan reacted quickly. He walked to the ingredients section and measured each ingredient with his bare hands. It was extremely accurate!

He lit a fire, emptied the ingredients in, and started producing his elixir. Everything went smoothly, and there was not a mess in sight.

The entire Carter family surrounded him, looking at Ewan's every move. They nodded in agreement.

"No wonder he's Ophelia's disciple. He has such experienced hands!"

"I wonder what rare elixir he will produce? It's so exciting!"

Listening to their comments, Ewan was elated as he smiled with confidence.

However, Darryl looked nonchalant, and he had not

even started picking his ingredients.

Many shook their heads at him. He was losing from the start, and it looked like his chances of winning were slim to none.

"Looks like it was all a lie. I think this idiot got scared looking at all the ingredients, and he might not even know all of them," Rachel taunted.

A few maidservants giggled.

Even Sara was slightly anxious as she said, "Darryl, why aren't you starting yet?"

Darryl laughed. "Don't worry."

He did not start immediately because he wanted to see what elixir Ewan was going to produce. Now that he had a rough idea, he could start.

He picked his ingredients and measured them carefully with a weighing scale.

Ewan laughed. "What? You need to use an electronic scale for your ingredients?"

Professionals all used their hands, and it was extremely accurate. Darryl's actions showed that he was an amateur.

Darryl ignored him. He used to use his hands previously. However, now that he lost his powers, he does not have any Internal Energy. So his

measurements would not be accurate. Just to be safe, he used the weighing scale.

Time was ticking.

Ewan's cauldron was burning hot and flaming red. Everybody could smell something brewing from the cauldron. They were all excited as they knew his elixir was almost ready, and it was a rare one!

However, while Darryl's cauldron was burning, there was very little going on.

BUZZ!

Suddenly there was a vibration, and a vivid gold hue came floating from afar. It formed a golden Elixir Cloud and was directly above Ewan!

Ewan created an Elixir Cloud.

"My goodness! It's a golden Elixir Cloud!"

"What rare elixir could produce this?"

Everyone was in awe. It was amazingly rare that an Elixir Cloud was gold in color! It proved that Ewan was indeed highly skilled in producing elixirs.

Rachel clapped her hands. She was so thrilled she could barely speak; it was without a doubt she had chosen the right man!

Chapter 468

A golden Elixir Cloud. Could Darryl top that?

"Only a great teacher like Ophelia could produce such a skilled student!" someone exclaimed as everyone looked at Ophelia.

She said nothing and took a sip of tea. She knew how skilled Ewan was and this was all expected of him.

"Wow, a golden Elixir Cloud!" Sara exclaimed. She turned to Darryl and said, "Come on, Darryl, we don 't want to lose!"

Darryl smiled but did not say anything though he praised Ewan secretly.

You needed to have great skills to be able to create a golden Elixir Cloud. It was no wonder Ewan was so confident.

BAM!

Suddenly, Ewan's cauldron started to vibrate. An elixir pill flew out of the cauldron, and Ewan caught it with ease in his hand.

Everyone looked at Ewan hopefully.

He smiled and opened his palm, showing the elixir

to everyone.

They were all stunned. It was a pill with an iridescent sheen! What kind of pill has an iridescence to it?

Ophelia nodded in approval as she said, "Ewan explain to Zoran what elixir you just produced."

Ewan laughed and proudly said, "This pill is the Five Spirit Pill. It's named after its effect. Cultivators who consume it will see improvement in these five areas: tempering of the bones, increase in Internal Energy, the calmness of the heart, eternal beauty, and immunity against poisons."

Everyone's jaws dropped at Ewan's explanation. They were in awe.

Ophelia smiled proudly at her disciple as she nodded in approval. He did not disappoint.

Ewan walked towards Rachel and handed her the Five Spirit Pill. "Rachel, I've always wanted to make an elixir pill for you. I finally had the chance. This Five Spirit Pill is for you. One of the effects is the eternal beauty, so I hope you will always be gorgeous."

"Thank you, Ewan!" Rachel was ecstatic. She knew that this was the man she could count on in the future and was worth handing over her hand in

marriage.

The crowd was in serious discussion as it looked like this competition had a clear winner. They started looking at Darryl with an awkward expression.

,

Darryl was not in a hurry as he carefully tended to the fire. His cauldron was extremely quiet, and there was no action going on at all, not even a wisp of cloud. At that, many were impatient to wait for him.

Ophelia shook her head in disappointment. Was the previous Elixir competition just luck? Had she misjudged his skills? Perhaps he was not skillful in producing elixirs after all.

"That's it, Darryl. Admit defeat." Ophelia could take it no longer. She looked down on Darryl and said, " You have clearly lost this competition. You might not be skilled yet, but I'll teach you sometime. You could be as great as Ewan."

"Oh?" Darryl laughed as he looked at Ophelia. " Chairlady Lane, I'm afraid you'll be under-qualified. The other way round would make more sense."

Chapter 469

"Do you want to get beaten up?" yelled Ewan. How could someone treat his master so rudely?

"Ewan, step down," Ophelia ordered as she looked at Darryl. "What's the use of boasting now? My disciple harnessed a golden Elixir Cloud and produced a Five Spirit Pill. Do you really think you can top that?"

"Of course. After all, time's not up yet," he said while tending to his cauldron.

Ophelia shook her head. "Remember our agreement. If you lose, you have to acknowledge me as your master, and it has to be done officially, with you bowing down to me."

PSST! PSST!

Darryl opened the lid of the cauldron. Suddenly, heat escaped along with the ingredient's aura.

'What? What is he doing? Opening the lid of the cauldron before the elixir matures is a big mistake,' everyone thought as they were stunned.

"Have you admitted defeat?" Rachel sneered.

She initially thought that this live-in son-in-law

would have some skills, but it looked like she overestimated him. Getting him to compete with Ewan was only an insult to Ewan.

However, Ophelia trembled in fear as she looked closely at Darryl's every move. She did not even dare blink for one second.

'Is...is he petrifying the cauldron?' she wondered.

Cauldron Petrifying is an ancient, lost method of producing elixirs. This method was considered to be lost and obsolete. You could find mentions of it in ancient manuals, but not in detail.

According to the manuals, Cauldron Petrifying used the aura of the ingredients to clear the cauldron of impurities. This helped ensure a pure elixir was produced.

Of course, the elixirs produced by this method were also rare!

This was a lost art! How would Darryl know about this?

At that moment, she noticed Darryl was adding more ingredients to the cauldron while increasing the fire. There were twenty minutes left till the end of the competition.

Many people laughed and shook their heads at Darryl. They had not heard of Cauldron Petrifying,

so they thought Darryl had failed at producing an elixir and that he was trying again. They were sure he was not going to succeed with so little time left.

Even if he could produce one in such a short time, it would not be as rare as Ewan's.

"Dad, stop the competition. Get him to admit defeat," Rachel said, unable to take it any longer.

Zoran looked at her but said nothing.

BOOM!

Suddenly, a thunder rumbled from afar.

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!

It was a bright and clear day, but suddenly dark clouds surrounded the Carter Mansion. Black flashes of lightning emitted from the clouds. It was terrifying, but it was clearly a phenomenon from the elixir production process upon a closer look!

Half of Mid City was shocked. Many people looked in awe and terror at the black bolts of lightning that struck down on the Carter Mansion.

Chapter 470

"My goodness! Someone must be making an extremely rare elixir!" someone exclaimed as they pointed to the sky.

It was common knowledge that producing elixirs will garner an Elixir Cloud, but they had never seen one that emitted lightning.

The entire Carter Mansion was dead silent.

Rachel's smile dropped as she trembled in disbelief. She could not believe her own eyes. How was this possible?

Darryl was nothing but a useless live-in son-in-law. How could his elixir producing skills be better than Ewan's? Rachel was shocked.

BUZZ!

While everyone was still in shock, Darryl's cauldron trembled aggressively. The cauldron broke in half, and out flew an elixir pill with lightning bolts.

Darryl caught it and smiled.

Everyone's focus was on the pill, and they were floored. The pill still had an electric arc discharge on it.

'Is this even a pill? It should be considered a magical elixir!' they thought.

"Amazing!" Zoran clapped in excitement, laughing cheerfully. "Darryl, quick. Tell us, what type of elixir is this?"

"Godfather, this is the Zeus Pill."

"What? Zeus Pill? Th-this is the Zeus Pill?" Ophelia shuddered.

According to ancient manuals, the Zeus Pill was a potent pill. Once consumed, your powers will triple for two hours! However, the methods for producing this pill were lost during the Tang Dynasty. It was said that many legendary warriors had consumed this pill to win wars.

Of course, the downside of the pill was that you could only take it once in your lifetime, as there would be dangerous consequences if you took it a second time. Nevertheless, it was still an extremely powerful pill that could even save your life in critical times.

Everyone was shocked.

Darryl smiled and passed the pill to Zoran, " Godfather, this is for you."

"Haha! Thank you! This is great!" Zoran was so

excited his hands were shaking.

Zoran turned to Ophelia with a smile. "Chairlady Lane, what do you make of this round?"

This was extremely unexpected as he thought his godson would lose. Who knew he would exceed everyone's expectations by garnering an Elixir Cloud with rumbling thunder and lightning.

Everyone looked at Ophelia. She started to come to her senses and lightly smiled. "Although it was unexpected, Darryl Darby is clearly the winner of this round. He is extremely talented and has a knack for producing elixirs."

Ewan's face flushed with humiliation and was left speechless. After all, Darryl's performance was much better than his. However, he was upset that he could not marry Rachel.

"Chairlady Lane, you are just and impartial. In that case, the marriage between Ewan and Rachel shall be void and never mentioned again," Zoran said with a smile.

"Dad!" Rachel was almost in tears! How could Ewan lose! She could not accept the truth, so she turned around and fled.

Chapter 471

Sara, on the other hand, was elated! She hugged Darryl's arm and praised, "You're amazing! Who knew you were so skilled at producing elixirs? Teach me next time!"

Darryl smiled at her and nodded. "Sure, sure! I'll teach you, but stop shaking me. My body can't handle it."

Sara laughed. She blushed and let him go as Ophelia approached him.

Darryl laughed, admiring her while checking out her alluring figure. "Chairlady Lane, you've lost the bet. Will you acknowledge me as your master by bowing down to me?

Ophelia's face flushed.

"Darryl, stop joking around!" Zoran exclaimed.

Ophelia was the highly-skilled and extremely powerful Chairlady of Jiangnan Elixir Association. How could she bow down and acknowledge a young guy like Darryl as her master?

Ophelia calmed herself down and pleaded, "Darryl, I really want you as my disciple. Will you think about

it?" She needed to have him as her disciple. If not, she would deeply regret not having such a talented student.

"I can't afford it." Darryl laughed and continued, " Though I won this competition, so you should acknowledge me as mast-"

He suddenly felt his throat being blocked, and no sound could escape his lips.

Ophelia whispered, "If you follow me, this Nine Day Yang Herb will be yours."

A flaming red herb was in her palm. Its aura was so powerful that it attracted everyone's gaze.

Everyone was stunned silent.

Darryl slowly came to his senses. He could not hide the excitement in his heart. He said hoarsely, "Is... is that the Nine Day Yin Yang Herb?"

The Nine Day Yin Yang Herb was one of the rarest herbs on earth. This herb only grew in the highest peak of the snowy mountains. It was extremely rare.

"Darryl, if I'm not mistaken, you've lost all your powers?" Ophelia smiled. "You might not be able to cultivate for the rest of your life. But, if you have the Nine Day Yin Yang Herb, you could regain your powers and continue cultivating."

"Haha! This must be fate! It's fate!" Zoran laughed.

He patted Darryl's shoulders and said, "Darryl, I knew it was only a matter of time when you could regain your powers! It must be luck that Chairlady Lane has the herb—you and Chairlady Lane are destined to be!"

Seeing that Darryl was still stunned, Zoran pressed on. "What are you waiting for? Acknowledge your master!"

As long as his godson regained his powers, him being Ophelia's disciple was not a bad thing at all. Furthermore, Ophelia had a wide network of connections. Her elixir producing skill was one of the best, Darryl would learn much from her.

Darryl took a deep breath, feeling overwhelmed. Even though he did not want to be Ophelia's disciple, she was his only hope—he had no other choice.

At that, Darryl bowed down to her. "Darryl Darby acknowledges Ophelia Lane as his master."

Ophelia was elated when he finally laid his ego to rest. She smiled in relief and nodded. "Good, good. My good disciple."

"Darryl, that's not how you do it. You have to bow properly." Ewan said coldly.

"Ewan," Ophelia interjected, smiling at Darryl. "I'll

forego these customs for now."

She handed the herb to Darryl.

Chapter 472

Darryl impatiently popped the herb into his mouth.

The thought of regaining his powers excited him. Yet, his powers did not revive as time passed by.

What was happening?

He looked at Ophelia curiously and asked, " Chairlady Lane, could this herb be ineffective? Why do I still have no Internal Energy?" Darryl was extremely anxious.

Zoran was equally puzzled. "Yes, why was there no effect?"

Ophelia chuckled as she looked at Darryl. "You have to call me Master."

"Yes, yes. Master." Darryl was helpless. He placed his hands around his energy field and said, "I don't feel any Internal Energy reviving."

Ophelia slowly took a sea and smiled. "My good disciple, did you know that the Nine Day Yin Yang Herb has two components? The Yin and the Yang. What I just gave you was the Yang Herb. Consuming only one part does not work. You need to have the Yin Herb as well."

What? Darryl was stunned. He looked at Ophelia in bewilderment.

Ophelia took out another herb. It was icy blue in color, a complete opposite from the flaming red Yang Herb.

Darryl looked at the Yin Herb and quickly said, " Thank you, Master!"

He was about to take the herb from Ophelia when she smiled and snatched the herb away.

Darryl was perplexed. "Master?"

"Darryl, do you know how rare the Nine Day Yin Yang Herb is? Do you think Master would give it to you for nothing in return?" Ewan said coldly.

The more he looked at Darryl, the more he disliked him. Darryl took things for granted.

Ophelia signaled for Ewan to stop. She smiled at Darryl and said, "Darryl, although you have called me your Master, I can't give you the Nine Day Yin Herb just yet. I'd still have to test you for some time."

She continued slowly, "In a month, Herard City will be having an Elixir Competition. This is the largest and most prestigious Elixir Competition. You will accompany me and take part in this competition."

Jiangnan Elixir Association was not the only association in the country. Many others would take part in this competition as well. Hence, this competition meant a lot to Ophelia.

Ophelia added, "Whether you get the Yin Herb depends on your performance from now till the competition. If you've done well, I'll give you this herb after the competition. Am I clear?"

"What do you mean by well?" Darryl asked.

"Respect your master," Ophelia replied condescendingly.

Chapter 473

"Of course, my wish is your command. You have to treat everything that I say seriously," Ophelia added. She knew that Darryl was a wild beast that needed to be tamed. He must have not wanted to become her disciple.

Hence, she needed to be strict with him. If not, it would be harder in the future.

At that, Darryl could say nothing but nod. He replied, "I will be obedient."

Whether he could regain his powers was up to Ophelia Lane. He had to obey her every command for now.

Ophelia was delighted with his answer. She smiled and nodded. "My good disciple."

Back in the Darby Mansion in Donghai City, Lily was extremely anxious and worried. When she woke up after passing out, she found herself in the mansion. Her first reaction was to leave the place, but it was guarded heavily. They would not let her go unless she had permission from the Patriarch.

She had not seen Drake Darby.

She turned around after hearing footsteps and saw

that it was Florian Darby. She did not have a good impression of him.

"Lily, don't be afraid," he reassured, approaching her with a smile. "Even though Darryl is completely evil, we will not hurt you to spite him."

When he said that, he sized her up. Florian wanted to find Lily, but Yumi—his wife—was by his side the entire time. He finally found a chance. Lily was a gorgeous woman who must have fallen from heaven!

Florian swallowed hard. He was enthralled.

Lily, on the other hand, was disgusted by him. She bit her lip and questioned, "Why are you keeping me here?"

Florian's eyes sparkled. He pretended to comfort Lily. "What's the rush? You're so weak. Stay here for a few days to get better, then I'll personally send you back. What do you say?"

Lily shook her head. "Thank you for your goodwill, but I want to leave."

Leave?

Florian laughed. He looked at Lily hungrily, admiring her attractive body.

He approached her. "Lily, why don't we-"

He was interrupted by one of the Darbys. He rushed in sweating and yelled, "Florian! Dax brought a hundred men into our mansion!"

What?

Florian was afraid but partially annoyed. He exclaimed, "What's there to be afraid of?" He walked to the living area.

In the living room, Dax had an ax in his hands. Behind him were hundreds of men. They scared the Darby followers half to death.

"Dax, how bold you are! Do you think the Darbys could be bullied so easily?" Florian yelled as he rushed into the living area. Looking at the number of men Dax brought, he was terrified, but he pretended to be calm.

Drake and the other powerful followers left the mansion to attend to some business, which left Florian alone and clearly outnumbered.

Dax frowned. "Stop with your nonsense. Where is Lily?"

The news of Darryl causing a scene at Yvonne's wedding had spread throughout Donghai City. Dax did not attend the wedding, but he heard of the news.

Darryl was attacked. Dax did not know if he was

dead or alive. Lily was kidnapped by the Darbys, so Dax immediately gathered his men and rushed to the Darby Mansion.

"Why would Lily be here?" Florian played dumb. As he said that, a petite silhouette appeared from the backyard. F*ck. He forgot to ask someone to keep an eye on Lily.

"Dax!" Lily was overjoyed. She quickly walked up to him as tears fell from her cheeks.

Dax let out a breath of relief as he signaled for his men to escort Lily out.

He turned to Florian and threatened, "Darryl has been taken away by his godfather. If anything were to happen to him. I'll make the Darbys pay." He waved his ax, crushing the front door to pieces.

So what if the Darbys were cultivators? If anything happened to Darryl, they all would pay!

Florian let out an annoyed sigh as Dax left. He had crashed the Darby Mansion a couple of times. It was a huge insult!

"F*ck you, you bunch of losers! You can't even guard the mansion properly!" Florian yelled at everyone. He wanted to have a taste of Lily, but he lost his chance!

For the past two days, Darryl reflected on the past.

He repeatedly lost whenever he fought, but it was not because of his powers. It was because he lacked backup support.

There were so many followers among the Six orthodox sects, yet he was alone! So, he came to a bold decision—he was going to form his own sect!

As the founder and head of the sect, he would finally have the backup support he needed!

If only he could get the Dixon brothers—Zephyr, Nimbus, Levin, and Volt—to join his sect, that would be great! As long as he gave them each a Godly Pill, he would have four Martial Marquis under him!

Chapter 474

Darryl packed up, hailed a taxi, and left for Yunzhou City to convince the Dixon brothers. He had to make them join his sect no matter what. As long as they agreed, he could take the first step in forming his own sect. The four of them were locked up in the Dixon Mansion, a short ride away from the Carter Mansion.

His phone rang as he entered the taxi. He frowned upon seeing that it was Pearl Hahn. She was left in charge of the Platinum Corporation. Usually, she would only call if there were issues that she could not solve, which were rare.

When he picked up, Pearl started to ramble anxiously. "President, I have bad news. The entire Donghai City has teamed up to boycott the Platinum Corporation. We're currently running at a huge loss! Our stars like Giselle Lindt and Lana Thomas are being canceled from deals, and many others were pulled out. What should we do?"

Pearl was almost in tears.

What? Darryl was furious. He clenched his fist. He did not need to take a guess to know who were the ones that were boycotting him.

After a short while, he comforted Pearl and reassured her, "Pearl, don't panic. Since we can't survive in Donghai City, come to Yunzhou City."

Yunzhou City used to be under the Dixons' reign, but now that they were destroyed, Darryl could do whatever he liked.

Darryl paused. "When you're in Yunzhou City, set up a new entertainment corporation under your name. Name it Storm Entertainment.

"Also, let Giselle and Lana know that as long as I'm here, I will guarantee them a bright career." He hung up.

This mansion in Yunzhou City belonged to the Dixons, but no one has lived here since they were destroyed.

Currently, two rows of men in black stood in line at the front door. The man that was leading them was Caelan Lewis.

When Darryl got down from the taxi, they greeted him in unison. "Master!"

Darryl nodded. They led him to the warehouse where the four Dixon brothers were locked up. When they opened the door of the warehouse, Darryl felt a strong force of aura.

They were tied up in thick, strong chains. Seeing

that the door was opened, they let out a strong force of aura.

Darryl could hardly breathe, but he tried to calm himself down. He smiled at them and exclaimed, "I'm so sorry that I took so long to come."

They did not reply but glared at him coldly.

Darryl slapped his forehead and apologized, "Oh, I'm sorry. I forgot to introduce myself. I'm Darryl Darby."

"F*ck you, Darryl Darby!" They were enraged.

"So, you're the one that destroyed the entire Dixon family! I will not let you live!" Zephyr screamed.

The other three were equally aggravated, struggling to get out of their chains—if they were not tied up, they would have ran and killed Darryl.

Chapter 475

The four of them yelled at Darryl endlessly. If they were untied, Darryl would already be dead by now.

Darryl laughed but did not say anything. He let them release their anger.

When they were almost done yelling, he pulled a bench over and sat in front of them. "In your eyes, I should die because I killed the Dixon family. But, let me ask you, the Dixons killed and robbed many innocent civilians. Did those people deserve to die?"

The four of them looked at each other, unable to answer. Darryl was right. The Dixons were infamous evildoers in Yunzhou City for many years.

Darryl continued, "Also, you four! You enabled the Dixons! Do you know how much trouble you four have caused in Yunzhou City?"

The Dixon brothers could not retort. Darryl was right.

Darryl smiled and said slowly, "Why don't the four of you follow me? We'll do the right things together."

What? In the end, it was just a recruitment pep talk.

"You can stop. We would rather die than be your b* tch. Kill us now," Volt spat.

Darryl frowned. These four were a hard bunch to convince. He had to persuade them no matter what.

He sighed and took out a key to unchain them. They were freed but also confused.

'Not only did he let us live, but he let us go as well? '

Volt threatened, "You let us go, you're not afraid that we'll kill you?"

Darryl said sincerely, "Guys, I never thought of killing any of you. On the other hand, I really respect you. Although you did many bad things, you were all brave and bold people. I respect all of you."

Darryl sighed, his face full of regret. "I admire loyal people. I know that the four of you are not bad people. You've just followed the wrong people. I sincerely invite you to join me to do good together. But, if you disagree with me, I can't do anything. I can't bear to kill all of you, so you guys can leave."

Darryl moved aside to let them pass through. They were stunned. They wanted to kill Darryl when he released them, but after hearing what he said, they could not do it!

Darryl was right about them being loyal and

sentimental.

It was dead silent in the warehouse. Darryl seemed calm, but he was immensely anxious. If the four of them ganged up on him, he would not survive. They were all Level Five Master Generals; even Caelan would not be able to fight them.

Zephyr took a deep breath and asked, "When you said you wanted to do good, what did you mean?"

"Do good for mankind! Justice for them!" Darryl laughed.

'They must feel extremely guilty for all the things they have done previously,' he thought.

They looked at him curiously. Darryl continued, "I want to form a sect of my own, and its purpose is to bring justice for humanity and to do good. Are you interested?"

Chapter 476

Creating a sect? Doing good? Justice for mankind?

At Darryl's words, the brothers looked at each other. In their excitement with that idea, they felt something burn within them.

Darryl revealed four pills. They were all Godly pills!

The brothers were utterly stunned. They knew that the pill was worth billions and that it was extremely rare, so how did Darryl have four of them?

Darryl smiled as he gave them a Godly pill each. "I know that you have been stuck as Level Five Master Generals for quite some time, so please accept this as a small gift."

For them? They were shocked yet excited.

They had been stuck at Level Five for almost a year! When they were caught, they lost hope of breaking through any further. Who knew that they would not only be released but given a Godly Pill too?

Zephyr could no longer hold back. He held up a clutched fist with respect. "Brother Darryl, we will not forget the good you have bestowed upon us," he exclaimed, "From now on, we will follow you.

Your wish is our command!"

"Me too!"

"I will follow Brother Darryl!"

They bowed in gratitude.

"Awesome!" Darryl cheered. He stood up and said, " By the way, don't call me Brother Darryl anymore."

What? What should they call him then? They were stunned.

Darryl took a long breath. His name had a terrible reputation among other cultivators. They speculated that he ganged up with the Eternal Life Palace to kill his grandfather. He had to give himself a new name.

Darryl shook his head. He thought for a while and declared, "From today onwards, I am Indomitable Darby!"

Everyone wanted to be indomitable. It was a good name—simple yet powerful.

"Great!" The brothers nodded and asked, "But what shall we call our sect?"

To do good, to guard the gates of heaven, why not... Elysium Gate?

"We shall name it Elysium Gate," Darryl said. "In

the future, just call me Master. I shall appoint you four as The Four Warlords!"

They looked at each other and knelt down immediately. They praised Darryl, "All hail our Master!"

Darryl waved. "Spread the news of the newly formed Elysium Gate sect. Tell them, as long as they join our sect, everyone gets a Black Spirit Pill!"

What? A Black Spirit Pill for every member? How generous!

The Black Spirit Pill could only be consumed once. It would cause the user's powers and speed to increase tremendously!

It was not hard to imagine that many would want to join the Elysium Gate when the news had spread!

Chapter 477

"Don't worry, Master. We will not disappoint you!" They exclaimed in unison.

"Great!" Darryl was pleased. He added, "Instead of the Dixon Mansion, this place shall be named the Elysium Mansion from now on. This place shall be our temporary altar. Alright, go forth and recruit!"

Darryl turned around and left.

The news of the Elysium Gate sect spread throughout the city within three days.

Members were each awarded a Black Spirit pill as long as they joined the sect, making it hard for any cultivator to resist!

Many powerful and strong cultivators came to pay a visit. In just three days, the Elysium Gate sect had a foot in the cultivating world!

The Sect Master-Indomitable Darby-was famous as well! No one knew who he was, where he came from, nor his cultivating rank. The most mysterious thing about him was that even the followers had not met him in person. He would wear a gold mask whenever he appeared.

In three days, the Elysium Gate managed to recruit

thousands of followers. Though the followers were merely low-ranking Masters or Master Generals, it was not to be underestimated!

In the Xiaoyao Sect, Naomi Grand sat gracefully at the throne.

The row of elders in front of her was engaged in a heated discussion.

She looked at them and interrupted, "A new sect named the Elysium Gate was recently formed. Its rise was meteoric—garnering thousands of followers in such a short time. The head of the sect, Indomitable Darby, is even more mysterious. Does anyone have any information on him?"

The elders looked at each other in confusion. No one said anything. The head of the elders stood up and explained, "Master, we were just discussing this. Apparently, those who joined the Elysium Gate sect got a Black Spirit Pill each. As for their sect master, we have not heard of him before."

"Oh? Indomitable Darby, such an arrogant name!" Naomi frowned.

Yvonne Young had just returned to the Youngs residence in Donghai City. She was utterly dejected. Ever since the incident during her wedding, she had been depressed ever since.

She went to look for Lily to ask about Darryl's

situation. She was distraught when she heard that there was no news from him.

When she entered the living room, Kingston said excitedly, "Yvonne! Have you heard? A new sect was formed! It's called Elysium Gate!

"This Elysium Gate is terrific! The four Dixon brothers joined them. They were all Level Five Master Generals—no, they're all Level One Martial Marquis now! Apparently, if you join them, you'll get a Black Spirit Pill!

"The most crucial thing is, do you know what the Sect Master is called? Indomitable Darby! Don't you think that it's a powerful name?"

Kingston blabbed on, yet Yvonne did not listen. She walked up to her room.

Her mind was filled with Darryl. She had no interest in other matters.

Kingston was helpless. He tried many ways to get his daughter to talk, but she only ignored him. He sat down and sighed, not knowing what she saw in Darryl. Now that he was an ordinary person, he did not deserve to be with Yvonne.

Kingston picked up the papers and continued reading. He was an old-school man who still read newspapers daily. The Elysium Gate sect was in the

papers constantly for the past few days.

Chapter 478

In the Carter Mansion in Mid City, Darryl was humming a song. He went to the living area after Zoran called him to come over quickly.

When he arrived, he saw Zoran laughing with a beautiful woman. She was exquisite! She was wearing a long yellow dress, looking incredibly regal. If he guessed correctly, she should be Zoran's wife—Susan Creek!

Other than the two of them, there were three other people. Rachel, Sara, and Ewan.

'F*ck, why is this guy here again?' Darryl thought.

"Darryl!" Sara called him cheerfully. She ran up to him and tugged on his arm. She pouted and asked, " Where have you been all this while! I've missed you!"

Darryl patted her head lovingly. He then turned and bowed politely to Zoran and Susan. "Godfather, Godmother."

Susan nodded and smiled as she looked at Darryl. She heard that her husband had a new godson. This was the first time that she met him. He gave her a good impression; he was polite and handsome.

"Godmother makes me sound old. Why not call me Auntie Susan instead?" She smiled.

"Alright, Auntie Susan."

He could see that Susan was a kind and friendly person. It was his first time meeting her, so he should have brought a gift for her. He scratched his head since he did not take anything with him.

While Darryl was in deep thought, Zoran stood up and said, "Darryl, I called you here to discuss something important with you. From today onwards, Susan will teach you Formations."

Formation? Darryl was extremely excited! Formations were powerful skills. Throughout history, many legendary warriors have used Formations to win wars and battles.

"Auntie Susan knows about Formations?" Darryl was surprised.

Zoran laughed. "You don't know this, but she is extremely skilled in Formations! There is no one better than her!"

He continued, "She needs to pass her skills down. Sara and Rachel have been learning from her every noon. Why don't you join in from now on?"

"Great! Great!" Darryl exclaimed.

Now that his own sect had almost a thousand followers, they could easily overpower tens of thousands of people, or even more once he learned a few Formations!

Susan chuckled. "Alright! Sara, Rachel, Darryl, and Ewan, wait for me in the study. Ewan, you can listen while I'm explaining as well. I have not seen you in a while, so stay here for a few more days!"

"Thank you, Auntie Susan!" Ewan was grateful. Now he could see Rachel, and learn about Formation —it was a rare opportunity!

Chapter 479

When the four of them left, Zoran hugged Susan from behind. "Susan, I think Darryl's a great guy," he whispered, "I've decided for Rachel to marry him, what do you think?"

What? Susan shuddered.

Rachel—her eldest daughter—and Ewan's relationship was close to marriage, and their entire family knew about this. Why did he suddenly change his mind?

Susan thought to herself and asked, "Does Rachel know? How does she feel about this?"

"She's very against it. She only wants to marry Ewan, so I thought you could convince her," Zoran laughed bitterly.

"She likes Ewan, so why are you forcing her to marry Darryl? Ewan is a great man as well—Rachel marrying Ewan won't be an embarrassment."

Susan loved both of her daughters very much. She did not want to force them to marry someone they do not like.

"I suggest that you let Rachel marry Ewan," Susan

sighed as she left the room.

In the study, Susan explained Formations to her children. This was the first time Darryl has learned about Formations, so he was attentive to Susan's every word. When the class ended, Darryl left to his bedroom to continue practicing what he had learned.

In the evening in the Carter Mansion's backyard, Rachel and Ewan held hands and gazed deeply into each other's eyes. No one else was there, so they did not have to worry.

"Rachel, Rachel, I love you so much. I love you more and more every day. I'm so frustrated that your father wants you to marry Darryl," Ewan proclaimed. His heart ached terribly. How was he going to live if Rachel married Darryl?

"Ewan. I love you too. I will not marry him," Rachel replied firmly. She was annoyed just at the thought of Darryl.

"But, it's hard to disobey your father's word. You would still need your parents' permission to offer your hand in marriage," Ewan added.

Rachel held Ewan's hand tightly, deep in thought. Suddenly, she exclaimed, "I have an idea! We'll make Darryl disappear forever!" Her eyes lit up.

Ewan smiled in surprise. "What idea?" He trembled

as he spoke, excited at the thought of Darryl vanishing for good!

Rachel smirked. "In the North-East corner of the Carter Mansion, there lies an ancient peach blossom forest. It has been there for thousands of years—those who enter will never be able to come back out.

"It's a forbidden part of our mansion. When I was young, I remembered a few servants mistakenly went into it, and I have not seen them since. I'll go find Darryl later, and we'll trick him into entering the forest. We won't see him for the rest of our lives!"

Chapter 480

What magical peach blossom forest was this? Ewan was overjoyed at her idea.

"Rachel, we'll go according to your plan. We'll trick Darryl to enter the forest!" he beamed.

It was a great idea! They quickly headed to Darryl's room.

Darryl had just finished showering. He was dressed in his pajamas, about to head to bed.

Slam!

Rachel opened the door without knocking. Darryl swore under his breath and smiled. "My dear sister, what's the matter?"

"Who's your sister?" Rachel frowned as she asked in detest. Darryl was utterly disgusting to her.

Darryl shrugged and asked, "I'm your godbrother. If you're not my sister, then what are you?"

Rachel glared at him. "Dad wants you to meet him at the peach blossom forest," she scoffed.

She had discussed this thoroughly with Ewan. If she mentioned her father, Darryl would not suspect

anything.

It went as planned. Darryl was slightly stunned and asked, "What does dad want? Also, what is this peach blossom forest?"

"Just follow me," she spat impatiently as she turned around to leave.

Darryl quickly changed his clothes and followed her. They walked for close to half an hour! It was in the furthest, deepest corner of the Carter Mansion.

They came to the entrance of the forest. It was vast and stretched out endlessly. No one knew how huge this peach blossom forest truly was.

There was a huge, ten-meter-tall tablet erected at the entrance of the forest. It read, 'Forbidden! No Entry!'

Forbidden? Darryl was slightly confused.

"Dad is waiting for you inside," Rachel muttered. " Go ahead."

Darryl asked, "What? Me alone? Are you not coming along as well?"

"Of course, it's only you! I wanted to go too, but dad said only you could enter," Rachel replied impatiently.

Ring! Ring!

Darryl's phone rang suddenly. It was from Nancy, Dax's wife.

He was perplexed as to why she would call all of a sudden. He picked up immediately.

"Darryl, something happened to Dax, come quick!" She rambled on in panic, sounding as if she had been crying.

What? Darryl was shocked. He replied, "Don't panic, what happened?"

"A few days after the incident at the wedding, Lily was kidnapped by Florian. Dax caught wind of it and led a hundred men to the Darby Mansion to rescue Lily.

"Today, Florian convinced the Six orthodox sects that Dax was the closest to you. Ever since you let the Golden Lion go, they believed you have connections with the Eternal Life Palace. Since Dax was close to you, they assumed Dax had joined the cult too.

"Abbess Mother Serendipity brought many followers to the Sanders Mansion today. They killed many followers. Dax was badly hurt by Abbess Mother Serendipity too! What should I do? Dax is bleeding everywhere and I'm worried he might not survive!" Nancy sobbed uncontrollably.

F*ck! Darryl was furious. “I’m coming now!” He yelled and hung up.

Chapter 481

Though he had no Internal Energy, he could not sit around and watch Dax die! He loathed Abbess Mother Serendipity and her gang. He had already left Donghai City, yet she still tried to go after him.

Darryl was extremely furious. He was about to turn and leave when Rachel called out to him.

"Darryl, my dad is still waiting for you. Where are you going?"

"Tell dad that something urgent came up!" Darryl said anxiously.

"Do you think I'm your messenger?" Rachel snickered. "If there's anything, you can tell him yourself."

Darryl frowned. "I'll explain it to him when I'm back." Dax was in danger. He had to help him.

"Move!" Darryl yelled at Rachel.

"What if I don't?" Rachel smirked maliciously.

"I said, move!" Darryl shouted once more.

Rachel replied coldly, "You're going nowhere today." She clapped her hands.

Suddenly, a shadow appeared from the corner. It was Ewan.

He grabbed Darryl and lifted him up above his head.

"What are you doing?" Darryl was caught by surprise. Without his Internal Energy, he could not fight back.

"What am I doing? Making you vanish from this earth!" Ewan threw Darryl into the forest.

Bam!

Darryl landed tens of meters away. When he landed, his bones almost broke—he saw stars.

He was livid, not having the Internal Energy to fight back. He slowly stood up, but when he saw what went on, he was bewildered.

A peach blossom tree flashed by before him. The trees were moving!

He blinked hard.

When he opened his eyes again, he saw that every tree was moving about as if they had legs of their own.

What was happening?

He tried to look toward the direction which he came from, but it was long gone. Rachel and Ewan had

vanished, and only the trees remained. No matter where he walked, he could not find the entrance of the forest. There was no cell signal either.

Darryl finally came to a realization that he was tricked by Rachel and Ewan! He was furious and anxious—he did not know whether Dax was dead or alive.

Chapter 482

Darryl panicked. If anything happened to Dax, he would regret this for the rest of his life!

"Rachel Carter, let me out!" Darryl screamed, but no one replied.

"F*ck!" He punched a tree. Seeing as the sun was about to set, he could only walk in a straight line. He thought that the forest was like a maze; as long as he walked in a straight line, he was definitely bound to find the entrance!

He walked briskly, yet after half an hour, there was still no entrance in sight. There were only never-ending trees! It was strange. A thirty-minute walk in the Carter Mansion could lead to the entrance, yet he could not get out of the forest. Unless it was some sort of Formation?

"F*ck, I don't believe in that." Darryl gritted his teeth. He turned on his phone's torchlight and walked forward again.

Back in the Carter Mansion, the Carter family was about to have dinner. Zoran instructed the chef to prepare a feast.

Everyone was there except for Darryl.

Zoran scanned the table and frowned. "Where's Darryl?"

A maidservant anxiously replied, "Master, I went to his room, but he was not there. I could not find him anywhere around the house."

Zoran was puzzled. "That's strange. How could you not find him? Did he leave?"

Whenever Darryl left, he would let Zoran know. Darryl never once left without notifying him. Zoran took his phone and dialed his number, but the call could not go through.

Susan tried to comfort him. "Don't worry, we'll get our men to look for him."

Zoran nodded. He instructed a few maidservants, " Go. Look for him."

"Dad..." Rachel interrupted. She stood up and said, " Don't bother looking for him. My guess is that Darryl left without telling us. How rude."

Rachel smiled faintly as she thought to herself. 'He was stuck in the peach blossom forest. You won't be able to find him for the rest of your lives!'

"Darryl is a polite person! If he had left, he would have told us," Sara chimed in and added, "Since he did not notify us, it means he's still here!"

Rachel pursed her lips and retorted, "Sara, you think too highly of that live-in son-in-law. Think about it; that miser must have felt extremely inferior while living here, so he left-"

"That's enough," Zoran interrupted. "Rachel, how could you talk about your godbrother that way? Let me tell you, Darryl comes from a huge family—the famous Darbys."

"So what? He was kicked out..." Rachel muttered.

Just then, one of the servants quickly approached them and said anxiously, "Master, I stumbled upon footprints at the entrance of the peach blossom forest! Could it be from Darryl?"

What?

Chapter 483

Zoran stood up immediately. Susan's face turned white as she asked, "Are you sure you saw footprints?"

The peach blossom forest was an intricate Formation! Those who went in would never return!

When she married Zoran, she wanted to understand the Formation of the forest. She spent many years researching it, yet she found no solution.

A few years ago, several servants went in out of curiosity. They were never seen again.

There was no cell signal in the forest, neither could one use their Internal Energy. No matter how strong their Internal Energy was, they could not fly in there! Hence, the Carters set up a colossal tablet a while ago at the forest entrance to prevent people from entering.

Darryl could read, so why did he go in?

The servant replied dutifully, "Madam, there was really a set of footprints at the entrance of the forest. As for who it belongs to, I'm not so sure."

"What... what should we do now?" Zoran was

anxious. He quickly headed toward the forest. He could not let anything happen to his godson. Anything!

Everyone followed Zoran, except for Rachel and Susan.

Susan took a sip of tea. She lightly pursed her lips and asked, "Rachel, tell me the truth. Did you trick Darryl into entering the forest?"

Susan was not only great in Formations, she was amazing at reading others. Her instinct told her that it was Rache who led him into the forest. After all, Darryl was not an idiot. He must have had seen the sign, yet he still entered. 1

Rachel trembled in fear. How did her mother know?

She looked down and stuttered, "Mom, I...I did not."

Susan put her cup down and pressed further. "Don't lie to me. You blush when you lie. Why did you do that?"

Rachel bit her l. Shehe could only confess. "Dad wants me to marry him, but I like Ewan. Mom, did I do anything wrong?"

Susan sighed. "Even so, you should not have brought him to the peach blossom forest. You know that no one could come out of there alive. You know your dad's temper. If he knew what you did, he

would have beaten you to death!" 1

Rachel's face turned white upon realizing her mistake. If her dad knew she was the one that killed Darryl, she was done for.

"Mom, are you going to tell dad about this?" Rachel asked timidly.

Susan chuckled. "I'll keep your secret. But, you have to promise me that you'll never do anything silly like this again. You got it?"

After all, Darryl was only a godson. Rachel was her biological daughter.

Rachel let out a sigh of relief as she hugged Susan and cried, "Thank you, Mom!"

Chapter 484

Zoran stood at the entrance of the peach blossom forest entrance scrutinizing the footprints. There was sand everywhere, and he could not see if it belonged to Darryl or not.

He was about to enter the forest when he was pulled back by his servants. One of them said, "Master, we can't be sure that it was Darryl who entered the forest. What would happen if you got stuck in the forest?"

Zoran calmed down at that thought and pondered for a while. "Arrange for people to guard this entrance at all times," he ordered, "Get someone to search for Darryl outside of this mansion."

"Yes, Master."

Zoran was extremely discouraged. He did not want to believe that the footprints belonged to Darryl, yet all signs pointed to his godson being trapped in the forest.

He was anxious and worried.

After three days, Darryl was still stuck here, leaning onto a peach blossom tree. His lips were cracked. He almost went insane.

He tried all sorts of ways to escape but still failed. Without any Internal Energy, Darryl was tired and thirsty. His energy was almost depleted. It did not help that he saw plenty of bones and remains everywhere—clearly from those that accidentally entered the forest.

Was he really going to be stuck here forever? He laid down in despair. He was exhausted and immensely worried for Dax.

He wanted to shut his eyes, but he was afraid that once he closed his eyes, he might never be able to open them again.

Just then, he noticed a well located a few meters away from him out of the corner of his eye.

'F*ck, a well?'

He used all his might to stand up and approach the well. If he could at least get some water, that would be lifesaving!

He was taken aback as he looked into the well. The well was deep, but the water was little. The only way to drink the water was to enter into the well!

He entered the well and let himself down slowly. When he reached the bottom of the well, the water was up to his knees. The floor of the well was covered with moss, clearly unused for ages. Darryl

did not care if the water was drinkable as he cupped his hands and gulped down the water. He finally felt much better.

Chapter 485

While he drank the water, he felt his leg touch something hard. He thought it was rock, so he bent down to pick it up.

He was surprised. It was a small, bronze rectangular cauldron! It was covered with moss from being submerged underwater, but he could still see the intricacies on it.

It looked like it was from the Warring States period.

What piqued Darryl's curiosity further was that there was a bronze box in the cauldron. A bronze box, in a cauldron, buried deep underwater in a well? It was fascinating!

Darryl did not think twice when he opened the box. He was shocked to find that the box was sealed tightly. No water entered it, and there was a book of bamboo slips inside.

What could it be?

Darryl flipped the book open. 'Bai Qi Formations' was written on the first page.

Bai Qi Formation? Darryl's mind began to buzz with excitement. It was said that the ancient, legendary

General Bai Qi was highly skilled in Formations. Before he died, he wrote down all the Formations he knew, and it was called Bai Qi Formations.

Furthermore, it was only a myth! Since Bai Qi died, no one ever saw the book. Could this be it?

Darryl was curious. He started reading through it—it was indeed the same book!

Darryl was overjoyed! He hit the jackpot! What made Bai Qi so legendary was his skills in Formation. He used that to win many battles!

He was soon deeply engrossed in the book.

According to the bamboo slips, Formations could be divided into two categories: Offense and Defense Formation.

Like its name, Offense Formation were Formations that had a more aggressive attack. For example, Wudang sect's Big Dipper Formation.

There were other Formations, such as the Trap Formation. It was a Formation to trap people in. It appeared that this very peach blossom forest was a Formation by Bai Qi from thousands of years ago. He had trapped many since then, and no one could break out of this Formation.

It seemed as if Darryl was still lucky he survived so far.

The Bai Qi Formations described many Formations in detail and how to use it. Darryl was deeply engrossed in it, and the time flew past him.

Three days later, he finally put the book down. He drank some water and climbed out of the well. He managed to fully master the Bai Qi Formations within three days.

If he was not mistaken, the peach blossom forest was under the Dragon Trap Formation.

"Left, three. Right, one," Darryl mumbled to himself. He took three steps to the left and one step to the right.

"Front, seven. Left, two. Back, three. Right, six..."

In a short while, he escaped the forest!

Chapter 486

Thud!

Once he escaped the forest, he fell and sat on the ground. He had not eaten in almost a week, surviving only on water—he was hungry and exhausted.

Nevertheless, he was elated. At least he survived!

"Young Master?"

"...Young Master appeared!" One of the servants exclaimed. They were extremely shocked as if they saw a ghost.

"Quick, let Master know!" one of them screamed.

Darryl felt weak. He gritted his teeth, fished his phone out, and made a call to Dax.

He could not reach Dax, so he called Nancy—it was the same; they turned off both their phones.

'F*ck you, Rachel Carter. If anything were to happen to Dax, I will never forgive you!' Darryl swore.

He grunted. He could only get someone else in Donghai City to check up on Dax. At that, he called

Zephyr Dixon. He picked up the call within three seconds.

"Master!" Zephyr greeted excitedly. "Where have you been? We've been trying to contact you, Master! We have good news. The Elysium Gate sect has close to three thousand followers!"

"Let's not talk about this. I have something urgent. I want the four of you to head to Sanders Mansion in Donghai City to check up on Dax Sanders. Now!"

"Yes, Master!" Zephyr replied and hung up.

A few servants carried Darryl into the living room. The entire family was already gathered there. Zoran approached Darryl and put his hands on him. " Darryl! Are you alright?" he exclaimed.

Darryl could not say anything. He looked at the dishes on the table, completely forgetting all his manners as he started gulping down the food.

Zoran's heart ached since he knew Darryl had been starving for quite some time. He said gently, " Darryl, slow down."

"Darryl, I knew you would be fine! Try this. It's amazing." Sara took some food for Darryl. She was overjoyed.

The rest were utterly stunned, looking at Darryl in utter disbelief. How could he have possibly escaped

from the peach blossom forest?

Rachel's face was especially dark. She did not expect that he would be able to get out!

Susan bit her lip as she was panicking silently. She was worried that if Darryl told Zoran about how Rachel tricked him, Rachel would be doomed. What could she do? Susan did not expect Darryl to survive this incident as well.

Susan smiled and asked softly, "Darryl, how did you get out?" She avoided asking him how he managed to end up there instead, hoping it would distract him.

Everyone was looking at Darryl eagerly, especially Zoran. After all, the peach blossom forest was an extremely skilled Formation. No one could crack it in thousands of years.

Chapter 487

The fact that his godson came out alive was a miracle.

Darryl smiled. "Auntie Susan, I don't know how I came out. I got lost in it, but I just randomly walked about, then I found the entrance. I guess it was just pure luck," he said nonchalantly.

He was not going to tell how he mastered the Bai Qi Formations.

Susan laughed, "That's amazing. You have to know, we were worried about you for many days! You must be exhausted. Go get some rest!" She looked at him with concern. In fact, she was trying to distract Darryl, not giving her husband a chance to ask Darryl anything.

However, Zoran still questioned him. "Darryl, there was a huge sign at the forest entrance stating that it was forbidden to enter. How did you get in?"

'Damn it!' Susan trembled. Her worst fear came true.

At the same time, Darryl's phone rang. It was from Zephyr.

"Dad, I'm a bit tired. I'll head upstairs to get some

rest," Darryl mumbled. He wanted to take the call in private.

"Go, go!" Zoran pestered him to rest, although he was curious. He ordered servants to carry Darryl back up when he heard how exhausted he was.

In his bedroom, Darryl laid on the bed and picked up the call.

Zephyr was slightly anxious. "Master, when we arrived at the Sanders Mansion, there was blood everywhere. Clearly, a battle had just taken place. The wall was full of slash marks."

He paused for a while and continued, "We could not find a single soul at the mansion, but we found out what happened."

"What happened?" Darryl asked impatiently.

"Apparently, a few days ago, Emei sect's Abbess Mother Serendipity wreaked havoc at the Sanders Mansion. She accused Dax of joining the Eternal Life Palace. Dax was stabbed a few times, and he passed out. We're not sure if he's dead or alive. The Abbess ordered that he and his wife, Nancy, along with his grandfather Saul, were to be captured for interrogation."

"Where did she take them to?" Darryl asked.

"That, I'm not sure," Zephyr answered somberly.

Darryl's eyes were red as he said coldly, "Find out for me. Search for them. Even if you have to search the entire Jiangnan, you have to rescue Dax at all cost!"

"Yes, Master! We will succeed!" Zephyr exclaimed politely.

Darryl threw his phone on his bed. He was furious.

Then, a soft knock came from his door. He thought it might be Sara coming to play with him. He was surprised to find Susan instead.

"Auntie Susan," Darryl said with a confused smile. What was going on? It's late, why did she come here alone?

"Can I come in?" Susan asked politely. She did not wait for Darryl to answer as she entered and locked the door.

Chapter 488

Susan walked toward his bed and sat on it. She looked at Darryl and asked, "Darryl, you seemed weak when you first came out of the forest. How are you feeling now?"

Darryl was stunned. If Susan came all the way to his room to ask how he felt, why did she lock the door?

"I feel much better after a great meal," he chuckled.

Susan nodded and smiled. "That's a relief."

They looked at each other for some time, sitting together in silence. Darryl could take it no longer. He laughed awkwardly and asked, "Auntie Susan, is there anything I could help you with?"

Susan bit her lip. She came here for Rachel. If Darryl had spread the news about how Rachel tricked him into entering the forest, she would definitely be beaten to death by her father. She had to stop him no matter what.

She gritted her teeth and poured Darryl a cup of tea. She walked towards him and offered him the cup. " Darryl, here. Have some tea."

What?

Darryl was slightly caught off guard. He looked at her in confusion and asked, "Auntie Susan, what's the matter?"

Susan was only a step away from Darryl. He could even smell the perfume on her.

Susan looked down and mumbled, "Darryl, I have a favor to ask of you."

"What favor?" Darryl asked.

Susan was quiet before she said slowly, "Could you not tell your godfather that Rachel tricked you into the peach blossom forest?"

It was about this! Darryl clenched his fist tightly, completely livid.

"No," Darryl said firmly. He did not give it a second thought.

"You!" Susan stomped her feet. She immediately softened her tone. "Darryl, please, I"m begging you."

Back in Donghai City, Abbess Mother Serendipity captured the Sanders in the Darby Mansion. Dax, Nancy, and Saul were tied to a wooden stake in the backyard. They were weak and drenched with blood.

Tens of Emei sect followers surrounded them, glaring at them coldly.

Jean Xander—one of Abbess Mother Serendipity's disciples—trudged toward Dax with a whip in her hand. "Tell us, what connections do you have with the Eternal Life Palace?" she interrogated, "Why did Darryl let the Golden Lion go?"

For the past few days, the Emei followers had tried all sorts of ways to get Dax to confess. However, he kept insisting he had no relationship whatsoever with the Eternal Life Palace. Abbess Mother Serendipity had other business to attend to, so before she left. She instructed Jean to interrogate Dax.

Dax snickered. He spat out blood as he spoke, "I've told you many times. Darryl and I have nothing to do with the Eternal Life Palace! What don't you f* cking understand?

"The Emei sect is considered a righteous sect. How could you kidnap people without knowing the truth? Now, you've coerced us into admitting something we did not do. Don't you think the Emei sect would be the butt of the joke if word gets out?"

Slap!

Jean whipped Dax. The whip was stained with his blood. Dax gritted his teeth, but he did not scream in agony.

It was painful, no doubt, but he was annoyed and

insulted. He ruled over Donghai City. How could he be humiliated like this?

Jean growled, "How dare you deny it? You and Darryl clearly had connections with them!" She whipped Dax again.

Chapter 489

Whip!

This whip was heavier than the previous one. Jean felt that it was not enough; she became berserk.

Whip! Whip! Whip!

The sound echoed throughout the backyard of the Darby Mansion.

Dax could not take it any longer. "F*ck all of you!" he screamed. "You watch out, I'll make sure to kill you when I get out!"

"You dare talk back?" Jean frowned. She said coldly, "Fine, you can take it, right? Then I'll whip your wife and grandfather!"

Nancy let out a bloodcurdling shriek as Jean whipped her shoulder. Dax completely lost it—he was wild and furious. He tried to loosen himself, but it was impossible. He was bound to the stake tightly.

Jean smiled malevolently. "Dax, say, if I whip your grandfather, would you feel bad for him?"

She was about to whip Saul when a dagger flew past her. The blade slashed through Jean's whip, cutting

it in half before embedding itself to the wall.

"Who dares interfere with the Emei's business?" Jean yelled out loud.

Loud footsteps were heard, and the door was kicked open.

Slam!

The Emei followers were stunned.

A thousand men in black Chinese jackets rushed in. Leading the men were the four Dixon brothers—Zephyr, Nimbus, Levin, and Volt. They were ordered to save Dax no matter what. They found out that Dax was kidnapped and brought to the Darby Mansion, so they brought their men over.

Zephyr held a tall flag, waving it in the air. The flag had nine dragons on it, and it read 'Justice For Mankind!'

Every sect had its own flag, so Darryl ordered for one to be made for Elysium Gate as well. Darryl's first skill was the Nine Dragon Ascension. Hence, the flag had nine dragons on it. It was named the Nine Dragons Justice flag.

The Emei followers could feel a forceful and suffocating aura.

Upon recognizing the flag, Jean asked softly, "I

wonder what could the Elysium Gate be here for. Can we help you?"

Zephyr planted the flag by the floor. "No help is needed," he declared, "we're here to take Dax Sanders."

Chapter 490

Jean approached Zephyr and spat, "Dax is a criminal who has connections with the Eternal Life Palace. Who are you to decide whether he stays or go?"

"I'll say it once more, the Elysium Gate is here to take Dax Sanders," Zephyr smiled.

A Tri-pointed Double-edged sword appeared. He released his Internal Energy, and it exploded throughout the room. After consuming the Godly Pill, Zephyr was now a Level One Martial Marquis.

The Elysium Gate men pulled out their long sabers.

"You..." Jean took a step back in fear.

Zephyr leaped toward Dax and slashed the ropes that bound him. It all happened so quickly that the Emei followers barely had time to react.

Jean was afraid and furious as she yelled, "What are you doing! You have no respect for the Emei sect!" The Emei followers shouted at them too, but no one dared to attack. After all, they were heavily outnumbered.

Zephyr glared and said, "The Elysium Gate acts indomitably!" He took Dax and his family away.

"You!" Jean stomped her feet but did not dare chase after them.

Abbess Mother Serendipity returned to the Darby Mansion after an hour. She was livid that Dax was rescued.

Slam!

She crushed the wooden stake that Dax was tied on. She said darkly, "Elysium Gate, you watch out!"

"Master, should we take revenge?" Jean asked.

"The Elysium Gate is a powerful and famous sect. We'd better not." The Abbess shook her head. " Especially the Sect Leader, Indomitable Darby, he's extremely mysterious. No one has seen him before. I 'm afraid he's not someone that we can offend."

"Master, should we just swallow our pride?"

"What else can we do?"

Back in Darryl's room in the Carter Mansion, Susan was panicking.

"Darryl, I'm begging you. Forgive Rachel, please?" She pleaded quietly. "Please don't tell Zoran that she tricked you into entering the forest. I'm sure she regrets doing it. Your sister is still young and immature, don't stoop to her level." She bit her lip.

Immature?

Darryl laughed, but he was furious inside. "Auntie Susan, stop," he scoffed. "She is an adult. She and Ewan led me into the forest. They wanted me to die!"

If it were not for his luck by stumbling upon the Bai Qi Formations, he would have died in there! Rachel wanted him dead, so why should he forgive her?

Susan was helpless and anxious. She tried to persuade Darryl, yet he did not listen. She was running out of ideas.

"Auntie Susan, I want to rest. You should go." He dismissed her.

Darryl downed a bottle of medication. It was given to him by Zoran to help strengthen his body. His body was still weak since getting out of the forest. The medication would help him.

"Let me help you." Susan offered. She was about to grab the bottle when she tripped over.

"Auntie Susan!"

Chapter 491

Darryl did not think twice, he quickly tried to grab Susan. However, he was still weak so he fell on top of her instead. They looked at each other awkwardly.

Susan scrambled to get up, but part of her clothes was stuck under Darryl.

Suddenly the door swung upon.

"Darryl! I have something fun I want to share with you!" Sara entered with a box of jigsaw puzzles in her hands. She was shocked when she saw the scene in front of her. The room was filled with awkward silence.

After what seems like forever, Sara laughed awkwardly and said, "I saw nothing, I saw nothing!" She was about to turn and leave when Susan quickly stood up and said, "Don't talk nonsense! It's not what you think!"

Susan quickly explained, "I was helping your brother with his medication, I accidentally fell over."

"Oh..." Saran nodded.

Susan let out a sigh of relief, she added, "It's late,

don't disturb your brother, go back to your room."

She followed Sara out of the room, before closing the door, she looked at Darryl and said, "Darryl, I'll see you tomorrow." Darryl did not agree to her pleas, she had to try again tomorrow.

Darryl smiled but said nothing. He could see that Susan loved her daughters, if not she would not have swallowed her pride and begged for their forgiveness. To be fair, Rachel was his godfather's biological daughter, he should have just let it go. However, Rachel almost killed him, if he did not teach her a lesson, she might just try it again in the future.

He was about to go to bed when his phone rang. Who would call him so late at night?

It was from Lily.

Darryl smiled and picked up the call. He barely said hello, when Lily said, "Hubby, are you alright?"

Lily was sitting on the sofa watching TV. She was overjoyed when Darryl picked up.

Ever since Yvonne's wedding, Lily was kidnapped to the Darby Mansion. Thank goodness Dax rescued her. When she reached home, she tried to reach Darryl daily, however, Darryl was stuck in the forest which had no phone reception. She finally got to

him which made her extremely emotional.

"Hubby, where are you? Are you feeling better? Where were you the past few days?" Lily asked a lot of questions.

She was really jealous that Darryl caused a scene at Yvonne's wedding, but she missed him. So, she still called him in the end.

Chapter 492

Darryl was touched, he lovingly replied, "I'm still at my godfather's place. He's been treating me well, don't worry."

Lily relaxed slightly. She said hopefully, "Hubby, when are you coming back? I...miss you." She blushed. She has never said such things before to Darryl.

"Ok, I'll go back home tomorrow morning," Darryl agreed without any hesitation.

It was time to head back to Donghai City. He has to check up on Dax as well. However, it was quite late, plus he was still weak—he has to wait until tomorrow.

"Awesome! I'll be at home waiting for you! Bye Hubby!" Lily said excitedly, then hung up.

Darryl smiled. He put his phone aside and slept peacefully.

The next morning, it was barely dawn when Darryl woke up.

He cleaned up and changed into fresh clothes. He was about to go bid his godfather farewell before

leaving for Donghai City, when he heard a panicked voice, " Quick, go get some medication!" It was from Zoran!

What happened? Darryl frowned. He walked toward the voice. When he saw the scene before him, he was shocked. A few men were hurt! They were all Ophelia Lane's disciples! They were quite badly injured, especially Ewan, who had three stab wounds and was covered in blood.

"Ewan, stay with me." Zoran rubbed medication on him. Ewan screamed in pain.

What happened? Darryl walked over curiously.

Just when Ewan was screaming, he almost passed out when he saw Darryl. What was happening? Darryl should still be in the forest! Why is he here?

Darryl smiled darkly when he noticed Ewan's expression. He glared at Ewan, then turned to Ophelia and asked, "Master, what happened?"

He had no Internal Energy now. To regain his powers, he had to obtain the Nine Day Yin Herb which was with Ophelia. He had to be sweeter to her.

Zoran was curious as well. "Yes, Chairlady Lane, what happened?"

When Ophelia brought her injured disciples here to the Carter Mansion, Zoran was surprised as well. In

the world of cultivators, no one would dare lay a hand on Ophelia Lane and her disciples.

Ophelia bit her lip and said, "I heard that Celestial Spirit flowers grow on a cliff in Wicked Valley. The flower is an important and rare ingredient in producing Elixir, so I brought my disciples along to find it."

She clenched her fist and continued, "We were ambushed once we were at Wicked Valley. We were surrounded by a group of bandits. They called themselves The Ten Villains. They said they wanted to kidnap me to become the head of the bandits' wife."

At that, Ophelia's face flushed. It was obvious this was hard for her. After all, she was of high status, everyone respected her. She did not expect to receive such humiliation.

"After that, my disciples fought hard and we barely escaped. The Ten Villains were extremely strong. My disciples were injured badly, two of them ended up captured. Luckily, Wicked Valley was not far from the Carter Mansion, so I brought them here to get help."

Ophelia laughed lightly, she said apologetically, " Zoran, I hope it's not too much trouble for you?"

"Of course not! Chairlady Lane, don't worry. We

have all sorts of medication to heal your disciples." Zoran replied. Then his expression darkened. "So you've met The Ten Villains."

Ophelia asked curiously, "You know them?"

Zoran nodded, "The Ten Villains were blood brothers. They're infamous for their evildoings! They have hundreds of men beneath them, ruling over the Wicked Valley, causing havoc to the surrounding villages."

Chapter 493

Zoran took a deep breath, he continued, "It was said that The Ten Villains are all Martial Marquis! Especially the leader, he's a Level Three Martial Marquis!"

What? The Ten Villains were all Martial Marquis?

Darryl was stunned, were all bandits that powerful now?

Ophelia nodded, she looked at Zoran and said, " When I've healed, I'll get help from others to get rid of them!"

Zoran was silent for a while, he said hesitantly, " Chairlady Lane, you have to think this through— The Ten Villains will be very hard to get rid of."

What?

"Why?" Ophelia asked. She still had two disciples in their hands. She did not know whether they were dead or alive so she had to move quickly.

Susan appeared in a purple long dress making her look graceful. She said, "Chairlady Lane, the landscape of Wicked Valley is complicated, it would be very hard to attack. Furthermore, at the entrance

of the valley, there is an Eight Earth Demon Formation set up. If you entered it, you would be trapped—it is an extremely skilled Formation.

"Six months ago, the Six orthodox sects joined up to get rid of them, yet many were stuck in the Eight Earth Demon Formation and ended up dead. They had to retreat."

What? Even the Six failed?

Ophelia bit her lip. Does that mean she could not save her two disciples?

Susan laughed gently. "The Ten Villains might be strong, but to fight them is not challenging. The crucial key is the Eight Earth Demon Formation."

This Formation is like the Formation of the peach blossom forest—both are Trap Formations. Susan might be skilled in Formations, but she could not crack the Eight Earth Demon Formation. If not, the Carters would not allow The Ten Villains to operate so close to them.

Zoran nodded. "Yes, to get rid of them you first have to crack the Formation. If we enter recklessly, we might die."

"How hard could the Eight Earth Demon Formation be?" Darryl asked out of a sudden.

Suddenly, all eyes were on him. They looked at him

as if he was a fool.

Is this person mad? Saying as if he could crack it.

Ewan laughed and jeered. "You're saying as if you could crack it?"

Even though they were now considered brothers, Ewan never treated Darryl like one. As long as there was a chance to embarrass Darryl, he would take it.

Rachel said in detest, "What could he possibly crack? All he knows is how to boast. Don't bother him."

Darryl frowned. He was furious. He has not gotten back at them about the peach blossom forest incident.

"Rachel, shut up," Susan scolded. She was worried about Rachel if Darryl spoke about the forest incident, things might get messy.

Chapter 494

"Darryl, do you think you could crack the Eight Earth Demon Formation?" Zoran asked.

"I...think so," Darryl answered.

A burst of laughter erupted. This fool could boast! Even the six orthodox sects could not crack it, he dares say he could?

Susan sighed, she said, "Darryl, you're still young. I only taught you a few simple Formations previously. Don't be too proud, we've barely scraped the surface of Formations. The Eight Earth Demon Formation is a highly complicated one. Even I could not crack it."

Ophelia glared at Darryl. It was already bad that two of her disciples were captured, now Darryl was trying to cause more trouble—how could she not be angry?

She said, "Darryl when I took you in as my disciple, I not only taught you how to produce elixirs, I taught you the way of life, how to be a good person as well. Remember, no good will come of boasting."

Darryl shrugged, he said, "Master, I'm not boasting. I understand how you feel right now. But

don't worry. Wicked Valley will be gone in two days, destroyed by others."

He was planning to call his followers of Elysium Gate to destroy Wicked Valley and rescue the two captured disciples. Ophelia might give him the Nine Day Yin Herb after all.

A burst of louder laughter erupted. Wicked Valley will be gone in two days? What nonsense is this?

Susan frowned and shook her head. Darryl was smart, but he liked to boast. She asked, "Darryl, how do you know Wicked Valley will be destroyed in two days?"

Darryl smiled, he said, "Nothing much, I deduced from the weather. Wicked Valley has lost its aura—in two days a huge catastrophe will happen." He pointed to the sky.

That was a lie. He needed to find an excuse that was all. He did not want to admit that he has mastered the Eight Earth Demon Formations. That would let them know that he was Indomitable D.

What? Weather?

Many unconsciously looked toward the sky in confusion. Predicting a catastrophe by looking at the weather? This was unbelievable.

Darryl is really crazy.

Susan said, "Darryl, enough. Stop with the jokes."

Darryl did not say anything, he smiled lightly.

Ophelia was annoyed, she said irritatedly, "Darryl, two of your Senior Sisters were captured by The Ten Villains and you still dare joke around?"

Darryl smiled. "Master, why do you think I'm joking? If you don't believe me, let's take a bet? If in two days the Wicked Valley is destroyed, you have to give me the Yin Herb."

Ophelia laughed, she asked, "Alright, what happens if you lose?"

Chapter 495

Darryl was smart—he beat around the bush just because he wanted the Nine Day Yin Herb.

Ophelia did not believe a single word Darryl said about the weather. The Six orthodox sects could not even destroy Wicked Valley, how could he? So, no matter what she bets, Darryl was going to lose.

"Why not, if I lose, I will follow you wherever you go. I will be your obedient disciple, and do whatever you say." Darryl laughed.

Ewan jumped and exclaimed, "What sort of bet is this? Could you be any less sincere?"

Ophelia glared at Darryl, she said, "Why not, if you lose, you give Rachel up to Ewan."

"Great!" Darryl accepted immediately. He did not want Rachel one bit. Then he added, "Master, you have to take your word for it. The last time you promised to call me Master if I won the contest, yet you reneged on the deal."

"Don't worry. I promise you." Ophelia was irritated at Darryl's straightforwardness, why did he have to say that out in front of so many people?

At that, Darryl let out a sigh of relief. He bade Zoran

farewell, then left for Donghai City.

During the journey, he called Zephyr to lead his men and destroy Wicked Valley. He even thought Zephyr how to crack the Formation.

...

Donghai City, The Lyndons.

Darryl finally got home after a few hours. He wanted to surprise Lily so he did not knock on the door. He took his key out and unlocked the door.

Once he entered, he saw Lily on the sofa. She was extremely attractive in jeans.

She was in tears when she saw Darryl. "Hubby!" She ran and hugged Darryl tight.

"There, there. I'm here," Darryl comforted. He hugged her tight.

Lily choked, "Hubby, I was so worried about you! I thought I might never see you again!"

Darryl looked at her lovingly and joked, "Silly, how could I die? I have such a gorgeous wife, and she has yet to give me a son, how could I die? My life is not complete yet."

Lily blushed. She said embarrassedly, "You just got back and you're already joking."

Lily harrumphed, she pushed Darryl away and said,

"You said you miss me. Do you really miss me or Yvonne?"

Lily face darkened at the thought of the wedding scene—she felt humiliated.

Chapter 496

"Uh..." Darryl shook his head. He could feel that Lily was jealous. He smiled bitterly and said, " Honey, Yvonne was about to marry Jeremy Langley to save me. If I let her go on with the wedding and ruin her life, I'd regret it for the rest of my life."

Lily pursed her lips and smiled. She looked at Darryl. "Is your regret out of a sense of responsibility or because you have feelings for her?"

Lily could see that Darryl and Yvonne both have feelings for each other.

Darryl was about to reply when Samantha appeared. She said, "Bold of you to return home."

She added coldly, "You're not welcome here. If you have any self-respect, you will leave immediately."

Samantha has heard about Darryl causing a scene at the wedding. She also finally came to know that Darryl was part of the famous Darbys and that he was the president of the Platinum Corporation. She was completely stunned initially that her son-in-law was someone powerful!

However, after the wedding, many boycotted the Platinum Corporation that they had no choice but

to announce their bankruptcy. Also, Darryl is now an ordinary human being and the Six orthodox sects were after him as well—he was as useless as ever.

She did not want to get caught up in this, so she rudely said, "Don't you understand what I'm saying? I said you're not welcome here. Leave!"

"Mom!" Lily stomped her feet anxiously. She said, " Darryl, just came back. Leave him alone."

Samantha glared at Lily, she said angrily, "Lily, why are you still defending him? Don't you know that all of Donghai City looks down on him? What good would come of you being with him? Don't be silly!"

She did not know what love potion Darryl gave her daughter. Lily had many pursuers interested in her, yet she would not let go of Darryl—how disappointing!

"Mom, stop." Lily bit her lip.

"Granny called me for a meeting. When I'm back at night, I do not want to see this useless piece of trash here. You clear?" Samantha walked out of the room and slammed the door.

"Don't...mind her," Lily said to Darryl.

Darryl laughed. He was used to it after three years.

Lily held his hand and said, "Oh, by the way, Class

Sixteen and Class Seventeen planned a trip to the beach. Why don't we go together? Go get changed!"

"I don't want to," Darryl pouted.

"Hubby, accompany me please?" Lily pleaded. Darryl could not say no to Lily's pleas. So he nodded.

Lily smiled widely, she said, "I have a new best friend! She'll be coming over later, we'll head there together! By the way, she's from your class!"

Just when Lily said that someone knocked on the door.

"Speak of the devil!" Lily ran to open the door—it was a beautiful lady in a long purple dress.

Chapter 497

Circe Newman!

"Lily, let's go! Everyone's waiting!" Circe grabbed Lily's hand, she laughed.

'What? When did Circe become friends with Lily? They never crossed paths previously!' thought Darryl.

Circe saw Darryl and gave him a polite smile. Although Darryl had lost his powers—and he might not be able to cultivate again—Circe never once looked down on him. In fact, she had a better impression of him, because he saved Evelyn's grandfather.

"You two...are friends?" Darryl asked.

"All this happened a week ago," Lily explained with a smile.

A week ago, there was a new student in Hexad's, her name was Yvette Lane.

Yvette was extremely gorgeous and caused a scene just on the first day of school.

The boys in school nicknamed her and Circe the Ice and Fire Goddess. If Circe was like an icy glacier,

Yvette was a volcano. She was passionate, friendly, and generous. She was sociable and maintained a good relationship with her school mates. In just a few days, she became one of the most popular girls in school.

Two of her best friends were Circe and Lily. Circe and Lily did not know each other initially but they had a mutual friend via Yvette. So, they slowly got to know each other and eventually became best friends.

"Where's Yvette?" Lily asked Circe after explaining to Darryl about how she got to know Circe.

"I think she's already at the beach. She sent me a message just now saying that almost everyone's there. We should go." Circe replied.

"Great!" Lily nodded. She held Circe and Darryl's arm on each side and walked out of the mansion.

Darryl drove all the way. In an hour, they reached Gold Beach. Gold Beach was a popular travel destination in Donghai City, famous for its scenery, and its golden sand.

Usually, it's filled with people. However, it was a working day, so there were not many there.

They could see from afar there was a group of people gathered at the beach, laughing and joking

around. It was the Class Sixteen and Seventeen of Hexad's.

Declan, Miles, and others were engrossed in a game of beach volleyball. There was an extremely attractive lady playing together with them. She had a great figure, if Darryl was not wrong, it should be Yvette Lane.

No wonder she and Circe were considered Goddesses —they were immensely beautiful.

"Yvette, your serve!" Declan passed the ball to her on purpose. Yvette laughed and hit the ball.

"She's so gorgeous..." a few boys ogled.

"Look! Lily and Circe are here too!" someone exclaimed. Everybody looked toward them

When they saw Darryl next to them, they were baffled.

What is happening? How is he here?

Ever since the wedding, every family in Donghai City ganged up on Darryl. The Six orthodox sects wanted to capture him as well. Darryl was currently like a street rat, where everyone wanted to beat him up upon sight. 1

In Kent's eyes, Darryl meant nothing. The fact that he has lost his powers and his corporation, he

totally deserved it!

Declan taunted, "Darryl can't practice cultivation now. So to survive, he has to continue living in Donghai City. After all, as a live-in son-in-law, he has at least two hundred bucks per day! Haha!"

A burst of laughter erupted.

Chapter 498

Darryl ignored them. After all, he was here just for Lily. He did not have to argue with them nor did they deserve his attention.

Declan continued, "Darryl, you are not welcome here. F*ck off."

Miles added, "Yes, just leave!"

Circe could take it no longer. She frowned and said, "Can you all stop? Darryl is from our class. Of course, he's welcome here!" She could not let them bully him. They were extremely cruel but they bullied him even more now because they knew he no longer has any powers.

There was only silence after Circe spoke. After all, the Goddess had spoken, who would dare to defy her? They did not want to anger her.

Yvette came over, she laughed and said, "Yes, everyone is here to have fun! Let's stop the bullying."

Everyone listened to Yvette because she was friendly with everyone. They all ignored Darryl and went back to their activities.

Yvette hugged Lily's arm, turned toward Darryl,

and said, "Hi Darryl, I'm Yvette Lane. One of Lily's best friends."

Yvette laughed, "I heard that you've beaten highly skilled followers of the Six sects during the Lion Slaughtering Conference. You're pretty famous."

Her laughter was infectious. Darryl, who was furious, immediately cheered up. He smiled bitterly and said, "That was all in the past. I don't have any Internal Energy now, I'm as good as trash."

Yvette shook her head. "Though you might not have any Internal Energy now, your previous achievements were famous, no one among your peers can dispute what you did."

Darryl laughed, he felt much better.

Yvette was pretty and great at talking. Who would not like her? No wonder she has so many friends.

Lily let out a laugh, she said, "Yvette, stop praising him. He'll become big-headed. Let's go catch some crabs!"

"Sure!" They held hands and walked toward the bunch of girls catching crabs.

Darryl scanned his surroundings, he did not see Yvonne. She was from Class Sixteen, so she should have been here. He was slightly disappointed.

Since the wedding incident, Darryl had not seen her.

He did not know how she is.

Ring!

His phone rang. It was from Levin Dixon.

He picked up. Levin said excitedly, "Master, we've captured The Ten Villans! The Wicked Valley was destroyed too!"

What? So fast? That was great news!

The Dixon brothers did not disappoint.

Levin asked, "Master, what shall we do with them?"

Darryl thought for a while. He said slowly, "Send them here to Donghai City."

The Ten Villains were Martial Marquis. The Elysium Gate's tactic is to use persuasion, of course, he wanted to recruit them!

Levin answered, "Yes, Master!"

"Oh also," Darryl interrupted, he said, "Gather all of Elysium Gate's followers here to Donghai City. We'll celebrate the capture of the Ten Villains!"

He thought of booking the entire Oriental Pearl since now the Elysium Gate has about over three thousand followers.

When he hung up, he saw Lily, Yvette, and Circe walking back toward him. They were delighted that

they caught a few crabs. They were surrounded by many guys, offering to help them carry their spades and crabs.

Yvette stretched lazily, she said, "Let's do something else?"

"Great! What do you want to do?" The guys started chiming in.

"How about fishing?"

"Or scuba diving?"

Chapter 499

The guys looked at Yvette, Lily, and Circe hopefully. To be able to play with them would be a dream come true!

"Nah, it's all too boring. I want something more exciting," Yvette said.

"There is!" Declan interjected. He pointed to the motorboats along the shore and said, "Look, let's have some fun with those motorboats!"

Yvette's eyes brightened. She smiled and said, "Let' s go!"

Manny Yaleman, who was the owner of the motorboat's eyes lit up when he saw a group of students approaching him.

He asked, "Ladies and gentlemen, could I interest you in renting a motorboat?"

Declan asked, "How much do you charge?"

Manny, with a cigarette in his mouth, gestured vaguely and said, "It's only thirty for one round! Cheap!"

Only thirty bucks?

Declan flipped his hair, he said, "Since it's so cheap,

get all your motorboats here. I'm renting them all!"

Thirty per round is way too cheap for someone like him.

"Great, great!" Manny smiled and nodded.

Soon, the rest were on their motorboats playing in the sea. Yvette panicked. She asked awkwardly, " How...how do you start this thing?"

She struggled to balance on the motorboat, it was obvious this was her first time.

Declan and Kent got excited, this was their chance to get closer to her!

"Yvette, don't worry. I'm here to teach you!"

"Me! I'm great at motorboats." Many offered to help her out. This was their chance to impress Yvette.

Yvette thought for a while, then she said, "Alright, stop fighting, let Darryl help me out."

What? They were all floored. They all looked at Darryl with envy and loathing.

What did Darryl do that he could have the opportunity to teach Yvette?

Darryl was stunned as well. 'F*ck, why me?'

Yvette laughed, she said to Declan and the rest, "

You all have your boats. Darryl has nothing to do, why don't you guys go have fun."

It was the truth. No one cared about Darryl.

F*ck, if they knew they should not fight over who got to teach Yvette, then Darryl would not have been appointed by her!

Chapter 500

"Darryl, come, teach me! I don't know how to start this thing," Yvette said. She then turned to Lily and teased, "Lily, I'm going to borrow your husband for a while, I hope you don't mind."

Lily blushed, she laughed. "Of course not! But do remember to return him to me!"

Then Lily pulled Darryl aside and said, "Yvette, asked for you. Go help her. But remember, don't do anything stupid!"

"Yes, yes, my almighty wife!" Darryl laughed. He walked over to Yvette's boat and sat behind her.

"What...what are you doing?" Yvette blushed.

"Teaching you?" Darryl replied. He pointed to the ignition key and said, "You need to press the button to ignite it. Then use both hands to steer."

Yvette got the gist of it in a short time. Darryl was about to jump down when he noticed a bright red dot on her arm. He was stunned.

Is that a gecko cinnabar?

The Gecko Cinnabar was an ancient way of marking a virgin. It was rumored that the mark could not be

washed off, but once you consummate your relationship with a man, it would disappear immediately. However, no woman has had that mark ever since the Qing dynasty.

'What era is this? Why would she still have that mark?' Darryl thought. He walked toward Lily.

He asked, "Honey, what does Yvette's family do?" He was curious as to why she had a Gecko Cinnabar.

Lily laughed, "I have no idea. Yvette never mentioned her family. Though she's a strange girl. She is extremely knowledgeable but does not know anything about technology. She only registered for a chat account a few days ago. I guess she was born in a conservative traditional household."

Lily harrumphed. She asked, "Why are you asking all these? Do you have feelings for her already?"

Darryl shook his head immediately. He could sense that she was jealous. He laughed awkwardly then stopped prying further.

After some time, the group was done with the motorboats. Declan asked Manny, "How much was our rental?" He fished out a stack of cash.

Manny laughed and said, "You guys are done? Ok, let me calculate."

He lit a cigarette, pressed on the calculator, and

said, "Not much, about seven hundred and twenty thousand. Seeing how we hit it off, I'll give you a discount, seven hundred thousand."

What? Seven hundred thousand? Declan was stunned. He thought he misheard. The rest were all bewildered too. This was daylight robbery.

Declan came to his senses, he said, "Are you crazy? You're clearly asking for a beating!"

Miles chimed in too, "Are you trying to bully us? Before renting you told us it was thirty for one round. Tell us, how did you get to seven hundred thousand?"

Chapter 501

Manny smiled sinisterly; he did plan to trick the students! They looked rich, and he had to get their money! He raised an eyebrow and said seriously, " Let me calculate it for you. You rented 60 of my motorboats, and it's 30 bucks for each round. Since each of you rode 400 rounds, on average, the total is 720,000 bucks."

What?!

Each of them rode 400 rounds?

Declan pointed at Manny as he shouted furiously, " You're an *sshole! We only rode for half an hour! How is it possible that we did 400 rounds?"

Manny flicked his cigarette casually and said, "I said that you rode 400 rounds, so you rode 400 rounds."

"F*ck you!" Declan cursed. It was apparent that Manny had twisted the truth.

"Let's stop with the bullsh*t!" Manny got impatient; he took a machete from his jacket. He held it in one hand as he urged, "Well, are you paying or not, you f*cker?"

Ordinary people would have given in when they saw

the machete.

However, the students were from wealthy families, and they were not cowards. Declan took a step forward and asked coldly, "What if I don't want to?"

"You don't want to?" That question triggered Manny, and he held the machete against Declan's neck. "I'll ask you again. Are you going to f*cking pay?"

The other students gasped. They panicked as they did not expect Manny to do that!

They could also see that Manny was a strong cultivator. If they were not mistaken, he was a Level One Master General!

"Boss." Kent Hough walked toward him arrogantly. "Don't be mad. My name is Kent, and I am from the Hough family in Donghai City; I'm sure you've heard of me. Can you put the machete down please? "

Manny chuckled. "I don't care who you are; you've had your fun, so now you should pay up."

His expression darkened. "None of you will be able to leave if you do not pay."

Whoosh!

Many strong-built men rushed toward them in an

instant! All of them were cultivators!

There were more than 70 of them, and their overflowing aura engulfed the students.

The tourists kept their distance as they could sense the tension!

The students were frightened.

It appeared that Manny was the local bully there; he had so many men!

Did they have to give in to him? The amount he requested was not large, but they did not want to be conned by him!

"I'm going to ask you one last time; do you have the money?" Manny shouted again. The machete scraped Declan's neck with a slight force. A tiny wound formed and blood oozed from it.

The students gasped again.

They panicked; they did not expect Manny to do that!

"Pay! We'll pay!" Declan shouted in panic; he was on the verge of tears.

'F*ck! I wouldn't want to risk my life for 720,000 bucks! We can't provoke them; there are more than 70 men here...'

"That's better. Transfer the money now!" Manny

was impatient.

Declan felt conflicted as he used his cellphone with shaky hands. He was about to log in to his online banking app when Yvette Lane walked to him and grabbed his cellphone. "Why should we pay them? There are so many of us here! We shouldn't be afraid of them!"

'Why are these guys such cowards?'

Yvette stomped her foot in frustration, but the male students only gave each other glances; none of them dared to walk forward.

None of them wanted to be the hero in that situation. After all, Manny and those men had machetes with them.

"You—" Yvette furrowed her brows tightly as she took another step forward. "We are not giving you any money!"

"Wow!" Manny raised an eyebrow as he stared at Yvette with interest!

'F*ck! Look at her body, is she even human? A woman with a body like this can only be a goddess.' Yvette looked exceptionally attractive, especially when she was drenched with seawater after some of their motorboat sports activities.

Manny suppressed his excitement as he laughed. "

Hey lady, are you saying that you're using my motorboats for free? It's fine if you don't want to pay. Why don't you spend a night with me?"

Yvette quivered in anger; she bit her lip so hard that it started to bleed!

Chapter 502

A few fishermen who saw the scene from a distance could no longer stay out of it. They approached the students to advise them. "Kids, just pay them. The money is a fee to ensure your safety. You can't afford to offend them; they are from the Coastline Sect! You're doomed if you don't pay them today."

The other locals nearby nodded in agreement worriedly.

The Coastline Sect was a sect located at Gold Beach since the ancient days; their influence was not to be underestimated! The members of the sect had always acted rampantly around the beach area!

The sect owned the motorboat sports business, and everyone who rented their motorboats would get swindled for a huge amount of money.

The tourists were not aware of the Coastline Sect's influence, but the local fishermen knew them well!

The sect had dominated the seafood industry due to their numbers and influence. Every fisherman was forced to give them benefits, or they would oppress them and make sure that they would not be able to fish there. The locals loathed them, but no one

dared to voice that out!

The locals also approached the students hurriedly to give them the same advice. They were worried that those kids might bring trouble to themselves if they were to offend Manny and his partners.

The Coastline Sect?

Declan and the others froze when they heard the fishermen's words; they had an uneasy feeling in their guts.

They thought that Manny and his men were only the local bullies.

They did not expect them to be from the community. That explained how he could summon so many men in an instant.

It seemed like it was not a good idea to mess with those men.

However, Yvette furrowed her eyebrows as she said, "Coastline? We are from the Hexad School. You are clearly conning us for our money; why should we pay you?"

Manny smiled sinisterly and continued to press the machete on Declan's neck.

Declan wanted to cry. He spoke in a trembling voice, "Why don't we just pay them?"

D*mn it! He did not want to act so cowardly in front of Yvette.

However, the machete was on his neck.

He might lose his head if Manny got angry. Although he cared about his image, his life was much more important! Declan was desperate as he spoke; he was almost in tears.

Yvette was displeased. "Declan, can't you act like a man? They're unreasonable! They are acting so brazenly as if there is no law in this world. I believe in justice!"

"Justice?" The men laughed.

Manny sneered. "Lady, we're the Coastline Sect; we make the rules on Gold Beach!"

Ridicule was visible on Manny's face when his eyes traced Yvette's body wildly. He continued to say, "I'm saying this again; this pretty lady can spend a night with us if you don't want to pay. It's only 720,000 bucks, and I can let it go."

He extended his hand to Yvette with a grin.

'The more I look at this pretty face, the more I like her.'

Smack!

Yvette could no longer control herself when she

noticed Manny's hand as it approached her, so she slapped him forcefully!

Manny grunted when he was thrown off for a few meters backward before he landed with a loud thud!

He coughed from the impact.

Manny's head spun from the slap. He also spat some blood after he landed on the ground.

"You disgusting pervert! You must have a death wish!" Yvette scoffed as she glared at Manny coldly as a strong aura spread from her body!

"Level Five Master General?!"

Everyone present was dumbfounded when they realized that Yvette was a Level Five Master General; she was only one step short of a Martial Marquis!

The students were extremely surprised. Yvette had been friendly and approachable during her days at the Hexad School when she was transferred there; they had never seen her unleash her full potential.

No one expected her to be that strong!

Manny coughed again.

He spat another mouthful of blood as the crowd was still in a daze. He forced himself to stand up as he pointed to Yvette. "Get her! Get the girl! I must

have her tonight! Get her!"

The strong men immediately charged toward Yvette!

Yvette's expression was icy, and she was as cool as a cucumber. A whip sword appeared with a flick of her hand and she tossed it forward!

Thump! Thump!

Yvette moved swiftly as the whip sword in her hand glided like a serpent. It took only a second for two men to retreat with horrifying screams.

Even so, Yvette was still in a perilous situation. After all, she had more than 70 opponents!

Circe Newman looked panicked, but she stomped her foot in frustration before she turned to her classmates, "What are you waiting for? Go and help Yvette! Get them!"

Chapter 503

Circe leapt and joined the battle without hesitation.

"F*ck, take them down!"

The male students finally reacted and charged forward with battle cries. The students were afraid to fight, but they had no other option. After all, they would look like a bunch of cowards if they chose to hide when the two pretty girls had already charged forward. The students had to come together when they were tangled in warfare with Manny's men!

There were around 80 students from both classes, so the numbers were pretty even.

The students had some skills after lessons from the Hexad School. The male students fought boldly with high spirits to protect their female classmates.

"Argh!"

The beach was in chaos with non-stop cries!

Thump! Thump! Thump!

Both teams sustained damage. More than 20 of Manny's men had collapsed on the ground.

A few of the male students had suffered injuries

too. However, their wounds were not severe, and their lives were not in danger.

The students had an overall victory.

Yvette took her chance to get near Manny to give him two slaps and the two blows that almost rendered him unconscious. He flew a few meters backward with a bloodied mouth.

"F*ck! Retreat, retreat!" Manny yelled as he was extremely furious about their loss.

They fled to a distance before he turned to the students. "F*ck you! Don't you f*cking dare to leave! You're doomed! Just you wait!"

Declan and the students laughed.

"Keep talking!"

"Get your *sses back here if you dare!"

They were elated with their victory.

They initially thought that they should not mess with Manny and his men; they were surprised to see that they were very weak!

Yvette was all smiles, and her face lit up with excitement. "That's enough. Let's stop wasting our time with those gangsters. I'm starving; let's have a barbecue!"

They prepared a lot of food for a picnic.

The students set up a bonfire and gathered in a circle to cook their food excitedly.

They chatted as they waited for their food; it was a relaxing time for them.

Kent stretched his body and smiled with satisfaction. "That was an epic battle."

Declan nodded with a smile before he turned to Yvette. "You surprised us today, Yvette. Your heroic courage was no less than a man's! But I did okay, too; I defeated five of them!"

"Yvette, I was okay too. I knocked a few of them down!"

"So did I. I hit two of them with a rock."

The male students circled Yvette and babbled to show themselves off.

Yvette smiled politely and nodded. "I saw it; everyone was so brave. You guys are awesome."

Declan and the guys were exhilarated when Yvette praised them. Their injuries were worth it!

"By the way, Darby only watched from the side during the fight. He did not even flinch," someone said.

Swoosh.

Everyone shifted their gazes onto Darryl in an instant. Their eyes were filled with mockery and ridicule.

"He's a grown man, but he only watched from the side. How embarrassing!"

"I wouldn't have the face to stay here if I were him."

"P*ssy."

Darryl was annoyed by the students' mockery. 'D* mn it! How could I do anything? How am I supposed to fight when I have zero internal energy right now?'

Darryl only reacted with a light chuckle without the intention to explain.

Lily panicked.

All she wanted was to relax with Darryl on the trip, so she was not prepared for that.

Yvette noticed Lily's change of expression, so she stood up and said, "That's enough. Will you guys stop picking on Darryl? He doesn't have internal energy right now, so he is just like an ordinary person. He wouldn't be of much use even if he fought."

Chapter 504

The crowd shut their mouths when Yvette asked them to stop.

However, their gazes on Darryl were still filled with disdain.

"Oh, f*ck! Guys, look! Many boats are coming toward us!" someone from the crowd exclaimed.

Whoosh!

The students shifted their gazes to the sea; they saw many huge boats on their way toward the shore with high speed!

The boats were filled with people with long swords!

"What? What's happening?" Declan's eyes bulged. The ships boats had already pulled into shore within a few seconds!

Almost 800 men jumped to the shore swiftly and walked toward the students' with great vigor. It was a great scene!

Two identical-looking bald men took the lead; they were clearly twins, and they had a mighty aura!

The twins were the first and second person in

charge of the Coastline Sect.

The elder twin was called Ocean Powter, and the younger one was River Powter. Both of them were Level Three Martial Saints!

The students were shocked when they saw two Level Three Martial Saints led more than 700 men toward them. Their heartbeats accelerated, and their minds were blank!

Manny was right behind the Powter twins.

He looked like a mummy with bandages on the injuries on his head; he looked hilarious.

However, none of the students dared to laugh!

"Brother Ocean, that's them! They refused to pay after renting our motorboats, and they also injured our brothers!" Manny shouted with hatred on his face!

Ocean Powter looked around coldly before he fixed his gaze on the students and said in a neutral tone, " Speak. How should we settle this?"

His intimidating aura was spread throughout the place!

Gulp!

The students gave each other helpless glances as Ocean's domineering aura suffocated them! The

terrified ones almost pissed their pants.

"What the f*ck! Are you deaf or mute? Can't you hear what I said?" Ocean was angered when no one replied to his question. He walked to a student with a blade and kicked him swiftly!

It was a Level Three Martial Saint's kick! That student coughed blood and yelped in pain on the ground.

Ocean raised an arm and held the blade against Declan's neck before anyone else could react.

"F*cking hell! Do I have to repeat myself? How should we settle this?" Ocean did not raise his voice, but Declan had begun to hyperventilate, and he had already sweated!

He knew that he would lose his life if he gave an unsatisfactory answer!

Ocean had a murderous aura; Declan wondered how many lives he had taken before that!

"It was a misunderstanding, Boss. It was just a misunderstanding. We're sorry." Declan's voice trembled.

Who would have thought that the Coastline Sect was such a powerful sect? They had more than 700 members.

No one had the guts to offend him!

"You're sorry?" Ocean asked as he waved his arm. Hundreds of disciples from the Coastline Sect immediately besieged the students!

"Boss, we are sorry. Can't we apologize for it?" Some of the male students broke down and started to apologize non-stop; their faces were pale with fear.

"Yes, it is just a misunderstanding..."

"It's 720,000 bucks, right? We'll pay, we'll pay right now." Declan's mind was blank as he felt the cool sensation from the blade at his neck. He almost burst into tears. "Boss, we'll transfer you the money right now..."

"720,000 bucks?"

Ocean grinned wickedly. "You are the first ones who dared to provoke the Coastline Sect! You can't pay a cent less! Or we'll f*ck you up!"

Then he raised the blade to strike Declan!

Some of the students shrieked in terror.; some even shut their eyes. They were afraid to look at the horrifying scene.

"Boss!"

Every single strand of Declan's hair stood up as terror took him when he saw the blade fell. He fell

to his knees with a plop!

"Boss, I admit my mistake. Please don't kill me; it was my fault. Please have mercy, and I am willing to compensate as you wish!" Declan's voice was hoarse. Even though it was extremely embarrassing to get down on his knees in front of all his classmates, ego was nothing compared to his life!

Ocean sighed emotionlessly. "As I wish? Fine. I'll let you off if you give me 20 billion bucks. Non-negotiable."

Wait, what?

20 billion?

Chapter 505

Declan and the others were dumbfounded. They glanced at each other bitterly.

It was not a small amount even though they were from wealthy families! It was quite different when one compared 20 billion bucks' worth of assets with 20 billion bucks in cash!

Even the most influential families would only have three million bucks in cash. It would be near impossible to get 20 billion!

However, they were not in a position to refuse the offer!

"Do you have the money or not?" Ocean roared; he had lost his patience.

"Yes, yes—" Declan, who was still on his knees, repeatedly shouted as he forced a smile on his face. "Can you give us a few minutes to collect the money?"

Ocean waved his arm impatiently. "You have ten minutes. Hurry."

He retracted his blade as two of his men took two chairs to their leaders. Ocean and River took the

seats.

Declan got up frightfully and gestured to his classmates to gather around him.

"What should we do?"

The students discussed in a panic.

Even Kent was nervous as he whispered, "I've heard about the Powter brothers. They made a reputation in the martial arts community a long time ago for being powerful and ruthless. I thought that they have retired because they have been idle for the past two years. I didn't expect to see them in charge of the Coastline Sect!"

He gulped and smiled bitterly when he made his next suggestion. "I think we'll have to pay them. We can't afford to offend these people."

The students were silent.

Kent was right; they were outnumbered.

They were only weak kids.

Yvette bit her lips with a dignified expression and said firmly, "They are greedy, they marked up the amount just because they have the numbers. We can 't pay them."

It was an insanely large amount of money.

Declan and Kent frowned as they advised her.

"Yvette, a wise man doesn't fight against impossible odds."

"Exactly! Those two are too strong and look at how many men they have! We'd never win."

It was clear that they were ready to surrender.

Yvette's face was flushed with unwillingness. "You are from prominent families in Donghai City! Are you going to surrender when you are bullied in your own backyard? Can you guys have more courage?"

The students fell into an awkward silence.

Kent clenched his teeth; his face was flushed with determination. "Fine, we are respected people, so we can't give in. I'm calling my dad."

It would be too embarrassing for him to keep his head in the sand after what Yvette had said.

He walked some distance away from the students and took out his cellphone to call his father, Edward Hough.

Declan, Justin, and a few others did the same thing.

Kent's call got through soon enough.

Kent started to explain. "Dad, I'm at the beach with my friends, and we got into trouble with the Coastline Sect. Ocean Powter is their head..."

"What? Coastline Sect?"

Edward immediately paled; he scolded his son on the other side of the call. "You idiot! Why did you offend the Coastline Sect? I'll have to ask someone to negotiate with them for our family's sea dealings, or our products will never be shipped out! I'm warning you, just do as they say! Don't bring your troubles home, understood?"

He hung up immediately after that.

Kent's forehead was covered with cold sweat.

'D*mn it! Is Dad inferior to the Coastline Sect? What are we going to do?'

Justin's expression soured when his dad hung up the call on him. "I told my dad what happened, and he scolded me badly. He told me not to offend them. I think we'll have to come up with the money. "

The crowd went silent; an invisible tension was in the air.

Everyone racked their brains to get 20 billion bucks, but there was no way to do that!

Then, someone spoke calmly.

"Why don't I discuss it with them? I'll ask them to do me a solid and let us go."

It was Darryl!

'What?'

'Do him a solid and let us go?'

The students shifted their attention toward Darryl, and their gazes were filled with disdain. One the girls said, "Darryl, we're trying to find a way to come up with the money. Can you not trouble us at this moment?"

Chapter 506

"Darryl, are you nuts?" Declan was annoyed; he pointed at Darryl as he shouted, "Why would the Coastline Sect people do you that favor? Who do you think you are?"

'He must be joking.' The others scoffed at him as well.

"Honey, stop—" Lily stomped her foot in frustration as she tugged on Darryl's sleeve; her face was flushed from the embarrassment. She wanted to dig a hole and hide in it when the others mocked Darryl.

"Enough! Just ignore him." Declan waved his hand in dismissal and hushed them. "Let's get the money. "

Darryl sighed as he took out his cellphone discreetly to send a text to Zephyr Dixon.

The Powter brothers walked toward them when their ten minutes were up; they dragged their blades on the ground. It created sparks and rattling noises.

"Do you have the money? It's only 20 billion bucks, so hurry up." Ocean was impatient.

Just 20 billion?

Declan and the others wanted to cry.

'Money doesn't grow on trees! Even those rich men on television would not be able to take out 20 billion bucks in cash even if they have a net worth of hundreds of billions!'

Net worth on television referred to all of a person's financial assets, including his company, property, cars, and shares. It would be near to impossible for one to take out 20 billion in cash!

Declan approached Ocean with a frown and tried to negotiate with him. "Boss, we really don't have that much in cash."

"What?" Ocean's expression was grim. "You took ten minutes to tell me that you don't have that much money? You're a f*cking dead man!"

He gave Declan two punches on his face!

The man broke a few Declan's teeth, and the student almost passed out from the pain.

"Boss, stop, please!" Declan winced from the pain and went down on his knees again. "Lighter, please, Boss? Please, I'm begging you..."

"F*ck off!" Ocean yelled and kicked Declan; the younger man sprawled on the ground.

"You don't have the money? I'll chop a finger off you guys, and the ladies will have to follow us home for the night!" Ocean said as he grabbed Lily's hand!

A few of the female students attracted his attention.

Those girls were beautiful, and Ocean could not think of anyone who could be compared to them. He never thought that he would meet such attractive ladies in his life. Since they could not pay, he was willing to have the ladies instead!

River also strutted toward the ladies with a grin on his face. He had his eyes on Yvette and Circe, and he scanned their bodies brazenly.

"You—" Lily exclaimed fearfully; her face was flushed with embarrassment and anger as Ocean gripped her hand tightly.

"What are you doing?!" Circe's body quivered as she shouted.

The frightened she was, the more excited the Powter brothers got. They gave the girls a big smile and said, "Don't be afraid. We're not going to hurt you; we only want to spend a night with you."

Manny and the other disciples burst into laughter!

The other students panicked, but no one voiced out as they did not dare to be the hero in that situation!

Yvette shouted for help when River dragged her away, but none of the male students helped her. She felt so disappointed and hopeless!

"Let her go."

A cold voice said!

It was Darryl!

There was total silence!

Declan and the others turn to Darryl with a conflicted expression. 'Does this idiot have a death wish?"

The other female students shook their heads. 'Is Darryl trying to act brave now? He might die if he tries to be the hero!'

Chapter 507

"What did you say?"

Ocean was stunned as he thought he had misheard Darryl. He looked at the younger man in astonishment as he dug his ears sarcastically. "Say that again?"

'This kid has b*lls for trying to act like a hero.'

'He doesn't have any internal energy; he must be stupid.'

Darryl stared at Ocean coldly and repeated his word. "I said, get your dirty hands off her."

"F*ck you! Do you have a death wish?" Ocean shouted.

Swoosh!

Ocean's men rushed toward them when their leader shouted; they gave Darryl a cold glare as they waited for instruction. They were ready to chop him into pieces!

However, Darryl continued to stand there without a hint of fear on his face!

"Hey kid, you're pretty funny." Ocean laughed. "So

many of you, but you are the only one with the b*lls to stand out. You have a death wish, is that it?"

Darryl smiled and replied in an icy tone, "I'm only going to say this once. I don't care if you want to swindle people for money, but you can't have these women, so get your dirty hands off them. I'm not going to repeat myself again."

"Wow, okay. So you do want to die." Ocean chuckled from extreme anger. "Whack him and feed him to the fishes!"

No one had dared to talk to him in that tone during his years in the martial arts community! That puny kid must have a death wish when he threatened him.

A few of Ocean's men rushed charged toward Darryl.

"Honey—"

Lily almost burst into tears from the anxiety.

It was the Coastline Sect! Darryl had looked for trouble when he provoked them without any internal energy!

Darryl stayed as cool as a cucumber when the men approached him. He smiled and said, "Tell me, then, what should we do for you to let the girls go?"

The older man laughed.

Ocean thought that Darryl wanted to surrender, so

he grinned and said, "Give me 20 billion bucks."

"Oh." Darryl stared straight into his eyes with a smile. "I can give you 20 billion, but I don't think that you'll be alive to use it."

'What?'

Ocean was furious. 'Why is this f*cking kid so confident?' He could no longer suppress his anger; he raised his blade to strike Darryl.

Manny yelled at that precise moment. "Brother Ocean! Behind you!"

"What the f*ck are you yelling about?" Ocean cursed before he turned; he was flabbergasted.

All of the Coastline Sect's disciples and the students stood there frozen.

The entire Gold Beach became silent!

They could hear the sound of uniformed footsteps.

Then they saw about 3000 people a few hundred meters from them. They rushed toward the beach like waves. They wore black Chinese jackets, and they had weapons in their hands; they looked dignified!

The man who led the newcomers held a massive flag in his hand. It soared with the sea breeze majestically!

It was the Nine Dragon Justice Flag; they were from the Elysium Gate!

"We punish evil and uphold the good to bring justice for mankind!"

The disciples of Elysium Gate shouted in unison. Their voices shook the skies, and everyone within ten kilometers could hear them clearly!

Chapter 508

"They're from the Elysium Gate."

A sudden fear emerged in Ocean's mind!

The Elysium Gate had demolished more than a dozen evil sects within two weeks after their establishment. Their purpose was to bring justice to mankind, and they had made quite a reputation in the martial arts community!

The Coastline Sect had acted tyrannically around the beach.

They wondered whether the Elysium Gate was there for them.

The students were overwhelmed with emotions, and some of them were in tears of gratitude!

'Look at that Nine Dragon Justice Flag. They are from the Elysium Gate! They must be here to take Coastline Sect down! They're here to rescue us!'

The Elysium Gate had made statements in the martial arts community, and no one was unaware of their reputation!

Sects with dishonest practices had disappeared whenever the Nine Dragon Justice Flag made an

appearance. Therefore, Elysium Gate was regarded as the executors for justice!

Their uniformed footsteps shook the earth and overwhelmed others with emotions!

Many residents gathered around the scene as the flag got closer to students, and they stared at the flag with admiration!

The 3000 people included the Dixon quadruplets, and they approached the beach unhurriedly before finally they stopped right in front of Ocean.

Zephyr Dixon glared at Ocean coldly but his gaze burned with anger. "Ocean and River Powter, you have been causing troubles to others even though you are members of the martial arts community. The Elysium Gate will bring justice to mankind today; we're here to take the Coastline Sect down! Do you have last words?"

Flash!

The 3000 disciples unsheathed their swords in unison; an intense murderous aura rolled over them in an instant!

Blood drained from Ocean's face, and he trembled uncontrollably. "You are Zephyr Dixon from The Four Warlords?"

He had heard about the Dixon quadruplets as The

Four Warlords. The one who led the troop had to be Zephyr!

Ocean panicked when Zephyr chose not to answer him. "We can talk about this, Brother. The Coastline Sect has a legitimate business. We did nothing shady."

He sweated profusely!

Even though the Powter brothers were Level Three Martial Marquis, their men were only a mob without much power.

They dared not to offend the famous Elysium Gate.

The disciples from the Coastline Sect also sweated profusely; they did not even dare to fart!

Zephyr scanned the students around him with a slight smile, and he maintained his expression when he spotted Darryl.

Darryl texted him with an explicit reminder that he could not reveal his identity as the Sect Master. After all, the Six Sects still had their eyes on him.

Zephyr turned to Ocean again. "Nothing shady? We were just passing by, and it seems like you are here to con these students."

The students nodded.

"Yes! Please help us! They were threatening us."

"You have to get rid of these bullies—"

Zephyr nodded in acknowledgment at the crowd's clamor before he turned to Ocean again. He burst into anger. "Can you explain this?"

"Well... We..."

Ocean, who was taken aback, intended to deny his deeds but he felt only hopelessness when Declan and the others sold them out.

Ocean was extremely anxious because of the murderous aura that permeated from the Elysium Gate's disciples. He broke down and fell to his knees as he pleaded with a frown. "Brother Zephyr, can you give me a chance? I assure you that I will never do this again."

River added hurriedly, "Yes, we will be good people from now onward."

Chapter 509

They were aware that their denial could cost them their lives!

Zephyr smiled sinisterly and said, "Not every bad deed deserves forgiveness. Brothers, tie them up!"

"Those who don't comply will die!"

Zephyr's indifferent voice could be heard over the entire beach!

The Elysium Gate's disciples complied with the order and charged forward.

Ocean sweated profusely as there was no way that he could revolt in that situation!

He might even die that night!

All of the Coastline Sect's followers were tied up in ropes within a few minutes as none of them dared to resist!

"Spread the word," Zephyr's tone was cold as he stared at the sea. "Search every single asset owned by the Coastline Sect and distribute them to the locals! This sect is history from this day onward!"

"Understood!" The Elysium Gate's disciples

shouted in unison, and their voices shook the skies! Then they proceeded to leave regally under Zephyr's lead!

A fisherman suddenly got down on his knees!

"Thank you, Elysium Gate! We are forever grateful for your help!" The fisherman in his 60s cried tears of gratitude!

He had started a domino-effect!

Plop! Plop!

More local knelt with extreme gratitude!

"Thank you, Elysium Gate, for helping us!"

"Thank you, Elysium Gate! Justice for mankind!"

"Our miserable days are finally over!"

The Coastline Sect had seized most of the resources near the beach during their years there. They had also oppressed the residents.

Elysium Gate had restored their peace when they got rid of the Coastline Sect. So, they were extremely grateful!

A few women had children in their arms when they thanked Elysium Gate non-stop as they watched them leave. Even the children imitated the adults and bowed in respect.

"As the residents of Gold Beach, we are here to thank Elysium Gate! We wish Sect Master Indomitable Darby success in conquering the martial arts community and come out on top!" An elderly man in the crowd threw his cane away with shaky hands and shouted with all his might.

"We wish Sect Master Indomitable Darby success in conquering the martial arts community and come out on top!"

"We wish the Sect Master Indomitable Darby success in conquering the martial arts community and come out on top!"

The residents of Gold Beach shouted together; their voices were hoarse after a while!

The students who witnessed the scene gave each other meaningful glances, and they were teary-eyed!

"The Elysium Gate is grand, indeed." Circe's rosy lips gaped in awe, and her face lit up with admiration.

"You're right. I wonder who is Indomitable Darby?" Yvette said softly as she bit her lips.

It was a close one. They could not imagine what would have happened if the Elysium Gate arrived a minute later.

Kent burst into laughter. "We are lucky to have bumped into the Elysium Gate! If it weren't for them, Darryl would have wet his pants already!"

Laughter erupted among the other students.

Some girls stared at Darryl with scorn as Daisy Palmer said, "Darryl, what were you thinking? Do you think you have the capability to be a hero? You would be dead if the Elysium Gate did not come in time! You might even get us in more trouble!"

Chapter 510

"She's right. Darryl, why did you do that? You have zero internal energy! You could've gotten us into more trouble with Ocean Powter if the Elysium Gate wasn't here!"

"Were you trying to be a hero? Could you even do it? You are just a live-in son-in-law!"

Darryl only shrugged in response to the criticisms. " You guys chickened out when the Coastline guys surrounded you, and none of you dared to speak out when the girls were getting harassed. I did have zero internal energy, but at least I have the guts to say something. I may be useless, but you guys are even more worthless than I am."

"You—"

The guys were speechless.

"Alright, that's enough, stop talking." Yvette sat near the bonfire with a light smile. "Aren't you guys hungry? Let's have some fish!"

She took a grilled fish and offered it to Darryl. " Thank you for what you did, Darryl."

Yvette looked at Darryl from top to toe. She was

amused that he dared to speak out even though he was powerless to do anything about it. He was brave and bold.

Darryl smiled politely as he took a few bites of the fish.

The gathering ended around 6.00 pm, and the students bid farewell to each other.

Kent offered to drive the two female students home with his Land Rover, and he called Megan Castello right after he sent the girls home.

"Meg, what are you doing? The gathering is over, can I take you out for a movie?" Kent asked excitedly.

Megan, who had just finished her shift, chuckled when she heard Kent's words. "I'll have to pass; I'm exhausted. Did you have fun with the gathering?"

Kent sighed and started to whine. "Forget it, I was in a good mood today, but that darn Darryl came along too! Things always go wrong when he's here. He is such a jinx! We almost got killed by the Coastline Sect—"

Megan was in shock when she heard that.

'Darryl's back?'

--

Oriental Pearl, 7.00 pm.

It was the most luxurious hotel in Donghai City. Only reputable people would be willing to spend money there.

The hotel was almost always fully packed since it was an indicator of status for one to dine there. However, it was exceptionally deserted that day, and there were no cars near its entrance.

Darryl called Wayne Woodall and rented the whole hotel to hold a feast for the Elysium Gate's disciples!

The Dixon quadruplets and their 3000 disciples were already there when Darryl reached. The banquet hall was fully seated.

"Greetings, Sect Master!"

The disciples stood up and greeted as loud as thunder the moment Darryl stepped into the hall.

"Thank you. Please, sit, my brothers." Darryl waved his arm, a gesture for them to forgo the formalities.

Darryl had a golden mask on so that his identity as the Sect Master would not be exposed.

Darryl looked around and saw a dozen men were tied up in the corner of the banquet hall; the Ten Villains and the Powter brothers were there.

"Sect Master?" Zephyr approached Darryl and said

respectfully, "All of our Elysium Gate brothers are here, so I had to bring the Ten Villains and the Powter twins here, else they might escape."

Darryl did not reply to Zephyr; he walked toward their captives.

"Sect Master Darby, both of us are willing to surrender!" Ocean shouted expectantly. He knew that he would be murdered if he refused to yield to the Elysium Gate.

Darryl nodded and turned to the Ten Villains. " What about you guys?"

All of them had a unique appearance, which was interesting. Oldest Villain One was an overweight man with a chubby face. He had a striking five-inches long scar on his left cheek.

Old Villain Two looked smart and refined; he had a striking appearance.

Old Villain Eight was the most interesting one. He had an afro, and he was as skinny as a twig. He looked like a living feather duster from a distance!

The Ten Villains stared at Darryl intensely; it was clear they did not want to give in to his demands. Oldest Villain One finally muttered coldly, "Just kill us already!"

"How stubborn." Darryl chuckled and flipped his

palm as a dozen medicines appeared.

Darryl had prepared the Heaven Cult Elixirs beforehand as they could be pretty useful in manipulating people!

Everyone in the martial arts community knew that the Heaven Cult Elixirs were unique medicine that only the Grandmaster of Heaven had! Once ingested, an antidote must be taken within a period, or the person would suffer the poison!

Everyone knew about the Heaven Cult Elixir!

Darryl forced the elixirs into their mouths without any hesitation.

"Why do you have these?" Oldest Villain One asked in surprise.

Darryl shrugged and grinned. "I'm not going to lie; I am an Elixir Master. I can produce hundreds of these without breaking a sweat. You had the elixir today, so I am going to give you the antidote if you join us. If you refuse, you can wait for the poison to kick in and suffer."

The Ten Villains broke down immediately!

They knew about the elixir's effects! Many bold and tough men had begged for the antidote when its poison kicked in!

Chapter 511

"Yes, Sect Master, I bow to you in surrender. I will join the Elysium Gate." Old Villain Eight was the first to get down on his knees.

"I surrender too!"

"Me too."

In less than two minutes, tens of people knelt on the floor. Everyone decided not to struggle.

"Release them!" Darryl shouted with a smile. Levin immediately walked toward them and released all the ropes.

Darryl waved his hand happily. "Brothers, the success of Elysium Gate was due to your effort. Let's all enjoy the meal today. Cheers, Brothers!"

Everyone raised their glass. "Cheers to Sect Master!"

Everyone enjoyed the meal as they bonded with each other. They hugged and got drunk.

The Ten Villains, Ocean Powter and River Powter, who had just joined the sect, blended in well with the group, and they all drank happily.

A few of the men got too drunk, and they had fallen

under the table.

After three rounds of drinking, Darryl's head started to spin. As he did not have internal energy, he could not force the alcohol out of his body. He stood up and shouted, "Brothers, stop! Listen to me!"

Even though everyone was drunk, they still put their drinks down obediently and looked at Darryl.

"Ocean Powter, River Powter," Darryl said.

"Yes, Sir!" The two brothers rushed toward Darryl and knelt in front of him.

"From today onward, I shall award you as Henry Bi-General," Darryl said casually. He had just thought of the name as he spoke.

"Ten Villains, come here too," Darryl said.

The Ten Villains quickly walked toward Darryl and knelt in front of him.

Darryl looked at them and said, "The name Ten Villains does not sound pleasant. Remember, once you join Elysium Gate, you must do a lot of good deeds. I shall ignore all the bad things you had done before this, but if you were to repeat that, I would have no mercy on you!"

"Yes, Sir!" Oldest Villain One said.

Darryl nodded. "From today onward, you shall be named The Ten Heaven Masters."

"Thank you, Sect Master." Everyone was delighted with the new names.

"Darryl sighed. He had drunk too much; he walked to the restroom to wash his face so that he could sober up.

The Elysium Gate was finally on its right track. Henry B-General, formerly known as Ocean and River Powter, were Level Three Master Generals. The Four Warlords and Wind Rain Thunder Power were Level One Master Generals, and the Ten Heaven Masters were Master Generals too. The power of Elysium Gate was terrifying.

Darryl washed his face and headed back for another round when his cell phone suddenly rang.

Darryl looked at the screen and furrowed his eyebrows!

Megan! What did she want? Images of the incident at the Lion Slaughtering Conference appeared in Darryl's mind.

That lady had stabbed Darryl's abdomen, and he almost lost his life because of her. Why did she call him?

Darryl wanted to disconnect the call, but he

hesitated and answered it instead.

"My dear brother." Megan's voice came from the call. "Are you free now?"

Kent told her that Darryl was back in Donghai City. She hesitated for a long while until she finally had the courage to call Darryl.

"What do you want?" Darryl asked coldly.

Darryl was not angry at her when she injured him with a sword. Abbess Mother Serendipity had forced her to do that. It was difficult for her.

Chapter 512

At the other end of the line, Megan could feel Darryl 's coldness. She bit her lips and wanted to cry. "My dear brother, I am truly sorry. I didn't want to hurt you that day, but Master wanted me to do it. I had no choice."

Megan said hopefully, "I want to meet you so that I can apologize to you personally. May I do that?"

Darryl sat on a chair after he walked out of the washroom. He drank a sip of wine and did not say a word.

"My dear brother..." Megan felt terrible. "I am sorry. Please, just let me meet you once, or I will feel guilty my whole life. If you don't want to meet me, then I will kill myself right now."

Darryl answered with a sigh. "Where to meet you?"

Darryl did not want to meet her. However, he felt as if he had no choice after he heard what she had said. He would only see her once.

Megan was thrilled when Darryl agreed to meet her. "You have finally agreed to meet me. This is terrific! " Megan was as happy as a child.

Megan had felt so guilty. She was worried that

Darryl might ignore her. She felt delighted that Darryl agreed to meet her.

"I shall wait for you at the Blue Dream Bar." Then Megan disconnected the call.

...

At the Blue Dream Bar.

The bar was far from the city center. It was in a quiet area, and the business was only moderately well. However, it had unique interior decorations.

Music played in the air, and men and women danced on the dance floor. It was a great atmosphere.

Megan was already in the room when Darryl arrived. When she saw him, she immediately stood up to greet him. "You are here."

Megan felt very guilty; she was not as arrogant as her usual self. She was kind.

Darryl nodded as he looked at her. He had not seen Megan for a while, and she looked even sexier.

Megan wore a pair of dark blue jeans with a tight top; it portrayed her body flawlessly, and she looked exceptionally sexy.

Once they sat down, Megan asked cautiously, "Are you still angry at me?"

Darryl smiled, but he did not say a word.

Megan bit her lips. "I know you will never forgive me, right?"

Darryl sighed. He could forget about the fact that Megan had injured him, but Yvonne had agreed to marry Jeremy to rescue him, even though she did not need to do that. He could let the incident go as Megan seemed apologetic.

Darryl laughed. "It's fine. Don't worry about it. I know you had no choice; I forgive you. Excuse me; I want to go to the washroom.

Darryl had drunk too much with the Elysium Gate earlier. He felt so embarrassed as he had to go to the washroom frequently. Darryl walked out of the room and rushed toward the toilet.

Megan was amused by Darryl's expression, and she was slightly more relaxed. She really did appreciate her relationship with Darryl. She hoped that the incident at the Lion Slaughter Conference would not affect their relationship.

Chapter 513

Megan was relieved when Darryl agreed to forgive her. Her cell phone in her pocket rang. Megan's jeans were tight, so she struggled to pull it out. Her face froze when she saw the number on the screen.

It was Jean, a member of the younger generation. Megan had never had a good relationship with Jean, so it must be her master.

Megan answered the call immediately. As expected, Abbess Mother Serendipity's voice said, "Megan."

"Yes, Master," Megan answered softly. It was rather late; why would her master call her?

"I heard that Darryl is back to Donghai City, do you know about it?" Abbess Mother Serendipity asked casually. Megan's body shivered; she could hardly hold onto her cell phone.

How did Abbess Mother Serendipity learn about Darryl? Did she know that Megan was meeting Darryl? Her master hated him. Megan shook as she said, "I—"

Abbess Mother Serendipity interrupted her. " Megan, you are the most capable member in our Emei family, and you are also the eldest disciple. I

have an important task for you."

Megan sighed in relief; it was only a task. She smiled and nodded. "What task is it, Master? I shall complete it."

"Great." Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded to herself as she spoke carefully. "As you know, during the Lion Slaughter Conference, that loser, Darryl, won the first prize. He has the right to execute the Golden Lion, but he let him go. Golden Lion must have given the Supreme Mystery Scripture to Darryl. "

Abbess Mother Serendipity paused slightly before she said, "Everyone knows that there are seven books for the Supreme Mystery Scripture. If one could gather all the books and understand the secret in it, one could conquer the whole world. This scripture should not be in Darryl's hands. Find a chance to meet him and then steal the scripture from him. Do you understand?"

What?

Megan's body shivered, and she bit her lips tightly.

How could she do that?

Megan cried. "Master, I can't do that."

Megan was not willing to do that.

Megan had stabbed Darryl with her sword at the

Lion Slaughter Conference. She still felt guilty about that. How could she steal the scripture from Darryl? That was not right.

"Why not? Why can't you do it?" Abbess Mother Serendipity sounded unhappy. "I'm warning you; the Supreme Mystery Scripture is very important. It is essential for our Emei family too. Even if there is no benefit to our Emei family to have the scripture, we still cannot allow it to be in the wrong person's hand. You'll have to do it even if you don't want to."

"Master, please give this task to another person, please..."

"No." Abbess Mother Serendipity was stern. "You have some connection with that useless man. Since you injured him, he would definitely agree to meet if you were to ask him out. Megan, you cannot disobey me."

"You are a very talented lady, and you are the leader of the younger generation of the Emei family, so don't disappoint me. If you refuse to get the scripture, then our relationship shall end here," Abbess Mother Serendipity said coldly. 1

She ended the call immediately.

Megan sat there in shock and worried. Her happiness vanished at that moment; she wanted to cry.

Chapter 514

On the other end of the call, Darryl hummed as he walked out of the washroom and back into the room.

When he reached the corridor outside the room, he heard a familiar voice.

"Darryl?"

He looked at where the voice came from and saw a room of beautiful ladies; they were smiling and chatting.

It was Circe, Evelyn, and a few of their friends.

Circe stood up and smiled. "Darryl, you are here. What a coincidence!" She left after her gathering earlier to meet with her friends and saw Darryl unexpectedly.

Everyone looked at Darryl.

"Isn't he the dumb man?"

"I still have the picture of him washing Evelyn's feet."

All the chaos made Darryl feel embarrassed. Sh*t! They still remembered about the feet-washing incident.

"Darryl, sit down." Circe stood up.

Back at the beach, when the Coastline Sect people wanted to bully her, Darryl was the only one who stood up to them. Circe appreciated his help.

Not long ago too, Darryl had released Evelyn's grandfather. She had yet to repay his favor; hence, Circe wanted to invite Darryl for a drink.

"Sorry, I can't. Megan is waiting for me in the other room." Darryl smiled and politely rejected her. Megan was rather famous in Donghai City as she was the Criminal Investigation Team Leader; everyone had heard about her.

"Let's invite Megan to join as well, shall we?" Circe asked excitingly.

When she saw what had happened, Evelyn stomped her feet. "Circe, we are here for fun, why should we invite the useless man?"

Evelyn was annoyed to see Darryl; how could she have a drink with him? Darryl made her call him Brother before he released her grandfather. How shameful was that?

Circe smiled. "What a coincidence! Let's sit together. Is that okay, Darryl?"

Darryl could not reject her anymore, so he nodded

and brought Megan to their room to have a few drinks with Circe and her friends.

Darryl was lucky that night. There were so many ladies in the room, and he was the only man. His eyes were so busy; he looked at the women one by one.

Megan's face did not look good. Her master had given her an impossible task; she could hardly breathe.

After a few rounds, Darryl realized that he had drunk too much.

He had drunk a dozen bottles before that at the Oriental Pearl, and he had a few more with the ladies. His head was dizzy.

"Hey Darryl, can't take it anymore?" one of the ladies asked as she looked at Darryl. "You are worse than us; drunk after only a few drinks."

"Yes, Darryl. Finish your drink," another one of the ladies said.

Everyone pressured Darryl to drink more as he was the only man there.

Darryl's mind blanked; he could not reject the ladies. He drank one after another. He was so drunk that he did not know how to refuse anymore.

Finally, Circe could not stand it anymore. She said

softly, "Enough, you all have to stop forcing him to drink, he has reached his limit—"

Darryl had no internal energy; it would be bad for his body if he drank too much.

Right after she spoke, one of her friends laughed. " Hey, Circe, are you interested in Darryl?" All of the other ladies started to laugh at Circe.

Circe's face was scarlet red; she did not know what to say.

Chapter 515

Evelyn kept her silence; she felt upset.

'Just keep doing it. Let him get drunk and not wake up anymore."

The ladies continued to pressure him; Darryl's face was red after countless drinks. There were dozens of empty bottles around his feet.

Finally, Darryl could not take it anymore; he fell asleep on the table.

The few ladies smiled as they shook Darryl's shoulders. "Darryl, wake up. Let's drink some more. "

"He is drunk already?"

"That's no fun."

A few ladies stood up and said, "Circe, let's go. He is so weak; it's no fun at all. Let's go for a movie." Then they headed out of the room.

Circe felt sorry; she said to Megan, "Megan, I'm sorry. My friends are too playful. Darryl is drunk, did we interrupt both of you?"

Megan waved her hands. "No worries. We're only

here for a drink. Go ahead with your movies. I will send Darryl home."

"Fine, we shall make a move then." Circe nodded and left the place with the rest of her friends.

Megan and Darryl were the only ones left in the room. Darryl was still asleep on the table.

Megan bit her lips as she looked closely at Darryl. She felt complicated.

She saw a book in Darryl's jacket. It was the Supreme Mystery Scripture. It seemed like Darryl had been keeping the scripture with him all the time.

Megan sighed. Her master's words played in her mind.

She had already hurt Darryl once; she almost took his life at the Lion Slaughter Conference too. He had only gotten better, but she was about to steal from him.

However, her master would be very disappointed if she could not get the scripture.

Megan clenched her teeth and reached out to grab the Supreme Mystery Scripture.

When she saw the words' Supreme Mystery Scripture' on the cover, she was delighted and yet

she felt guilty.

Her attention was drawn to the Celestial Silk Worm Armor. It was apparent that Darryl was wearing it.

The armor shone under the dim lights of the ba; she had seen it at the Lion Slaughter Conference. Nothing could penetrate the armor.

Megan bit her lips. She did not know what was in her mind when she removed Darryl's shirt and took the Celestial Silk Worm Armor.

After she removed the armor, she could see Darryl's muscular body.

There were dozens of scars on his body; they were wounds from the past. They made Darryl look even more manly.

"Wow!"

Megan held the Celestial Silk Worm Armor in her hands and admired Darryl's body.

That was the first time she was so close to a man. She had not even seen Kent's bare body. Her face was scarlet red, and her heart raced. After a few minutes, she finally gathered her mind. Just like a fugitive on the run, she took both the Supreme Mystery Scripture and the Celestial Silk Worm Armor, shoved them into her handbag and quickly left the room.

Chapter 516

No customer should access the security control room. Megan rotated her wrist, and a silver needle appeared in her hands. She flipped the needle, and it cut off the wire that was connected to the security control room.

Megan had perfect knowledge with security cameras as she dealt with them in the cases daily.

That was the latest model of the security system; one only needed to cut the wire, and the entire security system would collapse and stop working.

"Darryl, I am sorry. I do not want to do this, but I have to obey my Master's order. I don't have a choice." Megan walked toward the bar exit as she mumbled to herself. She sat in her car and took out the Supreme Mystery Scripture and the Celestial Silk Worm Amor.

"Darryl, my master said that the Supreme Mystery Scripture is very important. It cannot be on anyone with evil intention." Megan bit her lips and mumbled further, "You are connected to the Eternal Life Palace Sect. We shall keep these scriptures and armor on your behalf so that the Eternal Life Palace Sect would not be able to get

them."

When she thought about it like that, Megan felt slightly better. Then she drove off in her car.

At the Blue Dream bar.

Darryl woke up and shouted, "Come on; let's continue drinking."

He was stunned when he opened his eyes.

Sh*t! Where was everybody? He was the only one left there. He felt embarrassed as he was drunk in front of the ladies.

Darryl slapped his forehead; he felt unwell. Then he felt as if something was not right.

'Sh*t! Who removed my shirt?' Darryl looked for his shirt. He only managed to find his shirt and jacket.

Where was the Supreme Mystery Scripture? Darryl shook his head. His Celestial Silk Worm Armor was gone too!

The Supreme Mystery Scripture was a gift from the elder Zion.

To get the scripture, Darryl had to join the battle at the Lion Slaughter Conference; he almost died from Megan's attack.

He had used his life to exchange for the scripture.

How could it be gone?

The Celestial Silk Worm Armor had protected him countless times. He would have been dead if he had not had it. He could not afford to lose it.

Darryl panicked. He sweated profusely as he searched the corners of the room, but he could not find it!

Sh*t!

Darryl was angry and worried; he walked speedily to the reception counter. "Hurry, hurry, let me see the security camera footage."

The scripture must have been stolen while he was drunk.

When she realized that Darryl was in a panic, the lady at the reception counter knew Darryl must have lost something important. She quickly retrieved the footage from the corridor.

It was not unusual for people to lose their belongings in the bar as there were too many people there.

Darryl opened his eyes wide and stared at the screen carefully.

"What kind of security camera footage is this?" Darryl shouted.

The footage was pitch black; he could not see anything at all.

"Sir, about this..." The lady at the reception counter was apologetic. "I am sorry, Sir, maybe the security camera is faulty, it was still working fine yesterday."

Darryl was worried, he could not hear any other explanation. Then he walked out of the bar. He sent a text to Megan to ask about her whereabouts.

Megan was driving when she saw Darryl's text. She hesitated before she replied, "An emergency came up, so I had to leave."

When Darryl saw her reply, he asked about Circe and her friends. Why did they leave too? He was the only one left behind.

Megan replied shortly, "I am not sure. I left earlier than them; I am not sure when they left."

Darryl sighed as he held his fist tightly; he tried to remember everything that had happened that night.

Chapter 517

After he spent half a day thinking, Darryl patted his thigh. It must have been Evelyn who stole the scripture.

All of her friends were so passionate about feeding him with more drinks. Evelyn must have ordered them to do that. Did she get him drunk so that she could steal the scripture?

Darryl was furious; he dialed Evelyn's number. He got his number when he was helping Evelyn to rescue her grandmother.

Once the call was connected, Darryl was so furious that he shouted into the phone. "Evelyn, don't you think you've crossed the line? Your grandfather gave me the Supreme Mystery Scripture. How could you steal it?"

"What are you talking about?"

Evelyn was at the movies with her friends. She was furious when Darryl scolded her. "Are you crazy? You're a monster, are you crazy? Go away!"

She immediately hung up after that!

"Sh*t!" Darryl was furious.

...

At the other place.

After Megan stole the scripture, the first place she went to was Darby's residence.

She walked toward the side hall and saw Abbess Mother Serendipity there. She was enjoying a cup of tea.

A few members from the Emei Sect were there as well.

When Abbess Mother Serendipity saw Megan, she smiled and said, "Megan, why are you here so late?"

Megan bit her lips and said, "Master, I have completed the task."

As she spoke, she took out the Supreme Mystery Scripture and handed it to Abbess Mother Serendipity.

The Supreme Mystery Scripture? 1

Abbess Mother Serendipity was delighted to see that. She stood up and took the scripture. She scrutinized the pages and got very emotional; the scripture was genuine.

"How did you manage to get it?" Abbess Mother Serendipity asked as she laughed. Megan had

managed to deliver the book after only three hours after she gave the order. What a lovely surprise!

Megan felt conflicted; she said softly, "Right after you called me, I met up with Darryl. Then I found a good opportunity to take the scripture, and this armor too."

She handed the Celestial Silk Worm Armor to her Master.

"What a good armor!" Abbess Mother Serendipity sighed as she took the armor. That was why Darryl was so powerful at the Lion Slaughter Conference. It was all for the armor.

"This is great."

Abbess Mother Serendipity felt proud; she nodded. " Megan, I did not choose wrongly. You did well. Even though the scripture and armor are not rare items, they still should not land at the hands of those with evil intention. You do not have to feel guilty that you have stolen them. You are doing a good deed for everyone."

"Yes," Megan replied softly.

"Master." A slim shadow walked toward them. It was Jean.

Jean spoked politely as she approached them. " Master, there's someone here to meet you. He said

that he is from the Elysium Gate. His name is Zephyr Dixon."

What? Why were there people from the Elysium Gate there?

Abbess Mother Serendipity furrowed her eyebrows and said, "Let him in."

Even though Abbess Mother Serendipity was angry when people of the Elysium Gate rescued Dax, she could not deny the fact that they had helped to bring justice to society. Elysium Gate deserved the respect they commanded. 1

Right after Abbess Mother Serendipity finished her words, a tall man walked into the hall.

The man was dressed in black. "How are you, Abbess Mother Serendipity? I am Zephyr Dixon from Elysium Gate.

If there were any Elysium Gate members there at that moment, they could easily point out that the person was not Zephyr and he was not from Elysium Gate.

Chapter 518

Abbess Mother Serendipity had never met Zephyr. She did not know that he was an imposter.

Even though she had briefly met Wind Rain Thunder Power when they helped to rescue Jean and the rest who were abducted by Dax, she did not know who they were. So, she could not recognize that the person was an imposter.

Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded. "Why are you here, Warlord Zephyr?"

Almost everyone had heard about the Elysium Gate, and their members Henry Bi-Generals, the Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters. So, Abbess Mother Serendipity addressed the imposter as Warlord Zephyr.

The man in black smiled and replied politely, " Abbess Mother Serendipity, Elysium Gate had only formed not too long ago, so we would like to invite Abbess Mother Serendipity for a drink, to know each other."

Abbess Mother Serendipity smiled as she replied proudly, "The Emei Sect is a sect with premier status, so we would never join any invitation for

drinks. Even though Elysium Gate is gaining a reputation in society, I don't think you are qualified to send us an invitation."

The Six Sects had a few hundred years of history. How could a sect as small as the Elysium Gate have the qualification to send an invite to the Emei Sect? That was impossible.

The man in black was not angry; instead, he laughed. "You are right. The Elysium Gate is the newcomer, and so, we are not yet qualified to send an invitation to the Emei Sect. However, our Sect Master had recently solved the Supreme Mystery Scripture mystery. If Abbess Mother Serendipity is interested in the solution, please kindly accept our invitation."

What?

Had Indomitable Darby unravelled the Supreme Mystery Scripture mystery?

Abbess Mother Serendipity shivered!

The Supreme Mystery Scripture had seven scriptures. If one could solve the mystery after they gathered the scriptures, one would earn the power to control the whole world.

For the past few thousand years, no one was able to gather all the seven scriptures, not to mention to

solve the mystery.

Indomitable Darby had solved the mystery without the complete set of scriptures.

It was rather unbelievable.

"Are you serious?" Abbess Mother Serendipity asked as she stared at the man.

If that were true, it would be an incredible event in society. How could she miss the invitation?

Everyone would want to know about the Supreme Mystery Scripture mystery!

The man in black answered with a smile. "I am Zephyr of the Elysium Gate, and I would never lie."

Abbess Mother Serendipity could not hide her excitement; she stood up and said, "Great, I shall accept your sincere invitation."

She turned to Jean and said, "Gather our disciples and join me to go meet Indomitable Darby, the Sect Master of Elysium Gate."

"As you wish."

Then, Jean left to gather everyone else.

The man in black smiled. "Very well, I shall wait for you here."

After half an hour, Abbess Mother Serendipity had

gathered about 50 of her disciples. They left the Darby mansion with the man in black.

According to that man, Sect Master Indomitable Darby was waiting for them at the beach.

Abbess Mother Serendipity and the Emei disciples trailed behind the man in black. Once they left the Darby mansion, Abbess Mother Serendipity suddenly furrowed her eyebrows and raised her hand. "Wait!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity looked ghastly. She was still fine a moment ago, but she suddenly felt weak, and she could not use her energy.

She could not release the internal energy in her as well! Something seemed to block her abdomen! Those were signs that she was poisoned! Abbess Mother Serendipity could barely stand up.

The man in black turned and smiled. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, what is the matter?"

He smiled devilishly as he spoke.

Chapter 519

Abbess Mother Serendipity was about to speak when she was interrupted by the man in black.

He smiled. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, are you feeling weak and not able to use your internal energy?"

At that moment, Abbess Mother Serendipity's sentiment changed. She looked at him with suspicion. "How did you know?"

The man in black laughed loudly. "Of course, I knew. I was the one who poisoned you."

What?

Abbess Mother Serendipity was surprised, and she was furious. She was also in shock! What poison was that? It was so powerful that she did not even realize it!

The man smiled widely as he held out a small jade bottle and looked at Abbess Mother Serendipity. "I used the Weak Poison."

Weak Poison! There was a rumor that the poison came with a pleasant scent. Once one inhaled it, one would feel weak and would not be able to use one's

internal energy. Abbess Mother Serendipity did detect a smell, but she ignored it as she had thought that it was her disciple's perfume. She never thought that it was the Weak Poison.

It was an extremely rare poison.

"You—"

Abbess Mother Serendipity was surprised and furious when she heard that. She stared angrily at the man.

She had been in the society for so long, and she had never expected to be poisoned by an ordinary man. How shameful was that?

Megan and Jean and others pulled out their swords as they stared angrily at the man in black. How dared he poison their master?

The man remained calm. He looked at Megan and the rest as he said casually, "Don't worry, your master wasn't the only who was poisoned, the rest of you are too! However, your master's internal energy is stronger; therefore, she is showing the signs earlier. It's about time for all of you to feel it too." 1

Megan immediately realized that she could not use her internal energy, and she felt very weak.

The rest of the Emei disciples felt the same, too; all

of them shivered in fear.

"I can't use my internal energy."

"Me, too."

Then all of the Emei disciples fainted on the ground.

Yes!

The man in black clapped, and other men in black appeared. All of them looked strong and powerful.

Then, the men tied up Megan and the rest. Abbess Mother Serendipity's hands were bound too.

"You are not from Elysium Gate!" Abbess Mother Serendipity had finally realized that.

Even though Abbess Mother Serendipity had never met anyone from Elysium Gate, she knew that they were honest people! 1

A faithful Elysium Gate member would never do such a devilish act!

The man in black smiled. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, please calm down. You will know who we are once we reach our destination."

'Abbess Mother Serendipity has such a strong personality!' the man thought.

The man in black waved his hand, and his comrades shoved Abbess Mother Serendipity, Megan and the

rest of the disciples into the few cars beside them. Then they disappeared into the darkness.

Chapter 520

At the same time, in the meditation room at the Shaolin temple.

Shaolin Sect's red-robed Sect Master Endless sat there in meditation. Master Reed was there too.

A disciple ran to the door and said politely, " Masters, someone is at the door outside. He claimed that he is Zephyr from the Elysium Gate. He said that he needs to meet with Master urgently."

Zephyr from the Elysium Gate?

Master Endless opened his eyes and nodded. "Very well, I shall meet him."

Then he stood up and walked toward the front hall.

Elysium Gate was quite famous lately. They managed to settle many of the bad organisations and devilish groups in just a short time. Their good deeds were admirable. Master Endless admired their work and had wanted to meet them.

Zephyr was one of the Four Warlords. Master Endless was delighted to be able to meet him.

In just one day, not only the Six Sects had received an invitation from Elysium Gate's Zephyr, but other

groups did, too. They had received the invitation at the same time.

All of them experienced the same problem. The Master left with his disciples, and then they were poisoned with the Weak Poison. Themen in black had managed to abduct them effortlessly.

...

At the same time, at the Lyndon Real Estate's president's office.

The company belonged to Darryl, and Jade was the general manager. That was the first time Darryl went to the president's office.

He looked at the door and sat on the chair. Then he took out the Yin Herb from his pocket.

Darryl was excited. Once he had taken the herb, he would have all of his powers back.

Darryl sighed before he took the herbs without any hesitation.

Ring!

Once the herbs were in his mouth, he felt an energy in his body connected to his internal energy in his abdomen as it slowly returned to him.

After about half an hour, Darryl stood up slowly. He felt refreshed! He sensed the energy flowed in his

body.

He had taken the Yang Herbs earlier, and then he had taken the Yin Herbs. The combination of the Yang and Yin energy had not only restored his internal energy, but it had also raised his cultivation to Level Five Master General!

He laughed again.

Since he was a Level Five Master General, he only needed to take a Godly Pill, and he would be elevated to a Level One Martial Marquis.

Darryl excitedly popped a Godly Pill into his mouth without any hesitation.

The Godly Pill would not have an immediate effect. He would need to wait about an hour for it to take effect. In the meantime, Darryl had asked Jade to present the Lyndon Real Estate's performance.

After all those times, Jade had looked even more attractive. She was dressed in a business suit that showed off her perfect and sexy body.

Jade was a little nervous when she met with Darryl. She stood politely after she put down the files and greeted him softly, "Father."

Jade was famous in Donghai City because she ran the Lyndon Real Estate. Everyone would call her Sister Jade. She blushed as she addressed Darryl as

her father.

Chapter 521

Darryl looked at Jade and nodded. "How is the company doing presently?"

"Father, Lyndon Real Estate achieved an annual income of around 300 million," Jade reported to Darryl.

Jade had recently acquired a few more useful land banks. Felix Blakely had always monopolized Donghai City's real estate. Since he had left to do businesses in other cities, Donghai City's resources were left with Lyndon Real Estate.

After he listened to Jade's report, Darryl complimented her on her effort and let her continue with her work.

Once Jade had left, Darryl took a deep breath.

He sighed.

The internal energy in his body was suddenly activated. The Godly Pill's effect had kicked in. He had been upgraded to a Level One Martial Marquis!

Crack! Crack!

Darryl could hear sounds from the bones in his body. It was an incredible event when a cultivator

upgraded from a Master General to a Martial Marquis.

He laughed again.

Finally, Darryl stood up; he was very excited! He punched the air, and it broke into black ashes!

How powerful!

Darryl was delighted! He had been upgraded to a Level One Martial Marquis. He also had pure Yang internal energy, and two other skills—the Ascension of the Nine Dragon and the Single Finger Wonder.

If he were to try his best, he would be able to defeat a Level Three Martial Marquis.

If he had not lost the Celestial Silk Worm Armor, he would be even more powerful!

When he thought of what had happened to his Celestial Silk Worm Armor, he immediately lost all his excitement. He sat down on the chair, lit a cigarette, and took a deep breath.

The Supreme Mystery Scripture and the Celestial Silk Worm Armor were treasures that everyone wanted. How could he have lost them both?

Darryl sighed. Then his cell phone rang.

It was Zephyr. When Darryl answered the call, he

could hear the panic in Zephyr's voice at the other end of the line.

"Sect Master! I have bad news! Someone pretended to be from Elysium Gate, and abducted people from all of the Six Sects and other groups as well."

Zephyr panted as he continued to say, "The imposters used the Weak Poison to poison everyone before they abducted them. The rest of their groups are looking for Elysium Gate for revenge! What should we do?"

What?

Someone pretended to be from Elysium Gate?

And they had abducted people from the Six Sects?

Darryl shivered; he was shocked to hear that.

The Six Sects were sects with a long history, and they were extremely powerful.

The Sect Masters from the Six Sects were the top leaders in their society.

However, all of them had been abducted. Who were those people who pretended to be from the Elysium Gate?

Darryl was surprised and furious when he heard about that. He was worried too!

Sh*t! He had to get to the bottom of the incidents.

Darryl asked calmly, "Do you know who those people are?"

Zephyr replied in shame, "Sect Master, I had tried to investigate once I heard about this news, but I could not find who was behind this. However, one of our members reported that he saw everyone from the Six Sects were locked at the Wishing Star Tower.

Chapter 522

Wishing Star Tower? Darryl furrowed his eyebrows.

Zephyr continued to say, "Sect Master, I have put everyone on standby, we can surround the Wishing Star Tower in no time at all. Sect Master, what do you—"

Darryl interrupted Zephyr before he could finish his words. He shook his head. "Don't take any action, wait for my command."

They had abducted all the influential leaders. Regardless of what method they used, they must have a strong background! The Elysium Gate was not their match. Darryl did not want any unnecessary injury or death on his hands.

Darryl said, "Get Henry Bi-General, the Ten Heaven Masters and the Four Warlords. We'll head there together."

All sixteen of them were Martial Marquis; it would be easier to retreat if there was any danger.

"Yes, Sect Master!"

Darryl ended his call and headed toward the door to leave for the Wishing Star Tower.

...

At Donghai City's Wishing Star Tower.

The Wishing Start Tower was located in the suburban area of Donghai city. It was built during the Song Dynasty. It had always been maintained and refurbished over the past hundreds of years. It was also a famous tourist spot at Donghai City.

Over the past few years, with the rapid development of Donghai City, there were more and more tourism spots, and the Wishing Star Tower had been neglected.

The tower only had 13 floors, but it looked really grand. Unfortunately, all the Sect Masters were locked in it.

There was a mall below the tower, and it could accommodate tens of thousands of people. The floor was covered with white jade tiles; it looked magnificent.

At that moment, many men in black stood at the mall.

The men looked unusual. They had exceptional energy levels. The lowest level among them was Martial Marquis, and two of them were even Martial Saints! They were the ones who had abducted the Sect Masters.

A chair was placed among the men in black, and a beautiful lady sat on it. It was apparent that they served the lady.

The lady was extremely beautiful; she had a perfect body figure. All the students at Hexad School would be stunned to see her beauty.

The beautiful lady was none other than the goddess in their school, Yvette Lane.

She looked extremely attractive and cold as she sat on the chair.

One of the men in black approached her. "Princess, we have captured many of the masters from the World Universe. We have locked them in the Wishing Star Tower. What should we do next?"

The man had addressed Yvette as Princess. She was the New World Emperor's daughter; she was Princess Yvette.

For the past few years, the New World Emperor had wanted to conquer the World Universe. He had planned to act through the World Universe's sect leaders; eventually, he would take over the entire world.

The plan might sound simple, but it was very challenging to be executed. They needed a candidate who was not only good in martial arts,

but they had to be smart and brave enough to head to the World Universe to execute the task, too.

Among all the people in the kingdom, none of them was suitable for the job. They were either brave but not smart, or smart but not brave.

The New World Emperor decided to let his beloved daughter, Princess Yvette, go to the New World and capture the Six Sect's leaders.

Princess Yvette was not only smart, she looked beautiful too. She would definitely complete the task.

When Princess Yvette arrived at the World Universe, she had heard about the Hexad School that was built and managed by the Six Sects. Hence, she joined the school as a student to gather news about the Six Sects. Then, the New World Emperor sent someone to get the Weak Poison to her.

The Weak Poison was very rare in both worlds, and the New World Emperor had sent all that he had to Yvette. Anyone lower than a Martial Saint would immediately be poisoned when they smelled it.

Yvette had used all the Weak Poison that she had; that was how she managed to capture all the leaders.

"How many people did we get?" Yvette asked.

One of the men bowed as he said politely, "

Princess, we have captured about 1000 people, and more than 50 of them are above the Martial Marquis level."

Chapter 523

When she heard the numbers, Yvette stood up slowly and smiled. "Great job, Royal Guard Dragon. You did well. You did not disappoint me."

The twelve men behind Yvette were the Twelve Royal Guards. Each of them represented the twelve zodiacs—Royal Guard Rat, Royal Guard Ox, Royal Guard Tiger, and the rest of the zodiac animals.

Among them, Royal Guard Rat and Royal Guard Ox were Martial Saints. The rest of the group were Martial Marquis.

All Twelve Royal Guards had their own unique capabilities, and they were extremely powerful. The New World Emperor sent them to protect Yvette.

"Princess, there is that something I don't understand," the Royal Guard asked as he knelt in front of Yvette.

"Speak," Yvette replied.

The Royal Guard Rat scratched his head. "Princess, we have captured all of these leaders, so why don't we just kill all of them? Why do we need to bring them to the Wishing Star Tower?"

Yvette smiled. "What is the point of killing them?

There are so many elites in the World Universe, and we will not be able to kill all of them. Isn't it better if we capture them alive and let the World Universe be chaotic enough that they would kill each other?"

She was right. They captured the leaders to create chaos in the World Universe, and let them kill each other!

During the students' gathering at the Hexad School, Yvette had witnessed how powerful the Elysium Gate was; it was mind-blowing.

That was where she came up with the idea to capture the elites. She wanted to humiliate them and put the blame on Elysium Gate. She wanted the entire World Universe to seek revenge with the Elysium Gate, and there would be chaos in their world!

The elites from the New World could then cross to their land to destroy the entire World Universe. What a great idea!

"Where are my mask and robe?" Yvette asked.

The Royal Guard immediately presented a black robe and a golden mask to her.

She had heard that Indomitable Darby would wear a golden mask each time he appeared. Even the Elysium Gate members had never seen his face.

Yvette tied her long hair and put on the masks. She looked at the Royal Guard Dragon and said, "How do I look? What about my voice? Do I sound like Indomitable Darby?"

Royal Guard Dragon knelt and said, "Princess, you looked exactly like Indomitable Darby now."

When she heard that, Yvette coughed lightly to correct him. "Please take note. I am Indomitable Darby now. You should address me as Sect Master. You don't want to give us away when we gather them here."

The Royal Guard Dragon was a smart person. He immediately replied, "Yes, Sect Master."

Yvette nodded and went to sit on the chair. She raised her arms. "Good. Bring forth the prisoners."

Yvette was excited. The Twelve Royal Guards left for the Wishing Star Tower.

Soon enough, they brought about 1000 people to Yvette.

Those people included Abbess Mother Serendipity from the Emei Sect, Sect Master Endless from the Shaolin Sect, and Sect Master Treasure from the Wudang Sect. Besides that, they also had Sect Master from the Beggars Sect, Sect Master from the Halls of Swords, and Master of Island Peach

Blossom. All of them looked extremely weak.

Not only were they poisoned by the Weak Poison, but their internal energy was also locked. They were just like any other ordinary person. Their hands and legs were cuffed with metal chains. None of them could escape.

Yvette was excited as she looked at every one of them. Then she spoke in a deep voice, "Greetings, Sect Masters. I regret meeting you this way. I am Indomitable Darby, and I would like to apologize to everyone."

Then she sat lazily on the chair; she looked arrogant. There was no respect for any of the elders there.

Everyone was furious as they stared at Yvette.

They were all elite members in the society, how could they be treated like an ordinary prisoner. That was way too humiliating!

"Indomitable Darby!"

Sect Master Treasure stepped forward and pointed at Yvette angrily. "We have done anything wrong. Why did you capture us?"

Chapter 524

Sect Master Treasure was emotional. "You had my respect when Elysium Gate got rid of the devilish gangs. It looks like that was an act. You are merely gathering them to threaten the community."

Sect Master Treasure started to cough; he was too angry.

Sect Master Treasure had believed that the group was not the Elysium Gate. Elysium Gate was an honest group, and they would never use the Weak Poison.

However, when he saw Yvette wore the golden mask, he was confident that they were from Elysium Gate!

Other than Indomitable Darby, no one else would wear a golden mask.

"Elysium Gate is pathetic!"

"You all are just rubbish and liars."

Everyone started to curse as Yvette smiled happily. The angrier they got, the happier Yvette was.

It appeared that her plan to capture the sect masters and blame it on Elysium Gate was a great idea, after

all. She still needed to humiliate them further.

Yvette looked at Abbess Mother Serendipity and smiled. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, I have invited all of you here not to kill you. Why are you so emotional? This is just an invite for a drink."

She raised her hands. Men in black stepped forward with wine barrels. Then they pour a bowl of wine for each of their captives.

Once that was done, the men in black stepped aside.

What?

Why did they serve them wine?

Everyone was puzzled as they looked at each other. They were tied with chains on their hands and legs, and internal energy was sealed; that was not the way to invite someone for a drink.

Yvette raised her glass as she looked at everyone and smiled, "This is the first time that I, Indomitable Darby, meet all sect masters. Cheers."

Then she gulped her glass of wine.

Abbess Mother Serendipity and the rest stared at her coldly. None of them spoke or drank the wine.

Yvette smiled when she noticed that none of them moved.

Royal Dragon shouted, "Our Sect Master was polite

enough to invite you to drink, but none of you would accept it. What a disgrace! We'll just have to serve it to you then."

A group of female waitresses appeared and walked in front of the captives. They held the wine glass to force the wine down their throats.

The sect masters were famous and reputable people, but all of them were forced to drink the wine. Their internal energy was sealed, and their hands and legs were chained. They had no choice but to suffer the humiliation.

Retch!

The next moment, many of them started to vomit. They were not fed with wine! Those were saltwater!

All of the sect masters were furious. They were elites in the community, and they were forced to drink salt water!

Steven Simmons, the Beggars Sect's Sect Master, stared at Yvette and shouted, "Indomitable Darby, I don't have any dealings with you, and yet you humiliated me. Beggars Sect will treat Elysium Gate as our arch-enemy!"

It was just a little saltwater, and yet, he could not stand it?

Yvette smiled, but she did not say a word.

Abbess Mother Serendipity's face was scarlet red. She scolded, "Indomitable Darby, if you don't kill me today, then I will kill every member from Elysium Gate."

Chapter 525

Yvette was not angry at all. She stood up slowly and said, "I have heard that Abbess Mother Serendipity had a strong character, and I've finally experienced it."

She stood in front of Abbess Mother Serendipity as she stared at her and said, "You have a beautiful face; you must be the dream of many men. How many boyfriends have you had?"

"You—"

Abbess Mother Serendipity's face was scarlet red as she trembled in anger. "What are you saying?" How dare he flirt with her!

Yvette suddenly kissed Abbess Mother Serendipity on her cheeks.

Everyone was stunned. What had happened?

Did Indomitable Darby kiss Abbess Mother Serendipity?

Abbess Mother Serendipity was the Sect Master of the Emei Sect. How would he dare to kiss her?

That was way out of line!

Abbess Mother Serendipity was still in shock, and

she did not know how to react! What had happened? Indomitable Darby had dared to kiss her?

Abbess Mother Serendipity slowly came back to her senses. She stared angrily at Yvette and screamed, " Indomitable Darby, you bastard! I will kill you!"

As the Sect Master of the Emei Sect, Abbess Mother Serendipity had always viewed her purity as the utmost importance.

Yvette's kiss was like a blow of death to her.

When she noticed Abbess Mother Serendipity's anger, Yvette smiled cheekily and apologized. "Oh no, Abbess Mother Serendipity! You looked too alluring. I can't control myself; I'm so sorry."

Then Yvette smiled at her.

At that moment, Sect Master Endless from the Shaolin Sect sighed. He put his palms together and said to Yvette, "Sir, please take my advice and stop this. Don't continue down this wrong path."

Yvette looked innocently at him and asked, " Master, you are wrong. What is wrong with us inviting you all for a drink? Abbess Mother Serendipity is too alluring; hence I couldn't stop myself from kissing her. That was just a normal human reaction."

"You—"

Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious; she stared at Yvette, but she could not speak.

What an idiot!

Yvette laughed. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, you are so attractive. Why are you still single? Why don' t I find you a husband and get you married immediately? What do you think?"

Everyone was furious when they heard that!

How horrible was that Indomitable Darby? He wanted to get a husband for Abbess Mother Serendipity?

Abbess Mother Serendipity was too angry, and she shouted, "Indomitable Darby, you bastard, just kill me if you want to! You don't have to humiliate me like this!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity had always been pure. How could he humiliate her in such a way?

Chapter 526

Yvette raised her glass to take a sip and smiled. " Abbess Mother Serendipity, don't be angry. It is for your own good. All women need a man. Let me find you one. What about a grand matchmaking event?"

Yvette laughed happily. "Don't worry, Abbess Mother Serendipity. I will find you a handsome husband."

"You—" Abbess Mother Serendipity almost fainted from anger. She could not stand it anymore and shouted, "Indomitable Darby, I will kill you, you bastard!"

She raised her arms! However, she was easily restrained by one of the men in black beside her.

Yvette laughed.

'Yes, I want you to be angry. The angrier you are, the more you will hate the Elysium Gate,' Yvette thought.

Yvette was happy to see Abbess Mother Serendipity' s angry face. She shouted, "Everyone, it would be the best thing to happen to you if you were to marry Abbess Mother Serendipity."

Then she raised the pitch of her voice and asked, "

Anyone here would like to volunteer to marry Abbess Mother Serendipity?"

Everyone kept their silence; they looked conflicted. No one dared to stand forward.

That must be a joke! It was Abbess Mother Serendipity! Who would dare to violate her name?

Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious, and she continued to shout, "Indomitable Darby, you bastard! Let me go! You're a coward who sealed my internal energy! What kind of man are you?"

Yvette smiled and argued, "Abbess Mother Serendipity, you are wrong. I never said I am a man. " Well, she was a lady.

Abbess Mother Serendipity bit her lips so hard that it almost bled.

Yvette could not stop laughing as she shouted, "So? Is no one willing to marry Abbess Mother Serendipity? I have an idea. Agree to marry her, and you're free to go!"

Wow!

Everyone looked interested when they heard that. None of them wanted to stay captive any longer.

"Still, no one?" Yvette asked coldly. "If you are not willing to marry her, then you shall stay here

forever. I will only let the person willing to marry her go."

"I am willing."

A voice came from the crowd; it was from the Wudang Sect.

It was Master Treasure! Everyone looked at him in surprise.

Yvette was delighted as she waved her hands. " Master Treasure, you are willing to marry Abbess Mother Serendipity, is that right?"

"Yes, I do..."

Abbess Mother Serendipity exploded. "Master Treasure, the Emei Sect will treat the Wudang Sect as our enemy!"

Master Treasure was embarrassed.

'Abbess Mother Serendipity, please don't be so angry. Can't you see that I am trying to deceive them? Once I leave here, I will seek help from all sects to destroy the Elysium Gate!' Master Treasure thought.

Yvette happily returned to her seat and clapped her hands. "Great, we have a match! Come, let's arrange a wedding ceremony for Abbess Mother Serendipity and Master Treasure!"

At that moment, a few of the waitresses walked forward to force Abbess Mother Serendipity and Master Treasure to kneel.

"The first bow is for Heaven and Earth," Yvette said happily.

Sh*t!

Abbess Mother Serendipity's body trembled as she vomited blood! That was it. She would no longer be pure; her reputation was wrecked. Even though they might escape, everyone would know that she had a wedding ceremony with Master Treasure.

Her eyes were blood-red as she stared at Yvette; they were filled with anger! If her stare were capable of killing, Yvette would have been dead.

Yvette looked satisfied. She smiled at Abbess Mother Serendipity. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, why are you staring at me? If I were you, I would be so happy for this day!"

Chapter 527

"The second bow is for the elderly, and thirdly, bow to each other!"

Yvette laughed happily. She took out her cell phone and recorded everything.

There were no cell phones in the New World. Yvette had never used a cell phone before she went to the World Universe. A smart girl like her picked up the technology immediately.

A few minutes later, the hilarious but grand wedding ceremony was completed.

Yvette looked at the Twelve Royal Guards and said, " That's it, let everyone go. Abbess Mother Serendipity and Master Treasure will go on their honeymoon now."

That should be enough torture for everyone. Everyone would hate the Elysium Gate by then. Since the objective had been met, it was time to let everyone go so that they would gather their forces to destroy the Elysium Gate!

"Yes, Sect Master! We shall release everyone," Royal Guard Tiger replied after he heard Yvette's order.

What?

'Release everyone? They captured everyone, just to humiliate us?' Everyone could not believe what had happened.

Master Treasure looked at Yvette and asked, "You are releasing us? I thought you said that you would only release the person willing to marry Abbess Mother Serendipity? Why are you releasing everyone?"

Master Treasure felt that he had been fooled.

If he had known about that earlier, he would not have volunteered himself. Not only was he fooled, but he had also offended Abbess Mother Serendipity!

Yvette smiled. "Why? I am releasing everyone. Are you not satisfied?"

Yvette ignored him. She took out her cell phone to admire the video she had taken earlier.

Master Treasure was furious, his body shook, and he held his fists tightly. He looked at Yvette in anger. If his internal energy had not been sealed, he would have killed Indomitable Darby."

'How dare he make a fool of the Six Sects!'

Royal Guard Dragon rushed everyone out. "Move it!

Do you enjoy being a fugitive? Hurry up, and I will lead you all down the hill."

Soon, Yvette was the only one left at the Wishing Star Tower. She felt so relieved.

She had humiliated all the sects and put the blame on Elysium Gate.

From then onward, the World Universe would be in great chaos. New World would then send some of their people to take over the World Universe.

Just as she got excited, Yvette suddenly furrowed her eyebrows. She felt the presence of intense energy behind her! She quickly turned; her whole body shook.

Someone stood quietly behind her, and that person wore a golden mask too.

It was the real Sect Master of Elysium Gate, Indomitable Darby—Darryl Darby.

Darryl was furious! He had witnessed the entire incident where that person humiliated the sect masters. How could that person impersonate him?

Darryl bit his lips and said coldly, "Who are you? Why do you impersonate me?"

Both Darryl and Yvette wore their masks, so they could not recognize each other.

"I—"

Yvette smiled. "Don't misunderstand me. I admired you very much. Hence I made a mask for myself."

At that moment, the Twelve Royal Guards were not there; they had left to send everyone down the hill. She was the only person there, so she had to delay him.

Darryl smiled. "Admire me? Do you take me for a fool? You have captured leaders of the Six Sects and put all the blame on me. Is this how you admire me? I will fight you until you kneel before me.
Otherwise, I am not Indomitable Darby."

Chapter 528

Darryl immediately punched Yvette!

Yvette reacted quickly; she leapt and started to run away.

"Running away?" Darryl shouted coldly and went after her. He turned to the Four Warlords and shouted, "Zephyr, go down the hills now. Inform all the sects someone is pretending to be the Elysium Gate. We need to clarify this misunderstanding with them."

"Yes, Sir!" Zephyr and the rest replied.

Yvette had run for a few minutes, but the distance between Darryl and her had gotten closer. He would catch up with her soon!

However, Yvette was not worried; she smiled. The woods were in front of her. She had set some traps there. No one would be able to leave the woods alive. She dove into the woods without any hesitation.

Darryl stopped right outside the woods. He did not barge into the woods; he stood outside as he observed the place. Something was not right with the woods; there was a trap.

Yvette sighed in relief. She smiled at Darryl. "I have nothing to do with you, why are you chasing me?"

"Nothing to do with me?" Darryl laughed coldly. " You pretended to be me, abducted the elites and Sect Masters under the guise of Elysium Gate. You still dare to say that you did nothing wrong?"

Yvette replied, "You should thank me; Elysium Gate is now famous."

Darryl was annoyed. He did not want to waste any more time. "Remove your mask and get out of there. You have the guts to impersonate me, but don 't dare to face me?"

Yvette laughed. "Why should I come out there? You can come here if you want."

She added, "You should be the one to remove your mask. You are Indomitable Darby, Elysium Gate's Sect Master. Are you too ashamed to reveal yourself? "

"You—"

Darryl was furious and speechless. Yvette continued to say, "I didn't expect that Indomitable Darby is a coward who would not even dare to enter the woods. "

Yvette had set a trap in the woods; it was the Six

Energy Trap. A minister from the New World had taught her that, and it was incredible!

Yvette was very confident with her plan. Apart from herself, no one would be able to leave the woods.

The trap was a backup plan. If her plan to abduct the elites from the sects had failed, she would retreat and hide in the woods.

The abduction plan had gone well, but she was trapped because of Indomitable Darby.

After he observed the trap for about two minutes, Darryl nodded. That was the Six Energy Trap; the Bai Qi Formation scripture had recorded it. It was a moderate difficulty level trap, so it was not too difficult to break it.

Then, Darry stepped into the woods.

"How dare you enter here!" Yvette shouted. "I didn' t expect Elysium Gate's Sect Master to be so stupid. Once you come in here, you can never leave. I shall leave you here then. I hope you'll enjoy this place forever."

Yvette started to run. Five right turns, three left turns, seven rows in front and nine rows behind...

Yvette used the secret code to get out of the woods. No one could leave if they did not know the code, especially not Indomitable Darby. He would never

be able to catch up to her.

Yvette was about to reach the exit when she suddenly saw a black shadow appear in front of her. She looked up and screamed!

Chapter 529

Darryl had managed to block her exit

"You—" Yvette bit her lips; she was in shock!

"Did you think that you could trap me with just a simple Six Energy Trap?" Darryl asked coldly.

Yvette was dumbstruck. How did he know about the trap? It was impossible!

Just as Yvette was deep in her thoughts, Darryl reached out and removed her golden mask! She did not expect him to do that!

Wow!

Darryl was immediately mesmerized by Yvette's beauty. Both of them were stunned.

Yvette? She was the one who impersonated him?

Yvette's beauty seized Darryl's attention. Her long hair was in a bun, and she wore a black robe. Even though her perfect body figure was covered, her beautiful features still captivated her.

Yvette felt ashamed and angry. She quickly reached out to pull Darryl's mask. She was stunned to see who was in front of her.

"Darryl! How could it be you?"

She trembled; she was still speechless. She had always thought that Elysium Gate's founder was someone great and famous!

She had never expected the person to be Darryl.

The woods were in complete silence. Both of them looked at each other, but they did not say a single word.

Both of them sighed.

After a few seconds, Darryl took a deep breath as he stared at Yvette. "Speak. Why do you impersonate me?"

During the Hexad School's gathering, Darryl thought that Yvette was a beautiful and smart lady. He had never thought she would be evil enough to capture all the elites in the community and pushed the blame onto the Elysium Gate!

Most importantly, who was Yvette? The Twelve Royal Guards were powerful people, so why would they follow her? Royal Guard Rat and Royal Guard Tiger were Martial Saints, how could they obey another's command?

"I am asking you again. Who are you, and why did you impersonate me?" Darryl asked coldly.

Yvette smiled. "Why should I tell you?"

"Stop talking nonsense. I am asking you again, are you going to tell me?" Darryl held his fists tightly as he stared at her!

Yvette was not afraid; she smiled at him. "What if I don't want to tell you?"

Yvette was still in shock when she found out that Darryl was Indomitable Darby. She could not stop looking at him.

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows. Zing! The Blood Drinking Sword appeared in Darryl's hands, and he pressed it against Yvette's neck. "I am asking you one last time; why did you impersonate me?!"

Intense energy surrounded Darryl.

Chapter 530

Yvette smiled when she saw the Blood Drinking Sword. She closed her eyes and said, "Darryl, you want to know who I am? I'd never tell you. Kill me if you want. But if you kill me, you'd never find out about my background, and my men will go after you to kill you."

Darryl bit his lips; he was dumbstruck. It was apparent she tried to be difficult.

"Kill me. Otherwise, let me go. Don't waste my time. " Yvette opened her eyes and smiled.

Darryl took a deep breath and smiled at her. "I will not kill you. But I will make you wish you were dead. "

Darryl removed his shirt and tore it into strips. Then he made a rope out of those strips. He carried Yvette and tied her tightly onto a tree.

"Darryl, what are you doing?" Yvette shouted angrily.

Darry ignored her. He raised his hands, and Yvette felt the presence of intense energy. Then the trees at both sides broke into pieces.

Yvette shouted, "What are you doing? You have no

guts to kill me, and now you are releasing your anger on the trees?" Had he gone crazy?

Darry did not say a word. He raised his hands again, and a few more trees broke into pieces.

Suddenly, Yvette felt itchiness and heat all over her body. She was extremely itchy and hot!

"Darryl, what did you do to me?" Yvette shouted.

Darryl smiled at her. "I made some slight adjustments to your trap. This is a Six Energy trap, so it could also direct the heat from the ground toward people. One would feel extreme itch and pain."

"Don't you dare try to scare me!" Yvette started to worry, but she would not surrender. "I do not believe you. Do you really think that the Six Energy trap can be modified? Don't try to trick me."

When the minister taught her the Six Energy trap, he never mentioned any possible modifications. He also did not say anything about itchiness!

Darryl smiled and looked at her. He did not say anything; he simply waited.

At that moment, a sudden heat wave circulated the woods before it surrounded Yvette. Her whole body started to itch again!

Yvette started to laugh.

She felt as if many people had tickled her at the same time, and it made her break into laughter.

"It's very itchy, Darryl, stop it! Make it stop now!" Yvette could not stand the heat and itch all over her body. She felt as if every inch of her skin was itchy beyond description!

"Darryl, did you hear me? Make it stop!" Yvette started to stomp her feet. She could not stop laughing, too.

Darryl stood in front of her, so he could see that she was miserable. "Well? Are you going to talk? Why did you impersonate me?"

Chapter 531

Yvette's body could not help but tremble while she tried resisting the hot and ticklish feelings. She bit her lip tightly and refused to make a sound!

"Fine, let's see how long you can keep it up." Darryl was in no rush as he leaped with a single jump onto a big tree and laid relaxingly on a branch.

Yvette felt worse as time passed under the circumstances, no one could endure such ticklish sensations for long.

Darryl closed his eyes and enjoyed Yvette's incessant laughter which was like music to his ears.

Yvette was covered in sweat after about a dozen seconds as she could not endure any longer and said, "Darryl, haha... Please stop the formation..."

Darryl was happy to hear Yvette's gentle tone but he still remained silent. This woman was stubborn and he had to properly torment her further. Darryl kept his eyes shut and whistled on the tree branch as though he did not hear a single thing.

Yvette's arrogant demeanor faded away and she felt utter despair upon seeing Darryl's actions. "Darryl, please stop the formation. Please, I'm begging you

..."

Yvette was unwilling to beg Darryl for mercy, but she really could not endure any longer! She was tormented to the point of being completely covered in sweat.

Yvette threw her dignity aside upon seeing Darryl was still silent and pleaded while stomping the grounds. "Darryl, the Indomitable Darby, Sect Master Darby! I'm begging you, please have mercy on me. I won't do it again, please let me go..."

Yvette's face turned red-hot like a fireball. As the prideful New World's Princess Yvette, anyone who saw her had to bow down and greet her! She had never thought she would one day be begging mercy from a man!

Darryl lazily opened his eyes upon hearing Yvette's words. "Tell me exactly who are you?"

"I'm the New World Princess..."

Darryl was stunned and looked at Yvette in disbelief upon hearing her words. He was rendered speechless for quite some time.

So Yvette was a princess! It was no wonder the Twelve Royal Guards listened to her commands!

Darryl was taken aback and could not help but asked, "Why did you impersonate me and abduct

those sects' elites?"

Yvette bit her lip with her fluttering eyelashes as she put on an expression as though she was wronged. "I just thought it's fun and imitated you out of my admiration for you. I think the Elysium Gate is very cool and that Indomitable Sect Master Darby is amazing..."

Yvette tried resisting the ticklish feelings while gently pleaded, "Sect Master Darby, I won't do it again. Please let me go..."

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows. "I can let you go, but you must come with me and properly explain this situation to the sects! You humiliated those elites and framed Elysium Gate for it. The Elysium Gate will become every martial artists' public enemy if this matter isn't explained properly."

"Alright, alright, I'll go okay!" Yvette bit her lip tightly as she was about to cry.

Darryl waved his hand and stopped the formation after Yvette agreed to the compromise.

At that moment, rapid footsteps could be heard coming from beyond the woods! A dozen figures swiftly flew into sight soon after!

It was the Twelve Royal Guards!

Yvette felt her spirits revitalized upon seeing them

and shouted, "Twelve Royal Guards, quickly seize Darryl! You have to capture him!"

Yvette was unspeakably angered and embarrassed at the moment!

She had surrendered for the time being just because she could no longer endure it. She would not let Darryl go now that the Twelve Royal Guards had arrived!

Yvette wanted to capture Darryl, forced him onto his knees, and begged her for mercy!

Chapter 532

Woosh.

The Twelve Royal Guards' gaze immediately locked onto Darryl as soon as Yvette finished her words and instantly rushed toward Darryl!

"Sh*t!" Darryl self-exclaimed as he immediately turned and ran!

Darryl could not afford to mess with these 12 people as 10 of them were Martial Marquises while two were Martial Saints!

Darryl would not be able to defeat them even if he fought to his death, therefore the best solution was to run.

Darryl could have sworn he had never run so fast in his life. Although he was fast, the two Martial Saints were faster!

The Royal Rat Guard instantly leaped up and blocked Darryl's path while his hands made a claw-shaped before immediately grasping toward Darryl's chest without any warning!

'Damn, is this the power of a Martial Saint? It's only a simple grasp yet it's so terrifying!' If Darryl

was caught, he would have been crippled if not dead!

Darryl also felt a suffocating sensation! He dared not face the Royal Rat Guard head-on so he retreated to dodge the attack.

At that moment, the Royal Ox Guard attacked Darryl from another direction with a punch!

This punch was extremely powerful and imposing!

Darryl had quickly reacted and dodged left, but alas he did not fully make it and was grazed by the punch. Just a mere graze had caused Darryl to spit out blood!

"Ah!" Darryl's mind went blank as he lost control of his body and flew a dozen meters away. He landed heavily on the ground before spitting out even more blood!

At that moment, the Twelve Royal Guards had surrounded Darryl who was in immense pain and instantly felt hopeless!

'This is the end, am I going to be captured? Yvette will surely torture me to death if I'm caught,' thought Darryl.

"Come quietly," said the Royal Rat Guard coldly as he reached out to grab Darryl!

Whoosh!

The sounds of two explosive dashes could be heard at that crucial moment and Darryl instinctively looked toward the sound's direction and saw two figures swiftly flying toward him!

It was a man and a woman!

The slender man with a skinny face had a blue dragon tattoo on his neck!

While the woman was wearing a dark red dress on her slim and graceful figure. They were part of Grandmaster Heaven Cult's Four Guardian Kings—the Azure Dragon and Vermilion Peafowl!

'What are they doing here? Aren't they supposed to be on Elysian Island?' Darryl was puzzled.

"Elder Master, we're here to save you!" Azure Dragon shouted before flicking his wrist and threw a palm strike at the Royal Rat Guard!

Boom! The Royal Rat Guard and Azure Dragon both staggered back as the attack landed with none having an advantage over the other!

At the same time, Vermilion Peafowl rushed toward Darryl and held him in her arms. Her enchanting face was filled with unease and worry. "Elder Master, are you alright? Are you injured?"

Gulp.

At that moment, Darryl felt as if his organs had been completely rearranged. While enduring the pain, he could smell Vermilion Peafowl's fragrance as she held him against her elegant body. Darryl could not help but quietly swallowed his saliva and smiled. "I'm fine. I won't die."

The Vermilion Peafowl nodded upon hearing Darryl's words, held onto him, and flew midair!

Meanwhile, Azure Dragon was fighting and retreating at the same time before eventually leaving the area.

The two Guardian Kings took Darryl a dozen kilometers and finally landed on a boat.

"Elder Master, are you sure your injuries aren't serious?" Azure Dragon could not help but ask while standing on the deck when he noticed there was blood on the corner of Darryl's mouth.

Darryl waved his hand. "I'm alright, I'm alright. Why did both of you suddenly appear? Aren't you supposed to be on Elysian Island?"

Both Guardian Kings glanced at each other before Vermilion Peafowl gently said, "Elder Master, the Cult Mistress specifically sent us and asked for your return to Elysian Island. We finally found you after searching for so long at Donghai City."

“Why is the Cult Mistress looking for me?” Darryl mumbled.

‘Could it be she misses me after not meeting for so long?’ Darryl internally laughed.

“I don’t know why the Cult Mistress is looking for you either,” said the Vermilion Peafowl gently as she channeled her internal energy to move the boat toward Elysian Island.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 533

Darryl nodded and did not ask further.

They arrived at Elysian Island two hours later.

It was late autumn, but Elysian Island was like a hidden paradise as its pleasant vibrantly colored exotic seaside plants could still be observed from a distance.

The Vermilion Peafowl knocked on the Cult Mistress 's room door and respectfully announced, " Mistress, Darryl is here."

Monica's gentle voice came from the room as the Vermilion Peafowl finished her words. "Alright, let Darryl come in alone. Azure Dragon and Vermilion Peafowl, you may excuse yourselves."

"Yes, Mistress," replied Vermilion Peafowl as she turned and left.

Darryl eventually opened the door and went in after seeing both of them had walked far away.

Gulp.

Darryl could not help but swallow his saliva upon seeing the scene in front of him as he entered the room.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Monica wore a purple nightgown at that moment. Darryl found it hard to take his eyes off her sexy curves. The light makeup on her face only further enhanced her immeasurable beauty!

The Cult Mistress was exceptionally alluring to Darryl after not seeing her for a while.

"Mistress, you suddenly called me back out. Is it because you missed me?" Darryl said with a grin. He was getting bolder after his two previous intimate contacts with the Cult Mistress.

Monica blushed and flirtatiously rolled her eyes. " Darryl, I'm still the Cult Mistress. You're becoming more presumptuous with such disrespect to your superiors."

Darryl was truly becoming more improper.

"Alright, alright. I shall obey your commands," Darryl's smile faded away, and could not help but asked, "so why are you looking for me?"

Monica was the most rational woman that Darryl knew and she would not seek him without any reason.

Monica humphed as she stood up from the bed and walked to Darryl's side before softly saying, "I want to ask you. If I've not sent someone to look for you, will you take the initiative to visit me?"

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Darryl laughed upon hearing Monica's tone and gave her a tight hug.

"I've been through a lot during the past few days. I almost died at the Six Sects' hands and truly didn't have time to come. Don't be mad at me, Mistress," whispered Darryl softly into Monica's ears.

Darryl had not lied. Abbess Mother Serendipity's attack earlier caused him to lose his powers and he needed a considerable effort to recover from his injuries. He later on even discovered that Yvette was impersonating himself and this series of events kept Darryl busy. There was no time for his return back to Elysian Island.

Darryl would truly have visited the Cult Mistress if he had not been so busy. Strictly speaking, the Cult Mistress was the first woman he had been with after all.

Monica was concurrently shy and happy from Darryl 's sudden hug, but she pushed him away and softly said, "I-I'm not mad at you... I just miss you a lot..."

Monica completely flushed upon finishing her own words!

How could she say such embarrassing things as the high and mighty Cult Mistress? However, she could not help but let her proud demeanor down with

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Darryl around.

Darryl wrapped his arms around the Cult Mistress's waist and hugged her tightly again upon hearing those words!

"Ah..." Monica's whole body fell into Darryl's arms from the inertia as she exclaimed.

"What's wrong? Did I hugged you too tightly and hurt you?" Darryl softly asked.

"I-I'm fine..." Monica tightly bit her lip until it was about to bleed. "But if you are to hug me with such force, I-I'm afraid you'll hurt the child inside me..."

What!?

At that moment, Darryl felt a buzzing in his head!

The child inside Monica!?

This...

"It's our child," said Monica with a faint blushing smile. 1

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 534

"Our child... It's really true?" Darryl was pleasantly surprised and could not express himself through words. He was suddenly enveloped in happiness!

"It's true, you can feel for yourself if you don't believe me." Monica blushed as she took Darryl's hand and placed it on her abdomen.

Monica felt something was off for quite some time since it had been a while since her last period. She finally took a pregnancy test and it turned out she was indeed pregnant.

Monica had been married to the Cult Master for so many years but they did not consummate their marriage and the only person she had relations with was Darryl. It could be said that Darryl was the first and only man that she had ever been with.

Monica recently missed Darryl a lot which was why she sent the two Guardian Kings to seek him out.

Darryl's hand was currently on the Cult Mistress's abdomen and Darryl's entire body trembled at that moment,!

Darryl's Martial Marquis rank allowed him to clearly feel a faint lifeforce within Monica's

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

abdomen. He could still feel it despite how faint it was.

Monica was really pregnant!

Darryl was thrilled beyond measure as he held onto Monica's hand. "Am... Am I about to become a father?"

Monica closed her eyes and smiled as her head rested on Darryl's shoulder. "Yes, you're going to be a father..."

Darryl was extremely excited and tightly hugged Monica while his entire body trembled from the excitement! Both of them continued to remain silent as they enjoyed each other's warmth at that moment.

After quite some time, Darryl took a deep breath and suddenly pulled Monica's hand as he headed toward the door!

"What... What are you doing?" Monica gently asked.

Darryl tenderly looked at Monica and said, "You're with my child. Why're we still staying here? I'm leaving Elysian Island with you."

Monica exclaimed, "Nonsense! Darryl, don't be stupid. Where will we even go if I leave with you? Grandmaster Heaven Cult disciples are everywhere. They'll very quickly find us and we'll have nowhere

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

to run after that!"

Darryl was nervous upon hearing her words. "What should we do then? You can hide it for now but it'll be impossible to hide your bulging belly a few months later!"

The Cult Master would surely question it when Monica's belly becomes big. When the truth about Monica's pregnancy is revealed, she would be in grave danger.

At that moment, Monica softly said, "Don't worry, I 've already thought of a plan."

She gently sighed and continued, "Darryl, I need to mention another matter before telling you the plan."

Monica paused for a moment and continued, " According to reliable sources, the New World is very ambitious and might perhaps soon invade our World Universe. The New World Emperor sent an envoy half a month ago to convince Grandmaster Heaven Cult to pledge allegiance to the New World."

Darryl could not help but ask, "What did the Cult Master say? Is he pledging or not?"

Monica nodded her head. "The Cult Master had agreed to pledge his allegiance."

What?

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Darryl was stunned. How could the Cult Master agree to that!? Would it not be traitorous to pledge allegiance to the New World!?

Monica continued, "The New World's envoy said that so long Grandmaster Heaven Cult willingly pledges our allegiance, the New World Emperor would bestow the Prime Minister title to him once he ruled over the World Universe. The Cult Master will be second only to the Emperor while being above all others! Grandmaster Heaven Cult will also become the Official Guardian Cult."

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 535

Darryl could not help but laugh upon hearing Monica's words.

'Damn, the New World willingly put in so much effort to win over the Grandmaster Heaven Cult,' thought Darryl.

Monica was a little angry and bit her lip. "I'm thoroughly disappointed at the Cult Master regarding this matter. Even though Grandmaster Heaven Cult doesn't have a good reputation, at least we should have a spine! So what if we become the Official Guardian Cult? If our world falls to the New World's occupation, we would just be living under someone else's control! A man shouldn't back down to adversity. How could the Cult Master willingly become the New World's lackey? I'm really disappointed with him."

Darryl was touched by Monica's words.

He never expected such a delicate woman like Monica would have such integrity!

Monica laughed and gently said, "That's why I don' t want to stay at Elysian Island anymore. I don't want to be a traitor alongside the Grandmaster

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Heaven Cult. I wanted to leave even if I didn't have your child. However, the Cult Master will surely be looking for me once I leave, therefore I fostered a plan."

Monica sat on the chair and gently took a sip of tea. "Half a month later, the New World Emperor will send another envoy to discuss how to subdue the World Universe with our Cult Master. A banquet will definitely be held on Elysian Island to celebrate this occasion. I'll find an opportunity during that time to set the entire backyard on fire. Every disciple on Elysian Island will have been too drunk to put out that night's fire."

Monica placed the teacup down and softly said, "I'll leave at that moment's opportunity, and by the time the Cult Master has sobered, he'll surely assume I've been burnt into ashes and won't come looking for me."

Damn.

Darryl was impressed but a little worried about her plan. "Isn't this too dangerous?"

However, it had to be said the Cult Mistress was rather resourceful.

Monica gently opened her lips. "I'll do it even if it's dangerous. I've to leave this place as I don't want to become a traitor to the World Universe nor do I

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

want to continue staying on this island, but the main reason is that I want to safely deliver our child."

At that moment, Monica smiled affectionately and rubbed her belly.

Darryl did not say another word and nodded. " Alright, I'll have a boat to pick you up at that time."

"Okay," said Monica softly before she unexpectedly blushed, "Darryl, I belong to you from now onward. You... You can have many wives, b-but you can't abandon me! If you don't want me anymore then I'll ..."

Monica's voice became softer as she spoke and eventually became inaudible. Her flushed expression was extremely alluring and pulled at Darryl's heartstrings.

Darryl looked at Monica with a grin and jokingly asked, "What will you do?"

The Cult Mistress's manner was truly adoring.

Monica adorably said, "If you don't want me anymore I'll take our son and jump off a cliff."

Monica smirked with immense fondness while saying that.

Darryl laughed and teased Monica, "How would you

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

know it's a boy? What if it's a girl?"

"I hate you, but that's not the point." Monica humphed as she slowly stood up and walked to the bedside before ordering Darryl, "Come and sleep with me."

Monica finished her words, laid on the bed, and continued, "I'll tell you another huge secret."

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 536

"What secret?" Darryl was suddenly intrigued and sat by the bed as he stroked the Cult Mistress's hair.

Monica faintly laughed and flirtatiously said, "Turn off the lights and come under the sheets, then we'll talk."

"Uh..." Darryl swallowed his saliva, took off his clothes, and turned off the lights before going under the sheets.

"So what's the secret?" Darryl asked softly in the dark with his curiosity fully aroused.

Monica gently held Darryl's hand under the sheets and said, "I heard the Kunlun Sect has secretly submitted to the New World."

What?

Kunlun Sect already submitted to the New World!?

Darryl sighed. It would cause a great uproar in the martial arts world if this secret was revealed.

Kunlun Sect was one of the Six Orthodox Sects spanning over a thousand years from their First Sect Master and having more than a dozen generations of Sect Masters until recent times!

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

They were an honorable sect that was widely revered in the martial arts world.

Never had Darryl thought the Kunlun Sect would secretly submit to the New World.

Monica chuckled and continued, "Kunlun Sect's Sect Master submitted because the New World Emperor gave him a secret manual called the Dark Method."

"The Dark Method?"

Darryl quietly whispered the name to himself. It sounded rather powerful.

Monica said, "This Dark Method is an evil technique that's forbidden to cultivate by the martial arts world a long time ago. It's said that to properly cultivate this technique, one would have to absorb a woman's spirit energy every day! A woman who has her spirit energy absorbed won't be able to live for over a day. This evil technique has been lost for many years. I never thought it'd emerge again. I'm afraid to even imagine how many women will die after having their spirit energy absorbed."

'This technique is too insidious as it needs to absorb a woman's spirit energy every day. Doesn't that mean a woman will be sacrificed daily for Kunlun Sect's Sect Master?'

Darryl sighed again.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

The dignified Kunlun Sect's Sect Master deserved much ridicule for cultivating an evil secret manual and at the same time becoming a traitor to the World Universe.

Monica implored, "Darryl, keep the Kunlun Sect's betrayal matter to yourself. You must not let anyone know as only the Cult Master and I know about this matter in the entire World Universe. The New World Emperor would immediately suspect me if this information leaked out."

Monica then worriedly said, "Our main priority now is to find a way for me to safely leave Elysian Island. We can't create any more problems."

Darryl nodded. "Don't worry, Mistress. I won't mention this matter to anyone..."

Before Darryl finished his words, the Cult Mistress had already thrown herself into his arms and quickly followed up with a kiss.

...

Kunlun Sect.

One of the Six Sects was located on the summit of the Kunlun Mountains.

At that moment, Sect Master Leroy Henderson sat cross-legged at Kunlun Sect's main hall as he

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

concentrated on cultivating the Dark Method!

Leroy treasured the secret manual ever since receiving it and studied it every day!

This secret manual was truly amazing, Leroy's power has been increasing after cultivation! However, there was a drawback to this secret manual. Leroy had to absorb a woman's spirit energy daily! Otherwise, he would die from intoxication.

Hum!

Leroy suddenly opened his eyes as his face turned pale! He seemed to be in pain as it was about time to absorb another woman's spirit energy!

"Master, hang on. I'm coming!"

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 537

At that moment, a disciple hastily walked in with a tightly tied up young lady behind him.

"What do you want? Why did you capture me?" The lady was so terrified her entire body trembled. She was a college student abducted when visiting Kunlun Mountain over the weekends.

Leroy walked toward her with a grin, slowly raised his right hand, and placed it on the lady's head!

Hum!

The lady's mind instantly went blank! She could feel her body's energies continuously being drained!

Tsk tsk!

The lady collapsed onto the ground within a second with her face turned pale as if she had been emptied!

Meanwhile, Leroy's pale face returned to normal after absorbing the lady's spirit energy.

The disciple stood in shock and excitement before he smilingly said, "Congratulations Master, your ability has improved!"

The disciple felt that his master's powers were

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

stronger than before.

Leroy gently let out his breath and slyly grinned. The Dark Method was truly amazing. It allowed Leroy to ascend from a Level One Martial Saint to a Level Three Martial Saint within just a month!

At that moment, the disciple cautiously said, " Master, do we kill this woman?"

Leroy glanced at the lady, shook his head, and apathetically said, "No need. Just tie her up and let her perish on her own. We don't kill innocents as members of Kunlun Sect." 1

Any woman having their spirit energy absorbed by Leroy would not be able to live past a day. She could not escape death even without their interference.

The disciple nodded and said, "Master, there's one more thing. Abbess Mother Serendipity sent word that the Elysium Gate had captured the various sects ' elites yesterday and brought them to the Wishing Star Tower to brutally humiliate them. Abbess Mother Serendipity is extremely angered and wants to gather all the sects together to eliminate the Elysium Gate! Master, are we going?"

Leroy nodded and said, "We must go. Kunlun Sect has submitted to the New World. We must help them unite the martial arts world of course! The Elysium Gate is developing really fast. It'll be good

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

to eliminate them! Immediately gather the disciples. We're going to Donghai City."

"Yes, Master!" replied the disciple who quickly left.

A joyful voice came from the main hall's entrance just as the disciple had left. "Dad, are you going to Donghai City? I wanna go too!"

A slender figure of roughly 18 years old lively scampered into the hall.

It was none other than Leroy's daughter, Lydia.

Leroy's face was filled with tenderness upon seeing his daughter. "Lydia, I'm going to Donghai City for serious matters. Not for fun."

Lydia was really precious to Leroy and he greatly coddled her.

Lydia walked toward Leroy, held onto his arm upon hearing his words, and shook it while saying, "Dad, I really wanna go... I heard that Donghai City is really fun. There's the sea, the beach..."

"Alright, alright, I'll bring you there..." Leroy said helplessly as he relented after seeing his daughter acting cute.

After an hour, Leroy along with 2,000 Kunlun Sect elite disciples headed toward Donghai City's Dragon Raising Lake. Abbess Mother Serendipity had

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

requested them to wait for her at Dragon Raising Lake.

...

Donghai City, Young residence.

Yvonne was sitting on the living room sofa and watching television which showed a popular variety show but she paid no attention to it.

Yvonne had lost contact with Darryl ever since the wedding incident. It seems as though she had lost her spirit, was uninterested in whatever she did, and had been locking herself at home the whole time.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 538

Kingston walked over at that moment and sighed when he saw his daughter's depressed state before consoling her. "Yvonne, are you still thinking about Darryl? Everyone despises him right now while the Six Sects and every prominent family are thinking of ways to get rid of him. A man like him can no longer redeem himself, why are you still hung up on him? On top of that, he's colluding with the Eternal Life Palace Sect which in itself is an unforgivable act!"

Yvonne chuckled and did not say a word. Darryl was the best man in the entire world in her opinion! Yvonne would not believe any slander against him regardless of who said it.

Kingston was worried to see his daughter remaining silent. "Yvonne, don't think about Darryl anymore. The weather is fine today, let's go for a walk."

Yvonne remained silent as she shook her head.

Kingston started to feel anxious. "My beloved daughter, will you go if I beg you!?"

Yvonne could not continue to stay cooped up at

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

home. Otherwise, she would fall sick sooner or later!

"I'm begging you, the weather is pretty good today. I'll bring you to the beach..." said Kingston with an expectant face.

Sigh.

Yvonne felt helpless and plainly said, "Alright, Dad. You don't have to say anymore. I'll go change my clothes, okay?"

"Sure, sure!" Kingston was extremely happy with his daughter's agreement. After so many days, his daughter was finally willing to leave the house and relax...

Three hours later, at Donghai City's Dragon Raising Lake.

Kingston and Yvonne were walking along the beach at Dragon Raising Lake.

Yvonne was familiar with Dragon Raising Lake as Donghai City's prominent families had a trip here a few months ago. Kent had someone impersonate a shark during that time which unexpectedly attracted a real shark.

It was late autumn but the scenery here was still as mesmerizing with Gallery Twenty as still beautiful as ever and made everyone reluctant to leave.

"My daughter..."

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Kingston felt relaxed when he saw the beautiful scenery before him and smilingly said to Yvonne, " Look at how beautiful the view is. You'll feel much better after coming out for a walk. Don't always stay cooped up at home."

Yvonne forced a smile and did not say a word.

Kingston was about to speak but his cellphone suddenly rang. He took out his phone and saw the call was from an antique dealer.

It was unclear what the person on the other side said, but Kingson was really excited and replied, " What? Alright, I'll go there right now!"

He hung up the phone after finishing his words and looked toward Yvonne. "My daughter, I've to go to Nanyang City. There's a set of antiques there which is said to be jade wares from the Han Dynasty Palace! I've to go and take a look as we'll be earning a lot again if this business is a success!"

Kingston laughed and continued, "Stay here, relax, and enjoy yourself."

Kingston hurriedly left after finishing his words.

Yvonne remained indifferent upon seeing her father leaving. She slowly walked along the seaside and could not help but thought of Darryl.

She recalled being chased by a shark during the last

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

trip. The situation was dangerous yet Darryl disregarded his own safety to stand in front of Yvonne and fight off the shark.

The situation at that moment was really perilous and Yvonne would have been dead were it not for Darryl.

Yvonne still remembered the scene clearly when Darryl killed the shark and was covered in blood! A certain warmth could be felt in her heart as she recalled these moments. However, she still showed a sorrowful expression.

'Darryl, I'm at Dragon Raising Lake again but where are you...' Yvonne thought.

"Haha!"

It was at that moment Yvonne heard a laugh from behind her!

Yvonne looked toward the sound's direction and saw a man and woman pair not far away. They slowly walked toward Yvonne's direction while chattering and laughing.

This man and woman were none other than Abbess Mother Serendipity and Kunlun Sect Master, Leroy! They were discussing how to eliminate Elysium Gate.

Yvonne was annoyed to see these two people.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 539

Abbess Mother Serendipity had a thing against Darryl everywhere she went!

Abbess Mother Serendipity's attack during the wedding caused Darryl to lose his power and Yvonne felt a particular distaste for her such that Yvonne did not even want to greet her! At that moment, Yvonne hid behind a huge boulder to avoid Abbess Mother Serendipity.

"Sect Master Henderson, the Elysium Gate is really despicable!" Abbess Mother Serendipity had not seen Yvonne and said to Leroy.

"Abbess Mother Serendipity, don't worry. The Kunlun Sect will assist you in eliminating Elysium Gate!" Leroy said with a smile. "Oh right, when Indomitable Darby captured the various sect's elites, how did he humiliate all of you?"

Abbess Mother Serendipity tightly clenched her fists as she could not help but recalled that day's incident. She could not believe that Indomitable Darby forced herself to get married to Master Leonard!

It was such a huge humiliation!

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Abbess Mother Serendipity had traveled across places and had never suffered such humiliation. It was the very reason she had to eliminate Elysium Gate! 1

Abbess Mother Serendipity was angry but felt it was inappropriate to voice it out and simply sighed. "Let 's not talk about this."

"Alright, alright, I won't bring it up anymore..." Leroy promptly replied.

"I'll never forgive those two Darbys!" Abbess Mother Serendipity exclaimed to herself.

Leroy was stunned. "Those two Darbys? Besides Indomitable Darby, there was another Darby that made you unhappy?"

Sigh...

Abbess Mother Serendipity let out a long sigh and said, "Sect Master Henderson, you may not be aware of this but besides Indomitable Darby, there' s another Darryl Darby who's colluding with the Eternal Life Palace Sect. He also violated his sister-in-law and angered his grandfather to death. Everyone despises him, and his actions are unforgivable!"

Leroy furrowed his eyebrows and said, "Darryl Darby? I've heard he's a talented man who defeated

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

everyone during the Lion Slaughtering Conference."

"What if he's talented? He deserves death for committing such immoral acts!" Abbess Mother Serendipity said coldly.

Leroy laughed. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, why don't you just kill him and be done with it? You're helping the world by removing such a foul man."

Abbess Mother Serendipity bit her lip and felt helpless upon hearing his words. "Sect Master Henderson, this Darryl is a lucky man. I've tried killing him a few times before but were unsuccessful."

"Abbess Mother Serendipity, I'll capture him for you to deal with yourself since you hate him so much!" Leroy volunteered. He felt guilty after joining the New World which was the reason he tried maintaining good relations with the various sects on top of avoiding their suspicions.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was thrilled and could not help but said, "Yes, that would be great! I'll be waiting for your good news in that case!"

It would be a joyous occasion for Abbess Mother Serendipity if she could rid Darryl the scum! Old Master Darby would be able to rest in peace once Darryl was dead.

Leroy smirked and said, "Please wait here, I'll go

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

capture Darryl right now."

...

At that moment, Yvonne who was still hiding behind the boulder felt extremely anxious upon hearing the conversation between those two!

'Leroy is going to capture Darryl! I can't let anything happen to Darryl again!' Yvonne thought.

Yvonne quickly took out her phone and called Darryl.

She called him a few times but it seemed that Darryl's phone was off.

Why was the call not getting through! Yvonne was about to cry from anxiety! She had been unable to reach Darryl's phone ever since that wedding incident!

Yvonne was unaware of her previous attempts to reach Darryl's phone failed because he was trapped in the Peach Blossom Forest.

However, the failure this time was because Darryl's phone had run out of battery when spending the night at Elysian Island.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 540

At the coast of Donghai City.

A boat slowly approached the shores with Darryl getting out of the cabin who had only arrived at Donghai City from Elysian Island.

Darryl felt refreshed after discovering such a joyous matter.

Darryl was thrilled to know Monica was pregnant. He was invigorated after hugging the Cult Mistress to sleep last night.

Darryl stood on the boat with a sack full of herbs he harvested earlier from Elysian Island in hand.

Darryl felt hungry once he disembarked as he had not eaten since the previous night.

He looked around, saw a nearby noodle shop, and immediately walked over from his sudden thoughts of eating noodles.

"A bowl of noodles please," said Darryl once he was seated at the noodle shop.

"Sure, please wait a moment," said theo shop owner with a smile.

Darryl took out his phone to make a mobile

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

payment but soon realized that his phone had run out of battery.

He had no choice but to borrow the owner's charger and charged his phone as he ate.

As Darryl was enjoying his meal, he noticed four customers were sitting at a nearby table who wore similar uniforms with a sword on their hip. They were Kunlun Sect disciples.

Those four disciples took out their phones and kept taking photos of Darryl.

'Are these motherf*cker crazy?'

Darryl stared at them and rudely said, "What are you taking my pictures for? I'm not a celebrity."

Those four disciples remained silent as they placed their phones down and continued eating.

Darryl did not think much of it and continued eating as well.

Darryl finished his meal after 15 minutes and unplugged his phone from the charger to pay the bill, but heard a loud yell coming from the entrance before he could even turn on his phone!

"Darryl Darby!"

Darryl turned toward the voice's direction and saw over 30 men quickly walking toward the shop with

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Kunlun Sect Master, Leroy leading them. He has an unpleasant aura and a mean look on his face!

Leroy had promised Abbess Mother Serendipity he would capture Darryl for her to personally deal with him, thus Kunlun Sect disciples had been looking for Darryl all over the city. Those disciples who were eating nearby hurriedly contacted the Sect Master when they saw Darryl.

"Come with me, Abbess Mother Serendipity wants to see you!" Leroy coldly snorted as he suddenly reached out to grab Darryl!

'Oh shit, Level Three Master Saint!?'

Darryl's mind was abuzz as he instinctively ran for the door to escape!

"Trying to run?"

Leroy sneered as he suddenly sped toward Darryl! He instantly caught up to Darryl and struck Darryl's back with his palm.

Boom!

A muffled sound was heard and Darryl felt as though his entire body was about to shatter before he vomited blood. He flew over a dozen meters before smashing into a telephone pole and heavily fell onto the ground.

Darryl laid on the ground and gritted his teeth

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

while trying to stand back up. However, Leroy's attack was too powerful and had dispersed Darryl's internal energy! He would need at least half an hour to recover!

Leroy chuckled and knocked Darryl out with another palm strike before speaking to the disciples behind him, "Take him away."

A few Kunlun disciples quickly went forward and tied Darryl up upon hearing Leroy's orders before hastily followed Leroy and left.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 541

Dragon Raising Lake.

Leroy walked beside the sea with his disciples following behind as they dragged Darryl's unconscious body along before stumbling upon Jean a moment later.

Leroy chuckled and said, "Jean, where's Abbess Mother Serendipity? Tell her I've captured Darryl."

Jean glanced at Darryl and was instantly happy!

'Kunlun Sect Master is truly reliable! He really did as he said and captured Darryl!' Jean silently praised.

Jean replied, "Sect Master Henderson, my master is still cultivating in her room. It'll take about another hour before she's done."

"Alright!" Leroy said as he nodded his head. He then ordered the disciples behind him, "Go, lock Darryl up in the basement. Let Abbess Mother Serendipity personally deal with him once she's finished her cultivation."

"Yes, Master!" replied the disciples hurriedly as they scrambled to carry Darryl and locked him up in the basement.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Half an hour later.

Darryl regained his consciousness.

Darryl felt his entire body aching the moment he opened his eyes.

'Motherf*cker, this idiotic Leroy is too brutal,' thought Darryl.

Darryl tried to stand but realized his hands and feet were tightly tied up. There was no way for him to move!

Darryl looked around and noticed he was in a cold and damp basement with no windows. There was only a single metal door connecting the room to the world outside.

Darryl's heart sank as he recalled Leroy mentioning he captured Darryl for Abbess Mother Serendipity. It would be impossible for Darryl to escape death once she was here!

What was Darryl going to do! He was so anxious his head was covered in sweat. At that moment, he suddenly heard very light footsteps coming from outside the door!

Creak...

A few seconds later, a small gap quietly opened on the metal door and a slender figure entered the

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

room.

Darryl felt hopeless as he thought it was Abbess Mother Serendipity who had entered. However, he was immediately surprised and thrilled upon looking closer!

It was Yvonne!

It was really Yvonne! During the day, she heard that Kunlun Sect Master wanted to capture Darryl, so she had been waiting at Dragon Raising Lake the whole time.

Darryl was thrilled the moment he saw Yvonne! Never had he expected to meet Yvonne after being tied up at such a horrible place!

Although they had not met for a long time, Yvonne was still as alluring as ever. However, she had lost a lot of weight and looked pitiful.

"Yvonne, what are you doing here!?" Darryl could not help but ask.

"Don't ask for now..." Yvonne was anxious and quickly walked toward Darryl before untying the ropes. Her beautiful face showed a painful expression as she softly asked, "Darryl, are you alright? Are you hurt?"

Yvonne held her hands against Darryl's face while trying to check if he was injured as she spoke.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

"Yvonne... I'm fine..." Darryl felt a lump in his throat as he tried to hold back his tears.

Yvonne was really skinny now. How could she lose so much weight, only Heaven knows what she had been through during this time!

At that moment, Yvonne could not resist throwing herself into Darryl's arms and cried, "I thought I'll never see you again... I miss you so much..."

Yvonne thought about Darryl day and night, hoping she would be able to see him once again. The yearning she kept inside turned into tears the moment she saw him!

"Alright, alright..." Darryl hugged her tightly as he felt guilty.

However, Yvonne's cries intensified as she could not hold back her tears. "Where have you been these days? Why didn't you contact me? Do you know how much I miss you? I miss you a lot!"

Yvonne formed a fist and gently hit Darryl's chest. " I'm unable to eat or sleep for the past few days. I can only think of you, but I couldn't even find you! Do you know all these? I'll be satisfied even if you sent me a message just telling me how you are doing, but you didn't even send me a single message! I hate you. I hate you so much, Darryl!"

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 542

Darryl felt immense guilt upon hearing Yvonne's words.

"I'm so sorry..."

Darryl wiped the tears off Yvonne's face with his heart badly aching. "Yvonne, I'm in the wrong. It's all my fault. I'm a dumb pig so don't be mad at an idiot like me. Don't be mad, okay?"

Darryl then pulled a pig face and whimpered.

Yvonne's tears turned into laughter from Darryl's actions as she gently hit him on the chest again. " Alright, I'm not angry anymore. Stand up, we have to leave this place quickly before the Kunlun disciples notice your absence."

Darryl nodded his head and clenched his fists.

'As the Kunlun Sect Master, I can't believe this f* cking Leroy would raise his hands against me! I didn 't even offend him! The Cult Mistress also mentions that Leroy has become the New World's lackey. Such a f*cking vile feller!' Darryl angrily scolded Leroy in his mind before leaving the basement.

Darryl held onto Yvonne's hand and quickly ran

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

once they were outside. The area around Dragon Raising Lake was huge and it would take about half an hour to leave this place.

However, Darryl suddenly stopped as they just started running!

He felt a strong internal energy wave coursing through the air and instinctively looked forward before he was immediately frightened!

Darryl saw a man quietly standing and blocking the path forward not far from where he was.

The man wore a robe and stood there firmly like a mountain! It was the Kunlun Sect Master, Leroy!

Leroy was cultivating the Dark Method in a nearby room and had extraordinary hearing from being a Level Three Martial Saint!

Leroy had heard a strange noise when Darryl escaped from the basement, thus he came to investigate.

"Tsk tsk tsk. Wow, Darryl. I can't believe someone would risk their lives to save a scum like you?" Leroy said with a grin. His voice was not loud, but it was enough to give Darryl goosebumps!

'This is it... This is the end! There is escaping now.'

Darryl's mind was abuzz but he refused to yield and

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

stepped forward before scolding, "Leroy, I've no quarrel with you, so why did you capture me? You called me scum, but why don't you ask yourself who 's the real scum!?"

'I can't believe the New World's f*cking lackey would have the guts to call another person a scum,' thought Darryl.

Leroy did not say a word and simply grinned. He immediately rushed toward Darryl with his fist outstretched the next moment! He was really fast!

A Level Three Martial Saint's punch was really fast! Darryl couldn't dodge against such speeds!

Darryl was only a Level One Martial Marquis. There was a huge level difference between him and Leroy!

Darryl only had enough time to raise his arm and protected his chest!

Bam!

Leroy's punch landed heavily on Darryl's arm and produced a loud sound before launching him away! He flew over a dozen meters and vomited a mouthful of blood!

"Darryl!" Yvonne's voice instantly turned hoarse as she quickly ran to Darryl and knelt in front of him teary-eyed. "Darryl, how are you..."

"I'm fine..." Darryl gritted his teeth as he spat out

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

another mouthful of blood!

"Tsk tsk tsk, you're quite lucky for a scum," said Leroy as he stood there and checked Yvonne out before he nodded and continued, "this woman is pretty, too bad you won't be able to enjoy her anymore. You're dead for trying to escape!"

Leroy swiftly flew toward Darryl as soon as he finished his words and was prepared to strike him again with his palm!

Darryl was instantly terrified from seeing Leroy's palm coming closer and felt completely hopeless!

Leroy was too fast and there was no way for Darryl to dodge his attack!

"No!" Yvonne shouted desperately! Darryl had already suffered greatly from Leroy's punch and if he was to be struck again by his palm, Darryl's life would truly be lost!

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 543

At that moment, it was unclear what went through Yvonne's mind but she tightly hugged Darryl and abruptly blocked Leroy's attack for Darryl!

Bam!

Leroy's palm struck heavily on Yvonne's back!

Yvonne's body fell forward due to the force and landed into Darryl's arms as she vomited a mouthful of blood!

"Yvonne!" Darryl screamed like a madman and had completely broken down!

Yvonne used her remaining energy and exclaimed at Darryl, "Run, quickly run!"

"Run? None of you are going anywhere," said Leroy coldly as he flew toward them again with his clenched fist!

"Run. Darryl, run!" Yvonne shouted desperately and exhausted her energy to push Darryl away!

However, Leroy landed beside Yvonne and grabbed onto her!

"Tsk tsk tsk, you want to save that Darryl scum?"

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Leroy's right hand was wrapped tightly around Yvonne's neck with a sinister look in his eyes. "In that case, you shall die too. I haven't absorbed a woman's spirit energy today. Don't mind if I do and since you've offered yourself!"

Leroy spread his righthand open and immediately held Yvonne's head!

Yvonne was stunned and felt her entire body's energy rapidly being drained before she could react!

"Yvonne!" Darryl instantly roared like a madman!

Yvonne felt her body's energy completely drained in a blink of an eye as her beautiful face instantly turned pale while her body weakened and finally collapsed onto the ground!

"Yvonne!" Darryl's eyes turned red upon seeing what had happened!

Monica mentioned that a woman who had her energy drained would not be able to live past one day!

Darryl's mind went blank as he was filled with rage!

"F*ck you, Leroy! I'm gonna f*cking kill you!" Darryl had lost all sense of reason and the Blood Drinking Sword suddenly appeared in his hand accompanied by a loud noise!

However, Leroy was ecstatic! He felt his internal

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

energy rising after absorbing Yvonne's spirit energy! He... He was about to ascend to the Level Four Martial Saint rank!

'The Dark Method is truly a remarkable technique!' Leroy thought as he cackled.

Leroy sat cross-legged on the ground and started cultivating in preparation for his ascension to Level Four Martial Saint! He did not even bother with Darryl as he saw that Abbess Mother Serendipity was rushing toward him!

Abbess Mother Serendipity would naturally stop Darryl!

"Die, Darryl!" Abbess Mother Serendipity indeed shouted angrily as she reached out her palm to strike Darryl!

Darryl was not afraid and instead reached out his own hands and countered her attack!

Bam!

Both of them were knocked back a few steps as their palms clashed!

Abbess Mother Serendipity furrowed her eyebrows and said to Darryl, "You're a Level One Martial Marquis now? I thought you'll be crippled after I made you lose your powers. I never expected that you'd instead ascend to become a Martial Marquis!"

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Darryl gritted his teeth as he intensely stared at Abbess Mother Serendipity without saying a word with his completely red eyes!

"Yvonne!" Darryl was teary-eyed as he lifted Yvonne.

At that moment, Yvonne was as pale as a ghost with her entire body being very weak. She seemed extremely frail after having her spirit energy drained and it was obvious she would not be able to survive much longer.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 544

"Yvonne, don't scare me alright..." Darryl was teary -eyed as he choked on his words! He felt like being stabbed in the heart!

Darryl could feel Yvonne's breath slowly weakening.

At that moment, Yvonne snuggled in Darryl's arms. She felt exhausted but eventually forced a smile. "I ... I'm fine, I just feel really tired..."

"Yvonne, listen to me. You'll be alright. We'll be alright..." Darryl's voice trembled as he spoke softly.

Abbess Mother Serendipity cackled coldly before Darryl could finish his words. "Still flirting even at death's door. Darryl, there's no way for you to escape today. I must kill you on behalf of your grandfather, this Darby family's disgrace!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity flicked her wrist and a longsword appeared in her hand. She then thrust it toward Darryl without any hesitation!

Darryl gritted his teeth. He was not willing to drag out the fight and forced her back by swinging the Blood Drinking Sword at Abbess Mother Serendipity. He then took the chance to escape with Yvonne in his arms!

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

"Stay right here!" Abbess Mother Serendipity wanted to give chase but she was too slow as Darryl had already disappeared into the night's darkness.

Sigh...

Darryl escaped again!

Abbess Mother Serendipity was displeased and let out a long sigh before shifting her gaze toward Leroy.

At that moment, Leroy had just absorbed Yvonne's spirit energy and was preparing for his Level Four Martial Saint's ascension.

Abbess Mother Serendipity stared at Leroy with surprise. 'Sect Master Henderson is truly a martial genius. He managed to ascend from Level One Martial Saint to a Level Four Martial Saint in just a few days...' she thought.

...

Meanwhile, Darryl held onto Yvonne as he ran as fast as he could.

It had not been raining for half a month in Donghai City, but today suddenly started storming. The stormy weather coincidentally matched Darryl's frantic emotions.

"Yvonne, please hang on. We're almost reaching

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

the city. Almost at the hospital, hang on." Darryl desperately exclaimed at Yvonne while his entire body was drenched by the rain.

Yvonne was in a critical condition, but she still raised her hand and gently caressed Darryl's face. " Darryl, I never imagined I'll love someone so much in my life." Yvonne's voice was soft and weak as she continued, "My biggest wish is to be with you, to be able to open my eyes and see you every day, but this wish will never be fulfilled, I... I'm going now..."

Darryl's heart was aching with tears in his eyes. " What nonsense are you talking about? Yvonne, stop talking nonsense!"

Yvonne chuckled weakly. "I'm not talking nonsense ... I won't be able to live much longer, I can feel it..."

Darryl was heartbroken upon hearing her words. He silently gritted his teeth as he desperately ran with Yvonne in his arms!

Donghai City First Hospital.

It was late at night with only a few doctors and patients in the hospital.

Bang!

Darryl went to the emergency department and kicked open the door!

"Shelly. Get me, Shelly! Quick!" Darryl exclaimed

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

loudly as he was about to break down.

There were a few nurses in the emergency department who knew Darryl. Even so, they dared not speak up when they saw Yvonne in his arms and immediately called Shelly.

Coincidentally, Shelly was working the night shift tonight and she quickly left her office with her white coat on when she heard of Darryl's arrival.

Shelly hastily walked down the emergency department's hallway and when she saw the drenched Darryl, she could not help but say, " Darryl, what are you doing here at this hour? Why are you so wet..."

"Quick. Save her, quick!" Darryl was in no mood for small talk and exclaimed like a madman.

At that moment, Darryl was like a cornered animal with his terrifying blood-red eyes.

Shelly trembled, quickly stepped forward, and reached out her hand to check Yvonne's pulse.

Shelly's expression instantly changed upon checking Yvonne's pulse!

"Darryl... H-her breath is extremely weak and her heart could stop at any moment. I-I'm afraid I'm powerless..." Shelly dared not look at Darryl's eyes and simply lowered her head while speaking

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

cautiously.

She had been a doctor for so many years and that was her first time encountering such a medical condition.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 545

Darryl's mind went abuzz upon hearing Shelly's words!

Shelly was the best doctor in the entire Donghai City. It was truly the end if she said it was hopeless.

Darryl was rendered speechless as he felt a sharp pain in his chest and quietly carried Yvonne to leave the hospital.

Yvonne softly said, "Darryl... Don't waste your energy, I... I just want to spend my final moments with you..."

Darryl was tearing as he walked to the hospital's entrance. "No! I don't believe you can't be saved. This hospital is useless, let's go find another one. Yvonne, please hang on..."

Darryl carried Yvonne and went around Donghai City looking for a doctor like a madman.

It was unclear how many hospitals they visited, but all of them gave the same answer. "I'm powerless." Yvonne's spirit energy had been completely absorbed by Leroy. It was the equivalent of having her vitality drained from her. There was no way of saving Yvonne regardless of how advanced medical

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

technology was.

Darryl felt completely hopeless when he walked out of the last hospital. He could not contain his anger any longer and unleashed it all at once!

"Ah!"

Darryl roared toward the sky and his voice could be heard across half of Donghai City!

Darryl's mind went blank as he held Yvonne tightly in his arms under the heavy rain.

"I'm sorry, Yvonne. I'm so sorry..." Darryl's body shivered as he muttered countless apologies but Yvonne lifted her head and kissed him before he could finish his last apology.

"Mmph..."

Darryl's voice suddenly stopped as he felt the sweetness of Yvonne's lips.

Their kiss was over in a moment and Yvonne showed an affectionate expression as she rested against Darryl's arms. "Darryl, don't feel bad... I'm already quite satisfied being in your arms. Just keep hugging me like this, okay..."

Darryl felt even worse upon hearing her words and hugged her even tighter.

It was unclear how long they hugged each other,

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

but Darryl had a sudden realization. "Oh right! I got it! Godfather would surely have a solution! Godfather knows a lot of martial artists, surely there 's a way to save you!"

How could Darryl have forgotten about his godfather?

Darryl felt hope at that moment. He carried Yvonne, rushed toward the street, and hailed a cab for Mid City's Carter Mansion.

...

It was the break of dawn as the sun slowly rose over the horizons.

Another busy day had begun as the Mid City's streets gradually became lively. The air over the streets was crisp after the previous night's downpour.

An extraordinarily imposing mansion stood at Mid City's most bustling area. It was none other than the Carter Mansion!

At that moment, Zoran was slowly enjoying his cup of tea in the hall. This tea-drinking habits of his had persisted for over 20 years, hence he had to drink a cup of tea every morning.

"Sir, Young Master has returned!" The housekeeper hurriedly rushed into the hall and reported to Zoran.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Darryl had returned?

Zoran's face was immediately filled with smiles as he placed the teacup down and was about to happily welcome Darryl.

"Godfather!"

Before Zoran could even stand up, he heard Darryl's anxious voice as Darryl held Yvonne in his arms and hurriedly staggered into the hall.

Zoran noticed Darryl's bloodshot eyes and drenched body carrying a barely breathing woman who was as pale as a ghost.

Zoran was surprised and quickly walked toward Darryl. "Darryl, what happened to you? What's going on?"

Thud.

At that moment, Darryl immediately knelt. " Godfather, please save Yvonne. Save her, okay? I'm begging you..."

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 546

As Darryl spoke, he knelt and continuously knocked his forehead against the ground. His forehead started bleeding in a blink of an eye but he could not feel the pain.

Zoran felt sorry for Darryl and quickly held him up. He turned, looked toward Yvonne, and could not help being stunned.

Zoran looked at Yvonne with shock and disbelief. " Was this lady's spirit energy drained?"

"Godfather, is there a way to save her?" Darryl anxiously asked with an expression of expectance!

Zoran's expression was uneasy as he spoke solemnly, "Rumor has it there was an evil technique centuries ago called the Dark Method. After cultivating, one will have to absorb the spirit energy of another person. Could this lady have been injured by that evil technique?"

Zoran could not help but sigh and continued, "This technique is extremely insidious. Once a person's spirit energy has been absorbed, they'll be exhausted and quickly approach the end of their life. No one can save them."

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

What!?

Darryl trembled with his eyes instantly turning red as he cried and knelt on the ground. "Godfather, you have to find a way. Please, I'm begging you..."

Zoran felt helpless as he lifted Darryl. "Darryl, I really don't have a way of helping you. There's no way to survive after having one's spirit energy drained. Judging by this lady's condition, I can estimate that she'll have until tonight to live. I think ...you should prepare for her departure."

Thud!

At that moment, Darryl felt as if he had lost all his energy, and dejectedly sat on the floor.

If even his godfather could not help Yvonne then there was truly no solution.

At that moment, Yvonne barely opened her mouth and forced a smile. "Darryl... I feel a little tired, I wanna rest for a moment."

Darryl felt a lump in his throat and nodded and said, "Okay, I'll take you to the room for a rest." He then carried Yvonne after finishing his words.

Zoran suddenly called out to Darryl as he approached the hall's entrance. "Darryl, spend time with this lady. Ask if she has any unfulfilled wishes

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

..."

Zoran felt bad before he could finish his sentence and simply sighed.

Darryl silently nodded his head and carried Yvonne back to his room.

Once in the room, Darryl gently placed Yvonne on the bed and carefully covered her with the sheets.

There was a smile on Yvonne's pale face as she held onto Darryl's hand.

"Darryl, do you still remember the trip we had?" Yvonne asked softly. She was extremely weak but her face was brimming with a gentle smile.

"You single-handedly caught the shark during that trip. You were so cool," said Yvonne softly.

Yvonne knew she would not stay long in this world and did not want to see Darryl suffer, thus she brought up a more relaxing topic.

Darryl remained silent and simply passionately stared at Yvonne.

Yvonne immersed herself in her sweet memories and softly continued, "Dax's wife was also poisoned during that trip and everyone was so anxious. You refined a pill on the spot despite everyone laughing at you, but everyone was dumbfounded when you

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

actually refined the pill."

At that moment, Yvonne stared at Darryl with such adoration at heart that it even overshadowed her pale face. "Did you know from that day onward, you're my mighty and manly hero? No rich kid could ever compare to you."

Yvonne's breathing turned rapid from the excitement.

Darryl was suddenly frightened and quickly said to Yvonne, "Don't talk, get some rest."

Darryl felt a tugging sensation in his heart as he spoke.

'Yvonne only has a dozen or so hours left to live and I can't even save her. What kind of hero am I? What kind of man am I?' Darryl thought.

Yvonne shook her head with lights glimmering in her eyes. "I still have a lot I want to say to you that even a lifetime won't be enough to finish them all. If I don't say it now, I'll never get the chance in the future."

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 547

Darryl's eyes shimmered with tears as he smiled and nodded. "Alright. Let's talk, I'm listening."

Darryl gently held Yvonne's hand as he spoke.

At that moment, there was an immense warmth in the room's atmosphere, but within this warmth was a faint sense of misery.

Yvonne smiled as she intensely looked at Darryl and softly said, "Darryl, your relationship with Lily isn't well last time and the way she treated you is also unpleasant. I was so worried, but at the same time envious of her. I always thought about how great it'll be if you're my husband. No matter what other people say or think about you, I'll always be by your side."

Yvonne gently sighed and continued, "But I now know your relationship with Lily has improved as when Abbess Mother Serendipity stabbed you, Lily didn't sleep for two straight days. That's when I know she really cared for you. I'm relieved you've such a good wife caring and accompanying you... Did you know... My biggest regret in life is that I'm unable to marry you? I truly regret it."

At that moment, Yvonne was really tired and felt

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

like sleeping.

However, she dared close her eyes as she was afraid she would never be able to see Darryl again once she fell asleep.

Darryl felt emotional upon hearing her words and could not hold back his tears as they streamed down his face. He tightly held Yvonne's hand and said, " Yvonne, I'm sorry... It's all my fault..."

Thud.

At that moment, Darryl sincerely got on one knee with his tearful eyes and said, "Yvonne, will you marry me?"

Yvonne's body trembled as she was filled with shock and joy. "Darryl...You..."

"Yvonne, will you marry me?" Darryl repeated with a determined face!

A joyful smile instantly appeared on Yvonne's pale face as she nodded without any hesitation. "Yes."

Yvonne's biggest wish was to be Darryl's wife and she would have of course liked to spend the rest of her life with him!

Darryl was extremely thrilled and smiled widely. He wiped his tears and stood up. "You agreed? That's great, you can't regret it once you've agreed."

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Yvonne smiled shyly and did not say a word.

At that moment, Yvonne was frail and pale but the happiness in her brought out an extraordinary beauty in her and caused Darryl to be immediately lost in her beauty.

Darryl stared at her blankly for a few seconds before coming to his senses and said, "Let's get married tonight."

"Sure!" Yvonne replied softly with a shy expression. Even though she only had a day to live, it would be worth it if she could marry Darryl on that day.

However, Yvonne took a look around and softly said, "But we need a lot of things for the wedding. We need flowers, decorations... We have none of that..."

"Right, right, how silly of me," said Darryl as he slapped his forehead.

He smiled and quickly said, "How could I neglect my wife's needs, I'll get them right now."

Darryl finished his words and was about to leave the room.

However, Darryl suddenly stopped before reaching the door. He turned his head and looked at Yvonne

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

with a worried look. "Yvonne, you'll be alone..."

Yvonne was too weak at the moment and Darryl was worried something might happen when he was not present.

Yvonne smiled as she felt Darryl's deep concern and softly said, "Don't worry, I'll be fine. Go, I'll be right here waiting for you. I still want to marry you after all..."

Yvonne was extremely gleeful as she spoke.

Darryl felt a lump in his throat and nodded his head. He did not say another word and quickly left.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 548

It was evening.

Darryl's head was sweating as he carried bags full of items back to the Carter Mansion.

He bought a lot of wedding supplies such as candles, lanterns, and clothes.

Darryl carried those stuff and quickly jogged back to the mansion as he did not have much time left with Yvonne and had to make good use of every second with her.

As Darryl approached the room, he saw Sara walking toward him.

"Bro!" Sara called out and smilingly asked, "why did you buy so much stuff? What are they? Are these gifts for me?"

Sara was happy to hear from the housekeeper that Darryl had returned, thus she went looking for him.

Darryl put on a smile and said, "I'm getting married today and these are the wedding supplies."

"Wow, you're getting married!"

Sara was stunned and excitedly said, "Will there be

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

many guests? I'm sure it'll be super lively!"

Darryl bit his lip and shook his head. "I don't like when it's lively. No one knows about this wedding except for you."

Sara jumped with joy upon hearing his words. "Only I know about this? Then can I come to your wedding?" Sara asked with her urgent looking eyes.

Darryl sighed and smiled wryly. "Come then," said Darryl as he returned to his room.

It would take some time to decorate the wedding room and with his younger sister's help, Darryl would be able to spend more time with Yvonne.

Sara was extremely thrilled and gleefully walked into the room with Darryl. However, she was not aware that Yvonne was badly injured and would not live past tonight.

Yvonne lifted her head and saw Darryl had returned. A slight smile appeared on her pale face. However, she was surprised the moment she saw Sara following behind Darryl. "This kid is..."

Darryl smiled and said, "She's my godsister, she knows we're getting married so she came to help."

Yvonne nodded her head and could not help but smile when she felt Sara's youthful energy before praising, "Your godsister is so likable."

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Upon hearing her words, Sara sweetly said, "Sister-in-law, you're really pretty too. My brother is a lucky man for marrying such a beautiful bride!"

Darryl and Yvonne exchanged looks with each other and smiled without saying a word. After a moment, Darryl handed the decorations to Sara and said, "I'll hand these duties to you. Help me decorate the room nicely."

"Sure!" Sara gleefully said as she received the decorations and started busying herself with the flowers.

Yvonne bit her lip and softly said to Darryl, "Darryl, can you promise me something?"

"Definitely! Anything and everything. Say it and I'll agree!" Darryl firmly responded.

Yvonne forced a smile and said, "During our wedding tonight, please... Please don't cry... I want my final moments to be a beautiful wedding with you... I want a happy wedding with you... I don't want to cry..."

"Sure..." Darryl felt a lump in his throat as he carefully supported Yvonne off the bed. "Yvonne, today is our wedding. I'll of course be happy. Why would I cry? Look, I have brought so many wedding gowns for you, which one do you like?"

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Darryl opened up a bag as he spoke and took our several wedding gowns. There were over 20 extravagant dresses.

"Darryl..."

Yvonne was stunned as she could hardly contain the joy inside her. "Why... Why did you buy so many?"

There were so many wedding gowns that Yvonne could not decide on which to wear.

Darryl smiled and passionately looked at Yvonne. " Today is our wedding day, my bride naturally has to dress beautifully! You have to be prettier than last time."

Of course, Darryl was referring to Yvonne and Jeremy's wedding.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 549

"Don't bring up this upsetting incident anymore," said Yvonne upon hearing Darryl's words.

Darryl was the only person Yvonne wanted to spend the rest of her life with. Her previous wedding with Jeremy had been annulled.

Smack.

Darryl came to his senses and quickly slapped himself on the face. "I'm such a fool, I deserve to be punished."

'I shouldn't have brought up that unhappy incident! ' Darryl thought.

Yvonne felt bad and quickly held onto Darryl's arm. "You dummy, why did you hit yourself?"

She caressed Darryl's face and was worried. "Does it hurt?"

Darryl shook his head and smiled. "Not one bit. How could I be willing to injure my handsome face?"

Darryl's words made Yvonne laugh.

At that moment, Darryl pointed toward the

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

wedding gowns and said, "Look, which one do you like?"

Yvonne nodded as she smiled and chose her favorite dress which Darryl quickly brought over and carefully helped her put it on. Darryl was instantly dumbfounded when Yvonne wore the wedding gown.

Yvonne's appearance completely changed when she put on the slim-cut wedding gown that showed off her beautiful curves. Although her face was pale, her smile was breathtakingly beautiful.

Yvonne could not help but laugh when she saw Darryl was stunned. She twirled around and asked, " How is it?" However, she was too weak and lost her balance halfway.

Darryl quickly went over and held onto her while his heart was in a lot of pain.

"Yvonne... Are you..."

"I'm alright." Yvonne got back on her feet and looked at the makeup mirror with a smile. "I... I haven't put on my makeup, I need to be pretty when I'm marrying you..."

"Let me help..." said Darryl as he choked on his words. Darryl clenched his fists as he held back his tears and then helped Yvonne to the dressing table.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

"You're not allowed to cry, okay? You already promised me," said Yvonne softly as she noticed Darryl's eyes were turning red. She then took a brush and looked at the mirror and focused on her makeup.

Darryl silently stood behind and watched.

Eventually, Yvonne finished putting on her makeup, and in a blink of an eye, her pale face became immeasurably captivating.

Yvonne was filled with joy as she turned toward Darryl and asked with a huge grin, "How do I look now?"

Darryl's eyes were red as tears blurred his vision. He dared not lift his head to look at Yvonne and softly said, "You're so beautiful. There's no bride in this world that's comparable to you."

Yvonne bit her lips when she saw Darryl's expression, but pretended as though she had not seen anything. She then put up a joyful expression and asked, "What do you think we should name our kids?"

Darryl's face was filled with tears but he did not want to ruin the moment and played along. "Our children must have great names. Our son will be called Supreme, while our daughter will be Fortune.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Together they'll be Supreme Fortune."

Yvonne initially laughed at Darryl's nonsense, but alas she could not hold back any longer and burst into tears.

Yvonne bawled her eyes out. 'I'm not even sure if I could live past tomorrow. There's no point in discussing the future, no point in discussing our children.'

"Yvonne, don't cry, don't cry..." Darryl repeated over and over again as he hugged her tightly. "You' ll be alright, you'll be alright. We'll have a good life ...and we'll have lots of kids..."

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 550

"Alright, I won't cry, I won't cry..." Yvonne wiped her tears and said with a smile, "Alright then, let's start the wedding ceremony."

"Great!" Darryl held Yvonne's hand and slowly stood up.

At that moment, Sara had finished nicely and splendidly decorating the room.

Sara was happy to see the couple had already knelt. " Are you guys starting the ceremony? That's great, I' ll be your witness!"

Sara finished her words and energetically walked toward the couple while joyfully exclaimed, "We gather here today for the marriage between my brother and Miss Yvonne. May you be blessed with joy and happiness with the Heavens bearing witness ... First bow to the Heavens and Earth!"

Darryl and Yvonne smiled at each other and bowed with their hands intertwined.

Sara then exclaimed, "The second bow as a respect to the Elders!"

The couple then faced toward Donghai City and

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

bowed.

At that moment, Darryl could feel Yvonne's body trembling as if trying to control her emotions. Yvonne was the Young family's sole daughter. She naturally had hoped for her father's blessing during her wedding with Darryl but under such circumstances... She was unsure how much longer she could live and held back her regretful feelings.

After they bowed respectfully to each other, Darryl held Yvonne and stood up with unease filling his heart.

At that moment, Sara smilingly said, "Bro, you and Miss Yvonne are a match made in heaven, I'm so envious. I wish both of you eternal happiness and stay together till you're old."

"Yes, together till we're old..." Yvonne could not help herself and started tearing up.

Sara was stunned and worriedly asked, "Yvonne, what's wrong?"

'What's going on? Did I say something wrong?' Sara thought.

Sigh...

Darryl took a deep breath and held back the pains in his heart as he forced a smile. "It's fine, she's just too excited."

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Sara nodded her head but was still doubtful.

'Shouldn't she be laughing if she's happy? Why is she still crying? How strange...' Sara thought.

She then smilingly said, "Alright, it's time for both of you to enter the bridal chamber. I won't bother you any longer." Sara left as soon as she finished her words.

At that moment, Darryl could feel Yvonne's vitality worsening. He felt bad and softly said, "Yvonne, go lay on the bed and rest a moment."

Yvonne nodded her head and let Darryl carry her to the bed with her arms wrapped around his neck.

Yvonne laid down and softly said, "You should rest too. You must be tired after carrying me around the whole night."

Darryl smiled and nodded. "Sure."

At that moment, both of them had the same thoughts. No matter what was going to happen in the future, they wanted to treasure every second they had together at that moment.

As Darryl was about to lie down, the bedroom door suddenly opened!

Creak.

A slender and alluring figure slowly walked into the

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

room.

It was Susan who walked in.

Darryl was surprised to see her and quickly stood up and asked, "Auntie Susan? Is something wrong?"

Yvonne's expression was also uneasy as she felt a little awkward. She was at someone else's house after all.

Susan looked around and noticed the room's decorations. There was a certain curiosity on her face as she asked, "Did you guys just get married?"

Although Susan was curious, she had no intention of reprimanding them.

At that moment, Darryl nodded and smiled wryly. " Yes, we did. Yvonne had her spirit energy drained and doesn't have much time left. Both of us had the same idea and didn't want to leave any regrets behind."

Susan silently nodded upon hearing his words and said, "Darryl, I can tell that you have a deep affection for Yvonne, but you shouldn't feel too bad. There might still be a sliver of hope for her."

What?

There was a way to save Yvonne?

At that moment, Darryl's entire body trembled as

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

he anxiously exclaimed, "Auntie Susan, tell me quickly. How can Yvonne be saved?" 1

Susan smiled faintly and shook her head. "I can tell you how to save her, but let me be clear that you shouldn't put too much hope in this method."

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 551

"Sure!" Darryl nodded. At least there was hope, however small it was.

Susan sighed as she bit her lip. "Also, I can tell you how to save her, but you have to promise me something."

"Auntie Susan, anything," Darryl replied without hesitation, nodding.

Susan sighed before she looked at Darryl seriously. " This is about when Rachel tricked you into the peach blossom forest. I don't want you to tell your godfather. Never mention this again."

"I promise you, I'll never speak of it again," Darryl agreed immediately. Doing this was nothing compared to Yvonne's life.

Susan smiled. "Great. I'll tell you. This lady's essence has been absorbed using the Dark Method. The Dark Method is an ancient, thousand-year-old cultivation method from the New World. Perhaps someone skilled from the New World might be able to help her.

"If you bring her to the New World, perhaps there might still be a chance. However, she only has a few

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

hours left. I don't think you can save her in time."

'New World?' Darryl wondered, delighted.

It was true, Leroy Henderson did receive the Dark Method manual from the New World Emperor! Yvette was the New World Princess, so perhaps she might have a solution?

"Yvonne, let me make a phone call!" Darryl said anxiously before he headed out.

He fished his phone out and called Yvette.

...

Yvette and Lily were watching a movie. They were the center of attention in the cinema. The boys were paying more attention to them than to the movie.

"Lily, where's your husband?" Yvette asked suddenly.

She still felt humiliated from being tied to a tree then tortured by Darryl using Formations until she begged for him to stop. However, this was her vendetta with Darryl; it did not stop her from being best friends with Lily.

Yvette could also see that Lily does not know that Darryl was Indomitable Darby.

"My husband?" Lily asked, holding a bucket of popcorn. "My husband hasn't been back for two

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

days. I can't even contact him. Why do you ask about him?" she laughed.

"Nothing, just making conversation." Yvette blushed. She was seething with rage as she thought about how Darryl humiliated her.

What made matters worse was when the Twelve Royal Guards were about to apprehend Darryl, a man and woman rescued him. Yvette has been looking for him ever since, to repay the humiliation. However, it was like he vanished from the face of the Earth.

Yvette's phone suddenly rang.

"Lily, wait for me. I need to take this call," she said to Lily apologetically.

She thought it would be from one of her men, but she was stunned when she saw it was from Darryl. How dare he call her?

She bit her lip and answered the call.

"Yvette, I need a favor. You have to help me," Darryl said anxiously.

'You humiliated me, but you want me to help you? Dream on!' Yvette thought.

She laughed menacingly, "Darryl, Indomitable Darby. You're the sect master of Elysium Gate. Why

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

do you need a favor from me?"

"Yvette, my good sister, you have to help me!" Darryl replied agitated.

"What sister? Who's your sister?" Yvette stomped her feet angrily.

"During the Formation, you called me brother. I'm older than you, so isn't it normal that I call you my younger sister?" Darryl explained helplessly.

"How dare you bring up what happened before!" Yvette yelled angrily.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 552

"Darryl, after all that, you still want me to help you? Have you gone mad?" Yvette asked coldly.

Darryl was so anxious he was sweating profusely as he said, "I know you're still angry with me. I shouldn't have treated you that way at the Formation. I'm sorry, but I really need your help desperately. As long as you help me, I'll do anything!"

Yvette was elated. "Say, what can I help you with?"

"I have a friend, and her essence was absorbed. Do you have a way to heal her?" Darryl asked, hopefully.

'What? Her essence was absorbed?' Yvette contemplated.

Yvette raised her eyebrows. "Was it by the Dark Method?"

There was only one cultivation method that absorbed a human's essence. The manual was always kept in the palace's library. Due to its insidious nature, her father banned anyone from cultivating the Dark Method.

"Yes! Can you save her?" Darryl asked eagerly.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Yvette could sense his restlessness. She smiled and said, "I'm not that highly skilled. I can't save her."

Darryl's heart dropped as he lost all hope.

"But, I know an acupuncture method called the Sterling Life Method. It could help you extend her life," Yvette added.

"The Sterling Life Method?" Darryl asked.

"As long as she's still breathing, I can puncture three sterling needles in her. This helps her stay alive for another three more months. However, in these three months, she'll be in a vegetative state. She won't be able to speak or move."

Yvette was filled with pride. There were less than five people in the world that were skilled in this method.

"Please help me extend her life!"

"Why should I?" Yvette sneered.

"I'll do anything! As long as I can do it, I will!"

"Anything?"

"Yes. As long as you agree to help, I'll do anything for you!" Darryl took a deep breath.

Yvette thought for a while, then said, "Ok, I'll help you this time. But I haven't thought about what I

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

want from you. So hold on to this. You better not break your promise!"

"Don't worry. I'm a man of my word. I'll be at the Carter Mansion in Mid City. Please go there. Quick! I'm afraid she won't live for much longer!" Darryl cried in a panic, almost in tears.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 553

Three hours later, Yvette finally arrived at the Carter Mansion. She was in awe at how luxurious it was.

"There were rumors that Zoran accepted you as his godson. It looks like it was true," she said to Darryl.

Darryl forced a smile and led her to Yvonne.

Yvette was stunned as she asked, "The person you want to save is her?"

Though Yvonne had not been to the Hexad School, Yvette still recognized Yvonne as a famous person in school.

"Yes. Please, hurry." Darryl nodded.

Yvette scanned the surroundings as she exclaimed, " You both got married here?"

Darryl nodded.

"You lucky b*stard. It's not enough that you have Lily, but you married Yvonne as well?" she teased.

"Can we save her first?" Darryl panicked.

"My, my, Sect Master Darby is anxious. Remember your promise." Yvette laughed.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

"Yes, yes. I owe you one!" Darryl nodded.

Yvette nodded in satisfaction. She flipped her wrist, and three sterling needles appeared. She approached Yvonne and slowly punctured her arm.

Darryl stood next to them, not even daring to breathe.

He could clearly see the points that were punctured were crucial acupoints. A single mistake, and Yvonne could die.

"There. Done," Yvette said.

Yvonne's face regained its color. However, she was in a deep sleep.

"She can't move or talk now. But she can hear what you're saying," Yvette said with a smile before becoming serious. "There's one more thing I have to remind you. The Sterling Life Method can only be used once. No one can touch those three needles on her arm. Not a single one! If any of the needles are pulled out, she will wake up, and her body will return to its previous state—which I'm guessing she has at most three hours left to live?"

"I'll be careful," Darryl replied. He thought of bringing Yvonne back to Lily's mansion in Donghai City. He could let her rest there for the next three months, so no one would disturb her, and the

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

needle would remain safely in place.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 554

"Remember, you owe me one," Yvette said before she left.

That night, Darryl slept on the floor, watching over Yvonne. He was afraid if he slept on the bed, he might touch the needles.

He did not sleep well. He brought Yvonne back to Donghai City the next day. On the journey, he called Zephyr and instructed him to search for a cure for Yvonne.

It was noon when Darryl brought Yvonne back home and realized that no one was home. He brought her straight to the bedroom, feeling slightly conflicted as he was not sure if Lily would be upset with him bringing Yvonne home.

Thinking of Lily, he quickly called her.

She picked up the call shortly, sounding excited. " Hubby! You finally called! Where have you been for the past two days?"

Lily had been worried sick.

"I had something going on," Darryl laughed.

He frowned as he could hear a commotion going on

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Lily's end of the call. "Lily, where are you?"

Lily said cheerfully, "I'm at Angela Angel's concert! It's at Donghai Television Station. Come find me!"

Darryl was familiar with Angela Angel, the famous pop star. When Darryl was still in high school, Angela's The Invisible Wings was the most popular song in the entire country.

Though she rarely produced new albums, she was still active in different entertainment programs. For the past two years, she was a judge in the reality TV competition The Ethereal Singer. She was considered a legend in the entertainment industry.

"Hubby, come quick! The concert hasn't started yet, so I'll be waiting for you!" Lily urged.

"Alright, I'll be there shortly," Darryl replied. He decided it would be better to tell her about Yvonne in person.

At the Donghai Satellite Television Building, one of Donghai City's attractions, many galas and concerts were held here.

Angela Angel's concert was a huge deal in Donghai City, and many wealthy fans came to support her.

When Darryl reached the building, there was already a crowd. The fans were extremely excited, making him in awe of Angela's influence.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Giselle Lindt, who was under his entertainment company, was nowhere near as influential as Angela. After all, Giselle was still new to the scene. This concert was larger than Donghai City's annual Mid Autumn Festival gala.

Darryl walked right into the lounge that Lily said she would be waiting for him. The area was for the rich and VIPs. Ordinary fans could only wait outside.

The lounge was equally crowded, with many people resting on the sofas provided. Darryl spotted Lily right away and noticed that next to Lily were two other ladies—Circe Newman and Evelyn Featherstone.

'F*ck, why is Evelyn here?' Darryl swore silently.

He scanned his surroundings. He had to admit; the three ladies together were a stunning view as they were all beautiful in their own ways.

Lily was dressed in a white suit, with the limited Worship of Crystal heels. She was sexy and elegant at the same time. Circe was wearing a long black dress, looking mysterious and icy, while Evelyn looked cute in jeans and a fleece top. She was here today to hang out with Circe. However, Circe told her that she was watching a concert with another good friend of hers, so Evelyn tagged along.

Though Evelyn was still young, she looked lady-

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

like. The three of them together were stunning, and Darryl could see that men were ogling them.

"Hubby!" Lily spotted Darryl as she approached him happily and hugged his arms.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 555

'What? This man's her husband?' the men thought as they looked at Darryl with envy and disgust.

Lily ignored the glares as she held onto Darryl's hand and smiled. "Hubby, you know Circe, of course, I won't need to introduce her to you. This is Evelyn Featherstone, she's Circe's friend. She participated in the Lion Slaughtering Conference. If I recall correctly you two competed against each other."

Lily introduced Evelyn without realizing that Evelyn and Darryl had known each other for a long time! Evelyn was seething with rage as she looked at Lily in surprise and asked, "Lily, he's your husband?"

When Evelyn first met Lily, she thought Lily was pretty and kind. Who knew such a kind girl would marry an assh*le! Life was unfair!

Lily was stunned as she laughed, "You two know each other?"

"No one wants to know him! He's a piece of cow dung!" Evelyn pursed her lips.

Lily felt awkward from her reply. She glared at

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Darryl thinking to herself who knew what Darryl did this time to offend Evelyn.

Circe could not help but laugh. She tugged on Evelyn 's hand and said, "Evelyn, stop it."

She knew about the rivalry between Darryl and Evelyn. It was nothing serious, but they just could not stand each other. They would bicker every time they met.

"Miss Evelyn, we've known each other for a long time. I don't think it's good to talk bad about me every time you see me right?" Darryl teased.

Darryl was furious as well. The last time he was at the bar with Megan and Evelyn's best friends, they got drunk. When he woke up, his Supreme Mystery Scripture and Celestial Silkworm Armor were gone.

'I haven't paid you back for what you did, but now you dare talk bad about me?' Darryl thought.

Suddenly a weird voice from afar called for. "Darryl Darby!"

He looked to see who called him, and it was Jeremy Langley and a few of his followers—they looked angry. Jeremy was still angry that Darryl caused a scene during his wedding with Yvonne.

However, Jeremy was an infamous playboy. Shortly after Yvonne, he met another girl called Vera Burns.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

He wanted to bring Vera to Angela's concert and maybe bring her to a hotel to have some fun after the concert. Who knew he would meet Darryl today!

Jeremy was extremely furious as he loathed Darryl to his bones.

If it was not for Darryl, he could have slept with Yvonne. It was Darryl that stole his wife from him!

"You dare come back to Donghai City? You must be itching for death!" Jeremy said coldly as his followers approached Darryl.

"Why should I be afraid?" Darryl clenched his first. He has not paid back for Jeremy forcing Yvonne to marry him.

The atmosphere in the lounge was tense and many people looked on curiously.

Vera pulled Jeremy and said, "We're here to watch a concert. Don't bother with this hillbilly. Let him go."

Jeremy nodded. He pointed at Darryl and said arrogantly, "Did you hear that? My woman said to not bother with you. I don't want my mood to be ruined, so if you kneel and apologize, I'll let you go."

"Apologize?" Darryl took a long breath. He could

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

barely contain his anger. Thinking about how Yvonne had only three months left to live, his anger rose.

"I don't think you can handle my apology." Darryl clenched his fist so tightly, his nails dug into his flesh.

A burst of laughter erupted.

"Is he crazy? He doesn't even have his powers. How dare he talk back?"

"Yes, he must want to die."

Lily panicked, so she quickly stood up and said, " Hubby, don't fight him. Just apologize."

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Chapter 556

How could Lily not panic? With Darryl's current powers, he could not afford to offend Jeremy.

The Langleys were wealthy and powerful, plus Jeremy's master was Zachary Hume, the Deputy Head of Tianshan School—he was well supported.

Darryl, in comparison, had nothing. He did not have any Internal Energy at all. Challenging Jeremy would only end badly for him.

No one expected that Darryl would reply coldly, " Jeremy, I'll heed your suggestion that one should kneel and apologize. But it should be you, your new girlfriend, and your bunch of b*tches."

'What?' Everyone was so stunned they thought they misheard Darryl.

'Is this person crazy? He doesn't have any powers, his corporation is bankrupt, and yet he still has the guts to say that?' everyone thought.

"You're really looking for death. Get him!" Jeremy ordered his men. He did not want to fight Darryl, but Darryl's arrogance aggravated him. He did not care where he currently was; Darryl needed a beating.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

Everyone gasped as they could feel Jeremy's immense power. He was a Level Three Master General and considered one of the most powerful people in Donghai City.

Everyone thought Darryl was done for.

"Hubby, be careful!" she exclaimed.

She was so worried she bit her lip until it bled and closed her eyes. She could not bear to watch her husband get beaten up.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Sounds of punches rang through the lounge.

When Lily opened her eyes, she would never forget what she saw for the rest of her life. Darryl stood there firmly while Jeremy's men were all lying on the floor.

Jeremy was bewildered as he was the only one left standing. The entire lounge was eerily silent as no one could see how Darryl had beat his opponents. It all happened in a blur.

Jeremy was sweating profusely. What was happening? Abbess Mother Serendipity told him that Darryl could never get his powers back. How did he grow stronger instead?

When Jeremy realized his mistake, it was too late.

(za zza) Visit my YT channel!
For updates and more novels!

He could see Darryl walking towards him calmly; his every step reverberated throughout the entire lounge.

"For a Nine Resurrection Pill, you asked Yvonne to marry you," Darryl said, his eyes blazing with anger as he looked at Jeremy straight in the eye. "I've returned the pill a hundred times to you. Who will return Yvonne to me? She's clinging on to her life. Who the f*ck can return her to me?!"

Chapter 557

Darryl screamed, completely losing it. He rushed forward and grabbed Jeremy by the collar, throwing punch after punch.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Each punch was harder than the other.

Darryl released a powerful deep current of Pure Internal Energy that enveloped the crowd. It made the entire crowd grow silent. Everyone was stunned by Darryl. He was like a lunatic who lost all control as Jeremy howled in pain with every punch.

"Darryl, how dare you hit me!" Jeremy's face was bleeding. He squirmed but could not move. "You're dead! You're dead! My Master is here, and I'll make sure you die here today!" he continued screaming. His head was swollen, yet he could not fight back.

"Hubby, stop. Let's go." Lily was anxious as she knew of Zachary's reputation. If he was here, Darryl would be dead.

"Go? You think you can leave this place today with my Master here?" Jeremy laughed maniacally.

'Master?' Darryl thought.

"If your Master is here, I'll beat him up as well," Darryl replied.

"Who dares talk so boldly?" a man wearing a black Chinese jacket said as he appeared from the crowd- it was Zachary Hume.

Jeremy grabbed on to Zachary desperately, yelling, " Master, master, help me!"

Zachary glared at Darryl. "How dare you beat my disciple up in public?"

He was livid as Jeremy was his favorite disciple.

Darryl took a deep breath and kicked Jeremy to the floor. "So what if I hit him?"

"You-! He's my disciple!" Zachary yelled.

"So what if he's your disciple?" Darryl asked slowly.

"You're asking to die! You filth! It's bad enough you joined a cult, but now you dare beat my disciple! I won't forgive you!" Zachary rushed forward.

"Hubby, run!" Lily yelled, but Darryl was not afraid at all.

"Even till now, he's still pretending. He deserves to be hit!" Evelyn jeered.

Chapter 558

A strong Internal Energy erupted from Zachary. It was so powerful it warped the air around him as cracks appeared all over him.

"Darryl's going to die," everyone gasped.

"He deserves it!"

Everyone could feel that Zachary was going to kill Darryl! Who could avoid such a strong hit?

"Hubby!" Lily yelled. She wanted to help him, but it was too late.

Circe panicked too as she said, "Darryl, run! What are you waiting for?"

Even she could see that Zachary was outraged, but Darryl did not move at all. He just stared at Zachary coldly.

Zachary threw a powerful punch. Many did not dare look, but they knew Darryl was done for.

Darryl calmly moved aside to avoid the punch. "You clown." Then, he slapped Zachary.

Truth be told, it was hard to fight Zachary face to face. However, Zachary underestimated Darryl. Who

knew he had such quick reflexes that he could avoid Zachary's punch?

When Darryl landed a slap on Zachary's face, only then did Zachary realize that he had underestimated Darryl. It was too late!

Slap!

Darryl's slap was quick and powerful. It caused Zachary to fly in the air and land twenty meters away. He spat out blood when he landed.

Zachary felt as if his organs were damaged, and he passed out.

Everyone gasped. All it took was one slap to defeat the Deputy Head of Tianshan School?

They looked at Darryl as if looking at a monster. Lily and Circe were still in shock.

"Apologize now!" Darryl said as he slowly approached Jeremy.

Jeremy could not say a single word. He was floored. Never in his life did he imagine his Master would be beaten by Darryl. After all, his Master was a Level Four Martial Marquis!

Jeremy swallowed hard as he could feel Darryl had been releasing a strong current of Internal Energy, crushing him till he could barely breathe. If he did

not apologize any sooner, he was going to die!

"I'm sorry. I'm sorry," Jeremy apologized.

"Kneel and apologize. As you suggested just now," Darryl demanded.

"I..." Jeremy hesitated. He wanted to beat Darryl up in front of Vera to impress her. Who knew he would be utterly humiliated.

How could he further humiliate himself by kneeling for Darryl?

Chapter 559

Jeremy wanted to say no. However, he saw that Darryl had a long blood-red sword in his hand, so he knew he had no other choice unless he wanted to die.

Thud!

Jeremy knelt. He could care less about his ego anymore. Compared to his own life, his ego meant nothing.

"I'm sorry. I'm sorry, Mister Darryl," Jeremy apologized.

"You too." Darryl looked at Vera.

Thud!

Just one look was enough to make Vera's knees weak. She knelt immediately and apologized as well.

It was not till then, did Darryl finally start to calm down. He frowned at Jeremy and Vera. It was a bloody dog-eat-dog world, where the strong preyed on the weak. As long as you could fight, people would beg for your forgiveness.

When he was powerless, the Six Orthodox Sects and Clans ganged up to bully him. Dax was beaten up by

the Emei sect, Yvonne's essence was absorbed, and her life was hanging by a thread. These are the things that he will never forget!

"F*ck off," Darryl said.

Jeremy and his men carried Zachary away and scrammed. The crowd dissipated as well with a new impression of Darryl. This live-in son-in-law was not as useless as he used to be.

"Ladies and Gentlemen, the concert will start shortly. Please be seated," an announcer said.

Lily came to her senses and grabbed Darryl's arm as they walked to their seats. "Hubby, you were amazing!"

Evelyn harrumphed and jeered, "What was so amazing about that? It was Zachary who was weak."

"Evelyn, stop talking and follow me!" Circe reprimanded.

Tens of thousands of people filled the concert venue as the stage set was brightly lit and looked stunning. Every fan held a glow stick in their hands and was looking forward to seeing Angela Angel.

Lily booked great seats at Row Three, 111,112, 113, and 114. Darryl was supposed to sit at 111, but Lily complained that the person in front of her was blocking her view, so Darryl swapped seats with her.

It was Darryl's turn to be awkward as he was sandwiched in between Lily and Evelyn.

When he was about to take his seat, Evelyn kicked his leg.

'What the f*ck? Why am I being kicked for no reason?' Darryl thought

"What are you doing?" he growled.

"Why are you yelling? It was an accident," Evelyn said coldly.

He did not bother arguing with her. He sat down but jumped back up immediately as he felt something sharp poke his butt. He saw an earring hook on the chair and noticed his butt was bleeding.

"What is your problem?!" hee noticed Evelyn did not have her left earring. It does not take a genius to guess that the earring on the chair belonged to her.

"I dropped my earring! It was an accident," Evelyn harrumphed. She picked up the earring hook and threw it away. "You destroyed my earring, yet you complain? How rude. Also, can you not sit next to me. I'm disgusted by you," she giggled.

Darryl rolled his eyes at her. This woman was impossible.

Chapter 560

Darryl was not bothered with Evelyn. He took his seat, but he thoroughly checked for other sharp objects before sitting down.

As he took his seat, Darryl scanned his surroundings. He became emotional from the passion of Angela's fans. This was the difference between a legendary pop star and a regular one. The size of her concert was as huge as an international pop star's.

"Angela! Angela!" the crowd chanted, brimming with excitement as the concert started.

An elegant figure in a maroon evening gown, encrusted with crystals, appeared on stage. She looked every bit the legendary pop star that she was, looking utterly gorgeous!

Darryl was in awe. Angela was in her thirties, but she maintained her figure and appearance well. There was no sign of aging and especially with her alluring figure, she looked like she was in her twenties.

"Hello, Donghai City! I'm Angela Angel! How are y' all doing!" Angela asked.

The crowd went wild as they cheered and applauded. Angela was a pro at interacting with the crowd as she smiled and waved at them naturally; it did not feel forced at all. Every word she said was met with cheers and screams. The atmosphere at the concert was exciting.

"Angela, I love you!"

"Angela!"

Lily was extremely excited. However, she still maintained her posture as she did not scream out loud. Evelyn, on the other hand, was ecstatic. She waved her glow stick in the air, screaming, "Angela! Angela!"

Who knew that she would be a die-hard fan.

Evelyn was overjoyed that she could see her idol in person. She waved her glow stick so hard that it hit Darryl square on his head.

'F*ck! First the earring, now this?' Darryl thought.

"You..." Darryl said.

"Shut up! I'm telling you I'm here to watch Angela's concert. Don't you dare disturb me!" Evelyn glared at Darryl.

'What the f*ck?' Darryl cursed to himself, ignoring her.

Angela's live singing was amazing. She sang many of her classics, and after an hour of singing, Angela' s voice was hoarse.

Her fans panicked as they yelled, "Angela, stop singing!"

"Take care of your voice!"

Angela smiled. "Why don't all of you sing this next song with me? The Invisible Wings."

The crowd roared.

Her angelic voice echoed throughout the entire concert venue. This was a classic that everyone knew. Everyone sang along, with many crying at the song, including Evelyn.

Darryl was enjoying himself too when suddenly, his phone rang. He saw that it was from Dax. The last he heard from him was that he was captured by the Abbess Mother Serendipity and how Jean tortured him half to death.

Chapter 561

The whole time Dax was healing, he did not contact Darryl at all. Darryl was thrilled that he called him, so he quickly picked up the call.

However, the concert was too noisy. He could not hear a single word that Dax was saying.

"Dax!" Darryl yelled.

Just when he was about to end the call to send Dax a message, Evelyn snatched his phone and threw it on the floor.

"Can you be any more annoying? We're here to watch a concert, and you're on a call? Don't you have any manners?" Evelyn growled.

"What the f*ck are you doing?" Darryl picked up his phone and saw the screen was shattered. "What's your problem? Can't I take a call?"

"No, you can't! You're near me, so if you talk, I can' t hear her sing!" Evelyn retorted.

Once Angela had finished her song, she held her microphone and smiled. "I want to thank you all for singing with me. This concert means a lot to me, and I'll remember it for the rest of my life. Thank

you for all the support you've given me."

The crowd was silent as they let her speak.

Angela continued, "I've prepared a special surprise today to give back to all of you. There are paper and pens on your seats. Write down your wishes, fold them into a paper plane and throw it at me. Whoever I pick, I'll try to fulfill their wishes."

The crowd quickly scrambled under their seats, searching for the pen and paper.

Though the possibility of Angela picking up their paper planes was slim to none, they were still extremely excited nevertheless. It would be an honor to be picked by Angela Angel!

Darryl could see that Evelyn was engrossed in writing her wishes down. She filled the entire paper as if writing a long essay.

"Hubby, why don't you write one as well?" Lily urged Darryl.

"Sure, sure." he shook his head. His biggest wish now was for Yvonne to get better. However, no one could fulfill his wish.

He thought for a while before he looked at Evelyn and smiled cheekily. He thought about how Evelyn kicked him and poked him with her earring. He quickly wrote his wish on the paper and folded it

into a paper plane.

After a few minutes, Angela said, "Are you ready? I' ll count to three, then throw your paper planes, ok? Your seat number is written on the paper. Whoever gets picked, I'll read out the seat number. The camera will then pan towards the lucky person. You got it?"

"Ok!"

Angela smiled. "I'll count to three, then throw your paper planes at me, ok?"

"Ok!" The crowd cheered.

"One!"

"Two!"

"Three!"

Countless paper planes flew in the air, making it a sight to see. It was like countless shooting stars. Many paper planes barely reached the stage, but only one flew in a perfectly straight line and landed directly on Angela's chest, which she caught.

Chapter 562

The crowd gasped. Who could be so lucky?

They looked on with hope as Angela unfolded the paper plane. "I'll read out the wish on this paper."

Angela said with a smile, "This lucky person wrote: Dear Angela, I brought my daughter here with me today. She's seated next to me on my right. Five years ago, my daughter fell sick and became mute. She loves you very much, so I brought her here. My wish is for you to hug my daughter. The camera will now show the lucky person on the screen. Let's see who this person is."

The lucky person was seated in Row Three, 112.

The camera panned to the seat Angela mentioned. It was Darryl!

Lily was stunned as she thought, 'Since when did Darryl have a daughter? And a mute one as well?'

The crowd roared. Many knew Darryl was a live-in son-in-law, but they have never heard of him having a daughter.

Angela smiled. "Please show us his daughter that's seated to his right."

The camera panned to Evelyn!

"Darryl! You!" Evelyn was livid. She finally realized that Darryl wanted to embarrass her.

Darryl quickly lifted his hand and jabbed at Evelyn's Mute Acupoint, making her unable to speak. 1

"My good daughter," he laughed.

'This b*stard!' Evelyn cursed to herself. She was so embarrassed and enraged, but she could not speak!

"Let's bring this father-daughter duo onstage. The father looks extremely young! Let's welcome them!" Angela announced.

Darryl tried to contain his laughter as he said to Evelyn, "My lovely daughter, your idol invited you up on stage!"

Evelyn was so furious she wanted to kill Darryl! However, she could not do anything as this was her favorite idol's concert, so she kept it all in.

Watching her become furious but unable to speak, Darryl was delighted. He could finally get payback for all the things Evelyn did to him.

Lily and Circe were laughing in amusement. These two rivals really could not stop.

When they went up on stage, Evelyn was the center

of attention. They looked at her, then they looked at Darryl, stunned.

'How could a young man like Darryl have a daughter that old? Is this some sort of joke?' everyone thought.

"You're extremely young to be a father. How old are you?" Angela asked curiously.

"I married early," Darryl lied.

"You look really young! You don't look like father and daughter, more like siblings," Angela said.

"Yes, too young!" someone in the audience yelled.

Chapter 563

"He looks handsome as well!"

However, some of the people in the audience recognized Darryl.

"Isn't that the live-in son-in-law?"

"Since when did he have a daughter?" the crowd yelled.

Angela could not hear the yells over the cheers of the crowd as she hugged Evelyn.

Evelyn's mind blanked as her idol hugged her. Suddenly she was not that angry anymore, but overjoyed.

Angela looked at Evelyn and said, "Girl, I can see that your father loves you a lot. His wish was all about you. Why don't you hug him as well?"

'What? You want me to hug this assh*le?' Evelyn thought.

She trembled in defiance. However, she was in front of such a huge crowd. If she did not hug Darryl, her idol would be disappointed, and it would be extremely awkward.

Evelyn bit her lip as she quickly hugged Darryl then

left.

Darryl was amused that Evelyn was forced to hug him.

"My good daughter, your wish, has been fulfilled. Let's go," Darryl urged.

Evelyn glared at him before turning to smile at Angela as they left the stage.

The concert came to an end, but the crowd was not willing to leave. Angela had a few encores before it truly ended.

Darryl held Lily's hand and walked out. Evelyn rushed over and kicked Darryl in the butt, causing him to almost fall over.

"My good daughter, how could you kick your father?" he said rudely.

Evelyn was still mute. She glared at Darryl and walked off. Circe was angry yet found the whole thing funny.

"Darryl, you've made Evelyn angry. I'm gonna go console her," she said before she ran after Evelyn.

Lily hugged Darryl's arm and complained, "Hubby, Evelyn's just a girl. How could you bully her?"

'Bully her?' Darryl thought.

Darryl smiled bitterly, "I'm the one being bullied!

You didn't see how her earring poked my butt or how she shattered my phone!"

Lily laughed as she leaned her head on Darryl's shoulders.

"Honey, I have something to tell you," Darryl said lightly.

"What is it?"

Darryl took a deep breath. "Yvonne was injured while trying to save me. We...got married." 1

Darryl was conflicted about telling her for a very long time, but he finally decided to reveal it.

Lily trembled as the smile on her face disappeared. She was completely stunned.

Darryl panicked. "Yvonne tried to save me. Her essence was absorbed, and she had only a few remaining hours left to live. I didn't want her to have any regrets, so I-"

"I don't want to hear this." Lily's eyes were wet. She could see that Darryl and Yvonne had feelings for each other. It was a stab to her heart that they got married. 1

"I want to be alone." Lily ran off.

Darryl thought of chasing after her when his phone rang. Through his cracked screen, he could see that

it was from Dax.

He quickly picked up.

“Darryl! Come to the Sanders Mansion. Quick!” Dax said anxiously.

Chapter 564

Darryl asked in a panic, "What happened?!"

Dax shook his head. "I just saved a person. He's badly injured. Do you have any elixir that can help him? Bring it here quick!"

"F*ck you! You scared me," Darryl said angrily. He thought that Abbess Mother Serendipity came looking for trouble again. "Who did you save?"

"I don't know him. I met him in the woods, and he had wounds all over his body. I couldn't just leave him there, so I brought him home."

Darryl hung up and hailed a taxi.

"Sanders Mansion," Darryl said.

The taxi driver could not help but turn around and look at Darryl. The Sanders Mansion was famous in Donghai City; after all, Dax Sanders was an influential person. However, his power and influence had dropped a lot since Abbess Mother Serendipity captured him and killed many of his men.

Now Donghai City is under the rule of Abby and Brandon Guy.

Darryl's phone rang when he was about to take a short nap. He thought it was Dax again, but it was from Chester Wilson, the Military Adviser of the Eternal Life Palace Sect.

'Why would Chester call me all of a sudden?' Darryl wondered as he picked up the call.

"Brother! Something bad's happened!" Chester yelled.

"Chester, what happened? Don't worry. Take it slowly," Darryl comforted. He was slightly confused as to why Chester was so anxious.

Chester took a deep breath and started to explain slowly, "Three days ago, our Sect Master left our Altar to go to Donghai City. No one dared ask why he was going. But, today, he sent us a rescue signal! He would only send us the signal when he's in serious danger! Something must have happened to him. Please help us find him!"

Darryl comforted him, "Sure, sure. Don't panic. I'll send my men to search for him."

Darryl hung up, then called Caelan Lewis to gather his men and search for Eternal Life Palace's Sect Master in Donghai City.

At the Sanders Mansion, Dax was pacing around solemnly in his room. There was a badly injured

man on his bed. He had never seen someone so severely hurt, and Dax had been in many fights.

Dax found it unbelievable that this man was still alive after all his injuries. He did all he could to stop the bleeding, but the rest would have to wait for Darryl to arrive.

Chapter 565

The man suddenly woke up and coughed up blood as his face turned completely white.

Shocked, Dax walked to the man and said, "My friend, you're finally awake."

The man looked at Dax in confusion and asked feebly, "Who...who are you?"

"My name is Dax Sanders. Don't be afraid. I was the one that rescued you," Dax said. "Sir, where did you come from, and what happened?"

"You rescued me? Tha-thank you, sir. I'm Callum Webb, the Sect Master of the Eternal Life Palace.

'What? Sect Master of the Eternal Life Palace?!' Dax thought, his mind buzzing.

He has heard that the Sect Masters of the Eternal Life Palace and Grandmaster Heaven were extremely powerful people. Who knew he would rescue the Sect Master of Eternal Life Palace?

Dax swallowed hard. He could not help but ask, " Who hurt you so badly?"

It must have taken someone monstrous to be able to hurt the powerful Sect Master of Eternal Life

Palace so badly!

Callum coughed up more blood. It was obvious he would not last much longer. He gritted his teeth, clenched his fist, and said, "The Six Orthodox Sects. They ambushed me..."

He weakly explained to Dax, though he kept stuttering, Dax understood his story.

Callum had an illegitimate daughter in Donghai City that he visited every once in a while. However, this time the Six Orthodox Sects found out about his visit, They have long considered the Eternal Life Palace an evil cult, so they could not let go of the opportunity to get rid of its Sect Master.

They gathered up all of their Elders and Heads, which was about a hundred or so, and ambushed Callum. If he were to fight them one on one, Callum had nothing to worry about, but facing a hundred skilled fighters at once was tough. He barely managed to escape after he was badly injured and passed out in the woods, where Dax rescued him.

Callum coughed more blood out after explaining everything to Dax. He was extremely emotional.

"Are you alright?" Dax asked.

"I don't have much time," Callum trembled.

Dax let out a long sigh. Though he did not know

him personally, he could see that a once strong and powerful figure was about to die. There was something tragic about that.

"Sire, come over here," Callum said.

Dax did not think much of it as he walked over to the bed and bent down. Suddenly, Callum held his hand out and put his palm on Dax's head.

Buzz!

Dax was frightened. He tried to avoid it, but Callum was too quick. When Callum put his palm on Dax, he thought that his brain was going to explode. However, the instant Callum touched Dax; he felt a surge of power flowing through his body!

"Sir, don't move. I don't have much time left. Since you rescued me, it means that our fates are intertwined. Before I die, it's my honor to pay you back. I'm passing on my powers to you. I hope you will do great things in the future," Callum explained.

Buzz!

Dax felt his Internal Energy increasing exponentially! He suddenly broke through, becoming a Martial Marquis. Callum's powers were still coursing through his body! He passed Level One Martial Marquis, then Level Two Martial

Marquis, and Level Three Martial Marquis.

Chapter 566

The surge of Internal Energy entering his body made Dax feel like he was about to explode.

Callum gritted his teeth as he transferred his lifelong cultivation to Dax. Technically, Internal Energies could not be transferred to other people, but Callum had practiced this method called the Grafting Method. This method only belonged to the Eternal Life Palace, and only the Sect Master could practice this method.

There was no other method, except the Grafting Method, to transfer their Internal Energy to another person.

Callum was well aware that he could take his last breath at any moment. Rather than letting all his powers go to waste, why not transfer it to Dax and repay him!

"Callum, no. You're going to live! I have a brother who is skilled in elixirs; he can save you!" Dax yelled.

"There's no use! No elixir can save me. Don't move!" Callum scolded as he gritted his teeth.

Strong waves of Internal Energy kept surging

through Dax's body. He felt that his meridian had been baptized by pure Internal Energy. His ranks flew up!

Level Four Martial Marquis. Level Five Martial Marquis. Level One Martial Saint!

This was terrifying. He went from a Master General to a Martial Saint in such a short time!

Buzz!

Callum took a long breath and finally lifted his hand off Dax. He was already badly injured, but after transferring his entire Internal Energy to Dax, he was so emaciated it looked like he aged ten years. He looked like a man at the end of his life.

Callum looked at him and said weakly, "Your rank was pretty mediocre, so you could only reach Level One Martial Saint. There's still a portion of Internal Energy that you can't absorb yet.

"However, what you haven't absorbed will be released slowly from your energy field. In a year's time, your improvement in cultivation will be ten times more than an ordinary cultivator! If you're talented, in a year, you could become a Martial Emperor!"

Dax was surprised and overjoyed. He was extremely anxious as he could see that Callum was almost at

the end of his life.

Callum forced a smile. "I've roamed the Earth my entire life. I have no regrets now, knowing that my powers won't go to waste before I die. No regrets! Haha!"

Though he sounded weak, he spoke with pride.

Dax looked at him in pain, "What other wishes do you have left? If there's anything I can do to help, I will!"

Callum fished out a Purple Jade token and a letter.

He handed it to Dax and said, "Remember, this is my token, the symbol of Eternal Life Palace's Sect Master.

"Together with this letter, my will, you have to bring it back to Eternal Life Palace's Altar and hand it to Military Adviser Chester Wilson."

Callum's eyes were slowly closing as he struggled to keep them open. "Remember, you have to hand... hand it to... Chester. Tell him...that even though the Eternal Life Palace is considered by many as an evil cult, if there is a war one day between the New World and World Universe, don't... don't be a traitor. Must...must... not... be... New World's... snitch."

Dax kept the token and letter. He nodded and

assured Callum, "Don't worry. I'll hand it to him."

Callum nodded and slowly shut his eyes.

Dax's heart ached.

Thud!

He knelt and bowed to Callum three times.
Although he did not have a master-disciple relationship with Callum, Callum transferred all his Internal Energy. For that, he was eternally grateful.

Chapter 567

Callum's last words about if a war broke out, to never be a snitch, was said with such confidence and positivity. Dax was somehow overwhelmed as tears started streaming down his face.

Meanwhile, Darryl had finally reached the Sanders Mansion.

Once he got down from the taxi, he quickly entered the hall and yelled, "Dax! Dax!"

He rushed upstairs, pushed the door opened and was stunned at what he saw. A man was lying on the bed without any sign of life as Dax was next to him, eyes red.

'Damn, I'm too late,' thought Darryl. The man had passed away.

Darryl thought to himself, 'Wait, Dax said the person he rescued was a stranger. Why is he so sad?'

He walked over and asked, "What happened?"

Dax let out a long sigh. "A legendary hero just left us. However, those self-righteous, mediocre assh* les are still alive!"

His eyes turned red.

Darryl was slightly confused.

Dax smiled bitterly. "Darryl, take a guess who this person is."

"Who?" Darryl asked.

Dax took a deep breath before he enunciated his words, "The Sect Master of Eternal Life Palace, Callum Webb."

'What? He's the Sect Master of Eternal Life Palace?' Darryl thought as his mind buzzed with shock.

Chester just called to say that the Sect Master might be in danger in Donghai City. Darryl found it hard to believe as the Sect Master was highly skilled. No one could really hurt him. He truly did not expect this.

Darryl came to his senses. He suddenly felt a strong aura coming off from Dax. He tensed. "F*ck me, Dax, you-you're a Level One Martial Saint?"

'F*ck! Level One Martial Saint?' Darryl thought.

Dax did not seem thrilled as he smiled bitterly. " Callum transferred his Internal Energy to me."

He explained what happened. Darryl felt pity after listening to Dax's retelling. A legendary hero, ambushed and attacked by hundreds of people till he died. It was saddening to hear.

However, Darryl was happy about Dax's strange

encounter. He quickly called Chester and told him the news.

After hearing that the Sect Master had passed away, Chester was silent for a while.

No longer able to hold back his sadness, he wailed, " Darryl, please get Dax to hand the letter to me. I want to know what he wrote. I'm waiting for him at the Eternal Life Palace's Altar."

"Sure, Chester. Don't cry," Darryl comforted, feeling somber too.

"Come with Dax. I caught a woman for you. You'll be excited," Chester said as he wiped his tears.

Chapter 568

'What? He caught a woman for me?' Darryl thought, stunned.

"Chester, who did you capture?" he asked, curious.

Chester took a breath, "Bro, don't ask so many questions. You'll know once you see her. Come quick. I'm waiting for you at Eternal Life Island." Then he hung up.

Darryl shook his head and looked at Dax. They packed up and headed off for the Eternal Life Island.

It was noon the next day, and the weather was great. Donghai's waters were calm and peaceful.

Not far off in the sea were many fishermen busy working.

One week ago, the Elysium Gate got rid of the evil Coastline Sect. The fishermen were so incredibly grateful; every ship had a Nine Dragons Justice flag waving proudly.

Among the many ships at sea, one particular ship stood out. It had a red sail and was larger than the other fishermen's ships. Darryl and Dax stood shoulder to shoulder on the deck of the ship,

looking at the view. However, they were extremely solemn. Behind them was a coffin, which Dax got his men to build. In the coffin laid Callum Webb.

The Eternal Life Island was 1000 kilometers away from Donghai City, so they had to use a coffin to preserve the body for such a long journey.

The entire journey was smooth, and the sea was calm. After a day or two on the water, they could finally see a magnificent island in the middle of the sea—the Eternal Life Island.

The ship slowly came to shore, and Darryl could see there were hundreds of people standing in a line on the shore. They were followers of the Eternal Life Palace, and all of them were in uniform. The leader was a twenty-something-year-old man with his hair in a braid.

Darryl and Dax disembarked from the boat quickly as the man with the braid approached them. He greeted them politely, "Are you two Sect Master Darryl Darby and Dax Sanders?"

Darryl nodded. "Yes, we are."

It was a long journey to the Eternal Life Palace. The man with the braid bowed. "The Military Adviser, Four Guardian Kings, and the elders are waiting for both of you at the viewing deck. Please follow me."

The man led the way as Darryl and Dax looked at

each other and followed him.

The followers lifted the coffin with care and followed them as well.

The Eternal Life Island was delightful. Their beaches were filled with coconut trees, there were a few hills on the island, and many creatures were lazing around—it was paradise.

After fifteen minutes or so, Darryl and Dax reached the viewing deck. It was an enormous viewing deck, about three or four football fields wide. You could see far out to the sea, and it had no blind spot. If the island was under attack, you would notice it immediately.

Currently, the viewing deck had thousands of people standing in an orderly manner. All of them were followers of the Eternal Life Palace.

In front of them was a high platform, on which a Dragon Throne was placed. On the throne sat Chester, wearing a white shirt and holding a feather fan, looking regal.

On either side of Chester were the Four Guardian Kings: Golden Lion, Silver Wolf, Crimson Snake, and White Horse.

Crimson Snake and White Horse were a married couple.

Darryl immediately noticed Golden Lion, Zion Featherstone. Two petite figures stood behind him.

Chapter 569

It was Evelyn Featherstone and Circe Newman.

Darryl was surprised. He did not expect that Circe Newman would be a follower of the Eternal Life Palace. Evelyn and Circe were looking ethereal and beautiful in a plain long dress. However, all eyes were on Darryl and Dax.

Thud!

The followers put down the coffin slowly, then stood to the side.

The entire deck was totally silent. Many had heard about their Sect Master's passing.

Chester stood up, looked at Darryl, and choked, " Brother, the coffin..."

Darryl sighed, "Lies Callum Webb's body."

Chester quickly approached the coffin. His hands trembled as he slowly opened the lid.

Callum was lying in the coffin peacefully. His entire body was covered in scars, and his eyes closed. The wounds on his body were terrifying.

Thud!

Chester lost it. He knelt and wailed, "Master..."

He was crying in pain.

Chester and Callum were the closest in the sect. All these years, Callum treated Chester as his own brother. Seeing his body, Chester could not accept the fact that Callum was gone.

He cried loudly. The entire viewing deck was mourning.

Then the Four Guardian Kings and other Hall Masters knelt and cried too. They wailed, "Master..."

Their cries rang through the entire Eternal Life Island.

After a while, a woman slowly walked towards Chester and lifted him up. "Hubby, don't cry."

It was Chester's wife, Adina Vega. Like her namesake, she was extremely gentle, and while she might not be beautiful, she looked kind. Her heart ached as she looked at how Chester sobbed. She hugged him.

Dax walked up to Chester as he took Callum's token and will, he handed it to Chester. "Brother Chester, Master made me promise to hand these two things to you personally."

Chester nodded. He took it with both hands as he

wiped his tears and went back to the platform.

He opened Callum's will and read, "I am Callum Webb, the twenty-seventh Sect Master of Eternal Life Palace, and I was ambushed by the Six Orthodox Sects. Knowing I don't have much time left, I have written my will."

Chester was still sobbing, so his voice was not loud. However, the entire deck was silent so that they could hear him clearly. All eyes were on Chester as they listened to him read their Master's will.

Chester took a long breath before he continued, " When I die, Military Adviser Chester Wilson will take over the position of Sect Master. The Four Guardian Kings and 180,000 followers are to obey Chester Wilson's orders!"

At that, Chester's eyes became red. Holding back his tears, he continued, "Finally, everyone has to obey this order! Many of you know that one day war will ignite between the New World and World Universe. Every follower of the Eternal Life Palace must not be a traitor! Do not surrender to the New World! Those that disobey my order will find that I have died in vain!

Chester choked and sobbed as he read the last sentence. "Callum..."

Thud.

Chester knelt and yelled with confidence, “Master, don’t worry. As long as I’m alive, I will not let the followers be snitches for the New World! I swear, I’ ll lead the Eternal Life Palace well!”

Chapter 570

Everyone felt sad, listening to Chester's sobs.

Then, Golden Lion, Zion Featherstone, walked towards Chester. He knelt and said, "Follower Zion Featherston. All hail our Master!"

The old Sect Master had just passed away, and the new one had to take over immediately. This was the law.

"All hail our Master!"

A sea of followers knelt in unison. Only two refused to kneel as they stood there looking at Dax, filled with dissatisfaction.

The two were White Horse and Crimson Snake. The husband and wife duo were disgruntled.

White Horse took one step forward and said, " Chester, you are merely a Level One Master. With such weak powers, what right do you have to be the Sect Master?"

The crowd gasped.

Chester's face flushed as he could not offer a retort. He was of a low cultivator rank, yet he was honored with the Military Adviser, a rank above the four

Guardian Kings. White Horse and Crimson Snake were always unhappy about this.

However, Chester did not expect that they would defy him so openly in public in front of everyone!

The atmosphere became heavy and awkward suddenly.

Slap!

Zion stood up and slapped his chair.

"White Horse, Crimson Snake! What do both of you mean? It was written clearly on Master Webb's will to let the Military Adviser be the Sect Master. The Military Adviser is wise and sensible. What's wrong with him being the Sect Master?" he roared.

"Haha! Zion, stop with the act! Let me ask you, so what if he's wise? His powers are weak. What right does he have to be Sect Master? I disagree with him being our Sect Master!" Crimson Snake laughed coldly.

Crimson Snake took a hard look at Chester. She rushed toward him and lifted her arm as she sneered, "If Chester can block my slap, I'll hail him as my Master!"

Everyone was stunned as they did not expect her to hit Chester! The Four Guardian Kings were all Level Five Martial Marquis! If Crimson Snake slapped

Chester, he would die.

Chester was astounded too. Crimson Snake's speed was too fast; he could not avoid it.

Just as he was about to get slapped, someone rushed forward and blocked him. It was Darryl. He was not going to let anyone bully Chester.

"Do you want to die?" Crimson Snake yelled. She was angry that someone would block her move, so she redirected her slap towards Darryl.

Darryl was fearless. He harnessed his energy field and lifted his hands to meet with her slap.

Slap!

Their two palms met, and Darryl felt a huge force overpower him. He was forced to retreat a few steps back as he spat out blood.

Crimson Snake had the upper hand. After all, Darryl would definitely lose a little when fighting with a Level Five Martial Marquis.

"Darryl!" Dax yelled. He was infuriated that Darryl was hit. He rushed forward and slapped Crimson Snake square on the face.

Slap!

Dax used his entire force, which sent Crimson Snake flying twenty meters away and caused her to

cough out blood.

Dax did not care if it was a man or woman; no one can bully Darryl! After hitting her, Dax was still angry, so he walked towards White Horse and slapped him too.

White Horse was caught off guard. He wanted to block the slap, but fighting against a Level One Martial Saint was pointless.

Slap!

Chapter 571

Dax slapped White Horse, sending him flying far away till he landed beside his wife, Crimson Snake.

Everyone gasped.

This was the difference between a Level One Martial Saint and a Level Five Martial Marquis.

Ka-cha!

An ax appeared in Dax's hand. He slowly approached White Horse and Crimson Snake. "You two disloyal traitors. Master Webb had just passed away. We barely got to avenge him, yet you two have already disobeyed his will. I am going to kill you two as a sacrifice to him in heaven!"

White Horse sweated profusely; the arrogance he had previously was all gone.

Thud!

White Horse and Crimson Snake immediately knelt and begged for forgiveness, "Sorry. We're sorry. It was a lapse of judgment. We will be loyal to Master Chester Wilson from now on..."

White Horse was almost in tears. He never expected Dax to be Level One Martial Saint!

Dax harrumphed without saying a word as he turned to look at Chester.

White Horse and Crimson Snake were not idiots. They immediately groveled and cried out, "All Hail, our Master! Please forgive us!"

Chester drew a deep breath and responded, "It's fine, get up. Today is the first—and the last—that you'll do this. I hope you take this as a warning. One more act of betrayal and your heads will be off."

To be fair, the husband and wife should have been killed as a warning to all for rebelling against him. However, killing another two Guardian Kings would weaken the sect's powers since Master Webb had just passed on.

Most importantly, Chester still had a hard time processing Callum Webb's death. He did not muster the energy to deal with this.

At that, White Horse let out a sigh of relief. He wiped the sweat off his forehead. "Thank you, Master," he exclaimed.

White Horse and Crimson Snake then stood up and returned to their positions, not daring to say another word.

Chester shook his head. "Golden Lio, Dax, and Darryl are my brothers. Please arrange their

accommodation and let them rest," He instructed Zion. "The rest, you may leave. I want to be alone in peace."

"Yes, Master." They answered in unison and left.

The view deck was emptied in a short while, except for Chester and his wife, Adina.

He walked toward the coffin and knelt again. " Master, don't worry. I will lead the sect well. I won't disappoint you. Farewell, farewell..." Chester sobbed.

Adina could not do anything but pat his back and stand by his side.

In the afternoon, Chester went to the back of the hill. He dug up a grave with his bare hands until they bled to bury Callum's coffin.

On the other side of the hill, Dax and Darryl were in their rooms. They did not rest much during the journey, so Darryl fell asleep immediately.

He slept for a while until he heard a knock on his door. Darryl opened his eyes.

"Who is it?" he answered.

A sect follower declared politely, "Master Darby, our Master previously captured a woman. He said he wanted to give her to you. I have brought the

woman here."

Chapter 572

Darryl stood up quickly. He recalled Chester previously saying that he captured a woman to be given to him. Now that the woman was here, Darryl became curious. He got down from his bed and opened the door.

He was stunned. A follower was standing in front of him, and behind the follower was a woman of a great body. She was tied up.

The follower pushed the woman into the room and took his leave.

Darryl was floored. The woman turned out to be Megan Castello!

Two days ago, Chester heard from Zion that the Emei sect's Senior Sister Megan Castello stabbed Darryl with her sword at the Lion Slaughtering Conference, nearly killing him.

Chester was livid. He ordered his men to capture Megan, and they had finally caught her. Chester wanted it to be a surprise for Darryl.

Darryl looked at Megan awkwardly and asked, "How ... how were you captured?"

Megan did not say anything but stared intensely at

him in rage.

After a minute or so, Megan laughed coldly and snarled, "How was I captured? I should be the one asking you that question, Darryl. You're a disgusting piece of filth!"

"What did I do?" Darryl asked.

Megan glared at him and scoffed, "My master said that you joined the Eternal Life Palace and killed your grandfather. I defended you, saying that you weren't that sort of person! But now, I know I was wrong! You really joined the Eternal Life Palace! You 're a failure!"

Megan gritted her teeth. She realized that she made the right decision to steal his Celestial Silkworm Armor and Supreme Mystery Scripture. Such rare and precious items should not be in the hands of trash!

"Yes, I've joined the Eternal Life Palace," he sighed. "So what? Do you have a misunderstanding about them?"

Other people have said that the Eternal Life Palace sect was terrible and only did evil things. Darryl did not think so. Every follower lived honest lives—Callum, Chester, Zion, and even Caelan were all loyal and just.

Megan was agitated. "Darryl, you joined the Eternal

Life Palace! You're scum! They are evil! Aren't you afraid of karma? Don't you worry that your parents will be punished?"

He was equally aggravated as his mind buzzed. " Megan, do you think the Six Orthodox sects are any better? At the Lion Slaughtering Conference, your master used our relationship—knowing that I won' t fight you—and made you stab me. Is this the work of a good and just sect?"

Darryl was livid. He pointed at Megan and yelled, " Also, I was slandered by my own family, who said that I defiled my siblings and killed my grandfather. Abbess Mother Serendipity did not even bother to find out the truth before trying to murder me. Is this how a good sect works?"

Other than that, Leroy Henderson—the Sect Master of Kunlun—had crossed over to the New World. He learned the Dark Method and absorbed Yvonne's essence. Was this how good and just sects worked? Though Monica warned Darryl to never tell another person about this, Darryl was angry at the mere thought of it.

Those self-righteous sects acted all high and mighty and tried to get rid of evil sects. What a bunch of nonsense!

"Don't tell me about this." Megan's face flushed as

she retorted in disgust. She did not want to hear about this.

"Darryl, I will never believe you again. You're filth and scum! Also, what do you want to do with me by capturing me here? Are you using me to threaten my master? Dream on! Just kill me."

She spat at Darryl.

Chapter 573

Darryl was furious. Just as he was about to speak, a voice came from the door.

"Master Darby, our Master is inviting you and Dax to dine with him in the main hall."

"I'll be right there," Darryl replied.

Darryl took a deep breath. He looked at Megan and explained, "I admit, Chester and I are close. I'll admit that I am also a Hall Master of the Eternal Life Palace, but we never did any evil or harm anyone. We lived an honest life. You'll sleep here tonight. You'll take the bed, and I'll take the floor. I'll untie you when I get back later. Dax and I are leaving for Donghai City tomorrow, so we'll bring you along."

Darryl walked out of the room.

"Darryl, you bastard..."

Darryl could hear Megan's cries. Darryl loathed Abbess Mother Serendipity. Chester must have captured Megan to blackmail her, and he definitely would not let her go that easily. Darryl ignored her as he made his way to the main hall.

The main hall was magnificent. All the furniture

was made out of Golden-thread Nanmu.

As he entered the main hall, he could hear Dax and Chester chatting and laughing. They already started drinking.

"I did not know Brother Dax was so powerful! I admire you!" Chester laughed and lifted the glass to him.

"Brother Chester, stop praising me. My ranks were all thanks to Master Webb." Dax downed his glass of wine.

They already had a few drinks when they saw Darryl. Chester waved at Darryl and asked, "Darryl, why were you so slow? Come here quick."

Chester felt much better. Although Callum's death was devastating, he still had to continue living. If he could not get a grip of himself, how could he lead the Eternal Life Palace?

Darryl and Dax came from far away. Of course, he had to prepare a feast for them, especially since he had not seen Darryl in a long time. They had to drink till they dropped.

Usually, when there were guests, it was a norm for them to arrange courtesans. However, they forewent those customs since Callum Webb had just passed.

Darryl still laughed and sat with them at the table, even though he was furious about Megan. He was about to take a sip when he realized something odd about Chester. His powers increased!

"Chester, are you Level Five Master now?" Darryl was stunned.

What happened? How did he level up so fast?

During the day, he was just a Level One Master. However, in a few hours, he rose four levels.

Chester smiled. "Haha! Brother, let me tell you. Here in the Eternal Life Palace, we have a miraculous method called the Grafting Method. Only Sect Masters can practice this manual. Once you master this, your cultivation level will rise fast."

He chuckled in self-deprecation. "However, due to my mediocrity, practicing the Grafting Method alone could not help me rise up four levels in half a day. It was mainly due to Master Webb. He left me many precious herbs. I ate plenty of it just now, hence why I leveled up so quickly."

Darryl nodded.

"By the way, Darryl, have you met the woman I captured? Haha!" he laughed. "Zion said that she stabbed you during the Lion Slaughtering Conference. I captured her here today, so it's up to

you how you want to deal with her. Were you surprised?"

Darryl smiled bitterly and replied, "Thank you for your kindness."

Bloody hell. It was a surprise, indeed, but Megan's words really annoyed him. Darryl was furious at the thought of it.

Chapter 574

The thought of Megan still made Darryl angry. However, he wanted to have a good time with his brothers. He put Megan in the back of his mind.

"Drink up, drink up!" Dax lifted his wine glass and shouted, "You all have to promise not to force the alcohol out with Internal Energy! Then, we'll see who has the worst tolerance!"

"Who's afraid of you? Drink!" They clinked their glasses and downed the wine. They did not have enough wine, so they swapped their glasses for bowls instead. They drank bowl after bowl of wine.

It was said that men bonded through alcohol. That was the truth.

They did not know how much they had drunk. Suddenly, Chester lifted his bowl as he stood up and declared, "Darryl, Dax, it is my honor to have known you two. Shall we officially become sworn brothers?"

"Yes!" They looked at each other and laughed.

Dax slammed the table. "Brother Chester, I have the same thought! Haha!"

Ever since Callum Web transferred all his Internal

Energy to Dax, he had a sudden affinity to the Eternal Life Palace. After he came to Eternal Life Island and met Chester, Golden Lion, and the others, his fondness for the sect increased. These men were honest and just!

He longed to form a relationship with them. When Chester wanted to become sworn brothers, he naturally agreed!

Darryl was overjoyed too. He stood up and filled their bowls with wine. He slashed his index finger with his Blood Drinking Sword.

Shing!

A drop of blood dripped into the wine.

To become sworn brothers, they would have to drink each other's blood in wine.

Chester looked at the two men, smiling back at them. They proceeded to do the same, dripping their blood into the wine.

Thud.

The three of them knelt and bowed to the sky to complete the swearing-in.

"Lord on high, today, I, Chester Wilson."

"I, Darryl Darby."

"And I, Dax Sanders."

"We agree to help each other through thick and thin. The lord as our witness, we agree to become sworn brothers!" They yelled proudly in unison.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

They bowed three times to the sky and helped each other up.

According to their age, Chester was the eldest. Darryl was the middle, and Dax was the youngest.

They were used to their previous ways of addressing each other. Suddenly having to change their names to 'eldest brother' or 'second brother' was slightly awkward, so they stuck to their old ways.

Back at the table, the others were extremely excited. They drank non-stop.

After lots of wine, Darryl complained lightly. " Brother Chester, why are all the dishes vegetarian?"

After lots of alcohol—of course—they would want to eat meat.

Chester laughed. "You two should know that tonight 's dishes were all made by my wife! She's a vegetarian. She feels that eating them equals killing them, so she does not let me eat meat. I hope you two might understand! Haha! My wife knew that

you were coming, so she insisted on cooking for the both of you. I could not even stop her! So, I hope you bear with me! Haha!"

At the mention of his wife, Adina, Chester's face was filled with joy. Chester really loved his wife.

"Ah, so that's why," Darryl laughed. Darryl had a great first impression of Chester's wife. Adina was a motherly woman with a gentle expression. Anyone could see that she was an exceptionally kind woman.

Truth to be told, Adina's cooking was excellent. It tasted amazing! Chester must have done something great in his past life that he could marry a woman like that. 1

Chester smiled. "By the way, I did not get to properly introduce Adina to you this afternoon. I'll get her to come to meet you all."

Chester instructed a maidservant. "Go to the kitchen and see if Adina is almost done. Get her to come to see my brothers."

"Yes, Master." The maidservant agreed and quickly left the hall.

Dax laughed. He asked Chester, "Brother Chester, how did you and Adina meet?"

Chester took a gulp and gushed, "Adina and I were schoolmates. She was the daughter of a wealthy

family. I was just a poor student back then, and I had not joined the Eternal Life Palace. We were desk mates, and our feelings grew over time."

Chester smiled bitterly. "Though we were still students, I was from a poor family. How could I be with a wealthy heiress? She was kicked out of her family because of me. I was guilty, and I felt that I did not give her a comfortable life. When I joined the sect, she accompanied me to this island, so I owe a lot to her. Hence, why I want to love her back as much as I can."

At that, Chester smiled happily.

Dax and Darryl looked at each other and smiled. Adina finally could reap her rewards, now that Chester is the Sect Master. He looked over one hundred and eighty thousand followers.

Chapter 575

In the kitchen, Adina wore an apron as she was busy chopping carrots. There were hints of sweat on her beautiful face. She knew that Chester wanted to treat his brothers to dinner, so she had to serve them well.

A maidservant approached her and said, "Mistress, Master wants you to join them for dinner."

Adina smiled and nodded. "Okay, you head over first. I'll come when I finish this dish."

The maidservant nodded. She took out a handkerchief and dabbed the sweat off Adina's face before she left.

Ten minutes later, the dish was finally done. She carefully held the plate in her hands and headed toward the main hall where Chester was.

She was halfway there when she heard a woman's cries coming from Darryl's room. She stopped dead in her tracks.

'Wasn't Darryl drinking with Chester and Dax? Why were there sounds of a woman coming from his room?' thought Adina.

She was curious, so she pushed the door open. She

was stunned by what she saw—a beautiful woman tied up on a chair, crying terribly. It was Megan Castello.

"Miss, what happened?" Adina put her dish down and approached her.

Adina was a kind-hearted soul, so she could not bear to see people cry. Seeing Megan completely helpless broke her heart.

Megan was frightened when Adina entered. Her sobs turned into sniffs.

"Who are you?" Megan asked with red eyes.

Adina smiled. "My name is Adina. Sister, why are you tied up?"

Megan gritted her teeth and whispered, "I have no idea, I was captured. Maybe because I am a follower of Emei, they want to use me to threaten my Master. Can... can you release me?"

Megan had no idea who she was but seeing how kind she looked, she pleaded unconsciously.

Megan did not have much hope. However, she was surprised when Adina untied her.

"Okay, I've untied you. Don't cry," Adina said softly. "Miss, the followers in Eternal Life Palace never caused trouble. How could we use you to

blackmail your master? I've untied you. Follow me. I 'll lead you out of the Eternal Life Island."

Megan was stunned, staring blankly at Adina.

She was letting her go? Impossible! Something must be up. The bunch of scum, how could they let her escape?

"Miss?" Adina asked as she left the room. She urged, "Follow me. I'll bring you out of the Eternal Life Island."

Megan frowned. Even though she was suspicious, she still followed Adina.

A few minutes later, they passed a small winding road downhill. "Miss, follow the road, and you'll reach the sea," she instructed. "There will be many fishermen boats, just take any one of them, and you 'll be able to leave." At that, Adina turned and left.

Chester and the rest were still waiting for her. Also, the dish she prepared was probably cold by then and needed to be reheated.

Megan stood still and bit her lip. Was she really going to let her go?

"May I ask who you are? If you let me go, won't the Sect Master blame you?" Megan could not help but ask.

Adina smiled lightly. "Don't worry, my husband is

the new Sect Master. How could he blame me? I'm his wife. Just go, miss."

"You!" Megan was furious. "You're the Sect Master's wife?"

"Yes," Adina smiled.

"You scum! No one in the Eternal Life Palace is good!" Megan yelled.

She continued, "You're the wife of the Sect Master. How good could you be? You're letting me go on purpose! What are you planning on doing? All of the Eternal Life Palace members should die!"

Megan fished a long sword and stabbed Adina.

The sword went through Adina's right chest.

Adina was not a cultivator. She felt her chest become cold as blood spread throughout her clothes.

She never dreamed that doing good would get her killed.

Megan clenched her teeth as she pulled the sword out. She looked at Adina coldly and shrieked, "You let me go on purpose! Why? Tell me!"

Thud.

Adina could not answer her. She felt weak and fell to

the floor. The sword had punctured her heart.

Chapter 576

"Say, what are you up to? Why are you letting me go?" Megan clenched her jaw and kicked Adina.

Adina was lying on the floor, her breath weak. There was blood splattered everywhere. Megan's kick made her bleed more.

"The Eternal Life Palace is evil! Find a better man in your next life. Don't marry filth anymore," Megan spat coldly.

Seeing how Adina could not reply, she kept her sword and ran downhill.

She did not regret killing Adina. She was angry that she was caught, and there was no one else to take out her anger on. Adina was the wife of the Sect Master. Killing her was getting rid of evil. Adina deserved it!

In the main hall, the three brothers drank lots of wine. There were many empty jars on the table.

Darryl's phone rang all of a sudden. It was from Zephyr Dixon.

Darryl was surprised. Zephyr would not have called him out of the blue. Was Elysium Gate be in

them? I don't think Leroy Henderson would give it to us."

Darryl's face darkened. He clenched his fist and shouted, "We will have to make him give it to us, no matter what!" He hung up.

Darryl's fist was clenched tight. He never expected that the only way to save Yvonne was with Kunlun's ultimate treasure—the Phoenix Pill.

It looked like he would have to fight with the Kunlun sect!

Dax and Chester looked at each other after they realized that Darryl's mood was off. "Darryl, what happened? Who called?" they asked.

Darryl sighed and smiled bitterly. "To tell you all the truth, a woman I love was badly injured while trying to save me. Her essence was absorbed by Leroy Henderson from the Kunlun sect..." Darryl spent the next few minutes retelling the story.

Slam.

When he was done, Chester slammed his fist on the table and swore, "Bloody f*ck! That bastard, Leroy! He's a pest! I have long hated him! Who knew he would be so despicable to hurt my brother's woman."

Chapter 577

A self-proclaimed righteous sect learned the evil Dark Method. How dare they still pretend to be self-righteous?

Dax was enraged as well, clenching his teeth. Darryl nodded, somewhat touched by their reactions. He was extremely fortunate to have met these two brothers in his life.

"By the way, where is Adina?" Chester frowned as he asked the maidservant.

The maidservant quickly answered, "Master, mistress said she would come after she finished the last dish. She should have finished long ago. Should I go call for her again?"

"Don't need to rush her. We've also finished eating." Chester waved in dismissal. Adina must be exhausted from preparing a feast.

Darryl nodded and smiled. "Yes, let her rest. She has worked hard hosting us!"

They clinked their glasses again. It was almost ten at night by the time they decided to call it a night. Chester was drunk.

"I can't take it anymore..." Chester mumbled. He

did not drink much. However, today was a special occasion as they became sworn brothers. Of course, he indulged in drinking.

"Haha! Brother Chester, your alcohol tolerance is weak!" Dax laughed. However, he was just as drunk as Chester. He could not stand properly either.

"Darryl, Dax, wait for me. I'll practice my alcohol tolerance. I'll outdrink all of you in the future!" Chester laughed. He put his arms around Darryl's shoulders.

"Let's go, brothers. I'll send you back to your rooms."

They had never-ending things to talk about on the way back. Once they went returned, they were sure they would continue chatting for a while.

Dax laughed out loud. "Brother Chester, the Eternal Life Paradise is amazing, except for one caveat. There's no electricity! It's dark at night, so we would be talking in the dark later! Haha!"

The three of them walked together to the backyard.

It was late, and the sky was dotted with stars.

They came upon a small road as they were chatting happily when Dax suddenly stopped in his tracks. He pointed at a bush not far from him and exclaimed, "Chester, Darryl, it looks like someone

is lying there! F*ck, am I hallucinating?" Dax rubbed his eyes.

He was not wrong. There was someone there!

Chester and Darryl looked to where Dax was pointing. They were astonished.

A woman's body laid there, still wearing an apron.

Chester frowned as he quickly approached the body. He was shocked to find out that it was Adina.

There was blood everywhere, and her chest had a gaping stab wound. She was long dead.

"Adina..."

Chapter 578

"Adina... Adina..."

Chester wailed as he hugged Adina tightly, tears falling non-stop. It was heart-wrenching.

Chester already had a hard time accepting Callum Webb's death. After becoming sworn brothers with Dax and Darryl, he cheered up but seeing Adina's dead body was another bullet straight to the heart.

"Adina, don't scare me. I beg of you to open your eyes. Please..." Chester's voice was hoarse. He was trembling.

Darry and Dax's mind went blank. They instantly sobered up.

Chester mentioned that Adina lived on the Eternal Life Island most of the time. She was a vegetarian who would not even step on an ant. She was the kindest soul with no enemies. Furthermore, she was the Sect Master's wife. Who would do this to her?

Dax and Darryl looked at each other with anger in their eyes. Chester had just mentioned how he and Adina came a long way and how he was guilty that he could not give her a better life, so he spoiled her as much as he could. Who knew Adina would be

found lying in a pool of her blood!

"Adina, I beg of you, don't leave me here! Please, please open your eyes! Please!" Chester sobbed. His cracked voice rang through the night.

"Chester, it seems like there are writings on the rock!" Darryl exclaimed.

Next to Adina, there was a rock about half a meter high. Three sentences were written with blood. It was evident that Adina wrote that before she died.

Chester looked at the rock and wailed even harder.

It wrote, "Marrying you. No regrets. Let's meet in the next life."

Chester fell on to the rock and sobbed hard. Adina knew she had not much time left, so she wrote her final words for Chester.

Chester clenched his fist. He punched the rock and yelled, "Adina, I need you back! How could you die? I have not taken you to see maple leaves. I've not brought you to snowy mountains, and we have not been to so many places! How could you die? I won't allow you to die! How could you? Do you hear me?!"

Tears kept falling down his cheeks. Chester had no idea how long he cried until a drop of blood fell from his eyes onto Adina. He was so grief-stricken that he cried blood!

Darryl clenched his fist, his heart aching for Chester. How much despair and agony was Chester in that he cried blood?

Hearing Chester's sobs, many followers and servants rushed over. They were stunned and helpless when they saw Adina lying lifeless in his arms.

Adina was a gentle soul. The servants mourned as well since she treated them well.

"Master, look!"

A maidservant found a jade pendant in the bush.

Chester picked the pendant up. His eyes turned red when he saw the word 'Emei' carved into it. This was the token of the Emei sect!

Chapter 579

This needed no thought—someone from Emei must have killed Adina and accidentally dropped her jade pendant! There was only one woman from the Emei sect in the entire Eternal Life Island—Megan Castello!

Darryl took a deep breath. He had seen this pendant when he entered Megan's house the first time. She told Darryl that she was from the Emei sect.

"Go and see if that woman, Megan Castello, is still in the room. Go!" Chester yelled.

"Yes... yes, master!" A few maidservants quickly ran off. They returned not long after.

They explained timidly, "Master, that Emei woman has freed herself and left."

Chester trembled in anger. "Emei! I will make sure all of your followers die together with my wife!" he yelled.

Loud thunder rumbled, and heavy rain poured from the sky.

Chester hugged Adina tightly. He stood up slowly and walked toward the backyard.

Megan escaped Eternal Life Island on a fishermen's ship. Riding on the vast ocean, she sat on the deck, looking determinedly at the Eternal Life Island, which was gradually getting smaller by the minute. She did not regret stabbing Adina at all. The followers of the Eternal Life Palace were evil people who deserved death.

Megan took a deep breath. "Darryl, goodbye!" she muttered.

"Even though I stole your armor and manual, you are not a good person. I took them away from you so that you would not create more trouble. It has always been good versus evil since the dawn of time. You're with the Eternal Life Palace, and I'm from the Emei sect. We shall not have anything to do with each other in the future," she mumbled to herself. Her expression was determined, yet she felt a little melancholic.

Finally, after a long time, the ship docked at Donghai City's port. Once she alighted, she immediately hailed a taxi to her master.

Darby Mansion's backyard.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was sitting in the pavilion in the Darby Mansion's backyard. She had a letter from the Emei Sect Master in her hand.

Previously, Elysium Gate's Indomitable Darby used

Weak Poison to capture followers from the Six orthodox sects. It enraged them. They gathered together in Donghai City to discuss how to destroy Elysium Gate once and for all.

However, the Emei Sect Master could not attend. She needed to cultivate in seclusion as it was a crucial moment for her. She instructed Abbess Mother Serendipity to go on her behalf.

"Master..."

Megan quickly entered the backyard. Megan was surprised and overwhelmed, quickly burying herself in her master's arms.

"Master, I thought I would not be able to see you again!" Megan cried, looking jaded and tired. The Abbess' heart ached for her. She patted Megan's head and asked, "Megan, what happened? Tell me, where have you been for the past two days? Were you busy at work?"

"No, I resigned a long time ago." Megan bit her lip.

Upon mentioning that she was captured on the Eternal Life Island, Megan was overcome with emotion. She cried and retold her account of how she was captured by the Eternal Life Palace sect.

When she finished, she wiped her tears and bit her lip. "Master, you were right. Darryl does have a

relationship with the Eternal Life Palace! No wonder he saved the Golden Lion during the Slaughtering Lion Conference. He's scum!" she cried.

Chapter 580

As she heard Megan berate Darryl, she smiled. "You've finally come to your senses. I am happy. I have told you before that Darryl is a piece of filth."

Abbess Mother Serendipity frowned. "One Darby is an Eternal Life Palace member, another is Elysium Gate's Indomitable Darby. These two Darbys are pests of our world."

Megan did not say anything, only nodding in agreement.

The Abbess patted Megan's shoulder. "The Eternal Life Palace needs to be destroyed, of course, but we have an even more important matter now. The Six orthodox sects have gathered at Hexad's to discuss the Judgement Day plan. Come with me tomorrow."

Judgement Day? Megan was confused.

Abbess Mother Serendipity grinned. "The Judgement Day plan is a scheme to destroy Elysium Gate. Its Sect Master, Indomitable Darby, has insulted the Six sects. We have to get our revenge by destroying their sect!"

The most humiliating thing was that Indomitable Darby forced her to get married to Wudang Sect's

Master Leonard at the Wishing Star Tower, right in front of their peers.

The thought of it enraged her! She had to kill Indomitable Darby with her own hands!

"Master, I'll follow along to discuss how to get rid of Elysium Gate," Megan declared.

Abbess Mother Serendipity beamed with joy. " Megan, you are Emei's Senior Sister. You must remember, you have to know the good from evil, and always stand for the good," she advised. "The future of the Emei sect is on you and your peers' shoulders."

Megan was touched that Abbess Mother Serendipity rooted for her. "Don't worry, Master. I will do my absolute best to make the Emei sect proud!" she cheered excitedly.

Back on the Eternal Life Island, Darryl and Dax did not sleep the entire night.

Chester hugged Adina one last time before he buried her at the back of the hill. He slept in front of her grave the entire night.

In just one day, Callum Webb and Adina had left him. He was in total despair. It rained the entire night. The following morning, the servants found him completely passed out with a high fever at the

back of the hill.

They quickly flagged down two doctors to treat Chester. He woke up after they gave him some medicine.

Dax and Darryl visited Chester. He looked tired and haggard as he laid on the bed. Their hearts ached for him as they could only bid their farewell to Chester and leave Eternal Life Island. They initially agreed that the three of them were to go to Donghai City to get the Phoenix Pill from Leroy Henderson. However, after Adina's death, Chester was in despair. Darryl did not dare bring it up again.

Before leaving the island, Darryl boarded the huge ship and sat on the deck. He made a phone call to Zephyr.

Zephyr answered politely, "Master."

Darryl let out a long breath. He asked, "Where is the Kunlun Sect Master now?"

Zephyr answered immediately, "Master, Leroy Henderson has been in Hexad's the past few days."

Before Darryl could hang up, Zephyr added, " Master, yesterday, I led a bunch of followers and destroyed the Spirit Flame Sect. They were the scum of Serene City, doing evil and causing chaos! The Hall Master was a pervert and a gambling addict

who did many degrading acts and extorted people for money. So, I killed him on the spot. I could only let you know now since we spent the last night cleaning up the place. Please forgive me!"

"What did you do wrong?" Darryl smiled. " Remember, next time, all acts of purging evil don't have to go through me. Do it boldly!"

"Yes, Master!" Zephyr answered politely.

Darryl and Zephyr got up to speed with each others' situations before they hung up.

Chapter 581

Not long after, Dax's face was filled with joy as he stepped out from the ship cabin.

Darryl could feel that Dax's energy had gotten stronger again.

"Dax, have you upgraded to a Level Two Martial Saint?" He asked excitedly.

Dax nodded. That was right—ever since he left the Eternal Life Island, he had the feeling that he would upgrade soon. After a short cultivation, his energy improved again and was elevated to a Level Two Martial Saint!

When Callum transferred his internal energy to Dax, Callum had told him that he would experience a vast improvement in himself over the next year, much faster than an average human. Dax did not expect he would be upgraded to Level Two Martial Saint in such a short time!

"Darryl, did you manage to find out where the Kunlun Sect Master, Leroy Henderson, was hiding?" Dax asked with a hearty laugh.

Dax was angry about the incident with Yvonne. He wanted to get the Phoenix Pill for Darryl no matter

what.

Darryl smiled and replied, "He is at The Hexad School."

"Let's go then." Dax put his arms around Darryl's shoulder as both smiled at each other while looking towards the sea.

Both students' orientation and graduation ceremony were held in the Hexad School's hall.

However, although the hall was filled, none of them were students. The thousands of people seated in the hall were elite members of the community. All the sects and families were gathered there to discuss the plan to destroy the Elysium Gate!

What? The Spirit Flame Sect from the Serene City was conquered by the Elysium Gate too? It started to become chaotic, with everyone having their own conversations.

The Spirit Flame Sect was a rather established and influential Sect in Serene City.

At that moment, Jean from the younger generation of the Emei Sect whispered something to Abbess Mother Serendipity.

In an instant, Abbess Mother Serendipity smiled. " Everyone, do not be worried. I have just received the news that the Elysium Gate members retreated

to their headquarters after conquering the Spirit Flame Sect. Their headquarters is located at the previous Darby residence. We can go to their headquarters and settle this once and for all!"

"Great!"

Everyone smiled excitedly when they heard about the plan.

Bang!

Suddenly, someone kicked open the hall's main door, causing a loud boom!

Two people swiftly rushed into the hall.

It was Darryl and Dax.

They both looked at each other, completely stunned.

Sh*t! What was going on?

Both of them were there after the Phoenix Pill. They thought that only Kunlun Sect members were there. They did not expect to open the door to find all the Six Sects, and a dozen over other smaller sects—like the Beggars' Sect and Island of Peach Blossom—there too!

Everyone in the hall was stunned too.

What were the two guys there for? When Darryl crashed the wedding ceremony earlier, Abbess

Mother Serendipity had severed Darryl's nerve and pulse. Everyone heard about the news! However, everyone could feel Darryl's energy. He did not become disabled—he had upgraded to a Martial Saint!

Both of them—a useless man and a brainless rich guy belonged to the same kind.

Abbess Mother Serendipity stood and pointed at Darryl, "Darryl, you useless man! How dare you appear here?" She looked around and exclaimed, " You all may not have heard, but Darryl has joined the Eternal Life Palace Sect. Ask my student Megan, if you don't believe me."

Chapter 582

"Wow!" Everyone started discussing among themselves.

Did Darryl join the Eternal Life Palace Sect? How could he, when he was such a useless man?

Everyone looked towards Abbess Mother Serendipity and Megan.

Megan nodded. She bit her teeth and stepped forward. "My master is right. Darryl joined the Eternal Life Palace Sect. Just two days ago, I was abducted by their followers. I saw Darryl there, but not as an ordinary member—he was the Hall Master."

"Nonsense!"

Graham Potter—the Hexad School's principal—slammed the table. He stood up to point at Darryl and shouted, "You are such rubbish! How could the Hexad School have a student like you?"

"Don't speak like an idiot, just get rid of him since he is here!"

"Yes, he deserved to be killed since he can't differentiate the good from the bad!"

Everyone pointed at Darryl, scolding and cursing at him!

Darryl ignored all the scolding. He was just there to get the Phoenix Pill from Leroy! Darryl became too furious when he looked at Megan, and his body trembled. "Megan, you killed lady at the Eternal Life Island, is that right?"

Darryl was very emotional when he remembered how heartbroken Chester was. He clutched his fist tightly.

"That's right. It was me," Megan replied coldly. " That lady claimed that she was the new Cult Mistress. I killed her for the benefit of the community."

Until then, Megan did not regret what she had done.

Darryl felt as if his heart was ripped out of his chest. "Who gave you the right to kill her? What right do you have?" he shouted.

"She is the Cult Mistress of the Eternal Life Palace. She deserved to die!" Megan bit her lips, "You may ask the opinion of all the elders here, did I do anything wrong?"

"Megan, you did the right thing!"

"Yes, you are doing a favor for the community.!"

After hearing what everyone had said, Dax could not stand it anymore. He exploded, "All of you claim to be honorable, but haha, what a joke! You killed someone, and you claimed it was for the benefit of the community. What a great excuse—bullsh*t! You are nothing more than a bunch of devilish people."

Wow! Everyone was furious!

Many of them stood and scolded while pointing at Dax.

"What did you just say?"

"Who do you think you are to comment about us? Do you want to die too?"

"Darryl, I was wrong to think that you are a good person," she scoffed, "now I know what a devil you are!"

Darryl replied, "Megan, the feeling is mutual. I was blind before this. I will never forgive you for murdering Adina in my entire life. I shall deal with you about this later."

Darryl turned and glared at Leroy.

"Leroy, I am here for just one purpose. Hand over the Phoenix Pill, and I will forget about the past. Otherwise, it would be a life and death matter

between us!"

What?

Was he threatening the Kunlun Sect Master?

Everyone was in shock. They thought that they had misheard Darryl's words.

Leroy chuckled, "Young man, how arrogant. Do you know about the Phoenix Pill? It is the Kunlun Sect's treasure that has been passed on for thousands of generations. You were lucky to be able to escape the other time. Today, since you are here, I shall capture you to be handed to Abbess Mother Serendipity. You want the Phoenix Pill? You must be looking for death!"

Chapter 583

"Sect Master Henderson, don't waste your time on him. Catch him!" Abbess Mother Serendipity snarled. She leaned forward and leaped towards Darryl with her sword in her hands. "If we are not able to capture him alive, kill him!"

Just as she finished her words, Abbess Mother Serendipity's sword had reached Darryl's chest!

Darryl held his fist tight and released his anger. The blood drinking sword appeared right at that moment across his chest, blocking the attack from Abbess Mother Serendipity!

Cling!

When the two swords met, it caused a loud crash. Darryl recoiled a few steps back from the blade as fresh blood sprayed out of his mouth!

Although Darryl's power had reached Level One Martial Saint, he was still not a match for Abbess Mother Serendipity. She was a Level Five Martial Saint for a few years. Her power was way beyond Darryl!

Bang!

Abbess Mother Serendipity raised her arms slowly,

and her intense internal energy engulfed the entire hall!

"Ten Miles Green Lily!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity said the four words slowly.

The next moment, the air in front of her was divided. Hundreds of green lilies appeared, completely surrounding her. All the lilies were generated from her internal energy.

Swish!

A few hundred green lilies started trembling in just a short moment with all the petals dropping, floating in the air. Each of the petals transformed into a sharp blade. Thousands of blades flew towards Darryl.

"Die, you monster!" Abbess Mother Serendipity shouted coldly.

Swish! Swish!

The thousands of sharp blades sped towards Darryl.

Darryl was stunned. That was the first time he had witnessed the special technique of Abbess Mother Serendipity. He had never thought that it would be so dark!

In the blink of an eye, Darryl was sweating

profusely with his sweat dripping all over!

There was no way he could hide from the thousands of blades that came from all directions.

"Darryl!" Dax immediately blocked Darryl and raised his right arm, creating a shield.

Dang! Dang!

The blades knocked on the shield, creating loud bangs.

Although Dax was already a Level Two Martial Saint, he was still stunned by Abbess Mother Serendipity's power. How dark could she be?

"Darryl, hide!" Dax shouted. After he managed to shield Darryl from all the blades, he charged towards Abbess Mother Serendipity with his massive ax in his hand.

Dax had a plan in mind to injure Abbess Mother Serendipity and hold her as a hostage to obtain the Phoenix Pill.

Abbess Mother Serendipity did not expect Dax to have upgraded to Level Two Master Saint. Dax's ax landed on her waist!

Bang!

Dax did not expect Abbess Mother Serendipity to be unharmed. He was pushed back a few steps.

What just happened? Darryl was puzzled. He quickly gathered his thoughts.

It was the Celestial Silkworm Armor. Abbess Mother Serendipity was wearing the Celestial Silkworm Armor!

Chapter 584

"Megan!" Darryl shouted with bloodshot eyes. " You were the one who stole the Supreme Mystery Scripture and the Celestial Silkworm Armor!"

The entire time, Darryl thought Evelyn was the one who stole them as she and her friends were the ones feeding him with alcohol the whole night. Never did he ever think that it was Megan!

"That's right, I took them," Megan replied. "This is funny. When the Master asked me to take the Supreme Mystery Scripture the other day, I felt so guilty and sorry for you. I felt like such a fool."

"Megan!"

Darryl clenched his fist tightly. He was furious!

"Stop wasting time, die!" Leroy raised his wrist and held out the Crescent Moon Blade. He charged towards Dax.

Over twenty members simultaneously charged towards them. All of them surrounded Dax and Darryl!

Dang!

Darryl's Blood Drinking Sword was swaying all

over, but he could not defend himself against so many people. Someone sliced through Darryl's back, and fresh blood oozed out. Darryl held on, not making a sound.

He regretted being there. He thought that it was only Leroy and the Kunlun Sect in the hall. With Dax upgraded to Level Two Martial Saint, he would easily defeat Leroy with Darryl's help. Who knew there were so many people gathered at the hall.

In just less than a minute, Darryl had dozens of cuts. Fresh blood was seeping out all over his body.

Dax fought like crazy and chopped around seven or eight people with his ax. Leroy punched him in the chest, and he fell backward towards Darryl.

"Brother Dax, it is all my fault," Darryl sighed.

"Rubbish, we are in this together!" Dax continued, " If we were to die here today, we shall kill with joy!"

"Great!" Darryl shouted. Both of them charged against the rest again.

Dang! Dang!

Darryl could not remember how long he had fought and how many cuts were on his body. He was entirely covered in blood, feeling the stinging pain all over his limbs, back, chest—all over his body!

Suddenly, a sword pierced through Darryl's

shoulder!

Darryl dropped to the ground and felt his energy drain out.

Leroy hit Dax, and he fell backward. Abbess Mother Serendipity stood right behind him and pierced through his abdomen.

Dax shouted and fell to the floor.

"Dax!" Darryl shouted. He wanted to go to Dax, but before he could stand up, countless people started to charge towards them, wielding shining blades and

swords.

Would they both die there? Darryl was furious.

"Die!" Leroy shouted while charging his blade towards Darryl.

"Dax, I am sorry. It is all my fault." Darryl clenched his fist. He closed his eyes, feeling completely hopeless.

Chapter 585

Bang!

Right at the most critical moment, a dagger hit Leroy's blade. With a loud crash, Leroy fell backward.

"Who dares to interrupt?" Leroy shouted.

He looked towards the door and saw more than ten shadows rushing towards them. All of them were dressed from top to toe in black, looking fierce. They were Yvette's Twelve Royal Guards!

"It's you!" Everyone was stunned. Earlier, they were poisoned with the Weak Poison and held captive by the Twelve Royal Guards at the Wishing Star Tower. Everyone had thought that they were Indomitable Darby's followers.

The Royal Rat Guard went towards Darryl. "Mister Darby, my princess sent us here to save you. We will rescue you from here," he reassured. "Don't worry, no one can cause you any further harm with us here."

Darryl was stunned. Why would Yvette send someone to rescue him? However, he did not think further. He nodded to the Royal Rat Guard and went

to help Dax.

Darryl held Dax and stepped forward. "Leroy, I'll only say this once more. Hand over the Phoenix Pill!"

"Phoenix Pill?" Leroy glared at them, "Rubbish! Don't you dare think of the Phoenix Pill!"

"You have absorbed Yvonne's spirit energy. Only the Phoenix Pill would be able to save her. I am asking you one last time, are you going to hand over the Phoenix Pill or not?" Darryl growled and clenched his teeth.

What?

Everyone was in shock. They turned to look at Leroy.

There was only one technique of absorbing spirit energy in this world—the Dark Method. However, the method was lost many generations ago. How would Leroy possess the method?

Leroy maintained a dark expression. He could not let anyone know that he cultivated the Dark Method.

"You rubbish, what nonsense!" He spat at Darryl. " Miss Young's incident had nothing to do with me. The Phoenix Pill is the treasure of the Kunlun Sect. How could I give it to you? Go to hell!"

Leroy lifted his blade again to charge towards

Darryl, bypassing the Royal Rat Guard.

The Royal Rat Guard held Darryl and Dax in each arm and sprinted away from the hall. Once they were outside, he leaped forward and took Darryl and Dax with him. They flew up in the air and left the Hexad School.

"Leroy! You did not give me the Phoenix Pill. I will kill you!" Darryl shouted as loud as he could while he was in the air. His voice was coarse.

All he could think of was Yvonne. Yvonne would die without the Phoenix Pill.

"Rubbish! How dare you ask for the Phoenix Pill?" Leroy stepped out of the hall and pointed in the air towards Darryl.

"Fine, fine, fine!" Darryl's eyes were all red. Using his internal energy, he roared, "Leroy! In three days, I shall destroy the Kunlun Sect and the entire Kunlun Mountain!"

Darryl's thundering roar was heard all over Donghai City. Everyone in the hall went silent. A few seconds later, some people burst into laughter.

"Haha! What rubbish is he talking about? He wants to destroy Kunlun Sect? Haha!"

"Yes, he is only a Master Saint! Haha!"

"Master Henderson, did you hear him? The piece of

trash said he wanted to destroy the Kunlun Sect! Haha!"

Everyone was laughing. Leroy could not help but chuckle. "He is crazy. Let's ignore him. He is just a clown. The most important thing now is to discuss how to destroy the Elysium Gate."

No one took Darryl's words seriously, the words from a man who almost died. What a joke.

Chapter 586

Darryl and Dax were brought to a private residence in the north of Donghai City by the Twelve Royal Guards.

The place was huge. With the man-made fountain in its peaceful environment, it was comparable with the Carter Mansion.

At the main hall door, the Royal Rat Guard announced, "Princess, we have rescued them."

The Royal Rat Guard placed Darryl and Dax on the floor. Dax was seriously injured and still unconscious. Darryl rushed over to check his vitals. Knowing that he was safe, Darryl sighed in relief.

A lady in tight jeans and stilettos walked into the hall. She looked amazing. It was Yvette!

Back in the New World, Yvette was a princess who wore silk gowns. In the Earth Universe, she looked even more attractive in modern clothing. All the Twelve Royal Guards were amazed too.

"Good. You may leave with Dax and give him the necessary treatments," Yvette ordered.

"Yes," The Twelve Royal Guards answered. They

left with Dax.

Only Darryl and Yvette were at the hall. They looked at each other silently.

Darryl finally sighed after not knowing how much time had passed. "How did you know that Dax and I were in danger? Why did you rescue us?"

Darryl was cautious since Yvette was the princess of the New World.

Yvette smiled and did not reply directly. "Darryl, be fair. Shouldn't you be thanking me for saving you? Why are you questioning me?"

Ever since Yvette arrived at the Earth Universe, she had been following the main sects' whereabouts. Of course, she knew Darryl and Dax were heading to the Hexad School.

"Yes, thank you very much," Darryl acknowledged.

Darryl's body was all covered with blood. He was trying hard to hang on with countless wounds all over his body.

"Darry, being bullied by the main sects feels horrible, doesn't it?" Yvette smiled.

She scanned Darryl as she spoke, "Oh no, it's such a pity how terrible you look."

Darryl smiled but did not say a word.

Yvette stepped closer and whispered into Darryl's ears, "I have a way to prevent you from being bullied ever again. If the Elysium Gate were to join the New World, I shall give you the title of Master of Martial Art Community. You will conquer the whole community. What do you think?"

Yvette looked at Darryl anxiously after she finished speaking.

Darryl shrugged. He felt uneasy having Yvette whispering into his ears.

Darryl replied with a smile. "Yvette, you have overestimated me. What luck do I have to be recognized by the New World? Besides, I worship freedom, so I am not used to being controlled by others. I am sorry." He sounded extremely determined.

Yvette was disappointed. "Darryl, did you know plenty of people became rich and famous after joining the New World? Besides, you still owe me a favor from when I rescued Yvonne earlier. You said you would agree to whatever my request is. I am now requesting you to join the New World."

Sigh.

Darryl clenched his fist tightly after he heard that. He was silent for over five minutes before he spoke.

"Sorry, I can't do it. I can do whatever you ask me to, but I will never betray the World Universe. You have to ask for something else. I shall agree if you want to take my life."

Chapter 587

"You!"

Yvette was furious. "You do not appreciate the chances given to you. You want to offer your life? Fine, you shall die then."

She shoved a dagger into Darryl's hand.

Yvette did not mean to execute him; she was just furious.

Darryl pleaded sourly. "Princess, please allow me to die two days later."

Yvonne was still waiting for him to rescue her. He could not die before getting the Phoenix Pill.

"You!" Yvette's face was scarlet red as she stomped her feet. "You owe me a favor, hence I have asked you to join the New World in return, but you have rejected. I gave you an option to die, yet you disagree. You are the Sect Master of the Elysium Gate, and you are also the one not keeping your word."

Darryl felt conflicted. "I declared that I would destroy the Kunlun Sect in three days," he explained, "After I obtain the Phoenix Pill and

rescue Yvonne, I am all yours. You can kill me then. I will never go back on my words."

What?

Yvette was stunned for a few seconds before she burst into laughter.

"Darryl, are you crazy? Although the Elysium Gate's power improved substantially recently, you only have a few thousand followers. Kunlun Sect has thousands of years and generations of history, with tens of thousands of followers. How would Elysium Gate be able to destroy Kunlun Sect?"

Yvette laughed again. How childish and foolish could Darryl be?

Darryl was not affected by her words. He smiled calmly and assured, "You don't have to worry about that. The most important thing is that after I destroy the Kunlun Sect and rescue Yvonne, I will agree with whatever demands you have."

"What a lie!" Yvette exclaimed, but she did not want to discuss it further. "This place here is safe. Both Dax and you can take a good rest here to recover," she calmly offered, "You can stay here since you are Lilybud's husband. Also, these spiritual herbs would help you to recover."

A bunch of herbs appeared in Yvette's hand. They

looked red and fresh.

Darryl sighed in relief. He smiled and took the spiritual herbs. "Thank you, Princess."

It was best for them to stay put since Dax was still unconscious.

The private residence was massive and had many rooms. Darryl would be staying in one of the guestrooms. Once he arrived in his room, he quickly took out his cellphone and sent Chester a text.

A simple text that read, 'Brother Chester, help me to destroy Kunlun.'

Darryl went on to sleep after he sent the text.

The entire residence was in complete silence in the middle of the night. Darryl was in deep sleep when he heard a knock on the door.

Darryl ran towards the door quickly, hoping that it was Dax.

Darryl was surprised to see Yvette at the door instead. She looked alluring under the moonlight.

"Princess, is there anything I can do for you?" Darryl asked. Why was she there in the middle of the night?

Yvette entered the room with a smile and locked the door behind her. She bit her lip as she asked, "

Darryl, back at the Wishing Star Tower earlier, how did you alter the formation to make me itch all over my body? Can you... can you teach me, please?"

Chapter 588

Yvette bit her lips hard. Previously at the Wishing Star Tower, Darryl modified the formation. It caused her body to itch all over, to the extent that she needed to beg for his forgiveness. That was a powerful technique.

Yvette wanted to learn it from Darryl earlier when she saved Yvonne, but Darryl was not in the right mood, hence she had yet to ask him. Earlier, Yvette recalled the incident and set up the Six Energy Trap again using some logs. However, she still could not figure out Darryl's modification on the trap formation. She had no choice but to ask Darryl.

Darryl smiled. "Princess, I can't teach you about the formation."

Darryl was impressed by Yvette's eagerness to learn. He might have taught her if she was not the Princess of the New World.

Yvette was worried. She squeezed her brows and asked, "Why?"

How could Darryl repeatedly reject all her requests? She would have ordered the Twelve Royal Guards to kill him had he not been Lilybud's husband.

Darryl smiled and looked earnestly at Yvette. "This is because you are the Princess of the New World. If I taught you about the formation, you might use it against people in the Earth Universe someday. I will then be doing wrong to the whole Earth Universe."

Yvette was furious and speechless.

Why did Darryl still care about the Earth Universe when the community had treated him so terribly? Was he out of his mind?

Yvette sighed, "How are you so selfish? Just teach me. I will promise you that I will never use it against the Earth Universe. Will that be fine? I am just curious to know."

Yvette looked at Darryl anxiously.

Darryl sighed and smiled. "Fine. I will teach you since you are sincere. However, I have one condition."

Yvette had forced Darryl to agree to return a favor for saving Yvonne earlier. Now that Yvette requested something else, he must use the opportunity to return the favor to get out of the agreement.

Darryl had an evil smile. Yvette bit her lips and asked, "What are you laughing at? What is your condition for you to teach me? As long as it is

within my capability, I will agree."

She could see that Darryl was up to something bad, but she was too curious about the Six Energy trap modification.

"Will you agree to anything?" Darryl asked.

At that moment, Darryl saw some black patches on Yvette's face from the logs in the garden just now. Darryl pointed to his own face and signaled Yvette to wipe her face.

Ah!

When Yvette saw Darryl's action, her body shivered. Her face turned red as she felt shy and angry.

'What is he thinking? Is he asking me to kiss his cheek?' Yvette thought, 'I am the Princess of the New World; how could he ask me to do that?'

However, Yvette was really desperate to learn about the modification of the formation. She had no idea that she had misunderstood Darryl.

Yvette's face was scarlet red as she kept her eyes locked on Darryl. He was confused as to what she was up to.

All of a sudden, Yvette walked over to Darryl. She tip-toed and lightly kissed Darryl on the cheek.

Yvette's face was burning red. She dared not look up

at Darryl.

Sh*t! What was that for?

Darryl's mind went blank. He looked at Yvette but was speechless.

Sh*t, she just kissed him. This Princess of the New World was wild!

Darryl's head was spinning. He looked puzzled. " What are you doing?"

Yvette was furious seeing Darryl's innocent face. She stomped her feet and questioned, "Didn't you just ask me to kiss you?"

How could he pretend that nothing had happened? Yvette stomped hard on Darryl's foot.

Ouch!

Darryl gasped and jumped in shock. "I didn't ask you to kiss me! Go, look at the mirror. There is a black smudge on your face. I pointed at my face to ask you to wipe yours. What were you thinking?"

'You!'

Yvette turned and walked towards the mirror. Her face was burning red! She wanted to dig a hole and hide in it!

Chapter 589

'That was what Darryl meant. What was I thinking? How embarrassing is this?!' Yvette thought.

"Darryl, you..." Yvette stared at the floor and kicked Darryl. "Are you going to teach me or not?"

"Fine, fine. I will teach you." Darryl held back his laughter as he nodded.

If he were to reject her again, Yvette would be furious.

Darryl started to share about the formation while both of them headed to the garden. He taught her all about the formation modification.

Yvette was smart; she managed to pick up the idea immediately. She was so happy that she had forgotten entirely about the embarrassing incident earlier.

After they were done, Darryl went back to the room. His cellphone rang when he was lying on the bed about to fall asleep. It was Zephyr.

Zephyr's trembling voice came through after the call connected. "Sect Master, we're in trouble. I have just received news that all of the sects

gathered around tens of thousands of their followers and are headed towards the Elysium Gate. What shall we do?"

Zephyr sounded panicked. The number of followers was ten or more times greater than the members of Elysium Gate. How could they defend themselves?

Darryl squeezed his brows and explained, "It's fine. Don't panic. I will tell you what to do..."

A few minutes later—after listening to Darryl's plan—Zephyr sounded relieved and impressed. "Sect Master, you are brilliant. Haha! Let the Six Sects suffer this time!"

Darryl smiled and gave some advice before he hung up the call.

In Yunzhou City, tens of thousands of followers led by the Six Sects surrounded the Elysium Gate Main Altar, ready to attack.

All of them believed that they had outnumbered the Elysium Gate, hence they would definitely be able to destroy the sect! However, they did not notice there were many Heaven Energy Trees around the main altar. The trees were moved there overnight from the hill.

In fact, the trees were part of a formation. Darryl had passed the knowledge to Zephyr yesterday on

forming the Ten Directions Godly Formation. The formation was recorded in the Bai Qi Formation, immensely powerful and enchanted.

Nobody noticed anything and stepped right into it. As expected, all of them were lost and trapped in the formation. The members of Elysium Gate then took the opportunity and launched their attack towards those in the formation.

The battle lasted over half a day. All of the sect members suffered injuries. They lost one-fifth of the tens of thousands of followers.

After that experience, they did not pursue to attack further. The Elysium Gate members hid inside the altar. There was the formation outside the altar. There was no way the six sects would be able to attack them.

They could only wait for the Elysium Gate members to leave the altar to destroy them. However, there was no sign of any of the Elysium Gate members heading out, so the group had no choice but to leave after waiting impatiently.

The Elysium Gate became famous after that battle! Everyone heard about how the Six Sects joined forces but were defeated by the Elysium Gate. More and more people came from all over to join the sect.

Meanwhile, in the Carter family, Sara played on the

swing with several young ladies chatting and laughing at the hut nearby. All of them were her friends. She had invited them over as the weather was great.

Sara—while swinging up and down—chimed in excitedly, "Did you hear about what happened yesterday? The Six Sects joined forces to destroy the Elysium Gate, but they were all trapped in the formation set by them in the end. The Elysium Gate trounced the Six Sects easily."

She cheered admirably, "How powerful is the Elysium Gate?!"

The rest of the ladies nodded in agreement together.

"Yes, that's right. A few thousand of them had defeated the tens of thousands of followers from the Six Sects. How incredible."

"I heard about that too. The formation by the Elysium Gate was incredible—even the Six Sects were trapped!"

The news on the Elysium Gate defeating the Six Sects had spread all throughout the community.

An elegant lady strolled towards them, holding a fruit platter. "Girls, what are you all talking about?"

The elegant lady was Darryl's godmother, Susan Creek.

"Mother!" Sara smiled and walked over to hold Susan's arm. "Mother, we were talking about the Elysium Gate. Do you happen to know Indomitable Darby, the Elysium Gate's Sect Master?"

"No, I don't know such a famous person." Susan smiled.

Susan heard the news about the attack. The Elysium Gate used the Ten Gold Formation to defeat them. Although she did some research on formations, the Ten Gold Formation was way too advanced.

Sara admired the Indomitable Darby very much. How nice would it be if the Indomitable Darby was her brother? He would be able to teach her all about formations.

Chapter 590

On the other hand, Darryl had fully recovered after resting for an entire night and day at Yvette's residence.

He had received the news in the morning about Elysium Gate defeating the rest of the sects. All of them had left. That was what Darryl had expected—no ordinary person would be able to break the Ten Directions Formation.

After hearing the news, he left a message to Zephyr and instructed him to gather all the followers to head to the Kunlun Mountain.

The original plan was to destroy the Kunlun Sect in three days. It was only the second day when Darryl decided to bring everyone to explore the Kunlun mountain. They would wait for Chester's arrival there, and together they would attack the Kunlun mountain.

Darryl and Dax bid farewell to Yvette in the morning and left the private residence. Dax had almost recovered from his injury. He was so excited about the battle that he spent the entire morning polishing his ax.

In the rural area of Donghai City, the few thousands

of Elysium Gate members had gathered in the afternoon and waited for some time. Finally, Darryl and Dax were spotted walking towards them.

"Greetings, Sect Master!"

All of the members spoke together with their voices as loud as thunder. Zephyr was carrying a ten feet tall Nine Dragons Justice Flag. It looked grand and impressive.

Dax was stunned by what was in front of him. " Darryl, you are Indomitable Darby?"

Darryl had never mentioned the formation of the Elysium Gate to Dax. He was so surprised that he punched Darryl.

"Sh*t! How unexpectable! I want to start a new Sect too!"

Among the three of them, Chester was the Eternal Life Palace Sect Master, and Darryl was the Elysium Gate Sect Master. He needed a sect for himself too!

"Dax, you can form a Sect named Flower Mountain," Darryl laughed, "Just like the Monkey King."

"Bullsh*t!" Dax laughed, patting Darryl's shoulder as they embarked on their journey. They led thousands of Elysium Gate members behind them as they headed towards the Kunlun Mountain.

In Donghai City, Lily sat on the couch in the mansion. She had been upset the past few days. Her heart shattered into pieces when she heard the news about Darryl and Yvonne's wedding ceremony,

She could not accept the fact that they had a wedding.

Who was she if Yvonne was Darryl's wife?

Earlier, Lily left the concert in anger, and Darryl did not stop her. Since then, Darryl had not returned home and did not even call.

Whenever Lily went into the room and saw Yvonne lying there, she could not help but feel bitter.

"Lily Bud, bring me some water. I am so tired." Samantha opened the door and walked in.

A fortnight ago, Grandmother Lyndon had organized a tour event. Samantha was asked to help out due to a manpower shortage. The tour event made a lot of money, and Samantha got a big bonus. She was delighted.

Chapter 591

Lily forced a smile and poured some water for Samantha.

"Dear, what's wrong?" Samantha asked after she noticed Lily's sour face.

Samantha had been puzzled as to why Lily had been upset for the past few days.

Lily could not hide it anymore. She hugged Samantha and cried, "Mother, what shall I do..."

Samantha was stunned. She patted Lily's shoulder and asked, "Dear, what happened? Tell me..."

"Mother, Darryl... He married Yvonne..."

Lily did not intend to tell Samantha about it, but she felt too overwhelmed. She poured out everything that had happened.

What?

Samantha's face changed immediately. She threw her purse on the couch and scolded, "Darryl, that useless man! Eating off my family for three years, living in my family mansion, and my daughter still treated him well. How dare he find another woman outside? And Yvonne, the Young family's daughter,

how ashamed can she be?"

In Donghai City, everyone wished to build a relationship with Yvonne. The Young family was in the antique business. More often than not, the elite societies would always get antiques as gifts.

Samantha also wished to have a relationship with Yvonne. However, no matter who she was, no one could bully her daughter! To rub salt to the wound, Yvonne was staying in her mansion.

How ridiculous was that?

Samantha was furious when she looked at Lily, "I have told you to divorce that useless man a long time ago to find a better man. You refused to listen. You insisted on being with such a worthless man!"

Samantha angrily stomped upstairs. "I thought Miss Young was a rather decent person earlier. Now I know how cheap she is! She knew the useless one is married. How dare she seduce him and now stay in my mansion?"

Lily quickly stopped Samantha. "Calm down, Mother. Yvonne is still unconscious."

Lily felt terrible, but she just wanted to share her feelings with her mother, not chase Yvonne away.

Samantha was seething and trembling. "Dear, why do you care for Yvonne? Is there something wrong

with your mind? She is only unconscious, not dead! She should just stay unconscious at her own home. What is she doing in our home?"

Samantha pushed Lily aside and stormed into Darryl 's room.

Bang! The room door opened wide. Yvonne laid motionless on the bed.

Samantha shouted, "You shameless woman, get out of here!"

Samantha took out her cellphone and dialed a friend 's number. She had planned to send Yvonne home. At the same time, she wanted to ask Kingston how he raised such a daughter!

After ending her call, Samantha saw three silver needles on Yvonne's arm and removed them without a second thought. They would be a hassle when she arranged to move her into the car.

She threw away the silver needles and walked out of the room. "Dear, you don't have to think about it anymore," she reassured Lily. "My friend will come and I will send this woman back to the Young family. On top of that, you must divorce Darryl this time. Otherwise, don't bother calling me your mother."

Samantha was enraged.

‘How dare this useless Darryl bring another woman back to my home? Lily should not be bullied by you!” Samantha thought.

Chapter 592

"Mom, stop saying that," Lily whispered.

"Why should I stop? Yvonne is from a well-known family in Donghai City. How can she be so cheap?" Samantha continued, "She has so many admirers, but she had to steal someone else's husband. How cheap!"

Samantha went to the safe and dug out Lily's marriage certificates, identification cards, and many other documents. She threw them on the couch and snarled, "You are getting a divorce, do you hear me? I shall announce how cheap that Yvonne is to the entire Donghai City; let them know about how low she is!"

Samantha blew her top. She sat on the couch, crossed her legs, and continued to scold Lily.

Yvonne had gained consciousness while she was in Darryl's room. She could hear the conversation between Samantha and Lily clearly.

Previously, Yvette put the silver needles in Yvonne's arm to extend her life. She explained that Yvonne would awaken once they were removed. She would return to her previous condition, and she could only

live for another three hours.

When the silver needles were removed, Yvonne was pale and weak.

Yvonne almost cried when she heard the conversation outside the room. She had never been criticized in such a manner her whole life. However, all those were no longer important. She could only live for another three hours.

Yvonne felt conflicted. All she wanted was to see Darryl for one last time. After some thought, she took out her cellphone and dialed Darryl's number. Tears flowed down her cheeks like a stream.

On the other hand, Darryl and Dax had led Elysium Gate members to the bottom of Kunlun Mountain. Darryl waited patiently there to observe the situation instead of rushing up the mountain. As planned, they would wait for Chester to arrive along with the Eternal Life Palace Sect members. Only then would they attack the Kunlun Sect.

While waiting quietly, Dax joked, "Darry, since when did you win Yvonne's heart? I never knew."

"Honestly, who is more important to you? Lily or Yvonne?"

Dax was puzzled. Both Lily and Yvonne were famous goddesses of Donghai City.

Darry smiled bitterly and shook his head. "This is... Sh*t! Why should I tell you?" Darryl asked, "Since when did you become a busybody?"

Just as he spoke, Darryl's cellphone rang.

It was all quiet in the woods while everyone was waiting. The cellphone ringtone surprised them. It was awkward.

Darryl reached for his cellphone immediately as he thought it was Chester. That could not be right. The distance between Eternal Life Island and Kunlun Mountain was a few thousand miles. How could Chester have already arrived?

Darryl looked at his cellphone and was shocked to see the name on the screen. It was Yvonne.

Yvonne?

Darryl's head started spinning, and his body trembled. He answered the call. "Yvonne, you..."

Before he could finish, Yvonne spoke, "Darryl, where are you? I am awake."

Yvonne forced a smile to make herself sound cheerful.

Darryl panicked as if he was struck by lightning. His eyes were all red as he rambled worriedly, "Yvonne, what happened? What is going on? Tell me, who

removed the silver needles?"

Chapter 593

On the other end, Yvonne's face was covered with tears. She did not cry out loud, worried that Darryl would be in despair.

She dried her tears and pretended to be calm. " Darryl, perhaps this is fate. Both of us are destined not to be together. You don't have to feel sad, I will be sent home. Where are you? I miss you. Can you be here with me for the last few hours?"

"No!"

Darryl collapsed hearing that. He could not control his tears.

"Yvonne, I will not let you die. Never! You are not allowed to die!" Darryl shouted. "Wait for me, Yvonne. You must wait for me."

Slam!

Darryl put down the cellphone with bloodshot eyes.

"Darryl, what's wrong?" Dax furrowed his brows and asked.

Why would Darryl be so emotional out of a sudden?

Darryl clenched his fist tightly and replied in a

hoarse voice. "Yvonne's silver needles have been removed..."

Darryl cried loudly. "Dax, what do I do? Yvonne only has three hours to live. What shall I do?" His tears were flowing uncontrollably. He had never felt so terrible in over twenty years of his life. He had never been so helpless.

What?

Dax was momentarily stunned and kept his fist clutched tight. Darryl had told him earlier Yvonne was kept alive temporarily with the aid of the silver needles, which should not be removed.

Dax called Chester in a panic. "Brother Chester, where are you?" He asked immediately after the call was connected.

"We shall arrive in another hour," Chester replied, " Dax, stay with Darryl and wait for me."

What? Another hour?

"Brother Chester, it's too late..." Dax replied.

He could see Darryl crying helplessly. "Brother Chester, if Darryl and I die on the Kunlun Mountain, please help to take care of our families!" Dax yelled.

Right after he spoke, Dax stood up and roared, "All the Elysium Gate members! I am your Sect Master

and your best brother. Everyone, follow me to destroy the Kunlun Mountain and get the Phoenix Pill!"

Dax raised his ax and roared. He led the members up the Kunlun Mountain.

"Dax!" Darryl shouted.

There would be tens of thousands of Kunlun members up in the mountain. Elysium Gate members would be outnumbered.

Darryl's face was red while he glanced at Dax's back. He was nervous and grateful. Dax was indeed a good brother to him.

Swish!

The Blood Drinking Sword appeared in Darryl's hand.

"Attack!" Darryl shouted and charged up the Kunlun Mountain.

Chapter 594

The Kunlun Mountain was famous because of the Kunlun Sect.

Kunlun Sect—one of the members of the Six Sects—had been there for a few thousand years. They groomed countless powerful and elite talents.

Kunlun Mountain was also a treasure land. It absorbed the energy from the sky and the ground, producing many unique weapons. The Pure Jade Kunlun Fan, Devil Slaying Blade, and Devil Trap Ring were some of the special weapons created at the Kunlun Mountain.

Kunlun members were all around the world. There were at least tens of thousands of them. All of them traveled to cultivate. Around thirty thousand of them stayed to protect the mountain.

They were guarding the main entrance to the mountain. All of them gathered around to chat. Although their task was to protect the entrance, no one would go up the mountain for trouble.

"Brother..." A young generation member shouted.

The other person chewing on the grass was annoyed after being interrupted. "What is it?"

"Brother, I think people are charging up the hill."

"Nonsense! Who would dare to come up here?"

They both looked down the hill and were shocked to see a few thousand people running up the hill wielding weapons. Among them, someone was holding a big flag. It was the Nine Dragons Justice Flag.

"Oh no, the Elysium Gate is coming!" The Kunlun member shouted, starting to sweat. He quickly blew the horn as hard as he could. The horn signaled the emergency and all Kunlun members were to gather at once!

"Trouble, trouble!" They shouted. Soon, all thirty thousand of them gathered on guard, holding their weapons. The Elysium Gate members were only less than a hundred meters away.

"Attack!" Dax roared as he led the group and charged towards the crowd, waving his ax around!

Behind Dax, Darryl was holding the Blood Drinking Sword, and they led a few thousand Elysium Gate members!

"Attack!"

Dozens of the Kunlun members at the frontlines dropped dead, soaked in blood. They had no time to

react.

"How dare you come to disturb the Kunlun Sect? You all will die!" One of the elders shouted fearlessly when he saw there were only a few thousand of them. He waved his hand and ordered, " Kunlun members, take order! Kill all of them!"

Charge!

At an instant, tens of thousands of Kunlun members charged forward!

Darryl tore his shirt to wrap the Blood Drinking Sword onto his hand. He was worried that the sword might slip out of his grip! He charged towards the Kunlun members in front of him and killed whoever was in his way.

Roar!

His sword was swaying up and down.

Yvonne did not have much time left. He would die to get the Phoenix Pill!

However, the Elysium Gate was seriously outnumbered. They had lost a fifth of their members.

Darryl was covered in blood. He had lost count on how many people he had killed and how many injuries he had sustained. He could not differentiate

whether the blood he was soaked in was his or not. His mind went blank, and his hand was an unstoppable machine.

"Elysium Gate brothers, listen up!"

Darryl roared, "Zephyr, lead the team to the South East corner!"

"Nimbus, lead the team to the North West corner!"

"Levin, lead the team to the North East corner!"

"Volt, lead the team to the South West corner!"

"Henry Bi-General, lead the team to the Central! Ten Heaven Masters, cover for all!"

Darryl roared with his hoarse voice. In the emergency, that was the formation he planned. Otherwise, all of them would die there.

The formation was called the Dragon Tiger Formation. It was used during the ancient period of the Three Kingdoms by ZhugeLiang.

Chapter 595

Bang!

Elysium Gate members hurried into the formation that Darryl instructed!

"Useless!" An Elder of the Kunlun Sect laughed, leading his members and charged towards the Elysium Gate members.

Once the formation was set, the Elysium Gate members had formed a strong wall to shield themselves from the attack. There was no way the Kunlun Sect could penetrate it. Both sides fought for countless rounds, suffering injury and death.

How impressive that a group of only three thousand people could defend against thirty thousand people.

Roaring and murder engulfed the entire Kunlun Mountain, blood flowing all over. The sound of the knocking of weapons and the shouting of pain were playing in the air. Both sides were killing with heat!

Finally, after battling for over half an hour, a giant figure appeared at the mountain steps. It was Leroy.

He cultivated in the main hall and was at the most

critical stage. However, after hearing the battle sounds for a long time, he risked his cultivation and left towards the main entrance.

He was furious to see countless Kunlun members injured or dead.

"How dare you!" Leroy stared at Darryl. He did not expect that the useless man came to attack.

Leroy saw the Elysium Gate members following Darryl, but he did not know Darryl was the Indomitable Darby. He was stunned and shouted, " Darryl! You have joined the Elysium Gate, hence the arrogance. How dare you come to disturb the Kunlun Sect? You shall die today!"

Leroy charged towards Darryl with his Crescent Moon Blade in hand.

"Leroy, hand over the Phoenix Pill!"

Darryl roared and fearlessly dashed towards Leroy. Darryl had already lost his mind on the level difference between Leroy and himself. His mind was filled with Yvonne. The only thing that mattered to him was that Yvonne would die if he could not get the Phoenix Pill!

Slam!

Darryl and Leroy's fists met. Darryl bounced and flew back while vomiting blood!

Darryl was already severely injured; the strike almost caused his body to break into pieces.

"Darryl!" Dax's eyes were burning. He swayed his ax forward to break away from the Kunlun members, hoping to rescue Darryl. However, it was impossible—there were just too many of them. He was surrounded.

"Go away! Go away!" Dax was shouting crazily.

Darryl stood up slowly with blood seeping into his clothes. "Phoenix Pill! Hand over the Phoenix Pill!!" Darryl stared and shouted at Leroy.

Haha!

Leroy laughed as if he had heard the funniest joke. " I can give you the Phoenix Pill. You have to come to get it yourself."

Darryl clenched his teeth, dragging his body towards Leroy. "Phoenix Pill!"

Darryl charged forward weakly with his Blood Drinking Sword in his grip.

Leroy stopped Darryl's sword with two fingers and smiled. "You useless one, still thinking about the Phoenix Pill!" He kicked Darryl in the chest, sending him flying as light as a kite about twenty feet away! His ribs cracked as he landed heavily on

the steps.

Darryl felt he had broken into pieces, but he stood up again!

"Hand me the Phoenix Pill!" Darryl said coldly and charged towards Leroy again.

"No, Darryl! No!" Dax shouted when he saw what Darryl did. Tears and blood flowed down his face.

Darryl could not hear him. He walked slowly again towards Leroy!

"The Phoenix Pill, hand it over!" Darryl growled and vomited blood at the same time.

Chapter 596

"Haha! Come on, take two more steps forward, and I shall give you the Phoenix Pill." Leroy snickered as he teased Darryl.

Darryl was drenched in blood. He left a trail of blood with each step he took.

"Phoenix Pill, Phoenix Pill!" Darryl repeated over and over.

"Sh*t! Why are you still thinking about the Phoenix Pill when you are about to die?" Leroy yelled coldly. He had lost his patience. "You can take the Phoenix Pill in your next life. You will have to die now!"

Leroy raised his Crescent Moon Blade and swung it towards Darryl.

"Darryl!" Dax shouted. He wanted to rescue Darryl, but the Kunlun members surrounded him. Darryl saw the blade; he knew he could not escape. He closed his eyes and gave up on defending himself.

Bang!

Suddenly, there was a loud crash of metals hitting each other. A long sword flew from afar and landed on the Crescent Moon Blade, blocking Leroy's

attack.

From a distance, tens of thousands of Eternal Life Palace Sect members were charging towards them! Leading the group was a man in a white shirt, holding a feather fan. It was Chester.

"Darryl, Dax!" Chester was furious to see both of them covered in blood. "Attack! Kill everyone!" Chester shouted.

All of the Eternal Life Palace Sect members charged forward, while the Four Guardian Kings charged towards Leroy. The entire Kunlun Mountain was filled with battle cries!

The fight lasted for another half an hour. Under the attack of the Elysium Gate and the Eternal Life Palace Sect, all thirty thousand of the Kunlun members dropped to the ground. Red blood covered the entire main hall. No one was left standing!

Bang!

On the other hand, Leroy could not defend himself any further. He vomited blood as he was surrounded by Henry Bi-General, the Four Warlords, the Ten Heaven Masters, and the Eternal Life Palace Sect's Four Guardian Kings. Along with Dax, there were twenty of them!

Slam!

Dax punched Leroy's chest. He flew across the main hall, hitting the pillars before falling hard on the ground.

"You ambushed me! All of you. How dare you!" Leroy shouted angrily as he vomited more blood, looking pale and weak.

Slap!

Chester slapped him and stared at him coldly. "How dare you claim to be ambushed? Sect Master Darby was attacked by hundreds of you from the Six Sects. Who is the real monster here?"

"You, you..." Leroy could not speak anymore. His whole body was trembling.

"You shall die!" Dax said coldly and raised his ax.

Leroy, the Sect Master of Kunlun Sect, cultivated the Dark Method. He did evil deeds—he deserved to die.

"Father!" At that moment, a young girl rushed forward.

The young girl looked gorgeous, but her face was covered with tears. She was Leroy's daughter, Lydia.

She kneeled on the ground, bowing to the ground, " Brothers, I am begging you. Please release my father, I am begging you..." The young girl bowed

to the ground, her forehead covered with blood.

"Brothers, I beg you. I will hand over the Phoenix Pill." Lydia's tears were flowing down her cheeks.

Lydia held out her hands to reveal a bright and shiny crystal-like stone. The stone was round, and it looked alive.

It was the treasure of the Kunlun Sect—the Phoenix Pill!

With his Blood Drinking Sword pointed at Leroy, Darryl laughed, "Haha..."

Despite laughing, his heart was in pain. He glared furiously at Leroy while his tears flowed uncontrollably. Darryl shook his head. "Too late. It's too late for you to hand over the Phoenix Pill. Too late!" Darryl roared.

After such a long battle, Yvonne had only half an hour to live. It would not help even if he had the Phoenix Pill.

Leroy was sweating all over.

What? Too late?

Leroy was mortified yet curious. "This Phoenix Pill could cure those that are terminally ill. You can take it to cure Miss Young. She will be fine."

"Haha..."

Darryl snickered coldly and shouted, “Yvonne is at Donghai City. Even if I rush back with the Phoenix Pill to Donghai City without resting, it will be too late. You have to die today!”

Chapter 597

Darryl was devastated. "You killed Yvonne! It was you! I want revenge!" He charged towards Leroy.

"Wait, there is still time. You can still save Miss Young!" Leroy shouted, begging for his life. "There is a Snow Eagle at the back of Kunlun Mountain. The eagle can fly at extreme speeds. It would be able to bring you back to Donghai City in less than an hour."

The snow eagle was a gift to Leroy from the Emperor of the New World. The Snow Eagle was an extremely rare bird in the New World. Its body size was much bigger than any ordinary eagle. It also had a very fierce character. It was said that the Emperor of the New World spent three years taming the eagle. When Leroy joined the New World, the New World Emperor was delighted. He gave him both the Dark Method and the Snow Eagle.

Leroy kept the snow eagle as his treasure ever since he got it. However, he did not hesitate to offer it to Darryl to save his own life. Why would he need a Snow Eagle when he was about to lose his life?

Leroy kneeled and bowed to Darryl. "Sect Master Darby, forgive me! Please spare my life." He was no

longer arrogant. What would happen to his daughter if he were to die?

Snow Eagle?

Darryl had a glimmer of hope. Chester immediately ordered his people. "Hurry, go bring the Snow Eagle from the back of the mountain."

A few Eternal Life Palace Sect members rushed towards the back of the mountain. They quickly returned, leading a giant eagle behind them. The giant eagle was covered with flawless white feathers, and it was around two feet tall. Its red eyes made it look extremely alert and smart.

Darryl was overwhelmed when he saw the Snow Eagle. He gripped the Phoenix Pill tight in his hands and dashed towards the Snow Eagle. He reached out to touch its feathers.

Leroy was right. The snow eagle was a magical creature. It kneeled on the floor once Darryl approached it.

Dax was excited. "Haha! Darryl, you can save Miss Young now."

"Darryl." Chester smiled. "Hurry, you need to return to Donghai City immediately to rescue her. Dax and I can manage things over here."

"Great!"

Darryl wiped the blood at his mouth and leaped on the back of the Snow Eagle. He patted the snow eagle gently at its neck, "Let's go!"

The Snow Eagle created a strong gust of wind surrounding them as it spread its wings. It flew up into the sky the very next second. In a blink of an eye, they were a few thousand feet up in the sky!

Darryl's body was covered with blood. His heart wrenched. Although the Snow Eagle traveled at breakneck speed, he was still hoping it could go faster.

At the Young residence in Donghai City, the beautiful courtyard was broken by the ongoing argument in the hall.

Kingston Young stood in the hall, looking upset. Samantha stood right in front of him, with her hands on her waist. "Kingston, what kind of daughter did you raise?" she shouted, "Yvonne knew that he was married. How could she still seduce him? Where is her dignity?"

Samantha continued, "Since your daughter likes the useless one so much, I will give this useless son-in-law to the Young family."

Lily stood beside Samantha and pulled on her arm. " Mother, that's enough," she whispered.

Samantha had sent Yvonne back to the Young residence. She was furious, and she exploded. She pointed at Kingston and started scolding him. Lily did not dare to speak in front of them out of respect.

Kingston was shaking. "I do not want to argue with you," he asserted, "You are not welcome here. Please leave."

Yvonne had gone missing for a few days. He sent everyone searching for her. He was so happy when he saw that Samantha sent her home, but he was surprised and heartbroken to see his daughter looking so pale and weak. Before he could understand what had happened, Samantha started shouting, and Yvonne locked herself in her room.

Chapter 598

"You daughter is no good," Samantha spat coldly.

"Samantha, can you stop this already?" Kingston clenched his teeth. All his life, he was a well-respected man. He had never been scolded that badly before.

At that moment, the Young residence's main door swung open. A man covered with blood rushed in. It was Darryl.

"Yvonne, Yvonne, where are you!" Darryl's eyes were all red!

Although the Snow Eagle had flown extremely fast the entire journey, it had been four hours since the silver needles in Yvonne's arm were removed.

Lily's chest tightened when she saw Darryl running in.

Darryl had been missing for the past few days. He did not even tell Lily where he had gone. Although she finally saw him, all he could think about was Yvonne.

Samantha became angrier than before. "Dear, do you see it now? He does not care for you. I don't

know where he went, but the first thing he did was look for the b*tch!"

Darryl was furious. He clearly knew that none of them would tell him where Yvonne was. He rushed towards her room since she must be there!

As expected, once he opened the door, he saw Yvonne lying there motionless with her eyes shut.

"Yvonne!"

Darryl cried uncontrollably, and his mind spun. He could clearly feel that Yvonne was no longer breathing, and her pulse was really weak. They were all signs of someone dying.

"Yvonne, don't scare me. Please don't scare me!" Darryl shouted. He hugged Yvonne close to his chest. He was devastated.

"Why? Why didn't you wait for me?"

"Yvonne, wake up. It is me, Darryl, your husband. We just got married... You can't just leave me," He choked, tears flowing uncontrollably. He shook Yvonne lightly.

He pushed the Phoenix Pill into Yvonne's mouth as he cried, hoping for a miracle.

A minute passed, then two minutes, and another five minutes.

After ten minutes had passed, Yvonne was still not showing any signs of waking up.

Darryl's heart sank to rock bottom, but he held on to hope. He held Yvonne's hands tightly and rambled endlessly.

"Yvonne, you will be fine. I am begging you; please wake up..."

Darryl was heartbroken. He would regret his entire life if Yvonne died.

Bang!

The door was kicked open. Samantha and Lily walked in.

"Sh*t! How shameful of you? How dare you come here?!" Samantha glared at Darryl. "Coming here immediately for a date with this b*tch. Shame on you, Darryl!"

Samantha then raised her voice and pointed at Darryl, "Let me tell you now. No matter what, you have to arrange for a divorce with Lily. You useless thing. It has been three years now. It is time for you to leave my family!"

Samantha was furious and about to blow her top. Lily had always appreciated him, but he had an affair with another woman. How dare he do that?

She wanted Lily to end the relationship with him immediately.

"Go away!" He released Yvonne's hands and shouted at them. Darryl could not take the scolding anymore. His eyes were burning red.

Chapter 599

When Yvonne called him earlier, Darryl had already guessed that it was Samantha who removed Yvonne' s silver needles!

He could not take it anymore after hearing all the horrible words that came out of Samantha's mouth.

"You're asking me to leave?" Samantha was enraged when she heard Darryl's words.

It was Lily's turn to be furious. "Darryl, how can you speak to Mother in that manner?"

Her heart shattered when she saw Darryl holding Yvonne's hands when she went into the room.

'Now that you have a relationship with her, I am nobody to you, but you're asking my mother to leave now?' Lily thought. She was distraught.

Sigh.

Darryl took a deep breath. He was devastated since Yvonne was still unconscious. He said to Lily, " Samantha is your mother, not mine."

Lily shivered when she heard that. She felt disappointed.

Samantha was still seething when she scolded, "

You ungrateful person! For the past three years, you have been staying and eating at my house. My daughter has always respected you, and this is how you repay her? You are worse than an animal!"

"I'm the useless one? I'm the one worse than an animal?" Darryl clenched his fist tightly. All the anger he kept bottled up for the past three years had exploded at once.

"Just a few months ago, when the Lyndon family ran out of funds and needed to sell your shares to stay afloat, it was me who asked Paul from Dragon Tech to acquire fifty percent of the shares. The shares were then returned to your daughter!" Darryl shouted with red eyes.

"On top of that, I was the one who instructed secretary Pearl to contact Lily about the collaboration between the Lyndon family with Platinum Corporation. I did not call anyone else.

"A month ago, when the Lyndon family chased Lily out of the family, she had to earn money online. The million bucks that she was earned were all from me."

Darryl completely lost his mind. "I did a lot for the Lyndon family, but how have you treated me? In the past three years, which one of you treated me like a human? In your eyes, I am worse than a dog."

Darryl's entire body was shaking.

Samantha clenched her teeth, unable to find the words to say. A few seconds later, she laughed. " Why are you talking so much now? Only useless people would talk about what good they had done. What if you were the richest man in Donghai City before? You are still nobody now!"

Samantha realized she was wrong. To be honest, Darryl had done a lot for her family. "Besides, why are you so angry? Lily and I sent Yvonne home. Why are you so dramatic? She is unconscious now, but it wasn't me that made her unconscious."

Darry looked at her and spat, "Did you know that Yvonne let the Kunlun Sect drain her spirit energy just so that she could save me? The silver needles on her arms were meant to keep her alive. She could only live for three hours once they were removed!"

Darryl's tears keep flowing. "I have the only cure that can save her, but it was too late. Too late."

Lily trembled in guilt. She apologized, "Sorry, sorry. We did not know about the importance of the three silver needles..."

Darryl could not say a word.

Chapter 600

Samantha bit her lip and glared at Darryl. "Who are you trying to fool? Would she really die just by having the three needles removed?"

"Mother, please stop. Darryl is really sad. It was our fault. Please stop talking." Lily stomped her feet.

"You useless girl!" Samantha scolded. "Where is your pride?"

Samantha realized she was wrong, but she could not help herself.

"Lily, what happened to you? What has he given you? Even if he was rich previously, he is a poor man now. Why must you be with him?

"It's fine then. I will just let you be. I am no longer your mother. I will move out tomorrow. I shall go home and pack my stuff. We are ending our relationship."

Samantha furiously stormed out of the room.

Lily rushed after Samantha, immensely worried. " Mother, listen to me."

Their voice went further and further away.

Darryl did not stop both of them from leaving. He

sat beside the bed, completely devastated. He felt disappointed looking at Yvonne, whose eyes were still shut.

"Yvonne, please don't leave. Show me some signs if you can hear me. Move your fingers, blink, anything ... Please, I am begging you..." Darryl called out for her gently. He held Yvonne's hand tightly, praying for a miracle.

On the other hand, Samantha walked fast outside the Young residence with her stilettos stomping on the street. Her face was full of anger and disappointment.

She mumbled to herself as she stormed off. "The useless one already had another woman. Why do I have such a silly daughter?"

"Mother, wait for me." Lily walked out of the Young residence and ran after her, looking worried.

Suddenly, a car came speeding towards her when she reached the middle of the road.

Screech!

The driver slammed the brakes, but it was too late. Lily was stunned, the car was speeding so fast, and she had nowhere to hide.

Bang!

The car hit Lily hard. She flew up as light as a flower

petal before landing on the road. The street was painted with her blood.

"Lilybud!" Samantha screamed at the top of her lungs. She ran and held Lily as she started crying. " Lilybud, my daughter..."

She cried, and her heart shattered. Lily did not respond.

"Daughter, please don't scare me. You will be fine; you will be fine..." Samantha's tears were flowing. She pulled out her cellphone and dialed the emergency number. "Hello, send an ambulance! Please save my daughter..."

After she ended the call, Samantha hugged Lily tightly and cried. She felt as if her heart was sliced into pieces. 2

Chapter 601

On the other hand, at the Lyndon family. 1

Darryl held Yvonne's hand in a tight grip; he was devastated.

It had been half an hour, but Yvonne's eyes were still shut tight; she showed no signs of regaining consciousness. Darryl felt utterly overwhelmed.

"Yvonne, I beg you; please wake up. I am begging you. "Darryl sobbed; his tears dripped onto his shirt. His shirt was bloodied after the battle at Kunlun Mountain. His tears seeped into the bloodstains.

Darryl cried uncontrollably. His sincerity might have even moved the heavens.

Suddenly, Yvonne's fingers moved slightly.

It shocked Darryl, and he almost jumped. He looked at Yvonne and wondered if it was only his imagination. Then, Yvonne sighed softly as she slowly opened her eyes.

"Yvonne!" Darryl shouted. Then he hugged her tightly. "Yvonne! Thank goodness, you are fine! You are alright..."

An hour had passed since Yvonne took the Phoenix Pill, but Darryl felt as if it had been a century.

When he realized that Yvonne's body was warmer, Darryl felt emotional. He thought it was God's greatest gift that Yvonne had regained her consciousness.

Yvonne was still weak and pale; she leaned against Darry's chest and smiled. "Darryl, I am not dreaming, right? I am not dead?"

"That's right; you didn't die. You didn't die..." Darryl's entire body shook.

"You—what happened to you? Why are you covered in blood?" Yvonne asked weakly as she looked at Darryl.

Before Darryl could speak, his cellphone rang. He was stunned when he looked at the screen.

The caller was Lily. Darryl sighed; he hesitated before he answered the call.

Once the call connected, he heard Samantha's voice. "Darryl! You're a heartless man! I will never forgive you if anything were to happen to Lily!"

It was Samantha. She cried loudly; she did not even wait for Darryl's response. "My poor daughter not only met a heartless bastard, she even got into a car

accident. I don't even know if she is still alive. Give me back my daughter! Give me back my daughter!"

What?

Darryl was shocked when he heard Samantha's words. He stood up shakily.

Had Lily been in a car accident?

Darryl felt worried and guilty.

"Yvonne, I have to rush to the hospital." Darryl panicked; he wanted to leave.

Yvonne quickly jumped out of bed and said, "I'll come with you."

Darry nodded; he held Yvonne's hand in a tight grip, and they left hurriedly.

...

At a hospital in Donghai City.

Dozens of people had gathered in front of the emergency room, and all of them were from the Lyndon family.

Chapter 602

William, Elsa, and a few other younger members from the Lyndon family were there. Even their grandmother was there.

After Samantha informed her family about Lily's accident, Grandmother Lyndon was worried sick about her granddaughter.

Even though Lily was not her favorite, she was still her biological granddaughter. Not long ago, Lily had given all the money she earned from her live show to help the Lyndon family. Grandmother Lyndon was grateful for what she had done.

Samantha sat on the chair in the corridor as she cried uncontrollably.

A young man with spiky hair stood outside the operating room. He smoked a cigarette; he had ignored the "No Smoking" sign beside him.

That young man was the culprit; the driver who ran over Lily.

The entire family stared at him in anger.

"How did you drive?" Grandmother Lyndon asked him as she held onto her walking stick.

The spiky-haired young man drove a luxury car—a Maserati. He must be part of a wealthy family since he had a car like that at such a young age. He did not look familiar to any of them; he was probably not from Donghai City.

Lily was severely injured, and they had yet to get an update about her condition. It would definitely cost the young man a hefty sum.

The young man ignored Grandmother Lyndon; he continued to smoke his cigarette.

"You ran over someone. Don't you feel guilty about that? How arrogant!"

"That's right! You ran the red light! What kind of attitude is this? Show some respect; we are from the Lyndon family."

The Lyndon family's younger members could not stand the young man's bad attitude. He was the cause of the accident, and yet he still acted arrogantly!

The security camera showed that Lily had run out of the Young residence. She crossed the road at the pedestrian crossing when the light was green.

The young man had run the red light and hit Lily.

"This is how I usually drive. What do you think you

can do to change that?" the young replied calmly. He took a deep breath and blew the smoke toward Grandmother Lyndon.

"You and your family should stop shouting. I might have hit someone, but at least, I did not run away. What can you do about it? You don't have to act arrogant in front of me. The Lyndon family is nothing to me; my sister is Angela Angel," he spoke proudly.

Angela Angel was a famous artist, and that young man was Don Angel, her younger brother.

Angela, the top female artist, was at Donghai City for her concert.

She was quite reputable in the entertainment industry; her only flaw was her notorious brother, Don.

Don was an arrogant man. He relied on his sister's reputation in the entertainment industry to stay arrogant and proud. He was in Donghai City for his sister's concert. He had decided to stay in the city for a few days after the show had ended.

He had planned to leave that day; he did not expect to be involved in an accident instead.

He was not worried because he was not drunk, nor did he flee the scene. He had only been texting on

his phone and disregarded the traffic light. He probably only needed to compensate the Lyndon family with some money from his insurance.

One of the Lyndon family said softly, "I remember now. He was in the magazine; he's Angela's brother. "

What? That was Angela's brother?

Everyone was in shock. Angela had been famous in the entertainment industry for more than ten years. Many people would treat her to meals whenever she held her concerts. Angela was also close to many dark societies. The Lyndon family would not want to cause any conflict with her. That was why Don had behaved so arrogantly. He was the brother of a famous artist; he was rich and powerful.

Grandmother Lyndon felt embarrassed.

When he saw the Lyndon's family's hesitation, Don turned toward Samantha and said, "The lady I hit was your daughter? I would like to know; why she didn't use her eyes when she was crossing the road? Sh*t! Is she trying to kill herself by running into the middle of the road?"

Chapter 603

"She was running across the road; she deserved it!" Don added arrogantly.

Samantha was furious when she heard those words, but she dared not fight back.

He was Angela's brother. Just one phone call from his sister was enough to get the people from Donghai City's dark society to seek revenge for her.

The rest of the Lyndon family members also felt that Don was too arrogant, but none of them dared to say a single word.

Finally, Elsa could not stand it anymore. "Lily was using the pedestrian crossing when the light was green. And you? You ran the red light. Do you still think that you are in the right?"

Everyone in Donghai City knew about the two beautiful ladies in the Lyndon family—Lily and Elsa. Elsa was bold and kind; she was not afraid of Don.

Just as Elsa spoke, a woman pulled her arms, and she shook her head as she said softly, "Elsa, stop speaking."

Don's sister Angela was someone famous. The

Lyndon family would not want to find any trouble with her. Elsa was not satisfied, but she did not speak further.

Don stared at Elsa and smiled. "You are such a beauty. Yes, I can still act arrogantly even though I hit someone. So?"

His sister had connections with many important people in Donghai City. It was only a simple car accident; she would be able to settle it quickly; he did not need to worry about the Lyndon family.

The entire Lyndon family was speechless.

Suddenly, a loud roar was heard from the lift entrance. "Your sister is Angela, and that gives you the right to act so arrogantly after hitting someone with your car?"

It was Darryl; eyes were burning red!

Yvonne was followed behind him closely; she could not stop him.

"If anything were to happen to my wife, you will repay it with your life!" Darryl almost went crazy. He charged forward and hit Don.

Slam!

It was only one punch, and Don flew more than ten meters backward; he landed on the floor after he hit

the reception desk. He immediately vomited a mouthful of blood.

The nurses at the counter screamed and went to hide. Many people had started to gather around the corridor.

"How dare you hit me! You will die for this!" Don shouted as he stared at Darryl with great anger.

Darryl stepped forward and grabbed his collar and continued to punch him.

The entire hospital was silent, and so they could hear the sound of each punch. Everyone was nervous.

Then, Darryl stopped. Don's face was swollen, and a few of his front teeth were gone too.

Darryl was furious. He was so worried during his journey to the hospital. When he heard Don's arrogant words, he could not control his temper anymore.

"You better pray that nothing bad will happen to my wife. Otherwise, I will end you!" Darryl shouted. He looked terrifying.

Chapter 604

The atmosphere was tense.

Darryl's eyes looked scary. Don trembled when he looked at him, but he was not afraid when he thought of his sister. He pointed at Darryl and said, "Just you wait! Wait here, and you shall see!"

Then, Don turned and rushed into the lift. Once he reached the ground floor, he pulled out his cell phone and dialed Angela's number. The call was answered almost immediately.

Don cried pitifully. "Sister, I am being bullied at Donghai City, you must help me."

Due to his relationship with Angela, people would fear him wherever he went. No one had dared to hit him before that day.

Angela had only completed her role as a mentor for a singing program. She was in the dressing room while she got her brother's call. "Don, did you get yourself into trouble again?"

Don replied, "Sister, it is not my fault. I hit a woman in a car accident, and she's from Donghai City's Lyndon family. The family started to hit me without understanding the truth about the matter.

One of them was so arrogant that he said he would kill me—"

Angela sighed and asked, "Are you telling the truth? "

Don added quickly. "Sister, why would I lie? Let's have a video call so that you can see my wounds."

"Fine, fine. Stop whining." Angela consoled him, " Let me call a friend. She is quite a well-known person in Donghai City. I'll get her to come to you. I shall come over later." She hung up after that.

...

In the corridor to the emergency room.

Once Don had left, the Lyndon family gathered their thoughts and started to scold Darryl.

"Are you crazy? Why did you hit him?"

"Do you know who he is?"

"You're useless! Not only are you not helping, but you are also causing more problems for our family."

Even though everyone knew that Don was wrong, no one would agree to what Darryl had done. All of them were annoyed with him.

Samantha stood up and pointed at Darryl. "You bastard! How dare you show up here? Get lost!

Leave!"

Samantha was furious; she turned toward her family and said, "This useless person is having an affair behind Lily's back. Shameless!"

As she spoke, she pointed at Yvonne and scolded, " This is the b*tch!"

Wow!

The Lyndon family was surprised to hear that; they stared at Yvonne with contempt. They never expected the Young family's eldest daughter would have an affair with Darryl.

Yvonne was known as the Goddess of Donghai City. No one expected she would choose to be with someone like Darryl. During Yvonne and Jeremy's wedding, they had already noticed that something was not right between them. They did not expect that it was because of an affair! What a disgrace!

"How disgusting, Miss Young!" William laughed and said sarcastically, "The infamous Goddess of Donghai City had such a unique taste."

Everyone laughed at William's words.

"I—"

Yvonne bit her lips; her face was scarlet red.

Chapter 605

Yvonne bit her lips. All she wanted to know was Lily's condition; she did not expect they would scold her in such a manner.

Her family had pampered her all her life, and everyone respected her. When she heard those humiliating words from the Lyndon family, she felt so helpless and she wanted to hide.

Darryl held onto his anger and said softly to Yvonne, "Wait for me in the car."

The most important thing was Lily's condition. There was no point for him to argue with the Lyndon family.

Yvonne nodded and left with a heavy heart.

When Yvonne left, Grandmother Lyndon was furious. She pointed at Darryl and said, "Bastard! How did our family end up with such a rubbish son-in-law."

"You are not welcome here! Get lost!"

"Didn't you hear us? Get lost!"

The entire family pointed at Darry as they scolded him.

Darryl clenched his teeth, and his fists tightly. He was furious and almost exploded, but he tried hard to control himself.

He only wanted to know about Lily's condition. Was she okay?

Ding!

The door to the emergency room slid open. The hospital's Chief of Staff, Shelly Sullivan, walked out of the room; she looked tired. She removed her white robe, and that was the perfect body that all men would love.

"Chief Sullivan, how is my daughter?" Samantha immediately asked.

Shelly sighed and replied, "Don't worry. Lily was very lucky. A normal person would not have probably made it after such an accident." She continued with a smile. "She is fine now. There were some bone fractures and she sustained some head injuries. I thought she would be in a coma for some time, but she woke up. I will go and take a look at her CT scan. You all may go in to see her."

Stella excused herself and walked back to her office.

When she learned that Lily was okay, Samantha sighed in relief as she walked toward the ward. The Lyndon family went with her as well, and Darryl

trailed behind them.

In the ward, Lily laid on the bed; her face was pale, but her eyes were alert.

Finally, Darryl felt relief. Lily was fine, and that was great.

Darryl was so worried on his way to the hospital.

Samantha smiled and sat beside the bed as she held Lily's hand. She was glad but her heart ached so much.

"My dear, you scared me." Samantha's eyes were red.

"That's right." Grandmother Lyndon walked closer to the bed as well. She said, "Lilybud, you must rest well. I was so worried when I heard that you were in a car accident."

Lily smiled and looked around the room. " Grandmother, Mother, I am fine. Don't worry about me."

Lily's head spun, and her body ached. She was unsure if she could make it.

Darryl squeezed through the crowd and walked toward the bed; his eyes were red as he looked at Lily.

Lily saw him too. Both of them stared at each other

but none of them said a word.

A while later, Darryl apologized to her. "My dear wife, I am sorry. I—"

He could not continue; he felt extremely guilty. If he had spoken calmly with Lily at the Young residence, Lily and Samantha would not have left in anger, and Lily would not have met with a car accident.

Darryl felt extremely guilty.

He had never expected Lily looked at him blankly and said, "Who are you?"

Suddenly everyone in the room looked at Darryl as well. They were glad that Lily did not want to acknowledge him.

Darryl was shocked. "Lilybud, I know that you are still angry at me. Please don't do this to me."

Lily looked at Samantha. "Mother, who is he? Why does he say that he is my husband?"

Samantha laughed and pointed at Darryl. "You heartless man! Didn't you hear what she said? Lily does not want to know you; what are you still doing here?"

"Get lost!"

"Leave now!"

William and the rest started to scold him.

Chapter 606

Darryl's heart was in pain. He sighed as he looked at Lily and left the ward.

'Lily must be mad at me that she did not even want to acknowledge me anymore,' Darryl thought. 'I shall visit her again when she is less emotional.'

In the ward, Lily watched Darryl leave. She furrowed her brows and asked, "Mother, who was that person?"

Lily's face was full of curiosity.

What? Did Lily not recognize Darryl? The Lyndon family was in shock.

What was going on?

"Lily, he is our live-in son-in-law. Don't you remember him?" William laughed.

Lily was even more confused. "Live-in son-in-law? William, what are you talking about?"

Everyone looked at each other.

It was obvious that Lily was not pretending; she really did not recognize Darryl!

She could recognize everyone. Why could she not

remember Darryl?

Darryl was stunned to hear what Lily had just said in the ward! He turned to look at Lily and felt a sharp pain in his heart. She had forgotten about him.

Darryl's mind went blank. Then, like a crazy person, he rushed toward the Chief's office.

In the office, Shelly held a few CT scans in her hand as she analyzed them carefully.

She stood up when she saw Darryl. "Darryl, you are here."

"What happened to my wife? Why wouldn't she remember me? She can remember everyone except me. What is going on?" Darryl rushed forward and pressed his hands onto Shelly's shoulders as he shouted desperately.

When she felt the pressure of Darryl's hands on her shoulders, Shelly blushed and said, "Darryl, I was just looking at Lily's CT scan. Her brain injury was pretty serious. I believe she is suffering from Selective Memory Loss."

Selective Memory Loss?

Darryl's heart sank; he was stunned.

Shelly nodded. "Yes, selective memory loss, which

is the loss of memory over a certain period. She could not recognize you, but she knew about everyone else. It appeared that she had lost her memories from the past three years," Shelly said softly.

She had heard about Darryl and Lily's wedding, and hence she knew that both of them were married about three years ago.

Darry felt a sharp pain in his heart. "You mean she could not remember everything that had happened for the past three years?"

"That's right." Shelly nodded. "As for the reason why she lost her memory, perhaps it was stress from various bad incidents, and she wanted to forget all of them."

Shelly bit her lips and continued to say, "Her memory loss may be temporary, or it may be permanent."

Darryl fell onto the chair when he heard that.

...

On the other hand, in the ward, the Lyndon family knew that Lily had suffered memory loss!

Samantha would be heartbroken under normal circumstances to know that her daughter had lost her memory for the past three years, but she felt

delighted.

Her memory loss was a blessing in disguise. She had forgotten about Darryl, and that was the best thing that could happen to her.

"Mother, the man earlier; he kept saying that he's my husband. Is there something wrong with him?" Lily asked curiously as she laid on the bed.

It was disgusting that a man would come out of nowhere and claimed that she was his wife.

"Yes, something is wrong with his brain." Samantha nodded. "That was Darryl. He is the most useless and heartless person. He is also the disgrace of the Darby family. The Darby family was the top family in Jiangnan. He is their second son, but he had violated his brothers and sisters and caused his grandfather to die of anger—"

Lily was angry after she heard what Samantha had said. How could there be people like him in the world?

"Oh, yes, my daughter. I've also introduced a new boyfriend to you recently," Samantha said with a smile. 1

Her daughter had lost her memory; it was the best time to introduce a new boyfriend to her. There were men from many rich and famous families who

admired Lily. It was the best time to find her a good match. All those men were from families much richer than Darryl.

Lily smiled. "Mother, you are rushing me to get married."

"Of course, you need to catch up. Most girls your age are already married." Samantha smiled. "His name is Wade Clement, and he is handsome and wealthy. Why don't you let me decide on your marriage?"

"Yes." Lily nodded. "I shall do as you wish, Mother. "

"Great!" Samantha was delighted. Wade was her friend's son, and he looked smart. Most importantly, his family was wealthy; they were in the timber business, and they had assets worth billions!

"Let me give Wade a call. Try to spend some time with him. He can take care of you here." Samantha smiled.

Lily did not want to spoil her mother's excitement, so she nodded. "Fine."

Lily's memory was rewound back to three years ago, so she could only remember Samantha's rush for her to get married. 'I am at the suitable age for

marriage. Since Mother wished for me to get married soon, then I shall try to spend some time with Wade,' Lily thought.

Chapter 607

Samantha smiled. It was great that her daughter had lost her memories for the past three years!

"Wade is a smart man; he is the perfect match for you!" Samantha held Lily's hand and continued to say, "Wade is about 1.8 meters in height, his family is in the timber business, and they have assets worth billions."

Samantha took out her cell phone as she spoke and sent a text to Wade; she asked him to go to the hospital.

Suddenly, a loud roar came from outside of the ward!

"Where is the Lyndon family? Come out here now!"

That voice was so loud. The Lyndon family walked out of the ward and looked at where the voice came from. They were in shock.

A man walked toward them from the stairs!

It was Don.

Don was beaten up badly by Darryl; his face was still swollen, but he was back for revenge.

There was a beautiful lady beside him. She had a

perfect body figure, dressed in a tight top and black jeans; she looked incredibly sexy. It was Abby Guy.

There were about twenty black-attired men behind her. All of them were huge, with tattoos on their arms; they looked fierce and unfriendly.

After Darryl beat up Don, he called his sister, Angela. Then, she called for Abby when she heard that someone had bullied her brother.

Angela and Abby were old friends. Angela met the Guy siblings, Brandon and Abby, a few years ago when she was at Donghai City for a business show.

Grandmother Lyndon trembled when she saw the men. She could barely hold on to her walking stick!

Did Don go to Abby for help?

Donghai City's underground power was split into two zones.

Brandon and Abby, the two Guy siblings, held power in the western city. Dax had power in the eastern side of the city.

When Emei Sect's Abbess Mother Serendipity attacked the Sanders Mansion, Dax had lost many of his members. His influence in Donghai City was no longer as strong as it had been before that.

Brandon and Abby had taken the opportunity to

invade and take over many of Dax's businesses.

In half a month, almost the entire underworld powers were taken by Brandon and Abby. With their strength, they could do almost anything that they wanted.

The Lyndon family panicked when they saw Don with Abby.

Don pointed at the Lyndon family angrily and shouted, "It's them. You must teach them a lesson."

Don's face was still in pain, and he was furious.

Abby nodded as she stared at Grandmother Lyndon. "Old Lady, how dare you and your family act as if Donghai City belongs to you? Don may have accidentally hit a member from your family, but he did not refuse to compensate you. How dare you hit him? Who gave you the power to do so?"

Abby's voice was not loud, but it was with intense pressure.

The Lyndon family looked at each other; they were worried.

Grandmother Lyndon coughed and said, "Miss Guy, that was a misunderstanding."

Due to the influence of the Guy siblings in Donghai City, she dared not comment any further.

Abby smiled. "A misunderstanding?"

Abby had been Angela's friends for a couple of years. That was the first time Angela had asked for her help. She had to teach the Lyndon family a lesson.

Men started to surround them; the Lyndon family was in trouble.

They had beaten up Angela's brother, and he had brought Abby with him. The Lyndon family was in deep trouble.

Don held his fists tightly and shouted, "Don't waste time with them. Tell them to surrender the man who had hit me!"

They would get rid of him that day!

Chapter 608

Abby nodded and looked at the Lyndon family coldly. "Who was the one who hit him? Show yourself at once."

"I was the one who beat him up."

A cold voice was heard before they saw Darryl emerged from the corridor.

Shelly was beside him. Both of them had discussed Lily's condition in the Chief's office when they heard the commotion outside.

Abby saw Darryl, and she was stunned. Then she was excited.

Abby had always wanted to meet Darryl again ever since he gave her the Godly pill. She wanted to be his student, but Darryl had refused to accept her.

Abbess Mother Serendipity had badly injured Darryl; she thought she would never see him anymore. Since she saw him again, she would definitely want to try her best to make him take her as a student!

Grandmother Lyndon quickly walked forward with her walking stick and said, "Miss Guy, it was him;

Darryl did it. It had nothing to do with my family."

William and the rest nodded in agreement.

"Yes, it was not us. It was Darryl who beat up Don."

"We will not stop you, no matter what you want to do with this live-in son-in-law."

The Lyndon family immediately denied their relationship with Darryl.

That useless Darryl was in trouble again. Why would the Lyndon family want to be involved, especially when Lily did not even remember him?

Shelly was worried; she pulled Darryl's shirt and said softly, "Darryl, you should leave."

There were more than twenty of them; how could Darryl defeat them?

Shelly was speechless. The Lyndon family were too heartless to deny their relationship with Darryl immediately.

William glared at Shelly and said, "Chief Sullivan, you should stay out of this."

Darryl deserved it as he was the one who beat up Don; he deserved to die! If Darryl were to leave, Don would blame the Lyndon family.

"He is the one!" Don pointed at Darryl furiously

and said, "Sister Abby, I want him to be stuck in a wheelchair for the rest of his life!"

Don shouted; his eyes were red!

"He was the one who beat you up?" Abby finally gathered her thoughts.

Don nodded. "That's right; it's him. It's him!"

"I can't help you with this," Abby replied coldly. Then she walked excitedly toward Darryl and gripped his arm. She smiled and greeted, "Master!"

What?

Everyone was stunned; they could not believe it.

What had happened? Why did Abby address Darryl as Master?

The whole floor was in complete silence.

Shelly was stunned too. She looked at Darryl and wondered about his complicated background.

Darryl looked at Abby and replied, "What did I tell you earlier? You cannot address me as Master before I agree to take you as my student. I have not agreed to it yet."

Abby wanted to learn to produce elixir desperately. She bit her lips as she swung Darryl's arms. " Master, please take me as your student. Please..."

Wow!

The men who came with Abby were surprised as well; they could not understand it. Abby had always been a tough and fierce character; everyone respected her in Donghai City. They had never seen her in such a gentle manner. She even sounded lovely.

None of them dared to continue to watch the scene unfolded.

Chapter 609

"Master, please accept me as your student. Please ..." Abby said softly.

Darryl could not stand her anymore. He sighed and said, "We shall talk about it later. Now, Don hit my wife with his car and claimed that she deserved it. How shall we deal with this?"

Abby trembled when she heard that. She walked toward Don.

Slap!

She raised her hand and slapped Don's face unexpectedly.

The clear sound shocked everyone there.

Don touched his face; he was furious and surprised. "Sister Abby, what are you doing?"

Abby scolded him, "Shut up! Apologize right now!"

"Sister Abby, I—" Don cried.

'Abby had promised me that she would teach them a lesson. Why did she slap me? Who is this Darryl?' Don thought.

Don had so many questions in his mind, but he

dared not ask them.

"Sorry, I am sorry. It is all my fault. I will compensate you." Don nodded and bowed as he spoke; he was no longer arrogant.

Darryl did not speak. He glared at Don, then turned and walked down the stairs.

"Master, wait for me!" Abby stomped her feet and chased after the man.

"Master, please accept me as your student. Please." Abby would not stop.

Once they reached the lobby on the ground floor, Darryl stopped and said, "Fine, I will accept you as my student."

Darryl only wanted her to leave, so he decided to agree to her request for the time being.

"Really?!" Abby was so excited that she gave Darryl a hug and a kiss on his cheeks.

"What?"

Before Darryl could gather his thoughts, Abby immediately knelt in front of him.

"Master, please accept this bow from me as your student." Abby bowed to Darryl and then stood up happily.

"Master, when will you start to teach me to produce

elixirs?" Abby asked excitedly.

"We'll see about that tomorrow. I need some peace and quiet; stop following me. I am getting annoyed." Darryl quickly walked out of the hospital.

"Yes, Master." Abby smiled. "Master, I shall wait for your call tomorrow. Don't forget. You must teach me the way to produce elixir."

Darryl waved his hand without looking back.

Once he stepped out of the hospital, Yvonne walked toward him in her stilettos.

"How is Lily?" Yvonne asked worriedly.

Darryl sighed and said bitterly, "She is safe for now, but she is suffering memory loss. She cannot remember anything that happened for the past three years. She could not even recognize me."

What?

Lily had memory loss?

Yvonne was shocked; she asked worriedly, "How did that happen?"

Chapter 610

"Chief Sullivan said that she had a brain concussion, and that leads to the selective memory loss," Darryl said as he smiled bitterly.

Yvonne felt terrible when she heard that.

She bit her lips and was silent. After a while, she was determined when she said, "Darryl, I don't mind sharing you with Lily. You should get her back. "

Darryl was shocked to hear that; he did not expect Yvonne to say that. He did not know what to say, so he hugged her tightly. "Yvonne—"

Yvonne sighed and added, "Darryl, you have to get her back. She cares for you."

Darryl hugged her tightly and sighed. "She doesn't remember me anymore. Perhaps this is fated to happen; maybe I am not destined to be with her."

"You—" Yvonne trembled as she looked at Darryl. " You've decided to give up on Lily?"

"Yes." Darryl nodded. "Honestly, I know that Lily cared for me too, but the Lyndon family does not like me. Even if I win her back, they will still create

problems for us. So, I have decided to give up."

Yvonne bit her lips when she heard that.

"It's fine." Darryl patted her head. "Let's go. Let's take a walk by the beach and go for a movie."

"Sure!" Yvonne nodded and decided not to think about it further. She held onto Darryl's arms, and they walked happily toward the beach.

...

At the Darby residence.

Abbess Mother Serendipity stood up happily; she looked surprised.

"Are you serious? Is it true?" Abbess Mother Serendipity asked as she looked at Jean.

"Yes, Master, it is true. The Kunlun Sect has been destroyed," Jean replied. She could not believe it either!

The news about Kunlun Sect had spread to all corners of the city.

Kunlun Sect, one of the Six Sects, had been destroyed. Who would believe it?

The entire Kunlun mountain was vacant. There was no one left.

The tens of thousands Kunlun members who

guarded the mountain with the Sect Master, Leroy Henderson, had disappeared. However, there were no bodies either. The only thing left was blood on the mountain grounds.

Chester had told his followers to seal all the roads that led to the mountain during the attack. He had managed to capture all of the Kunlun members when they tried to escape from the mountain.

That was also the reason why no one knew how the Kunlun Sect was destroyed.

No one knew who was behind it; all the sects were worried.

"Master, do you think it was Darryl?" Jean asked softly.

A few of the Emei members trembled when they heard that.

About three days ago, at the Hexad School main hall, Darryl did warn that he would destroy the Kunlun Sect in three days. Half of Donghai City heard that.

It was the third day then. Was it him?

"Shut up. Don't spread rumors," Abbess Mother Serendipity said. "How could he do that? Do you know that there are tens of thousands of members at the mountain? Kunlun Sect Master Leroy is a

Level Four Martial Saint. Who is Darryl? How could he have destroyed the entire Kunlun Sect? Sect master Leroy could kill him with just a flick of his finger."

"Who do you think did that then, Master?" Megan asked.

Chapter 611

Abbess Mother Serendipity sighed as she sat on the chair.

Even though she wore a long purple dress, her perfect figure was still visible.

"I don't know who destroyed Kunlun Sect," Abbess Mother Serendipity said calmly. She took a sip of tea and continued to say, "No matter who it was, it would not be that bastard, Darryl."

...

The Young residence in Donghai City.

Darryl laid on the wooden chair as he enjoyed his tea. Yvonne sat quietly beside him; she was smiling.

Darryl had been staying at the Young family's guestroom for the past two days.

Kingston had no choice. He wanted to chase Darryl away. However, Yvonne had decided that she would only marry Darryl. He had no choice but to accept her decision.

After she had rested for two days, Yvonne was finally recovered. Her face was rosy, and she was as beautiful as before that.

The snow eagle rested near the flower bushes as they enjoyed the sun.

Yvonne laughed. "What an intelligent snow eagle! It is sunbathing. How cute!"

Darryl smiled; the most unexpected reward he got after he destroyed the Kunlun Sect was the snow eagle.

The snow eagle could communicate with humans. It enjoyed its time with Yvonne and Darryl. It would fly around when no one was around.

No matter how far it went, it would always return when Darryl whistled for it.

"Did you hear that? Yvonne said that you are cute," Darryl said to the snow eagle.

The snow eagle got excited and went close to Yvonne; it pushed her lightly.

"Good eagle." Yvonne patted and hugged it. Then she said to Darryl, "Hurry, take a picture for me."

"Sure, sure." Darryl took out his cell phone. Suddenly his phone rang.

It was Dax. He immediately took the call.

Dax's voice came from the other side of the line. " Darryl, is Yvonne okay now?"

Darryl laughed. "She is fine."

"That's great." Dax sounded excited. Then he said earnestly, "Darryl, you have to come to Kunlun Mountain now. Just a few seconds ago, Chester and I found Leroy's underground treasure vault. Come quickly!"

Ever since they destroyed the Kunlun Sect, none of the Kunlun members dared to return to the mountain. Who would dare to go back when their Sect Master had vanished too?

Dax and Chester checked the entire mountain and found an underground treasure vault. Dax immediately called Darryl. Of course, he wanted to share the great news with his brother.

An underground treasure vault?

Darryl was excited. "What is inside the vault?"

"A lot of gold and jewels, and one great thing!" Dax replied excitedly.

"A great thing?" Darryl wondered about it. "What is it? Tell me!"

"I am not telling you." Dax laughed before he continued to say, "Just get here. Chester and I will wait for you here."

Darryl could not wait any more; he bid farewell to

Yvonne and told her that he would return the next day. He rode on the snow eagle and headed toward Kunlun Mountain.

Darryl was so happy as he rode the eagle in the sky. That was only the second time he had flown on the snow eagle.

The first occasion was when he rushed back from the Kunlun Mountain to Donghai City to save Yvonne. He was worried during the entire journey.

It was a different feeling then. He looked down to the beautiful scenery as he rode the snow eagle; he felt free.

Darryl patted the snow eagle's head lightly. What a treasure! Not only could it communicate with humans, but it could also fly so quickly. With it, who would even need a car or an aeroplane?

Just as Darryl enjoyed the moment, the snow eagle suddenly cried and started to fly away from their route. It turned toward the mountain on their right.

Chapter 612

It was the Yellow Dragon Mountain.

"Oh, no!"

Darryl was surprised; he patted the snow eagle's neck lightly. "No, that's the wrong way. Kunlun Mountain is not this way."

What happened to the snow eagle? Had it forgotten the way?

The snow eagle chirped softly when it heard Darryl's words, but it continued to fly toward the Yellow Dragon Mountain.

Darryl was confused." What do you mean? I don't understand you."

Darryl nodded his head. The show eagle was an intelligent bird; it must have a reason to fly toward the Yellow Dragon Mountain. Darryl decided to stop talking and held on tightly to the snow eagle's neck.

A few minutes later, the snow eagle started to descend and landed on the Yellow Dragon Mountain. There was a cave nearby.

The snow eagle chirped loudly toward the cave and used its head to tap on Darryl's shoulder.

Darryl was not sure what it wanted; he walked forward and looked at the cave. He was shocked!

There were a group of people in the cave. All of them were dressed in their own unique costume.

Darryl realized that some of them were from the Beggars' Sect, a few were from the Giant Whales Sect, and some were from the Island of Peach Blossom Sect. All of them from the smaller sects; there were about a hundred of them.

Among them, a lady attracted Darryl's attention.

The lady wore a long white dress; she looked beautiful, but her hair was all white. She was the eldest daughter of the Island of Peach Blossom Sect, Linda Holt. Darryl had seen her at the dragon slaughter event. Her white hair was very notable.

All of them stood in front of the cave; it seemed like they were in a discussion.

There was a stele in front of the cave; it had some carvings on it. As it was still quite far, Darryl could not see what was carved onto the stele.

The cave could be an ancient tomb. It was located at such a secluded place; why were those people there?

Were there treasures in the tomb?

Darryl patted the snow eagle lightly and

complimented it. "You are so smart. You brought me here because you know that there are treasures here."

Snow eagle chirped lightly and nodded.

The snow eagle amused Darryl; he patted the snow eagle again to praise him.

"Darryl?"

Suddenly, a voice came from behind him.

Sh*t! Darryl was stunned. He turned and was surprised by the view.

A beautiful lady stood there; she was smiling. It was Yvette.

The Royal Rat Guard and Royal Ox Guard stood quietly behind her.

Yvette wore dark green sportswear with a pair of sneakers. She looked so fashionable and sexy even though she was in a mountainous area.

Among all the beautiful ladies Darryl had met, Yvette was the one with the sexiest body figure.

Darryl gathered his thoughts and asked, "What are you doing here?"

Yvette smiled and said, "You are here; why can't I be here?"

Then she turned and stared at the group of people in front of the ancient tomb; she had observed them discreetly too.

Darryl was curious. "Why are they gathering at the ancient tomb? Are there treasures in there?"

Yvette smiled. "For the past hundreds of thousands of years, there had been many powerful martial saints. They built their tomb in their own unique ways, with hopes that someday, someone could enter the tomb. Many of them did not have followers, but they did not wish their talents to go wasted after they died. They wanted to pass their knowledge on to someone else."

Yvette looked toward the tomb again. "Even though I don't know the owner of that tomb, I am sure it belongs to a powerful martial saint. Otherwise, no sect would be interested in it."

Chapter 613

Yvette knew about the ancient tomb by accident too.

A few hours ago, her royal guards noticed a group of people had gone up the mountain suspiciously.

Yvette brought Royal Rat Guard and Royal Ox Guard with her to check it out without further hesitation.

Once they arrived, they saw Darryl come on the snow eagle.

Yvette looked at the snow eagle and smiled. "The news about Kunlun Sect destroyed in a day—was it done by Elysium Gate?"

Yvette was amazed when she recalled that. She did not believe it when Darryl mentioned that he would destroy the Kunlun Sect. She was speechless when she saw Darryl with the snow eagle.

The snow eagle could only be found in the New World, and her father had given one to Leroy as a gift. She was there when that happened.

"Yes, it was me." Darryl shrugged. "Feeling sad that I destroyed the traitors who joined the New World?"

"You—" Yvette stomped her feet. At that moment, she noticed that the group of people had already

entered the cave.

"They are going in; let's follow them," Yvette said to the two royal guards.

Darry took a deep breath. He could not contain his curiosity; he followed them and left the snow eagle outside the cave.

Once they reached the cave entrance, they could see a dark and deep tunnel.

Darryl could feel intense energy around them. It had to be something powerful. He strolled as he thought about it.

Yvette felt it too; she looked excited as she trailed behind Darryl.

After they walked for about ten minutes, the narrow tunnel got wider. A vast vacant land appeared in front of them. The land was about a few thousand square feet wide. There were thousands of wooden logs on the ground, and each of them was around three feet high.

Darryl furrowed his brows. The wooden log arrangement might have looked random, but there was a specific pattern in it. If he were not wrong, it was a trap.

Darry was surprised to see the group of people, who had entered the cave before them, stood in between

the logs. Their eyes were blood red, and they fought against each other. They killed one another like madmen.

"You're rubbish! How dare you take my treasure? I will kill you!"

"These treasures are mine. I will kill anyone who dares to take it from me!"

Everyone yelled as they attacked each other; there were bloodstains all over the place.

Yvette was terrified when she noticed the scene.

What had happened? They seemed like great acquaintances earlier—the Beggars' Sect, the Island of Peach Blossom Sect and other sects. What had made them kill each other? They were all fine before they entered the cave, and then they wanted to kill one another.

Yvette asked Darryl, "What is wrong with them?"

Sigh.

Darryl took a deep breath as his eyes shone brightly. He replied slowly, "If I am not wrong, the wooden logs are a trap. The formation is a high-level one—The Illusional Formation."

It was recorded in the Bai Qi Formations manual; the Illusional Formation was an extremely

dangerous formation, and it was one of the highest level ones.

Darryl paused before he continued to say, "The Illusional Formation—the unique point about this formation is its ability to create an illusion for a person."

Chapter 614

As he spoke, Darryl pointed toward the group of people who were killing each other. "Those who walked into the trap must have thought they saw some treasures. They are worried that the others would take it from them, so they tried to kill each other."

Darryl was right.

Even though they had agreed to explore the ancient tomb together before they entered the cave, all of them wanted the treasures for themselves.

Once they stepped into the trap formation, they started to hallucinate the treasures were in front of them. That was why they began to kill each other.

"Don't worry." Darryl looked at Yvette. "I have a way to solve it."

Darryl reached out to press on an acupoint at his shoulder. It was the alter acupoint.

As recorded in the Bai Qi Formation manual, one only needed to seal his altar; then they would be able to break the formation; they would not suffer from hallucination.

It was true.

Once he sealed his alter acupoint, Darryl could feel that his mind was clear and alert.

Then he turned to Yvette and smiled. "Come, let me seal your altar acupoint."

Right at that moment, Yvette trembled and knelt on the ground. Then she looked at Darryl happily, " Father! Greetings, my father."

What? Why did she address Darryl as her father?

Darryl was stunned, but he quickly gathered his thoughts. He was a little too late, Yvette had already started to hallucinate.

It had been almost two months when Yvette left for the World Universe. Even though she had always looked strong, she missed her father and the New World.

Yvette was affected by the formation; she hallucinated that Darryl was the New World's Emperor.

Darryl thought it was amusing. 'How funny! Yvette thinks that I am her father.'

Darryl laughed before he took his cell phone to record Yvette's action. He had to record that moment for remembrance.

"Daughter, massage my feet." Daryl started to joke

with her.

"Yes, Father." Yvette nodded and knelt in front of Darryl. As she massaged his feet, she asked, " Father, is this comfortable?"

"Yes, yes." Darryl laughed.

After a while, Yvette stood and hugged Darryl. " Father, I've missed you very much..."

Since she was young, Yvette was her father's favorite child; she had always been close to her father. She did not know that the person in front of her was Darryl and not her father.

Wow!

Darryl's heart melted when Yvette hugged him; he could smell the lovely scent on her body.

Yvette had the perfect body, and she looked alluring.

After he had hugged her for a while, and when he was done with the recording, Darryl smiled and then proceeded to seal Yvette's alter acupoint.

Yvette immediately trembled and then, her mind was clear.

Yvette's face was scarlet red; she struggled to get out of Darryl's hug. She stared angrily at him. " What are you doing? How dare you take advantage of me?"

'What a terrible man! He hugged me when I was having illusions.'

Chapter 615

Darryl smiled and said, "My dear Princess, you were the one who hugged me. I already have a wife, but you still came and embraced me. How can you be angry when I am not?"

"You're rubbish!" Yvette bit her lips. How could she have hugged him?

Darryl waved his hands. "As I have said earlier, the formation will cause one to have illusions."

Then he showed Yvette the video recordings on his cellphone.

The video showed how Yvette had hugged Darryl and said, "Father, I've missed you very much..."

Yvette's face was red when she saw the video.

"Shut the video at once," Yvette demanded as she snatched Darryl's cell phone to close the video.

It seemed like she did have an illusion; she had taken Darryl as her father. How shameful!

Yvette had learned formations with her master for many years, but she had never heard about a formation that could cause hallucinations.

Not only had Darryl heard about the formation, he

knew the way to break it too. She wondered about his strength.

Suddenly, a voice came from behind them. " Princess.."

Yvette turned and was stunned.

Just a few feet away, Royal Rat Guard experienced his hallucinations. He hugged Royal Ox Guard tightly and said, "Princess! Princess Yvette, you are so beautiful, I want to spend the rest of my life with you! I can do anything for you! My life is only complete if I can spend the night with you. I know it is impossible. You are the Princess, and I am just the servant. I have promised your father that I will always protect you; we could never be together..."

It was apparent that Royal Rat Guard was in a hallucination; he had thought Royal Ox Guard as Yvette.

Darryl was stunned, but he started to laugh. " Princess, it seems like you have many admirers. He just said that his life is only complete if he can spend the night with you."

"Shut up!"

Yvette felt so embarrassed; her face was as red as an apple.

How could Royal Rat Guard say all those in front of

Darryl? What an embarrassment!

Yvette stomped her feet when Darryl laughed. "Stop laughing; make them stop."

Darryl smiled and walked toward them; then he sealed the acupoint for the both of them.

Royal Rat Guard and Royal Ox Guard regained their clear minds immediately.

"Hey silly Ox, why are you hugging me?"

"Shi*t, you stinky Rat! Get down from my body."

Both of them started to argue. The scene amused Darryl. How funny was that?

Yvette was angry and embarrassed. "Stop it, both of you. Keep quiet."

They immediately stopped.

"Alright, we are all fine now. Let's go inside to have a look." Darryl waved his hands and walked toward the tomb excitedly.

A person who could set an Illusion Formation near his own grave; he must have been an extraordinary person. Darryl must find out who that was.

Over ten feet away, the group of people still fought against each other. Among the one hundred people who went into the cave, only about less than ten

people left!

Chapter 616

Those who were not dead were covered in blood. They were still fighting against each other, and it did not seem like they would quit soon.

Only one lady who did not seem to have moved.

It was Linda Holt.

Linda leaned against one of the wooden logs as she talked to herself emotionally. It was apparent that she was hallucinating, but her illusions were different from the rest.

Darryl approached her so that he could hear what she said.

"Even though the Island of Peach Blossom Sect is just a small group, we will never be traitors. All of you—leave at once! Go back to where you belong, back to the New World."

Darryl was shocked to hear that; he respected her decision.

It seemed like the New World went to recruit the Island of Peach Blossom Sect, but they did not give in to their demands.

Darryl was impressed by Linda's decision. Without

any hesitation, he walked toward her and sealed her acupoint.

Linda trembled and her mind immediately cleared.

Linda was shocked to see Darryl in front of her. " Darryl, what are you doing here?"

She was also shocked to see the group of people fighting against each other. "What are they doing?"

Darryl smiled as he looked at her. "You were hallucinating. It is dangerous here; you should leave immediately."

Then Darryl turned and walked toward Yvette.

Linda was stunned as she saw Darryl left. He was the one who helped to get her out of the illusions.

Everyone said that Darryl had caused his grandfather's death, violated his siblings and joined the Eternal Life Palace Sect. However, Linda felt that Darryl was not like the devil they said he was.

Yvette teased him when Darryl returned to her. " What a gentleman, Sect Master Darby! You ignored everyone else, and only helped the Island of Peach Blossom Sect's daughter."

She added, "Linda is young and beautiful. Even though her hair is all white, she still looks

attractive. Are you attracted to her?"

Darryl smiled but did not explain further.

Darryl saved Linda because she did not join the New World; how could he tell that to Yvette?

However, Darryl could not help but teased her, " Princess Yvette, are you jealous?"

Yvette bit her lips and said, "You overestimate yourself!"

How dared Darryl say such things to her!

"Very well, then. I will not say another word, my dear daughter." Darryl waved his hands.

"You—" Yvette was furious; she reached out to hit Darryl.

She was still embarrassed over the incident.

Darryl laughed and started to run; Yvette chased after him.

When Royal Ox Guard and Royal Rat Guard regained their senses, Darryl and Yvette were already out of their line of sight.

"Princess!" Royal Ox Guard shouted.

"I think she went after Darryl," Royal Rat Guard replied.

"Why are you still standing there? Go and look for

her! You're useless!" Royal Ox Guard shouted.

"Sh*t! You are responsible for the princess, too!" Royal Rat Guard replied. Both of them argued as they headed to look for Yvette.

Chapter 617

Darryl and Yvette ran and chased after each other until they reached the end of the formation and into a deep tunnel.

There was a secret room at the end of the tunnel; it was only a few square meters wide.

Once they reached the secret room, Darryl stopped and smiled at Yvette. "Enough, my dear daughter, I am tired and could not run anymore."

He looked around the secret room as he said that.

That was the end of the ancient tomb? It looked relatively small.

They said there were treasures; so, where were they?

Yvette panted as she said, "Darryl, you are not to mention the incident ever again!"

Then she lifted her foot to kick Darryl, but she missed, and it landed on the wall.

The ground started to vibrate and collapsed.

"Argh!" Darryl and Yvette started to fall.

Yvette had accidentally kicked on the activation button on the wall.

Both of them started to descend. Yvette screamed as she grabbed onto Darryl.

The hole was about twenty feet down. Darryl crashed onto the ground first, and Yvette landed on him.

Darryl's head spun from the fall.

It was lucky that Darryl was a Martial Saint. Otherwise, he might not have survived the fall.

"Darryl, this is all your fault. We wouldn't have fallen here otherwise." Yvette was annoyed. "If you ever mention my hallucination again, I will never forgive you."

She reached out to touch her face. She wanted to make sure that her face was not hurt.

Darryl laughed. "I am the one who landed on the ground and then became your cushion. Why would you have any injury?"

Darryl cleared his throat and said, "Can you let me stand up now?"

Yvette had a perfect body figure. However, Darryl was in pain from the fall; how could he enjoy Yvette's body on his.

"Sorry." After she heard that, she realized where she was. Her face was scarlet red; she stood up

immediately.

Yvette was worried about him. "Are you alright?"

Darryl stood up and replied calmly, "I am fine, my dear daughter."

"Darryl!" Yvette was annoyed and was about to start a fight again. Suddenly, they heard an unusual sound.

Hiss!

Hiss!

The sound was unusual beyond any description. It sounded intimidating.

Darryl looked toward the location of the sound, and he was shocked. A two-feet tall, dark shadow moved toward them.

Hiss!

Darryl felt fear down his spine; he took a deep breath.

Chapter 618

It was a giant scorpion, and it moved toward them. The scorpion was about two feet long. It was a two feet long scorpion! His body was shiny-black, and its shell looked as hard as iron armor; it looked indestructible.

The giant insect had blood-red eyes; they looked like red rubies.

"Is that the Red Eye King Scorpion?"

Yvette shivered and shouted.

Darryl was shocked when he heard that. "You know about this thing?"

The Red Eye King Scorpion charged at them.

Yvette was the closest to it; she was swept by its tail and bounced into the air.

Bang!

She hit the stone wall before she landed on the ground. She vomited a mouthful of blood; her face was pale.

"Are you alright?" Darryl asked. He did not expect to see such a giant scorpion.

That hit even seemed effortless.

Yvette coughed; she was seriously injured. She said hurriedly, "It's the Red Eye King Scorpion. It only appears in ancient tombs and is extremely poisonous. Due to its long duration in the tomb, it will attack any human that it sees. Be careful!"

Right after she said that, the Red Eye Scorpion King roared and charged toward Darryl at an unimaginably high speed.

Darryl had the blood-drinking sword in his hand; he aimed it at the scorpion.

Darryl could not use his internal energy as the strong vibration might cause the ancient tomb to collapse. He had no choice but to use a weapon. No matter how strong the shell, the blood-drinking sword should be able to pierce through it.

Roar!

The king scorpion roared in pain as the blood-drinking sword pierced through its shell. It swept Darryl up, and he flew through the air.

Bang!

Darryl flew more than ten feet, and he landed on his stomach. Fresh blood sprayed from his lips.

The Red Eye King Scorpion raised its tail and aimed it at Darryl.

"Watch out, Darryl!" Yvette shouted.

Darryl sweated. The scorpion's tail was poisonous. The Red Eye King Scorpion was the king of the scorpions, so its poison could be worse. He might not survive it.

Darryl wanted to hide, but it was too late; the Red Eye King Scorpion was too fast for him.

It pierced its tail into Darryl's back and released the venom into his body.

"Argh!" Darryl shouted in pain. At the same time, he pierced his sword into the giant scorpion and took its life. The scorpion struggled on the ground and for a short while before it became motionless. It had died.

Darryl held his fists tightly. He felt numb on his back, and then he could no longer feel his body. He paled.

The next second, Darryl dropped onto the ground as he shook uncontrollably.

"Darryl! How are you feeling?" Yvette rushed toward him.

Darryl's lips quivered, but he could not speak. His whole body felt weak. Would he die?

Darryl's heart was filled with regrets. He thought

that he would find treasures in the ancient tomb. He did not expect to see a Red Eye King Scorpion before he could find the treasure. He also did not foresee that a scorpion would poison him.

Chapter 619

Yvette was worried when she saw Darryl's pale face. "Hang in there, Darryl."

Darryl smiled bitterly. "I am afraid that I can't. The venom had entered my bloodstream."

"Oh, yes, I have an idea! I know how to save you!" Yvette stood up immediately and rushed toward the dead Red Eye King Scorpion. She took the blood-drinking sword and dug out its eyes.

What did she want to do?

Darryl was not sure about Yvette's plan.

The woman returned with a pair of scorpion eyes, and her face was filled with excitement. "Open your mouth; this should cure the venom."

Yvette explained, "I read it in an old scripture at the New World. It was recorded that the Red Eye Kind Scorpion's eyes were also its soul."

Yvette continued to say, "You just needed to eat its soul, and it would cure the venom in your body. Also, no venom could poison you from here onward. However, no one had tried this for the past thousands of years as the Red Eye King Scorpion was not easily located."

As she spoke, she fed the eyes into Darryl's mouth.

Darryl could immediately feel the warmth in his body.

"I'll be cured after this? I will not get worse?" Darryl asked.

"You talked too much," Yvette replied.

After about ten minutes, Darryl's face looked much better. The numbness on his body had disappeared too.

It was incredible what the Red Eye King Scorpion's eyes could do. Darryl stood up and realized that the poison in his body had disappeared.

"I've saved your life. You must thank me for that." Yvette smiled.

Darryl did not say anything further; he took out his cell phone and turned on the torchlight. He was worried that another monster would appear in front of them again.

However, both of them were shocked when they saw what was in front of them.

About ten feet away, there was a huge crystal coffin; it was shiny and sparkling.

The body of a man laid in the coffin.

The man had snowy white hair, and he wore silver armor; a dragon was engraved on it. The man laid there motionlessly; they were not sure how long it had been since he had passed away. He still looked admirable.

The man was the owner of the ancient tomb.

Darryl walked toward the coffin with Yvette; he was amazed.

"Such a huge crystal coffin, and he's wearing silver armor. He must have been someone of significant importance when he was alive." Yvette sighed.

Darryl nodded as he looked around.

There was a stone stele beside the crystal coffin. It was about five feet tall, and it had words engraved on it.

Yvette rushed forward and looked at the stele. " Zhao Yun, also named Zilong, General of—"

Zhao Yun? They were in Zhao Yun's tomb? He was the God of Martial Arts, Zhao Zilong!

Darryl's mind went blank. He rushed toward the stele; he was utterly in shock.

Everyone had heard about Zhao Zilong! He had battled wars his whole life, and he had never been defeated. He was also known as the God of Martial

Arts.

They were in Zhao Zilong's tomb. How surreal!

Yvette saw Darryl's reaction. "What happened to you? Have you gone crazy?"

Yvette was from the New World, so she was not familiar with World Natural's history. Naturally, she had never heard about Zhao Zilong.

Darryl was still in shock.

Yvonne continued to read. "I have never accepted any student in my life. I hope that after I die, someone will be able to carry on my knowledge."

Yvonne sighed. "I have set a formation in my tomb, so not many people would be able to go through that. If you are reading this, you must have already passed the formation. Our connection has been destined. With that, I shall give you a set of my martial arts knowledge. It is engraved at the back of this stele, and I will also give you two Infinite Power Pills."

A set of martial art knowledge and two Infinite Power Pills?

Darryl was so excited. He rushed to check the back of the stele.

It was true; the scripture was engraved at the stele's

back, and under the stairs, there was a unique box. The box looked exquisite, even though it was made a few thousand years ago.

Chapter 620

Darryl took the box and opened it without any hesitation.

Once he opened the box, a ray of golden light shone through it. Two pills were in the box; they were gold and shiny.

They were the Infinite Power Pills!

"Infinite Power Pill; it's the Infinite Power Pill!" Daryl was so excited that his voice shook.

Everyone believed that the Qing Emperor had gathered everyone he could find to create an elixir for immortality. They had failed to achieve that. Instead, they made the Infinite Power Pill.

One could only consume the Infinite Power Pill once in a lifetime. Any Master General who took it would be able to upgrade his power by three levels immediately.

A Level One Master General would be upgraded to Level Four Master General after they consumed it, and a Level One Martial Saint would be upgraded to Level Four Martial Saint.

The Infinite Power Pill was one of the rarest elixirs in the world. After the fall of the Qing Dynasty, the

method to make the pill was lost.

The Infinite Elixir Manual only mentioned the Infinite Power Pill briefly, but it had not recorded any method to make it.

Darryl did not expect to find two Infinite Power Pills at the tomb.

Darryl and Yvette looked at each other, and both of them immediately popped a pill each into their mouth.

They could immediately feel the explosion of energy in their body!

Both of them sat on the floor as they felt their power continued to upgrade itself.

About three hours later, they had managed to absorb the Infinite Power Pill's effect fully. Darryl opened his eyes; he was delighted.

As expected, he was upgraded by three levels; he was a Level Four Martial Saint.

Darryl felt so excited. He threw some punches; he could feel that his power was much stronger than before that.

Then he looked at the stele again for information about the martial arts.

He mumbled, "The Immortal Energy Palm!" What

a name!

Darryl took a deep breath as he sat on the ground to look at the scriptures on the stele. Then he started to cultivate.

Yvette was equally excited. She sat beside Darryl and started to cultivate as well.

The Immortal Power Palm was very complicated; it was hard to understand and cultivate.

They concentrated on the cultivation; they did not even notice that more time had passed.

It had been a few days, and Darryl and Yvette were still in cultivation.

...

At Elysian Island.

It was chaotic in the main hall.

Dozens of maids were busy with decorations for a dinner reception.

It was an important day. The New World ambassadors would arrive at Elysian Island, and the sect master had set up a dinner reception to welcome them.

It was a night of unlimited supplies of alcohol and food. It was time for everyone to relax and have a

good time.

The Cult Mistress, Monica Vaughn, walked up and down the corridor outside her room. She looked nervous and unsettled. She was about to set a fire and leave Elysian Island at night.

At that moment, an elite member rushed forward. He was a closet follower, and Monica trusted him. She asked desperately, "Any news about Darryl?"

When Darryl left, he had promised to take her away from Elysian Island that night.

However, it had been so many days, and Darryl had not contacted her. Monica had no choice but to send someone to look for him.

The member replied, "Cult Mistress, I have searched all over Donghai City, but there is no trace of Elder Master."

Monica was worried when she heard that. She waved her hands and said, "That's fine. You may leave now."

'What happened? Why isn't Darryl here for me yet? Did he forget about me?' Monica thought nervously.

The dinner reception would commence in two hours. She would deliberately cause a fire and fake her death in it. Then she should be able to escape the island.

How could she leave Elysian Island without Darryl? Even if she could, where should she go?

Chapter 621

Monica bit her lips; she was nervous.

She decided to go ahead as planned to leave Elysian Island even if Darryl did not show up.

The night was the best time to leave the island; she would not get another chance if she were to miss that.

...

It was eight o'clock at night.

Everyone enjoyed their time at the dinner reception in the main hall.

Monica drank some alcohol and then bid farewell to the Grand Master of Heaven; she said she was not well. Then she returned to her room.

Grand Master of Heaven did not notice anything unusual as Monica had never been able to hold her liquor.

Once she was back at her room, Monica changed to an ordinary dress. She put on very simple makeup to avoid unnecessary attention.

Once everything was set, she took a torch, lit it and threw it onto her bed.

Soon, a massive fire broke out, and the fire had spread to a few houses nearby.

Monica bit her lips and ran toward the alley without another look back.

She had expected some trouble along the way, but nothing terrible happened. She arrived at the beach smoothly.

She jumped into one of the fishing boats and started the engine. As the boat moved, the Cult Mistress turned and looked at the fire at Elysian Island. She smiled.

Finally, she left.

At the same time, Darryl's image appeared in her mind.

'Darryl, where are you, why didn't you come for me? I shall go to Donghai City to look for you,' Monica thought.

Monica bit her lips until it bled.

The fishing boat moved very slowly. After a night on the boat, Monica finally arrived at Donghai City.

Monica was so excited when she left Elysian Island. Once she was ashore, she realized that she was in trouble.

She only knew that Darryl was in Donghai City. She

did not ask about where he lived. Most importantly, Monica had not used a cell phone for the years she was on the island.

She had a big problem. How could she find Darryl in such a vast city like Donghai City?

What should she do?

She stood by the shore; she looked beautiful but worried.

"My beautiful lady, do you need any help?" A suspicious man approached her with a smile.

That was Jay Nedley. He was a jobless petty thief; he stole what he could for a living.

Jay had noticed Monica when she came ashore.

He had many years of experience as a thief; he knew that the clutch in Monica's hand was a valuable item. There must be in the clutch too.

He was right. Monica's clutch was a custom-made one, and it was made from gold fabric. The material was an extremely rare one. Even though it was gold, it was as soft as a fabric.

Monica had brought all her jewellery with her when she left Elysian Island. She knew that she could trade them for money.

As she had left in a hurry, an agate bracelet hung

out of her clutch.

Jay was excited. It was his chance to get rich!

Jay looked away from the clutch to look at Monica.

What a beauty!

She looked as elegant as a goddess.

Jay gulped. "My beautiful lady, do you need any help?"

"No, thank you," Monica replied without any hesitation.

Then she headed to the road.

Monica had a plan in mind. Once she reached the city, she would trade her jewellery for cash and continue her journey to look for Daryl.

Jay did not give up. He followed her quickly. "You look like you are not from around here. I have no bad intentions. Just wanted to offer you some help since you are alone."

Monica stopped and looked at him. "I am here for someone. Do you know anyone named Darryl Darby? "

Even though he looked suspicious, she did not want to miss out on an opportunity.

Darryl?

Jay asked, "Is he a student from the Hexad School?"

Jay had been in town for a very long time, so he had many sources for news. Darryl was the Lyndon family's live-in son-in-law, he crashed Yvonne's wedding, and he was severely injured by Abbess Mother Serendipity. He had heard all about it.

Monica was delighted; she nodded. "Yes, yes, that's him! Do you know where he lives?"

Jay replied quickly, "You have asked the right person. Darryl and I are friends. I would visit him at his home, so, of course, I know where he lives."

Monica was so happy to hear that. "Can you take me there?"

That was the chance that Jay had waited for.

Jay smiled. "Of course, Darryl and I are friends. You can be my friend too. How could I not help you?"

He pointed toward a random neighborhood in front of them. "Darryl lives there, come with me."

He started to lead the way.

Monica followed him closely. She was so excited when she thought about meeting Darryl soon.

However, she did not let down her guard. Along the way, she asked further questions about Darryl.

Jay answered all of them, effortlessly. He replied with what he had heard. Darryl was famous in Donghai City, and with all the troubles he had got into—the lion slaughter event, crashing other people's wedding—everyone in Donghai City would have heard some news about him.

Monica started to trust Jay and decided to let her guard down around him.

How could he know so much about Darryl if he was not his friend? Soon, she followed Jay into a neighborhood.

The neighborhood looked like it had been abandoned for some time. There were very few people left.

Jay led the Cult Mistress to a building at the end of the street.

He opened the door and let her into the corridor.

Chapter 622

The building was an ancient one with no elevator. They walked up to the second floor when Jay stopped and said to the Sect Mistress, "My beautiful lady, this is where Darryl lives, go on and knock on the door."

Monica walked toward the door.

Right at that moment, Jay smiled and snatched the clutch when Monica was not paying attention. Then he turned around and started to run.

"You—" Monica shouted. She did not expect him to snatch her clutch. Was he not Darryl's friend? How disgraceful!

Monica had lived at Elysian Island as the Sect Mistress for quite some time. She had never been conned before that.

When she regained her senses, Jay was nowhere to be seen.

Monica bit her lips; she was furious, but she did not chase after him. Even though the clutch was valuable, she did not need the money as she had found Darryl.

Then she knocked twice on the door.

The Cult Mistress was so excited as she waited for Darryl to open the door.

Soon, the door opened. A middle-aged lady stood there as she looked at her. "Who are you looking for?"

"I am—" Monica was nervous. "I am looking for Darryl Darby."

'Who is this lady? Is she a cleaner?' Monica thought.

The middle-aged lady replied impatiently, "Darryl? There is no Darryl here. You have gotten the wrong address."

Then she slammed the door shut.

What?

Wrong address?

Monica stood there; she did not know what to do. She was nervous and angry.

When she finally gathered her thoughts, she realized that the man was only a thief.

Monica felt lost as she walked out of the neighborhood. Not only she did not manage to look for Darryl, but her clutch was stolen too. She had no money with her.

"Luckily, I did not lose these two books," Monica

mumbled to herself as she took the two books from her coat.

They were two volumes of the Supreme Mystery Scriptures!

Before Monica left Elysian Island, she had secretly taken the books from the Cult Master's room.

The Grandmaster Heaven Cult had joined the New World, so the two scriptures should not stay with them. That was what Monica though. She put the scriptures away and wandered on the road.

She felt lost in a city that she had never visited.

She did not know where to go. She had no money, so she sat on a bench outside a mall. The day got darker, and Monica started to worry.

Donghai City was so massive; how could she find Darryl if she just sat there? She decided to ask around if anyone knew about Darryl.

Even though the chances were slim, it was still better than to sit there and waited for him to show himself.

It got darker; the mall was about to close. Many people walked out of the mall.

Monica hesitated before she walked up to a young man and asked, "Excuse me, do you know Darryl

Darby?"

Even though Monica was conned earlier that night, she had no choice but to try again.

She had no money with her; she could not just sit and wait.

No matter what, she had to find Darryl.

The young man looked at her and replied, "You should go to the Lyndon residence to look for Darryl."

The young man tried to be sarcastic. Darryl was notorious in Donghai City; everyone had heard about him.

Monica did not expect a random person would know about Darryl.

She furrowed her brows when she heard his words.

Why would one go to the Lyndon residence to find Darryl?

Chapter 623

Monica wanted to ask more questions, but the young man had walked away.

After she asked a few other persons, Monica finally managed to find Lyndon residence's address. She decided to go straight there.

...

At the Lyndon residence.

Grandmother Lyndon had her morning tea in the hall.

A few of the younger members in the family chatted together happily.

Darryl, their live-in son-in-law, had made the Lyndon family a joke in Donghai City. Finally, they got rid of him.

A young boy walked into the hall and shouted, " Grandmother, there is a lady outside, and she's looking for Darryl."

A woman who looked for Darryl?

Grandmother Lyndon furrowed her brows when she heard the name. "Go! Go and check it out."

She strode toward the main hall, and the rest of the

family trailed behind her.

Monica was at the door.

Everyone was shocked to see her. She looked beautiful, attractive, and she had a sexy body.

"Who are you?" Grandmother Lyndon asked.

Monica smiled. "Excuse me, does Darryl live here?"

"What is your relationship with Darryl?" the grandmother asked.

The rest of the Lyndon family quietly looked at Monica, especially William.

How was the beautiful lady related to Darryl?

Was she another one of Darryl's women? Sh*t, how many affairs did he have?

Yvonne was one, and another one had appeared.

Monica felt uneasy as they stared at her. She forced a smile. "I am Darryl's friend."

Friend?

William smiled coldly. "I guess you are one of his mistresses. You looked beautiful and elegant, but you are just a cheap woman."

William's words ignited the fire in everyone. Everyone started to comment on her.

"What a cheap woman!"

"How evil is this woman?"

Everyone started to scold her.

Monica trembled in anger. "You—what are you all talking about?"

Everyone at Elysian Island fully respected her. She had never been scolded in such a manner.

"Alright, silence!" Grandmother Lyndon walked toward with her walking stick.

She looked at Monica. "Darryl is not here. The bastard is no longer related to the Lyndon family."

"Then—" Monica asked desperately, "Does he have any relatives in Donghai City?"

Grandmother Lyndon replied coldly, "He is the Darby family's second son. All his relatives are there at the Darby residence."

After that, the old grandmother led everyone back into the house.

Before she left, she turned and said, "Take care of yourself and your dignity as a woman. What do you get as Darryl's mistress? You are just a b*tch."

The door slammed shut after that.

Monica stood outside the house; her body trembled.

She was so ashamed and angry; she wanted to cry.

Chapter 624

The Cult Mistress felt really sad. She went to the Lyndon family with hope; she did not expect to be humiliated.

Monica bit her lips; she felt terrible. She waited a short while to calm down before she left the Lyndon residence. Then she headed to the Darby residence.

Grandmother Lyndon mentioned that Darryl's relatives were all at the Darby residence. She had to go and find out about that herself.

Half an hour later, at the Darby residence.

The Darby family had undertaken a large mall project.

The project was worth about ten billion bucks. Everyone had been very busy for the past few days; everyone was out for business. Yumi was the only one left at home. She checked the accounts to get the Darby family's income for the month.

One of the Darby family members ran toward her. " Sister, there is a lady at the door. She is looking for Darryl."

A woman was there for Darryl?

Yumi smiled. Someone had looked for Darryl at the Darby family's home? Everyone in Donghai City knew that Darryl had been banished from the family.

Yumi did not plan to meet her, but she was curious, so she went to the door.

About half an hour later.

The Cult Mistress sat anxiously in the hall as she waited for Darryl.

Yumi walked out to the hall. She was attracted by the Cult Mistress when she saw her.

The beautiful lady did not look familiar. She should be from somewhere significant; she did not seem like an ordinary person.

Yumi did not ask her to leave immediately. She asked Monica curiously, "How are you related to Darryl? Why are you looking for Darry?" Then she added, "I am Darryl's sister-in-law."

Monica replied to her immediately when she heard that Yumi was Darryl's sister-in-law, "I am Darryl' s good friend."

A good friend of Darryl?

Yumi was surprised; she smiled. When she saw Monica's scarlet red face, she believed that they

definitely had an unusual relationship.

Darryl seemed to have an affair with everyone.

"Sister, is Darryl here?" Monica asked excitedly.

Monica was exhausted. She had not had any food or water the entire day, and the Lyndon family had scolded her.

"Hmm..." Yumi smiled sarcastically. "He does not live here. From what I know, he is not at Donghai City."

Yumi was lying as she had no idea where the useless Darryl was.

'Darryl is not at Donghai City? What shall I do?' Monica was worried.

Monica was not sure what else to do. "Sister, I have just arrived in Donghai City, and all my money got stolen. I have nowhere to go." Monica had hoped that Yumi would let her stay as she had no money with her.

Yumi understood what Monica meant. She pretended to give it a thought before she said, "I am his sister-in-law, I should make some arrangements for you. However, the Darby residence is fully occupied. Besides, our family business is not doing well, so I could not give you any money too."

Monica was disappointed. She bit her lips and said, " I am not demanding anything. I just needed a place to stay and some food to eat while I waited for Darryl to return."

She had no other options.

Yumi smiled as she pretended to care. "Don't worry, you are Darryl's friend, so that makes us family. I will not let you go homeless."

Yumi continued to say, "Why don't I get a job for you? You can stay there and earn some money. I will let you know if I have any news from Darryl. What do you think?"

"That's great," Monica replied without any hesitation as she nodded. "Thank you so much."

The Cult Mistress sighed in relief. Finally, she had a place to stay. She still believed that Darryl's sister-in-law would never harm her.

"Great. Let me arrange something for you." Yumi stood up and reached for the phone.

Yumi's friend had opened a karaoke bar.

Yumi planned to recommend Monica to work there —Darryl's mistress with a job at such a place; he would be furious.

Yumi could not stop laughing when she thought of

that. She spoke softly into the phone, "Hi, I heard that you needed some help at your bar. I can recommend a beautiful lady."

The Cult Mistress sat there; she did not know what she would face soon.

Yumi ended the call and walked back to the hall with a smile. She gave the bar's address to Monica and told her the job had been arranged.

...

Half an hour later.

Monica arrived at the address that Yumi had given her; it was a newly opened karaoke bar.

Monica felt something not right when she arrived, but she kept her silence.

Darryl's sister-in-law had recommended her, perhaps the people there would take care of her.

The bar manager, a lady with really thick makeup, was Janette. Most people address her as Sister Janette.

Janette looked at Monica and nodded satisfactorily. "Not bad, such a beauty."

Janette's stare made Monica feel uncomfortable. She was not sure why she looked at her in such a manner.

"Sister Janette, thank you for taking care of me," Monica said lightly.

Janette smiled, "Don't worry; I will surely take care of you."

Yumi had mentioned in the call not to make any special arrangement or take extra care of Monica—no special treatment.

Chapter 625

At the ancient tomb in the Yellow Dragon Mountain.

Darryl and Yvette were still beside the crystal coffin; they were still in cultivation.

The Immortal Energy Palm was remarkably unique. After so many days, Darryl had yet to figure out the entire cultivation process completely. It looked like they still needed some more time.

Darryl and Yvette were so focused on their cultivation that they had forgotten where they were.

For the past few days, when Darryl was in cultivation, two significant incidents had happened.

First, it was the Elysium Gate.

The Elysium Gate had destroyed a few dark powers over the past few days. Everyone was so grateful to them.

The other incident was that a new sect had risen; it was the Flower Mountain Sect, and Dax was the Sect Master.

The Flower Mountain Sect had about ten thousand members since it started. Everyone wondered how a new sect could have ten thousand members.

After Darryl, Dax and Chester destroyed the Kunlun Sect, they captured all the members alive. Then Dax got all of them to join his Flower Mountain Sect.

...

At Kunlun Town.

It was a small town, located just below the Kunlun Mountain. It was well-known due to the Kunlun Sect.

Dax and Chester were in a bar at Kunlun Town for drinks. Their table had a lot of delicious food.

Dax was proud and happy ever since he set up the Flower Mountain Sect.

Chester asked, "Dax, how did you come up with the name—Flower Mountain Sect? Do you want to be the Monkey King?"

Even though Chester was proud of Dax's new Sect, he thought that the name was too funny.

Dax laughed. "Darry was the one who thought of the name. He mentioned it when I was talking about setting up a new sect. Come think about it; it is quite a funny name."

Both of them looked at each other and laughed.

"Oh, right." Dax suddenly took out his cell phone

and complained, "I called Darryl the other day to get him to meet us at the Kunlun Mountain to take a look at Leroy's treasure. He said that he would be there. It has been a few days now, and he is still not here, and I can't reach his cellphone."

Chester sighed. "Yes, what is he up to? I thought we could give him a surprise."

He reached out for a scripture.

The scripture had a green cover, and the words' Supreme Mystery Scripture' was written on its surface.

They had found the scripture in Leroy's treasure volt.

...

At the Carter family.

It was already autumn.

The Carter Mansion was very chaotic; it was a happy atmosphere.

Sara's birthday was in three days; everyone would be there for her birthday party.

Sara was in her room.

There were many golden masks on the shelf near the door; all the masks were unique.

The Elysium Gate members would be surprised if they were to see that.

The masks were the symbol of Sect Master Indomitable Darby. Everyone knew that the Indomitable Darby would put on a golden mask each time he appeared.

There were several Nine Dragons Justice Flags beside Sara's bed too.

Sara was a big fan of the Elysium Gate. She admired the Indomitable Darby; it was her dream to meet the man.

When she heard about how Elysium Gate had destroyed a few dark powers, Sara admired the Indomitable Darby even more. She thought that he was the world's greatest hero. She took a golden mask and wiped it carefully.

Chapter 626

Her father was Zoran, and her mother was Susan. She also had a sister, Rachel. Her family stood behind her. Everyone smiled as they looked at her.

Susan was worried. Her daughter admired the Indomitable Darby deeply—her room was filled with flags and masks.

Sara put on the mask she had just wiped and asked Rachel, "How do I look, Sister? Do I look like Indomitable Darby?"

Rachel laughed. "I had never met Indomitable Darby. Besides, all your masks are not genuine; they are just copies."

Then Rachel took a golden mask and wore it over her face.

Rachel also admired Indomitable Darby. All ladies would admire a hero like him.

Sara laughed. "When I meet him in the future, maybe he'd give me a real golden mask."

Susan and Zoran looked at each other and smiled when they heard what their daughter had said.

Susan said, "Sara, your 18th birthday is in three

days. Do you have any wishes?"

Zoran smiled. "You're an adult once you are 18 years old. Tell me your wishes, and I will try my best to fulfil it for you."

"Really?!"

Sara was excited; she immediately said, "I have two wishes! My first wish is that my brother, Darryl, can make it to my party."

She had not seen her brother for a while; she missed him.

Darryl? Zoran and Susan smiled.

Darryl was their godson. He would definitely be there for his godsister's birthday party.

Zoran nodded. "Very well, I will give him a call later. "

"Great!" Sara nodded and then continued to say, " My second wish is that Indomitable Darby will come to my birthday party."

Sara was a little embarrassed.

All her friends admired Indomitable Darby. They would definitely be jealous of her if he attended her party.

She looked forward to it.

Zoran was shocked, but he smiled.

It was the Elysium Gate's Sect Master; there was no way for Zoran to contact him. How would he send the invitation to him?

Before Zoran could reply, Rachel said, "Sister, Indomitable Darby is a hero, and I support your second wish. As for Darryl, he is a nobody."

Rachel was annoyed when she heard Darryl's name.

Sara replied, "Darryl is our brother. I think that he is as powerful as Indomitable Darby. Don't forget; he can produce elixirs too."

Sara had never understood the reason Rachel disliked Darryl. She felt that he was a nice person.

Rachel replied, "You may admit that Darryl is your brother, but I won't."

She continued to say, "Darryl and Indomitable Darby have the same last name. However, they are different. How could you compare both of them?"

To Rachel, Indomitable Darby was the only hero for her. It was an insult to compare Darryl with him.

Zoran furrowed his brows. "Rachel, why do you say that about your brother?"

Rachel was out of line. Susan also nodded; she

wanted Rachel to stop talking. She had begged Darryl multiple times before he promised not to speak about the peach blossom forest incident again.

Rachel did not notice Susan's signal. She continued to say, "Father, I am right. Indomitable Darby had defeated the Ten Villains, the Coastline Sect and the Spirit Flame Sect. Those were all great deeds."

Rachel smirked. "What about Darryl? He is just a useless person whom everyone despises."

Chapter 627

Zoran was annoyed when he heard Rachel belittled Darryl.

Susan sensed that the atmosphere was not right. " Fine, let's not talk about this anymore."

Susan looked at Sara and said, "Sara, we'll try to help you with your second wish, but we don't even know Indomitable Darby's real identity."

Zoran said, "That is right, no one had ever met him, and no one knew what he looks like, or how old he is."

"I don't care; I want to meet him." Sara insisted as she hugged Susan.

Susan smiled and looked at Zoran. "Why don't we get someone to send the invitation card to the Elysium Gate. Maybe Brother Indomitable Darby would come."

Even though she had not met him, Susan believed that the Elysium Gate Sect Master would be someone much older than her. That was why she addressed him as a brother.

"Fine." Zoran nodded.

He would try his best to fulfil his daughter's 18th

birthday wishes.

...

More time had passed at the ancient tomb at the Yellow Dragon Mountain.

Sigh.

Darryl took a deep breath and opened his eyes slowly—a bright light shone from his eyes!

He rose from the ground slowly.

Darryl felt the energy raised from his body; the atmosphere spun.

He had completed the Immortal Energy Palm cultivation.

Darryl smiled; he was excited. His trip to the ancient tomb had been very fruitful. Not only was he upgraded to the next three levels, but he also cultivated the Immortal Energy Palm. It was even better than the Ascension of the Nine Dragons.

Yvette was also delighted; she had also completed her cultivation. "The Immortan Energy Palm is so powerful; it was worthy of all the time we spent on it."

Darryl nodded.

She was right. They had been there for more than

twenty days, but it was worth the effort.

"Master Zhao Yun, I am forever grateful to you. I will never use this power to create trouble for our society." Darryl bowed to the crystal coffin; he was determined.

Yvette did the same; she took a bow and said, " Thank you, Master."

Even though she was a princess, she would still bow to her Master; she had taken his elixir and cultivated the Immortal Energy Palm.

"Good, let's go," Darryl said to Yvette, and they immediately left.

Darryl also destroyed the Immortal Energy Palm scripture on the stele before they left. It was a powerful scripture; it should not be seen by those who had bad intentions. It was better if it were destroyed.

Once they reached the cave entrance, they saw Royal Rat Guard and Royal Ox Guard had waited for them there.

Royal Rat Guard was delighted to see Yvette; he quickly went forward and greeted her.

Darryl was amazed by Yvette's Royal Guards. It was loyal of them to wait for her.

Ring! Ring!

Chapter 628

At that moment, Darryl's cell phone rang.

He furrowed his brows. There was no signal in the cave. Just as he stepped out, his cell phone immediately rang. He retrieved his cell phone and saw that it was Zoran.

Why would his Godfather call him?

Darryl immediately answered the call.

Zoran sounded happy when the call connected. " Darryl, why didn't you answer my call? I have been calling you multiple times."

"Godfather, I had been busy for the past few days. " Darryl smiled.

Zoran nodded to himself. "Listen, it's Sara's 18th birthday tomorrow, and you must come. You—"

What had happened?

Darryl looked at his cellphone; the battery had died. He had been in the cave for many days. Even though he had not used his cellphone, the battery was dead. The cell phone shut down before they finished the call.

Zoran had invited him to Sara's birthday party the

next day.

Darryl liked Sara; she was an adorable and lovely girl.

Darryl whistled. Soon, a white shadow flew across in the sky at high speed. It was the snow eagle.

The snow eagle had waited nearby when Darryl was in the cave. It had never left, and it was delighted to hear Darryl's whistle. It flew quickly to Darryl and accidentally knocked into him lightly.

Darryl touched his feathers and then leapt onto his back. Then they flew to the Carter Mansion.

Yvette stomped her feet.

"Hey, you're taking the snow eagle, but what about me? How do I get back to Donghai City?" Yvette asked.

Darryl shrugged. "You can do whatever you like; you have feet, don't you?"

"You—" Yvette bit her lips. "Why can't you invite me to ride the snow eagle? It can carry a few people. "

"Sorry, Princess Yvette." Darryl smiled. "I am heading to the Carter Mansion in Mid City. You will need to find your own way home."

Darryl petted the snow eagle's neck. The giant bird

chirped and spread its wings before it flew away.

"Darryl, wait for me!" Yvette trembled in anger; she clenched her fists. She felt embarrassed when she remembered what had happened in the cave; she had massaged his leg and greeted him as her father. Her face was scarlet red as she thought about what had happened.

...

Darryl was on the snow eagle, and they were high in the sky.

He was not sure why, but Darryl felt as if something was missing. It felt like it was something important, but he could not recall what it was.

He had forgotten that he was to rescue the Cult Mistress. When he left the cave, he was interrupted by Zoran's call, and then he forgot about that.

Chapter 629

At the Carter Mansion in Mid City.

It was six at night, and the day had not gotten dark yet. The entire Carter Mansion was lit up with colorful lights. The garden, corridor and everywhere else were filled with lights.

It was Sara's birthday party the next day. Everyone in the Carter family decorated the mansion happily.

A big, white eagle flew across the sky.

"Wow, what a big eagle!"

"It's so beautiful. Wait, there is someone on the eagle!"

"Is that Master?"

"Master is back."

The entire Carter family was amazed to see Darryl on the snow eagle.

The giant eagle dove down and landed in the garden.

Everyone gathered to look at the snow eagle. Everyone was curious, but none of them stepped closer to the bird.

The snow eagle was excited to see everyone; it

flapped its wings continuously.

"That's good. Go on and play." Darryl smiled as he spoke to the snow eagle.

The snow eagle spread its wings and flew off; it disappeared into the sky.

Everyone was amazed; what an incredible creature!

Darryl walked through the crowd and into the hall. Then he realized he did not bring a present with him.

Sara was the nicest person in the Carter family. How could he not have prepared a big present for her 18 th birthday?

He immediately took his cell phone and dialed Zephyr's number and asked him to get a gift for the birthday girl.

After that, Darryl entered the hall. Two beautiful ladies also entered the hall at the same time.

They were Sara and Rachel, and they were beautiful in their own way.

Sara was in a short white dress, and it showed off her body perfectly. She looked lovely.

Rachel was in a pair of tight black pants, and she looked sexy.

"Brother Darryl!"

Sara was surprised and excited to see Darryl. She ran toward him and hugged the man tightly.

Darryl enjoyed the moment. Sara had grown into a perfect lady.

Darryl smiled. "Sara, did you miss me?"

Sara nodded. "Yes, every single day!"

Chapter 630

Darryl touched her head; his little sister was too adorable!

Rachel furrowed her brows and said, "Sara, get down at once!"

How could she hug that useless man? How could he hug her in such a manner? That was too impolite!

"I don't care; I am happy." Sara smiled. "Brother Darryl, what are you giving me for my birthday tomorrow?"

Darryl smiled. "Don't worry, Little Girl. I've prepared a big present for you. Someone will send it here tomorrow. It's a surprise!"

"Really?" Sara was so happy; she kissed Darryl on his cheek. "Brother Darryl, you are the best!"

Darryl smiled awkwardly.

"Sara!" Rachel was annoyed. Sara would turn eighteen the next day; she was an adult. How could she kiss someone like that, especially Darryl?

Darryl ignored Rachel and smiled. "Tell me, Sara. What are your wishes? Let me fulfil your birthday wish."

Sara was too cute; Darryl treated her like his biological sister.

Sara said excitedly, "I have two wishes! The first one was for you to attend my birthday party. This is fulfilled now. My other wish is to meet the Elysium Gate Sect Master, Indomitable Darby."

"Brother Darryl, could you invite him to my party?"

Darryl was delighted. It seemed like Zephyr had managed the Elysium Gate well; Sara really admired the sect.

Darryl felt complicated. It was easy to fulfil her wish to meet Indomitable Darby, but he could not be there as two persons at the same place, and at the same time.

Darryl gave it a thought and said, "He is always away, so I will not be able to invite him. Why don't I invite his other members—Henry Bi-General, The Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters?"

Sara was so excited when she heard that. "Really?"

She jumped up and down. Even though Indomitable Darby could not be there, Henry Bi-General, the Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters were great too. All her friends would envy her.

Darryl nodded. "Since when have I ever lied to you?

I shall invite them to your birthday party tomorrow. "

Rachel laughed and said, "What a liar! Do you think they'd be so free to attend the party?"

Would the great heroes have the time to attend a young girl's birthday party? It sounded ridiculous!

Rachel stared at Darryl and said, "Don't lie to Sara. It 's her birthday tomorrow. Don't just give her an empty promise. That's a terrible thing to do!"

Darryl had arrived empty-handed and lied to Sara that the present would only be there the next day.

It was ridiculous to think that he could invite heroes from the Elysium Gate to the party.

Rachel despised Darryl.

'Sh*t! What is wrong with Rachel? Why is she interrupting my conversation with Sara?' Darryl thought. He was annoyed with her.

He looked at Rachel and smiled coldly. "Who told you that they would not come? The people from the Elysium Gate will accept my invitation."

Chapter 631

"Why would they listen to you?" Rachel laughed. " Who do you think you are? Why would the Elysium Gate listen to you? You are only a live-in son-in-law."

Rachel laughed louder. "As far as I know, you are not even a live-in son-in-law now. I heard that the Lyndon family had banished you. No one would give a damn about you, especially the Elysium Gate. What a liar!"

Darryl was furious, but he smiled and said, "I refuse to speak to you."

He turned and walked away.

Rachel held Sara's hand and said again, "Sara, stay away from this useless man."

...

In a cinema on Red Flag Street, in Donghai City.

Lily and Wade sat on the last row at the VIP theatre. Wade was Samanthat's candidate for Lily's boyfriend.

Lily had a tub of popcorn as they watched the romance movie on the screen.

It was a sad story. Lily cried when the lead male character broke up with the female character.

'Lilybud, you can cry on my shoulder," Wade said gently.

Lily smiled. "Thank you, but I am fine."

Wade took a deep breath as he found the courage to hold on to Lily's hand as he smiled. "Lilybud, this movie is so touching. Shall we go for coffee after this? We can go hiking tomorrow since I am free. Let 's go for a relaxing hike."

Wade looked at Lily enthusiastically.

Since they started to date about over a week ago, he had not had the chance to hold Lily's hand. He itched to hold her hands.

Lily panicked when Wade held her hand. She replied, "I don't wish to go anywhere tomorrow. Maybe next time."

Wade was surprised. "Why?"

Lily bit her lips and said, "I am not ready."

"What do you need to prepare for hiking? You just need a set of sports attire," Wade said with a smile. "Come with me, please, Lilybud?"

Lily could not reject him, so she agreed to go with

him.

After a few days with Wade, Lily felt that he was a nice person.

He was good looking, and he was rich; he was the perfect candidate for a boyfriend. Even though Lily was conservative, she did not pull her hand back; she let Wade keep it in his grasp.

...

The next day in the Carter Mansion in the Mid City.

It was Sir Carter's youngest daughter's birthday party. The mansion had a great festive atmosphere.

Sir Carter had always favored his youngest daughter, so many people came to celebrate her 18 th birthday.

Many types of luxurious cars were parked at the lot near the garden.

Representatives from many famous families and various sects were there to attend Sara's birthday party.

Even though everyone was there to attend the birthday party, they were also there because of Zoran.

The Carter family was a famous cultivator family. The whole family were cultivators, especially Zoran.

He was well respected by everyone, including the sect masters from the Six Sects. Furthermore, Zoran 's wife, Susan, was also renowned for her knowledge about formation. She had an advanced understanding of them.

That was why all the sects respected the Carter family and why they were there to celebrate Sara's birthday.

Chapter 632

The guests crowded the garden.

All the senior leaders sat at the VIP tables; Master Leonard, Master Reed and Abbess Mother Serendipity were there. Besides that, the Beggars' Sect Master and Island of Peach Blossom Sect Master were there too.

Sara's birthday was a significant event in the cultivation world.

There was another table in front, and it was filled with presents from everyone. The gifts came in all sorts and sizes, and it included a one-meter-tall jade buddha sculpture and a pure gold sword.

The guests were from all walks of life; they were unsure what Sara would love to receive. So, most of them picked the most expensive gift.

They thought they should spare no expense for a daughter from the Carter family.

Zoran and Lily walked into the hall with their two daughters.

Zoran wore a long robe; he looked formal and kind.

Susan wore a long red dress; she looked as sexy as

she usually did. The dress' high cut at her thigh displayed her beautiful long legs. That sight attracted everyone.

Wow!

Everyone was amazed at Susan's beauty.

The guests also paid attention to the sisters, Rachel and Sara.

Both of them had inherited their mother's good looks and perfect body. They looked far too beautiful for their age.

"Wow, Sir Carter is so lucky! He has an attractive wife and two beautiful daughters."

"Yes, anyone would be so lucky to be the Carter family son-in-law."

"It is my dream to marry one of the two sisters."

All the men chatted softly.

Zoran smiled and greeted everyone. "Thank you for sparing your time to attend my daughter's birthday party. I am forever grateful. Please enjoy yourselves. "

Susan stood beside him; she looked so elegant as she smiled and nodded at everyone.

The guests nodded back at her.

"Sir Carter, we will definitely enjoy ourselves."

"Yes, we can drink to our heart's content."

Zoran nodded and turned to his daughter. "Sara, the guests are here for your birthday, so please say a few words."

Sara smiled. "Thank you for coming to my birthday party. I am so happy you are here. Please enjoy yourselves and drink as much as you can."

Everyone laughed. Sir Carter's daughter was too adorable.

Sara looked around and pulled Rachel aside. "Sister, why is Brother Darryl not here? Is he not awake yet? "

Not only was Darryl not there, but none of the members from the Elysium Gate had arrived too.

Sara looked disappointed.

Chapter 633

When they saw the disappointment on Sara's face, Zoran and Lily looked at each other and sighed.

Zoran did all he could to invite members from the Elysium Gate, but he did not manage to get them to the party.

The Elysium Gate Sect had always been mysterious; no one really knew them.

"Sara!"

Suddenly a voice called out. Someone walked happily toward the family.

It was Darryl!

Darryl was dressed formally in traditional attire.

He looked smart and handsome after he dressed up.

"Brother Darryl!"

Sara rushed forward excitedly. "Brother Darryl, you look so smart today."

Darryl laughed. "Well, it is my sister's birthday; of course, I have to look smart."

Before Sara could reply, Rachel said sarcastically, "

Not bad for an animal."

Darryl's good mood immediately vanished. He went to sit at the VIP table.

Darryl was Zoran's godson, so, of course, he could sit at that table.

Once he sat down, Darryl could feel as if someone had set their eyes on him.

It was Abbess Mother Serendipity; she stared at Darryl coldly. It was the same with the sect masters from the Six Sects; all of them looked at him coldly.

Darryl was not worried at all.

He was already a Level Four Martial Marquis. His exceptional skills included the Ascension of the Nine Dragons, the Grand Destruction Art, and the Immortal Energy Palm. 2

Darryl raised his glass and took a sip of the delicious drink. He had nothing to worry about with his capability, even if he were to meet a Martial Saint. Besides, who would dare to challenge him at Carter's Mansion?

Darryl smiled as he looked at Abbess Mother Serendipity.

Abbess Mother Serendipity slammed her hand on the table and pointed at Darryl. "Darryl, you

bastard! How dare you come here?"

Darryl smiled. "This is my godfather's residence, why couldn't I be here?"

Abbess Mother Serendipity furrowed her brows.

Everyone in their community had heard the news about how Zoran had taken Darryl in as his godson. Hence, it was logical for Darryl to be there.

'How could this bastard sit at the same table as me?' Abbess Mother thought.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious; she was about to draw her sword.

Zoran felt as if something was not right. He smiled and said, "Everyone, today is my daughter's birthday. Let's put down all of our differences and have a good time."

Abbess Mother Serendipity had no choice but to sit down. However, she still stared at Darryl furiously.

"The President of Mid City's La Fortuna, with a gift from the Qing Dynasty."

One of the servants announced as more guests arrived.

"The Red Blade Sect Master, with a Green Level Weapon gift—a blue water sword."

"The President of Stary Entertainment Company,

with a gift of a crystal diamond ring."

After about an hour, almost all the guests had arrived. Zoran smiled and announced, "Great! Let's enjoy ourselves tonight. Let the feast begin!"

Chapter 634

Rovan clapped his hands, and a few hundred waitresses walked out with plates of delicious food.

The dishes were served; all of them were Mid City's luxurious food choices.

All the guests were amazed by the selection.

The Carter family was very generous; each dish would have easily cost them ten thousand bucks!

Just as everyone started to enjoy their delicious food and drinks, a servant announced from the entrance.

"Elysium Gate Sect Master!"

What?!

Elysium Gate Sect Master?!

Everyone was in shock as they turned to look at the entrance.

How capable was the Carter family that they could invite the Elysium Gate Sect Master to a birthday party at their home!

The Elysium Gate Sect Master, Indomitable Darby, had always maintained his mysterious identity. No

one had ever met him in person. Everyone waited to see who he was.

Darryl was stunned. What had happened? Indomitable Darby? Who was the imposter?

The Six Sects were furious; Indomitable Darby had used the Weak Poison to capture all of them and humiliated them at the Wishing Star Tower. They would never forget about that.

Everyone held their fists tightly as they waited for Indomitable Darby, especially Master Leonard and Abbess Mother Serendipity. Both of them were forced to go through a wedding ceremony at the Wishing Star Tower.

Zoran and Lily looked at each other; they were quite surprised. 1

Zoran took a deep breath. He tried his best to invite Indomitable Darby to the party, but he had failed. Why would he be there? However, it was a happy surprise. "Hurry! Please invite him in."

Sara, who sat beside him, almost jumped up excitedly. "Indomitable Darby is here? This is great! "

When Susan told her that they did not manage to invite her hero from the Elysium Gate, she had been so disappointed about it. She thought she had failed

to get her birthday wish.

She did not expect God would give her a surprise; Indomitable Darby had arrived at her party!

'Indomitable Darby' walked toward the party slowly.

He was dressed how the real Indomitable Darby would usually dress. A black robe that would not show his figure and a golden mask to hide his face.

'Indomitable Darby' walked slowly with his hands behind his back; he looked sombre.

Everyone's attention was on him.

Darryl laughed discreetly. He must have been very famous that someone would try to impersonate him. First Yvette, and then someone else had done it again.

Well, the imposter had done an excellent job.

"Indomitable Darby." Everyone stared at the fake ' Indomitable Darby'.

Master Leonard shouted, "Indomitable Darby, how dare you show your face here! You have captured and humiliated everyone at the Wishing Star Tower. We want revenge!"

Master Leonard took a deep breath. "Since it is Sara' s birthday today, I will not cause a scene. We will settle this after the party is over."

Master Leonard turned to look at Abbess Mother Serendipity.

She focused her sharp eyes at the fake 'Indomitable Darby'.

Yvette had impersonated Indomitable Darby at the Wishing Star Tower, and she had forced Abbess Mother Serendipity to go through a wedding ceremony; she even kissed her on her cheek!

She was furious when she thought about the kiss. She wanted to teach him a lesson until he would kneel and beg for her forgiveness!

Chapter 635

"Bastard!" Abbess Mother Serendipity almost shouted.

The fake 'Indomitable Darby' laughed. "Abbess Mother Serendipity, the kiss and the humiliation that you and the other sects had suffered at the Wishing Star Tower were all a misunderstanding. I didn't expect that Master Leonard and Abbess Mother Serendipity would still keep a grudge about it."

Abbess Mother Serendipity felt a shiver down her spine. "Bullsh*t! I will kill you after the party ends!"

Then she went back to her seat; she was still furious.

Darryl stared at the imposter; he was curious about him. The young man really did look like the real Indomitable Darby. Why would he want to impersonate Darryl's other personality? What would he gain from that?

The fake 'Indomitable Darby' apologized to Zoran. " Sir Carter, I heard that you wanted to invite me to a party, so here I am."

"Sect Master Darby!" Zoran laughed. "Sect Master Darby, my daughter, Sara, is a big fan of yours. It is

incredible that you are here!"

"Yes," Susan added, "I am also your fan."

Susan had heard that Elysium Gate's Indomitable Darby was also a master of formations. It would be great if he could teach her a few new formations.

"My hero!" Sara ran toward him happily; she wanted to hug him.

Darryl stood up from his seat and stopped Sara.

He looked at the imposter and smiled. "Excuse me, are you really the Elysium Gate Sect Master? Are sure you are not an imposter?"

Wow!

Everyone looked at Darryl when he said that!

Why would he say something like that?

"Darryl!" Susan walked toward him and said worriedly, "Nonsense! Do you mean he is a fake?"

Darryl smiled coldly. "Aunt Susan, Indomitable Darby and I have a great relationship; he is a close friend of mine. This is not him."

Everyone started to laugh.

Did Darryl say that he and Indomitable Darby were close friends? How could that be?

"Aunt Susan, please throw this imposter out."

Darryl sighed.

Susan bit her lips and scolded Darryl, "Darry, don't be rude."

'Darry is great in all aspects. However, he's too arrogant and loves to brag. How would he know Indomitable Darryl? They are best friends? It sounds surreal,' Susan thought.

Rachel looked at Darryl. "You can tell all your lies privately, but there are too many people here."

Then Rachel took a glass of wine and splashed it onto Darryl's face. "How pathetic! Yesterday night, you said you could invite Henry Bi-Generals, the Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters. Where are they now? Perhaps you could not lie any further now that their Sect Master is here?"

Darryl was furious. Was there something wrong with Rachel?

Darryl was about to explode, but the fake ' Indomitable Darby' walked toward them and said, " Whether I am the real Indomitable Darby or not, it is not up to you to decide. Who you think you are?"

Sh*t!

'He's an imposter and yet he thinks that he can be arrogant about it?' Darryl thought.

Darryl was about to speak when Zoran replied, "

Darryl, go back to your seat, please; don't cause a scene."

Darryl decided not to say anything and went back to his seat. He waited to see what the fake ' Indomitable Darby' wanted.

The imposter smiled at Zoran. "Sir Carter, I came in a hurry and so I did not bring a valuable gift with me. Here are a few barrels of apricot blossom wine for you; I hope you will accept them."

Then he clapped his hands.

A few men-in-black walked into the hall; each of them carried a barrel of wine.

There was some mud at the bottom of the barrels, and the red label looked faded. It was apparent that they were kept for more than a few hundred years. Everyone knew that the longer the wine was stored, the better the quality, especially apricot blossom wine.

Zoran smiled. "Thank you, Sect Master Darryl. It is our honor to have you here today. How could I accept these wines from you?" 1

As they spoke, the waitressed served all the guests a glass of said wine.

Zoran invited the fake 'Indomitable Darby' to sit at the VIP table.

Then he raised his glass and shouted, "Everyone, thank you for attending my daughter's birthday dinner. Cheers!"

Everyone raised their glasses and started to drink.

Everyone also took the opportunity to build more connections during dinner.

After a few rounds, the fake 'Indomitable Darby' stood up and raised his glass to Zoran. "Cheers, Sir Carter!" Then he emptied the glass.

Zoran laughed and emptied his glass too.

The fake 'Indomitable Darby' looked around and shouted, "On this special occasion, I have a request for Sir Carter, and I hope that you would accept it."

Chapter 636

The fake 'Indomitable Darby' cleared his throat and said, "Sir Carter, I have a simple request for you. I have a friend named Ewan White. He was a childhood friend of your elder daughter, Rachel. On his behalf, I would like to ask for your daughter's hand in marriage."

Susan was shocked. How did Ewan know Indomitable Darby?

Darryl furrowed his brows; he was furious with Ewan.

When Rachel tried to trick him at the peach blossom forest, Ewan appeared out of nowhere and pushed Darryl into the woods. It was fortunate that Darryl found the Bai Qi Formations. Otherwise, he would be trapped to die in the forest.

The imposter wanted to arrange for marriage for Ewan.

Darryl looked around, but he could not find Ewan. Was he the imposter?

Ophelia was at Sara's birthday party. Ewan was her beloved follower, so he would definitely be nearby too. Ophelia was there with a few of her followers,

but Ewan was nowhere to be seen.

Susan said, "Well, since Sect Master Darby had personally requested for this marriage, let's agree to it, Zoran."

It was a complicated decision for Zoran. He thought that his godson, Darryl, was the perfect candidate for his elder daughter, Rachel.

However, how could he refuse Indomitable Darby's request?

Zoran was about to agree to the request when he heard a long sigh.

Darryl shook his head; there was a complicated expression on his face. "Godfather, how many times do I need to tell you that this Indomitable Darby is an imposter. Don't fall into his trap."

Darryl knew that the imposter was Ewan. He pretended to be the Elysium Gate Sect Master so that he could ask to marry Rachel.

"Darryl, stop fooling around!" Susan said.

Darryl could not stand it anymore; he stood up and said, "Aunt Susan, I am not lying. I am very close to Indomitable Darby. I can swear that this is an imposter. Trust me."

Everyone laughed after they heard Darryl's words.

Rachel laughed too. "Darryl, who do you think you are to know Indomitable Darby?"

The imposter shook his head. "Sir Carter, your godson is very annoying. Didn't you teach him manners?"

"Sir Carter, the Elysium Gate members are here!"

A servant announced.

Everyone could hear the footsteps clearly.

The guests looked at the door; no one made a sound.

A giant flag made its appearance, followed by almost a thousand people. All of them were in traditional black costumes; they looked smart and impressive!

Henry Bi-General led the troop, followed by the Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters.

What?!

Everyone was stunned. All the heroes from the Elysium Gate were there.

Then, everyone turned to look at the fake ' Indomitable Darby'.

The Elysium Gate Sect Master had brought all of his followers to attend the party! How grand!

The imposter started to tremble; he did not expect

the Elysium Gate Sect to be there. His secret would be revealed!

Sara danced up and down when she saw all of them. "They look so impressive!"

Then she turned to look at the fake Indomitable Darby; she was fascinated by him.

Just like the rest of the guests, she still thought that he was the real Indomitable Darby.

Finally, Henry Bi-General, the Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters stood in front of the fake Indomitable Darby.

The entire party fell silent; it was as if they waited for the newcomers to greet the Indomitable Darby.

However, Zephyr shouted, "Who are you? How dare you impersonate Elysium Gate Sect Master!"

Slap!

Zephyr lashed out at the fake 'Indomitable Darby'.

His golden mask flew off and dropped onto the floor, and he was flung more than ten feet away. He landed in the middle of the hall.

What?! The Indomitable Darby was a fake?!

The Carter family were shocked to see who was beneath that mask.

Ewan White?

"Ewan, how could you—" Zoran was furious. "How dare you!"

Not only did he pretend to be Indomitable Darby, but he had also asked to marry his daughter in front of everyone.

Chapter 637

Ewan paled as he panicked.

Rachel was worried.

Both of them had come up with the plan to impersonate the Elysium Gate Sect Master.

When the Carter family did not manage to get any response from Indomitable Darby despite their multiple invitations, Rachel knew that the hero would never make it to the party. That was when she had the idea to get Ewan to pretend to be the Elysium Gate Sect Master.

Not only could she fulfil her little sister's wish, but they could also use the opportunity to ask for their father's consent for their marriage. It's a win for everyone.

Rachel did not expect the Elysium Gate's members would make an appearance.

At that moment, the thousands of followers went to Darryl and bowed to him. "Brother Darryl."

Their voices were as loud as thunder.

When Darryl sent a message to Zephyr with a request for him to prepare a birthday present, he

had ordered him not to reveal his identity at the party. That was why they addressed him as Brother Darryl.

Everyone was stunned when they heard that.

Did the Elysium Gate heroes address him as ' Brother Darryl'?

Everyone was astonished.

Especially Susan, Rachel and Sara were in shock.

Darryl nodded hastily as he said to Zephyr, "Great, you are all here. It is my godsister's birthday today. Please enjoy yourselves."

Darryl glared at Ewan.

"And take care of this imposter," Darryl said coldly.

"Yes, Brother Darryl," Zephyr replied obediently. He stared at Ewan as he headed toward him. He kicked at the imposter's face.

Zephyr kicked him hard. Ewan shouted as his face bled profusely.

"How dare you pretend to be the Elysium Gate Sect Master?" Zephyr said coldly.

The Elysium Gates' members pulled out their swords as well!

Everyone was stunned.

Ewan almost lost his mind as his wounds continued to bleed. He quickly knelt in front of Zephyr and begged him. "Brother Dixon, I didn't mean to do it! Please forgive me! Please forgive me—"

Bang! Zephyr kicked him again before he could finish.

Ewan screamed; his nose was broken.

Zephyr did not stop there; he gave Ewan a few more kicks to his face.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Each kick got heavier and stronger.

Everyone was scared about what had happened.

Ewan's face was also swollen.

Finally, Zephyr stopped. He put his long blade against Ewan's neck and said coldly, "No one can challenge the dignity of the Elysium Gate. You have insulted our Sect Master; how should I forgive you? "

"No one can challenge the dignity of the Elysium gate!"

"Kill him!"

Ewan was terrified; he continued to bow and said, " Heroes of Elysium Gate, please forgive me! I will

never dare to do it again."

"Never dare to do this again? It's too late for that!" Zephyr said coldly as he raised his long blade; he was ready to strike against Ewan.

"Hero Dixon!" Rachel shouted when she saw the Zephyr raised his long blade; she rushed toward them and begged. "Hero Dixon, please forgive him, he will not do it again."

What would she do if Ewan was killed?

Zephyr furrowed his brows. "Miss Carter, this is the Elysium Gate's matter, you should not interfere."

Zephyr sounded determined!

Rachel shivered, and her face was pale. After some hesitation, she walked toward Darryl.

She bit her lips and said, "Darryl, please help me to persuade him. Ewan does not deserve to die."

Rachel could see that the Elysium Gate respected Darryl. Perhaps they would spare Ewan's life if Darryl could say a few words.

She was unwilling to ask for Darryl's help, but she had no choice! She could not just leave Ewan to his death!

Chapter 638

Darryl looked at Rachel as he took a sip of this drink. "Why should I help him?"

'Ewan was the one who threw me into the peach blossom forest. Now he is lying to everyone as he pretended to be me. Why should I help him? Besides, you have always looked down on me, and now you want my help?' Darryl thought.

Rachel was worried; she bit her lips until it bled. She grabbed Darryl's arm and begged. "I begged you, please. I will call you brother if you wish. Brother Darryl, please tell them to let Ewan go. Please help him. I am begging you..."

Darryl smiled coldly, but he did not say anything.

It was too late to call him a brother now.

"It's out of my hands," Darryl said impatiently as he put down his glass.

Rachel's knees almost buckled; her face was full of regret. She should not have asked Ewan to pretend to be Indomitable Darby, but it was too late.

"Darryl."

A lady stood up and called for Darryl; it was Ophelia

Lane.

Ophelia looked really sexy. She wore a wine-red pencil skirt that showed her bodyline, a pair of stilettos and she also let her long curly hair down—all those made her even sexier.

Ophelia bit her lips. Ewan was one of her talented followers; she could not let the Elysium Gate execute him.

"Darryl, are you able to save Ewan?" Ophelia said lightly, "No matter what, I am your master, and Ewan is also my disciple."

Darryl looked at Ophelia and sighed.

When Abbess Mother Serendipity had badly injured Darryl, Ophelia had used the Yang Herb to save him, and so Darryl had agreed to be her follower.

"Master, I don't wish to save him," Darryl said with a shrug.

Ophelia was worried; she walked toward Darryl and whispered, "I am asking for a favor; please save Ewan. I will owe you for this favor."

Darryl could smell the scent of her body as she spoke; he shivered.

Since Ophelia had asked for a favor, Darryl nodded his agreement. "Fine."

Ophelia had given him the Nine Day Yin Yang herb to heal his severe injuries. He had to do it to repay her.

Darryl stood and waved at Zephyr. "Alright, please do me a favor and release Ewan."

"Sure, Brother Darryl." Zephyr nodded, but he kicked at Ewan's face again. "Get lost!"

"Yes..."

The last kick broke a few of Ewan's teeth, and he dropped onto the floor.

Zephyr looked at Ewan coldly. "I am letting you go because Brother Darryl asked me to do that. If you dare to impersonate anyone from the Elysium Gate again, I would definitely kill you then."

"Thank you, Hero, for not killing me! Thank you, thank you!" Ewan mumbled as he gathered his energy to stand up and ran away.

Zephyr laughed as he watched Ewan disappear. Then he stepped toward Zoran. "Sir Carter, Brother Darryl had invited the Elysium Gate to your daughter's party."

Zephyr looked at Darryl.

Sara was so excited that she ran toward Darryl and hugged him. "Thank you, Brother Darryl!"

'Brother Darryl had promised me that he would invite the heroes of the Elysium Gate to my party, and he had done it!' Sara thought.

"That's alright." Darryl patted Sara on her head. Even though she had just reached adulthood, her body was no lesser than an adult.

Zoran laughed excitedly. "It is our honor to have you here."

Henry Bi-General, the Four Warlords and the Ten Heaven Masters were all famous heroes from the Elysium Gate.

Their attendance certainly made the Carter family proud!

Chapter 639

Zephyr smiled and continued to say, "We are here for a birthday party, so we did not come empty-handed. We brought a present for Miss Carter."

Nimbus walked forward with a unique gift box.

Wow!

Everyone wondered what was in the gift box.

Then Nimbus opened the box and took out something gold and shiny.

It was a golden mask!

The golden mask was Indomitable Darby's symbol.

The mask was carefully crafted, with a few dragons engraved on it. The dragons looked as if they were floating.

The one that Ewan wore was only a toy.

"How beautiful..."

Sara was very excited when she received the mask; she was struck dumb.

Nimbus laughed. "Miss Sara, our Sect Master ordered it especially for you. It is the same as the

one he has. He said that you are beautiful and kind, and so, you deserve to have the same mask too."

Nimbus looked around before he said, "The golden mask is the symbol of the Elysium Gate Sect Master's identity. If you are ever in danger, you can bring it to the Elysium Gate, and any of our members will be at your service! The mask is akin to our Sect Master."

What?!

She could use the mask to control the members?

The Elysium Gate had grown drastically; they already had tens of thousands of members.

That gift was very precious!

Everyone was amazed, and they looked at Sara with envy.

Sara was so excited that her voice shook. "Is this true?"

She held the mask; her head spun so quickly that she almost fainted.

Zoran and Susan looked at each other; they were still in shock.

They had never met Indomitable Darby, so they did not expect he would be so kind to their daughter. The mask could control the Elysium Gate members!

Zoran trembled. "I do not know how to repay Sect Master Darby's generosity. Please take a seat."

Zephyr smiled. "That's alright, Sir Carter. We will just take a drink, and then we will have to leave."

Zephyr emptied the glass in front of him and left with the rest of the members.

Zoran knew that the Elysium Gate was busy and so he did not ask them to stay. He bid farewell to all of them, and the party resumed.

All the other guests enjoyed themselves as they drank and made new friends. The party lasted until late in the evening.

Many of the guests were drunk, and some even sat under the table.

Zoran invited his guests to stay overnight as the day was late. They had a huge mansion, and there were plenty of rooms for everyone.

Everyone agreed, and the servants helped the guests to their room.

Darryl was speechless when he realized that the Emei Sect's guest room was next to his!

Darryl would not have dared to sleep in that room as he would be terrified that Abbess Mother Serendipity would kill him. However, he was no

longer worried about that.

Chapter 640

When the party ended, the day was already dark, and the moon shone brightly in the sky.

Everyone was already in their room to rest for the night. As Darryl walked toward his room, he heard someone calling for him from behind when he walked past the garden, followed by the clucking sound of stilettos.

He turned around and saw Susan.

Susan looked beautiful that night. As the party's hostess, she had taken a few drinks too, and her face was rosy.

"Aunt Susan, what's wrong?" Darryl asked as he turned around to face her.

Susan bit her lips and said softly, "Darry, I need a favor from you. Can you arrange for me to meet Indomitable Darby?"

Sara was not the only person impressed by Indomitable Darby; Susan was also mesmerized. She wanted to get to know Indomitable Darby.

Darryl almost laughed. How many fans did he have? Was Susan a fan?

It appeared that Zephyr had managed the Elysium Gate well.

Darryl was delighted to hear that; he smiled and said, "Sure. I'll call him and ask him to meet you."

"That's great." Susan smiled. "Thank you for your help, Darryl." Then she turned around and left.

Darry laughed.

Since she worshipped Indomitable Darby, he would give her a surprise.

...

After he had stared at the moon for about two hours, Darryl wore the golden mask, put on his black robe, and headed toward Susan's room.

Zoran was still with some old friends in the hall, and so, he was not back in the room.

It was almost midnight.

The light in Susan's room was still on.

Susan stood in front of a sand plate; she used some small wooden logs to solve a formation. The formation was too complicated; it had been more than a month, and she had yet to solve it.

A thin layer of sweat covered her face; she looked elegant under the lights.

There was a knock on her door.

It was already late at night, so who could it be?

Susan furrowed her brows and went to open the door. She was stunned when she saw who was there.

A man in a black robe and golden mask stood at the door.

"Sect Master Darby?" Susan got excited.

She could see the dragon engravings on the mask, and they looked so real; it was the real golden mask! It was the Elysium Gate Sect Master, Indomitable Darby.

Darryl, who was at the door, could see the surprise on Susan's face. He smiled and said, "A friend of mine, Darryl, called me and said that you would like to meet me. Here I am."

Darryl looked at Susan and controlled his voice., "I hope you don't mind that I came without an invitation."

"No, it's perfectly fine." Susan finally gathered her thoughts. She was so excited.

'I am not dreaming, right?' Susan thought.

Darryl saw the formation on the sand plate and asked, "The snow lily formation?"

Susan really liked to study formations.

Susan nodded happily. "You know about this formation?"

She had heard that Indomitable Darby was an expert in formations. He had also defeated the Ten Villains with formations. However, she did not expect his knowledge was so great that he could identify the snow lily formation with only one quick look.

"I have some knowledge about it," Darryl said as he walked toward the sand plate. "The snow lily formation was created by an ancient warrior, Zhuge Liang. It is a unique formation, and it has 49 types of changes."

Susan was delighted. "Do you know this formation? Could you teach me, please?" Susan asked, hopefully.

She had only seen the formation in some ancient manuals. She tried to solve it, but it had been a month, and she had not been able to do it.

Darryl smiled as he picked up a small wooden log. Then he started to demonstrate. "The key to this formation is the south-east corner. Look, you will need to do this..."

Darryl shared his knowledge about snow lily

formation, as well as demonstrated the way to solve it.

In just a short while, Susan had understood the essence of the formation. She was impressed. "Sect Master Darby, I—"

Chapter 641

Susan wanted to say that she admired him.

However, she was the hostess, so she had to be calm and compose. She bit her lips and said softly, " Sect Master Darby, you are so knowledgeable in formations. Could you take me as your disciple?"

Susan had always been interested in formations, and she had always admired Indomitable Darby. Since he could share his knowledge about the snow lily formation so effortlessly, she wanted to be his student.

Indomitable Darby was the Elysium Gate's Sect Master. There was nothing wrong for her to be his student.

What?!

'Aunt Susan wanted to be my student?' Darryl thought.

Darryl did not know how to respond to that. "You must be joking, Mistress. You are smart and intelligent; I am not qualified to be your teacher."

What a joke! If he were to accept Susan as his student, it would complicate their relationship.

"You are too modest! I sincerely want to be your student. I hope that you could accept me."

Susan knelt and bowed to Darryl; she could not afford to lose the opportunity.

"Mistress Carter," Darryl immediately tried to help her up.

Susan bit her lips and held onto Darryl's legs. "Sect Master Darby, please accept me as a student! Please! "

Susan begged him, and Darryl could not stand it anymore.

Darryl had no choice but to nod his head. "That's fine."

Susan was delighted to hear that. She quickly bowed to Darryl. "Please accept a bow from your disciple, Master."

"That's good. Please stand up." Darryl quickly helped her up and said, "It is really late now, I should get going. I will teach you formations when we meet again. I have to go now."

Darryl opened the door and left.

"Let me walk you out, Master," Susan said with a smile.

"That's not necessary," Darryl said before he

immediately left.

Susan was too happy. Not only did she meet Indomitable Darby, but he had also accepted her as a student.

...

Once Darryl left Susan's room, he went to the garden and removed the black robe and mask.

Darryl never imagined that Indomitable Darby's name would attract so many fans. He was delighted. Then he headed back to his room.

It was past midnight.

Darryl hummed a song as he walked toward his room and opened the door.

Darryl heard a voice as soon as he stepped into the room!

"You shall die tonight, Darryl!"

Two ladies with swords charged toward Darryl.

Why were there two women in his room? Darryl was shocked. However, he avoided their attack and turned on the light.

Once the light was on, Darryl could see them clearly.

It was Abbess Mother Serendipity and Megan!

"You useless thing! I couldn't kill you at the party,

and now that it is over, it is the time for you to die too!" Abbess Mother Serendipity said coldly as she stared at Darryl. It was an insult to her to have to share the same table with Darryl.

That was why Abbess Mother Serendipity had gone into his room at night; it was to attack him.

"Megan, close the door," Abbess Mother Serendipity ordered.

She wanted to kill the useless guy in his room.

Megan obeyed her Master's order and went to lock the door.

Chapter 642

Darryl let out a long sigh. He held his fists tightly when Megan locked the door.

'Great, let's settle this today since both of you are here,' Darryl thought.

Abbess Mother Serendipity looked at Darryl and furrowed her brows. The sword in her hand shook.

"I shall get rid of you for the greater good, and help the Darby family to teach you a lesson!" Abbess Mother Serendipity shouted as she charged toward Darryl.

Abbess Mother Serendipity used all her force; air circulated her sword.

At the same time, Megan also punched at Darryl.

Darryl smiled coldly as he stood steadily there.

"Let's see who is teaching whom a lesson!" Darryl said coldly.

He started to gather his internal energy, and then he moved toward Megan. He lifted his hand lightly, and the wave sent Megan's sword off her hands!

Megan was too weak when compared to Darryl. Her

sword dropped onto the floor before she could even see any of his movement.

Darryl quickly raised his hand to seal her acupoint so that she would become motionless.

Once he was done with Megan, Darryl laughed and took out his Blood Drinking Sword and started to fight against Abbess Mother Serendipity.

Loud sounds were heard when Abbess Mother Serendipity's sword met Darryl's. After a few rounds of battle, Abbess Mother Serendipity felt that something was not right.

'He has been promoted to Level Four Martial Marquis?' she thought.

Even though she was a Level Five Martial Marquis, she did not feel that she had any advantage over Darryl.

Suddenly, she saw a punch that came straight at her.

Due to the high speed of the punch, Abbess Mother Serendipity had no choice but to meet it with her internal energy.

Bang!

Both fists met, and a loud noise was heard. Abbess Mother Serendipity fell a few steps backward; her face looked awful!

Darryl's internal energy was way above Abbess Mother Serendipity.

"You—"

Abbess Mother Serendipity felt as if her chest was about to explode. She looked at Darryl; she could not believe what had happened.

How would it be possible?!

Darryl had become more powerful in just a few days!

Darry smiled and looked at Abbess Mother Serendipity. "Didn't expect that, did you?"

As he spoke, he sprinted toward her and sealed Abbess Mother Serendipity's acupoint too.

Abbess Mother Serendipity's body shivered, and then she became motionless.

Megan was shocked to see what had happened; she shouted, "Master—"

Megan was so worried; he had sealed their acupoints. Darryl had become so powerful.

"You useless thing!" Megan bit her lips. "Release us!"

"Release you?"

Chapter 643

Darryl smiled, but his eyes were red. He walked toward Megan and slapped her!

Slap!

There was a big red hand mark on Megan's face.

"This is for not knowing how to tell between good and evil," Darryl said as he looked coldly at Megan.

Darryl held his fists tightly. He had treated her so well and helped her; he had even given her many Godly Pills. Even her fiancé, Kent had taken his Godly Pill!

What did he get in return? She had called him useless—a villain!

Megan shouted, "How dare you hit me? How dare you say I could not differentiate good and evil? You are useless because you have joined the Eternal Life Sect!"

Slap!

Darryl gave her another slap!

"This is for your ungratefulness! I have always been kind to you, and how do you treat me in return?"

Darryl could not control his emotions.

Slap!

Another big slap!

Megan dropped onto the ground.

Darryl shouted angrily, "This is for Adina! You know what a kind person she was! How dare you kill her!"

Darryl screamed on the top of his lungs. He could still remember how devastated Chester was when Adina was killed.

Abbess Mother Serendipity trembled when she saw what had happened. She shouted, "You're a useless piece of sh*t! Don't release your anger at Megan; come at me!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity thought that she could get rid of Darryl; she did not expect that he had upgraded his power so drastically.

It was humiliating to see Darryl hit her favorite student in front of her!

Darryl stopped and turned to look at Abbess Mother Serendipity. "Keep your mouth shut!"

Then he turned and walked toward Abbess Mother Serendipity.

"Don't you dare touch me! I will kill you." Abbess

Mother Serendipity shook when she shouted that.

Darryl took a deep breath before he looked at Abbess Mother Serendipity.

She wore a long purple dress. Even though it was a conservative piece, it still showed her body perfectly.

Darryl smiled. "You said that I am useless. What about you? A petty thief?

As he spoke, he stared at Abbess Mother Serendipity. "It's about time for the Celestial Silkworm Armor and the Supreme Mystery Scripture to return to their real owner."

"You—" Abbess Mother Serendipity bit her lips.

Darryl did not waste any more time. He reached out to feel Abbess Mother Serendipity's waist until he could take hold of the Supreme Mystery Scripture.

He knew that she had hidden something there. As expected, that was the scripture that he had lost.

"And the Celestial Silkworm Armor, I guess that it is on your body. Time to return it to me," Darryl said coldly.

Darryl reached out again toward her.

"What are you trying to do?!" Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious.

The Celestial Silkworm Armor was with her; she was wearing it. How could Darryl take it from her?

As her acupoint was sealed, she could not move at all. Darryl's hand got closer to her.

Chapter 644

"Stop!" Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious, and she was also ashamed.

She had the Celestial Silkworm Armor on her, so how could she let Darryl remove it!

It was a blatant violation of her privacy!

Darryl would touch her if he were to remove the armor; her reputation would be tarnished if that news were to spread out.

Darryl ignored her and continued to remove her long dress; he was about to remove the armor.

"I will kill you!" Abbess Mother Serendipity shouted.

Darryl was furious; he went behind her and knocked her onto her knees.

Abbess Mother Serendipity dropped to her knees on the ground.

"You don't deserve to speak to me while standing." Darryl looked at her coldly; then, he did the same to Megan.

Megan dropped to her knees on the ground too.

Darryl brought a chair and sat in front of both of them.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was furious; she had never knelt in front of anyone before that.

It was humiliating for her to kneel to that useless Darryl.

Darryl could see Abbess Mother Serendipity's anger. He almost died when she attacked him, so he was quite satisfied to see that!

Darryl smiled and reached out to pet Abbess Mother Serendipity head as if she was a pet.

Abbess Mother Serendipity could not take how she was treated; she shouted angrily at Darryl. "You have humiliated me today; I will kill you in the future!"

"I don't think you'll get this chance." Darryl smiled.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was still stubborn despite her sealed acupoint.

"Kill me if you dare!" Abbess Mother Serendipity said coldly.

She knew that Darryl would not release her so easily, but she would rather die than suffer more humiliation.

Darryl smiled. "Killing you is too easy on you. You

broke my heart vein at Langley's wedding, so I think I will repay you kindly. I shall break your vein, and then remove the armor!"

Abbess Mother Serendipity's body quivered; her face was pale when she shouted, "How dare you!"

She was Emei's Sect Master; if her heart vein broke, she would not be able to cultivate anymore. What was the point of living then? She would rather die.

"Why wouldn't I?" Darryl replied. The next moment, Darryl raised his hand and punched Abbess Mother Serendipity's chest.

Her heart vein would definitely break with such a powerful punch.

At that moment, someone kicked the door open; that powerful energy broke the door into pieces. The huge shadow marched in and broke Darryl's punch.

It was the Wudang Sect's Master Leonard!

Master Leonard's room was also nearby. He had heard some noises, and so he tried to investigate it. When he heard Abbess Mother Serendipity's voice, he did not hesitate to barge into the room to stop Darryl's attack.

"Useless piece of sh*t! How dare you attack Abbess Mother Serendipity?!"

Master Leonard shouted as he attacked Darryl.

Master Leonard attacked with the Eight Trigrams Multiple Punch—Wudang Sect's special skill.

Air circulated Master Leonard, as it created a circle of eight trigrams.

Darryl did not hesitate to defend himself.

Bang!

Once their two fists touched, both Darryl and Master Leonard bounced a few steps backward.

Theoretically, Master Leonard would not be able to match Darryl's power. However, he had used all of his energy on the Eight Trigrams Multiple Punch and Darryl had only started to lift his fist. Even though both of them bounced backward, it was apparent who was the stronger person.

Chapter 645

Master Leonard quickly took the opportunity to release the two women's acupoints.

Darryl could not stop him in time.

Master Leonard had spoiled the plan.

It had not been easy for Darryl to find an opportunity to defeat Abbess Mother Serendipity.

Darryl laughed sarcastically. "Wow, I didn't know that Master Leonard and Abbess Mother Serendipity are in an intimate relationship."

Yvette had impersonated Indomitable Darby at the Wishing Star Tower and captured members from all the sects. Then she made Abbess Mother Serendipity go through a wedding ceremony with Master Leonard. Everyone had heard about that.

No one dared to mention it because of Abbess Mother Serendipity's temper.

Darryl laughed. "It seems like both of you are really close. The husband would always come running when the wife is in trouble. How loving of you!"

"Darryl!" Abbess Mother Serendipity trembled as she turned to look at Master Leonard. "Why are you

here? I don't need your help!"

Master Leonard did not know how to react to that.

'Abbess Mother Serendipity is too ridiculous. I am here to help her; not only did she not appreciate my effort, but she is also calling me a busy body,' Master Leonard thought.

"I will get my revenge, Darryl!" Abbess Mother Serendipity looked at Megan and said, "Let's go!"

The women left as Master Leonard trailed behind them.

Darryl held his fists; his eyes were red. He had only retrieved the Supreme Mystery Scripture; the Celestial Silkworm Armor was still with Abbess Mother Serendipity. He really did not want to let them go.

However, he had no choice but to let them leave.

Master Leonard, Abbess Mother Serendipity and Megan were not his matches.

However, to win, he would need to use his unique skills. That would put everyone on alert.

The Six Sects would definitely be on Abbess Mother Serendipity's side. He would not be able to defeat so many of them at once.

Darryl's eyes were red; he was upset to see them

leave.

He was especially furious when he remembered that Megan had killed his brother's wife at the Eternal Life Island.

Ring! Ring!

Darryl's cell phone started to ring at that moment.

Darryl sighed and decided to stop thinking about Abbess Mother Serendipity. He took out his cell phone.

It was already late at night; who would look for him at that hour?

The screen showed that it was Skyler.

Skyler was the Grandmaster Heaven Cult's Sect Master. He had passed the Sect Master title to Darryl when he produced the Heaven Cult Elixir for him.

When Darryl was made the Elder Master, he had returned the Sect Master title to Skyler.

Why would Skyler call him? They had not contacted each other for a long while.

Darryl answered the call.

Once the call connected, he heard Skyler's panicky voice. "Brother Darryl! I finally managed to get a

hold of you. Something terrible had happened at Elysian Island!"

Something terrible had happened?

Darryl was shocked to hear that.

Then Skyler said, "There was a fire at Elysian Island a few days ago. All of the houses were completely burnt. Cult Mistress must have died in the fire, and the Grandmaster of Heaven is devastated about it. He had not been managing the sect for a few days now. It is very chaotic here at the moment. You are the Elder Master, Brother Darryl. So, only you have the right to be the interim Grandmaster of Heaven to manage the sect."

The Cult Mistress had died in a fire?

Sh*t!

That was the reason for his unsettled mind.

He had forgotten about her!

Darryl touched his forehead and said, "Fine, I understand."

Then, he hung up the call.

The fire at Elysian Island was Monica's idea.

It seemed like the plan had been perfectly executed; the entire Grandmaster Heaven Cult thought that

she was dead.

He was supposed to meet the Cult Mistress, but he had missed that; he had spent his time in cultivation at the ancient tomb. Right after he left the tomb, he went straight to Sara's birthday party. He had completely forgotten about her.

Chapter 646

The Cult Mistress must have been very disappointed.

Darryl was worried; he had no idea where the Cult Mistress was at that moment.

'Once she left Elysian Island, she would definitely come to Donghai City to look for me. And I have not been back to Donghai City for a few days now. I wonder what she did when she could not find me?' Darryl thought.

Darry was worried; he left the room immediately. He whistled to the snow eagle and rushed back to Donghai City immediately.

Darryl felt uneasy the entire journey. Images of the Cult Mistress filled his mind. She was pregnant too, so, hopefully, she was alright.

...

At the Emei Mountain.

The building was located in the mid-section of the mountain; it was an ancient building, and it was the location of the Emei Sect, one of the Six Sects.

For thousands of years, the Emei Sect had produced

many female leaders.

There was even a rumor that the only female empress in history, Lady Wu, was Emei Sect's 26th Sect Master.

Their Sect Master was the infamous Goddess, Aurora Hansen, and she was the sect's 37th Sect Master.

Due to her unique skill, the Icy Dragon Punch, she was also known as Ice Lady Goddess.

The Icy Dragon Punch was a rare skill, but it was also extremely powerful!

The legend about the Ice Lady Goddess was an incident that happened five years ago.

At that time, there was a landslide at Emei Mountain due to the consistent heavy rainfall. All of the villagers at the bottom of the mountain suffered as most of them were fruit farmers. Due to the landslide, the transportation was also severely affected. Most fruits perished before they could be sent to the market.

When Aurora heard about that, she used the Icy Dragon Punch to break the mountain into half so that the farmers could use it for logistics.

That was five years ago, and people still talked about it.

She had broken the mountain in half with just one punch.

In one of the halls in the Emei Sect's building.

Aurora sat on the Phoenix Chair. She looked about 3 0 years old, and she wore a purple dress; she looked elegant like a Goddess.

She was also a Level Four Martial Saint.

After a long cultivation period, Aurora had finally achieved her upgrade.

That was the first day after her upgrade, and she looked as cold as she usually did.

Abbess Mother Serendipity stood in front of her.

"Sect Master, we must kill Darryl!" Abbess Mother Serendipity said.

She had rushed back to the Emei Mountain when she learned that Aurora had completed her cultivation. Then she told her about all the humiliation that she had suffered at Darryl's hand.

Aurora sat there and said, "Darryl? Was he the one who caused the death of his grandfather, violated his siblings, joined the Eternal Life Palace Sect and humiliated you?"

"Yes, that's him!" Abbess Mother Serendipity

sighed.

She was so angry when she remembered that she had to kneel in front of Darryl and he had patted her hair.

Abbess Mother Serendipity bit her lips. "Sect Master, he is a useless piece of sh*t! He also has the Supreme Mystery Scripture with him. The scripture cannot be in the hands of such a useless person."

"Right," Aurora replied calmly. "Let's not talk about him. Tell me what had happened when I was in cultivation."

Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded and continued to say, "Sect Master, the most critical development was that the World Universe would most likely enter a battle with the New World..."

...

On the other hand, at the Great West Real Estate's presidential office in Donghai City.

It was six in the morning, and Darryl sat worriedly at his desk; Jade stood obediently beside him.

Darryl called Jade early in the morning when she was still in bed. She could hear that Darryl was very anxious. She rushed to the company; she did not even waste time with makeup. However, she still looked attractive without it.

"Get me a painting artist, and hurry," Darry ordered.

Chapter 647

Darryl had never taken any pictures of Monica.

The only way to find Monica was to get a painter to draw her portrait.

There was no other way!

Jade took her cell phone and started to make some calls.

She was the Windon Group's general manager. She was also very famous in Donghai City. In less than an hour, a painter arrived at her office.

The painter started her drawing based on Darryl's verbal description. After some fine-tuning, the portrait was done.

The portrait looked exactly like Monica.

Darryl immediately left the Great West Real Estate after he had the portrait.

He snapped a picture of the portrait and sent it to the Dixon quadruplets. They would lead the Elysium Gate members to start their search for the Cult Mistress, but Darryl had specifically told them to be low profile. They need to do that discreetly as Monica was the Cult Mistress.

They did not want to alert the Grandmaster Heaven Cult.

Once he had given his instructions, he took the portrait and headed to Donghai City's busiest streets.

He wanted to show the portrait to everyone he met in case they had seen her.

Even though it sounded foolish, it was the most effective way to do it.

The Cult Mistress was a gorgeous woman; anyone who had met her would definitely remember her.

It was autumn, and it had gotten colder. Darryl stood on the street and started to ask everyone he met to show them the portrait.

After a few hours, Darryl had asked countless people; his legs were numb, but he did not get any news about her.

It was late in the evening, and Darryl stood in the middle of the road in despair. He had something to eat in his hand, but he was upset and full of regrets.

He had not eaten or drunk anything the entire day; he did not have any appetite at all.

Donghai City was a large city; it was almost impossible to meet the Cult Mistress.

The Cult Mistress had been living at the Elysian Island; she was new to Donghai City. She had no one to go to, and she was pregnant with his child. He would be devastated if anything were to happen to her.

Darryl panicked. He threw his meal away and continued the search with the portrait in his hand.

The day turned dark, and there were lesser people on the street. Only a few groups of youngsters loitered on the road.

Not far away, a group of youngsters walked by. Some of them smoked, some had tattoos all over their body and colored hair, while some had ear studs. All of them looked cheesy. Darryl had no intention to approach them, but he still went ahead. He showed them the portrait and asked them if they had seen the lady on it.

He held out the portrait as he spoke to them.

He did not have much hope about it, though.

Surprisingly, once they saw the portrait, they looked at each other and burst into laughter.

"Isn't she the new waitress at the Secret Garden?"

All of them laughed.

What?!

They had seen her?!

Darryl was delighted. He asked, "Secret Garden? Where is this place?"

One of the young men with blonde hair replied, " My friend, you have asked the right person. We are regulars at the Secret Garden. It's a new bar near the Millennium Mall. The environment is pretty good."

They looked at the portrait again and continued to say, "The lady in the portrait is the most beautiful waitress there. Her body is so sexy. She became the top waitress in just a few days. Most of the rich and famous would go there and request for her service."

The blonde young man looked at Darryl and said, " Brother, are you looking for her service? You have great taste!"

What?!

Darryl's mind went blank.

Chapter 648

At the Secret Garden Karaoke Bar in Donghai City.

The bar was located on a busy street, and it had just opened not too long ago. It was also Donghai City's largest bar.

At the bar's level three deluxe suite.

The deluxe suite was a few hundred square feet wide. There was a wine counter, a sleeping area, top-notch sound system and most importantly, a small dancing pool.

The bar had a very grand area, and their hourly rate was around 50 thousand bucks. Except for wealthy families, no one could really afford it.

At that moment, the suite was surrounded by dozens of bodyguards dressed in black suits; they looked impressive.

All of them were there to protect one person—Dalton Zander from Dalton Entertainment.

After the incident at Donghai City's Mid-Autumn Festival celebration where Darryl poured urine all over Dalton, he realized the importance of bodyguards. All of his men were highly paid, and

they were all experienced cultivators.

Dalton sat on the sofa, and he had a glass of red wine in his hand; he was there to enjoy himself.

A few ladies sat beside him, and they were all gorgeous women. They were Dalton Entertainment's artists. A few owners from smaller entertainment companies were there too.

Since Platinum Corporation had gone bankrupt, Dalton Entertainment had taken over most of Donghai City's resources. After just a short time, Dalton's entertainment company was well-known in the entertainment industry.

Dalton was very proud of that fact.

At that moment, Dalton had a glass of red wine, and he smiled as he looked at the waitress in front of him.

The waitress had a perfect body and features; she looked very elegant. Dalton was immediately attracted to her.

That woman was Monica!

"What a beauty!" Dalton sipped his wine and started to check out Monica.

Dalton was there because he had heard about that beautiful waitress.

He was very attracted to Monica once he saw her.

She was stunning!

How would there be such a beautiful lady? All his female artists looked so ordinary when compared to her.

Dalton's stare made Monica feel uneasy. However, she had no choice. Her manager, Janette, had instructed her to serve the deluxe suite. She could not reject it as that was her job.

Janette stood beside Dalton and smiled. "President Dalton, if you are happy with her, then I shall let her serve you today."

Janette was very excited. Monica had made so much money for her, and even President Dalton liked her.

Dalton was the entertainment industry's top boss. If he were satisfied with the service, then he would be a regular there.

Then, Janette would earn plenty of commission from his patronage. She was very excited about that prospect.

Chapter 649

Dalton nodded; his eyesight never left Monica's body.

Dalton smiled and asked, "Manager Janette, I heard that this beautiful lady would only serve fruits and sing. Would she make an exception and have a drink with me?"

Janette was stunned, but she smiled and said, " President Dalton, you are a special guest here. Of course, she could make an exception. It is Monica's honor to have a drink with you."

As she spoke, she looked at Monica and asked her to serve Dalton with a drink.

Monica bit her lips and said, "Manager Janette, we have agreed that I will not have to drink with the guests."

On the first day of work, Monica had felt that something was not right. The guest would always look at her as if she was naked. All of their stares made her feel uncomfortable.

Monica wanted to leave the place, but where could she go?

Donghai City was so big, and she had no money

with her. Where would she find Darryl?

Darryl's sister-in-law had recommended the place, so it should not be too bad. On the first day of work, Monica had told Janette that she would never drink with the guests, and Janette had agreed to that. Why would she go back on her words?

Monica had always been up at the pedestal; how could she have drinks with the guests?

Janette laughed and said, "What are you waiting for? Have a drink with President Dalton. You have been working here a few days now. How many guests were upset because you refuse to drink with them? I can forgive you for those incidents, but today, you must drink with President Dalton. Do you understand me?"

Dalton was Janette's gold mine. If she could retain such a guest, she would make a fortune. No matter what, Monica must take that drink with him.

Monica bit her lip; she did not know what to do.

Then, Janette whispered to her, "No matter what, you must accept the drink. Do you know who Mister Dalton is? If you don't drink it, you cannot stay here. Leave, and you will not get your wages."

Then, she pushed Monica toward the guest.

Monica bit her lips. After some struggle, she took

the glass and looked at Dalton. "Thank you for coming here, boss. Cheers!"

Monica took a small sip of the drink.

She was really reluctant to accept the drink, but she had no choice. Otherwise, she would be fired and not receive her wages. She needed the job to live.

Monica only took a sip because she was pregnant.

"Oh, how rude! You must finish the whole glass." Janette said unhappily as she furrowed her brows.

Dalton laughed. "That's fine. It's the first time for our beauty here, so it is understandable."

Dalton tapped the sofa beside him and said to Monica, "Beautiful Lady, come and take a seat. Don' t be shy; I am a very friendly person..." Then he laughed.

Monica bit her lips and sat down next to him.

Dalton immediately wrapped his arms around her waist and said, "Beautiful Lady, don't just sit on the sofa, sit here." He smiled and pointed at his lap.

Chapter 650

"Please be respectful."

Monica was furious; she moved Dalton's arm away and maintained a distance between them on the sofa.

"Fine, fine, I will be respectful."

Dalton laughed and then lifted his wine glass for a sip as he stared at Monica.

Dalton waved at Janette.

Janette quickly walked forward and asked, " President Dalton, what can I do for you?"

Dalton laughed and said, "Janette, it is a waste to keep this beautiful lady here as a waitress. I want to purchase her contract and make her an artist with my company!"

Janette hesitated as she smiled. "President Dalton, I am afraid that is not appropriate."

Janette needed Monica to attract more customers to her bar.

Dalton shook his head and took an Amethyst Bank diamond card out of his wallet. "I will give you ten

million bucks, and she leaves with me."

What?!

Ten million bucks!

Janette was stunned. Then she smiled at him. "That's very generous of you, President Dalton. Fine then, I shall give her to you."

Janette was so excited; she had just made a fortune. She wanted to laugh out loud.

Dalton moved closer to Monica and smiled. " Beautiful Lady, with your qualities, I can assure you that you would be very famous in the entertainment industry. Don't worry; I promise to give you all the best resources in my company."

The rest of the female artists there were furious when they heard that.

"President Dalton, that's not fair. What about us?"

"Yes, she is just a waitress; what can she do?"

Dalton said impatiently, "Shut up, all of you!"

None of them could compare to Monica.

Dalton smiled and looked at Monica with concern. " Beautiful Lady, are you excited? Don't worry, I assure you, you will be famous very soon. There is a reality program called the Birth of a Star, and I will

enrol you into it. Why don't we take the conversation to the other bedroom to discuss further?"

Dalton wrapped his arm around Monica's waist.

In his mind, no matter how beautiful a lady was, all of them could be tempted to be a star.

It was most ladies' dream.

He was confident that Monica had only pretended to be pure. She must have felt delighted; that was why he started to take advantage of her.

"You—"

Monica could not stand it anymore. She struggled to remove his arms and shouted, "Please be respectful!"

Wow!

Everyone in the suite was shocked.

Was she crazy?

Chapter 651

How could she speak to President Dalton that way?

"What's wrong with you? How dare you speak to President Dalton like that?" Janette could feel the cold sweat on her back. "Apologize to him immediately."

Dalton laughed and asked Janette to leave.

He approached Monica again and said, "Beautiful Lady, you have a temper, but I like it."

He held onto Monica's hands as he spoke.

"Let go of me!"

Monica was furious. She took the glass of wine on the table and splashed it all over Dalton's face. Then she stood up and got ready to leave the suite.

Bang!

Dalton was furious; he could not hold it in anymore. He kicked the coffee table, and all the glasses dropped onto the floor.

"Sh*t! How dare you!" Dalton was enraged as he waved to the bodyguards. "Tie her up!"

The bodyguards immediately surrounded her and

tied her up with some ropes.

Monica had always been weak; she would never be able to defeat the bodyguards. On top of that, she was pregnant too. Even though she struggled, they could still tie her up easily and threw her onto the sofa.

Dalton looked at her. "You have guts; how dare you splash wine onto my face!"

Dalton turned to the female artists and said, "Come on, welcome your new colleague! Cheers!"

The female artists immediately raised their glasses and walked toward them.

All of them poured the wine on Monica's face.

The wine dripped from Monica's face and onto her hair. However, she still looked very attractive.

Dalton smiled coldly and said, "Are you enjoying this, Beautiful Lady?"

"Stay away from me!" Monica continued to struggle.

Janette was furious, she walked over to Monica and scolded her. "How dare you behave like that? You are only a waitress here."

Monica cried, "Janette, my sister-in-law recommended me here. She said that you would

take care of me. Is this how you care for me?"

Janette laughed. "You call her your sister-in-law? Why had I never heard her say that? When Yumi called me, she told me I could do whatever I want with you, let alone only to drink with the guests."

"You—" Monica bit her lips. "That's not true, not true..."

"How is it not true? Stop with all the tantrum now. You must satisfy all President Dalton's requests today!" Janette said coldly.

"I don't want to work here any more; let me go." Monica started to cry. "Release me. I don't want to work here anymore."

"No!" Janette was so angry, she walked forward and slapped Monica on her face.

Slap!

She gave her a big slap, and it left red marks on Monica's face.

Monica shouted and cried in pain.

"What nonsense! Stop pretending to be pure and innocent!" Janette scolded her loudly. She raised her hand again and slapped Monica a few more times.

Chapter 652

Slap! Slap!

Each slap got harder and harder.

Janette was furious; she pulled Monica's hair and kicked her at the abdomen.

"How dare you act so innocent here!" Janette scolded as she continued to hit Monica.

No one had ever hit Monica before that.

She was also weak as she was pregnant. She felt extreme pain when Janette kicked her abdomen. She was scared and sad, and she continued to cry.

"Enough, don't injure her." Dalton smiled as he asked Janette to stop. He walked closer and smiled at Monica.

"Oh no, your face is all red," Dalton said as he touched her face.

"You—" Monica was furious; she continued to shout, "Don't touch me, go away, leave!"

When Dalton's face inched closer, and his hands were all over her, she felt hopeless. She closed her eyes and continued to cry.

'Darryl, where are you? I have been looking all over for you, and I can't find you. Do you know that someone is bullying me?' Monica thought.

"Sh*t! I will kill you, Dalton!"

Suddenly they heard a loud roar. The next second, a loud bang was heard, and the door was crushed into pieces!

Everyone looked at the doorway.

A man stood at the door, and his eyes were all red. In his hand was the Blood Drinking Sword.

It was none other than Darryl!

"Darryl—" Monica bit her lips as she cried.

'Am I dreaming? He is here; he is here to save me,' Monica thought.

"Who are you? Who let you in here?" Janette furrowed her brows as she looked at Darryl. "Leave now. You cannot be in this suite!"

She saw his cheap clothes and thought that he must be another drunkard.

Janette would never hesitate to kick all drunken men out of her bar.

She was about to chase Darryl away; she walked toward him.

Before she reached where Darryl stood, Janette felt that something was not right.

The man at the door held his fists tightly; he looked fierce.

She felt a shiver run down her spine; she could not even breath!

Darryl's eyes were red, and his body trembled!

All he saw was the Cult Mistress tied up, and Dalton's dirty hand was on her face!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Each step that Darryl took created a loud sound.

"What—what are you trying to do?" Janette felt scared; she started to walk backward. "The Secret Garden is not a place you want to provoke—"

Before she could finish her sentence, Darryl raised his hand and squeezed her neck as he lifted her!

"All of you must die today."

Then, Darryl raised another hand and slapped Janette's face!

Slap!